













# THE SACRED BOOKS OF THE HINDUS

**Translated by various Sanskrit Scholars**

EDITED BY  
MAJOR B. D. BASU, I. M. S. (*Retired*)

VOL. V.—THE VEDĀNTA-SŪTRAS OF BĀDARĀYAṆA  
WITH THE  
COMMENTARY OF BALADEVA

*SECOND EDITION*

PUBLISHED BY  
DR. L. M. BASU, M.B.  
FROM THE PĀṆINI OFFICE, BHUVANEŚWARĪ ĀŚRAMA, BAHADURGANJ  
ALLAHABAD

1934

PRINTED BY MANICK CHANDRA DAS  
AT THE PRABASI PRESS,  
CALCUTTA.

THE  
VEDĀNTA-SŪTRAS  
OF  
BĀDARĀYANA

WITH  
THE COMMENTARY OF BALADEVA

TRANSLATED BY  
THE LATE RAI BAHADUR ŚRĪŚA CHANDRA VASU VIDYĀRṆAVA

*SECOND EDITION*

REVISED BY  
NANDALAL SINHA, M A., B.L.

~~PUBLISHED BY~~  
THE PĀṆINI OFFICE, BHUVANEŚWARĪ ĀŚRAMA, BAHADURGANJ  
ALLAHABAD



## INTRODUCTION

---

The Vedānta Sūtras of Bādarāyaṇa are contained in four Adhyāyas or books. Among the six schools of philosophy, the Vedānta is the most popular and the best studied. The Sūtras of Bādarāyaṇa are about 560 in number, and so concise and abstruse, that without a commentary they are hardly to be understood. It is difficult to find the connection between the successive Sūtras, merely from the Sūtras themselves. Being a work of exegesis one would expect them to give reference to the passages which are being explained; but there is hardly a single Sūtra which gives unmistakable reference to any passage of the Upaniṣad. The result is that the various commentators have tried their ingenuity in finding out the passage or in imagining the text which is the subject of discussion in any particular Sūtra. That they have not been consistent even on this broad point, will be clear to any one who will study the various commentaries, the translations of which are before the public. In my opinion, the sage Bādarāyaṇa intentionally constructed the Sūtras in such a way that they may be of universal application, and may not be confined to the exposition of any particular religion or text. They contain universal principles of religion and philosophy, true for all times and ages, and not confined to the sacred literature of the Hindus alone. An interpretation of the Sūtras in this light is a desideratum.

Baladeva, the author of the Govinda Bhāṣya, was a follower of Śrī Chaitanya, the last of the Avatāras. He wrote this commentary under the command of Lord Kṛṣṇa at Vṛndāvana and called it Govinda Bhāṣya, because the Lord, as Śrī Govinda, told him in a dream to compose it. It is a theistic Bhāṣya and in his Tikā on it, said to be written by himself, Baladeva thus gives the Guru-paramparā (or the apostolic succession) of the great teachers from the Lord Kṛṣṇa down to Chaitanya.

तत्र स्वगुरुपरम्परा यथा—

श्रीकृष्णब्रह्मदेवर्षिबादरायणसंज्ञकान् ।

श्रीमध्वशीपद्मनाभश्रीमन्नृहरिमाधवान् ॥

ब्रह्मोभ्यजयतीर्थश्रीज्ञानसिन्धुदयानिधीन् ।

श्रीविद्यानिधिराजेन्द्रजयधर्मान् क्रमाद्वयम् ॥

पुरुषोत्तमब्रह्मण्यव्यासतीर्थीश्च संस्तुमः ।

ततो लक्ष्मीपतिं श्रीमन्माधवेन्द्रं च भक्तिः ॥



तच्छिष्यान् श्रीश्वराद्वैतनित्यानन्दाञ्जगद्गुरुन् ।

देवमीश्वरशिष्यं श्रीचैतन्यं च भजामहे ।

श्रीकृष्णप्रेमदानेन येन निस्तारितं जगत् ।

The succession of the Gurus is as follows :

Śrī Kṛṣṇa, Brahmā, Nārada, Bādarāyaṇa, Śrī Madhva, Śrī Padmanābha, Nṛhari, Mādhava, Akṣobhya, Jayatīrtha, Śrī Jñānasindhu, Dayānidhi, Vidyānidhi, Rājendra, Jayadharmā, Puruṣottama, Brahmanya, Vyāsātīrtha, Lakṣmīpati, Mādhavendra. He had three disciples Śrī Īśvara, Advaita, Nityānanda, these are all teachers of the world (Jagat-gurus), we pay our reverence to these all; and lastly, to the Lord Śrī Chaitanya Deva, who was the disciple of Śrī Īśvara, and who saved the world by the gift of the love of Śrī Kṛṣṇa.

As regards the history of this commentary the same glossator writes thus :

भाष्यमेतद्विरचितं बलदेवेन धीमता ।

श्रीगोविन्दनिदेशेन गोविन्दाख्यामगात्ततः ॥

अधीत्य सर्वान् वेदान्तान् गुरोर्लक्ष्मीधवप्रियान् ।

दृष्ट्वा सांख्यादिशास्त्राणि भाष्यं पाठ्यमिदं बुधैः ॥

कृत्स्नानादिरासीनो गुरुः शिष्यश्च धीरधीः ।

पाठयेन्कृष्णयाद्भाष्यं शान्तिपूर्वोत्तरं द्विजः ॥

ब्रालस्यादप्रवृत्तिः स्यात्पुंसां यद् ग्रन्थविस्तरे ।

गोविन्दभाष्ये संक्षिप्ता टिप्पणीक्रियतेऽत्र तत् ॥

भाष्यं यस्य निदेशाद्विरचितं विद्याभूषणेनेदम् ।

गोविन्दः स परमात्मा ममापि सूक्ष्मं करोत्वस्मिन् ॥

अम्नाय मूर्द्धरसिकाः कृष्णपादाम्मोहहासकाः ।

सन्तः करुणावन्तो मयि प्रसादं वितन्वतामनिशम् ॥

Baladeva, the wise, composed this commentary under the command of Śrī Govinda and hence it is called the Govinda Bhāṣya. Having studied all the Vedāntas from his Guru and all the Upaniṣads so loved by the Lord of Lakṣmī, one should study it after having read the Sāṅkhya texts and the Sāstras allied to them. Having bathed and performed the morning duties, the teacher and the pupil should study this Bhāṣya, reciting Śānti at the beginning and at the end. As through laziness men are not inclined to study voluminous books, therefore, I have composed this concise gloss on the Govinda Bhāṣya called Sūkṣma Tikā. That Lord Govinda under whose command the Vidyābhūṣaṇa (Baladeva) composed this commentary, may He help me in this my undertaking also. May the lovers of Vedānta and the worshippers of the lotus-feet of Śrī Kṛṣṇa have their compassion on me.

In modern times, no book is considered authoritative unless it belongs to some particular Sampradāya or School or Church. Among the Vaiṣṇavas, four such schools are recognised as authoritative, namely, those of Rāmānuja, Madhva, Viṣṇu-Svāmī and Nimbārka, as will appear from the following extract from the same gloss:

तथा चोक्तम्—

सम्प्रदायविहीना ये मन्त्रास्ते विफला मताः ।

अतः कलौ भविष्यन्ति चत्वारः सम्प्रदायिनाः ॥

श्रीब्रह्मरुद्रसनका वैष्णवा क्षितिपावनाः ।

चत्वारस्ते कलौ भाव्या ह्युत्कले पुरुषोत्तमात् ॥ इति

रामानुजं श्रीः स्वीचक्रे मध्वाचार्यं चतुर्मुखः ।

श्रीविष्णुस्वामिन रुद्रो निम्बादित्यं चतुः सनः ॥

All Mantras not belonging to any Sampradāya or school are considered as fruitless. Hence in this Kali Age there will arise four founders of schools, namely, Śrī, Brahmā, Rudra, and Sanaka, the four great Vaiṣṇavas, purifiers of the world. All these four will incarnate in Kali under the influence of the Supreme Lord of Utkala. Śrī inspired Rāmānuja, the four-faced Brahmā inspired Madhvāchārya, Rudra inspired Viṣṇu-Svāmī, and the four Kumāras taught through Nimbārka.

Baladeva based his commentary mainly on the teachings of these four schools of Vaiṣṇava authors. Śrī Chaitanya never wrote any commentary on the Vedānta Sūtras, nor did his immediate disciples. According to them, the Bhāgavata Purāṇa is the best commentary on the Vedānta Sūtras. Baladeva, who had written many works on Vaiṣṇavism, and was perhaps the most learned among the followers of Śrī Chaitanya, has written this theistic commentary and his explanations are in many places really an improvement upon those of his predecessors.

The text of the Baladeva Bhāṣya, with the gloss called the Sukṣma Tikā, was first published by Pandit Śyāma Lāl Goswāmī, a descendant of Lord Nityānanda. The edition being, however, in Bengali character, is not available to the whole of India and it is intended to bring out a revised text in the Sacred Books of the Hindus series in Devānagrī character.

This translation of the Govinda Bhāṣya is more in the nature of a paraphrase than a literal translation. I have not hesitated in expanding the author's arguments, and supplementing his short references by fuller quotations from the sacred texts.

BENARES: }  
24th April, 1912.

S. C. V.



# CONTENTS

---

## FIRST ADHYĀYA

### THE BOOK OF RECONCILIATION

#### FIRST PĀDA.

	PAGE
<i>Introductory</i>	
All Vedic texts uniformly refer to Brahman	4
There is no conflict between Vedānta and other Śāstras	4
The qualifications of the Adhikārī	4
Adhikaraṇa defined	4
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
What the study of Vedānta presupposes	5
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
Brahman defined	10
A maxim of interpretation	14
The difference between Jiva and Brahman	15
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
Knowledge of God is obtained through Scriptures and not by reasoning and inference	16
Vedānta teaches no action, but informs man about God	18
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
God is the subject of all Scriptures	21
All Scriptures should be so interpreted as primarily teaching the worship of God	21
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
God is knowable and not inexpressible by words	22
The Creator is not the Saṁyama Brahman	24
The word Bhāgavan defined	25
God is Nirguṇa, because His worship leads to salvation	25
There is no higher entity than God	26
Vedas uniformly define Nirguṇa Brahman	28

<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	PAGE.
God is all bliss, as well as blissful	29
God is true wisdom and infinity	40
Jīva is not Satyam, Jñānam, etc., of the Tait. Up.	40
The devotees of God bring God under their control, as a wife controls her husband	41
God and Jīvas are different	42
"Becoming Brahman, he attains Brahman" explained	42
Pradhāna is not the Ānandamaya of the Tait. Up.	43
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
God is the solar energy, controlling the solar system (Chh. I. 6)	44
God is the psychic energy, controlling the human system	44
The Inner-ruler of the solar Logos is God and no Jīva	47
God is the connecting link of ether, joining all solar systems	47
God is the Breath of life (Chh. I. 11-5)	51
God is Supreme Light	53
God is the power conquering all, and spoken of as Indra	57
"I am God," said by Indra and Vāmadeva, explained	62
"I" means both God and the human self	65
God different from Jīva and Prāṇa	66
SECOND PĀDA.	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
God is all-intelligence	69
He is the Manomaya of Chh. III. 14 and Muṇḍaka II. 2 and Tait. I. 6	71
Jīva is not the Monomaya of Chh. (III. 14) because there is a difference between God and man	72
God is in the heart of man, and should be so meditated upon	73
Though God is in man, He does not partake in the pleasure and the pain of man	75
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
God is enjoyer or eater of the universe	76
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
God is the friend of man, and dwells with him in the heart	77
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
God is the spirit of love, that shines out through the eyes of man	80
The Chhândogya passage IV. 15 explained	80

<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	PAGE
God is the Ruler within the soul	84:
The Ruler-within is neither matter, nor spirit, but God	85
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
God is the 'Indestructible' of the Muṇḍaka Up.	87
The 'Imperishable' is different from matter and spirit	88
The Lord has a specific form	89
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The Vaiśvânara of Chh. Up. V. 11, etc., is Brahman	90
The method of re-incarnation	90
The Vaiśvânara should be meditated upon in man	97
It is not the god of fire	98
The word Agni means God	99
This Fire is of the measure of a span, in the heart of man, and should be so meditated upon	100
THIRD PÂDA.	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
God is the Great Abode within which the heaven and the earth, etc., are floating	103
He is the goal of the Free	103
This Abode is neither matter nor spirit, but God	104
Difference between God and Jiva again declared	104
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The Bhûman of Chh. Up. (VII. 23) is God. God is not only the Great Hollow in which everything abides, but He is the Great Plenum or fullness called Bhûman	106
God is infinite joy in His aspect of Bhûman of fullness	115
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
God is the Akṣara or the 'Imperishable' described in the Bri. Âr. Up. (III. 8. 8)	119
Neither matter nor spirit is this 'Imperishable'	120
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
God appears as a person in the highest heaven and is so referred to in Praśna Up. (V. 5)	121
This appearance of God in the highest heaven is seen by the Muktas	123

<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	PAGE
The Ether within the heart called Dahara is God and not Jīva	124
All Jīvas merge in this Ether in deep sleep though unconscious of it	125
This Ether is the support of the two worlds	126
This Ether called Dahara is not the Jīva	128
In Mukti, the Jīva enters into this Ether	130
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
God is the Person of the size of a thumb seen in the heart	131
He is so described for the purposes of meditation in the heart	132
Soul is not this thumb-sized person	133
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
Devas entitled to meditate upon God	133
Devas are embodied beings though they can appear simultaneously at many sacrifices	136
The Śabda is eternal	137
The Veda is eternal	138
A creation after the great Pralaya is modelled on the type of the past	140
What are the peculiar objects of meditation for Devas	143
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
The Śūdras are not entitled to Vedic meditation	146
Janaśruti of the Chh. Up. was a Kṣatriya and not a Śūdra	149
Śūdras like Vidura or Dharmavyādha are exceptions	153
Śūdras get Mokṣa through Purāṇas, and a Mukta Śūdra is as holy as any other Jīva	153
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
God is the Great Terror and is referred as a thunderbolt	154
The Chakra of Viṣṇu symbolic of Viṣṇu's terror aspect	155
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The Ākāśa of the Chh. Up., VIII. 14, is God	156
It is not the Jīva	159
The Mukta-Jīva is not God	160
FOURTH PĀDA.	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
The 'Undeveloped' of Kaṭha Up. (I. 3. 11) is subtle body and not matter	162
The Pradhāna or Matter produces all effects through God	166

	PAGE
The 'Undeveloped' is not Prodhâna	167
The word Mahat of the Kaṭha (I. 3, 10) is not the Mahat of the Sâṅkhya philosophy	169
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The Ajâ of the Śvet. Up. (IV. 5) is not the Pradhâna	170
She has beginning in Light and is not therefore Prakṛti	172
She is the Divine power or the Śakti of the Lord	172
She is both created and uncreated	173
She is the Tamas of the R̥g Veda	174
She is created and uncreated in the same sense as the sun rises and rises not	175
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
The Pañcha Pañcha-Janâḥ of Br. Up. (IV., 4. 17) are not the twenty-five principles of the Sâṅkhyas	175
They refer to Prâṇa and the rest	177
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
God is the sole cause	178
The words Asat and Avyākṛta of the Tait. Up. (II. 7 and Br. Up., 1. 4. 5.) denote God	181
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The Puruṣa of the Kauṣ. Up. is Brahman	184
The word "Karma" means world and not work in that passage of the Kauṣ. Up. (IV. 19)	185
That passage does not refer either to the Jīva or to the chief Prâṇa	187
Jīva different from God	188
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The word Âtman of the Br. Up. (IV. 5) is Brahman and not Jīva	190
The Jīva-Âtman in Mukti acquires all the conditions of the Supreme-Self, and becomes the beloved of all	197
Every thing is dear by its relation to God	198
The theory of Bhakti according to Auḍulomi	198
The Br. Up. passage explained according to Kâśakṛtsna	199
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
God is both the operative and the material cause of the universe	201
The creation is His will	206
God becomes the World by Parīṇâma or modification of Himself	207
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
All names are names of God	210



## SECOND ADHYÂYA

### NO CONFLICT BETWEEN VEDÂNTA AND OTHER SÂSTRAS. REFUTATION OF ERRONEOUS VIEWS.

#### FIRST PÂDA.

##### *Adhikaraṇa I*

PAGE

Vedânta does not involve rejection of the entire Sâṅkhya doctrine	213
The Sâṅkhya doctrine that Prakṛti creates, should be modified by the proviso that she creates under the command of God and not independently	215
Manu and Viṣṇu Purâṇa quoted	216
Kapila though an Âpta (inspired sage) is opposed by other seers	218
There were two Kapilas, one an Avatâra of Viṣṇu, and the other the founder of Atheistic system	219
The Atheistic Sâṅkhya non-Vedic, and should be discarded	219

##### *Adhikaraṇa II*

The Yoga doctrine, so far as it is against the Vedas, should be discarded	221
Yoga doctrine that the Jiva is all-pervading is wrong	221
The five functions of the mind mentioned by Yoga is wrong	222
The discrimination between Puruṣa and Prakṛti cannot give Mukti	222

##### *Adhikaraṇa III*

The Vedas are eternal and infallible	224
--------------------------------------	-----

##### *Adhikaraṇa IV*

The terms Agni, Pṛthivi, etc., denote superintending Devas, and not inanimate objects, in Chh. (VI. 4, etc.)	226
The senses are called Devas	228

##### *Adhikaraṇa V*

God is the material cause of the Universe, and the non-intelli- gent material world comes out of the intelligent God	230
---	-----

##### *Adhikaraṇa VI*

Asat or non-being not the cause of the world	231
World is not different in substance from God	231

	PAGE
God is not contaminated by the qualities of the world	232
The objections raised by Sāṅkhya to the Vedānta theory apply with equal force to the Sāṅkhya theory as well	234
The function of reason in matters scriptural discussed, reason should not be discarded	235
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
Kanāda and Gautama refuted so far as they maintain that the world is created by atoms	236
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
Though Brahman is the material cause of the world, yet there is a difference between Jīva the enjoyer, and God the Creator	238
The world is the same as God in essence	238
Vaiśeṣika doctrine on this point refuted	240
The world is not an illusion	242
Effect is non-different from the cause	244
The word "Asat" of Tait. Up. (II. 6. 1.) explained	245
Being and non-being are attributes of things	247
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
God is the Operative Cause also	249
No Mukta Jīva is the cause of the world	250
God different from all Jīvas	251
The doctrine of 'Advaita' considered	253
All Jīvas dependent upon God	254
The hand of God visible in every act of man in the world	255
Devas are Invisible Workers and constitute the hands of God	255
God does not entirely pass over into the world, and though creating the world He yet remains single and partless	257
The mysterious powers of God, as taught by the Word of God	257
The Lord is omnipotent and possesses various Śāktis	262
The Lord has no instrument of action, yet He creates everything	263
The three-fold nature of the Śakti of the Lord	264
The Lord has sense-organs, but they are not of Prākṛtic matter	264
The motive of the Lord in creating the Universe is a mere Līlā	266
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The Lord is neither partial nor cruel	267

The acts of Jīvas cause all differences of conditions. The Lord is merely the dispenser of rewards and punishments	268
The creation is beginningless, and therefore the differences between the Karmas of the Jīvas are also beginningless	269

*Adhikaraṇa XI*

The grace of the Lord is not partiality	270
God is both just as well as gracious to his elects	272

## SECOND PĀDA.

*Adhikaraṇa I*

The Sāṅkhya doctrine that Pradhāna is the operative, as well as the material cause of the world, refuted	278
Pradhāna being non-intelligent, can create only under some directive intelligence	279
The illustration of milk converted into curd is not appropriate, for there also the intelligence is at work	280
The theory that Pradhāna has self-initiated activity is useless	282
The theory that Prakṛti creates, under the direction of Puruṣa is also objectionable	284
The Atheistic theory of Sāṅkhya considered	285
What brings about the change in the equilibrium of the three Guṇas	285
The Pradhāna being unconscious cannot plan the universe	286
Self-contradictions of Sāṅkhya	287

*Adhikaraṇa II*

The atomic theory of the Vaiśeṣika considered	288
The nature of atoms considered	290
The atoms by themselves have no motion	291
The Samavāya cause of the Vaiśeṣika's is a fiction	293
Other objections to atomic theory	294

*Adhikaraṇa III*

The Buddhist theory examined	295
The four schools of Buddhism described	295
The five Skandhas of the Buddhist described	296
All external objects belong to the Rūpa Skandha and all internal objects belong to the Chitta Chaittika	296
The Buddhistic theory of Skandhas does not explain the world-order	297

	PAGE
The Buddhist concatenation of cause and effect	297
Objections to this theory	299
Pratisaṅkhyā Nirodha	300
Absolute annihilation impossible	301
Ākāśa exists	301
Things are not momentary	304
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The Yogācāra School of the Buddhist considered	307
External world exists	308
The ideas of the waking state different from the dream state	310
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The Mādhyamika theory refuted	313
The doctrine of the void untenable	314
The theory of illusion similarly untenable	314
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The Jaina theory examined	314
The Jaina theory of soul being of the size of the body untenable	318
The Jaina theory of Mokṣa not right	320
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The Pāśupata system reviewed	321
The Goddess Vāch and the Vedic hymns	323
God being bodiless according to this system cannot create	325
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
The Śakti theory reviewed	327
THIRD PADA	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
Ether or Ākāśa is a product	330
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
Air is also a product	336
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
God called Sat is not product	338
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The fire is a product and originates from air	338
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
Water is a product and originates from fire	340
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
Earth is a product and originates from water	341

	PAGE
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
All elements originate directly from Brahman for they are produced by his thought	342
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
Brahman is the chief cause of working through matter	344
Re-absorption of the elements into Brahman takes place in the inverse order of their creation	344
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
Buddhi and Manas are also directly produced from Brahman	345
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
All words are names of God	348
<i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i>	
The Jīva or individual soul is eternal and not a product	349
<i>Adhikaraṇa XII</i>	
The soul is a cognising agent and intelligence as well	352
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIII</i>	
Jīva is atomic or Anu in size	353
Objections against the size of soul refuted	361
The intelligence of the soul is permanent	363
The soul is both knower and knowledge	365
Knowledge always exists in soul	366
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIV</i>	
The soul is not only knower but agent as well (Kartâ)	369
The Guṇas of the Prakṛti are not the agent	369
The soul is agent even in Mukti	370
The soul also in deep sleep	371
Another reason why Prakṛti cannot be agent	373
<i>Adhikaraṇa XV</i>	
Activity is an essential attribute of the soul, though it may not be always actually active	375
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVI</i>	
The soul in its activity is dependent on the Lord	378
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVII</i>	
The soul is a part (Amśa) of God	380
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVIII</i>	
The Avatâras like Fish, etc., are not part of God, but the entire godhead	385
Meaning of the word Pârṇa Avatâra	387

The child Kṛṣṇa, sucking at the breast of Yaśodā ( <i>Madonna lactans</i> ) the full Avatāra	PAGE 387
The difference between Jīvas and Avatāras in their activity	388
The Jīva is imperfect, the Avatāra is perfect	389
To consider the Avatāra as a Jīva is a fallacy	389
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIX</i>	
All Jīvas are not similar, nor equal	390
The differences of environments of the Jīvas caused by their Karmas	391
FOURTH PĀDA	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
The Prāṇas (sense organs) have their origin in Brahman	393
The word "Riṣayaḥ" in the plural, occurring in the Upaniṣad text, means the Supreme Lord or Brahman	394
The Logos existed before Pradhāna	395
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The Prāṇas are eleven in number	396
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
These eleven Prāṇas are atomic in size	399
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The chief Prāṇa springs from Brahman also	400
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The chief Prāṇa is not air	401
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The chief Prāṇa is also an instrument of the soul	402
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
It is the prime minister of the soul	403
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
It has five functions	405
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
It is also atomic in size	406
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The light (God) is the prime mover of the senses	407
<i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i>	
The chief Prāṇa is not an Indriya	410
It is not a sense-organ	411
<i>Adhikaraṇa XII</i>	
The evolution of names and forms is also the work of Brahman	412
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIII</i>	
The vehicles of the soul are all made of earthy matter	417

## THIRD ADHYÂYA

---

### THE SÂDHANAS OR MEANS OF REACHING BRAHMAN

#### FIRST PÂDA

<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	PAGE
The soul when passing out of the body, in order to obtain another body, goes accompanied by these permanent atoms	426
The word 'water' includes all other elements	427
The Prâṇas accompany the soul	428
The merging of the Prâṇas in elements is metaphorical	429
The word Śraddhâ in the Chh. Up. means water	430
The Somarâja (a name given to the Jîva,) is eaten by the Devas, in a figurative sense only	432
 <i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The souls after enjoying the reward of their good Karmas, in the astral and lunar plane, descend to earth, with a reminder of their Karmas	434
It descends partly by the same path by which it ascended, and partly by a different path	436
The word "Charaṇa" or conduct in Chh. Up. (V. 10. 7) is illustrative of Karmas according to Kârṣṇâjini ; and all Karmas not exhausted in the heaven-world	437
But it means, according to Bâdari, good and evil works	439
 <i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
The evil-doers do not go to the heaven-world but to the world of Yama	440
The world of Yama is the third place of the Upaniṣads.	444
 <i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The soul, in its descent from the moon, passes through ether, air, etc., but does not become identical with them	446
 <i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The soul does not stay long in these stages	448

<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	PAGE
The souls finally enter into plants, etc., but they do not participate in the life of the latter but are co-tenant with them	449
The killing of animals in sacrifices, like Agni-Śomiya, is not a sin	450
The birth of a new personality	451
SECOND PĀDA	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
God creates the dream-world also	453
He creates it through His Mâyâ or will-force	457
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The dreams are not all unmeaning, some of them are prophetic	457
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
The state of wakefulness is also created by Brahman	459
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The state of deep sleep takes place in the Nâdis, in the Self and in the pericardium collectively	460
In deep sleep, the soul abides in Brahman	463
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The same person comes back to the body on awakening, who had gone to sleep	464
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The nature of swoon explained	465
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The Lord is one, though manifesting simultaneously in various forms	466
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
The body of the Lord is not different from the Self of the Lord	470
The form of the Lord is the essence of His self	472
The form is life and the life is form in the case of the Lord	474
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
The 'worshipped' is different from the worshipper	475
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The soul is not a reflection of God	477
<i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i>	
The Neti Neti text explained	480



<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XII</i></b>	PAGE
The form of the Lord is not manifest to the external senses of ordinary persons	484
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XIII</i></b>	
But He can be seen by His faithful devotees	485
Through infinite grace of the Lord it is possible to see the Lord	489
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XIV</i></b>	
His attributies constitute his very essence	490
The Lord is both blissful and bliss	490
He is the light and the abode of light	491
The Lord and His attributes are not different	492
The difference is verbal only, as in the case of the sentences "the being exists," "the time <i>always</i> exists"	493
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XV</i></b>	
The bliss of the Lord is immeasurable	494
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XVI</i></b>	
Brahman is not monotonous, His manifestations are infinite and varied	497
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XVII</i></b>	
The Lord alone is the highest	499
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XVIII</i></b>	
The Lord when assuming a visible form is all-pervading even in that form. The limitation is appearance only	500
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XIX</i></b>	
The Lord is Giver of all fruits	502
THIRD PĀDA	
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa I</i></b>	
The Lord is the Great Quest taught in all the different Śākhās of the Vedas	510
The Lord may be meditated upon in any one of the various ways taught in the Scriptures	512
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa II</i></b>	
In meditating on the Lord, all His attributes, taught in various places, may be combined	515
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa III</i></b>	
The Ekāntins ( or the worshippers of a particular form of the Lord ) need not combine the attributes belonging to other forms	518
The reason why the Ekāntin should not do so	520

<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	PAGE
The meditation on the Lord as an Infant, may be combined with His attributes as youth and a teacher	522
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The deeds of the Lord are eternal	524
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
Meditation on all the attributes of the Lord	527
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
Meditation on God as blissful (Ânandamaya)	528
The bird-allegory of the Tait. Up. explained	531
The word Âtman explained	533
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
Meditation on God as father	535
Meditation on Him as mother, lover, brother, friend and son	536
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
The God may be meditated upon as having a form	537
The theory of Âveśa Avatâra	538
Meditation on Kumâras	539
The Kumâras should not be meditated upon as God but as God-filled	540
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
God should not be meditated upon as the Great Destroyer	542
<i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i>	
The knower of God may still meditate on God, but meditation is not obligatory on the released souls	545
<i>Adhikaraṇa XII</i>	
The fear and love of God are both causes of salvation	548
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIII</i>	
But the meditation of love is superior to that of fear	550
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIV</i>	
Meditation, recitation of the name of the Lord, and service are all means of salvation, jointly and separately	552
Jīvas like Brahmā, Indra, etc., have got full knowledge of God, but still work, because they are office-holders, who remain in this world up to the end of the period of the tenure of their office	556

<i>Adhikaraṇa XV</i>	PAGE
God may be meditated upon in His negative qualities also	557
The form of the Lord is eternal though he may be worshipped as without form	559
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVI</i>	
Meditation on the heavenly city of Brahman is also allowable	562
The city of Brahman is not different from Brahman itself, for the Lord and His world are identical	565
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVII</i>	
Brahman is not attributeless	566
The Parā Śakti of Brahman different from His Mâyā Śakti	567
This Parā Śakti is truth, omniscience, etc.	567
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVIII</i>	
Śrī is the Parā Śakti of the Lord and should be meditated upon	568
Her power and attributes	570
Śrī is identical with the Lord, and His loving her is really loving Himself, and so the Lord is Âtma-kâma (Self-enamoured)	572
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIX</i>	
The Lord Hari may be worshipped either in the form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa or any other form. There is no restrictive rule about it	574
<i>Adhikaraṇa XX</i>	
The grace of the Guru is necessary for the origination of Vidyâ	576
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXI</i>	
Grace is stronger than exertion, though exertion is also necessary	579
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXII</i>	
Meditation on the Lord as "So'ham, I am He"	580
So'ham does not mean that the Jīva is identical with God but is only a form of Bhakti, in which the worshipper temporarily identifies himself with the object of love	581
The Bhaktas are sons of God and therefore not God	584
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXIII</i>	
Mukti or release is the effect of devotion and not of Karma or ritualistic work	585
When the devotees sees the Lord, then he gets Mukti	587

<i>Adhikaraṇa XXIV</i>	PAGE
The worship of the Mahātmās is auxiliary to Mukti	589
The glory of Sat Saṅga	590
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXV</i>	
The vision of the Lord obtained by the Muktas differs according to the paths on which they have come up	592
The vision of the Lord, when he incarnates as an Avatāra, does not cause Mukti necessarily unless the person seeing the Lord recognises Him as such	593
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXVI</i>	
The Lord is obtained by Bhakti, preceded by knowledge. The election by the Lord is not arbitrary	594
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXVII</i>	
The Lord may be meditated upon in the various parts of the body	598
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXVIII</i>	
The preception of the Lord is according to the nature of the meditation	599
The Lord appears as the majestic, the terrible or the all-beautiful, according to the form of one's meditation	600
It is the will of the Lord that men should worship Him in different ways	601
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXIX</i>	
The Lord should be meditated upon as Bhūman or universal also	603
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXX</i>	
The meditation is separate and diverse for each form of the Lord	604
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXXI</i>	
In meditating on one form of the Lord, one should not think of the other forms. The devotee must select one form and stick to it	605
<i>Adhikaraṇa XXXII</i>	
In Kāmya Pujās the devotee may worship other forms of the Lord in order to get those particular desires. But the Ekāntin worshipper must pray to his Iṣṭa Deva alone, for getting all his Kāmya objects even	606

*Adhikaraṇa XXXIII*

PAGE

Meditation upon each member of the body of the Lord, such as face and hand, etc., must be appropriate to that member	607
The Gopāla Tapanī Upaniṣad teaches the particular form of meditation on Śrī Kṛṣṇa	609

## FOURTH PĀDA

*Adhikaraṇa I*

Vidyā not only causes release, but gives all other objects of desire also to the worshipper	614
---	-----

*Adhikaraṇa II*

The Pūrvapakṣa raised by Jaimini	614
According to him Vidyā is supplementary to Karma and his reasons for the same	617

*Adhikaraṇa III*

Refutation of Jaimini's Pūrvapakṣa	620
Vidyā is greater than Karma, and reason for the same	620
The word 'Brahmiṣṭha' explained	623

*Adhikaraṇa IV*

A Brahma-vit, may be a Yatheṣṭāchārin or acting as he likes, for he has risen above all social and religious conventions	627
The celibates are free from all Karmas	629
The opinion of Jaimini as to Kāmacharya	630
The second verse of Īṣāvāsya Upaniṣad explained	631
The God-intoxicated devotees and the works obligatory on them	632
Vidhi, Niyama and Parisaṅkhyā defined	634
The various Bhāvas or emotions	635
The stories told in the Upaniṣads are not for the purpose of pastimes or Pāri-plava	636
These stories illustrate Brahman Vidyā	637
The knower of Brahman need not light the sacred fire	638

*Adhikaraṇa V*

The qualifications necessary for acquiring Brahmanvidyā	638
Sacrifice, alms-giving, penance, fastings, the control of thought, the control of conduct, tolerance, endurance and equilibrium of mind are necessary qualifications	640

<b><i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i></b>	PAGE
A knower of Brahman may eat all kinds of food, in cases of distress	641
Unlawful food may be eaten under certain circumstances	643
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i></b>	
Of the three kinds of devotees (Svaniṣṭha, Pariniṣṭhita and Nirapekṣa) the duties of the Svaniṣṭha described	645
He must perform Karmas	646
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i></b>	
The duties of Pariniṣṭhita devotee	649
He must perform the Bhāgavata Dharma fully and other Dharmas partially	650
He need not perform the duties of his Āśramas	651
King Jaḍa Bharata	651
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i></b>	
The duties of the Nirapekṣa devotees	653
Belonging to any particular Āśrama not a condition precedent for the acquisition of Vidyā	653
The special grace of the Lord on the Nirapekṣas	655
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa X</i></b>	
The non-householder superior to the householder	656
There is no fear of fall for the Nirapekṣa devotees	659
He is above all temptations and desires	660
Constant prayers and worship of the Lord the attribute of the Nirapekṣas	661
The Nirapekṣas are outside the world	662
The Lord is attached to such devotees and constantly follows them	663
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i></b>	
The Nirapekṣa need not work for his daily bread. The God is his purveyor	663
The Lord has sold Himself to his devotees	665
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XII</i></b>	
The Nirapekṣa devotee should perform mental meditation constantly. Dhyāna is his sole duty	667
<b><i>Adhikaraṇa XIII</i></b>	
Why the Chh. Up. concludes with the householder's stage	669
Mukti can be obtained in any Āśrama	670

---

<i>Adhikaraṇa XIV</i>	PAGE
The Divine knowledge should be always kept a secret and imparted only to the fit	673
<i>Adhikaraṇa XV</i>	
The time of the origination of Vidyā	675
Vidyā may arise in one life or in the next	676
<i>Adhikaraṇa XVI</i>	
Vidyā invariably leads to Mukti, but there is no invariable rule that Mukti instantaneously follows Vidyā. Several lives may intervene between the origination of Vidyā and Mukti	678

---

## FOURTH ADHYAYA

---

### MUKTI AND ITS NATURE ; AND KINDS OF MUKTAS

#### FIRST PĀDA

<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	PAGE
Should the practices of Śravana and Manana, etc., be repeated or is it enough if they are practised once only	680
The Sādhana must be repeated because such is the scriptural teaching	681
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The Lord must be worshipped not only as a cosmic ruler, but as the very inmost self of the worshipper	682
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
The Lord is not to be meditated upon as Self in the symbols like mind, etc., for a symbol is not God	683
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The Lord Hari is Brahman and should be meditated upon as such	684
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The eyes, etc., of the Lord should be meditated upon as genera- tors of the sun, moon, etc., as taught in the R̥g. Veda (X. 90)	685
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
Meditation should take place in a sitting posture	686
The recitation of the name of the Lord should also be done in a sitting posture	687
The sitting posture, the most conducive to concentration of mind	688
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The devotee may face any direction in his worship and meditation Whenever and wherever there takes place concentration of the mind, let meditation be performed	689 639
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
The Lord must be worshipped even after Mukti	690



<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	PAGE
The fruits of Vidyā	692
The fruits of Vidyā are twofold, it makes the Kriyamāna Karmas (or works done in the present life), not to contaminate the soul, and it makes the Sañchita (or the stored up Karmas) totally destroyed	692
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The same rule applies to good deeds also; namely, the Kriyamāna good deeds do not cling to a man, and the Sañchita good deeds are destroyed	693
<i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i>	
The Prârabdha Karmas, however, are not destroyed by Vidyā, and the Jñānin lives on to exhaust such Karmas	695
<i>Adhikaraṇa XII</i>	
Vidyā does not destroy the effects of Nitya Karmas	697
<i>Adhikaraṇa XIII</i>	
The theory of vicarious atonement	699
The Prârabdha Karmas of the Nirapekṣa devotee are not enjoyed by the devotee, but go to his friends and foes. His good Karmas are enjoyed by his friends and his evil Karmas by his enemies	701
SECOND PĀDA	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
The method of soul's leaving the body at the time of death, in the case of the Jñānin	703
Speech merges in the mind, so also other sense-organs, this is the first stage of death	704
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
Then the mind merges in the Prâna or breath, this is the second stage of death	705
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
Then the Prâna enters the soul, this is the third stage of death	706
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
Then the soul merges in all elements, this is the fourth stage of death	707

<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	PAGE
This is the method both for the ignorant and the wise	708
The Br. Âr. text (IV. 4-7) explained	710
The subtle body remains	711
The warmth of the body is due to the subtle body	712
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The elements merge in the highest, this is the fifth stage of death	716
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The merging in the Supreme of the permanent atoms is by way of non separation as rivers merge into the ocean	716
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
The method of the going out of the body by the wise	718
The heart lights up. And the soul departs through the hundred and first artery	719
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
The wise follows the rays of the sun whether he dies by day or by night	720
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The wise dying even during the southern progress of the sun goes to the Brahma-world	722
Gitâ (VIII, 23 to 27) explained	723
The words fire, light, day, northern progress of the sun, etc., are names of conducting Devas	723
The Gitâ passage VIII., 23-27 is not an injunction for the sage to select any particular time for dying	724
THIRD PĀDA	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
The Devayâna or the path which leads to Brahman is one and not many	726
The first stage on this path is <i>Archis</i> or light	728
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The thirteen stages on the path	729
The stage of Vâyu comes after that of the Abda (or year)	730
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
The world of Varuṇa is above that of lightning	731

<i>Adhikaraṇa</i>	PAGE
<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	
The words light, day, the bright fortnight, etc., are the names of the conductors of the soul and are not names of time, etc.	732
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The Amānava Puruṣa or the spiritual messenger of God comes down to the plane of lightning to receive the soul	734
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The Amānava Puruṣa leads the soul to the effected Brahman, according to Bādari	735
Going to Brahma's world is a form of Sāmīpya Mukti	736
The souls, residing in the Brahmā's world get final Mukti when Brahmā gets His Mukti	736
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The Amānava Puruṣa leads the soul to the Supreme Brahman and not to the four-faced Brahmā, according to Jaimini	737
He leads the souls of those only who meditate on Supreme Brahman and authority for the same	738
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
The Amānava Puruṣa leads all souls, whether they are worshippers of Supreme Brahman directly or His indirect worshippers, provided they are not worshippers of symbols, according to Bādarāyana	739
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
The Lord himself comes, instead of His messengers, to take certain Nirapekṣas to His abode	741
FOURTH PĀDA	
<i>Adhikaraṇa I</i>	
In Mukti the souls have no body but remain in their own form	745
In Mukti the soul reaches the highest light which is the Lord	748
<i>Adhikaraṇa II</i>	
The soul of the Mukta is united with the Lord in a state of non-separation	749
<i>Adhikaraṇa III</i>	
According to Jaimini the Mukta soul manifests all the attributes given to it by Brahman, namely, the eight attributes of Chh. (VIII. 7-1).	751
According to Auḍulomi the Mukta soul manifests merely as an intelligence.	752

<i>Adhikaraṇa IV</i>	PAGE
According to Bādarāyaṇa the Mukta soul is both all intelligence as well as manifests the eightfold qualities	753
<i>Adhikaraṇa V</i>	
The Mukta becomes a Satya-saṅkalpa, one whose will spontaneously accomplishes its act	754
<i>Adhikaraṇa VI</i>	
The Mukta is really free and is under the control of no one but the Lord	755
<i>Adhikaraṇa VII</i>	
The body of the Mukta is not of Prākṛtic matter	756
According to Bādari the Mukta has no body	757
According to Jaimini the Mukta has a body	758
According to Bādarāyaṇa the Mukta has really no body, but can assume at will any body that it likes	759
<i>Adhikaraṇa VIII</i>	
Even in the absence of a body the Mukta enjoys all objects of desire; the enjoyment is dreamlike when he is bodiless, and it is very vivid when he assumes a body	760
<i>Adhikaraṇa IX</i>	
The Mukta is omniscient through his aura	762
The verse of the Br. Up. (IV., 3.21) does not refer to Mukta; the unconsciousness mentioned there, is the unconsciousness of death or of deep sleep	763
<i>Adhikaraṇa X</i>	
The Mukta, though omniscient, is not almighty. He cannot create or destroy any world-system	764
Creatorship belongs to God alone	766
The Mukta always remains in God	767
Knowledge of one's own self and realising one's latent power is not the highest end of man	768
The highest end of man is to know God	769
The soul is not Vibhu	769
<i>Adhikaraṇa XI</i>	
The Mukta is eternally free and never returns, even when a new world system begins	770
He never returns, he never returns	771





# THE VEDĀNTA-SŪTRAS

WITH THE

## COMMENTARY OF BALADEVA

### FIRST ADHYĀYA

#### FIRST PĀDA

#### THE BLESSED KṚṢṆA IS EVER VICTORIOUS.

We bow with reverence to the Blessed Govinda, the Faultless, the Inconceivable, the Cause of all, the True, the Self-luminous and the Infinity, the Brahman praised by Siva and others, who is worshipped in manifold forms by his devotees.

Vyāsa, the son of Satyawatī, is verily Hari and is ever victorious, all-pervading and loved by His devotees. He, by the rays of his Vedānta Sūtras, has dispelled the darkness of ignorance and revealed the Truth of things.

During the Dvāpara age, when the Vedas were forgotten, Viṣṇu, the Supreme Person, being invited by Brahmā and other limited intelligences, incarnated Himself in the form of Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana. He restored the Vedas and divided them into four parts, and composed the *Brahma Sūtras* in four books, to explain the Vedas. It is so written in the Skandapurāṇa.

Some persons of little intelligence, but wise in their own conceit, misunderstanding the sense of the Vedas, began to propound such mistaken theories as, that the Vedas teach that the performance of the ritualistic worship and sacrifices was the highest end of man ; that Viṣṇu was no Supreme entity but subordinate to Karma : that the heaven, etc., and the fruits of Karmas were eternal : that the (Jīva or) Soul and Matter (or Prakṛiti) were independent in their activities and not subordinate to Īśvara ; that Brahman itself was the Jīva (or human soul), and its manifestation as Jīva was only a reflection or illusion or illusive appearance or limitation ; that the wheel of birth and death is of the Jīva who was not separate from Brahman itself in pure intelligence—the Jīva being nothing but portion

of Brahman called Buddhi, and that release is attained by the meditation on this truth.

All these theories have been put forward as Pūrvaśakṣa and set aside in the Vedānta Sūtras, and it is established therein that the Supreme Viṣṇu is independent, is the Creator of all, has lordship over the whole creation, is Omniscient, is the Highest Goal of man, and is pure Consciousness. The Sūtras speak about five Tattvas or eternal principles, (i) Īśvara or God, (ii) Jīva or Soul, (iii) Prakṛiti or Matter, (iv) Kāla or Time, and (v) Karma or Action. Of these the consciousness of Īśvara is infinite, that of the Jīva is partial. However, both are eternal and have knowledge, etc., and are connoted by the word 'I.' Consciousness cannot be separated from Self-Consciousness, as luminosity cannot but reveal its own form : so there is no conflict in the proposition that God is pure consciousness, and at the same time self-conscious.

(1) Īśvara creates the universe, entering into matter and controlling it ; and He ordains the suffering and release of the souls in it, because He is Independent and All-powerful in His essential form. Though He is one, He has many aspects ; though He is indivisible, He becomes the object of knowledge to the wise as having substance and attributes, and as having a form and the spirit within it ; and though He is unmanifest, He becomes manifest to His seekers through pure devotion. And though He is one essence, in and out, yet He distributes Supreme bliss of His essential form to the Jīvas.

(2) Jīvātman are many and are in different conditions. They are in bondage, which consists in turning its face away from Īśvara. When the Jīva turns its face towards God, then its bondage falls ; and it realises the form and attributes of God. The bondage is of two kinds : that which conceals the essential nature of God, and that which hides His attributes : both kinds of bonds fall off, when the soul turns its face towards God, when there is direct vision of the Supreme.

(3) Prakṛiti is the equilibrium of the three states in which matter exists, namely of Sattva or rhythm, Rajas or activity, and Tamas or stability. Other names of Prakṛiti are Tamas and Māyā. Fertilised by being glanced at by Īśvara, she is the mother of the universe in all its variety.

(4) Kāla or time consists of three states—present, past and future ; and words like 'simultaneous' and 'quick,' 'slow,' etc., are used to denote time. It is measured by seconds, minutes, hours, days, years, cycles, Yugas, up to Parārdha. It is in constant motion like a wheel, and is the cause of creation and destruction. It is an unintelligent substance, a Jaḍam.

The four substances, Īśvara, etc., are eternal, as says the Svotāśvetara Upaniṣad, VI., 13.

नित्यो नित्यानां चेतनश्चेतनानामेको बहूनां यो विदधाति कामान् । तत् कारणं  
सांख्ययोगाधिगम्यं ज्ञात्वा देवं मुच्यते सर्वपाशैः ॥

He is the Eternal among the eternal, the Thinker among thinkers, who, though one, fulfils the desires of many. He who has known that cause which is apprehended by Sāṅkhya (Philosophy) and Yoga (religious discipline), he is freed from all fetters.

*Note.*—To the same effect is the following text of the Bhulvaveyas: “Verily the Spirit, Matter, the Souls, and the Time are eternal. The non-eternals are Prāṇa, Śraddhā, the elements and their compounds. Those which are products are non-eternal. Those which are never produced are eternal.”

So also in the Chulika Upaniṣad (verse 5):

गौरनादवती सा तु जनित्री भूतभाविनी । असिता सितरक्ता च सर्वकामदुषा विभोः ॥

Prakṛiti is like a cow but voiceless, the creatrix of all beings, black, white and red are her colours, and she is the cow of desire, belonging to the Lord.

Being (Sat) alone was in the beginning, as we find in Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI. 2-1).

सदेव सोम्येदमग्र आसीद्, etc., ‘Being was in the beginning, O dear, etc.’ Though one of the eternal, the Lord is the ruler of the other three, namely, the Jivas, etc., as they are controlled by Him, as says the Svet. Up., VI., 16. :

स विश्वकृद्विश्वविदात्मयोनिर्ज्ञः कालकारो गुण्यी सर्वविद्यः ।

प्रधानक्षेत्रज्ञपतिर्गुणेशः संसारमोक्षस्थितिबन्धहेतुः ॥

He makes all, He knows all, the Self-caused, the Knower, the Maker of time, (*i.e.*, the the Destroyer of time), who assumes all qualities and knows everything, the master of nature and of man, the lord of the three qualities (Guṇas), the cause of the bondage, the existence and the liberation of the world.

(5) Karma is non-intelligent and its synonyms are Adṛiṣṭa, fate, etc. It is beginningless, but not everlasting, because it is subject to destruction.

The last four, *i. e.*, Jīva, Prakṛiti, time and fate all possess energy, because of the energy of Brahman. The power that works within them is the power of the Lord. Therefore, Brahman alone is the one that has power. Hence the texts showing that Brahman alone exists also become harmonious; as there is no other force but that of Brahman alone. All these will be fully explained as we proceed.

The Vedānta Sūtras, or Chaturlakṣaṇi, are so called, because they possess four characteristic marks or Lakṣaṇas or Adhyāyas or books. As it is described in Śrī Bhāgavata (Book I., Ch. VII., Verses 4 to 6), which in fact is a commentary on the Sūtras :

“Vyāsa, in his meditation, while his heart was pure, mind concentrated, spirit full of devotion, saw at first the Supreme Lord as all-pervading; and he next saw the Māyā



as subordinate to the Lord. He saw too the great round of Saṃsāra and how deluded by this Māyā, Jīvas consider themselves as consisting of three Guṇas, and not as portions of the Lord and how they fall into great calamity. He further saw means of destroying this calamity, which was entire, selfless devotion to the Supreme God. Hence Vyāsa composed this Bhāgavata Purāṇa in order to teach ignorant mankind that devotion." "The Substance, the Karma, the Time, the Svabhāva and the Jīva have their potencies to produce effect because of His grace—they have no power of their own, if He withdraws His energy from them."

That Bhāgavata is a commentary on Brahma Sūtras is expressly stated in Garuḍa Purāṇa, where it says :

"The Sri Bhāgavata is an explanation of Brahma Sūtras. It is also the commentary of Mahābhārata. This contains as well the commentaries of Gāyatrī and the Vedas. The place of Śrī Bhāgavata amongst the Purāṇas is similar to that of the Sāma Veda amongst the other Vedas."

In the First Book, the author shows that all the Vedic texts uniformly refer to Brahman and find their Samanvaya (reconciliation) in Him. In the Second Book, it has been proved that there is no conflict between Vedānta and other Śāstras. In the Third Book the means of attaining Brahman are described. In the Fourth Book is described the result of attaining Brahman.

As regards the Adhikārī. A person, who is of tranquil mind and has the attributes of Sama (quietude), Dama (self-control), etc., is full of faith, is constantly engaged in good thoughts and associates with the knowers of Truth, whose heart is purified by the due discharge of all duties, religious and secular, without any idea of reward, is the Adhikārī or one competent to understand and study the Śāstra. Secondly, the Sambandha is the description of Brahman by this Śāstra. Thirdly, the Viśaya or subject-matter of this Śāstra is the Supreme Puruṣa, Being, Intelligence and Bliss, whose power is infinite and inconceivable, and who possesses innumerable attributes, and who is all pure. He is the subject treated of in this Śāstra. Fourthly, the necessity (Prayojana) of this Śāstra is to obtain realisation of the Supreme God, by the removal of all false notions that prevent that realisation.

This Śāstra consists of several Adhikaraṇas or topics or propositions. Every proposition consists of five parts : (i) Thesis or Viśaya, (ii) Doubt or Saṃśaya, (iii) Anti-thesis or Pūrva Pakṣa, (iv) Synthesis or right conclusion or Siddhānta, and lastly, (v) Saṅgati or agreement of the proposition with the other parts of the Śāstra. Saṅgati or consistency shows that there is no conflict in what precedes and what follows. It is of three sorts :

(i) Consistency with the scripture is called Śāstra Saṅgati, (ii) consistency with the whole book or Adhyāya Saṅgati, (iii) consistency with the whole chapter or Pāda, called Pāda Saṅgati. Thus in the whole book of the Vedānta Sūtras Brahman is its main theme, it is the subject-matter of discussion. Therefore, an interpretation of any passage, in

order to fulfil the condition of Sāstra Saṅgati, must not go away from the subject-matter of Brahman. Secondly, with the Adhyāya or portion of the book of the Vedānta Sūtra, each Adhyāya has a particular topic of its own and a passage must be interpreted consistently with the topic of that Adhyāya. Similar is the case with Pāda Saṅgati. Besides these three sorts of Saṅgatis, there is a certain relation between Adhikaraṇas themselves. One Adhikaraṇa leads to another through some particular association of ideas. In a Pāda there are many Adhikaraṇas and they are not put together at haphazard. The Saṅgati which binds one Adhikaraṇa with another is of six sorts :

(1) Ākṣepa Saṅgati or objection, (2) Dṛṣṭānta or illustration, (3) Prati-Dṛṣṭānta or counter-illustration, (4) Prasaṅga Saṅgati or incidental illustration, (5) Utpatti Saṅgati or introduction, and (6) Apavāda Saṅgati or exception. All these various kinds will be shown in their proper place in explaining these Sūtras. An Adhikaraṇa or topic is also called Nyāya.

### *Adhikaraṇa I—The Enquiry into Brahman*

The first Adhikaraṇa or topic is that of Brahma-Jijñāsā or Enquiry into Brahman. The Adhikaraṇa may be shown in its five parts, thus :

(1) *Viśaya* or Thesis. Brahman or God ought to be enquired into. The following texts show that Brahman ought to be enquired into. As Chhāndogya Upaniṣad (Chapter VII, 25. 1.) says :

यो वै भूमा तत् सुखं नाल्पे सुखमस्ति भूमैव सुखं भूमा त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्य इति भूमानं भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥

The Infinite (Brahman) is bliss. There is no bliss in anything definite. Infinity only is bliss. The infinity, however, we must desire to understand.

Again it is written in the Br. Up., II. 4. 5.

आत्मा वा अरे द्रष्टव्यः श्रोतव्यो मन्तव्यो निदिध्यासितव्यो मैत्रेय्यात्मनो वा अरे दर्शनेन श्रवणेन मत्या विज्ञानेनेदं सर्वं विदितम् ॥

Verily, the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked, O Maitreyi, when we see, hear, perceive, and know the Self, then all this is known.

The word Nididhyāsitaṃ in the above, which has been translated as "to be marked," means really "to be enquired into." These two texts therefore, show that Brahman is to be enquired into.

(2) *Samsāya* or Doubt : But there are other texts which show that Brahman is not to be enquired into. A person who has studied the Vedas and knows the Dharma Śāstra, should he enquire into Brahman ? or should he not ? The texts that give rise to doubt are the following :

अपाम सोमममृता अभूमागन्म ज्योतिरविदाम देवान् ।

We have drunk Soma and become immortal ; we have attained the light, the Gods discovered—Rig Veda, VIII, 48. 3.

Again अक्षय्यं ह वै चातुर्मास्ययाजिनः सुकृतं भवति । 'Verily the reward of those who perform the four-months ceremonies is unending, eternal.' These texts show that by drinking Soma or performing Chāturmāsya ceremony, immortality and unending rewards are obtained.

(3) Purvapakṣa or Anithesis : Therefore, the Purvapakṣa or Antithesis is : 'Brahman need not be enquired into, Dharma is everything.'

(4) Siddhānta : To this, the author Bādarāyaṇa replies by the first Sūtra of his Aphorisms, saying :

SŪTRA 1. 1. 1.

अथतो ब्रह्मजिज्ञासा । १ । १ । १ ॥

Word meaning :—अथ Atha, now. यतः Atah, therefore. ब्रह्म-जिज्ञासा Brahma-Jijñāsā—enquiry into Brahman.

Now therefore enquiry should be made into Brahman—1.

BALADEVA'S COMMENTARY.

The word 'Atha' means immediate sequence : 'Atah' means therefore. The sense of the Sūtra is that enquiry into Brahman should be made now.

The immediate sequence is the acquisition of the following qualifications. A person, who has properly studied the Vedas, who has understood their meaning in a general way, who has performed his duties in the proper stage of life or Āśrama, who is truthful, etc., whose mind has been purified by such actions, who has the good fortune of coming into contact with a knower of truth, should then commence to enquire into Brahman. Why should he do so ? Because he realises that all Kāmyakarmas or religious duties performed for getting certain desires, produce fruits which are transitory and limited ; while the Supreme Brahman, realised through knowledge, is the cause of eternal happiness, unending mental joy, and eternal true knowledge. Thus convinced, he renounces all Kāmyakarmas, and enters into the enquiry and study of the Vedānta Sūtras called Chaturlakṣaṇī.

*Objection* : An objector may say, "By the mere study of the Vedas, one can understand Brahman ; for study of the Vedas means not merely parrot-like utterances of the Vedic Mantras, but understanding their sense also. Therefore, there is no necessity for the study of the Vedānta Sūtras, as the study of the Vedas will refine the heart and incline the mind towards the knowledge of Brahman."

*Answer* : To this we reply, "True, he will have the general understanding of the senses of the Vedas ; but when doubts will arise in his mind, his intellect will be clouded and his faith will be shaken. Therefore, the study of the Vedānta Sūtras is necessary, so that by proper arguments and reasoning, he may strengthen his position and be firm in his understanding."

The sense is this. The duties of one's Āśrama properly performed go to refine the heart, etc. Thus they become indirectly means of attaining knowledge : as the following text shows :

तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणा विविदिषन्ति यज्ञेन दानेन तपसाऽनाशकेन ।

The seekers of Brahman try to know Him by the study of the Vedas, by sacrifice, by gifts, by penances, by fastings, (Br. Up., IV., 4. 22).

The following texts show that truth, prayer and austerity are also essential qualifications :

सत्येन लभ्यस्तपसा ह्येषा आत्मा सम्यग्ज्ञानेन ब्रह्मचर्येण नित्यम् ।

This Self is to be obtained by *Truth*, by *Penance*, by perpetual celibacy and complete knowledge. (Mund. Up., III., 1. 5).

जप्येनैव तु संसिद्ध्यद् ब्राह्मणो नात्र संशयः ।

कुर्यादन्यन्न वा कुर्यान्मैत्रो ब्राह्मण उच्यते ॥

But undoubtedly a Brāhmaṇa reaches the highest goal by reciting *prayers* only ; whether he performs other (rites) or neglects them, he who befriends all creatures is declared to be the true Brāhmaṇa. (Manu., II., 87).

The association with those who know Brahman (the truth) also produces Brahma-knowledge. As we see that Nārada and others, by their association with Sanat Kumāra and others, first came to enquire into Brahman and ultimately understood it. As says the Gītā : (IV, 34).

तद्विद्धि प्रणिपातेन परिश्रमेन सेवया ।

उपदेक्ष्यन्ति ते ज्ञानं ज्ञानिनस्तत्त्वदर्शिनः ।

Learn thou this by discipleship, by investigation, and by service. The wise, the seers of the essence of things, will instruct thee in wisdom.

The fruits of Kāmyakarmas are transitory and non-eternal, as we find from the following text :

तद्यथेह कर्मजितो लोकः क्षीयत एवमेवामुत्र पुरयजितो लोकः क्षीयते तथ इहात्मानमननुविद्य ब्रजन्त्येताऽंश्च सत्यान् कामाऽंस्तेषां सर्वेषु लोकेष्वकामचारो भवत्यथ य इहात्मानमननुविद्य ब्रजन्त्येताऽंश्च सत्यान् कामाऽंस्तेषां सर्वेषु कामचारो भवति ॥

And as here on earth, whatever has been acquired by exertion perishes, so perishes whatever is acquired for the next world by sacrifices and other good actions performed on earth. Those who depart from hence without having discovered the Self and those true desires, for them there is no freedom in all the worlds. But those who depart from hence, after having discovered the Self and those true desires, for them there is freedom in all the worlds. (Chh. Up., VIII., 1-6).

The Brahman is comprehended by Jñāna alone and not by Karma, as says the Mūṇḍaka Upaniṣad :

परीक्ष्य लोकान् कर्मचितान् ब्राह्मणो निर्वेदमायान्नास्त्यकृतः कृतेन । तद्विज्ञानार्थं स गुरुमेवाभिगच्छेत्

समित्पाणिः श्रोत्रियं ब्रह्मनिष्ठम् ॥

Let a Brāhmaṇa, after he has examined all these worlds which are gained by works, acquire freedom from all desires. Nothing that is eternal (not made) can be gained by

what is not eternal (made). Let him, in order to understand this, take fuel in his hand and approach a Guru who is learned and dwells entirely in Brahman. (Muṇḍ. Up., 1., 2-12).

The Brahman gives, moreover, undecaying and infinite happiness, as says Taittiriya Upaniṣad : सत्यं ज्ञानमनन्तं ब्रह्म ।

Truth, the knowledge, the infinity is Brahman. (Tai. Up., II., 1-1).

आनन्दो ब्रह्मेति व्यजानात् । "he understood that Brahman was bliss."

The Lord possesses Eternal Knowledge and other such attributes as we learn from the following texts of the Śvetāśvetara Upaniṣad :

न तस्य कार्यं करणं च विद्यते न तत्समश्चाभ्यधिकश्च दृश्यते ।

परास्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रूयते स्वाभाविकी ज्ञानबलक्रिया च ॥ ८ ॥

He has neither body nor sense organs ; no one is found equal or superior to Him. His various transcendental powers are sung in the Vedas, namely, wisdom, strength, and action which are natural to Him. (VI., 8).

सर्वेन्द्रियगुणाभासं सर्वेन्द्रियविवर्जितम् ।

सर्वस्य प्रभुमीशानं सर्वस्य शरणं सुहृद् ॥

"They know him to be the source of the power of all the senses, but Himself devoid of all senses ; the Lord and Guide of all, the Great, Refuge, and Friend of all." (III., 17.)

भावग्राहमनीडाख्यं भावाभावकरं शिवम् ।

कलासर्गकरं देवं ये विदुस्ते जहुस्तनुम् ॥

Those who have known the God who is to be obtained by truth, whose name is the Incorporeal, who is the cause of creation and destruction, the Good, the maker of the parts (that form the body), have abandoned the body. (V., 14).

He is the giver of eternal joy, as we find from the following text of the Gopāla Upaniṣad :

तं पीठस्थं ये तु युजन्ति धीरास्तेषां सुखं शाश्वतं नेतरेषाम् (another reading is येऽनुभजन्ति । Gopāla, Pūrvatāpani, verse 5.)

"The wise who worship the Lord seated on the throne (of the heart) have the joy eternal and not the others." (Thirty-two Upaniṣads, Anandāśrama Series, p. 295.)

The worthlessness of acts performed through a motive of obtaining rewards (Kāmyakarmas) will be described in the third book.

Thus to sum up. One who has mastered the Vedas, along with their six auxiliary sciences and the Upaniṣads, and has obtained a general knowledge of their meaning, who through associating with the knowers of truth has acquired the faculty of discriminating between the permanent and the transitory, and is disgusted with the impermanent things of the world and wishes to know the permanent more in detail, enters into the study of the Vedānta Sūtras called the Chaturlakṣaṇī, (in order to understand in detail and more comprehensively that which he had understood in a general way before).

It is not possible here to say, that the enquiry into Brahman should be undertaken after one has acquired the knowledge of the Karma Kāṇḍa (by the study of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā) and that one who has mastered

Karma Kāṇḍa naturally enters into the enquiry of Brahman. For it is seen, that those who do not associate with the good, and are deprived of the benefit of their company, are not found to enquire into Brahman ; while on the contrary those who do not know Karma Kāṇḍa, but who are purified by truthfulness, prayer, etc., and have the merit of associating with the good, naturally enter into such enquiry. Nor is it right to say that, the sequence alluded to by the word *Atha*, refers to the acquisition of the four qualifications, (namely, the right discrimination, right dispassion, right conduct and right earnestness to know Brahman). For these four qualifications are impossible to get prior to the association with the holy ; and it is well-known that these come after such association with the holy, and after getting knowledge and teaching from them : for then these qualifications (*Viveka*, *Vairāgya*, *Ṣaṭ Sampatti* and *Mumukṣuttva*) arise in man.

Those who have acquired such knowledge, by associating with good people, and who are devoted to their teacher, are divided into the three classes called *Saṁṣṭha*, etc. The *Saṁṣṭha* or devoted is he who performs all acts with zeal and faith (*Niṣṭhā*). The higher devotee or the *Pariniṣṭhita* is he who performs all works, merely for the sake of the good of humanity (and as an example to others). The third class is the dispassionate sage, ever immersed in meditation ; uninfluenced by anything. All these reach the Supreme Brahman, through Divine wisdom, according to their nature ; all this will be made clear further on.

But says an objector : "The word '*Atha*' is a term denoting auspiciousness," for says a *Smṛiti* : "The words *Om* and *Atha* came out of the throat of *Brahmā* in the beginning, hence both these are auspicious words." "All good men employ these words in the beginning of every Scripture, in order to destroy all obstacles." To this we reply : "It is not so." There can be no apprehension of danger to the Lord (and the *Vedānta Sūtras* being the production of the Lord in His incarnation as *Vyāsa*, are not open to any adverse obstacles). That *Vyāsa* is the Lord incarnate, we learn from the following text : "Know that *Kṛiṣṇa Dvaipāyana Vyāsa* is the Lord *Nārāyaṇa* Himself." Still he has employed the word '*Atha*,' as the first word of the *Sūtras*, because it is an auspicious term inherently, as the sound of a conch-shell is naturally auspicious. Therefore, if it denotes auspiciousness here, there is no harm. The author has followed in it the usage of ordinary people. Therefore, a person whose heart is purified, by the performance of *Niṣkāma Karmas*, and by *Sat Saṅga* or association with holy men, and by being taught by them, should enter into an enquiry into Brahman.

### Adhikarana II.—Brahman defined

*Objection* : An objector says : "The word 'Bhūmā' is applied in the Chh. Up., (VIII., 23.1.) to Jiva or Soul."

यो वै भूमा तत् सुखं नाल्पे सुखमस्ति भूमैव सुखं भूमा त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्य इति भूमानं भगवो विजिज्ञास इति यत्र नान्यत्पश्यति नान्यच्छृणोति नान्यद्विजानाति स भूमाऽथ यवान्यत्पश्यत्यन्यच्छृणोत्यन्यद्विजानाति तदल्पं यो वै भूमातदमृतमथ यदल्पं तन्मर्त्यं स भगवः कस्मिन् प्रतिष्ठित इति स्वे महिम्नि यदि वान महिम्नीति ॥ १ ॥

"The Infinity (Bhūman) is bliss. There is no bliss in anything finite. Infinity only is bliss. This Infinity, however, we must desire to understand. Sir, I desire to understand it." "Where one sees nothing else, hears nothing else, that is the Infinite. Where one sees something else, hears something else, that is the finite. The Infinite is immortal, the finite is mortal."

Because the context of that chapter shows that the Jiva is the topic of discussion there. As this 'Bhūmā' is to be enquired into and as the first Sūtra refers to this text of the Chhāndogya Upaniṣad, therefore, Brahman of the first Sūtra must refer to the individual soul and not to Brahman.

*Note* :—The full text of the Bhūmā passage is given below in order to understand the full argument of the Pūrvaapakṣin who says that the word Bhūmā refers to the Jiva and not to the Supreme Spirit.

प्राणो वा आशया भूयान्यथा वा अरा नामौ समर्पिता एवमस्मिन् प्राणे सर्वं समर्पितं प्राणः प्राणेन याति प्राणः प्राणं ददाति प्राणाय ददाति प्राणो ह पिता प्राणो माता प्राणो भ्राता प्राणः स्वसा प्राण आचार्यः प्राणो ब्राह्मणः ॥ १ ॥ स यदि पितरं वा मातरं वा भ्रातरं वा स्वसारं वाचार्यं वा ब्रह्मणं वा किञ्चिद् भृशमिव प्रत्याह धिक्त्वाऽस्तीत्येवैनमाहुः पितृहा वै त्वमसि मातृहा वै त्वमसि भ्रातृहा वै त्वमसि स्वसृहा वै त्वमस्याचार्यहा वै त्वमसि ब्राह्मणहा वै त्वमसीति ॥ २ ॥ अथ यद्यप्येनानुत्क्रान्तप्राणान् शूलेन स मासं व्यतिसन्देहेनैवेन ब्रूयुः पितृहासीति न मातृहासीति न भ्रातृहासीति न स्वसृहासीति नाचार्यहासीति न ब्राह्मणहासीति ॥ ३ ॥ प्राणो ह्येतानि सर्वाणि भवति स वा एष एवं पश्यन्नैवं मन्वान एवं विजानन्नतिवादी भवति तच्चेद् ब्रूयुरतिवाद्यसीत्यतिवाद्यस्मीति ब्रूयान्नापङ्कवीत ॥ ४ ॥

'Spirit (Prāṇa) is better than hope. As the spokes of a wheel hold to the nave, so does all this (beginning with name and ending in hope) hold to Spirit. That Spirit moves by the Spirit, it gives Spirit to the Spirit. Father means Spirit, mother Spirit, brother Spirit, sister Spirit, tutor Spirit, Brāhmaṇa Spirit.'

'For if one says anything unbecoming to a father, mother, brother, sister, tutor or Brāhmaṇa then people say : Shame on thee ! Thou hast offended father, mother, brother, sister, tutor or a Brāhmaṇa.

'But, if after the spirit has departed from them, one shoves them together with a poker, and burns them to pieces, no one would say : 'Thou offendest thy father, mother, brother, sister, tutor or a Brāhmaṇa,

‘Spirit then is all this. He who sees this, perceives this and understands this, becomes an *ativādin*. If people say to such a man, Thou art an *Ativādin*, he may say, I am an *Ativādin* ; he need not deny it.’

Similarly the text, “*Ātmā vāre draṣṭavya*,” ‘Self must be seen.’ The word *Ātmā* refers to the individual soul, and not to God. The context there also shows that the individual soul is referred to. Because we find it stated there, ‘Not for the sake of wife, is the wife dear, but for the sake of the Self the wife is dear.’

*Note:* The full text is given below :

स होवाच न वा अरे पत्युः कामाय पतिः प्रियो भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय पतिः प्रियो भवति न वा अरे जाययै कामाय जाया प्रिया भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय जाया प्रिया भवति न वा अरे पुत्राणां कामाय पुत्राः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय पुत्राः प्रिया भवन्ति न वा अरे वित्तस्य कामाय वित्तं प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय वित्तं प्रियं भवति न वा अरे पशूनां कामाय पशवः प्रियाः भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय पशवः प्रिया भवन्ति न वा अरे ब्रह्मणः कामाय ब्रह्म प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय ब्रह्म प्रियं भवति न वा अरे क्षत्रस्य कामाय क्षत्रं प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय क्षत्रं प्रियं भवति न वा अरे लोकानां कामाय लोकाः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय लोकाः प्रिया भवन्ति न वा अरे देवानां कामाय देवाः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय देवाः प्रिया भवन्ति न वा अरे भूतानां कामाय भूतानि प्रियाणि भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय भूतानि प्रियाणि भवन्ति न वा अरे सर्वस्य कामाय सर्वं प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय सर्वं प्रियं भवति आत्मा वा अरं द्रष्टव्यः श्रोतव्यो मन्तव्यो निदिध्यासितव्यो मैत्रेयात्मनि खल्वरे दृष्टे श्रुते मते विज्ञात इदं सर्वं विदितम् ॥ ६ ॥

‘And he said : ‘Verily, a husband is not dear, that you may love the husband ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, a husband is dear.’

‘Verily, a wife is not dear, that you may love the wife ; but that you may love the Self, therefore a wife is dear.’

‘Verily, sons are not dear, that you may love the sons ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, sons are dear.’

‘Verily, wealth is not dear, that you may love wealth ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, wealth is dear.’

‘Verily, the Brāhmaṇa class is not dear, that you may love the Brāhmaṇa class ; but that you may love the Self, therefore the Brāhmaṇa class is dear.’

‘Verily, the Kṣatriya class is not dear, that you may love the Kṣatriya class ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, the Kṣatriya class is dear.’

‘Verily, the worlds are not dear, that you may love the worlds, but that you may love the Self, therefore, the worlds are dear.’

‘Verily, the Devas are not dear, that you may love them ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, the Devas are dear.’

‘Verily, creatures are not dear, that you may love the creatures ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, creatures are dear.’

‘Verily, every thing is not dear, that you may love every thing ; but that you may love the Self, therefore, every thing is dear.’

‘Verily, the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked, O *Maitreyi* ! When we see, hear, perceive, and know the Self, then all this is known.’



Moreover the word Brahman has several meanings, according to lexicographers. It means anything big, the Brāhmaṇical caste, the lotus-seated Brahmā and the Vedas. Therefore, when the first Sūtra says that Brahman should be enquired into, the doubt arises, does it mean something big that should be enquired into? or the Brāhmaṇical caste should be enquired into? or the lotus-seated Brahmā must be enquired into? or the Vedas?

*Answer* : To remove this doubt the next Sūtra has been formulated by Bādarāyaṇa. It is based on the following verse of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad :

भृगुर्वै वारुणिः । वरुणं पितरमुपससार । अपीहि भगवो ब्रह्मेति । तस्मा एतत्प्रोवाच । अन्नं प्राणं चक्षुः श्रोत्रं मनो वाचमिति । तर्प्यं होवाच । यतो वा इमानि भूतानि जायन्ते । येन जातानि जीवन्ति । यत्प्रभवन्त्यभिसंविशन्ति । तद्विजिज्ञासस्व । तद्ब्रह्मेति ।

Bṛigu went to his father Varuṇa, saying : 'Sir, teach me Brahman.' He told him this, *viz.*, 'Food, breath, the eye, ear, mind, speech.'

Then he said again to him : 'That from whence these beings are born, that by which, when born, they live, that into which they enter at their death, try to know that : that is Brahman.'

*Doubt* : Now the doubt arises. Is the Brahman that is to be enquired into Jiva (individual soul) or Īśvara (God)?

*Purvapakṣa* : The Brahman is Jiva (individual soul), because we find in that very Taittiriya Upaniṣad the following :

विज्ञानं ब्रह्म चेद्वेद तस्माच्चेन्न प्रमाद्यति ।

शरीरे पाप्मनो हित्वा सर्वान् कामान् समश्नुत इति ।

If a man knows understanding (Vijñāna) as Brahman and if he does not swerve from it, he leaves all evils behind in the body, and all his wishes,' (Taitt. Up., II., 5.).

Here the word Brahman is applied to Vijñāna, which is a name of the Jiva ; and that very text also shows that this Vijñāna is to be meditated upon. And moreover a Jiva may acquire the power of creation, by the supreme force of some invisible cause.

*Siddhānta* : To this doubt and Pūrvapakṣa the next Sūtra gives answer by describing the peculiar attributes of Brahman who is the topic of discussion of the Vedānta Sūtras.

## SŪTRA I, 1. 2.

जन्माद्यस्य यतः । १ । १ । २ ॥

जन्म Janma, birth आदि Ādi, and the rest, *i.e.*, sustenance and dissolution, अद्य (Ādya, of this (universe)). यतः Yatah, from whom ; from what Lord,

*Note* : The Saṅgati is Ākṣepikī.

2.—He, from whom proceeds the creation, preservation, and reconstruction of the universe, is Brahman—2.\*

## COMMENTARY.

The word 'Janmādi' of the Sūtra is a Bahu-brihi compound of the kind, called 'Tat gūṇa sam vijñāna.' It literally means creation, maintenance, etc. The word "etc." includes preservation and destruction. The word 'Asya' means, of this : namely, these fourteen planes or 'Lokas,' people of the various Jīvas beginning with the highest Brahmā and ending with the humblest grass, where the souls enjoy or suffer the rewards or punishments of their actions : this mysterious universe whose deeper depths no human intellect can fathom ; this wonderful world of strange construction. The word 'Yatah' means "from whom" : namely, from that Supreme God, whose power is inconceivable, who Himself is the agent of creation as well as the material cause, from whom proceeds this universe, He is Brahman. He is the subject to be enquired into the Vedānta Sūtras.

The words 'Bhūmā' and 'Atmā' principally apply to the Supreme Lord, because both etymologically mean 'all-pervading.' This will be fully explained in Bhūmādhikaraṇa (I. 3 : 7) and in Vākya Anvaya Adhikaraṇa (I. 4 : 19). Therefore the word Brahman applies only to God, as it denotes the possession of unlimited and unsurpassed attributes, and is valid only with regard to God, (who is the Lord of creation and destruction).

In the Vedas the word Brahman means, 'in whom all the attributes reach to the infinity.' Brahman primarily means Supreme God ; secondarily, the word applies to those beings other than God, because they also manifest some of the god-like qualities. Thus as the word king may be applied in its secondary sense to the servants of the crown. So God alone, who is the ocean of compassion and love towards his devotees, should be the object of enquiry, in order to get release, by all beings who are scorched by the three-fold sorrows of existence and are panting to obtain peace. Therefore, the object of enquiry is the Supreme Being only called Para Brahman. Nor can we say that these attributes are superimposed on Brahman, and that consequently the Jīva may be called Brahman in the Sūtra. Therefore, even according to the literal meaning of the word Brahman, namely, 'He in whom all the attributes reach to infinity,' this term is applied to God and not to Jīva, (for etymologically the word Brahman cannot be applied to man).

The word 'Jijñāsa' means 'the desire to know, to acquire Jñāna.' Jñāna is of two sorts : (i) direct or intuitive, (ii) indirect or inferential.

As we know from the Sruti : 'Vijñāya prajñām kurvita' 'Having known Him, let him practice meditation' (Br. Up., IV., 4. 2.). Here Vijñāya refers to indirect knowledge. Prajñām is direct or intuitive knowledge. The first is merely the gateway, while Prajñām or meditation is the direct means of acquiring knowledge. It will be explained more fully further on. Knowledge of one's own individual self is a great help in obtaining a knowledge of Brahman. Hence the Sruti teaches : 'Know the understanding (Jīva) as Brahman.' He who knows himself is on the high road to the knowledge of the Supreme Self. The text 'Know the understanding (Jīva) as Brahman' does not mean that Jīva is Brahman, because it is clearly established in this Śāstra that the Jīva is separate from Brahman. Thus see Sūtras I. 1. 16, I. 1. 17, I. 3. 5, I. 3. 21, I. 3. 41. These five Sūtras explain that Brahman is separate from Jīva. Even in the state of release, the Jīva is never one with Brahman, but remains separate from him, as will be explained later on.

#### *An Important Maxim of Interpretation*

In interpreting a text there are certain maxims to be observed. One of those is laid down in the following verse :

उपक्रमोपसंहारावभ्यासोऽपूर्वता फलम् ।

अर्थवादोऽपत्तीच लिङं तात्पर्यं निर्णये ॥

'The beginning (Upakrama), the conclusion (Upasamhāra), the repetition (Abhyāsa), peculiarity (Apūrvatā), the object (Phalam), the explanation of purpose (Arthavāda) and suitableness (Upapatti) are the six indications, by means of which the purport of a doubtful text may be arrived at.'

Applying all these six marks of interpretation to Upaniṣad texts, we find that they all lead to the conclusion that Jīva is different from Brahman. As we find in the Svetāśvetara Upaniṣad, IV. 6. 7. :

द्वा सुपर्णा सयुजा सखाया समानं वृक्षं परिषस्वजाते । तयोरन्यः पिप्पलं स्वाद्वत्त्यनश्नन्नन्योऽभिचा-  
कशीति ॥ ६ ॥ समाने वृक्षे पुरुषो निमग्नोऽनीशया शोचति मुह्यमानः । जुष्टं यदा पश्यत्यन्यमीशमस्य  
महिमानमिति वीतशोकः ॥ ७ ॥

"Two birds, inseparable friends, cling to the same tree. One of them eats the sweet fruits, the other looks at it without eating.

"On the same tree a man sits grieving, immersed, bewildered by his own impotence (Aniṣa). But when he sees the other Lord (Īśa) contented, and knows His glory, then his grief passes away."

Now in these two verses the Upakrama or the opening words are *two* birds (showing there is duality and not monism) ; the conclusion or Upasamhāra is Anyam Īśam "the other who is the Lord" (which shows that the Lord is Anyam or different from Jīva), the repetition is "the other looks on without eating;" and "when he sees the other lord;" the Apūrvatā

or peculiarity consists in this that the difference between man and God could not have been known but through the Śāstras, and this passage teaches such difference ; a fact which could not have been known but through revelation. The object (Phalam) is "his grief passes away." Arthavāda is "He who knows his glory," while suitableness is "one remains without eating."

Thus applying all these six marks to the above passage of the Svetāśvetara Upaniṣad, we come to the conclusion that the Śruti in all its parts, teaches difference between Jīva and Brahman. The same maxim may be applied to other texts also.

*Objection :* An objector says that the object of every Śāstra is to teach something which is not known ; and the knowledge of which leads to some great result. Therefore, the Śāstra teaches the unity of Jīva and Brahman. For what was the necessity of teaching that the Jīva and Brahman are two separate Beings, when every one knows it by his ordinary consciousness and such a knowledge is of no great use. Therefore, Advaita or the ideal Monism is the real doctrine taught in this Śāstra, and not Theism or Dvaita. Therefore, the verses that describe the difference between the Jīva and Brahman are merely the reassertion of a well-known popular fact, and not a teaching of something rare and unknown.

*Answer :* To this objection we say, that there is no force in this argument, for there are other verses also in the Upaniṣads which show the same duality or difference between Jīva and Brahman. Thus in Svetāśvetara Upaniṣad, I. 6. :

सर्वाजीवि सर्वसंस्थे बृहन्ते तस्मिन् इंसो भ्राम्यते ब्रह्मचक्रे ।

पृथगात्मानं प्रेरितारञ्च मत्वा जुष्टस्तस्तेनामृतत्वमेति ॥ ६ ॥

"When he sees himself as different from the Lord of the world, then he is blest by Him, then he gets immortality."

Moreover the whole world knows generally that man is different from God, yet it does not know that man and God are differentiated from each other by having contrary attributes. (One is almighty, the other is of limited capacity ; one being all-pervading, the other is atomic ; one being controller, the other is controlled). (Nor does this world know by mere common sense, unillumined by revelation, that the Jīva and Brahman, though possessing these diametrically opposite attributes, yet have a certain co-relation to each other). Therefore, arises the necessity of teaching Dvaita, while Advaita is something inconceivable, even according to its expounders ; and so is not a true doctrine. It is a non-entity like the horn of a hare. The Advaita is a state of no fruitions.

The holders of this theory maintain that the soul in release is in absolute isolation. And since the Advaitins do not acknowledge the existence of consciousness in the state of Mokṣa, that state is as good as non-existent.

Those few texts of the Upaniṣads which apparently teach an Advaita doctrine, have been construed by the author, Bādarāyaṇa, himself, in a Dvaita sense. He explains the phrase that 'everything is Brahman' in the sense that everything is under the control of Brahman and pervaded by Him. This would be explained fully later on. The same view is taught by the author in the Sūtra I. 1. 30.

### *Adhikaraṇa III.—Scripture is the Source of God-knowledge .*

*Viśaya*: Now the author wants to teach that the Supreme Lord, who is the preserver, destroyer and creator of this universe, is not to be thought out by the intellect alone, but being inconceivable is understood by the Vedānta revelation; and not by any argumentation, but by intuition. We find the following texts of Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani Upaniṣad":—

सच्चिदानन्दरूपाय कृष्णायार्द्धिकारिणे ।

नमो वेदान्तवेद्याय गुरवे बुद्धिसान्निधे ॥

"Salutation to Kṛṣṇa who is true Being, All-intelligence and Eternal Bliss, who is the Saviour of everything, who is known by the Vedānta alone, who is the Supreme Teacher and who is the witness of Buddhi."

Again, in the Br. Up., III. 9. 26. :—

तं त्वौपनिषदं पुरुषं पृच्छामि ।

"I now ask thee about that person who is taught in the Upaniṣad."

*Doubt*: Now arises the doubt: Is the Lord who is to be adored, as the saviour, known by inference or by revelation (Upaniṣad) alone?

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The Philosopher Gautama and others of his school hold that God can be known by inference, and they take their stand on the word 'Mantavya' (to be reasoned out), as is used in the Śruti, "Ātmā vāre mantavya" (Br. Up., IV., 5.); and since God is the object of thought, he can be known by dialectic reasoning.

*Sidhānta*: To this the author replies: 'No, God cannot be known by reasoning alone.' Hence the third Sūtra runs as follows :—

SUTRA I. 1.3.

शास्त्रयोनित्वात् । १ । १ । ३ ॥

*Śāstra*, the Scripture, the Revelation, the Upaniṣad. *योनि* *Yonitvāt* because of, its being the proof or source. The word "Yoni" (literally womb) means that which causes or produces the knowledge of a thing.

*Note*—The Saṅgati is Akṣepikī.

3. (The existence of Brahman cannot be (inferred), because he is to be known only through scriptures.—3.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'not' is to be read in this Sūtra from the fifth Sūtra of this Pāda. Brahman is *not* an object of inference to the seeker of truth. Why? Because the scriptures or Upaniṣads are the source or the cause of understanding Him. So Brahman can be known only through the teachings of Upaniṣads. If it were otherwise, the designation 'Aupaniṣada' (the etymological meaning of which is "He is known through the Upaniṣads alone)," as applied to Brahman, would be meaningless. As regards the objection that the word, 'Mantavya,' means that the existence of Brahman can be reasoned out, we explain that the reasoning may be resorted to, so far as it is consonant with the Upaniṣad or scriptures, to demonstrate the existence of God. So we find (in Mahābhārata Vana-parva as well as in Kūrma Purāṇa) "Uha or right reasoning is that by which we find out the true sense of a scriptural passage, by removing all conflicts between what precedes and what follows it. But one should abandon mere dry discussion." Moreover, the worthlessness of mere dry discussions, as carried on by Gautama, etc., is shown in Sūtra II. 1.11. This shows that mere dry discussion like that of Gautama, etc., should be abandoned, because they are not based upon revelation.

The conclusion is that Brahman is to be known from the Vedānta and then meditated upon. This is explained further on in the Sūtra II. 1. 27, where it will be further explained and demonstrated that the best proof of the existence of Brahman, free from all objections, is revelation. This also proves that the saviour Hari has the form of the Self, that He is a witness of all experiences of all souls, that He possesses all good attributes which form His essential nature, that he is without modification yet the creator of the universe, and that He should be worshipped in this way.

*Objection :* An objector may say : How can it be said that scripture is the means to know the Brahman? The Vedānta texts are not capable of being employed as commands and prohibitions, because they teach something which is already in existence, and therefore they are of no use. They are something like mere descriptive passages of the Vedas or other subjects : such as the sentences 'the world consists of the seven continents,' etc. Only those passages of the Vedas are relevant which direct something to be done or something not to be done. The Vedas teach action. As in ordinary life, an imperative sentence conveys

the notion of something to be done ; "Let a man desiring wealth, go to the king." "Let a man suffering from dyspepsia, not drink water at the time of eating." Similarly, in the Vedas we find commands and prohibitions, such as, "Let a man who desires heaven, perform sacrifice," "Let no man drink wine." In fact, no one employs speech without any object in view ; and that object is either something to be attained by doing an act, or which is to be avoided by abstaining from an act. But Brahman is an existing object. Therefore passages like 'Brahman is true, intelligence,' etc., are useless, because they do not teach or aim at teaching any particular action. Such passages can only be relevant, when they are employed in connection with other passages that direct some action. Thus, the description of a sacrifice or of a particular deity or of a sacrificer, becomes relevant, in as much as these passages are connected with the act of sacrifice. As says Jaimini :

आम्नायस्य क्रियार्थत्वादानर्थक्यमतदर्शनाम् ।

As the purport of a scripture is action, those scriptural passages whose purport is not action, are purportless. (P. M., I. 2. 1),

तद्भूतानाम् क्रियार्थेन समाम्नायोऽर्थस्य तन्निमित्तत्वाद् ।

Again, the constituent words of a sentence are pronounced with the word which expresses action; the senses of the constituent words are the efficient cause of the sense of a sentence (as a whole). (P. M., I. 1 ; 25).

*Answer :* To this objection we reply, that it is an erroneous notion to think that the Vedānta text is useless ; simply because it does not teach any action. Though there is no direct teaching of any command or prohibition in it, yet in as much as it teaches the existence of God, who is the highest end of man ; it has a utility of its own ; like the sentences "there is wealth in thy house", etc. As a man who thought that he was a pauper and so felt miserable, gets happiness when some trustworthy person tells him that there is a great hidden treasure in his house ; and as the attainment of that treasure then becomes the object of his life. And as the information "there is a treasure in your house," is not at all useless ; similarly is the case with the Vedānta texts. They certainly do not teach any action, but declare the highest truth, namely : that there exists a Being who is the Supreme end of man, whose form is intelligence and inexhaustible bliss, who is perfect purity and who is friend of all, who has sacrificed himself for humanity, who is mine, who is self of myself, whose part I am. Such a declaration cannot be useless, because it produces a conviction of the existence of a Supreme Being. The Vedānta texts are, therefore, not useless, but produce a certain effect in the shape of happiness and the removal of fear, just like the

sentences 'a son has been born to thee,' 'this is not a snake but a rope.' Moreover the utility of Vedānta is clearly explained in the Vedānta texts themselves. Thus we are told in one place that 'He who knows Brahman as true Being, intelligent and infinite, as hidden in the depth of the heart, he enjoys all blessings' (Tait. Up., II, 1.) So the knowledge of Brahman is not useless, as it leads to the enjoyment of all blessings.

Nor can it be said, that since the Vedānta texts teach the attainment of certain fruits; therefore, they teach action also. The whole context of the Vedānta is against such a view. It teaches knowledge (Jñāna) and not action. On the contrary, it decries Karma or action, and its fruit as something to be discarded. Therefore, to suppose that the Vedānta teaches action is to imagine something which is totally irreconcilable with it. Nor can we reasonably interpret that Vedānta teaches anything but the truth about Brahman. It teaches that God is the cause of the rise and fall of the infinite universes, that He is eternal, all-intelligence, that He is the ocean of infinite auspicious qualities, and that He is the abode of Lakṣmī. Every text exhausts its probative force with the teaching of its particular doctrine that it sets itself to declare. Thus the Vedānta has its scope and authority in matters relating to Brahman and not action. Nor should it be said on the authority of Jaimini, that the Vedas teach action only, and the passages that do not teach action are redundant, and therefore, the Vedānta passages are redundant. As a matter of fact, the two Sūtras of Jaimini quoted above, should not be interpreted in this sense. For Jaimini himself was the disciple of Bādarāyaṇa, and must be presumed to be a devotee of Brahman, and could not have taught a doctrine in conflict with that of his great master. In fact all that he has done in his school of Mimāṃsā is to show that certain apparently redundant passages in the midst of texts that teach Karma described in the whole chapter should be interpreted as applying to Karma, and that their literal meaning should be abandoned in favour of teaching Karma.

Thus in a chapter teaching sacrifice and Karma occurs the sentence 'He wept' (Tait Up., I, 5. 1). Either this sentence is redundant as it does not teach any Karma; or it must be interpreted to teach some action: namely, that at a certain stage the sacrificer must weep or shed tears. But as one cannot weep at will, therefore the above passage must be interpreted as a redundancy.

In fact those two Sūtras of Jaimini mean that passages teaching Karma must either command something to be done or prohibit something not to be done.

If there be a sentence which does not fulfil the condition, it is either superfluous (P. M., I, 2. 1.), or they must be interpreted to teach some action



(P. M., I., 1 : 25). In fact Jaimini does not deal with Jñānakāṇḍya texts : texts with which Vedānta specially deals. His scope is in that portion of the Vedas which deals with Karma and his Sūtras refer to that portion only. It does not refer to Vedānta, and his Sūtras should not be interpreted as such.

THUS THE VEDĀNTA TEACHES SUPREME BRAHMAN

### *Adhikaraṇa IV.—The Samanvaya.*

*Viśaya* : Now in order to strengthen the above view, the author teaches that Brahman is the object of knowledge taught in all the Vedas—all the Vedas declare Brahman. Thus we find in Gopāla Upaniṣad : "He is sung by all the Vedas." योऽसौ सर्वैवेदैर्गीयते । So also in the Kāṭha Upaniṣad (I 2. 15).

सर्वे वेदा यत्पदमामनन्ति तपाँसि सर्वाणि च यद्दन्ति ।

यदिच्छन्तो ब्रह्मचर्यञ्चरन्ति तत्ते पदं सङ्ग्रहेण ब्रवीम्यमित्येतत् ॥ १५ ॥

That Supreme whom all the Vedas recall, whom all penances proclaim, whom men desire when they live as religious students.

*Doubt* : Is it a fact that Viṣṇu alone is declared by all the Vedas ? or is it not a fact ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : It is wrong to say that the Vedas teach uniformly about Brahman. For we find that they teach Karma also, about sacrifices and many other things. Thus some portions teach that by performing kāriri (sacrifice)—rain falls, and that by performing Putryakmyaiṣṭi—a son will be born, and that by performing Jyotiṣṭoma Yajña, one will attain heaven. The Vedas further teach various methods of performing sacrifices. Therefore, it is not quite accurate to say that all the Vedas uniformly declare Brahman only. For passages teaching karma find their full scope, and exhaust their meaning, by teaching the performances of certain sacrifices and nothing more. Hence they cannot be applied to Viṣṇu.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :—

SŪTRA I., 1. 4.

तत् तु समन्वयात् ॥ १ । १ । ४ ॥

तत् Tat, that, namely the fact that Viṣṇu is the chief topic of knowledge in all the Vedas. तु Tu, but, a word removing doubt. समन्वयात् Samanvayāt, by concordance : by right discussion, and interpretation.

*Note* :—The Saṅgati is ākṣepikī.

4. (But Viṣṇu is the subject-matter of all the Vedas), because such is the appropriate interpretation of all texts—4.

## COMMENTARY.

The word 'Tu' means 'but,' and is employed to rebut the above Pūrvapakṣa. It is proper to say that Viṣṇu is the uniform topic taught in all the Vedas, whether of Karmakāṇḍa or Jñānakāṇḍa. Why? Samanvayāt. Anyaya means construing a passage according to the six maxims mentioned above. Samanvaya, therefore, means the complete construction of a passage after full discussion of the *pros* and *cons* thereof. When the above is applied to a passage, the proper sense of a scripture comes out. That sense is that Viṣṇu is really taught even in those passages which apparently teach performance of Karma or ritualistic ceremony : otherwise how can we say that the text of the Gopāla Upaniṣad is valid which says, 'Viṣṇu is sung in all the Upaniṣads.' Even the Lord Himself says so expressedly in the Gitā :

वेदैश्च सर्वैरहमेव वेद्यो वेदांतकृद्देवविदेव चाहम् ॥ १५ ॥

I am that which is to be known in all the Vedas. I, indeed, the knower of the Vedas and the author of the Vedānta (G., XV., 15).

Similarly in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, we find :

किं विधत्ते किमाचष्टे किमनुय विक्ल्पयेत् ।

इत्यस्या हृदयं लोके नान्योमद्वेद कश्चन ॥

None except me knows what is really taught by the commands and prohibitions as laid down in the Karmakāṇḍa ; what is really expressed by the Mantras in the Devatā-kāṇḍa, or what is the purpose of the passages to be found in the Jñānakāṇḍa. All the Karmakāṇḍas refer to me because I am the great sacrificer ; all the Mantras praise me because I am the highest Devatā ; and all the Jñānakāṇḍa refers to me because I am the creator of the world and withdraw it again to myself. Verily, I am this all.

Again.

मां विधत्तेऽभिषत्ते मां विक्ल्प्यापोहते ह्ययम् ।

Scriptures enjoin duties as my worship, use Indra and all other names as my appellation, the texts that prescribe, as well as prohibit acts, point to me ; so, in such a state none other than myself understand their true meaning.

That it has been said :

साम्नात् परम्पराभ्यां वेदा ब्रह्मणि प्रवर्तन्ते ।

"Either directly or indirectly, all the Vedas teach Brahman." Brahman is directly taught in the Jñānakāṇḍa, where His essential nature attributes, etc., are fully described. He is indirectly taught in the Karmakāṇḍa, for sacrifices and ritualistic ceremonies are subsidiary to Jñāna and thus indirectly lead to Brahman.

This is also the purport of the text already quoted :

तं त्वौपनिषदं पुरुषं वृच्छामि ।

I ask thee about that Person who is taught in the Upaniṣads. (Br. Up., 9. 21). Again.

तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणं विविदिषन्ति ।

Him the Brāhmaṇas seek to know by the study of the Vedas, by the sacrifices, etc., (Br., Up., IV., 4. 22).

As regards the objection that the Vedas teach the attainment of phenomenal things, like getting rain, procuring a son, or acquiring Heaven, we answer thus : These are taught in the Vedas, as incitement to the acquirement of divine wisdom by baby souls ; and to produce a faith in mankind. For when one sees that the Vedic Mantras have the efficacy of producing rain, etc., then he gets faith in them and has an inclination to study them, and thus comes ultimately to discriminate the real and the transitory, the permanent and the illusory things of the universe, and thus gets love of Brahman and disgust with the phenomenal. Therefore, all the Vedas teach Brahman. Moreover, sacrifices, etc., taught in the Vedas produce phenomenal results like rain, etc., only then when Kāma or strong will force is joined with the Mantras. Those very sacrifices lead towards the purification of mind and illumination of the soul, when performed without such a desire for phenomenon. Thus Karmakāṇḍa itself by teaching the worship of various Devatās, becomes part of Brahmajñāna and is really the worship of Brahman, when the element of desire is excluded. Such a worship purifies the heart and gives a taste for Brahman enquiry and does not produce any other phenomenal desire.

### *Adhikaraṇa V.—Brahman is knowable.*

*Viśaya* : By the above reasoning and by the proper construction of Vedic passages, it will now be shown that Brahman is not inexpressible or undescribable by words.

There are, however, some texts which apparently teach that Brahman is unknowable by mind and inexpressible by words. As we hear in Taitt. Up., II., 4. 1 :

यतो वाचो निवर्त्तन्ते अप्राप्य मनसा सह ।

From whom all speech, with the mind turns away, unable to reach Him.

So also,

यद्वाचानभ्युदितं येन वागभ्युद्यते ।

तदेव ब्रह्म त्वं विद्धि नेदं यदिदमुपासते ॥

He who is not expressed by speech and by which speech is expressed, that alone know as Brahman, not that which people here adore (Kena. Up., 1. 5).

*Doubt* : Now arises the following doubt. Is Brahman expressible by word or is He not expressible ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : According to above Śrutis and many other texts Brahman is inexpressible by words. For had He been so expressible, He could not be said to be self-manifest. Moreover, we find in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa also the following :

“That divinity whom mind and speech not attaining, fall back from ; whom I and even these Devas know not, salutation to that Lord.” (The speech of Maitreya in the Bhāgavata).

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Siddhānta Sūtra :

SŪTRA 1. 1. 5.

ईक्षतेर्नाशब्दम् ॥ १ । १ । ५ ॥

ईक्षतेः ईkṣateḥ, because it is seen. न Na, not. अशब्दम् Aśabdam, inexpressible.

5. Brahman is not inexpressible by words, because it is seen that he is so expressly taught in the Vedas.—5.

*Note.*—Here also is ākṣepa-saṅgati.

#### COMMENTARY.

The word अशब्दम् ‘aśabdam’ of the Sūtra means that in which or about which the word cannot penetrate or express. Brahman is not ‘aśabdam.’ On the contrary, He is ‘śabdam’ or expressed by words. Why ? ईkṣateḥ “because it is seen.” Because we see in the Upaniṣad itself that the suggestive designation of ‘Aupaniṣad’ is given to Brahman. Which means, Brahman is known through the Upaniṣad words. As we find in the Bṛihadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad :

तन्त्वौपनिषदं पुरुषं वृच्छामि ।

I ask thee about that person whom Upaniṣads teach. (Br., III., 9. 26).

Here the person to be enquired into is called Aupaniṣada—known through Upaniṣad.

The word ‘ईkṣateḥ’ is formed by the affix ‘tip’ with the force of passive (Bhāva). (The proper affix ‘te.’) The anomaly is Vedic.

That Brahman is expressible by words, we find from the following Śrutis also :—सर्वे वेदा यत् पदमामनन्ति । ‘whom all the Vedas declare, etc.’ (Kaṭha, Up., II., 15.)

True, Brahman is said to be “Aśabdam,” “ineffable,” only in this sense that he is not *completely* expressible by words. Thus, as the mountain Meru is said to be invisible, in the sense that no one can see all its parts, but does not mean, that it is entirely invisible, so Brahman is said to be indescribable or inexpressible, in the sense that He is not *completely* describable. For had he been totally unknowable, then in the

Kena Upaniṣad we would not have found it said, “*Know Him to be as Brahman* ;” for how could one know the unknowable ? Moreover, in the phrase यतो वाचो निवर्तन्ते, etc., “from whom the speech turns back, etc.,” the word Yataḥ shows that the speech does reach Him after realising Him *a little* ; the same idea is expressed by the word Aprāpya “not attaining.”

Moreover, Brahman reveals Himself through the Vedas. This idea does not conflict with the notion of Brahman being self-revealed. For the Vedas are in a way the body of Brahman. Consequently Brahman is describable by words.

*Doubt* : May it not be so that Brahman is inexpressible by words ? The being who is describable by words and who is referred to in the Vedas by Īkṣati is Saṁgha Brahman. Such a Brahman, the Vedas reveal, as they are expression of His powers. While as regards the pure infinite Brahman, those passages refer to Him only figuratively.

To this the next Sūtra answers thus :

SŪTRA, I. 1. 6.

गौणश्चेत् नात्मशब्दात् ॥ १ । १ । ६ ॥

गौणः Gaunah, Saṁgha Brahman. च Cha, and इत् It if. न Na not. आत्म-शब्दात् Ātma-Sabdāt, because of the word Ātman.

6. If it be said that the Creator of the world is *Saṁgha* Brahman, we say, no ; because the word *Ātman* is used in connection with it.—6.

#### COMMENTARY

The being, who is described as Brahman and is expressible by words, is not *Saṁgha* Brahman which has the highest portion of Prakṛti called Sattva, as its vesture. Why do we say so ? Because the word Ātman is used in reference to Brahman in these texts :

आत्मैवेदमग्र आसीत् पुरुषविधः ॥ “The Ātman alone was in the beginning as a person.” (Br. Up.) आत्मा वा इदमेक एवाग्र आसीत् नान्यत् किञ्चनमिषत् स ईक्षत लोकान् नु सृजा इति (Ait. Āraṇyaka) :

The Ātman verily alone existed before the creation of this universe. Nothing else was manifest then. He willed : “Let me create the worlds.”

Both these texts show that the being which existed prior to creation has been designated by the term *Ātman*. This term Ātman primarily applies to the infinite Nirguṇa Brahman, as we have already explained it in commentating on the Sūtra I, 1. 2.

Moreover, in the Bhāgavata Pūrāṇa we find : “The wise call Him Brahman, Paramātmā, Bhagavān, Who is true intelligence and without duality.”

So also in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, we find :—"Oh Maitreya ! The word Bhagavān is applied to the Cause of all the causes." All these Purāṇa texts also show that the infinite Pure Brahman is the one expressible by words. Had the infinite Brahman been indescribable, He would not have been expressed by words.

SŪTRA I, 1. 7

नन्निष्ठस्य मोक्षोपदेशान् ॥ १ । १ । ७ ॥

तत् Tat, to that. निष्ठस्य, Niṣṭhasya, of the devoted. मोक्ष Mokṣa, release. उपदेशत्, Upadeśāt, because of the teaching.

7. (The Creator of the universe is Nirguṇa Brahman and not Saguṇa), because the devoted to Him attains salvation, according to the teaching of the scriptures.—7.

COMMENTARY

The word 'not' is understood in this as well as in the next three Sūtras. In the Taittirīya Upaniṣad we find (II, 7) :

असद्वा इदमग्र आसीत् ततो वै सदजायत । तदात्मानं स्वयमकुरुत् ।

This world before creation existed verily in the state of Asat or subtle, thence verily the gross was born. That Brahman himself made His self.

The Upaniṣad then goes on to say : यदाद्यैष एतस्मिन्ननुदृश्येऽनात्म्ये अनिरुक्ते अनिलयने अभयं प्रतिष्ठां विन्दतेऽथ मोऽभयं गतो भवति ॥ यदाद्यैष एतस्मिन्ननुदरमन्तरम कुरुते अथ तस्य भयं भवति ॥

When verily this Jīva places fearless reliance (entire devotion) on This seer, (who is other than all these objects which are seen) on This Enjoyer (who is other than all these objects of enjoyments), on This Ineffable (for His Infinite attributes cannot be *fully* described), on This Self-Luminous (who has no Nilayana or light to illumine him), then he reaches fearlessness (release). But if this Jīva has the slightest doubt (and if his devotion has the slightest taint of hypocrisy) then there is Fear for him.

This shows that he who is devoted to the supreme Brahman, who transcends all phenomenal universe, who is described by the Vedas, and is the Creator of the world, finds freedom from fear and rests in that invisible, incorporeal and undefined Supreme Brahman. This Brahman could not be Saguṇa Brahman. For then the text would not have said that His devotee would get release. The Paramātmān is Nirguṇa and Mokṣa is attained by the worship of Him alone. As we find in the Bhāgavata :

"This Saviour Hari is Nirguṇa (untouched by the Guṇas); He is the supreme Person (by worshipping Him there is release). He is above Prakṛti. He is the wisdom of the wisest. He is the witness of all. By worshipping Him, one gets the highest reward and becomes himself free from all Guṇas."

SŪTRA I. 1.8.

हेयत्वावचनाच्च ॥ १ / १ / ८ ॥

हेयत्व Heyatva, abandonment. अवचनान् Avachanāt, not being said च Cha, and.

8. (The Creator is not Saguna Brahman) because, the text nowhere teaches its abandonment in favour of some one higher.—8.

COMMENTARY

If that Creator of the world were Saguna Brahman, then in these Vedānta texts, which teach various kinds of meditations and practices, we should have found some texts declaring his inferiority, as they do with regard to men and women (who are all Saguna entities). But we do not find any such texts. Is the saviour Hari described as an object of worship to his aspirants, because He destroys all the Guṇas of His seeker? Certainly not. The texts describe that the transmigrating Jīvas (who are Saguna) are to be discarded. As says a text :—अन्यथाचो विमुञ्च्य “Discard all talks of beings other than the saviour Hari” (Br. Up.). The aspirant after release should meditate on the Lord in His aspect of creator also, as much as he meditates on Him as the True, etc. The pure Brahman is the Creator, (and not Brahman beclouded by Māyā.)

Therefore, Nirguṇa Brahman alone is described in the Vedas. He is the creator of the universe. He should be the object of meditation to His devotees who want emancipation.

SŪTRA I. 1.9.

स्वाप्यात् ॥ १ / १ / ९ ॥

स्वाप्यात् Svāpyāt, because he merges into himself.

9. (The Creator is not Saguna Brahman) because He merges into Himself. (Not so the Saguna which merges into something other than Himself)—9.

COMMENTARY

We find in the Bṛihadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad : पूर्णमदः पूर्णमिदं पूर्णात् पूर्णमुदच्यते । पूर्णस्य पूर्णमादाय पूर्णमेवातिशिष्यते ।

That is infinite, this below is infinite. From that infinite proceeds this infinite. On taking away this infinite from that infinite, the remainder is still Infinite. (Br. Up., V., 1.1.)

Now the infinity which is the manifested Brahman enters into the infinite, which is the unmanifested Brahman ; and thus we see that Brahman enters or merges into Himself. Had it referred to Saguna Brahman, the text would have said that Saguna enters into Nirguna, and not that it enters into itself. Moreover, Saguna is never said to be infinity.

The literal meaning of above verse is this. 'Adas' (that) refers to the root-form ; the unmanifested ; 'Idam' 'this', refers to the manifested form. Both these forms are Infinity. The manifested form of God, shown in His incarnations and when He acts as in Rāsa, etc., comes out of the unmanifested root-form which is called Pūrṇa or infinite. The word Uduchyate means 'becomes manifest.' By taking away from that infinite root-form, the manifested form, that is, by merging this manifested form into the unmanifested root-form, the remainder is that root-form, which remains unmerged. The Purāṇas also tell us the same about the Saviour.

That God creates and becomes manifold, but still remains Nirguna and the Supreme Person. He destroys and reabsorbs the manifested into Himself and still is infinite and free from all faults.—“Hari the first cause.”

*Objection* : But Brahman has two forms,—Saguna and Nirguna. The Saguna Brahman has Sattva for his limiting adjunct or vesture, it is He who is Omniscient, Omnipotent and the cause of the universe. The second the Nirguna Brahman,—is pure existence and consciousness, Infinite and perfect Purity. The Saguna Brahman is the Sakti or energy underlying all the Vedas, (the laws of nature). The Nirguna Brahman is the sense of the Vedas, the unity of all diverse Laws. So these are different. The Nirguna Brahman cannot create. The Creator is always Saguna.

*Answer* : This is not so. The following aphorism rejects this view.

SŪTRA I. 1. 10

गतिमामान्यात् ॥ १ / १ / १० ॥

गतिः Gatih, Avagati or knowledge, the conception. सामान्यात् Sāmānyāt, because of uniformity.

10. (Saguna Brahman is no where taught in) the Vedas, (which) uniformly describe the Nirguna Brahman only.—10.

COMMENTARY.

Knowledge or information given by all the Vedas has this thing in common, that they unanimously describe that there is a Being who is intelligence personified, who is omniscient, omnipotent, perfectly pure, the Supreme Self, and the cause of the universe ; and that as the fruit of worshipping Him, He gives salvation to all. This knowledge is common or



uniform in all the Vedas. That being so, one Brahman is described in them. The division of Brahman into Saguna and Nirguna has no authority in the Vedas. In the Gītā also we find the same. Says Śrī Kṛṣṇa : "Oh Dhanañjaya ! there is no one higher than Myself." (VII., 7). Was Śrī Kṛṣṇa Saguna or Nirguna ?

This idea is more clearly expressed in the next Sūtra, where direct Vedic texts are quoted, to show that Nirguna Brahman is the subject-matter of all the Vedas.

SŪTRA I. 1. 11.

श्रुतत्वाच्च ॥ १ । १ । १ । १ । १ ॥

Srutatvāt, because of a Sruti text. Cha, and.

11. And there is direct text to show that Nirguna Brahman who is creator of the universe is the giver of salvation.)—11.

COMMENTARY.

In the Svetâśvetara Upaniṣad we read :

एको देवः सर्वभूतेषु गूढः सर्वव्यापी सर्वभूतान्तरात्मा । अर्म्ममध्यक्षः सर्वभूताधिपः सान्नी चेता केवलो निर्गुणश्च ॥

He is the one God, hidden in all beings, all-prevailing, the Self within all beings, the witness, the perceiver, the only one, and Nirguna (free from qualities) (Sv. Up., VI, 11.)

Here the word Nirguna, free from all qualities, is expressly stated with regard to Brahman. Thus we know that the Nirguna Brahman is the Creator and is so described. We cannot, therefore, say that Nirguna Brahman is ineffable and inexpressible. Those who say that we can know Nirguna Brahman merely by inference and not directly, that Nirguna Brahman cannot be the Creator, because He has no desire, and that creation can proceed only from a *being* that has a desire, are wrong. Because, if Nirguna Brahman can not be described by any words, then nor can He be suggested by the indirect implication of any word (Lakṣaṇā). For Lakṣaṇā or suggested force of implication or secondary significance of a word can only apply to those things, which are capable of being described by words. In fact, as the Vedas say that Brahman is invisible, etc., so they also say that Brahman is Nirguna. They do not convey the idea that Brahman is indescribable.

*Objection* : But how can you say that He is Nirguna and at the same time possesses the attributes described in the Upaniṣad that He is all-powerful, etc. For Nirguna and Saguna are mutually exclusive. Either Brahman has qualities or He has no qualities.

*Answer* : This is not so. The contradiction is apparent only. Those who do not understand the occult meaning of the word Nirguṇa think that there is contradiction. The words Nirguṇa, etc., apply to Brahman, by excluding from Him certain qualities included under the term Guṇa etc. This is the negative side of the definition : while the words Omnipotent, etc., apply to Brahman certain qualities which He possesses as His positive side. Therefore, when we say that Brahman is Nirguṇa, we mean thereby that He does not possess the three Guṇas or qualities of Prakṛti : Sattva, Rajas or Tamas. But He possesses certain qualities, which form His essential nature, such as Omniscience, etc. Thus there is no contradiction. So we also find in the Purāṇas : "The material qualities, such as Sattva and the rest do not exist in the Lord. He is the store-house of all auspicious qualities. Therefore, He is infinite and perfectly pure. Hari the saviour is the subject-matter of all the Vedas." When the Sruti says that "He is nameless, etc." those words simply mean that He cannot be *fully* defined by any name, because he is infinite. They also mean that all names, so far as they denote material qualities, are not applicable to Brahman. Those who say that the words, Nirguṇa, etc., must be taken in their literal sense, and that Brahman is devoid of *all* qualities should be asked, "Do these words convey any idea of Brahman or not?" If they say, "They do convey the idea of Brahman" : then he is described by those words, and so cannot be said to be Avâchya. But if those words do not convey any idea about Brahman, then it was useless to have commenced a description of Brahman by the use of those words, when they define nothing and describe nothing and convey no idea.

Here ends the commentary of the eleven Sūtras which form a subsection by itself,

#### VERSE

Let us have faith in that Pure, All-knowledge, All-bliss, All-pervading, Ānandamaya Brahman, in whom all words find their true significance

### *Ādhikarṇa VI.—Ānandamaya is God*

Having proved, in the previous Adhikaraṇas, that Brahman is describable by words, now the author Bādarāyaṇa takes up the topic of Samanvaya, and shows that several words of the Vedas which are apparently ambiguous, really apply to Brahman. He begins with the word Ānandamayam, and takes up other words one after another till the end of the Adhyāya. In the first Pāda, those words are taken up, which

generally apply to a Being other than Brahman, and the author shows that by proper construction of the text, where those words occur, they must be taken to apply to Brahman, though in other places they may apply to anything else than Brahman.

*Viṣaya* : In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad we read the following :

ब्रह्मविदामोति परम्. "He who knows the Brahman, attains the Highest." After reciting this, the Upaniṣad goes on to describe the Annamaya Puruṣa, the Prāṇamaya Puruṣa, the Manomaya Puruṣa, and the Vijñānamaya Puruṣa in due order. The last Puruṣa described by the Śruti is the Ānandamaya, in these terms :

तस्माद्वा पतस्माद् विज्ञानमयादन्योऽन्तरात्माऽनन्दमयस्तेनैव पूर्णः । स वा एष पुरुषविध एव, तस्य पुरुषविधताम् अन्वयं पुरुषविधः, तस्य प्रियमेवशिरः, मोदो दक्षिणः पक्षः, प्रमोद उत्तरः पक्षः आनन्द आत्मा, ब्रह्म पुच्छम् प्रतिष्ठा ।

Different from this Vijñānamaya is another inner self which is Ānandamaya. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man. Like the human shape of the former is the human shape of the latter. Joy (Priyam) is its head, Satisfaction (Moda) is its right arm. Great satisfaction (Promoda) is its left arm. Bliss (Ānanda) is its trunk. Brahman is the tail or support.

*Doubt* : Is this Ānandamaya a Jīva (or human soul) or Para-Brahman ?

*Iṅra-Pakṣa* : The Ānandamaya is Jīva, because the Śruti says, "Like the human shape of the former is the human shape of the latter." It is also called Sārira Ātmā. (or embodied self). "The embodied self of this is the same, etc." Therefore it refers to Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : The Ānandamaya refers to Brahman and not to Jīva. So the author says :

SŪTRA 1. 1. 12.

आनन्दमयोऽभ्यासात् ॥ १ । १ । १२ ॥

आनन्दमयः Ānandamayaḥ, the full of bliss. अभ्यासात् Abhyāsāt, because of repetition,

12. The Ānandamaya is Para-Brahman, because of the repeated use of the word Brahman in connection with it—12.

*Note* :—This is an example of Pratyudāharaṇa Saṅgati.

FIRST ANUVĀKA.

ओं ब्रह्मविदामोति परम् । तदेवाऽभ्युक्ता । सत्यं ज्ञानमनन्तं ब्रह्म । यो वेद निहितं गुहायाम् । परमे व्योमन् । सोऽश्नुते सर्वान् कामान् सह । ब्रह्मणा विपश्चितेति । तस्माद्वा पतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः । आकाशाद्वायुः । वायोरग्निः । आग्नेरापः । अद्भ्यः पृथिवी । पृथिव्या ओषधयः । ओषधीभ्योऽन्नम् । अन्नाद्देतः । रेतसः पुरुषः । स वा एष पुरुषोऽन्नरसमयः । तस्येदमेव शिरः । अयं दक्षिणः पक्षः । अयमुत्तरः पक्षः । अयमात्मा । इदं पुच्छं प्रतिष्ठा । तद्व्येष श्लोको भवति ॥

He who knows the Brahman attains the highest (Brahman). On this the following verse is recorded : 'He who knows Brahman, which is (*i. e.* cause, not effect), which is conscious, which is without end, as hidden in the depth (of the heart); in the highest Ether, he enjoys all blessings, at one with the all-enjoying Brahman.

From that self, (Brahman) sprang Ether (Ākāśa), (that through which we hear); from other, air; from air, fire; from fire, water; (that through which we hear, feel, see and taste); from water, earth; (that through which we hear, feel, see, taste, and smell). From earth herbs, from herbs food, from food seed, from seed man. Man thus consists of the essence of food. This is his head, this his right arm, this his left arm, this his trunk (Ātman), this the seat (the support).

On this there is also the following Śloka :

#### SECOND ANUVĀKA.

अन्नाद्दे प्रजाः प्रजायन्ते ॥ याः काश्च पृथिवीं श्रिताः ॥ अथो अन्नेनैव जीवन्ति ॥ अथैनदपि यन्त्यन्ततः ॥  
अन्नं हि भूतानां ज्येष्ठम् ॥ तस्मात्सर्वेष्वमुच्यते ॥ सर्वं वै तेऽन्नमाप्नुनन्ति ॥ येऽन्नं ब्रह्मोपासते अन्नं हि  
हि भूतानां ज्येष्ठम् ॥ तस्मात्सर्वेष्वमुच्यते ॥ अन्नाद् भूतानि जायन्ते ॥ ज्ञातान्यन्नेन वर्धन्ते ॥ अद्यतेऽस्ति च  
भूतानि तस्मादन्नं तदुच्यत इति ॥ तस्माद्वा एतस्मादन्नरसमयात् अन्योऽन्तर आत्मा प्राणमयः ॥ तेनैव पूर्णः ॥ स  
वा एष पुरुषविध एव ॥ तस्य पुरुषविधताम् ॥ अन्वयं पुरुषविधः ॥ तस्य प्राण एव शिरः ॥ व्यानो दक्षिणः  
पक्षः ॥ अपान उत्तरः पक्षः ॥ आकाश आत्मा ॥ पृथिवी पुच्छं प्रतिष्ठा ॥ तदप्येष श्लोको भवति ॥ इति  
द्वितीयोऽनुवाकः ॥ २ ॥

'From food are produced all creatures which dwell on earth. Then they live by food, and in the end they return to food. For food is the oldest of all beings, and therefore, it is called panacea (Sarvaṣadha, *i. e.*, consisting of all herbs, or quieting the heart of the body of all beings).' They who worship food as Brahman obtain all food. For food is the oldest of all beings, and therefore it is called panacea. From food all creatures are produced; by food, when born, they grow. Because it is fed on, or because it feeds on beings, therefore it is called food (Anna).

Different from this, which consists of the essence of food, is the other the inner Self, which consists of breath. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man. Like the human shape of the latter, Prāṇa (up-breathing) is its head. Vyāna (back-breathing) is its right arm. Apāna (down-breathing) is its left arm, Ether is its trunk. The earth the seat (the support).

On this there is also the following Śloka :

#### THIRD ANUVĀKA.

प्राणं देवा अनु प्राणन्ति ॥ मनुष्याः पशवश्च ये ॥ प्राणो हि भूतानामायुः ॥ तस्मात्सर्वायुषमुच्यते ॥  
सर्वमेव त आयुर्यन्ति ये प्राणं ब्रह्मोपासते ॥ प्राणो हि भूतानामायुः ॥ तस्मात्सर्वायुषमुच्यत इति ॥  
तस्यैष एव शरीर आत्मा ॥ यः पूर्वस्य ॥ तस्माद्वा एतस्मात्प्राणमयात् ॥ अन्योऽन्तर आत्मा मनोमयः ॥  
तेनैव पूर्णः ॥ स वा एष पुरुषविध एव ॥ तस्य पुरुषविधताम् ॥ अन्वयं पुरुषविधः ॥ तस्य यजुरेव शिरः ॥  
अग् दक्षिणः पक्षः ॥ सामोत्तरः पक्षः ॥ आदेश आत्मा ॥ अथर्वान्निरसः पुच्छं प्रतिष्ठा ॥ तदप्येष श्लोको  
भवति ॥ इति तृतीयोऽनुवाकः ॥ ३ ॥

'The Devas breathe after breath (Prāṇa), so do men and cattle. Breath is the life of beings, therefore, it is called Sarvāyusa (all-enlivening).' They who worship breath

as Brahman, obtain the full life. For breath is the life of all beings, and therefore, it is called Sarvāyūṣa. The embodied Self of this (consisting of breath) is the same as that of the former (consisting of food).

Different from this, which consists of breath is the other, the inner Self, which consists of mind. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man. Like the human shape of the former is the human shape of the latter. Yajus is its head, Iṅk is its right arm. Sāmān is its left arm. The doctrine (Ādeśa, i.e., the Brāhmaṇa) is its trunk. The Atharvāṅgiras (Atharva-hymus) the seat (the support).

On this there is also the following Sloka :

#### FOURTH ANUVĀKA

यतो वाचो निवर्तन्ते ॥ अप्राप्य मनसा सह ॥ आनन्दं ब्रह्मणो विद्वान् न विभेति कदाचनेति ॥  
तस्यैव एव शरीर आत्मा ॥ यः पूर्वस्य ॥ तस्माद्वा एतस्मान्गानोमयात् ॥ अन्योऽन्तर आत्मा विज्ञानमयः ॥  
तेनैव पूर्णः ॥ स वा एष पुरुषविध एव ॥ तस्य पुरुषविधताम् ॥ अन्वय पुरुषविधः ॥ तस्य श्रद्धैव शिरः ॥  
अतं दक्षिणः पद्मः ॥ सत्यमुत्तरः पद्मः ॥ योग आत्मा ॥ महः पुच्छं प्रतिष्ठा ॥ तदप्येष श्लोको भवति ॥  
इति चतुर्थोऽनुवाकः ॥ ४ ॥

‘He who knows the bliss of that Brahman, from whence all speech, with the mind turns away unable to reach it, he never fears.’ The embodied Self of the former, (consisting of breath) is the same as that of the former.

Different from this, which consists of mind, is the other, the inner Self, which consists of understanding. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man. Like the human shape of the latter. Faith is its head. What is right is its right arm. What is true is its left arm. Absorption (Yoga) is its trunk. The great (intellect) is the seat (the support).

On this there is also the following Sloka :

#### FIFTH ANUVĀKA.

विज्ञानं यज्ञं तनुते ॥ कर्माणि तनुतेऽपि च ॥ विज्ञानं देवाः सर्वे ॥ ब्रह्म ज्येष्ठमुपासते ॥ विज्ञानं ब्रह्म  
चेद्वेद ॥ तस्माच्चैत्र प्रमाथति ॥ शरीरे पाप्मनो हित्वा ॥ सर्वान्कामान्समर्शुत इति ॥ तस्यैव एव शरीर आत्मा ॥  
यः पूर्वस्य ॥ तस्माद्वा एतस्माद्विज्ञानमयात् ॥ अन्योऽन्तर आत्मानन्दमयः ॥ तेनैव पूर्णः ॥ स वा एष  
पुरुषविध एव ॥ तस्य पुरुषविधताम् ॥ अन्वयं पुरुषविधः ॥ तस्य प्रियमेव शिरः ॥ मोदो दक्षिणः पद्मः ॥  
प्रमोद उत्तरः पद्मः ॥ आनन्द आत्मा ॥ ब्रह्म पुच्छं प्रतिष्ठा ॥ तदप्येष श्लोको भवति ॥ इति  
पञ्चमोऽनुवाकः ॥ ५ ॥

“Understanding performs the sacrifice, it performs all sacred acts. All Devas worship Understanding as Brahman, as the oldest. If a man knows Understanding as Brahman, and if he does not swerve from it, he leaves all evils behind in the body, and attains all his wishes.” The embodied Self of this (consisting of Understanding) is the same as that of the former (consisting of mind).

Different from this, which consists of Understanding, is the other inner Self, which consists of bliss. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man. Like the human shape of the former is the human shape of the latter. Joy is its head. Satisfaction its arm. Great satisfaction is its left arm. Bliss is its trunk. Brahman is the seat (the support).

On this there is also the following Sloka :

## SIXTH ANUVĀKA

अमत्रेव स भवति ॥ असद्ब्रह्मेति वेद चेत् ॥ अस्मि ब्रह्मेति चेद्वेद ॥ सन्तमेनं ततो विदुरिति ॥ तस्यैव एव शरीर आत्मा ॥ यः पूर्वस्य ॥ अथातोऽनुप्रश्नाः ॥ उताविद्वानमुं लोकं प्रेत्य ॥ कश्चन गच्छती ३ ॥ आहो विद्वानमुं लोकं प्रेत्य ॥ कश्चित्समश्नुता ३ उ ॥ सोऽकामयत् ॥ बहु स्यां प्रजायेयेति ॥ स तपोऽन्यत् ॥ स तपस्तप्त्वा इदं सर्वमसूत्रं यदिदं किंच ॥ तत्सुष्ठु ॥ तदेवानुपाविशत् ॥ तदनुप्रविश्य ॥ सच्च त्यक्त्वाभवत् ॥ निरुक्तं चानिरुक्तं च ॥ निलयनं चानिलयनं च ॥ विज्ञानं चाविज्ञानं च ॥ सत्यं चानृतं च ॥ सत्यममवत् ॥ यदिदं किंच ॥ तत्सत्प्रमियाचक्षते ॥ तदप्येष श्लोको भवति ॥ इति षष्ठोऽनुवाकः ॥ ६ ॥

'He who knows the Brahman as non-existing, becomes himself non-existing. He who knows the Brahman as existing, him we know himself existing.' The embodied Self of this (bliss) is the same as that of the former (understanding).

Thereupon follow the questions of the pupil :

'Does any who knows not, after he has departed this life, ever go to that world ? Or does only he who knows, after he has departed, go to that world ?'

The answer is : 'He wished, may I be many, may I grow forth. He brooded over himself (like a man performing penance). After he had thus brooded, He sent forth (created) all, whatever there is. Having sent forth, He entered into it. Having entered it, He became Sat (what is manifest) and Tyat (what is not manifest), defined and undefined, supported and not supported, (endowed with) knowledge and without knowledge (as stones), real and unreal. The Sattya (true) became all this whatsoever, and therefore the wise call it (the Brahman) Sat-tya (the true).

On this there is also this Sloka :

## SEVENTH ANUVĀKA

अमद्रा इदमग्र आसीत् ॥ ततो वै सज्जायत ॥ तदाऽमानं स्वयमकुरुत् ॥ तस्मात्तत्सुकृतमुच्यत इति ॥ यदे तत्सुकृतम् ॥ रसो वै सः ॥ रसो ह्येवायं लब्धवानन्दी भवति ॥ को ह्येवान्यात्कः प्राययात् ॥ यदेव आकाश आनन्दो न स्यात् ॥ एष ह्येवानन्दयाति ॥ यदा ह्येष एतस्मिन्न दृश्येऽनात्म्येऽनिरुक्तेऽनिलयनेऽभयं प्रतिष्ठां विन्दते ॥ अथ सोऽभयं गतो भवति ॥ यदा ह्येष एतस्मिन्नुदरमन्तरं कुरुते ॥ अथ तस्य भयं भवति ॥ तत्त्वेव भयं विदुषो मन्वानस्य ॥ तदप्येष श्लोको भवति ॥ इति सप्तमोऽनुवाकः ॥ ७ ॥

In the beginning this was non-existent (not yet defined by form and name). From it was born what exists. That made itself, therefore it is called the Self-made. That which is self-made is a flavour (can be tasted), for only after perceiving a flavour can any one perceive pleasure. Who could breathe, who could breathe forth, if that bliss (Brahman) existed not in the ether (in the heart) ? For he alone causes blessedness. When he finds freedom from fear and rest in that which is invisible, incorporeal, undefined, unsupported, then he has obtained the fearless. For if he makes but the smallest distinction in it, there is fear for him. But that fear exists only for one who thinks himself wise, (not for the true sage).

On this there is also this Sloka :

## EIGHTH ANUVĀKA

भीषाऽस्माद्भानः पवते ॥ भीषोदेति सूर्यः ॥ भीषाऽस्मादग्निश्चेन्द्रश्च ॥ मृत्युर्धावति पञ्चम इति ॥ सैषाऽनन्दस्य मीमांसा भवति ॥ युवा स्यात्साधुयुवाध्यापकः ॥ आशिष्ठो वृद्धिष्ठो बलिष्ठः ॥ तस्येव

पृथिवी सर्वा वित्तस्य पूर्णा स्यात् ॥ स एको मानुष आनन्दः ॥ ते ये शतं मानुषा आनन्दाः ॥ स एको मनुष्यगन्धर्वाणामानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं मनुष्य गन्धर्वाणामानन्दः ॥ स एको देवगन्धर्वाणामानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं देवगन्धर्वाणामानन्दाः ॥ स एकः पितृणां चिरलोकलोकानामानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं पितृणां चिरलोकलोकानामानन्दाः ॥ स एक आजानजानां देवानामानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतमाजानजानां देवानामानन्दाः ॥ स एकः कर्मदेवानां देवानामानन्दः ॥ ये कर्मणा देवानपि यन्ति ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं कर्मदेवानां देवानामानन्दाः ॥ स एको देवानामानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं देवानामानन्दाः ॥ स एक इन्द्रस्यानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतमिन्द्रस्यानन्दाः ॥ स एको बृहस्पतेरानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं बृहस्पतेरानन्दाः ॥ स एकः प्रजापतेरानन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ ते ये शतं प्रजापतेरानन्दाः ॥ स एको ब्राह्मणः आनन्दः ॥ श्रोत्रियस्य चाकामहतस्य ॥ स यश्चायं पुरुषे ॥ यश्चामावादित्ये ॥ स एकः ॥ स य एवंविद् ॥ अस्माहोकात्प्रेत्य ॥ एतमन्नमयमात्मानमुपसंक्रामति ॥ एतं प्राणमयमात्मानमुपसंक्रामति ॥ एतं मनोमयमात्मानमुपसंक्रामति ॥ एतं विश्वानमयमात्मानमुपसंक्रामति ॥ एतमानन्दमयमात्मानमुपसंक्रामति ॥ इत्यष्टमोऽनुवाकः ॥ ८ ॥

From terror of it (Brahman) the wind blows, from terror the sun rises, from terror of it Agni and Indra, yea Death runs as the fifth. Now this is an examination of (what is meant by) Bliss (Ānanda): Let there be a noble young man, who is well read (in the Veda), very swift, firm and strong and let the whole world be full of wealth for him, that is one measure of human bliss.

One hundred times that human bliss is one measure of the bliss of human Gandharvas (genii), and likewise of a great sage (learned in the Vedas) who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of human Gandharvas is one measure of the bliss of divine Gandharvas (genii), and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of divine Gandharvas is one measure of the bliss of the Fathers, enjoying their long estate, and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of the Fathers is one measure of the bliss of the Devas, born in the Ājāna heaven (through the merit of their lawful works), and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of the Devas born in the Ājāna heaven is one measure of the bliss of the sacrificial Devas and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of the sacrificial Devas is one measure of the bliss of the (thirty-three) Devas, and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of the (thirty-three) Devas is one measure of the bliss of Indra, and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of Indra is one measure of the bliss of Brhaspati, and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of Brhaspati is one measure of the bliss of Prajāpati and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

One hundred times that bliss of Prajāpati is one measure of the bliss of Brahman and likewise of a great sage who is free from desires.

He who is this (Brahman) in man, and he who is that (Brahman) in the sun, both are one. He who knows, when he departs from this world, reaches the Self of food, the Self of breath, the Self of mind, the Self of understanding, the Self of bliss.

## NINTH ANUVĀKA

यतो वाचो निवर्तन्ते ॥ अप्राप्य मनसा सह ॥ आनन्दं ब्राह्मणा विद्वान् ॥ न विभेति कुतश्चेति ॥  
एतद्वा वाच न तपति ॥ किमिह साधु नाकरवम् ॥ किमिह पापमकरवमिति ॥ स य एवं विद्वानेते  
आत्मानं स्पृणुते ॥ उभे ह्येव एते आत्मानं स्पृणुते ॥ य एवं वेद ॥ इत्युपनिषत् ॥ इति नवमो-  
ऽनुवाकः ॥ ६ ॥

From whom words with the mind, return, not finding him,—he who knows the bliss of that Brahman, fears nothing. Verily this thought does not afflict him : ‘Why did I not do the good ? Why did I do the evil ?’ He who knows this pleases his self with both these. Yea, with both these does he please his self. This is the Upaniṣad.

## COMMENTARY.

The Ânaudamaya is the Supreme Brahman. Why do we say so ? Abhyāsāt—because of repetition. In the passage just following the above, where is described the Ânandamaya ; we find the following in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 6. 1. असन्नेव समवति असद् ब्रह्मेति वेद चेत् अस्ति ब्रह्मेति चेद्वेद सन्तमेन ततो विदुः ॥

“He who knows the Brahman as non-existing becomes himself non-existing. He who knows the Brahman as existing, him we know existing.” In the above passage, we find twice the repetition of the word Brahman. Abhyāsa or repetition means uttering a word again, without any qualifications. Nor can it be said, that this Brahman which has been repeated, refers to the Brahman occurring at the end of the above passage, where Brahman is said to be the tail or support. For in the previous passage, we find one Sloka each given after Annamaya, Prāṇamaya, etc. Thus the Sloka of Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 2. 1 :

They who worship food as Brahman obtain all food. For food is the oldest of all things, and therefore it is called Panacea. From food all creatures are produced, by food, when born, they grow. Because it is fed on, or because it feeds on beings, therefore it is called food (Anna).

This is given after Annamaya ; and refers to the whole Annamaya, and not to the tail or support of Annamaya. Similarly, the Sloka of Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 3 :

The Devas breathe after breath (Prāṇa) so do men and cattle. Breath is [the life of beings, therefore it is called Sarvāyuṣa (all-enlivening).”

This is given after Prāṇamaya, and does not refer merely to the tail or support. Similarly, the Sloka of Taitt. Up., II., 54 :

‘He who knows the bliss of that Brahman, from whence all speech, with the mind turns away unable to reach it, he never fears.’ The embodied self of this (consisting of mind) is the same as that of the former.



This is given after the Manomaya and refers to the whole of it, and not to its tail or support. Similarly, the Sloka of Taittirīya Upaniṣad II., 5 :

‘Understanding performs the sacrifice, it performs all sacred acts. All Devas worship understanding as Brahman, as the oldest. If a man knows understanding as Brahman, and if he does not swerve from it, he leaves off all evil behind in the body, and attains all his wishes. The embodied self of this (consisting of understanding) is the same, as that of the former (consisting of mind).’

This is given after Vijñānamaya and refers to the whole of it and not to its tail or support. Therefore, the Sloka ‘He who knows’, etc., refers to the whole of Ānandamaya, and not to the tail or support. Therefore, Ānandamaya is Brahman.

Though the Anandamaya occurs in a series of words referring to Jīva, yet it does not refer to it, because of its impossibility ; and because there is a difference of name also. This will be fully described under the Sūtra, III., 3. 13, where it is explained what is meant by joy being the head of Brahman, etc.

*Objection :* How can “Ānandamaya” here refer to Supreme Brahman, when it is a member of a series of terms, like Annamaya, etc., which refer to Jīva, who is certainly not Ānandamaya, but full of miseries ?

*Answer :* There is no fault in this. Because Brahman is read in such a series, in order to make it easily understandable by men of small intellect. The Vedas, like a great philanthropist, describe the Supreme Self, by first describing the non-self ; this by constant approach towards the true Brahman, by words which refer to something more and more interior and finer ; and ultimately they show Brahman. It is something like a person trying to point out the small star Arundhati. He points out at first some big star near it, and says this is Arundhati ; and thus leads unto the true Arundhati. So the Sruti first points out the various non-Brahmans, and ultimately points to the true Brahman, the Ānandamaya, the inmost.

The passage does not mean that Brahman is taught in these Upaniṣads merely as a secondary object. But He is the primary object of teaching here. Moreover in the next chapter of Taittirīya Upaniṣad, i. e., in the third chapter called Bhṛgu Vallī, Varuṇa, on being asked by his son to teach him what is Brahman, first defines Brahman as the Cause of the Creation, etc., of the universe, and then teaches him, that all material objects are Brahman, such as food is Brahman, Prāṇa is Brahman, Manas is Brahman, etc. He says this in order to teach that they are the materials, with which the universe is made ; and ultimately he finishes his teaching with “Ānanda,” declaring that “Ānanda” is Brahman. Here he stops and concludes by saying “This doctrine taught by me is based on Brahman

the supreme.' (Taitt. Up., III. 6. 1). Further, in the conclusion also he says:

'He who knows this, when he has departed from this world, after reaching and comprehending the Self which consists of food, the Self which consists of breath, the Self which consists of mind, the Self which consists of understanding, the Self which consists of bliss, enters and takes possession of these worlds, and having as much food as he likes, and assuming as many forms as he likes, he sits down singing this Sāman (of Brahman): Havu, Havu, Havu! (Taitt. Up., III 10, 5)

This passage also shows that Ānandamaya is the supreme Brahman. Moreover in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa we find पुरुषविधोऽन्नमयोऽन्न चरमोऽन्नमयादिषु यः सदनतः परं त्वमथ यदेष्टव्यशेषमृतम् ॥

'The Annamaya has the shape of man. In this series beginning with Annamaya, the last one (namely the ānandamaya) is one which is beyond Being and Non-being—thou O Lord art that. Thou art the final term of this series—the True.'

Nor is there any contradiction in applying the epithet "Sārira" (embodied) to Brahman. For we find the Śruti declaring that the whole universe is the body of the Lord; as the well-known Antaryāmi chapter of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad shows (Br. Up., III., 7. 3): यस्य पृथिवी शरीरम् "whose body is the earth."

*Note.*—The whole passage is given below.

He who dwells in the earth, and within the earth, whom the earth does not know, whose body the earth is, and who pulls (rules) the earth within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the water, and within the water, whom the water does not know, whose body the water is, and who pulls (rules) the water within, He is the Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the fire and within the fire, whom the fire does not know, whose body the fire is, and who pulls (rules) the fire within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the sky, and within the sky, whom the sky does not know whose body the sky is and who pulls (rules) the sky within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the air (Vāyu), and within the air, whom the air does not know, whose body the air is and who pulls (rules) the air within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the heaven (Dyu), and within the heaven, whom the heaven does not know, whose body the heaven is, and who pulls (rules) the heaven within, He is thy Self the puller, (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the sun (Āditya), and within the sun, whom the sun does not know, whose body the sun is, and who pulls (rules) the sun within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the space (Dīśah), and within the space, whom the space does not know, whose body the space is, and who pulls (rules) the space within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the moon, and stars (Chandra-Tārakām) and within the moon and stars, whom the moon and stars do not know, whose body the moon and stars are, and who pulls (rules) the moon and stars within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the ether (Ākāśa), and within the ether, whom the ether does not know, whose body the ether is and who pulls (rules) the ether within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the darkness (Tamas), and within the darkness, whom the darkness does not know, whose body the darkness is, and who pulls (rules) the darkness within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal."

He who dwells in the light (Tejas), and within the light, whom the light does not know, whose body the light is, and who pulls (rules) the light within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal."

In fact, these Vedānta Sūtras are called "Sārīraka mīmāṃsā," for this very reason, because it deals with Para Brahman, the Sarīra (the embodied).

Those who explain the Sūtra by saying that the Anandamaya is not Brahman, but the Brahman mentioned as the tail of Ānandamaya is the Pure Brahman, are mistaken. The explanation is against the whole drift of the context, as well as against the expressed teaching of the author Bādarāyaṇa and Varuṇa of the Upaniṣad.

*Note:* Saṅkara gives an alternative explanation of this Sūtra, by which it would appear that the Ānandamaya is not Brahman, but the word Brahman mentioned as tail is the Brahman. The Pūrvapakṣa then is the Brahman mentioned as the tail of the Ānandamaya is not the supreme, for it is mentioned as a subordinate member of another. The Siddhānta view then is that the Brahman mentioned as the tail of Ānandamaya is the Pure Brahman, because of the repetition of the word Brahman in the subsequent verses. This explanation is repudiated by our author.

*Objection:* The word Ānandamaya is formed by the affix 'Mayat' which has the force of modification or Vikāra (Pāṇini Sūtra, IV, 3. 143). Therefore, Ānandamaya means a being which is a modification of Ānanda. Therefore it cannot be applied to Brahman, who is all Ānanda, and not any modification of Ānanda. To remove this doubt the author says :

SŪTRA I. 1. 13

विकारशब्दान् नेति चेन्, न प्राचुर्यात् ॥ १ । १ । १३ ॥

विकार Vikāra, modification शब्दान् Sabdāt, because of the word (Mayat affix denoting modification). न Na, not, इति Iti, thus. चेन् Chet, if. न Na, not. प्राचुर्यात् Prāchuryāt, because of abundance. The term Maya in Ānandamaya denotes here "abundance," and not "modification."

13. If it be objected that Ānandamaya is not Brahman, because the affix Mayat has the force of modification ; we say, no, because the affix here denotes abundance.—13.

COMMENTARY

The Ānandamaya does not mean, "Who is a modification of "Ānanda." Why ? Because the affix Mayat has also the force of denoting

abundance (see Pāṇini, V, 4. 21) Therefore, Ânandamaya means He who has abundance of bliss. Moreover the word Annamaya occurs in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, which is a portion of the Vedas, and so it is a Vaidic word. Now even according to grammar, the affix Mayat can never come in the Vedas with the force of modification, after a word of more than two syllables. The word Ânanda consists of three syllables. Therefore, according to Vedic grammar, Mayat can never be applied to this word with the force of modification. (Pāṇini, IV, 3. 150).

The word Ânandamaya does not mean absence of sorrow. It is a positive attribute of Brahman and not a mere negative of pain. Says the Subāla Upaniṣad : 'He is the inner self of all, free from evil, the divine one, the one God Nârâyana.' So also the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, 'He is the highest of the high, the supreme God, in whom there are no pains.' Therefore, the affix Mayat which has the force of abundance, shows here the real essence of the thing denoted by the word to which it is added, that is to say, Ânandamaya means 'He whose essential nature or Svarūpa is Ânanda.' Thus as we say, 'The sun has abundance of light,' it really means, the sun whose essential nature is light is called Jyotirmayah. Therefore, Ânadamaya is not Jīva but Īśvara.

Note.—The fact is that Ânandamaya is equal to Ânandasvarūpa. "He whose essential nature is joy.' Similarly, Vijñānamaya is Vijñānasvarūpa, Manomaya is Manosvarūpa, etc., except in the case of Prāṇamaya, where Maya has the force of Vikāra. Manas also is a word of two syllables and the affix ought to have the force of modification or Vikāra. But as the Vedas are said to be the various limbs of the Manomaya (see the description of Manomaya) we cannot say that they are modifications of Manas.

SŪTRA I., I. 14

तद्वेतुव्यपदेशात् ॥ १ । १ । १४

तद्वेतु Tad-hetu, the cause of that ; namely the cause of Ânanda. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesāt, because of the statement or declaration.

14. The Ânandamaya is not Jīva, because He is described as the cause of Ânanda.—14.

COMMENTARY.

रसो वै सः रसं शेषायं लब्ध्वाऽऽनन्दी भवति । को शेषान्यात्कः प्रापयात् । यदेव आकाश आनन्दो न स्यात् । एव शेषानन्दयाति ।

It is written in the Traittirīya Upaniṣad, II. 7 :

'He verily is sweet. For only after perceiving the sweet, can any one perceive bliss. Who could breathe, who could breathe forth, if that bliss (Brahman) existed not in the ether (in the heart) ; For he alone causes blessedness.

This shows that the Ânandamaya is the cause of the blessedness of the Jīva, because the Ânandamaya is declared as the giver of joy to the Jīva.

Therefore, it must be different from the Jīva, for the donor and donee can not be one and the same.

In the above passage, the word Ânanda is used, but it means Ânandamaya.

SŪTRA I., I. 15.

मान्त्रवर्णिकमेव च गीयते ॥ १ । १ । १५ ॥

मान्त्र Māntra, of the Mantra. वर्णिकं Varnikam, described : Mantra-varnikam is a compound word meaning 'he who is described in the Mantra portion.' एव Eva, alone, even. च Cha, and. गीयते Gīyate, is sung (by the Brāhmaṇa portion).

15. Moreover, the Being, described in the Mantra portion of the text, is again referred to as Ânandamaya in the subsequent portion of the above passage.—15.

COMMENTARY.

The above passage opens with the declaration of सत्यं ज्ञानमनन्तं ब्रह्म ॥ "Satyam, Jñānam, Anantam is Brahman."

The Brahman so expressly mentioned in this Mantra portion, is subsequently described as Ânandamaya in the Brāhmaṇa portion. Therefore, Ânandamaya is not Jīva. The sense is this. The Taittiriya Upaniṣad commences with the declaration, ब्रह्मविदाप्नोति परम्, 'The Knower of Brahman obtains the highest.' This shows that the *worshipper* Jīva obtains the *worshipped* Brahman. This object of attainment by the Jīva, which was mentioned in the opening passage, 'Brahmavit āpnoti param,' is further fully described in the Mantra 'Satyam, jñānam, etc.' The same Brahman alone should be taken to be referred to by the word Ânandamaya. The subsequent portion of Taittiriya Valli commencing with the word "Tasmāt va etesmāt ātmana, etc." is an exhortation and exposition of the Brahman mentioned above. Therefore, Brahman who is the object *attained*, must be considered as different from the Jīva who *obtains*, because the obtained and the obtainer can not be the one and the same. Therefore, the Ânandamaya is not Jīva.

*Objections :* If the Brahman described in the above Mantra were really different from the Jīva, then by proving that Brahman is Ânandamaya, the Jīva could not be Anandamaya. But Jīva and Brahman are not different. The essence which forms the Jīva when it becomes free from Avidyā or Nescience is really one with Brahman, and the effect of this is that the Jīva is Jīva, so long as it is over-powered by Māyā. The Mantra, therefore, asserts that a Jīva who is free from Māyā is Brahman. Therefore, the term Ânandamaya may apply to Jīva, when the latter transcends all limitations of Avidyā.

*Answer* : The author answers this objection, by the following Sūtra declaring that Jīva can never be Brahman even when Mukta or released.

SŪTRA I. 1. 16.

नेतरोऽनुपपत्तेः ॥ ११११६ ॥

न Na, not. इतरः Itarah, the other : *i.e.*, the Jīva. अनुपपत्तेः An-upapattēh, because of the impossibility, non-reasonableness.

16. The Jīva is not the being referred to in the Mantra "Satyam, etc.," because of the impossibility of such a construction.—16.

COMMENTARY.

The "other" 'Itara' of the Sūtra refers to the Jīva. The Jīva, even in the state of Mukti, is not referred to by the Mantra "Satyam jñānam etc.," because such a construction can not be put upon that verse. For the Mantra says : सोऽश्नुते सर्वान् कामान् सहस्रहणा विपरिचिन्ता "He who knows Brahman who is Satyam and Jñānam and Anantam, etc, enjoys all blessings, at one with the all-enjoying Brahman." Here the Jīva and the Brahman are distinctly shown as separate, for they *both* enjoy blessings together and concurrently. The word 'Vipaśchitā' is used in the above Mantra. It literally means "He whose Chit or mind sees (Paśyati) diverse (Vividha) objects." [The word 'Paśya' has become Paś by Priśodarādi Gaṇa (Pāṇini VI, 3. 109). The word 'Vi' is applied to Brahman, because He is the past-master in the art of enjoyment. The Jīva when free from Avidyā enjoys all blessings along with Brahman ; namely, in the matter of enjoyment he becomes almost a peer of Him. The word 'Aśnute' in the above text is a Vaidic anomaly. It is derived from the root 'Aś' to eat, and the Vikaraṇa Śnā ought to have been used along with it ; but by anomaly it has taken the Vikaraṇa Śnu, and is declined in the Ātmanepada ; instead of 'Aśnāti,' we have 'Aśnute.' This anomaly is according to Pāṇini Sūtra, III, 1. 85.] Though the Jīva, when Mukta, is a companion of Brahman, in the matter of enjoyment, yet superiority is to be given to Brahman even here.

The devotee does not become superior to Brahman, though Brahman becomes the friend and the lover of the Jīva. As says the Bhāgavata :

वशे कुर्वन्ति मां भक्ताः सत्स्त्रियः सत्पतिं यथा ॥

"My devotees bring me under their control as the devoted wives bring their loving husbands under their control."

SŪTRA I. 1. 17.

भेदव्यपदेशात् ॥ १ । १ । १७ ॥

भेद Bheda, difference व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesât, because of the declaration.

17. The being described in the Mantra portion "Satyam jñānam" is not Jīva, though Mukta, because there is a declaration of difference.—17.

COMMENTARY.

We find in the same Valli (Taitt. Up. 7. 1. see Sūtra 14): "That which is self-made is the most sweet. Only after tasting the sweetness of that sweet one, does one perceive what is Ānanda." This shows that after tasting the sweetness of that Ānandamaya, who is referred to in the Mantra portion as Brahman, the Jīva comes to perceive the real nature of Ānanda. This also shows, that even in the state of Mukti, the Jīva is the perceiver and Ānandamaya is the perceived; and thus there remains a difference between a perceiver and perceived even in that condition.

Though the texts like these ब्रह्मेव सन् ब्रह्मप्नोति "even becoming *like* Brahman, he attains Brahman," etc., (Br. Up. IV., 4. 6) apparently show that Jīva and Brahman become one, yet as a matter of fact, they do not declare the non-separateness of the Jīva and Brahman. The sense of these passages is this that the Jīva becomes *like* Brahman and not *actually* Brahman, for the attainment of Brahman means the attaining of similarity with Brahman, for a being *merged* in Brahman is included in the term Brahma-bhūya 'one who has become Brahman.' (In other words, the phrase Brahma-bhūya means Brahmāpya, one who has reached Brahman.) Thus says the Sruti: "Nirāñjanam paramam sāmīyam upaiti" (Māṇḍ., Up., III., 1. 31) "shaking off good and evil, he reaches the highest *similarity*." So also in the Gītā, XIV., 2, we find: "Having taken refuge in this wisdom and being *assimilated* to my own nature, they are not reborn." The word 'Eva' denotes also *likeness*. As we find in the following: "The words "Vāva," "Yathā," "Tathā," 'Eva,' and 'Iva' have the meaning of similarity." Therefore, Brahma eva means "*like* Brahman."

**Objection:** The Sattva guṇa of Prakṛti causes bliss (Ānanda). It is light and the cause of luminosity or knowledge. This Sattva guṇa, by modification, becomes the cause of bliss. Therefore, the Pradhāna or Matter is Ānandamaya and not Brahman.

**Answer:** This objection the author answers by the following:

SŪTRA I. 1. 18.

कामाच्च नानुमानापेक्षा ॥ १ । १ । १८ ॥

कामात् Kāmāt, because of desire or willing. च Cha, and. न Na, not. अनुमान Ānumāna, the inferred one, i. e., the Pradhāna. अपेक्षा Apekṣā, necessity.

18. Because of wishing. the Ānandamaya is not Pradhāna.—18.

COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (II., 6.5) we find, सोऽकामयत् बहु स्याम् प्रजायेय ॥ "He wished—may I be many, may I grow forth." Thus creation proceeds by the mere wish (Kāma) of the Ānandamaya. Now, according to Sāṅkhya, Prakṛti is non-sentient, and can have no Kāmanā or wish. Therefore, the Ānandamaya, with regard to which the word Kāma is used, can not be Prakṛti.

SŪTRA I. 1. 19.

अस्मिन्नस्य च तद्योगं शस्ति ॥ १ । १ । १९ ॥

अस्मिन् Asmin, in him, in the person called Ānandamaya. अस्य Asya, his, of the Jīva. च Cha, and. तत् Tat, that, (fearlessness) योगं Yogam, union. शस्ति Śāsti, teaches (Śruti).

19. The Ānandamaya is not Pradhāna, for the additional reason that the Śruti teaches two-fold Yoga of the Jīva with it.—19.

COMMENTARY.

When a Jīva is fully devoted to this Being of Bliss, he obtains fearlessness; while if he is not fully devoted, he is met with terror. For so says the Śruti (Taitt., Up., II., 7. 2):

यदा ह्येष एतस्मिन्नुद्वेगोऽनात्मन्येऽनिरुक्तेऽनिलयनेऽभयं प्रतिष्ठां विन्दते । अथ सोऽभयं गतो भवति । यदा ह्येष एतस्मिन्नुद्वेगोऽनिरुक्तेऽनिलयनेऽभयं प्रतिष्ठां विन्दते । अथ तस्य भयं भवति । तत्त्वेव भयं विदुषो मन्वानस्य ।

When he finds freedom from fear, and rest in that which is Invisible, Incorporeal, Undefined, Unsupported, then he has obtained the Fearless. For if he makes but the smallest separation from It, there is fear for him. But that fear exists only for one who thinks himself wise, (not for the true sage).

This teaching has no bearing with regard to Pradhāna, for according to Sāṅkhya, it is the separation from Pradhāna that gives fearlessness, while it is union with Pradhāna which is the cause of bondage and all fear. Thus pradhāna has all the attributes diametrically opposed to those of the Ānandamaya; for union with the Ānandamaya produces fearlessness, while the slightest separation from Him, is the cause of all fear. Thus it has been established that the Saviour Hari alone is the Ānandamaya, etc., and neither Jīva nor Prakṛti is so.



## VII Adhikaraṇa.—The Being in the Sun and the Eye is Brahman.

The wonderful Puruṣa of Chhandogya Upaniṣad described in chapters I., 6 and 7 is Brahman.

*Viśaya* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we read as follows :

इयमेवर्गग्निः साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते इयमेव साऽग्निरमस्तत्साम ॥ १ ॥  
अन्तरिक्षमेवर्गायुः साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयतेऽन्तरिक्षमेव सा  
वायुरमस्तत्साम ॥ २ ॥ द्यौरेवर्गादित्यः साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते द्यौरेव-  
साऽऽदित्योऽमस्तत्साम ॥ ३ ॥ नक्षत्राययेवर्कं चन्द्रमाः साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं  
साम गीयते नक्षत्राययेव सा चन्द्रमा अमस्तत्साम ॥ ४ ॥ अथ यदेतदादित्यस्य शुक्लं भाः सैवर्गं यन्नीलं  
परः कृष्णं तत्साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते ॥ ५ ॥ अथ यदेतदादित्यस्य  
शुक्लं भाः सैव साऽथ यन्नीलं परः कृष्णं तदमस्तत्सामाथ य एषोऽन्तरादित्ये हिरण्यमयः पुरुषो दृश्यते  
हिरण्यमयश्च हिरण्यकेश आप्रणखात्सर्व एव सुवर्णः ॥ ६ ॥ तस्य यथा कप्यासं पुण्डरीकमेवमक्षिणी तस्योदिति  
नाम स एष सर्वेभ्यः पाप्मभ्य उदित उदेति इ वै सर्वेभ्यः पाप्मभ्यो य एवं वेद ॥ ७ ॥ तस्यैकं च  
साम च गेष्णौ तस्मादुद्गीथस्तस्मात्त्वेबोद्धातैतस्य द्विगाता स एष ये चामुष्मात्पराञ्चो लोकास्तेषां चेष्टे  
देवकामानां चेत्यभिदैवतम् ॥ ८ ॥

तृतीयस्य षष्ठः खण्डः ॥ ६ ॥

अथाध्यात्मं वागेवर्कं प्राणः साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते वागेव  
सा प्राणोऽमस्तत्साम ॥ १ ॥ चक्षुरेवर्गात्मा साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम तस्यादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते  
चक्षुरेव साऽऽत्माऽमस्तत्साम ॥ २ ॥ ओन्नमेवर्द्धर्मनः साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते ओन्नमेव सा  
मनोऽमस्तत्साम ॥ ३ ॥ अथ यदेतदक्षणः शुक्लं भाः सैवर्गं यन्नीलं परः कृष्णं तत्साम तदेतदेतस्यामृच्यध्यूढं  
साम तस्मादृच्यध्यूढं साम गीयते अथ यदेतदक्षणः शुक्लं भाः सैव साऽथ यन्नीलं परः कृष्णं तदमस्तत्साम ॥ ४ ॥  
अथ य एषोऽन्तरिक्षिणी पुरुषो दृश्यते सैवर्कं तत्साम तदुक्तं तद्वज्रस्तद्वज्रं तस्यैतस्य तदेव रूपं यदमुष्य रूपं  
यावमुष्यगेष्णौ तौ गेष्णौ यन्नाम तन्नाम ॥ ५ ॥ स एष ये चैतस्माद्वाञ्चो लोकास्तेषां चेष्टे मनुष्यकामाञ्चेति  
तष इमे वीणायां गायन्त्येते ते गायन्ति तस्मात्ते धनसनयः ॥ ६ ॥ अथ य एतदेवं विद्वान् साम गायत्युभौ  
स गायति सोऽमुनैव स एष ये चामुष्मात्पराञ्चो लोकास्ताञ्चाप्नोति देवकामाञ्च ॥ ७ ॥

### SIXTH KHAṆḌA

1. (The Devī Sarasvatī called) Rk verily (pervades) this (earth); (the Deva Vāyu called) Sāman (pervades) fire; thus this (fire is seen to) rest on that (earth); therefore, the Sāman is sung as resting on the Rk. Sā is this earth, and Ama is fire and that makes Sāma.

2. (The Devī Sarasvatī as presiding over) sky is verily Rk, (the Deva Vāyu as presiding over) air is Sāman. This Sāman is refuted in that Rk. The sky is Sā and the air is Ama, and thus the Sāma is made.

3. The Heaven (Sarasvatī) is verily Rk, and the Sun (Vāyu) is Sāman, this Sāman is sung as based on the Rk, the Heaven is Sā and the sun is Ama, thus Sāma is made.

4. (The Devī Sarasvatī dwelling in) the stars is verily Ṛk and (the Deva Vāyu in) the moon is Sāman. This Sāman is refuged on that Ṛk. Sā is the stars ; Ama the moon ; and thus Sāma is made.

5. Now that which is the white light of the sun that indeed is Ṛk, again that which is the blue, exceeding dark light of the sun, that verily is Sāman ; thus Sāman (darkness) is refuged in the Ṛk (brightness) ; therefore, the Sāman is sung as refuged on the Ṛk. Now the Sā is the white light of the sun ; and the blue and deep dark is Ama, and that, makes Sāma.

6. Now that (Being residing inside Vāyu and Sarasvatī) which is seen in the sun. (in meditation) as full of intense joy, with joy as beard, joy as hair, joy all together to the very tips of his nails.

7. His two eyes are like fresh red lotus. His (mystic) name is Ut, for he has risen (Udita) above all sins. He also, who knows this, rises verily above all sins.

8. Ṛk and Sāma (i. e., Sarasvatī and chief Vāyu) are the minstrels of the Lord ; therefore he is called Udgītha. (He who is praised as Ut) and therefore, he also who sings Him is called Udgātṛ. He, (the Lord, called Ut) is the Ruler of the worlds above that (above the heaven plane). He rules those worlds and awards the desired objects to the Devas. This is Adhidaivata or cosmological.

#### SEVENTH KHAṆḌA

1. Now the psychological. The Ṛk is Speech, and the Sāman is the organ of respiration. Thus respiration is seen to rest on the organ of speech. Therefore, the Sāman is sung as resting on the Ṛk. Sā is the organ of speech, and Ama is the organ of respiration. That makes Sāma.

2. The eye is the Ṛk, and the Jīva is the Sāman. This Sāman is seen to rest on the Ṛk, therefore the Sāman is sung to rest on the Ṛk ; Sā is the eye, and Ama the Jīva ; and that makes Sāma.

3. The ear is the Ṛk and the mind is the Sāman ; this Sāman is seen to rest on the Ṛk ; therefore, the Sāman is sung as resting on the Ṛk. Sā is the ear, Ama is the mind. That makes Sāma.

4. Now the white light of the eye is indeed Ṛk and the blue exceeding dark light of the eye is Sāman. This Sāman is refuged on that Ṛk. Therefore the Sāman is sung as refuged in the Ṛk. Sā is the white light of the eye, Ama is the blue exceeding dark light. and that makes Sāma.

5. Now the person that is seen in the eye is the all-wise, all-harmonious, and up-lifter of all. He is all-adorable, He is all-full. The form of that person in the eye is the same as the form of the other person in the sun, the minstrels of the one are the minstrels of the other, the name Ut of the one, is the name of the other.

6. He is the Lord, who rules the worlds beneath the physical, and awards all the wishes of men. Therefore all, who sing any song, sing really to Him, and thus really from Him they obtain all wealth.

7. Now he who knowing this sings a Sāman, sings to both, he really sings as if inspired by Him, and obtains the worlds beyond that and the wishes of the devas.

8. Now through this alone he obtains all the lower worlds and the desires of human beings. Therefore, the Udgātṛ who knows this should say : "To accomplish what particular desire of yours, O Yajamāna, shall I sing out ?" For he, who knowing this sings out the Sāman, is able to accomplish the desires of his Yajamāna through his song, yea, through his song.

*Doubt* : Now arises this doubt. Who is this wonderful person, seen in the orb of the sun and in the orb of the eye ? Is it some Jīva, who by his extraordinary sanctity and wisdom, has attained the position of a divine personage, and resides in the solar sphere, and in the human retina ? Or is it supreme Brahman ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The being above described is a Jīva who, owing to his good deeds and wisdom, has attained this position, because he is described as possessing a body. Because he is supremely wise and holy, therefore he possesses the power of ruling the worlds and awarding the fruits of action and desires of the gods and mankind ; and, therefore, the above passage teaches the worship of some highly evolved Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author answers by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I. 1. 20.

अन्तस् तद् धर्मोपदेशात् ॥ १ । १ । २० ॥

अन्तस् Antas, or Antar, the Being within ( the sun and the eye ). तद्-धर्म Tat-dharma, His attributes, the attributes of the Supreme. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, because of teaching. The Sruti gives to this Person in the sun and the eye, attributes which solely belong to God ; therefore this Person must be Brahman.

*Note* :—This is Dṛṣṭānta Saṅgati.

20. The being inside the sun and the eye is Paramātmān, and not any Jīva, because the attributes of the Supreme Brahman are taught therein.—20.

He who is inside the sun and the eye, is verily the Supreme Self, and not any exalted Jīva. Why ? Because in this chapter of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we find attributes which are applicable to Brahman only and not to Jīva. He is said to be "Apahatapāpmā," "above all sins" : no Jīva can be so described, for rising above all evils and destroying all Karmas is the attribute of Brahman, in Him there is no trace of sin or bondage of Karma, while we know that Jīva is bound by Karma, and tainted with sin. No doubt, highly evolved Devas and Jīvas take up the offices of ruling over the lower spheres, and fulfilling the desires of the other Jīvas, and awarding the fruits of actions to them. But such evolved souls are not primary rulers of the world. Their power and action are derived from that of Brahman and are the results of their meditation on Him. Moreover, meditation on those exalted Beings is not equivalent to the meditation on Īśvara. No doubt He is described in the above passage as having a body, but merely from such a description, we are not entitled to conclude, that He is a Jīva. For in the Vedas we find,

(such as in the well-known Puruṣa Sūkta of the R̥k-Veda, X., 90.) that the God is described as an Almighty Man-like being. Similarly we find in the other Upaniṣad passages, the same (anthropomorphic) description: "I know that great *person* (Puruṣa) of sunlike lustre, beyond the darkness," etc. All these passages of the Vedas and Upaniṣads show that the Supreme Brahman has an immaterial, non-Prākṛtik divine body of His own.

SŪTRA 1. 1. 21.

भेदव्यपदेशान्यः ॥ १ । १ । २१ ॥

भेद Bheda, difference. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśat, because of declaration. च Cha, and. अन्यः Anyaḥ, another, other than the Jīva.

21. The Being above-mentioned is other than Jīva. Because there is a declaration of its being separate from Jīva.—21.

COMMENTARY.

It must be admitted that the Inner Ruler, the Supreme Self is described there, and it is separate from the individual Jīva whose body is the sun: that is to say, the above passage describes Brahman and not the solar Deity. Thus in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, we find that a distinction is drawn between the Jīva whose body is the sun and the Inner Ruler, the Brahman, who rules even the solar Deity:

य आदित्ये तिष्ठन्नादित्यादन्तरो यमादित्यो न वेद यस्यादित्यः शरीरं य आदित्यमन्तरो यमयत्येष त आत्मान्तर्दृश्यामृतः ।

He who dwells in the sun (Āditya), and within the sun, whom the sun does not know, whose body the sun is, and who pulls (rules) the sun within, he is thy self, the puller (ruler) within, the immortal." (Br. Up., III., 7. 9)

Therefore the Being here described is not any exalted Jīva but Brahman Himself; because the Being described in the Chhândogya, and that described in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka should be one and the same, as the texts are similar.

*Adhikarāṇa VIII.—The Akaṣa of Chh. Up., I., 9., is Brahman.*

*Viśaya:* In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we find:

अस्य लोकस्य का गतिरित्याकाश इति होवाच सर्वाणि ह वा इमानि भूतान्याकाशादेव समुत्पद्यन्त आकाशं प्रत्यस्ती यन्त्याकाशो ह्येवेभ्यो ज्यादानाकाशः परायणम् ॥ १ ॥ स एव परोवरीयानुद्गीतः स

एकोऽनन्तः परोवरीयोऽस्य भवति परोवरीयसोऽहं लोकान् जयति य एतदेवं विद्वान् परोवरीया<sup>७</sup> समुद्गीथमुपास्ते ॥२॥  
 त<sup>७</sup> हैतमतिधन्वा शौनक उदरशशिडल्यायोक्तृवाच यावत् एनं प्रजायामुद्गीथं वेदिष्यन्ते परोवरीयो  
 हैभ्यस्तावदस्मिँल्लोके जीवनं भविष्यति ॥ ३ ॥ तथामुष्मिँल्लोके लोक इति स य एत मेवं विद्वानुपास्ते  
 परोवरीय एव हास्यास्मिँल्लोके जीवनं भवति तथामुष्मिँल्लोके लोक इति लोके लोक इति ॥ ४ ॥

1. Then Śālāvatya asked, "What is the goal of Brahma (Loka)?" "The All-luminous Viṣṇu (Ākāśa)." replied Pravāhana, "For all these (mighty) Beings take their rise from the All-luminous and have their setting in the All-luminous. The All-luminous is greater than these, the All-luminous is their great refuge. He indeed is higher than the highest, the Udgītha, the infinite.

2. He who meditates on Udgītha as the Greater than the Great, knowing it thus to be the Supreme goal, the Greater than the Great becomes his protector, and he obtains the worlds which are greater than the Great (such as Vaikuṇṭha, etc.)

3. "Those among mankind who will know this Udgītha," thus said Atidhanvan, son of Sunaka, to his disciple Udara Sāṇḍilya, "will live for the entire length of the age in which they get this knowledge and for them the Supreme Brahman will be their life in this world, for that length, and also in the other world. He who knowing thus meditates on Him, the Supreme Brahman becomes his life in the next world, yea in the next world."

*Doubt* : The doubt arises here, what is alluded to by the word Ākāśa ? Is it the primeval element ether, or Brahman ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The word Ākāśa here, is 'protyle' or the primeval element, from which all other elements have come out, for the current meaning of Ākāśa denotes the parent of all the elements. And we are taught that from Ākāśa evolves Vāyu (or all gaseous elements). Thus Ākāśa, being the source of all physical elements, can not mean Brahman, but ether.

*Siddhānta* : To this objection the author answers by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA 1. 1. 22,

आकाशस् तल्लिङ्गात् ॥ १ । १ । २२ ॥

आकाशः Ākāśah, the word Ākāśa as used here. तत् Tat, his, of Brahman. लिङ्गात् Liṅgāt, because of the characteristic mark. The Ākāśa here refers to Brahman, because the defining marks of Brahman are found in this passage.

*Note* : This is Pratyudāharaṇa Saṅgati.

22. The word Ākāśa : here denotes Brahman, because the characteristic marks of Brahman are found in the above passage.—22.

COMMENTARY.

The word Ākāśa here refers to Brahman, because the characteristic marks of Brahman are found here, such as, creating all elements, sustaining all creatures, and absorbing them back into himself. The word

Sarva, all is used in the above passage; where it says Sarvāṇi ha vā imāṇi bhūtāni,' verily *all* these beings, so it can not refer to the material Âkāśa from which *all* beings do not come out. For at least the material Âkāśa can not come out of itself. For the material Âkāśa has come out of something else, and so it can not be the cause of its own production, therefore, the Âkāśa above-mentioned can not be the material Âkāśa.

Moreover, in the above passage, the word 'Eva,' 'alone,' is used in connection with Âkāśa, showing that from Âkāśa alone and from no other cause, come out all this universe. Thus it is an additional reason to hold that Âkāśa here does not mean the material Âkāśa. For we see that clay, etc., are causes of pots, etc., and so the material Âkāśa is not the *sole* cause, but there are other causes also. But with regard to Brahman, all this is consistent. He is the *sole* cause, because He possesses all power and everything is His form. Though the word Âkāśa in its ordinary significance means the material Âkāśa, yet here owing to the stronger indication of the context, it applies to Para Brahman.

### Adhikaraṇa IX.—Prāṇa is Brahman

*Viṣaya* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we read as follows :

अथ हैनं प्रस्तोतोपसनाद प्रस्तोनर्या देवता प्रस्तावमन्वायता ताञ्चेदविद्वान्प्रस्तोष्यसि मूर्द्धा ते विपतेश्यतीति मा भगवावोचत्तत्तमा सा देवतेति ॥ ४ ॥ प्राण इति होवाच सर्वाणि ह वा इमानि भूतानि प्राणमेवाभिसंविशन्ति प्राणमभ्युज्जिहते सेषा देवता प्रस्तावमन्वायता ताञ्चेदविद्वान्प्रस्तोष्यो मूर्द्धा ते व्यपतिष्यत्तथोक्तस्य मयेति ॥

Then the Prastotri approached him, saying : "Sir, you said to me 'Prastotri, if you without knowing the deity which belongs to the Prastāva, are going to sing it, your head will fall off,' which then is the deity ?"

He said : "Breath (Prāṇa). For all these beings merge into Breath alone, and from Breath they rise again. This is the deity belonging to the Prastāva. If without knowing that deity, you had sung forth your hymns, your head would have fallen off, after you had been warned by me."

The whole passage is given below, for the full understanding of the argument.

1. When (the crops in the land of) the Kurus were destroyed by hail stones, Uṣasti Chākṛāyaṇa lived a-begging with his young wife, at Ibhya-grāma. Seeing the Lord of Ibhya eating beans, he begged some from him.

2. (The master of the elephants) said to Uṣasti, "I have no more except these, which are placed before me for eating." Uṣasti said, "Give me then some of these." He gave him some of those and said, "Here is some water to drink, in this bag." Uṣasti said, "I shall drink impure water, if I drank what has already been drunk by another." The master of elephants said, "Are not these beans also impure, as I am eating of them?"

3. Uṣasti replied, "No, (these beans should not be considered unclean) because without eating them I cannot live ; while the drinking of (your) water (is not an absolute necessity and) depends on my pleasure, (for it can be obtained everywhere)." Uṣasti having eaten himself, brought the remainder to his wife. But she had already eaten before, therefore she took them and put them away.

4. Uṣasti next morning, after leaving his bed, said to her, "Alas ! If we could get a little of food, then we should get much wealth, for that king there is going to offer a sacrifice ; he may choose me for all the priestly posts."

5. His wife said to him, "Alas ! O husband ! (There is nothing else in the house) but these (stale) beans (which you brought yesterday)." Uṣasti having eaten them, went to that big sacrifice (which was being performed). There he sat down near the Udgātṛs who were singing hymns in the Āstāva ceremony : and then said to Prastotar priest.

6. Oh Prastotar ! if thou, without knowing the Devatā invoked in the particular Prastāva, art going to sing it, thy head will fall off.

7. O Udgātṛ ! if thou, without knowing the Devatā invoked in the particular Udgīthā, art going to sing it, thy head will fall off.

8. O Pratihartṛ ! if thou, without knowing the Devatā, invoked in the particular Pratihāra, art going to sing it, thy head will fall off.

They indeed stopped and sat down ailent.

#### ELEVENTH KHAṆḌA

1. Then the Sacrificer said to him, "I desire to know who you are, Sir." He replied, "I am Uṣasti, the son of Chākṛāyaṇa." The king said, "I had made up my mind, Sir, to appoint you alone to all these priestly offices : but not having found you, I have appointed others (priests) to these offices. (But now that I have found you) Sir ! I elect you for all these priestly offices."

2. "Very well," said Uṣasti. "(These should not, however be sent away), but let them indeed sing the sacred hymns under my direction. And promise that you pay me as much wealth, as you give to all these (collectively)." The Sacrificer said, "Let it be so."

3. Then the Prastotrī priest approached him respectfully, and said, "Sir, you said to me, 'O Prastotar ! if not knowing the deity related to Prastāva, thou shalt sing him, thy head will fall off,' which is that Devatā ?"

4. Chākṛāyaṇa said, "(Viṣṇu the Great Breath, or) the Chief Prāṇa is the deity of creation. Verily all these creatures merge into Prāṇa (at Pralaya), and they come out of him (at creation). He alone is the deity belonging to creation (Prastāva). Hadst thou sung without knowing this Lord, thy head would have fallen off, by my saying (by my warning)."

5. Then the Udgātṛi priest approached him respectfully and said, "Sir, you said to me, 'O Udgātṛ ! if not knowing the deity related to Udgītham, thou shalt sing him, thy head will fall off !' which is that Devatā ?" He said, "the sun."

6. Chākṛāyaṇa said "(Viṣṇu residing in the sun is the deity of Udgīthā) verily all these singing creatures chant His praises, because he is the best and the Highest. He alone is the deity belonging to Udgīthā. Hadst thou sung without knowing this Lord, thy head would have fallen off, as I had warned thee."

7. Then the Pratihartṛ approached him respectfully and said, "Sir, you said to me, 'O Pratihartṛ, if not knowing the deity related to Pratihāra, thou shalt sing him, then thy head will fall off,' which is that Devatā ?"

8. He said, "(Viṣṇu residing in the food (is the deity of Pratihāra). Verily all these creatures eat Food, and live thereby (because Viṣṇu dwells in food and thus maintains them). He alone is the deity belonging to Pratihāra. Hadst thou sung without knowing this Lord, thy head would have fallen off, as I had warned thee."

*Doubt* : Is this Prāṇa, the breath that flows in and out of the lungs ? Or is it the Supreme Brahman ?

*Pūrvaapakṣa* : The Prāṇa mentioned here is the air that circulates in the lungs. For such is the ordinary acceptance of this term, and the arising and merging of all beings in the Prāṇa, mean that all living beings exist so long as this breath is in them, they perish when this breath goes out.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author answers by the following Sūtrā.

SŪTRA 1. 1. 23.

अतएव प्राणः ॥ १ । १ । २३ ॥

अतएव Ata eva, for this reason, hence also. प्राणः Prāṇaḥ, the breath.

*Note* : Pratyudāharapa Saṅgati.

23. The word Prāṇa here refers to Brahman, for a reason similar to that given in the preceding Sūtra.

COMMENTARY.

This Prāṇa of the Chh. Up., I, 11. 5, is the Supreme Lord and not the air of the *breath*. Why ? Because the characteristic marks of Brahman, namely, the creation of all creatures and re-absorption of them into Himself, are attributed to this Prāṇa.

### Adhikaraṇa X.—The Light is Brahman.

*Viśaya* : In the Chh. Up., (III., 13. 7) we read :

अथ यदनः परो दिवो ज्योतिर्दीप्यते विश्वतः पृष्ठेषु सर्वतः पृष्ठेष्वनुत्तमेषूत्तमेषु लोकेष्विदं वाव तद्यदिह-  
मस्मिन्नन्तः पुरुषे ज्योतिः ॥

Now that light which shines above this heaven, higher than all, higher than everything, in the highest world, beyond which there are no other worlds, that is the same light which is within man.

*Note* : We give below the whole passage in order to follow the reasoning properly.

गायत्री वा इदं सर्वं भूतं यदिदं किञ्च वाग्वै गायत्री वागवा इदं सर्वं भूतं गायति च त्रायते च ॥ १ ॥ या वै सा गायत्री यं वाव सा येयं पृथिव्यस्या इदं सर्वं भूतं प्रतिष्ठितमेतामेव नाति-  
शीयते ॥ २ ॥ या वै सा पृथिवीयं वाव सा यदिदमस्मिन्पुरुषे शरीरमस्मिन्हीमे प्राणाः प्रतिष्ठिता एतदेव  
नातिशीयन्ते ॥ ३ ॥ यदे तत्पुरुषे शरीरमिदं वाव तद्यदिदमस्मिन्नन्तः पुरुषे हृदयमस्मिन्हीमे प्राणाः प्रति-  
ष्ठिता एतदेव नातिशीयन्ते ॥ ४ ॥ सैषा चतुष्पदा षड्विधा गायत्री तदेतदृचाभ्यनूक्तम् ॥ ५ ॥ तावानस्य  
महिमा ततो ज्याया ॥ ६ ॥ पुरुषः पादोऽस्य सर्वा भूतानि त्रिषादस्यामृतं दिवीति ॥ ६ ॥ २दे तदमहेतीदं  
वाव तद्योऽयं बहिर्धा पुरुषादाकाशो यो वै स बहिर्धा पुरुषादाकाशः ॥ ७ ॥ अयं वाव स योऽयमन्तःपुरुष



आकाशो यो वै सोऽन्तः पुरुष आकाशः ॥ ८ ॥ अयं वाव स योऽयमन्तर्हृदय आकाशस्तदेतत्पूर्णमप्रवर्ति  
पूर्णमप्रवर्तिनी<sup>७</sup> अयं लभते य एवं वेद ॥ ९ ॥

॥ इति द्वादशः खण्डः ॥ १२ ॥

तस्य ह वा एतस्य हृदयस्य पञ्च देवसुषयः स योऽस्य प्राङ् सुविः स प्राणस्तच्चक्षुः स आदित्यस्त-  
देतत्सोऽन्नायमित्युपासीतितेजस्व्यन्नादो भवति य एवं वेद ॥ १ ॥ अथ योऽस्य दक्षिणः सुविः स व्यानस्तच्छ्रोत्रं<sup>८</sup>  
स चन्द्रमास्तदेतच्छ्रीश्च यशश्चेत्युपासीत श्रीमान्यशस्वी भवति य एवं वेद ॥ २ ॥ अथ योऽस्य प्रत्यङ् सुविः  
सोऽपानः सा बाहू सोऽग्निस्तदेतद् ब्रह्मवर्चसन्नायमित्युपासीत ब्रह्मवर्चसमन्नादो भवति य एवं वेद ॥ ३ ॥  
अथ योऽस्योदङ् सुविः स समानस्तन्मनः स पर्जन्यस्तदेतत्कीर्तिश्च व्युष्टिश्चेत्युपासीत कीर्तिमान् व्युष्टिमान्  
भवति य एवं वेद ॥ ४ ॥ अथ योऽस्योर्ध्वसुविः स उदानः स वायुः स आकाशस्तदेतदोजश्च महश्चेत्यु-  
पासीतोजस्वी महस्वान्भवति य एवं वेद ॥ ५ ॥

ते वा एते पञ्च ब्रह्मपुरुषाः स्वर्गस्य लोकस्य द्वारपाः स य एतानेवं पञ्च ब्रह्मपुरुषान् स्वर्गस्य  
लोकस्य द्वारपान्वेदास्यकुने वीरो जायते प्रतिपद्यते स्वर्गं लोकं य एतानेवं पञ्च ब्रह्मपुरुषान्स्वर्गस्य लोकस्य  
द्वारपान्वेद ॥ ६ ॥ अथ यदनः परो दिवो ज्यातिर्दीप्यते विश्वतः पृष्ठेषु मर्वतः पृष्ठेष्वनुत्तमेषूत्तमेषु लोकेष्विव वाव  
तद्यदिदमस्मिन्नन्तः पुरुषे ज्यातिस्तस्येग दृष्टिः ॥ ७ ॥ यत्रैतदस्मिच्छरीरे स<sup>९</sup> स्पर्शोऽपि विमानं विजानाति  
तस्यैवा श्रुतियन्त्रैतत्कर्णावपि गृध्र निनदमिव नदथुरिवाग्नेरिव ज्वलन उपस्थोति तदेतद् दृष्टञ्च श्रुतञ्चेत्युपासीत  
चक्षुष्यः श्रुतो भवति य एवं वेद य एवं वेद ॥ ८ ॥

॥ इति त्रयोदशः खण्डः ॥ १३ ॥

### TWELFTH KHANDA..

1. The Lord called Gāyatrī is verily this All-Full, in whatever form (He may be.) Gāyatrī is speech, because (the Lord as) Speech (controls and commands) all beings. He sings out (the Vedas) and gives salvation to all, hence He is called (Gāyatrī).

2. That very Lord (who is in the sun and called) Gāyatrī, is indeed (the very Lord who is in the earth and called) Prthivī the Broad. In this (form are all these beings established. None excels this form.

3. That very Lord who is in the earth and called Prthivī, is indeed the very Lord who is in this soul and called Sarīra, the Joy, bliss-wisdom. In this form rest indeed these senses. None can excel this form.

4. That very Lord who is in the soul and called Sarīra, is indeed the Lord who is in the innermost part of the soul, and called the heart. In Him rest indeed these senses. None excels this form.

5. That very six-fold Gāyatrī has four feet ; and that very fact is declared by a R̥k Verse (R̥g Veda, X., 90. 3).

6. "Such is His greatness, yea the Lord is even greater. All souls constitute one quarter of Him. His immortal three quarters are in Heaven."

7. That Gāyatrī-form of the Lord is indeed Brahman, the All-pervading. This indeed is the All-luminous which is outside of the soul (in the physical heart).

8. That All-luminous, who is outside the Jīva (in the external heart) is verily the All-luminous who is inside the Jīva (pervades the soul).

9. That All-luminous, who is inside the Jīva, is verily the All-luminous who is in the heart of the Jīva.

10. That All-luminous who is in the heart, is verily the Full, the Self-determined. He who knows thus, obtains happiness, full and independent.

## THIRTEENTH KHAṆḌA

1. Of this Supreme Brahman called the Heart, there are verily indeed five divine gate-keepers. He who is His eastern gate-keeper is the presiding deity of Prāṇa, of the eye and is the sun. Let one meditate on him (as sun) as physical energy and health. He who meditates thus becomes energetic and healthy.

2. Now he who is His southern gate-keeper is the presiding deity of Vyāna, of the ear, and is the moon. Let one meditate on him (as moon possessed of) beauty and fame. He who meditates thus becomes artistic and famous.

3. Now he who is His western gate-keeper is the presiding deity of Apāna, of the organ of speech: and is Agni. Let one meditate on him (as Agni possessed of) intellectual energy and sanity. He who meditates thus becomes intellectual and sane.

4. Now he who is his northern gate-keeper is the presiding deity of Samāna, and of wind, and he is Indra. Let one meditate on him as Indra, possessed of renown and lordliness. He who meditates thus becomes renowned and lordly.

5. Now he who is the central gate-keeper is the presiding deity of Udāna and the chief Vāyu and is Ākāśa. Let one meditate on him as the principal Vāyu possessed of spiritual energy and greatness. He who meditates thus, becomes spiritually energetic and great.

6. These verily are the five servants of Brahman, the gate-keepers of the world of Pure wisdom and joy (also). He who knows these five servants of Brahman thus, (as) the gate-keepers (of the heart as well as) of the world of Pure wisdom and joy, gets a virtuous son born in his family; and himself enters that world of Pure wisdom and joy; because he knows those five servants of Brahman, the gate-keepers of the world of svarga.

7. Now the LIGHT which shines above this heaven, in the worlds higher than those of Brahmā, higher than all, beyond which there are no higher worlds, (and which themselves are) the highest worlds (of their respective planes); that is verily the same LIGHT which is within (the heart of) man. And of this the direct proof is this:

8. Namely, the warmth which one perceives through touch here in the body. Of Him is this praise, which one hears as existing in the ears, namely, the sound like the roar of an ocean, or that of thunder, or of the burning fire. Let one meditate on Brahman, as if thus seen and heard. He who knows this thus, becomes clear seeing and celebrated; yea, who knows this thus.

*Doubt:* What is this Jyotiḥ or light referred to here? Is it the physical light of the sun, etc. Or is it the Supreme Brahman?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* The light is the physical light of the sun, etc., because there is no mention of Brahman here in connection with it, or immediately preceding it.

*Siddhānta:* To this the author replies by the following Sūtra:

SŪTRA 1. 1. 24.

ज्योतिश्चरणाभिधानात् ॥ १ / १ / २४ ॥

*Jyotiḥ:* Jyotiḥ, the light (mentioned in the Chhândogya is Brahman). चरण Charaṇa, foot. अभिधानात् Abhidhānāt, because of the mention.

*Note:* Pratyudāharaṇa Saṅgati.

24—The Jyotis of Chhândogya Upaniṣad, II, 13. 7, refers to Brahman and not to Material Light: because it is described as having (four) feet.—24.

## COMMENTARY

By the word Jyotis, we must take Brahman and not material light. Why? Because of the mention of feet. For in the Chh. Up, III., 12. 6, we read.

तावानस्य महिमा ततो ज्यायाः<sup>१</sup> च पूरुषः पादोऽस्य सर्वा भूतानि त्रिपादस्यामृतं दिवीति ।

Such is the greatness of it (of Brahman, under the disguise of Gâyatrî); greater than it is a person (Puruṣa). His one foot is all things. The immortal with three feet is in heaven (i.e., in himself).

This shows that all creatures form but one foot of Brahman.

The real sense is this. In the Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 12. 6, Brahman has been described as having four quarters or feet, that very Brahman is referred to by the relative pronoun 'Yat' 'that,' in the subsequent passage (Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 13. 7). Thus there is no break of continuity between the Brahman mentioned in the Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 12. 6 and III., 13. 7. Because they are connected by the relative pronoun 'Yat.' Moreover, in both these passages, the word (Dya) "heaven," is mentioned; that also connects these passages. Therefore, the Lord Hari of infinite glory, is the light referred to in this passage, and not any physical light of any celestial body, like the sun and the rest.

**Objection:** The feet mentioned above may refer to the feet of the metre Gâyatrî, which is mentioned immediately before, in the above passage; where it is said that Gâyatrî has four feet. (Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 12. 3.)

**Answer:** To this the author answers in the following Sūtra, by stating the objection in the first portion of the Sūtra, and the answer in the second portion.

## SŪTRA I. 1. 25

छन्दोऽभिधानान् नेति चेन्, न तथा चेतोऽर्पणनिगदात्, तथाहि दर्शनम् ॥ १ / १ / २५ ॥

**छन्दः** Chhandah, (of) a metre, the metre Gâyatrî. **अभिधानात्** Abhidhānāt, because of the description. **न** Na, not. **इति** Iti, thus, **चेत्** Chet, if. **न** Na, not. **तथा** Tathā, thus; (therein, in the Brahman incarnated or in the Gâyatrî or symbolised in the metre). **चेतः** Chetaḥ, (of) mind. **अर्पण** Arpana, of concentration, giving. **निगदात्** Nigadāt, because of the teaching. **तथा** Tathā, thus, that being so, by such an interpretation. **हि** Hi, because, only. **दर्शनम्** Darśanam, consistent, rational, intelligible. The phrase "the Gâyatrî is all this" becomes intelligible when Gâyatrî is taken as a symbol of God. The metre called Gâyatrî is certainly not "all this."

25. If it be objected, that the word Jyotis does not refer to Brahman, but it denotes the Metre Gâyatrî, we reply, not so ; Gâyatrî there is only for the purposes of concentrating the mind in Brahman who is meditated upon as Gâyatrî. And by this explanation all becomes consistent.—25.

## COMMENTARY.

But—an objection is raised—how can the four feet of Jyotis refer to Brahman, when we find that it refers to the four feet of Gâyatrî ? For in the above quotation, it will be seen that after mentioning that “Gâyatrî is everything whatsoever exists,” the text shows that Gâyatrî is the speech, the earth, the body and the heart. The four-footed Gâyatrî is taught in the verse five expressly as having four feet. And with regard to this Gâyatrî, which has four feet, and is sixfold, a Rk is mentioned : “Such is the greatness of it, greater than it is Puruṣa, etc.” Now this mantra contains reference to four feet and it refers to Gâyatrî and not to Brahman. How then can you say that the reference to four feet is to light (Jyotis) which is Brahman, and not to Gâyatrî which is immediately referred to here.

To this objection, we reply that this Gâyatrî itself so referred to, does not mean the metre Gâyatrî, but Brahman as conceived in this symbol : for Gâyatrî is figuratively spoken of as having four feet, etc., in order that meditation on such Gâyatrî may be performed. The symbolic meditation is for the sake of instructing one how to meditate. If Gâyatrî meant metre, then it would be impossible to say of it that “Gâyatrî is everything whatsoever here exists.” For certainly the metre is not everything. Therefore, the Sūtra says “Tathâhi Darśanam” ‘so we see’—here the word Darśanam means “consistency.” For by such an explanation alone, the above passage gives a consistent meaning : otherwise we are landed into the absurdity of holding a metre to be everything. Therefore, through Gâyatrî is shown the meditation on Brahman. Moreover, the author gives another reason for holding that Gâyatrî here is Brahman and not a metre.

## SŪTRA I. 1. 26.

भूतादिपादव्यपदेशोपपत्तेश्चैवम् ॥ १ । १ । २६ ॥

भूतादि Bhūtādi, the beings, etc. पाद Pāda, (of) foot. व्यपदेश Vyapadeśa, (of) mention, (of) declaration. उपपत्तेः Upapatteh, because of the possibility reasonableness. च Cha, and. एवम् Evam, thus.

26. And thus only it is possible to declare that the beings, (speech earth, etc.) are its feet.—26.

## COMMENTARY.

Thus Brahman alone should be understood here as Gâyatri. Why ? Because beings, earth, body, and heart . are referred to here with regard to Gâyatri, and the four feet of Gâyatri are these four things. If the Gâyatri here did not mean Brahman, then these four things could not form its four feet, for it is absurd to speak of a metre Gâyatri that beings, earth, etc., are its feet. Therefore, the whole passage of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad opening with 'The Gâyatri is everything whatsoever exists,' really opens with the declaration that 'Brahman is everything whatsoever exists,' etc. Thus Brahman is referred to by the relative pronoun . . . 'Yat' 'that' in Chhandogya Upaniṣad III, 13 7. Moreover, the word "heaven" also is a significant word. Its use in connection with "Light" reminds us of its use in connection with the "Gâyatri" also. Therefore, the "Light" shining above *heaven*, is the same as the "Gâyatri" that has three of its feet in *heaven*.

*Objection :* But reference to Heaven with regard to Gâyatri is in the locative case, namely, heaven is the Adhâra or the support of Gâyatri. For Chh. Up., III, 12. 6, says 'Tripādasyāmṛtam divi.' The word 'Divi' is in the locative case ; and the sentence means 'immortal with three feet is in heaven.' While with regard to Jyotis, the Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 13. 7, uses the ablative case, and says that "the light which shines *above* this heaven." Thus Jyotis is not *in* heaven, but *above* heaven, while Gâyatri is in heaven. Thus there is a difference of teaching with regard to the relation of Gâyatri and Jyotis to heaven. Therefore, these two words do not refer to the same object.

*Siddhânta :* To this we reply, this is not so. Because in both places, there is nothing contrary to the recognition. This objection and answer, the author has put in the following Sûtra :

SŪTRA I. 1. 27.

उपदेशभेदात्, नेति चेत्, नोभयस्मिन्नविरोधात् ॥ १ / १ / २७ ॥

उपदेश Upadeśa, of teaching, of grammatical construction or cases. भेदात् Bhedât, because of the difference. न Na, not. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. उभयस्मिन् Ubhayasmin, in both, (whether in the ablative case or in the locative case). अपि Api, even. अविरोधात् Avirodhât, because of the want of conflict or contradiction.

27. The objection that Brahman of the former passage cannot be recognised in the latter on account of the difference of case-terminations is not valid, because in either case, there is nothing contrary to the recognition. 27.

## COMMENTARY.

The locative 'Divi' and the ablative 'Divah,' that is, 'in heaven' or 'above heaven,' are not contrary. For the force of the ablative in 'Divah' really is that of locative. Just as in ordinary language, a parrot, although in contact with the top of a tree, is not only said to be 'on the tree,' but also 'above the tree,' so Brahman also, although being in heaven, is here referred to as being beyond heaven as well.

*Adhikaraṇa XI. Prāna is Brahman.*

*Viṣaya :* In the Kau. Up., III., we read as follows :

प्रतर्दनो ह वै दैवोदासिरिन्द्रस्य प्रियं धामोपजगाम । युञ्जेन पौरुषेण च तं हेन्द्र उवाच । प्रतर्दनं वरं ते ददानीति । स होवाच प्रतर्दनस्त्वमेव वृणीष्वैव त्वं मनुष्याय हिततमं मन्यस इति । तं हेन्द्र उवाच न वै वरं परस्मै वृणीते त्वमेव वृणीष्वेत्यवरो वेतर्हि किञ्च न इति होवाच प्रतर्दनोऽयो खल्विन्द्रः सत्यादेव नेयाय सत्यं हीन्द्रः । स होवाच मामेव विजानीहि तदेवाहं मनुष्याय हिततमं मन्ये यन्मां विजानीयात् । त्रिशीर्षाणं स्वाष्ट्रमहनमरन् मुखान्यतीन्सालादृकेभ्यः प्रायच्छं बह्वीः संधा अतिक्रम्य दिवि प्रह्लादी-यानतृणमहमन्तरिक्षे पौलोमानृथिव्यां कालकाश्यास्तस्य मे तत्र न लोमं च नामीयते । स यो मां विजानीयात् नास्य केन च कर्मणा लोको मीयते न मातृवधेन न पितृवधेन न स्तेयेन न भ्रूणहत्वाया नास्य पापं च न चक्रवो मुखात्नीलं वेत्तीति ॥ १ ॥ स होवाच प्राणोऽस्मि प्रणात्मा तं मामायुरमृतमित्युपास्वायुः । प्राणाः प्राणो वा आयुः । प्राण एवामृतं यावद्वयस्मिञ्छरीरे प्राणो वसति तावदायुः । प्राणेन होत्रासुर्मिहोकेऽमृतत्वमाप्नोति प्रश्यासत्यसंकरणं स यो म आयुरमृतमित्युपास्ते सर्वमायुरस्मिंल्लोक पत्याप्नोत्यमृतममर्क्षितं स्वर्गे लोके । तद्धैकं आयुरेकभूयं वै प्राणा गच्छन्तीति न हि कश्चन शक्नुयात् सकृदाचा नाम प्रहापयितुं चक्षुषा रूपं श्रोत्रेण शब्दं मनसा ध्यानमित्येकभूयं वै प्राणा भूत्वा एकेर्न सर्वाययेवैतानि प्रहापयन्ति । वाचं वदतीं सर्वे प्राणा अनुवदन्ति । चक्षुःपश्यसर्वे प्राणा अनुपश्यन्ति श्रोत्रं शृण्वत्सर्वे प्राणा अनुशृण्वन्ति मनो ध्यायत्सर्वे प्राणा अनुध्यायन्ति प्राणं प्राणन्तं सर्वे प्राणा अनुप्राणन्तीत्येवमुदैवैतदिति हेन्द्र उवाचास्तीत्येव प्राणानां निःश्रेयसादानमिति ॥ २ ॥ जीवति वागपेतो भूकान्निह पश्यामो जीवति चक्षुरपेतोऽन्धान्निह पश्यामो जीवति श्रोत्रापेतो बधिरान्निह पश्यामो जीवति बाहुच्छिन्नो जीवत्यरूच्छिन्न इत्येवं हि पश्याम इति अथ खलु प्राण एव प्रणात्मेदं शरीरं परिगृह्योत्थापयति । तस्मादेतमेवोक्त्यनुप्रासीत । यो वै प्राणः सा प्रणा या वा प्रणा स प्राणः । स ह होत्रावस्मिञ्छरीरे वसतः सहोक्ता-मतन्तस्यैवैव हृद्विरतद्विज्ञानं । यत्नेतत्पुरुषः सुतः स्वप्नं न कांचन परयत्थास्मिन्प्राण एवैकधा भवति । तदेनं वाक्स्वैर्नामभिः सहाप्येति चक्षुः सर्वैरूपैः सहाप्येति श्रोत्रं सर्वैः शब्दैः सहाप्येति मनः सर्वैर्धीर्भिः सहाप्येति । स यथा प्रसिद्धयते यथापानेर्ज्वलतो विस्फुलिङ्गा विपतिष्ठिरजेवमेवैतस्मादात्मनः प्राणा यथापतनं विपतिष्ठन्ते प्राणेष्वो देवा देवेष्वो लोकाः । तस्यैवैव सिद्धिरतद्विज्ञानं । यत्रैतत्पुरुष आसीत् मरिच्यकान्त्यं न्येत्य मोहं केति सप्तादुपवर्जनीयं च न शृणोति न पश्यति वाक्का बहव्यथास्मिन्प्राण एवैकधा भवति इति

वाक्सर्वनामभिः सहाप्येति चक्षुः सर्वरूपैः सहाप्येति श्रोत्रं सर्वैः शब्दैः सहाप्येति मनः सर्वैर्ध्यातैः सहाप्येति स यदा प्रतिबुध्यते यथाग्नेज्ज्वलतो विस्फुलिङ्गा विप्रतिष्ठेन्नवमेवैतस्मादात्मनः प्राणा यथायतनं विप्रतिष्ठन्ते प्राण्येभ्यो देवा देवेभ्यो लोकाः ॥ ३ ॥ स यदास्माच्छरीरादुत्क्रामति वागस्मात्सर्वाणि नामान्यभिविस्जते । वाचा सर्वाणि नामान्याप्नोति । प्राणोऽस्मात्सर्वान्गन्धानभिविस्जते प्राणेन सर्वान्गन्धानाप्नोति । चक्षुरस्मात्सर्वाणि रूपायभिविस्जते चक्षुषा सर्वाणि रूपाययाप्नोति । श्रोत्रमस्मात्सर्वाञ्छब्दानभिविस्जते श्रोत्रेण सर्वाञ्छब्दानाप्नोति । मनोऽस्मात्सर्वाणि ध्यातान्यभिविस्जते मनसा सर्वाणि ध्यातान्याप्नोति । सेवा प्राणैः सर्वासिद्धीं वै प्राणः सा प्रज्ञा या वा प्रज्ञा स प्राणः । स ह ह्येतावस्मिच्छरीरे वसतः सहोत्क्रामतोऽर्थं खलु यथा प्रज्ञायां सर्वाणि भूतान्येकीभवन्ति तद्व्याख्यास्यामः ॥ ४ ॥ वागेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्यै नाम परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । प्राणमेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्य गन्धः परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । चक्षुरेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्य रूपं परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । श्रोत्रमेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्य शब्दः परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । जिह्वास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्या अन्नरसः परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । हस्तावेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्यो वर्म परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । शरीरेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्य सुखदुःखे परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । उपस्थेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्यानन्दो रतिः प्रजातिः परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । पादावेवास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तयोरीत्याः परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा । श्लैष्मास्या एकमङ्गमुदूढं तस्यैधियो विज्ञातव्यं कामाः परस्तात्प्रतिविहिता भूतमात्रा ॥ ५ ॥ प्रज्ञया वाचं समारुह्य वाचा सर्वाणि नामान्याप्नोति । प्रज्ञया प्राणं समारुह्य प्राणेन सर्वान्गन्धानाप्नोति । प्रज्ञया चक्षुः समारुह्य चक्षुषा सर्वाणि रूपाययाप्नोति । प्रज्ञया श्रोत्रं समारुह्य श्रोत्रेण सर्वाञ्छब्दानाप्नोति । प्रज्ञया जिह्वां समारुह्य जिह्वया सर्वान्नरसानाप्नोति । प्रज्ञया हस्तौ समारुह्य हस्ताभ्यां सर्वाणि कर्माययाप्नोति । प्रज्ञया शरीरं समारुह्य शरीरेण सुखदुःखे आप्नोति । प्रज्ञयोपस्थं समारुह्योपस्थेनानन्दं रतिं प्रजातिमाप्नोति । प्रज्ञया पादौ समारुह्य पादाभ्यां सर्वा इत्या आप्नोति । प्रज्ञयैव धियं समारुह्य प्रज्ञयैव धियो विज्ञातव्यं कामानाप्नोति ॥ ६ ॥ न हि प्रज्ञापेता वाङ्मात्रं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतन्नाम प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता प्राणो गन्धं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतं गन्धं प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता चक्षुः रूपं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतद्रूपं प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता श्रोत्रं शब्दं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतं शब्दं प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता जिह्वान्नरसं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतमन्नरसं प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता हस्तौ कर्म किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेतामन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतत्कर्म प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता शरीरं सुखदुःखं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतत्सुखदुःखं प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता उपस्थ आनन्दं रतिं प्रजातिं किञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेदन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतमानन्दं रतिं प्रजातिं प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता पादावित्यां काञ्चन प्रज्ञापयेतामन्यत्र मे मनोऽभूदित्याह नाहमेतामित्यां प्राज्ञासिषमिति । न हि प्रज्ञापेता धीः काञ्चन सिद्ध्येन्न प्रज्ञातव्यं प्रज्ञायेत ॥ ७ ॥ न वाचं विजिज्ञासीत वक्तांरं विधात् । न गन्धं विजिज्ञासीत घ्रातांरं विधात् । न रूपं विजिज्ञासीत रूपविदं विधात् । न शब्दं विजिज्ञासीत श्रोतांरं विधात् । न अन्नरसं विजिज्ञासीतान्नरसं विधात् । न कर्म विजिज्ञासीत कर्तांरं विधात् । न सुखदुःखे विजिज्ञासीत सुखदुःखयोर्विधातांरं विधात् । नानन्दं रतिं प्रजातिं विजिज्ञासीतानन्दस्य रतेः प्रजातेर्विधातांरं विधात् । नेत्यां विजिज्ञासीतेतारं विधात् । न मनो विजिज्ञासीत मन्तांरं विधात् । ता का पता दशैव भूतमात्रा अविप्रहं दशप्रज्ञामात्रा अविभूतं यदि भूतमात्रा न स्युर्न प्रज्ञामात्राः स्युर्यदा प्रज्ञामात्रा न स्युर्न भूतमात्राः स्युः ॥ ८ ॥ न ह्यन्यतरतो रूपं किञ्चन सिद्ध्येन्नो यतन्नाना । तथाप्यन्येषु नेतिरपि ता मातरा अर्पिता एवमेवेता भूतमात्राः प्रज्ञामात्रास्वर्पिताः प्रज्ञामात्राः प्राणैः अर्पिताः । एव

प्राण एव प्रज्ञात्मामन्दोऽत्रोऽभ्युतो न साधुना कर्मणा भूयान्नो एवासाधुना कर्मणा धनीयान् । एव ह्येनै  
साधु कर्म कारयति तं यमेभ्यो लोकेभ्य उज्जनीयत एव उ एवैनमसाधु कर्म कारयति तं यमथोनिनीयते ।  
एव लोकपाल एव लोकाधिपतिरेव सर्वेश्वरः स म आत्मेति विद्यात स म आत्मेति विद्यात् ॥ ६ ॥

इति तृतीयोऽध्यायः ॥ ३ ॥

1. Pratardana, forsooth, the son of Divodāsa (King of Kāśī), came by means of fighting and strength to the beloved abode of Indra. Indra said to him : 'Pratardana, let me give you a boon to choose.' And Pratardana answered : 'Do you yourself choose that boon for me which you deem most beneficial for a man.' Indra said to him : 'No one who chooses, chooses for another ; choose thyself.' Then Pratardana replied : 'That boon to choose is no boon for me.'

Then, however, Indra did not swerve from the truth, for Indra is truth. Indra said to him : 'Know me only ; that is what I deem most beneficial for man, that he should know me. I slew the three-headed son of Tvaṣṭṛ ; I delivered the Aruṇmukhas, the devotees, to the wolves (Śālāvṛka), breaking many treaties, I killed the people of Prahlaḍa in Heaven, the people of Pulomā in the sky, the people of Kalakaṅga on earth. And not one hair of me was harmed thereby, and he who knows me thus, by no deed of his is his life harmed, not by the murder of his mother, not by the murder of his father, not by theft, not by the killing of a Brāhmaṇa. If he is going to commit a sin, the bloom does not depart from his face.'

2. Indra said : 'I am Prāṇa, meditate on me as the conscious self (Prajñātman), as life, as immortality. Life is Prāṇa, Prāṇa is life. Immortality is Prāṇa, Prāṇa is immortality. As long as Prāṇa dwells in this body, so long surely there is life. By Prāṇa he obtains immortality in the other world, by knowledge of true conception. He who meditates on me as life and immortality, gains his full life in this world and obtains in this world immortality and indestructibility.'

Pratardana said : 'Some maintain here that the Prāṇas become one, for (otherwise) no one could at the same time make known a name by speech, see a form by the eye, hear a sound with the ear, think a thought with the mind. After having become one, the Prāṇas perceive all these together, one by one. While speech speaks, all Prāṇas speak after it. While the eye sees, all Prāṇas see after it. While the ear hears, all Prāṇas hear after it. While the mind thinks all Prāṇas think after it. While the Prāṇa breathes, all Prāṇas breathe after it.'

Thus it is indeed, said Indra, but nevertheless there is a pre-eminence among the Prāṇas.

3. Man lives deprived of speech, for we see dumb people. Man lives deprived of sight, for we see blind people. Man lives deprived of hearing, for we see deaf people. Man lives deprived of mind, for we see infants. Man lives deprived of his arms, deprived of his legs, for we see thus. But Prāṇa alone is the conscious self (Prajñātman), and having laid hold of this body, it makes it rise up. Therefore it is said, let man worship it alone as Uktha. What is Prāṇa, that is Prajñā (self-consciousness); what is Prajñā (self-consciousness), that is Prāṇa, for together they (Prajñā and Prāṇa) live in this body, and together they go out of it. Of that, this is evidence, this is the understanding. When a man, being thus asleep, sees no dream whatever, he becomes one with that Prāṇa alone.



Then speech goes to him (when he is absorbed in Prāṇa) with all names, the eye with all forms, the ear with all sounds, the mind with all thoughts. And when he awakes, then, as from a burning fire, sparks proceed in all directions, thus from that self, the Prāṇas (speech, etc.) proceed, each towards its place; from the Prāṇas the gods (Agni, etc.) from the gods, the world.

Of this, this is the proof, this is the understanding. When a man is thus sick, going to die, falling into weakness and faintness, they say: 'His thought has departed, he hears not, he sees not, he speaks not, he thinks not. Then he becomes with that Prāṇa alone. Then speech goes to him (who is absorbed in Prāṇa) with all names, the eye with all forms, the ear with all sounds, the mind with all thoughts. And when he departs from this body, he departs together with all these.

4. Speech gives up to him (who is absorbed in Prāṇa) all names, so that by speech he obtains all names. The nose gives to him all odours, so that by scent he obtains all odours. The eye gives up to him all forms, so that by the eye he obtains all forms. The ear gives to him all sounds, so that by the ear he obtains all sounds. The mind gives up to him all thoughts, so that by the mind he obtains all thoughts. This is the complete absorption in Prāṇa. And what is Prāṇa is Prajñā (self-consciousness), what is Prajñā (self-consciousness) is Prāṇa. For together do these two live in the body, and together do they depart.

Now we shall explain how all things become one in that Prajñā (self-consciousness).

5. Speech is one portion taken out of Prajñā (self-consciousness, knowledge), the word is its object, placed outside. The nose is one portion taken out of it, the odour is its object, placed outside. The eye is one portion taken out of it, the form is the object, placed outside. The ear is one portion taken out of it, the sound is its object, placed outside. The tongue is one portion taken out of it, the taste of food is its object, placed outside. The two hands are one portion taken out of it, their action is their object, placed outside. The body is one portion taken out of it, its pleasure and pain are its object, placed outside. The organ is one portion taken out of it, happiness, joy, and offspring are its object, placed outside. The two feet are one portion taken out of it, movements are their object, placed outside. Mind is one portion taken out of it, thoughts and desires are its object, placed outside.

6. Having by Prajñā (self-conscious knowledge) taken possession of speech, he obtains by speech all words. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the nose, he obtains all odours. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the eye he obtains all forms. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the ear, he obtains all sounds. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the tongue, he obtains all tastes of food. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the two hands, he obtains all actions. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the body, he obtains pleasure and pain. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the organ, he obtains happiness, joy, and offspring. Having by Prajñā taken possession of the two feet, he obtains all movements. Having by Prajñā taken possession of mind, he obtains all thoughts.

7. For without Prajñā (self-consciousness) speech does not make known (to the self) any word. My mind was absent, he says, I did not perceive that word. Without Prajñā the nose does not make known any odour. My mind was absent, he says, I did not perceive that odour. Without Prajñā the eye does not make known any form. My mind was absent, he says, I did not perceive. Without Prajñā the ear does not make known any sound. My mind was absent, he says, I did not perceive that sound. Without

Prajñā the tongue does not make known any taste. My mind was absent, he says, I did not perceive that taste. Without Prajñā the two hands do not make known any act. Our mind was absent, they say, we did not perceive any act. Without Prajñā the body does not make known pleasure or pain. My mind was absent, he says, I did not perceive that pleasure or pain. Without Prajñā the organ does not make known happiness, joy, or offspring. My mind was absent he says, I did not perceive that happiness, joy or offspring. Without Prajñā the two feet do not make known any movement. Our mind was absent, they say, we did not perceive that movement. Without Prajñā no thought succeeds, nothing can be known that is to be known.

8. Let no man try to find out what speech is, let him know the speaker. Let no man try to find out what odour is, let him know him who smells. Let no man try to find out what form is, let him know the seer. Let no man try to find out what sound is, let him know the hearer. Let no man try to find out the tastes of food, let him know the knower of tastes. Let no man try to find out what action is, let him know the agent. Let no man try to find out what pleasure and pain are, let him know the knower of what pleasure and pain are. Let no man try to find out what happiness, joy, and offspring are, let him know the knower of happiness, joy, and offspring. Let no man try to find out what movement is, let him know the mover. Let no man try to find out what mind is, let him know the thinker. These ten objects (what is spoken, smelled, seen, etc.) have reference to Prajñā (self-consciousness), the ten subjects (speech, the senses, mind) have reference to objects : if there were no objects there would be no subjects ; if there were no subjects, there would be no objects. For on either side alone nothing could be achieved. But that (the self of Prajñā, consciousness, Prāṇa, life) is not many, (but one). For as in a car, the circumference of a wheel is placed on the spokes, and the spokes on the nave, thus are these objects (circumference) placed on the subjects (spokes), and the subjects on the Prāṇa. And that Prāṇa indeed is the Self of Prajñā (the Self-conscious Self) blessed, imperishable, immortal. He does not increase by a good action, He does not decrease by a bad action. For He makes him, whom He wishes to lead up from these worlds, do a good deed and the same makes him, whom He wishes to lead down from these worlds, do a bad deed. And He is the guardian of the world, He is the king of the world, He is the lord of the universe,—and He is my (Indra's) self, thus let it be known, yea, thus let it be known !

In the above we see that Pratardana, by his great valour in war, went to the abode of Indra : and there a boon was granted to him. Pratardana asked the boon by the question, 'Tell me that which is the best and which you deem most beneficial for a man.'

To this Indra replies by saying, 'I am Prāṇa, the intelligent-self, meditate on me as life, immortality.'

*Doubt* : Is this Indra who refers to himself as Prāṇa, the intelligent-self and the object of meditation, the Jīva-Indra, the ruler of heaven ? Or is he the Supreme Brahman ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The word Indra, is a well-known designation of a Jīva. Therefore the Prāṇa, read here as the synonym with Indra, also refers to Jīva. And Indra here teaches worship of himself as being most beneficent for man.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 1. 28.

प्राणस्तथानुगमात् ॥ १ । १ । २८ ॥

प्राणः Prāṇah, the Breath (as used in the Kauṣītaki) is Brahman. तथा Tathā, appropriate to Him, thus, so. अनुगमात् Anugamāt, because of being understood.

Note.—Pratyudāharana Saṅgati.

28.—Prāṇa is Brahman : that being understood from a connected consideration of the passages referring to it.—28.

## COMMENTARY

When Indra refers to himself by saying 'I am Prāṇa, meditate on me as conscious-self, as immortality,' he refers to Brahman by Prāṇa and not to any Jīva or his individual self. Why ?

Because the whole context of the above passage shows that the Prāṇa there means Brahman. It is said to be 'Prajñātmā,' 'conscious-self.' It is said to be the bliss, the immortal, the undecaying. All these are attributes of Brahman : and cannot apply to any Jīva.

*Doubt :* But Indra is the speaker here and he refers to himself as Prāṇa. He very positively says 'know me only, I am Prāṇa.' How can then Prāṇa refer to Brahman? He further says, 'I slew the three-headed son of Tvaṣṭṛ. I delivered the Aruṇmukhas, the devotees, to the wolves (Sālāvṛka) ; breaking many treaties I killed the people of Prahlāda, etc.' All these show the Jīva-hood of Indra, and that he teaches his worship in this passage. Therefore, in the concluding passage also, though bliss, etc., are used there, 'Prāṇa should be so interpreted as to refer to the Jīva-Indra, and not to Brahman, for references to Jīva are many in this Upaniṣad. In fact, when Indra says, "I am Prāṇa," he teaches the worship of the Devatā Indra alone in reality ; just as when the Upaniṣad says, "Worship the speech as cow" (Br. Up., V, 8. 1), which teaches actually the meditation on speech. Similarly Indra teaches his own worship, as Prāṇa : for it is the presiding deity of all power. As the Upaniṣad says, "The Prāṇa verily is power" (Br. Up., V, 14. 4). As Indra is very powerful, he identifies himself with Prāṇa, the deity of power. Therefore, it teaches really the worship of a Jīva.

This objection is raised and answered in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 1. 29

न वक्तुगतामोपदेशादिति चेद्, अध्यात्मसम्बन्ध भूमा ह्यस्मिन् ॥ १ । १ । २९ ॥

न Na, not. वक्तुः Vaktuḥ, of the speaker (Indra). आत्म Atma, of the self. उपदेशाद् Upadeśāt, because of teaching. इति Iti, thus. चेद् Chet, if. अध्यात्म

Adhyātma, to the Inner Self, the Supreme Self and His attributes. सम्बन्धः Sambandhaḥ, connection, reference. भूमा Bhûmā, multitude, innumerable, much, plenty. हि Hi, because (we find). अस्मिन् Asmin, in this Upaniṣad.

29.—If it be objected that Brahman is not referred to here, because the speaker refers to himself : we say, not so. Because we see in this passage, multitude of connections with the inner self, (which is possible only if the speaker is viewed as Brahman.)—29.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Adhyātma Sambandha' means having connection with the Inner self, that is to say, has reference to the attributes which are possessed only by the Supreme Self. The word 'Bhûmā' of the Sûtra means 'many' or 'multitude.' In this chapter of Kauṣikî Upaniṣad, we find with reference to Prâṇa many attributes which are consistently applicable to the Paramâtmā alone : and not to any Jîva.

*Firstly* : Pratardana asked for the boon which was most beneficial for man : that is to say, he asked for the means of attaining 'Mukti' (Release). The answer to this is, "Worship me as Prâṇâ," which can only refer to Brahman. For the worship of Brahman alone can give Mukti.

*Secondly* : It is said of this Prâṇa, "For he (Prâṇa) makes him, whom he wishes to lead out from these worlds, do a good deed." This shows that the Prâṇa is the great cause that makes every activity possible. This also is consistent only with Brahman and not with Breath or Indra.

*Thirdly* : It is said of this Prâṇa, "For as in a car the circumference of a wheel is placed on the spokes, and the spokes on the nave, thus are these objects (circumference) placed on the subjects (spokes) and the subjects on the Prâṇa" This also shows that all objects, sentient or non-sentient, are contained in the Prâṇa. This is only possible if Prâṇa meant Brahman.

*Fourthly* : It is again said that "Prâṇa indeed is the Self of Prajñâ (the individual Jîva). He is the blessed, imperishable, immortal." "He is the lord of all the worlds. He is the God of all." These attributes, also show that Prâṇa refers to Brahman. Thus all these multitudes of attributes, mentioned in connection with Prâṇa, are consistent with the view that Prâṇa means Brahman, and not any other object.

But if Indra really meant to teach the worship of Brahman, why does he say, "Worship *me*." It is really misleading. To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I. 1. 30.<sup>1</sup>

शास्त्रदृष्ट्या तूपदेशो वामदेववत् ॥ १ । १ । ३० ॥

शास्त्रदृष्ट्या Sāstra-drṣṭyā, from the view-point of Scripture : through [insight based on scripture : as a technical method of scriptural saying. The scriptures generally speak of the organ as identical with the function, such as the eye with the function of seeing. Similarly, the Jīva is spoken of as the Lord : though the soul is merely an organ of God. This mode of expression is called Sāstradrṣṭi. तु Tu, but. उपदेशः Upadeśah, teaching, instruction, वामदेववत् Vāmadevavat, like that of Vāmadeva.

30. The instruction given by Indra about himself, is to be understood as spoken from that point of intuition (or ecstasy) as in the case of Vāmadeva.—30.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu' of the Sūtra meaning 'but' is used to remove the doubt. Though Indra describes himself as a Jīva by certain attributes, such as the killer of Tvaṣṭr, etc., yet when he says, 'Worship *me*,' he refers to the Brahman who is the real Ego of everybody ; and it is from this standpoint of Sāstra or scripture that he says so.

The Sāstra or scripture teaches by the method of 'identity,' namely, by identifying the function with the agent whose function it is. Thus Chhandogya Upaniṣad writes that

न वै वाचो न चक्षुषि न श्रोत्राणि न मनांसि, आचक्षते, प्राणो ह्येतेजानि भवति ॥

And people do not call them, the tongues, the ears, the eyes, the minds, but the breaths (Prāṇa, the senses). For breath are all these.

Thus we see that the Chhandogya Upaniṣad identifies the functions of seeing, hearing, thinking, etc., with the life whose functions they are ; for Prāṇa (life-breath) is the support of the other functions of the body.

Similarly, we find in the Praśna Upaniṣad :

तान् वरिष्ठः प्राण उवाच । ना मोहमापयथाऽहमेवैतत् पञ्चधात्मानं प्रविभज्यतद्वायमवदन्त्यं विभारयामीति ॥ ३ ॥

Then Prāṇa (breath, spirit, life), as the best, said to them : Be not deceived, I alone, dividing myself fivefold, support this body and keep it. (Br. Up., II, 3).

Now Indra had realised that the highest Self was the Controller within him and that his 'I' was only of secondary importance. This idea of self-realisation he wanted to impart to Prataradana, who was still in the

meshes of his lower 'I'; and who thought that there was no higher controller within his 'I.' Indra says, 'Worship me as Prāṇa', meaning thereby, "I who function merely because of the Will of Brahman, worship Him." This is the method by which the scriptures constantly teach. Thus Vāmadeva also spoke of himself as having become everything :

ब्रह्म वा इदमग्र आसीत् तदात्मानमेवावेदाहं ब्रह्मास्मीति तस्मात्तत् सर्वमभवत् ततो यो देवानां प्रत्यबुध्यत स एव तदभवत्तथर्षीणां तथा मनुष्याणां तद्धेतत्पश्यन्नुषिर्वाग्मदेवः प्रतिपेदेऽहं मनुमवत् सूर्यश्चेति तदिदमप्येतर्हि य एवं वेदाऽहं ब्रह्मास्मीति स इदं सर्वं भवति तस्य ह न देवाश्च नाभूत्या रंशते आत्मा शेषां स भवति ।

Verily in the beginning this was Brahman, that Brahman knew its self only saying, 'I am Brahman.' From it all this sprang. Thus whatever Deva awakened (so as to know Brahman), he indeed became that Brahman, and the same with Ṛṣis and men. The Ṛṣi Vāmadeva saw and understood it, singing, 'I was a Manu (moon), I was the sun.' Therefore, now also he who thus knows that he is Brahman, becomes all this, and even the Devas cannot prevent it, he himself is their self. (Br. Up., I, 54.)

Here also Vāmadeva speaks of himself, 'Aham' or 'I' as Brahman. But by 'I' he really means Brahman who is the impeller of the functions of Vāmadeva's "I" as well as of the "I's" of Manu, etc. It is from this point of identification that Vāmadeva calls himself Manu, while Indra calls himself Prāṇa.

This identity of the pervader and the thing pervaded, we find stated in the Purāṇas also. Thus the Devas addressing Viṣṇu say : (Viṣṇu Purāṇa, I, 9. 69) :

योऽयं तवागतो देव समीपं देवतागणः ।

स त्वं एव जगत् स्रष्टा यतः सर्वगती भवान् ॥

O Lord ! This host of Devas that has come in Thy Presence is indeed Thou, because Thou, O Creator ! pervadest all.

So also in the Gītā we read :

सर्वं समाम्रोषि ततोसि सर्वम् ।

Thou holdest all, therefore, thou art Thyself all (XI., 40).

In ordinary language people also say that two things are one, when they are both in the same place or when there is an unity of opinion. Thus cows all become one in the evening, *i.e.*, they are all resting in the same cow-pen, while in the day time they are grazing all over the field. This shows the unity of place. Similarly, disputing antagonists have become one, *i.e.*, they have arrived at a consensus of opinion. Therefore, the unity between the Jīva and Brahman, as shown in the speech of Indra, is a unity of this nature, and not absolute identity.

But—an objection is raised here—admitting that there are multitudes of allusions to the attributes which exclusively belong to Brahman in the above Kauṣītaki passage, yet it is not possible to explain the above passage

as applying to Brahman ; because there are equally multitudes of indications to the contrary. Such as, "let no man try to find out what is speech, let him know the speaker." (Kauś. Up., III. 8). 'I slew the three-headed son of Tvaṣṭr, etc.' : these are marks showing that by Prāṇa is meant the life-force of the Jīva. So long as this vital force remains in the body the man is alive. This life-force or Prāṇa is Self-consciousness. For we find it is so stated in the following : "As long as Prāṇa dwells in this body so long surely there is life" (Kauś. Up., II. 2). "But Prāṇa alone is the conscious Self, having laid hold of the body makes it rise up" (Kauś. Up., II. 3). Passages like these show that the Prāṇa here refers to the vital force in man. Similarly, "what is Prāṇa that is Prajñā (Self-consciousness). What is Prajñā that is Prāṇa. For, together they live in the body and together they go out of it." (*Ibid.*) This also shows that Prāṇa here either means the Jīva or the vital force. They are identified here in this passage—both are one as active or latent. Thus in the above chapter of the Kauśitaki Upaniṣad we find all the three indications, namely : (i) The Prāṇa refers to Brahman. (ii) It refers to Jīva also. (iii) It refers to vital force as well. Therefore, all these three should be worshipped, i.e., God, Soul, and Breath. To remove this doubt the author says :

SŪTRA 1. 1. 31.

जीवमुख्यप्राणलिङ्गान्, नेति चेन्, नोपासा त्रैविध्यादाश्रितत्वादिह तद्  
योगात् ॥ १ । १ । ३१ ॥

जीव Jīva, the human Soul, the individual Self. मुख्यप्राण Mukhya Prāṇa, the chief Breath, the chief vital air. लिङ्गात् Lingât, because of the characteristic mark. न Na, not. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. उपासा Upâsâ, meditation, worship. त्रैविध्यात् Traividhyât, because of the three-foldness. आश्रितत्वाद् Aśritatvât, because of being met with (in other places also), because of such texts taking shelter with or applying to Brahman in other places also. इह Iha, here, in this Kauśitaki passage. तद् योगात् Tad-yogât, because of its appropriateness.

31. If it be said that Brahman alone is not meant there, for we find there marks of the individual Soul (Jīva) and the chief vital air (Mukhya Prāṇa) : we say, no ; because then the meditation taught would become three-fold (which is absurd). Therefore the marks of Jīva and Prāṇa should be applied to Brahman, for such an application is met with in the other texts also, and of its being appropriate here too.—31.

## COMMENTARY

Though there are characteristic marks of Jīva (individual soul) and vital air in the above Upaniṣad, yet these two are not to be worshipped or meditated upon. Why? For then there would be three sorts of worship. When Indra says, 'Meditate on *me* as Prāṇa,' he uses only one sentence; and one sentence can not be used to mean three different sentences; for this goes against the maxim, "one sentence must be interpreted in one way only." The sense is this, that because in the above passage we find the characteristic marks of the human *soul* and the life *breath*: are we to interpret the other marks which apply to Brahman as applicable to the Jīva and the breath? Or are the three to be taken separately and independently? Or are we to apply the marks of Jīva and the life breath to Brahman? Thus there are three alternatives, *i. e.*, (i) take them all as applicable to Jīva and breath: (ii) take them all separately: (iii) take them all as applying to Brahman. The first alternative has already been set aside. For the marks of Brahman cannot be applied to Jīva. The second has the fault of ordaining three sorts of meditation, which is contrary to the maxim of interpretation. Now remains the third alternative. That is, are we to take the characteristic marks of Jīva and Prāṇa as applied to Brahman? To this the author says, yes. The marks of Jīva and vital air found in the above Upaniṣad should be applied to Brahman; because the words like Jīva and Prāṇa are applied to Brahman. Therefore, the author uses in the above Sūtra the word 'Āśritatvāt' meaning 'such is met with in other texts also.'

If it be objected that in other texts, the characteristic marks of Jīva and breath have been applied to Brahman; because there were contrary indications in those texts showing that Brahman alone was meant there. What is the indication in this chapter?

To this we reply. Here also there is such indication; for Pratardana asks, "What is the most beneficial meditation for man?" The reply to this is, "The meditation on Prāṇa." This is an indication that Brahman is meant. Therefore, here also there is appropriateness. Therefore the author uses in the above Sūtra the words 'Iha tad yogāt' meaning "here also it is appropriate" (to use Prāṇa and Jīva indications as applying to Brahman.)

But—an objection is raised again—how can you reconcile simultaneous dwelling of the Prāṇa and Prajñā, in Jīva and their going out of Jīva, in the case of Brahman? To this we reply, that the above passage means that Brahman and the energy of action (Kriyā-śakti) represented by the vital Prāṇa, and the energy of consciousness (Jñāna-śakti) represented



by the Jīva, all three simultaneously dwell in the body and simultaneously leave it.

It is again objected, the words like Prāṇa, etc., denote certain substances having certain attributes; how could they be taken here to mean attributes and not the substances. This is not so: though certain attributes are mentioned here, yet the attributes denote and include the things also. For the attribute and the substance in which they inhere are the same. Thus when Indra says, 'I am Prāṇa,' I am conscious-Self (Prajñā),' he means that he (Indra) possesses these two powers or attributes: vital energy and conscious energy, as also the substance of those energies. Therefore he says that "what is Prāṇa that is Prajñā: what is Prajñā that is Prāṇa." The right interpretation is that Brahman alone is to be understood by the words Indra, Prāṇa, Prajñā, etc., there.

But another objection is raised. What is the necessity of this Adhikaraṇa again, "meditation on Prāṇa" and identifying Prāṇa with Brahman, when in the preceding Sūtra, I, 1. 23, it has been shown that Prāṇa means Brahman?

To this we answer: this Adhikaraṇa is not a redundancy. In the Sūtra I, 1. 23, the doubt was only with regard to the meaning of the single word Prāṇa. In this Adhikaraṇa the doubt was not about the meaning of the word Prāṇa, but about the whole passage, in which there are words, and marks or indications that would have led a person meditating, to think that Jīva and breath were also meant to be meditated upon. To remove this doubt, it is declared that Brahman alone is the topic of discussion in this Kauś. Up. and not Jīva or vital breath.

Therefore this Adhikaraṇa has been separately stated by the author.

Here ends the first Pāda of the first Adhyāya of the commentary of the holy Brahma Sūtras.

---

## FIRST ADHYAYA

### SECOND PĀDA

#### *Adhikaraṇa 1—The Manomaya is Brahman.*

May Sri Kṛṣṇa illumine my heart. He whose praises are sung by words like Manomaya (intelligent), etc.

In the First Pāda, it has been taught that the Supreme Brahman should be enquired into. He is the Cause of the whole world and is termed the Highest Person. Further it has been shown therein that certain words like Ânandamaya, Jyotis, Prāṇa, Âkāśa, etc., which *prima facie* apply to something else, should be construed to mean, and do mean, Brahman; because such is the Samanvaya or logical construction of the sentences in which those words occur. While now in the second and third Pādas, will be shown that certain other words and sentences, in which the characteristic marks of Brahman are not so apparent, as in those of the first Pāda, apply also to Him.

*Viśaya* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad in the chapter relating to the Sâṇḍilya Vidyâ (III., 14. 1) we read as follows :

सर्वं खल्विदं ब्रह्म तज्जलानिति शान्त उपसीताथ खलु ऋतुमयः पुरुषो यथा क्रतुरस्मिँल्लोकं पुरुषो भवति तथेतः प्रेत्य भवति स कुतुं कुर्वीत ॥ १ ॥ मनोमयः प्राणशरीरो भारुपः सत्यसङ्कल्प आकाशात्मा सर्वकर्म सर्वकामः सर्वगन्धः सर्वरसः सर्वमिदमभ्यात्तोऽवाक्यनादरः ॥ २ ॥ एष म आत्मान्तर्हृदयेऽणीयान् ब्रह्मेवा यवाद्वा सर्पपाद्वा श्यामाकाद्वा श्यामाकतण्डुलाद्वा एष म आत्मान्तर्हृदये ज्यायान् पृथिव्या ज्यायानन्तरिक्षा-ज्ज्यायान्दिवो ज्यायानेभ्यो लोकेभ्यः ॥ ३ ॥ सर्वकर्म सर्वकामः सर्वगन्धः सर्वरसः सर्वमिदमभ्यात्तोऽवाक्यनादर एष म आत्मान्तर्हृदये एतद्ब्रह्मेतमितः प्रेत्याभिस्मभवितास्मीति यस्य स्यादद्वा न विचिकित्साऽन्तीति इ स्माह शाण्डिल्यः शाण्डिल्यः ॥ ४ ॥

#### FOURTEENTH KHAṇḍA.

1. This Brahman is indeed the Full. Let one meditate with devotion on Him as the Mover-on-the-water. (Such meditation leads to faith). Next because a man is a creature of faith, as is his faith in this life so will be his condition in the next, after death. So let him generate full faith (in the Lord)

2. (The Lord is) Omniscient, Omnipotent, Glorious, Resolute, All-wise, the Agent, the Ordainer, the Heart's desire, the most Sweet-scenting, the Supporter of all this, the Silent Impartial Witness.

3. This my Self within the heart is smaller than a corn of rice, smaller than a corn of barley, smaller than a mustard seed, smaller than a canary seed or the kernel of a canary seed. He also is my Self within the heart, greater than the earth, greater than the intermediate region, greater than the Heaven, greater than all these worlds.

4. He is the enjoyer of all works, all desires, all sweet odours, and all tastes. He embraces all this, and is the silent impartia (witness). This my Self within the heart is

that Brahman. (Let one meditate on Him, with this idea) "when departing from this body I shall reach Him." He who has this faith (verily obtains Him), there is no doubt in it. Thus said Śāṇḍilya, thus said Śāṇḍilya

*Doubt* : Now arises this doubt : Is this Manomaya mentioned above, as the object of worship and meditation, the Jīva or the Param-ātman ?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : The words Manas and Prāṇa are used in the above passage, and we are all aware that these are the organs of the Jīva, and therefore they apply to the Jīva and not to Brahman, for He has no organs like Manas or Prāṇa. For says the Sruti : "Aprāṇa hi amanaḥ śubhraḥ" (Muṇḍaka, II, 1. 2.) "He is without Manas and Prāṇa, He is pure."

Thus Prāṇa and Manas have been excluded regarding Brahman. Therefore the being referred to in the above passage is a Jīva, and not Brahman.

Though the word Brahman occurs in the opening sentence of the above passage, yet that Brahman is not to be taken as the object of meditation described as Manomaya, because the sentence "Sarvam khalvidam Brahma" is really an injunction teaching Śānti, the person meditating must first quieten all his faculties, and in order to get this peace, he is taught to imagine every thing as Brahman. Thus it being ascertained that Manomaya, etc., refers to Jīva, the word Brahman occurring at the end, in the phrase "he my Self within the heart is that Brahman," also refers to the Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author answers :

SŪTRA I, 2. 1.

सर्वत्र प्रसिद्धोपदेशात् ॥ १ । २ । १ ॥

सर्वत्र Sarvatra, everywhere, in every Vedānta passage. प्रसिद्ध Prasiddha, (of) the well-known (Brahman possessing the attributes of creation. etc.) उपदेशात् Upadeśat, because of the teaching.

1. The Being referred to in the above is the Param-Brahman, because here also is taught the well-known attributes or definition of Brahman, viz., Creator, etc., in the phrase Tajjalān.—32.

COMMENTARY.

The Being referred to is verily Brahman and not Jīva. Why ? Because the attribute, which exclusively belongs to Brahman, which is taught in all the Vedāntas, namely the Cause of the creation, etc., of the universe, is taught here also, in the formula Tajjalān. Though in the Upakrama (or commencement, i.e., in the passage "Sarvam khalvidam Brahma.") the Brahman is taught not primarily for its own sake, but as a means of

acquiring Sānti or mental quiescence, yet in the subsequent passage, "Manomaya, etc.," Brahman is referred to and not Jiva. The word "Kratu" in the above passage means Upāsanā or meditation. The word "Manomaya" there means "he who is to be grasped by pure Manas or higher intuition," as we find in the following : Manasaivānudraṣṭavyam (Br. Up., IV, 4. 19.) "He is to be seen by mind alone." As regards the passages which declare that Brahman is not to be apprehended by the mind, such as "Yato vachonivartante aprāpyamanasā saha." etc., they really mean that Brahman is not apprehended *at all* by the mind of the scoffer, and not *totally* comprehended even by the mind of the knowers of wisdom also.

He is called Prāṇa-śarīra, or Prāṇa-bodied because he is the controller of Prāṇa ; just as the Jiva is the controller of the physical body, so the Brahman is the controller of Prāṇic body of the universe. Others say that the word Prāṇa-śarīra means 'He whose body is as dear to His devotees as the life is dear to all mankind. His divine form is the most dear object to his worshippers.' He is said to be without Prāṇa, in the sense that His existence does not depend on Prāṇa as those of ordinary creatures. He is said to be without Manas, because His knowledge does not depend upon mind. Or the prohibition Aprāṇa and Amanas may apply to the non-possession of the Prākṛtic Prāṇa and Manas by Brahman ; and not that He has no life or mind of His own. In other Srutis He is called "possessed of mind," (मनोमयः). He is also said to breathe without air in some Srutis, (आनीदवात) Anīdāvātam, etc.

Others say that Manomaya refers to Brahman, because this appellation has been frequently applied to Him in the Upaniṣads. Thus 'Manomaya prāṇa-śarīra-netā' (Mund., II, 2.7.) "He assumes the nature of the mind, and becomes the guide of the body of senses." Similarly in the (Taitt. Up., I. 6. 1) we find the word Manomaya applied to him. "There is the ether within the heart, and in it there is the Person consisting of mind, immortal, golden."

So also in the (Kath. Up., VII. 9) "He is conceived by the heart, by wisdom, by the mind. Those who know this, become immortal." He is also "Prāṇasya prāṇaḥ," life of life. (Br. Up., IV. 4. 18). Thus the well-known Manomaya applied in all the above passages to Brahman is referred to here in the Chhāndogya also. Therefore it refers to the Supreme Self.

SŪTRA 1. 2. 2.

विवक्षित गुणोपपत्तेश्च ॥ १ । २ । २ ॥

विवक्षित Vivakṣita, desired, to be stated, subsequently to be mentioned. गुण Guṇa, qualities. उपपत्ते Upapatteh, because. ७) the reasonableness. च Cha, and.

2. Moreover the qualities subsequently described are possible in Brahman only.—33.

COMMENTARY.

The attributes like 'Prāṇa-sārīra' whose body is Prāṇa, भारूपः whose form is light, etc., are possible in Brahman only and not in a Jīva, where they are out of place.

SŪTRA I. 2. 3.

अनुपपत्तेस्तु न शरीरः ॥ १ । २ । ३ ॥

अनुपपत्तेः Anupapattēh, because of the impossibility, because of the unreasonableness, तु Tu, but, न Na, not, शरीरः Śārīrah, the embodied, the Jīva.

3. The embodied one is not the Manomaya (Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 14. 2.) because those qualities are not possible in a Jīva—34.

COMMENTARY.

The Jīva is like a glowworm before the luminosity of the Brahman, who is like a sun when compared with it. The high attributes described in that passage are not possible in a Jīva

SŪTRA I. 2. 4.

कर्मकर्तृव्यपदेशाच्च ॥ १ । २ । ४ ॥

कर्म Karma, object. कर्तृ Kartṛ, agent. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, because of the declaration. च Cha, and.

4. And because there is a distinction drawn therein between the agent (Jīva) and the object Brahman.—35.

COMMENTARY.

The text says : "When I shall have departed from hence, I shall obtain him." Here the word "Him" refers to the above-mentioned Manomaya, in the objective case, while the agent is the Jīva who says "I shall obtain." Therefore the *object* Manomaya is, and must be, different from the *agent* (Jīva) who obtains it. Therefore the Manomaya is 'the Supreme Lord. The obtaining here is like that of a river falling into a sea.

SŪTRA I. 2. 5.

शब्दविशेषात् ॥ १ । २ । ५ ॥

शब्द Sabda, word. विशेषात् Viśeṣāt, because of difference.

5. Because of the difference of declensions of the two words, the Manomaya is Brahman.—36.

## COMMENTARY.

“He is my Self within the heart.” Here by using the word ‘my’ in the genitive case is denoted the embodied self, the worshipper, while Manomaya is the worshipped, and is employed there in the nominative case. When in the same sentence, two words are used in two different cases, these words always denote two different objects. Therefore, the Manomaya is different from the Jīva, the embodied self, the former is the worshipped, the latter is the worshipper.

SŪTRA I., 2. 6.

स्मृतेश्च ॥ १ । २ । ६ ॥

स्मृतेः Smṛteh, because of a Smṛti text. च Cha, and.

6. So also the Smṛti—37.

## COMMENTARY.

So also we find in the Gītā, (xviii, 61) :

ईश्वरः सर्वभूतानां हृद्देशेऽर्जुन तिष्ठति । भ्रामयन् सर्वभूतानि यन्त्रारूढानि मायया ॥

The Lord dwelleth in the hearts of all beings, O Arjuna, by His illusive power, causing all beings to revolve, as though mounted on a potter’s wheel.

Now an objection is raised, that the Manomaya of the Chhândogya cannot be Īśvara, but is Jīva, because the description there is more applicable to an individual soul than to God. The text says : “He is my Self within the heart, smaller than a corn of rice, smaller than a corn of barley, smaller than a mustard seed, smaller than a canary seed or the kernel of a canary seed.” This shows that the Manomaya occupies very little space, in fact it is atomic and so cannot be God.

To remove this doubt the author says :

SŪTRA I. 2. 7.

अर्मकौकस्त्वात् तद् व्यपदेशाच्च च नेति चेन्, न, निचाय्यत्वादेव व्योमवच्च ॥ १ । २ । ७ ॥

अर्मक Arbhaka, small. ओकस्त्वात् Okastvât, because of dwelling place or abode. तद् Tad, that, of that. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesât, because of the description or denotation. च Cha, and. न इति Na Iti, not so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. निचाय्यत्वात् Nichāyyatvât, because of meditation (in the heart). एव Eva, thus. व्योमवत् Vyomavat, like space. च Cha, and.

7. Should it be said that the Manomaya cannot refer to Brahman on account of the smallness of the abode, and on account of the denotation of that ; we say, no, because Brahman has thus to be meditated upon, and because in the same passage it is said to be infinite like space.—38.

## COMMENTARY.

It is not proper to say, on the strength of the above two reasons, that the Manomaya is not Īśvara, because in this very passage, it is declared to be infinite like space, and all-pervading like ether, "Greater than the earth, greater than the sky, greater than heaven, greater than all these worlds." How then do you reconcile these two conflicting statements about 'Manomaya'? To this the author replies by saying that, "It is described as minute for the sake of meditation only." This limitation or measuring the infinite Brahman is for the sake of meditation, so that one may conceive the Lord in his heart. (The highest Person, for the purposes of meditation, abides in the hearts of the meditating devotee; though he is really not so small). The sense is that the all-pervading supreme Brahman, when described as atomic, or of the size of a span, is so described sometimes, merely figuratively, and sometimes directly and truly so. Where it is figuratively so described, it means that when the devotee thinks of his heart, and of the God residing in that heart, he naturally ascribes to God, the limitations of the place where God is imagined to be. This is purely figurative. But there is another aspect, in which minuteness ascribed to Brahman is not figurative, but actually true, for though God is infinite and all-pervading, yet owing to His supreme kindness on his devotees, he through His inconceivable power, presents Himself in their hearts actually and directly. Though He is essentially one and has one essential form, yet in the hearts of His devotees, He appears in many forms. As says the Śruti: 'Though one He manifests Himself as many.' Though He is all-pervading, yet He becomes atomic, etc., through His mysterious inconceivable power. This will be further explained in Sūtra 25, in the section treating on Vaiśvānara. The all-pervadingness of the atomic and the span-sized Brahman consists in this, that in this very form He appears simultaneously everywhere, wherever His devotees are. This simultaneous appearance of the atomic or the span-sized Brahman everywhere, thus establishes His all-pervadingness even in His manifested form.

If it be objected that if the Supreme Lord is inside the body of a Jīva, then like the Jīva, He would be subject to experience of pleasure and pain, such experiences springing from connection with bodies; to this the author replies by the following Sūtra:

SŪTRA I., 2. 8.

सम्भोगप्राप्तिरिति चेन्, न, वैशेष्यात् ॥ १ । २ । ८ ॥

सम्भोग Sambhoga, commensality of enjoyment. Sam=common, and Bhoga =enjoyment: jointness of enjoyment. प्राप्तिः Prāptiḥ, attainment, resultant. इति

Iti, thus. चेत Chet, if. न Na, not. वैशेष्यात् Vaiśeṣyāt, because of the difference : or specific cause. The specific cause on account of which one suffers pleasure or pain is not mere connection with body, but his Karmas done in the past.

8. If it be objected, that there will be the connection with experience of pleasure and pain, were Brahman to abide in the same body as the Jīva, we reply, not so, because there is a difference peculiar with regard to this connection.—39.

## COMMENTARY.

The word Sambhoga in the Sūtra denotes mutual experience or common experience. The force of *Sam*, सम् in Sambhoga, is that of Saha; just as we find in the word Samvāda. Īśvara is not affected by the suffering or enjoyment of the Jīva. Why? Because there is a difference. The sense is this. The mere dwelling within a body is not the cause always of experiencing the pleasures or pains connected with that body. The experience is subject to the influence of the good and evil deeds. And Īśvara has no such Karma; for we read: अनश्नन्नन्योऽभिचक्षीति 'one of the two eats the sweet fruit, the other one looks on without eating.' (Mund. Up., III, 1. 1.) Similarly in the Gītā the Lord says: 'The Karmas do not touch Me and I have no attachment to the fruit of Karmas.' न मां कर्माणि लिप्यन्ति न मे कर्मफले स्मृताः ॥

*Adhikaraṇa II. The Eater is Brahman.*

*Viśaya*—In the Kaṭha Upaniṣad we find the following verse :

यस्य ब्रह्म च क्षत्रञ्च उभे भवत् ओदनम् । मृत्युर्यस्योपसेवनं क इत्या वेद यत्र सः ॥

"He for whom the Brāhmaṇas and the Kṣatriyas have both become the food, and Death is whose sauce, who then knows where He is." (Kaṭh. Up., I, 2. 25.)

*Doubt* : Here the words "Food" and "Sauce" indicate that there is an eater. The doubt arises who is this Eater? Is it Fire or is it the Jīva, or is it the Supreme Self?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Fire is the Eater meant here, because there is nothing specific in that verse which would show that it is not the Fire referred to there, and the question and answer also would indicate the same thing. There is a well-known Śruti that Fire is the Eater. (Br. Up., I, 4. 6.) अग्निरन्नादः ॥

Or the Eater may be the Jīva, because eating is an action, and action is appropriate to the individual soul, and not to the Supreme Self, who is free from all actions. Moreover, the Śruti itself in another passage declares that the Jīva eats the sweet fruit, while the Supreme Self looks on without eating. (Mund. Up., III, 1. 1; Kaṭh. Up., III, 1.)



इति सुपर्णा सद्युजा सखाया समानं वृक्षं परिवस्वजाते । तयोरन्यः पिप्पलं स्वाद्वत्क्षन्तन्नन्यो  
अभिजाकशीति ।

Therefore the Eater is the Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : To this objection the author answers by the following  
Siddhānta Sūtra :

SŪTRA I. 2. 9.

अत्ता चराचरग्रहणात् ॥ १ । २ । ९ ॥

अत्ता Attā, the Eater is the Supreme. चराचर Charācchara, the moveable and immoveable. ग्रहणात् Grahaṇāt, because of His seizing or containing, or taking up as food.

9. The Eater is the Highest Self, because the moveable and the immoveable are taken as food.—40.

COMMENTARY.

The Eater can be the Highest Self only, because the eating of the whole universe of moveables and immoveables is possible only in the case of Brahman. The words Brāhmaṇa and the Kṣatriya are merely illustrative, and the whole universe sprinkled over by Death is referred to here as the Food. Such food can have no other Eater than the Supreme Self, for no Jīva can eat the whole universe. The word "sauc or condiment" is a thing which, while itself being eaten, causes other things to be eaten.

Therefore, while the Death itself is consumed, being a condiment as it were, it makes other things palatable. Therefore the Eater of the whole universe made palatable by Death, can mean only the Lord in His aspect of Destroyer; when at the time of Pralaya He withdraws all things within Himself. Therefore, the Supreme Self must be taken here to be the Eater. Nor is there any validity in [the objection based on the text of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad which says that the Lord does not eat and the Jīva alone eats, for the prohibition of eating there refers to the eating of *the fruit of actions*. The Lord does not eat the fruit of actions of the Jīva. The Jīva alone eats such fruit. That text does not mean that the Lord has no specific eating of His own, for the Lord has His own particular objects of enjoyment; as has been explained in the commentary on that verse of the Muṇḍakya Upaniṣad.

SŪTRA I., 2. 10.

प्रकरणात् च ॥ १ । २ । १० ॥

प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇāt, because of the context. च Cha, and.

10. And on account of the context also the Eater is Brahman.—41.

## COMMENTARY

In the Kāṭha Upaniṣad we read :

अथोरेयीयान्महतो महीयानात्मास्य जन्तोर्निहितो गुहायाम् । तमक्रतुः पश्यति बीतशोको धातुः  
प्रसादान्महिमानमात्मनः ।

“More subtle than the subtle, greater than the great, the Ātmā is hidden in the heart of that creature. A man who is free from desires and free from grief, sees the majesty of the Self through the grace of the Creator.”

This shows that the topic is that of the Supreme Self. The force of the word “And” in the Sūtra is to indicate that the Smṛti is also to the same effect, as says the Gītā :

अत्तासि लोकस्य चराचरस्य त्वमस्य पूज्यश्च गुरोर्गरीयान् ।

Thou art the Eater of worlds, of all that moves and stands ; worthier of reverence than the Guru's Self, there is none like to Thee.

*Adhikarana III. — The associate in the cave is Brahman.*

*Viśaya :* In the same Upaniṣad, Valli 3, verse 1, we read :

अतं पिबन्तौ सुकृतस्य लोके गुहाम्प्रविष्टौ परमे परार्द्धे । छायातपौ ब्रह्मविदो वदन्ति पञ्चाग्नयो ये  
च त्रिणाचिकेताः ॥

There are the two, drinking their reward in the world of their own works, entered into the cave (of the heart), dwelling on the highest summit (the ether in the heart). Those who know Brahman call them shade and light ; likewise, those householders who perform the Triṇāchiketa sacrifice.

*Doubt :* Now this text clearly refers to the Jīva who enjoys rewards of his works together with an associate coupled with it. And is this associate either Buddhi or the Prāṇa or the Supreme Self ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The associate must be either the Buddhi or the Prāṇa ; for they being the organs of the Jīva and the instruments of the enjoying, it is possible for either of them to drink the “R̥ta” and thus share in the enjoyment of the fruit of works of the Jīva, while such enjoyment does not suit the Highest Self and in fact such enjoyment is prohibited with regard to the Highest Self. Therefore this associate of the Jīva must be either the Buddhi or the Prāṇa, which somehow have been brought into connection with the enjoyment of the fruits of works.

*Siddhānta :* To this *prima facie* view, the author of the Sūtra answers by the next aphorism, stating that the associate of the Jīva is the Supreme Self.

SŪTRA I., 2. 11.

गुहाम् प्रविष्टावात्मानौहि तद्दर्शनात् ॥ १ । २ । ११ ॥

गुहाम् Guhām, in the cavity, in the heart, प्रविष्टौ Praviṣṭau, the two who entered. आत्मानौ Atmānau, the two selves. हि Hi, because. तत् Tat, that. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of being seen (in the other texts also).

11. The two who have entered the heart, are the Jīva-Ātman and the Paramātman, because such is seen in other texts also.—42.

COMMENTARY.

The two found in the cavity of the heart are the Jīva and the Lord, and not the Buddhi and the Jīva or the Prāṇa and the Jīva. Why do you say so? For this is seen. Namely, it is seen, that in that section, the Individual Self and the Highest Self are spoken of as having entered into the heart. Thus Kaṭha Upaniṣad, I, 4. 7, shows that the Jīva is in the heart :

याः प्राणेन सम्भवत्यदितिदेवतामयी । गुहां प्रविश्य तिष्ठन्ती या भूतेभिर्यजयात । एतद्दे तत ॥

She who is co-born with the spirit, She the Infinity full of Divinity, concealed in the cavity of the heart and abiding therein, manifests herself also in the elements. This is that. (Aditi or Jīva is the spirit side or pole of creation—manifestation is from matter).

While Kaṭha Upaniṣad, I, 2. 2, shows that the Supreme Self is also in the heart :

तन्दुर्दर्शेऽङ्गूढमनुप्रविष्टं गुहाहितवह्नेरेष्टम्पुरायम् । अध्यात्मयोगाधिगमेन देवं मत्वा धीरो हर्षशोकौ जहाति ॥

The wise leaves behind joy and sorrow, having known the God by the Yoga of concentration of Self,—Him who is difficult to be seen, who pervades the universe, who is in the heart of all, who dwells in the Muktas, the Ancient of Days,

The word “Hi” or “because” in the Sūtra indicates that it is a well-known tradition of the ancients that the Jīva and the Supreme Self are in the heart. The word “Pibantau” is in the dual number meaning “the two drink;” while as a matter of fact, the Jīva only drinks the fruit of its works and not the Supreme Self. The dual case is, therefore, to be understood in the same way as the phrase “There go the umbrella-bearers,” one of whom only carries the umbrella. Or else this may be explained that both are agents with regard to the drinking, one is the direct agent; the other is the causal agent, i.e., to say the Individual Self directly drinks, while the Supreme Self causes the individual self to drink. The phrase “shade” and “light” indicate the difference between the infinite knowledge of the Lord and the finite knowledge of the Jīva, or that the Jīva is bound down to the chain of Samsāra, while the Lord is above Samsāra.

SŪTRA I, 2. 12.

विशेषणाच् च ॥ १ । २ । १२ ॥

विशेषणाच् Viśeṣanāṭ, on account of distinctive qualities. च Cha, and.

12. Moreover on account of distinctive qualities, the associate of the Jīva in the heart is the Supreme Self.—43.

## COMMENTARY

In this section of the Kāṭha Upaniṣad we find distinctive attributes of the Jīva and the Lord alone, such as the Jīva is 'represented as the one who meditates, and the Lord as the object meditated upon, Jīva as the person attaining and the Lord as the object attained. Thus from verso I, 2. 12, quoted above it is clear that the Jīva is the subject meditating and the Lord is the object of meditation. Even in the present text also, the words "light" and "shade" distinctly point to the fact that the Jīva is possessed of *small* knowledge and the Lord as having *all* knowledge. Moreover the text I, 3. 3, declares in the passage "know the self to be sitting in the chariot" and the body to be the charioteer and the passage, "But he who has understanding for his charioteer and holds the reins of the mind, he reaches the end of his journey and that is the highest place of Viṣṇu." This refers to Jīva as that which attains, and the Paramātmā as that which is to be attained. These distinctive attributes show that the associate of the Jīva is neither Prāṇa nor Buddhi but the Supreme Self.

*Note:* We give the whole of the first nine verses of the third Valli here :

अतं पिबन्तौ सुकृतस्य लोके गुह्यमप्रविष्टौ परमे परार्द्धे । ह्यायातपौ ब्रह्मविदो वदन्ति पञ्चाग्नयो ये च त्रिणाचिकेताः ॥ १ ॥ यः सेतुरीजानानामक्षरमब्रह्म यत्परम् । अभयं तित्तिर्वताम्पारं नाचिकेतः शकेमहि ॥ २ ॥ आत्मानं रथिनं विद्धि शरीरं रथमेव तु । बुद्धिन्तु सारथिं विद्धि मनः प्रग्रहेव च ॥ ३ ॥ इन्द्रियाणि हयानाहुर्विवयास्तेषु गोचरान् । आत्मेन्द्रियमनोयुक्तं भोक्त्याहुर्मनीषिणः ॥ ४ ॥ यस्त्वविज्ञानवान् भवत्ययुक्तेन मनसा सदा । तस्येन्द्रियाण्यवश्यानि दुष्टाश्वा इव सारथेः ॥ ५ ॥ यस्तु विज्ञानवान् भवति युक्तेन मनसा सदा । तस्येन्द्रियाणि वश्यानि सदश्वा इव सारथेः ॥ ६ ॥ यस्त्वविज्ञानवान् भवत्यमनस्कः सदाऽशुचिः । न स तत्पदमाप्नोति स तारञ्चाधिगच्छति ॥ ७ ॥ यस्तु विज्ञानवान् भवति समनस्कः सदा शुचिः । स तु तत्पदमाप्नोति यस्माद्भूयो न जायते ॥ ८ ॥ विज्ञानसारथिर्यस्तु मनः प्रग्रहवान्नरः । सोऽध्वनः परमाप्नोति तद्विष्णोः परमम्पदम् ॥ ९ ॥

1. There are the two (aspects of the Lord) the drinkers of truth, existing in the body obtained by good works, both dwelling in the cavity of the heart, in the most highly splendid Param (i. e., Vāyu). The knowers of Brahman and those who perform the five great sacrifices and observe the triple Nāchiketa Fire, describe these as shade and the sun.

2. I know the Lord Viṣṇu both as the Spirit in the Nāchiketa Fire, and as the refuge of all His worshippers, the imperishable Supreme Brahman, the Giver of security, to the frightened voyagers on the ocean of Sāṃsāra,—the Lord dwelling in the shore opposite to Sāṃsāra (as the World-Spirit directing the Mukta).

3. Know thou the Jīva Atmā as seated in the Chariot, the body even as the car ; the Buddhi, as the driver and Manas as the reins.

4. The wise say that the senses are the horses and the objects their roads ; they also say that the Ātmā, joined with the senses and the mind (only, but devoid of Buddhi) is the sufferer (enjoyer).

5. But he who is without discrimination, and with Manas out of harmony, his senses are always uncontrolled like the unbroken horses of a driver.

6. But he who discriminates, and has Manas always harmonised, his senses are controlled, like the good horses of the driver.

7. He who is without discrimination, with the Manas uncontrolled, being always impure, never reaches the place, but returns again to the world.

8. But he who discriminates, with the Manas always harmonised and (senses) pure, verily he (reaches) that place from which he is not born again.

9. But the man who has reason for his charioteer, and holds the reins of Manas, he reaches the end of the road, that highest place of Viṣṇu.

### *Adhikaraṇa IV.—The Person in the eye is Brahman.*

*Viṣaya :* In the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (IV, 15, 1-4) we read :

य एषोऽक्षिणि पुरुषो दृश्यत एष आत्मेति हीवाचेतदमृतमभयमेतद्ब्रह्मेति तद्यद्यस्मिन्सर्पिवोदकं वा सिञ्चन्ति कर्त्तव्यं एव गच्छति ॥ १ ॥ एतं संयद्वा म इत्याचक्षत एतं हि सर्वाणि वामान्यभिसंयन्ति सर्वाययेन वामान्यभिसंयन्ति य एवं वेद ॥ २ ॥ एष उ एव वामनीरेष हि सर्वाणि वामानि नयति सर्वाणि वामानि नयति य एवं वेद ॥ ३ ॥ एष उ एव वामनीरेष हि सर्वेषु लोकेषु भाति सर्वेषु लोकेषु भाति य एवं वेद ॥ ४ ॥ अथ यदु चैवास्मिच्छव्यं कुर्वन्ति यदि च नार्चिमेवाभिसम्भवन्त्यर्चिषोऽहरं आपूर्यमाण-पक्ष्मापूर्यमाणपक्षाद्यान् षडुदकेति मासास्तान्मासेभ्यः संवत्सरं संवत्सरादादित्यमादित्याच्चन्द्रमसं चन्द्रमसो विद्युत तत्पुरुषोऽमानवः ॥ ५ ॥ स एनान् ब्रह्म गमयत्येष देवपथो ब्रह्मपथ एतेन प्रतिपद्यमाना इमं मानवमावर्तं नावर्तन्ते नावर्तन्ते ॥ ६ ॥

इति पञ्चदशः खण्डः ॥ १५ ॥

#### FIFTEENTH KHAṆḌA.

1. He said : *This person who is seen in the eye* is the Self, (called Vāmana). This is the Immortal, the Fearless. This is Brahman. Nothing clings to this. Because (such a person resides in the eye), therefore, if any one drops melted butter or water on it, it runs away on both sides (and does not cling to the eye).

2. The wise call Him the Saṁyadyāma (the most beautiful), because all objects of beauty enter into Him. All beautiful objects enter into him who knows Him thus.

3. He verily is called Vāmani (the Giver of beauty), because He alone gives beauty to all. He who knows Him thus gives beauty to all (beings inferior to himself).

4. He is also Bhāmani (Resplendent), for He shines in all worlds. He who knows this thus, shines in all worlds.

5. Now when such persons die, whether (their relations) perform their death ceremonies or not, they go to the plane of the Ray, from the Ray-plane to the Day-plane, from the Day-plane to the Bright-fortnightly plane, from the Bright-fortnightly plane to the Northern six-monthly plane, from the six-monthly plane to the Solar plane, from the Solar plane to the Lunar plane, from the Lunar plane to the plane of Sarasvatī, (from that they reach to the plane of the chief Vāyu) who is her Lord and the beloved of God.

6. He leads them to Brahman. This is the path guarded by the Devas, the path that leads to Brahman. Those who proceed on that path, do not return to this round of humanity, yea, they do not return.

*Doubt* : The doubt here arises, whether the person abiding within the eye is the reflection of the Self or some Divine Being presiding over the organ of sight or the Jīva or the Supreme Self.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣa maintains that it may be the reflection of the Self, for the text refers to the person seen as supported by the eye, and as directly perceived by a person in the retina of another, therefore, it must be the reflection of that person as seen in the mirror of the eye. Or it may be the presiding Deity of the organ of the eye, for we find in Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad V., 5. 2, such a being described.

तद्यत्तत्सत्यमसौ स आदित्यो य एष पतस्मिन्मण्डले पुरुषो यश्चायं दक्षिणोऽक्षपुरुषस्तावेतावन्योऽन्यस्मिन्प्रतिष्ठितौ रश्मिभिर्योऽस्मिन्प्रतिष्ठितः प्राचैरयममुष्मिन् स यदोत्क्रमिष्यन्भवति शुद्धमेवैतन्मण्डलं पश्यति नैनमेते रश्मयः प्रत्यायन्ति ॥ २ ॥

Now what is true, that is the Āditya (the sun), the person that dwells in yonder orb, and the person in the right eye. These two rest on each other, the former resting with his rays in the latter, the latter with his Prāṇas (senses) in the former. When the latter is on the point of departing this life, he sees that orb as white only and those rays (of the sun) do not return to him.

Or it may be the individual soul or Jīva, for when the soul perceives an external object through the eye, it for the time being comes in contact with the organ of the eye, and so the person in the eye spoken of in this Chhândogya text cannot be the Supreme Self, but may be any one of these three.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Siddhānta Sūtra, demonstrating that the person within the eye referred to in this text is the Lord.

SŪTRA I., 2. 13.

अन्तर उपपत्तेः ॥ १ । २ । १३ ॥

*अन्तरः* Antarah, the being within. *उपपत्तेः* Upapattē, because of the reasonableness.

13. The being within the eye is the Lord, because it is more reasonable to construe the passage as applying to the Supreme Self than to anything else.—44.

#### COMMENTARY

The person within the eye can be nothing else than the Supreme Self. Why? Because the description is more suitable to the Supreme Self than to anything else. Because the attributes like "being the Self of all," "being Immortal," "being supremely great" (Brahmatva), "being

untouched by sin," "being Sāmyadvāma," etc., are applicable only to the Supreme Self.

*Note :* The attributes of being Vāmani or the leader of all and Bhāmani, the All-Refulgent, applied to the person in the eye are appropriate in the case of the Lord alone.

SŪTRA I, 2. 14.

स्थानादिव्यपदेशाच्च ॥ १ । २ । १४ ॥

स्थानादि Sthānādi, the place and the rest. व्यपदेशाच्च Vyapadeśāt, on account of the statement. च Cha, and.

14. And because there is statement in another Upaniṣad, mentioning that the Supreme Self has His abode in places like the eye, etc.—45.

COMMENTARY

In the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (III, 7. 18) we read that the Supreme Self has his abode in places like eye, ear, etc.

यश्चक्षुषि तिष्ठच्चक्षुषोऽन्तरो यं चक्षुर्न वेद यस्य चक्षुः शरीरं यश्चक्षुरन्तरो यमयत्येष त आत्मानन्तर्याम्यमृतः ॥ १८ ॥

He who dwells in the eye, and within the eye, whom the eye does not know, whose body the eye is, and who pulls (rules) the eye within, he is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

Now the puller within the eye, ear, etc., by taking His abode in those organs, cannot be any one else, but the Supreme Lord.

SŪTRA I, 2. 15.

सुखविशिष्टाभिधानादेव च ॥ १ । २ । १५ ॥

सुख Sukha, happiness. विशिष्ट Viśiṣṭa, qualified by or possessing. अभिधानाद् Abhidhānāt, because of the description. एव Eva, alone. च Cha, and.

15. And because the text refers only to that person who possesses joy, therefore, it must refer to the Supreme Self, and not the Jīva, who has not joy but misery.—46.

COMMENTARY

In a previous passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV., 10. 5) it has been said that joy क is Brahman and space ख is Brahman. The Brahman who is described in that passage as possessing unlimited joy or bliss, is again referred to in this passage, as the person dwelling within the eye. Therefore, the context refers to Brahman, and it would be doing violence to the context, if the person within the eye is interpreted to mean a being other than the Supreme Self. No doubt, that between the passage stating that Brahman is Infinite Joy, and the present passage, there intervenes the subsidiary Vidyâ called the Agni Vidyâ or the science of fire, but as this Agni Vidyâ is subsidiary to Brahma Vidyâ, it cannot be said to break the

context. Therefore, the text Brahman is joy (IV, 10. 5.) is connected with the present text under discussion (IV, 15. I.), inspite of the intervening text of Agni Vidyā.

By using the word Viśiṣṭa in the Sūtra, it is indicated that attributes like Intelligence, Infinity, etc., refer to Brahman.

SŪTRA I., 2. 16.

श्रुतोपनिषत्कगत्यभिधानाच्च ॥ १ । २ । १६ ॥

श्रुत Śruta, heard. उपनिषत्क Upaniṣatka, Upaniṣad. गति Gati, way, course. अभिधानाच्च Abhidhānāt, because of the statement. च Cha, and.

16. And because there is description given in this passage, of the same sort of salvation, obtained by the person who worships the person in the eye, as is obtained by persons who have heard the Upaniṣad and worship the Supreme Brahman.—47.

COMMENTARY

In other texts of the Upaniṣad we hear of the path called the Devayāna, on which go the souls of the liberated, who have heard the Upaniṣad and have understood the mystery of Brahman. This path by which the knowers of Brahman go to salvation, is the way by which the knower of the person in the eye also goes, for the Teacher Upakośala describes that the knower of the person in the eye goes by Devayāna. For he says : "They go to light, from light to day, etc." Since the result as regards Mukti is the same, both of the person who knows Brahman and of him who knows the person in the eye ; therefore, the person in the eye and Brahman are one and the same.

The next Sūtra shows that it is not impossible for the above text to mean either the reflected Self or the presiding deity of the eye or the Jiva.

SŪTRA I., 2. 17.

अनवस्थितेरसम्भवाच्च, नेतरः ॥ १ । २ । १७ ॥

अनवस्थितेः Anavasthiteḥ, on account of non-permanency of abode. असम्भवाच्च Asambhavāt, on account of impossibility. च Cha, and. न Na, not. इतरः Itarāḥ, the other.

17. No other being like the reflected Self, etc., is meant by the person in the eye for two reasons : first, because they do not have their permanent abode in the eye, and secondly, it is impossible for them to possess the attributes described in that passage.—48.



## COMMENTARY

The reflected Self, etc., do not always abide within the eye, as a rule, nor the attribute like "conditionless Immortality" is applicable to them.

*Note:* The reflected Self is seen in the eye, only when another person is near the eye, so this has not permanent abode in the eye. Similarly the Sun, the diety of the eye, does not dwell in the eye, but his rays only dwell therein. So he also has not his permanent abode in the eye. While the Jiva has his permanent abode in the heart, and not in the eye. Thus none of these three can be the person in the eye, for none of them has his permanent residence there. Similarly the attributes like Immortality, etc., do not apply to these. Therefore, it must mean the Supreme Self.

### *Adhikaraṇa V.—The Internal Ruler is Brahman.*

*Viśaya:* In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, we read (III., 7. 18).: "He who dwells in the eye, whom the eye does not know, who rules the eye from within is the Self, the Internal ruler, the Immortal." In that chapter, this Internal ruler is mentioned as dwelling in the earth, the water, etc., and ruling them all from within.

यः पृथिव्यां तिष्ठन् पृथिव्या अन्तरो यं पृथिवी न वेद यस्य पृथिवी शरीरं यः पृथिवीमन्तरो  
यमयत्येष त आत्मान्तर्याम्यमृतः ॥ ३ ॥ योऽप्सु तिष्ठन्नद्धोऽन्तरो यमापो न विदुर्यस्यापः शरीरं योऽपोऽन्तरो  
यमयत्येष त आत्मान्तर्याम्यमृतः ॥ ४ ॥ योऽग्नेरन्तरो यमग्निर्न वेद यस्याग्निः शरीरं योऽग्निमन्तरो  
यमयत्येष त आत्मान्तर्याम्यमृतः ॥

He who dwells in the earth, and within the earth, whom the earth does not know, whose body the earth is and who pulls (rules) the earth within, he is thy self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in the water, and within the water, whom the water does not know, whose body the water is, and who pulls (rules) the water within, he is thy self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

He who dwells in fire, and within the fire, whom the fire does not know, whose body the fire is, and who pulls (rules) the fire within, he is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the Immortal.

*Doubt:* Now arises the following doubt :

Is the ruler within, mentioned in the above and similar verses in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad the Pradhāna or the Jiva or the Supreme Self.

*Pūrvapakṣa:* The Pūrvapakṣin says : "The ruler within is Nature, for she controls the whole universe within, and because the cause is always found in the effect as interwoven with it. Therefore, the cause is the controller of the effect and as the universe has for its cause the Pradhāna or matter, therefore Pradhāna is meant in this passage. Moreover, this Pradhāna, though non-intelligent, is said to be the Self or Âtman, because it is the giver of all happiness, and so figuratively is called Âtman, or because it is all-pervading ; therefore, it is called Âtman ; and as it is Eternal, it is very appropriately called the Immortal. Or this ruler within may be a Jiva. Some highly evolved Yogī, who enters easily into the hearts

of others, and with equal ease vanishes therefrom, through his occult powers, may very well be called the Invisible Inner Ruler, and the words "Ātman" and "Immortal" may also be very appropriately applied to such a Jīva, without recourse to figure of speech. Therefore, the Ruler within is either Pradhāna or a highly evolved Yogin.

*Siddhānta* : This objection the author answers by the following Siddhānta Sūtra, declaring therein, that the ruler within is the Supreme Self and not Prakṛti or Jīva :

SŪTRA I., 2. 18.

अन्तर्याम्यधिदैवादिषु तद्धर्मव्यपदेशात् ॥ १ । २ । १८ ॥

अन्तर्यामी Antaryāmi, the ruler within. अधिदैवादिषु Adhidaivādiṣu, in the Devas, etc., तत् Tat, His. धर्म Dharma, attributes. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, because of the statement.

18. The ruler within referred to, in the Upaniṣad, in respect to the Nature Forces like earth, etc., is the Supreme Self, because His attributes are distinctly pointed out in that chapter of the Upaniṣad.—49.

COMMENTARY

The ruler within spoken of in the Brhadaranyaka Upaniṣad verses as ruling from within, the Nature forces, like the earth, air, water, etc., and the psychic forces like mind, senses, etc., can be none else than the Supreme Lord, for the attributes of the Inner Ruler, mentioned in that chapter, belong only to the Lord. For the Lord alone dwells within these natural forces, but is not known by them, while He knows these forces, controls them and pervades them and is supremely wise, and full of wisdom and bliss. All these are the attributes of the Lord, and cannot belong to matter, or to any individual soul how high soever.

SŪTRA I., 2. 19.

न च स्मर्त अतद्धर्माभिलापात् ॥ १ । २ । १९ ॥

न Na, not. च Cha, and. स्मर्त Smārta, taught in Smṛti only, namely the Pradhāna and the Jīva, all that is not Śruti is Smṛti, namely, everything else than Antaryāmin. अतद्धर्म A-tat-dharma=not-its-qualities, i.e., not Pradhāna's qualities. अभिलापात् Abhilāpāt, because of the declaration.

19. The Antaryāmin is not [the Pradhāna or Jīva, etc., because there is a declaration of qualities not belonging to them,—50.

## COMMENTARY

For the reasons already given, the Smārta, the thing not mentioned in the Śruti passage of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, but in the Smṛti, namely, the root of matter, etc., is not the Inner Ruler, because the text describes attributes which cannot belong to matter or Jīva. The attributes like the following are mentioned therein : which cannot possibly belong to matter or Jīva :

अदृष्टो द्रष्टाऽश्रुतः श्रोताऽमृतो मन्ताऽविज्ञातो विज्ञाता नान्योऽतोऽस्ति श्रोता नान्योऽतोऽस्ति मन्ता नान्योऽतोऽस्ति द्रष्टा विज्ञातैश्च त आत्मानन्तर्याम्यमृतोऽतोऽन्यदात्मैव ।

Unperceived but perceiving, unheard but hearing, unknown but knowing. There is no other seer but he ; there is no other hearer but he ; there is no other perceiver but he ; there is no other knower but he. This is thy Self, the Ruler within, the Immortal. Every thing else is of evil (Br. Up., III., 7. 23).

Every thing else than the Antaryāmin is Smārta, namely, a thing not specifically mentioned in the above Antaryāmin passage. For the attributes like the hearer of all, etc., cannot belong either to the Pradhāna or the Jīva.

## SŪTRA I, 2. 20.

शरीरश्चोभयेऽपि हि भेदेनैवमधीयते ॥ १ । २ । २० ॥

शरीर Sārira, the embodied, the individual self of a Yogin. च Cha, and. उभये Ubhaye, the both, namely, both the Kāṇvas and the Mādhyandinas. अपि Api, even, also. हि Hi, because. भेदेन Bhedena, by difference. एनम् Enam, this, namely, the Antaryāmin. अधीयते Adhiyate, read, speak of.

20. The soul of the Yogin is not the Antaryāmin, because both recensions read it as different from it.—51.

## COMMENTARY

The word "not" of the preceding Sūtra is understood here also. For the reasons already given, the soul of an advanced Yogin also, cannot be the Antaryāmin of this passage. Because both the Kāṇvas and the Mādhyandinas read, in their respective recensions, this Antaryāmin, as different from the soul of the Yogin. The Kāṇvas read "Yo vijñānam antaro yamayati": "He who dwells in the Vijñāna, namely, the Jīvātman, and controls the Jīva." The Mādhyandinas read : "Yaḥ ātmānam antaro yamayati," "he who dwells in the Self, and controls the Self." Therefore the Ruler within is Hari alone. The Subāla Upaniṣad, moreover, states directly that the Pradhāna and the Jīva constitute the body of the Highest Lord. For it says that he has the earth, water, fire, wind,

ether, the Avyakta (Pradhāna) and the Akṣara (Jīva) as his body: "He, the Inner Self of all, the divine One, the One God Nārāyaṇa." The text of the Subāla is :

अन्तःशरीरे निहितो गुहायां अज एको नित्यो यस्य पृथिवी शरीरं यः पृथिवीमन्तरे संचरन् यं पृथिवी न वेद ॥

Within the body, placed in the cavity, the Unborn, the One, the Eternal, whose body is the earth, who moves within the earth, whom the earth does not know, etc.

### *Adhikaraṇa VI.—The Akṣara is Brahman.*

*Viśaya* : In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, we read :

अथ परा यया तदक्षरमधिगम्यते । तत्तददृश्यमग्राह्यमगोत्रमवर्णमचक्षुःश्रोत्रं तदपाणिपादं नित्यं विभुं सर्वगतं सुसूक्ष्मं तदव्ययं तद्भूतयोनिं परिपश्यन्ति धीराः ।

The higher knowledge is that by which the Indestructible is apprehended. That which cannot be seen, nor seized, which has no genus or species, no eyes nor ears, no hands nor feet, the eternal, the omnipresent, the infinitesimal, that which is imperishable, that it is which the wise regard as the source of all beings. (Muṇḍ. Up., I., 1. 6.)

दिव्यो ह्यमूर्तः पुरुषः स बाह्याभ्यन्तरो ह्यजः । अप्राणो ह्यमनाः शुभ्रो ह्यक्षरात् परतः परः ॥ २ ॥

That heavenly person is without body, is both without and within, not produced, without breath, and without mind, pure, higher than the high Imperishable (Muṇḍ. Up., II, 1. 2).

*Doubt* : Here arises this doubt : Are these two sentences descriptive of the Prakṛti and the Puruṣa of the Sāṃkhya respectively; or whether both denote the Highest Self, only ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Puravapakṣin maintains that the first refers to the Prakṛti, because it enumerates attributes all of which are applicable to matter, and none of them contain attributes such as seer, etc., which would denote an intelligent being. Moreover, the word Yoni, translated as source, denotes also the material cause of anything ; and therefore, the Imperishable or Akṣara of that passage in Pradhāna or Prakṛti. While higher than the high Imperishable of the second passage is the Individual Self, which is higher than Prakṛti, which is also called Imperishable, but undergoes all modifications. Therefore, the two Imperishables of these two passages, denotes the Pradhāna and the individual soul respectively.

*Siddhānta* : This *prima facie* view is set aside by the next Sūtra.

अदृश्यत्व Adṛśyatva, Invisibility. आदि Âdi, and the rest, beginning with. गुणकः Guṇakaḥ, one who possesses the quality. Adṛśyatvâdi-guṇakaḥ, being that which possesses the qualities of invisibility, etc. धर्मोक्तेः Dharmokteḥ, because of the mention of attributes.

21. The being possessing the qualities of invisibility, etc., is no other than the Highest Self for the text declares attributes which belong to the Highest Self only.—52.

#### COMMENTARY

In both these passages, that which possesses the attributes of invisibility, etc., must be understood to be the Highest Self, because they mention qualities which belong to Him alone. Thus Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad I, 1. 9, says :

यः सर्वज्ञः सर्वविद्यस्य ज्ञानमयं तपः । तस्मादेतद्ब्रह्म नाम रूपमन्नञ्च जायते ।

From him who perceives all and who knows all, whose brooding (penance) consists of knowledge, from him (the highest Brahman) is born that Brahman name, form and matter (food).

The attributes like All-knowing, etc., belong only to the Highest Self alone. Similarly, the attributes like "heavenly," "formless person" of II, 1. 2, are appropriate regarding Him alone.

The section also, in which these passages occur, relates to the Highest knowledge or Parāvidyā, so also it must refer to Brahman and not to Pradhāna or Jīva.

#### SŪTRA 1, 2. 22.

विशेषणभेदव्यपदेशाभ्याञ्च नेतरौ ॥ १ । २ । २२ ॥

विशेषण Viśeṣaṇa, distinction, qualifying attribute, such as Omniscient, etc., भेदव्यपदेशाभ्याम् Bheda-vyapadeśābhyām, by pointing out of difference, such as the Heavenly person, etc. च Cha, and न Na, not. इतरौ Itarau, the other two, viz., the matter and the soul, the Prakṛti and the Puruṣa of the Sāṃkhya.

22. The distinctive attributes (like Omniscient, etc., differentiates the Highest Imperishable from the Lower Imperishable called the Pradhāna), while the pointed references to him (as the Heavenly Person, without body, etc.) differentiates Him (from the other person called the Jīva), therefore, none of these two is intended in those two passages.—53.

#### COMMENTARY

In those two passages, the reference is not to the Prakṛti and Puruṣa because there is a distinction as well as a difference mentioned therein. The section distinguishes the Akṣara which is the source of all, from the

Pradhāna, by the specific epithets of Omniscient, etc., and differentiates this Akṣara from the individual soul, by the attributes like "Heavenly Person, without body," etc. Therefore, in both these passages, the Highest Self, the Cause of all, has been described, and must be so understood.

SŪTRA I., 2. 23.

रूपोपन्यासाच्च ॥ १ । २ । २३ ॥

रूप Rūpa, form, उपन्यासात् Upanyāsāt, because of the mention, because of the imagining. च Cha, and.

23. And because a form has been declared, with regard to this Imperishable, therefore, it must refer to the Lord and not to the Jīva.—54.

COMMENTARY

In verse III., 1. 3. of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, a form has been described which is the specific form of the Lord ; therefore, the Akṣara, the source of all beings, whose form is so described must be the Lord. That verse is as follows :

यदा पश्यः पश्यते रूपमवर्णं कर्तारमीशं पुरुषं ब्रह्मयोनिम् । तदा विद्वान् पुण्यपापे विधूय निरञ्जनः परमं साम्यमुपैति ॥

When the seer sees the golden coloured Creator and Lord of all the worlds, as the person who is the source of Brahmā, then he is wise and shaking off good and evil, he reaches the highest similarity free from passions.

The form thus described is neither of Prakṛti nor of the Jīva.

But how do you know that this golden-coloured form is of the Lord alone, and not of anything else ? This question is answered by the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 2. 24.

प्रकरणात् ॥ १ । २ । २४ ॥

प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇāt, because of the context.

24. The context also shows that the form above described, is that of the Lord and not of any inferior entity.—55.

COMMENTARY -

The Smṛti also explains this text as referring to the Lord. Thus the Viṣṇu Purāṇa (VI., 5. 65. etc.) says :

दे विधे वेदितव्ये इति चाप्यवैणी श्रुतिः । परया त्वक्षरप्राप्तिः ऋग्वेदादिमयापरा ॥ यत् तदव्यक्तमजरम-  
चिन्त्यमजमव्ययम् । अनिर्देश्यमरूपञ्च पाणिपादाद्यसंयुतम् ॥ विशुं सर्वगतं नित्यं भूतयोनिमकारणम् ।  
व्याप्यव्याप्यं यतः सर्वं तद् वै पश्यन्ति सूरयः ॥ तद् ब्रह्म परमं धाम तद् ध्येयं मोक्षकाङ्क्षिणाम् ।  
श्रुतिवाक्योद्दिष्टं सूक्ष्मं तद् विष्णोः परमं पदम् । तदेव भगवद् वाच्यं स्वरूपं परमात्मनः । वाचको  
भगवच्छब्दतस्यास्योच्चरात्मनः ॥ पवं निगदितार्थस्य सतत्त्वं तस्य तत्त्वतः । ज्ञायते येन तज्ज्ञानं परमन्यव  
त्रयोमयम् ॥

The Śrutis of the Atharvāṇas in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad declare that two sciences ought to be known, the highest or the Parā Vidyā by which the Imperishable is reached, and the Aparā Vidyā consisting of R̥gveda, etc. This Imperishable is unmanifest, without decay, Inconceivable, Unborn, Unchangeable, Indefinable, without hands and feet, without form, All-powerful, All-pervading, Eternal, Source of all beings, without cause, pervading everything else, not pervaded by anything, from whom every thing proceeds; that verily the wise see; that is Brahman, that is the supreme goal, that ought to be meditated upon by all, who desire emancipation. That which the Śruti declares as the highest seat of Viṣṇu is this subtle Brahman. He is known by the term Bhagavat, and this Imperishable is the essential form of the Highest Self. The term Bhagavat denotes this first Imperishable Self. Thus the essence of the human soul has been described. The Jīva that knows this Supreme Truth, knows the Highest Truth, all other Truth is lower knowledge and falls under the head of Traividya.

### *Adhikaraṇa VII.—Vaiśvānara is Brahman.*

*Viśaya:* In the Chhāndogya Upaniṣad, Fifth Adhyāya, we read as follows :

#### ELEVENTH KHAṇḌA

प्राचीनशास्त्र औपमन्यवः सत्ययज्ञः पौनुषिरिन्द्रद्युम्नो माह्वेयो जनः शार्कराक्ष्यो बुडिल आश्वतराश्विस्ते  
हेते महाशाला महाश्रोत्रियाः समेत्य मीमांसाञ्चक्रुः को नु आत्मा किं ब्रूहि ॥ १ ॥ ते ह  
सम्पादयाञ्चक्रुः स्वस्वलो वै भगवन्तोऽयमारुणिः सम्प्रतीममात्मानं वैश्वानरमध्येति तं हन्ताभ्यागच्छामेति  
तं हन्ताभ्यागच्छामुः ॥ २ ॥ स ह सम्पादयाञ्चकार प्रदयन्ति मामिमे महाशाला महाश्रोत्रियास्तेभ्यो न  
सर्व्वमिव प्रतिपत्स्ये हन्ताहमन्यमभ्यनुशासानीति ॥ ३ ॥ तान् होवाचाश्वपतिर्वै भगवन्तोऽयं कैकेयः  
सम्प्रतीममात्मानं वैश्वानरमध्येति तं हन्ताभ्यागच्छामेति तं हन्ताभ्यागच्छामुः ॥ ४ ॥ तेभ्यो ह प्राप्तेभ्यः  
वृधगर्हाणि कारयाञ्चकार स ह प्रातः संजिहान उवाच नमे स्तेनो जनपदे न कदर्यो न मद्यपो नाना-  
हिताग्निर्नाविद्वान्न स्वैरी स्वैरिणी कुतो यदयमाण्यो वै भगवन्तोऽहमस्मि यावदेकैकस्मा अतिवजे धनं दास्यामि  
तावद्भगवद्भ्यो दास्यामि वसन्तु मे भगवन्त इति ॥ ५ ॥ ते होचुर्येन हेवार्थेन पुरुषश्चरेत्तं हेव  
वदेदात्मानमेवेमं वैश्वानरं सम्प्रत्ययेषि तमेव नो ब्रूहीति ॥ ६ ॥ तान् होवाच प्रातर्वैः प्रतिवक्ताऽस्मीति  
ते ह समित्पाणयः पूर्वाह्ने प्रतिचक्रमिरे तान् हानुपनीयैवैतदुवाच ॥ ७ ॥

इत्येकादशः खण्डः ॥ ११ ॥

#### ELEVENTH KHAṇḌA

1. Prāchīnaśāla, son of Upamanyu, Satyayajña, son of Pulusa, Indradyumna, son of Bhallava, Jana, son of Śarkarākṣa, and Buḍila, son of Aśvatarāśva, these five great sacrificers and great scholars met once together and held a discussion as to "who is our Self the Lord to be worshipped) and what is Brahman."

2. They decided (to go to Uddālaka, saying) : "Sirs, there is that Uddālaka, son of Aruṇa, who at present knows best this Ātman called Vaiśvānara. Well, let us go to him." So they went to him.

3. But he decided : "Those great sacrificers and scholars will put questions to me and I cannot tell them all : therefore, let me recommend another teacher to them."

4. He said to them : "Sirs, Aśvapati, King of Kekaya, knows at present best this Ātman called Vaiśvānara. Well let us go to him." They went to him.

5. When they arrived, the king caused proper honours to be paid to each of them separately. In the morning after leaving his bed, he said to them : “(What makes you come here ? Are you troubled by bad men ? But there are no such people in this land). In my kingdom there is no thief, no miser, no drunkard, no irreligious nor illiterate person, no adulterer, much less an adulteress. (But if you have come to get wealth, then stay for) I am going to perform a sacrifice, Sirs ; and I shall give you, Sirs, as much wealth as I give to each R̥tvij priest. So stay here, please.”

6. They replied : “May (your honour) tell (us) through what means a man may attain (release) ; You know at present the Supreme Self Vaiśvānara. Tell us that.”

7. He said to them, “I shall give you an answer to-morrow.” They went again to him next morning, with sacrificial fuel in their hands. And he without ceremony, said this to them.

औपमन्यव कं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते इति दिवमेव भगवो राजन्निति होवाचैष वै सुतेजा आत्मा वैश्वानरो यं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते तस्मात्तव सुतं प्रसुतमासुतं कुले दृश्यते ॥ १ ॥ अस्त्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियमन्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियं भवत्यस्य ब्रह्मवर्चसं कुले य एतमेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते मूर्द्धा त्वेष आत्मन इति होवाच मूर्द्धा ते व्यपतिष्यधन्मा नागमिष्य इति ॥ २ ॥

इति द्वादशः खण्डः ॥ १२ ॥

#### TWELFTH KHAṆḌA

1. “Aupamanyava ! Under what name dost thou worship the Lord Vaiśvānara ?” He replied : “As Dyu only (sportful), O holy king,” he said. “The Lord Vaiśvānara that thou worshippingst is called Sutejas. Therefore, in thy house there are seen sons, grandsons and great-grandsons.

2. Therefore, thou eatest food (*i. e.*, art healthy) and seest pleasant objects (prosperous). Whoever worships thus that Lord Vaiśvānara becomes healthy and prosperous, and has Vedic glory in his house. But this (Dyu) is only the head of the Lord, and thus your head would have fallen (in a discussion) if you had not come to me.”

अथ होवाच सत्ययज्ञं पौलुषि प्राचीनयोग्यं कं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते इत्यादित्यमेव भगवो राजन्निति होवाचैष वै विश्वरूप आत्मा वैश्वानरो यं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते तस्मात्तव बहु विश्वरूपं कुले दृश्यते ॥ १ ॥ प्रवृत्तोऽश्वतरिरीथो दासीनिष्कोऽस्त्यान्नं पश्यसि प्रियमन्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियं भवत्यस्य ब्रह्मवर्चसं कुले य एतमेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते चक्षुष्टुतदात्मन इति होवाचान्होऽभविष्यधन्मा नागमिष्य इति ॥ २ ॥

इति त्रयोदशः खण्डः ॥ १३ ॥

#### THIRTEENTH KHAṆḌA

1. Then he said to Satyayajña Pauluṣi : “O thou eternally elect ! under what name dost thou worship the Lord Vaiśvānara ?” He replied, “As Āditya (the Lord in the sun and attracting all) : O holy king !” He said, the Lord Vaiśvānara that thou worshippingst is called Viśvarūpa, the All-seeing. Therefore, in thy house is seen much and manifold wealth.

2. There are cars yoked with pairs of mules, slaves and jewels. Thou art, therefore, healthy and prosperous. Whoever worships thus that Lord Vaiśvānara, becomes healthy and is prosperous and has Vedic glory in his house. That, however, is but the eye of the Lord. You would have become blind, if you had not come to me.”



अथ होवाचेन्द्रद्युम्नं भाल्लवेयं वैयाघ्रपथ कं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते इति वायुमेव भगवो राजन्निति होवाचैष वै पृथग्बत्मा वैश्वानरो यं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते तस्मात्त्वं पृथग्बल्य आययन्ति पृथग्गणयोऽनुयन्ति ॥ १ ॥ अत्स्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियमत्स्यन्नं पश्यति प्रियं भवत्यस्य ब्रह्मवर्चसं कुले य एतमेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते प्राणस्त्वेव आत्मन इति होवाच प्राणस्त उदक्रमिष्यन्मां नागमिष्य इति ॥ २ ॥

इति चतुर्दशः खण्डः ॥ १४ ॥

FOURTEENTH KHAṇḍA

1. Then he said to Indradyumna Bhāllaveya : "O Vaiyāghrapadya ! Under what name dost thou worship the Lord Vaiśvānara ?" He replied : "As Vāyu (the Lord in Vāyu and called knowledge-life), O holy king !" He said : "The Lord which you meditate on is the Lord Vaiśvānara, called Pṛthagvartma (the unusual, the mysterious). Therefore, offerings come to you in mysterious ways and rows of cars follow you.

2. Therefore, thou art healthy and prosperous. Whoever worships thus the Lord Vaiśvānara becomes healthy and prosperous : has Vedic glory in his house. That, however, is but the breath of the Lord, and your breath would have left you, if you had not come to me."

अथ होवाच जन<sup>७</sup> शार्कराक्ष्य कं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते इत्याकाशमेव भगवो राजन्निति होवाचैष वै बहुल आत्मा वैश्वानरो यं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते तस्मात्त्वं बहुलोऽसि प्रजया च धनेन च ॥ १ ॥ अत्स्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियमत्स्यन्नं पश्यति प्रियं भवत्यस्य ब्रह्मवर्चसं कुले य एतमेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते सन्दोहस्त्वेव आत्मन इति होवाच सन्दोहस्तेव्यशीर्थ्यन्मां नागमिष्य इति ॥ २ ॥

इति पञ्चदशः खण्डः ॥ १५ ॥

FIFTEENTH KHAṇḍA

"Then he said to Jana : 'O Śārkarākṣya ! Under what name dost thou worship the Lord Vaiśvānara ?' He replied : "As Ākāśa (All-light and support of ether) : O holy king," He said : "The Lord that thou worshipping is the Lord Vaiśvānara called Bahula (full). Therefore, you are full of offspring and wealth.

2. Therefore thou art healthy and prosperous. Whoever worships thus the Lord Vaiśvānara, becomes healthy and prosperous and has Vedic glory in his house. That, however, is but the trunk of the Lord, and your trunk would have perished, if you had not come to me."

अथ होवाच बुडिलमाश्वतरार्शिवं वैयाघ्रपथ कं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते इत्यप एव भगवो राजन्निति होवाचैष वै रयिरात्मा वैश्वानरो यं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते तस्मात्त्वं<sup>७</sup> रयिमान् पुष्टिमानसि ॥ १ ॥ अत्स्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियमत्स्यन्नं पश्यति प्रियं भवत्यस्य ब्रह्मवर्चसं कुले य एतमेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते बस्तिस्त्वेव आत्मन इति होवाच बस्तिस्ते व्यमेत्स्यन्मां नागमिष्य इति ॥ २ ॥

इति षोडशः खण्डः ॥ १६ ॥

SIXTEENTH KHAṇḍA

1. Then he said to Buḍila Āśvataraśvi : "O Vaiyāghrapadya ! Under what name dost thou worship the Lord Vaiśvānara ?" He replied, "As Apas (the Lord pervading the water and called Apas or All-pervading) : O holy king." He said, "The Lord that thou worshipping is the Lord Vaiśvānara called Rayi (the delight maker). Therefore, thou art wealthy and flourishing.

2. Therefore, thou art healthy and prosperous. Whoever worships thus that Lord Vaiṣvānara becomes healthy and prosperous, and has Vedic glory in his house. That, however, is but the loins of the Lord : and your loins would have broken if you had not come to me."

अथ होवाचोद्दालकमारुणि गौतम कं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते इति पृथिवीमेव भगवो राजन्निति होवाचैव वै प्रतिष्ठात्मा वैश्वानरो यं त्वमात्मानमुपास्ते तस्मात्त्वं प्रतिष्ठितोऽसि प्रजया च पशुभिश्च ॥ १ ॥ अस्त्यन्नं पश्यसि प्रियमस्त्यन्नं पश्यति प्रियं भवत्यस्य ब्रह्मवर्चसं कुले य एतमेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते पादौ त्वेतावात्मन इति होवाच पादौ ते व्यम्लास्येतां यन्मां नागमिष्य इति ॥ २ ॥

इति सप्तदशः खण्डः ॥ १७ ॥

#### SEVENTEENTH KHANḌA

1. Then he said to Uddālaka Āruṇi, "O Gautama ! Under what name dost thou worship the Lord Vaiṣvānara ?" He replied as Prthivi (the Lord supporting the earth, and called so because He is *vast*), O holy king." He said : "The Lord that thou worshippingest, is the Lord Vaiṣvānara called Pratiṣṭhā (firm stay). Therefore, thou standest firm with offspring and cattle.

2. Therefore, thou art healthy and prosperous. Whoever worships thus that Lord Vaiṣvānara becomes healthy and prosperous, and has Vedic glory in his house. Those, however, are but the feet of the Lord, and your feet would have given way, if you had not come to me."

तान् होवाचैते वै खलु यूयं पृथग्वेवमात्मानं वैश्वानरं विद्वाँसोऽन्नमत्य यस्त्वेतमेवं प्रादेशमात्रमभि-  
विमानमात्मानं वैश्वानरमुपास्ते स सर्वेषु लोकेषु सर्वेषु भूतेषु सर्वेष्वामस्वन्नमति ॥ १ ॥ तस्य ह वा  
एतस्यात्मनो वैश्वानरस्य मूर्द्धेव सुतेजाश्चतुर्विधरूपः प्राणः पृथग्वात्मा सन्दोहो बहुलो बस्तिरेव रयिः  
पृथग्वेव पादावुर एव वेदिलोमानि बहिर्हृदयं गार्हपत्यो मनोऽन्वाहार्यपचन आस्यमाहवनीयः ॥ २ ॥

इत्यष्टादशः खण्डः ॥ १८ ॥

#### EIGHTEENTH KHANḌA

1. Then he said to all six of them : "Now you verily knowing this Vaiṣvānara Lord as if many, eat your food (*i. e.*, have got your small reward). But he who worships this Lord Vaiṣvānara as of the size of heart and at the same time limitless, he eats food in all worlds, in all beings, and in all selfs.

2. Verily of that Lord Vaiṣvānara, the head is the Good Energy (of thought), the eye is All-seeing, the breath is All-moving, the trunk is the Space containing All, the bladder is the Rayi (matter in the Astral), the feet, the earth ; the chest, the altar ; the hairs, the grass ; the heart, the Gārhapatya fire, the mind is the Anvāhārya-fire, and the mouth the Ahavanīya-fire.

तद्यत्कं प्रथममागच्छेत्तद्वोमीयँ सयां प्रथमामाहुतिं जुहुयात्तां जुहुयात्प्राणाय स्वाहेति प्राणस्तृप्यति ॥ १ ॥  
प्राण्ये तृप्यति चक्षुस्तृप्यति चक्षुषितृप्यत्यादित्यस्तृप्यत्यादित्ये तृप्यति द्यौस्तृप्यति दिवि तृप्यत्यां यत्किञ्च  
द्यौश्चादित्यश्चाधितिष्ठतस्तृप्यति तस्यानुवृत्तिं तृप्यति प्रजया पशुभिरन्नाद्येन तेजसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेनेति ॥ २ ॥

इत्येकोनविंशः खण्डः ॥ १९ ॥

## NINETEENTH KHAṆḌA

1. At the time of eating, the first morsel that is taken should be considered as a Homa material. The first oblation that he offers let him do so with the Mantra "Prāṇāya Svāhā." Then Prāṇa is satisfied.

2. When the Prāṇa is satisfied, the eye is satisfied ; when the eye is satisfied, the sun is satisfied ; when the sun is satisfied, the consort of Vāyu (Dyaṇ) is satisfied ; when the consort of Vāyu is satisfied, the Lord of Wisdom and Bliss is satisfied. The Dyaṇ (consort of Vāyu) and sun rule (the Eastern Gate). When he, the Lord is satisfied, then follows the satisfaction of the sacrificer, with his offspring, and cattle, and the gets health, and energy and intellectual splendour.

अथ यां द्वितीयां जुहुयात्तां जुहुयादधानाय स्वाहेति व्यानस्तृप्यति ॥ १ ॥ व्याने तृप्यति श्रोत्रं तृप्यति श्रोत्रे तृप्यति चन्द्रमास्तृप्यति चन्द्रमसि तृप्यति दिशस्तृप्यन्ति दिक्षु तृप्यतीषु यत्किञ्च दिशश्च चन्द्रमाश्वा-  
धितिष्ठन्ति तत्तृप्यति तस्यानुवृत्तिं तृप्यति प्रजया पशुभिरन्नाद्येन तेजसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेनेति ॥ २ ॥

इति विंशः खण्डः ॥ २० ॥

## TWENTIETH KHAṆḌA

1. Then when he offers the second oblation let him offer it saying, "Vyāṇāya Svāhā." The Vyāṇa is satisfied.

2. When the Vyāṇa is satisfied, the Ear is satisfied ; when the ear is satisfied, the Moon is satisfied : when the moon is satisfied, the consort of Vāyu (Dīś) is satisfied, when the consort of Vāyu is satisfied, the Lord of Wisdom and Bliss (Vāyu) is satisfied. The (Dīś) consort of Vāyu and the Moon rule (the Southern Gate). When the Lord is satisfied, then the sacrificer is satisfied, along with his offspring and cattle, and he gets magnanimity, bliss and Vedic splendour.

अथ यां तृतीयां जुहुयात्तां जुहुयादधानाय स्वाहेत्यपानस्तृप्यति ॥ १ ॥ अपाने तृप्यति वाक् तृप्यति वाचि तृप्यत्यामग्निस्तृप्यत्यग्नौ तृप्यति पृथिवी तृप्यति पृथिव्यां तृप्यतां यत्किञ्च पृथिवी चाग्निश्वाधितिष्ठन्-  
स्तृप्यति तस्यानुवृत्तिं तृप्यति प्रजया पशुभिरन्नाद्येन तेजसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेनेति ॥ २ ॥

इत्येकविंशः खण्डः ॥ २१ ॥

## TWENTY-FIRST KHAṆḌA

1. Then when he offers the third oblation let him offer it saying, "Apāṇāya Svāhā." The Apāṇa is satisfied.

2. When the Apāṇa is satisfied, the speech is satisfied ; when the speech is satisfied, the fire is satisfied, when the fire is satisfied the Pṛthivī is satisfied ; when the Pṛthivī is satisfied, the Lord of Wisdom and Bliss (is satisfied). Pṛthivī and fire rule (the Western Gate). When that Lord is satisfied then the sacrificer is satisfied, along with his offspring and cattle, with health, energy and intellectual splendour.

अथ यां चतुर्थीं जुहुयात्तां जुहुयात् समानाय स्वाहेति समानस्तृप्यति ॥ १ ॥ समाने तृप्यति मनस्तृप्यति मनसि तृप्यति पर्जन्यस्तृप्यति पर्जन्ये तृप्यति विद्युत्तृप्यति विद्युति तृप्यत्यां यत्किञ्च विद्युच्च पर्जन्यश्वाधिति-  
ष्ठस्तृप्यति तस्यानुवृत्तिं तृप्यति प्रजया पशुभिरन्नाद्येन तेजसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेनेति ॥ २ ॥

इति द्वाविंशः खण्डः ॥ २२ ॥

## TWENTY-SECOND KHAṆḌA

1. Then when he offers the fourth oblation, let him offer it saying, "Samānāya Svāhā." Thus the Samāna is satisfied.

2. When the Samāna is satisfied, the mind is satisfied; when the mind is satisfied, Indra is satisfied; when Indra is satisfied, Vidyut (the consort of Vāyu) is satisfied: when the consort of Vāyu is satisfied, the Lord of Wisdom and Bliss is satisfied. Vidyut (the consort of Vāyu) and Indra rule (the Northern (tate). When the Lord is satisfied, then the sacrificer is satisfied, along with his offspring and cattle, with health, energy and intellectual splendour.

अथ यां पञ्चमीं जुहुयात्तां जुहुयादुदानाय स्वाहेत्युदानस्तृप्यति ॥ १ ॥ उदाने तृप्यति वायुस्तृप्यति वायौ तृप्यत्याकाशस्तृप्यत्याकाशे तृप्यति यत्किञ्च वायुश्चाकाशश्चापिनिष्ठस्तृप्यति तस्यानुत्सिं तृप्यति प्रजया पशुभिरन्नाद्येन तेजसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेनेति ॥ २ ॥

इति त्रयोविंशः खण्डः ॥ २३ ॥

## TWENTY-THIRD KHAṆḌA

1. Then when he offers the fifth oblation, let him offer it saying, "Udānāya Svāhā." Then the Udāna is satisfied.

2. When the Udāna is satisfied, the Vāyu is satisfied, when the Vāyu is satisfied, the Ākāśa is satisfied, the Lord of Wisdom and Bliss is satisfied. The Vāyu and Ākāśa rule (the Central or Upper (tate). When the Lord is satisfied, then the sacrificer is satisfied, along with his offspring and cattle, with energy and intellectual splendour.

स य इदमविद्वानग्निहोत्रं जुहोति यथाङ्गारानपोह्य भस्मनि जुहुयात्तादृक् तत्स्यात् ॥ १ ॥ अथ य एतदेवं विद्वानग्निहोत्रं जुहोति तस्य सर्वेषु लोकेषु सर्वेषु भूतेषु सर्वेष्व्वात्मसु हुतं भवति ॥ २ ॥ तद्यथेषीका त्वमग्नौ प्रोतं प्रदूयेतैव<sup>१</sup> हास्य सर्वे पाप्मानः प्रदूयन्ते य एतदेवं विद्वानग्निहोत्रं जुहोति ॥ ३ ॥ तस्माद्दु हेवविद्यमपि चण्डालाद्योच्छिष्टं प्रयच्छेदात्मनि हेवास्य तद्वैश्वानरे हुतं<sup>२</sup> स्यादिति तदेष्ट श्लोकः ॥ ४ ॥ यथेदं क्षुधिता बाता मातरं पट्युपासत एव<sup>३</sup> सञ्जीणि भूगान्यग्निहोत्रमुपासत इत्यग्निहोत्रमुपासत इति ॥ ५ ॥

इति चतुर्विंशः खण्डः ॥ २४ ॥

## TWENTY-FOURTH KHAṆḌA

1. He who, not knowing this Lord Vaiśvānara offers an Agnihotra, he is like unto that person who removing the live-coals, offers libations on dead ashes.

2. But he who knowing that Lord, thus offers an Agnihotra, he offers in fact oblation to all the souls animating all bodies in all worlds.

3. As the tuft of the Iṣikā reed entering into the fire is quickly reduced to ashes, thus indeed are burnt all his sins, who knowing the Lord, thus offers an Agnihotra.

4. Therefore, indeed, if such a knower gives what is left of his food to a Chāṇḍāla even, it would be offered in the Vaiśvānara Self of the Chāṇḍāla.

5. On this is the following stanza: As here the hungry infants cluster round their mother, so do all beings have recourse to Agnihotra.

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, V., 11. 1, we read "what is our Self, what is Brahman" and again V, 11. 6, "You know at present that Vaiśvānara Self, tell us that" and further on V, 18. 1, "But he who meditates on the Vaiśvānara Self as span long, he eats food in all worlds, in all beings, in all Selves," (Chh. Up., V, 11. 6 and V, 18. 1). Further<sup>4</sup> on we find a description of this Vaiśvānara fire in the following terms (Chh. Up., V. 18. 2, etc.):

"Of that Self called Vaiśvānara the head is called the Sutejas, the eye is Viśva-rūpa, the breath is Prthakvartma, etc.

*Doubt* : Now the doubt arises, what is this Vaiśvānara fire? Is it the fire, by which the food that is eaten is digested, or is it the Divinity called Agni, the presiding deity of fire, or is it the elemental fire, or is it Lord Viṣṇu? For Vaiśvānara is used in all these four senses, and since it is a common term its meaning is not well defined, and may mean any one of these four things. To this objection the next Sūtra gives the following reply :

SŪTRA 1., 2. 25.

वैश्वानरः साधारणशब्दविशेषात् ॥ १ । २ । २५ ॥

वैश्वानरः Vaiśvānaraḥ, the (God called) Vaiśvānara. The term Vaiśvānara denotes Brahman. He who contains *all men*. साधारण Sādhāraṇa, common. शब्द Śabda, term or word. विशेषात् Viśeṣāt, because of the distinction.

25. The term Vaiśvānara in the Chhândogya passage V, 11. 6., and 18. 1., denotes the Supreme Self, because this common term Vaiśvānara is qualified by epithets which are distinctive attributes of the Lord.—56.

#### COMMENTARY

The Vaiśvānara of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad passage denotes Viṣṇu, because the common term is qualified there by the attributes of Viṣṇu. The sense is this, that though this word Vaiśvānara is used in those passages as a general term, yet it denotes Viṣṇu. Because special terms like "heaven is its head," etc, when qualifying this Vaiśvānara, restrict its scope to Viṣṇu. As the common terms Âtman and Brahman are restricted to Viṣṇu. Moreover, the result which a person gets from the knowledge of Vaiśvānara is such as can only be obtained from the knowledge of Viṣṇu. Thus that text says, "As the fibres of the Iṣikâ reed when thrown into the fire, are burnt, thus all his sins are burnt" (V, 18. 1., and 24. 3). Now the burning of sins, is a distinctive mark of Viṣṇu, for no one can burn away sins but He. Therefore, Vaiśvānara means Viṣṇu. Moreover, etymologically also, the word Vaiśvānara may mean Viṣṇu; for it is composed of two words Viśva meaning "all," and Nara meaning "man;" namely, "He who contains all men within himself" and such a Being is Viṣṇu.

SŪTRA 1., 2. 26.

स्मर्यमाणमनुमानं स्यादिति ॥ १ । २ । २६ ॥

स्मर्यमाणम् Smaryamānam, mentioned in Smṛti. अनुमानम् Anumānam, inference. स्यात् Syāt, may be. इति Iti, because.

26. The Smṛti text may also be an inferential mark of the Vaiśvānara being the Highest Self—57.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Iti" denotes a reason. In the Bhagavad Gītā, (XV, 14) the word Vaiśvānara is expressly applied to the Lord. अहं वैश्वानरो भूत्वा प्राणिनां देहमाश्रितः "I, having become Vaiśvānara, take possession of the bodies of breathing things." Here a truth about Viṣṇu is declared, in a Smṛti passage, and from it we may infer that the Vaiśvānara Vidyā taught in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad also refers to 'this mystery of Viṣṇu. Hence Vaiśvānara is Viṣṇu.

In the next Sūtra, the author removes the doubt, that the Vaiśvānara may denote the gastric fire.

## SŪTRA I, 2. 27.

शब्दादिभ्योऽन्तः प्रतिष्ठानाच्च नेति चेन्न तथाऽष्ट्युपदेशादसंभवात्पुरुषविधमपि  
चैनमधीयते ॥ १ । २ । २७ ॥

शब्दादिभ्यः Sabdādibhyaḥ, on account of the words, etc., अन्तर Antar, within. प्रतिष्ठानात् Pratiṣṭhānāt, because of abiding. च Cha, and नेति Neti, not so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. तथा Tathā, thus. इष्टि Drṣṭi, meditation on Viṣṇu. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, because of being taught. असम्भवात् Asambhavāt, because of impossibility. पुरुषविधम् Puruṣa-vidham, having the shape of a man. अपि Api, also. च एनम् Cha enam, and Him. अधीयते Adhīyate, they read.

27. If it be objected that Vaiśvānara cannot be Viṣṇu, because there are express words stating otherwise, and because it is described as abiding within the body of man, we say, no; because meditation on Viṣṇu is thus taught: because it is impossible that it should denote anything else in this passage; and lastly, because they describe Him as having the shape of a man—58.

## COMMENTARY

An objector says : Vaiśvānara cannot be Viṣṇu, for two reasons, first, there is an express text saying that Vaiśvānara is fire ; and secondly, it is described as abiding within the body, and performing some functions therein. For says the text : "Ayam Agnir Vaiśvānaraḥ," this Fire (is) Vaiśvānara. Here the two words "Agni" and "Vaiśvānara" are shown in case of apposition. Moreover, in the section under discussion we find "the heart is the Gârhapatya fire, etc., (Chh. Up., V., 18. 2.). It represents the Vaiśvānara fire as abiding within the heart, and

constituting a triad of sacred fires. Moreover, further on it is shown that this Vaiśvānara is the fire on the altar of the heart, in which internal offerings to Prāṇas are made. It is also represented as shaped like man and abiding within man, in a Vedic passage. For all these reasons Vaiśvānara is not Viṣṇu.

The present Sūtra answers all these objections. The Vaiśvānara is not the gastric fire, because Viṣṇu is described as such, in order to teach meditation on Him, in the form of Internal Fire. If it meant the gastric fire, then the description of the heaven, etc., being its head, would be inappropriate. So also the Vājasaneyā Brāhmaṇa declares: स यो ह्येतमेवाग्निं वैश्वानरं पुरुषविधं पुरुषेऽन्तः प्रतिष्ठितं वेद ॥ "He who knows this Agni Vaiśvānara, shaped like a man, abiding within man." (Śatapatha Br., X., 6. 1. 11). If it meant the gastric fire, it would no doubt harmonise with the description as abiding within man, but the further description that it has the *shape of man*, would not be congruous. While in the case of Viṣṇu, both descriptions become harmonious.

Next the author sets aside the view, that Vaiśvānara of this passage means the Devatā called Agni, or the elemental fire.

SŪTRA I, 2. 28.

अतएव न देवता भूतञ्च ॥ १ । २ । २८ ॥

अत एव Ata eva, therefore, for this reason also. न Na, not देवता Devatā, the presiding deity of fire. भूतम् Bhūtam, the element of fire. च Cha, and.

28. For the same reason Vaiśvānara is not the presiding deity of fire, nor the element fire—59.

#### COMMENTARY

An objector says: The presiding deity of fire is a mighty being, possessing great lordliness, power, and heaven, etc., may very appropriately be its head and other members, and therefore the passage may very well apply to him. It may also apply to the elemental fire also. Thus the following Mantra of the R̥g Veda shows that Agni also possesses the same attributes (R̥g Veda, X, 88. 3):

यो भानुना पृथिवीं आमुतेमामाततान रोदसी अन्तरिक्षम् ॥

Who in the form of sun pervades the earth, the heaven and the interspace, that Fire, etc.

To this objection, we reply, that for the reasons already given Vaiśvānara is not the deity of fire, nor the elemental fire, but the Supreme Brahman. No doubt, in the Mantra above quoted, Agni is spoken of in very high terms, but they are mere words of praise and should not be taken in their literal sense.

*Note:* We rather think that Agni praised in hymn 88 of Book X of the R̥g Veda may very well mean the Supreme Lord or His first begotten, the Anointed, the Primal Sacrifice.

The word Agni itself directly and primarily denotes the Supreme Brahman also, just like the word Vaiśvānara. This is the opinion of Jaimini and the author mentions it in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA I., 2. 29.

साक्षादप्यविरोधम् जैमिनिः ॥ १ । २ । २९ ॥

साक्षात् Sākṣāt, directly. अपि Api, also. अविरोधम् Avirodham, no objection ; no contradiction. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, the sage Jamini.

29. Jaimini is of opinion that the word "Agni" directly may denote the Supreme Brahman, without any contradiction.—60.

COMMENTARY

As the word Vaiśvānara literally means "He to whom belong all men," or "who is the leader (Nara) of all (Viśva)," so the word Agni and similar other Vedic words denote etymologically the Supreme Brahman. Agni is derived from the root "Agi" to go ; with the suffix 'Ni.' अग्निः अग्निः Agni thus means : "He who leads others" or "who gives birth to all others." अङ्गयति iti agniḥ : "the producer or generator of all," or अङ्गयति iti agniḥ. Therefore, etymologically the word Agni means Viṣṇu, and so there is no contradiction in the phrase "Agniḥ vaiśvānara"; for both mean the same thing.

In the above passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad under discussion, Agni vaiśvānara is described as having the size of a span. How can the non-limited Brahman be limited by the measure of a Prādeśa or a span ? To this objection the author answers by the following Sūtras :

SŪTRA I., 2. 30.

अभिव्यक्तेरित्याह ऋषभः ॥ १ । २ । ३० ॥

अभिव्यक्तेः Abhivyakteḥ, because of manifestation इति Iti, thus आश्रमरथ्यः Āśmarathyah, the sage Āśmarathya.

30. The sage Āśmarathyah is of opinion that Vaiśvānara is represented as having the measure of a span, because thus He manifests himself in the heart of His devotees in meditation.—61.

COMMENTARY

The devotees who meditate on Brahman in their heart as having the size of a span, see him of that size, because He manifests himself to them in that form. This is the opinion of Āśmarathya.



SŪTRA I., 2. 31.

अनुस्मृतेरिति बादरिः ॥ १ । २ । ३१ ॥

अनुस्मृतेः Anusmṛteḥ, because of remembering or meditating. इति Iti, thus. बादरिः Bādariḥ, the sage Bādari.

31. The sage Bādari is of opinion that this measure of a span is a mental device, to facilitate meditation.—62.

COMMENTARY

The size of the heart is that of a span, and as Brahman is meditated as abiding in the lotus of the heart, the man involuntarily associates him with the size of a span. This mental association or suggestion or Anusmṛti is the cause why Brahman is called Prādeśa Mātra, the measure of a span. This is the opinion of Bādari.

SŪTRA I., 2. 32.

सम्पत्तेरिति जैमिनिस्तथाहि दर्शयति ॥ १ । २ । ३२ ॥

सम्पत्तेः Sampatteḥ, because of lordliness or majesty, इति Iti, thus. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, the sage Jaimini. तथा Tathā, in his way. हि Hi, because. दर्शयति Darsayati, (the Sruti) shows.

32. According to Jaimini the Brahman is said to be of the measure of a span, on account of His mysterious powers, and because the Śruti, in other passages, shows that the Lord possesses such powers.—63.

COMMENTARY

Though the Lord is all-pervading, yet He is said to have the size of a span, because of His Sampatti or lordliness and possessing inconceivable mysterious power, by which He can appear as such, and this span-body does not limit or condition Him. This is the opinion of Jaimini. The reason for this is that there are direct texts showing that the lord possesses such transcendental powers. As says a verse : तमेकं गोविन्दं सच्चिदानन्दं विप्रहन् । “He is one Govinda whose form is Sat, Chit and Ānanda.” एकोऽपि सन् बहुधा द्योविभाति ॥ “Who, though one, appears in manifold forms.” The texts like these show that on account of His inconceivable power, apparently contradictory attributes are co-existent in Him. Such as, though He is knowledge, He appears as having a body, though He is one, He appears as many, etc. This will be explained in greater detail as we proceed further. Though all-pervading there is no impropriety in ascribing to Him a limited form.

SŪTRA I, 2. 33.

आमनन्ति चैनमस्मिन् ॥ १ । २ । ३३ ॥

आमनन्ति Āmananti, they recite, record or declare. च Cha, and. एनम् Enam, this, the inconceivable power. अस्मिन् Āsmin, in that, in Him.

33. They (the Ātharvanikas) recite a text with regard to Him, as to this power.—64.

COMMENTARY

The possession of this mysterious power by the Lord, is directly recorded in their text, by the Ātharvanikas as regard to the Supreme Self. Thus in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad He is said to be without hands or feet, yet seizing all and going everywhere (I, 1. 6). "He is said to possess inconceivable paradoxical powers" (III, 1. 7.) So also in the Kaivalya Upaniṣad, 21 : अपाणिपादोऽहमचिन्त्यशक्तिः "I am without hands or feet, my powers are mysterious." So also the Smṛti says : आत्मेऽवरो-  
तव्यैतदहन्नशक्तिः । "The Self, the Lord transcendental, possesses infinite powers" (Bhāgavata Pūrāṇa).

By giving above the opinions of several sages, like Āsmarathya, etc., it is not to be understood that there is any conflict between their opinions and that of Vyāsa. The sage Vyāsa holds all those opinions. They but reflect a portion of his mind. As says a text :

व्यासचित्तस्थिताकाशाद् विच्छिन्नानितुकानिचिद् । अन्ये व्यवहरन्त्येतदुरीकृत्य गृहादिवद् ॥

Other sages severally take up as their own, a few of the judgments that form part of the spacious mind of Vyāsa and make use of them, even as houses, etc., enclose portions of space. (Skandā Purāṇa).

Here ends the Second Pāda of the first Adhyāya of the Vedānta Sūtras and of the Govinda Bhāṣya of Baladeva Vidyābhūṣaṇa.

## FIRST ADHYĀYA

### THIRD PĀDA

---

May the king of the Devas, who out of His great compassion, supports this whole universe of helpless beings, be propitious to me : may that Govinda, Lord of Supreme Bliss, draw my heart towards Him.

---

#### *Adhikaraṇa I.—The abode of heaven, etc., is God.*

In this third Pāda or chapter, some texts will be discussed, in which there are express indications that may apply to the Jīva or Pradhāna, but which however are to be construed as applying to Brahman.

*Viśaya* : Thus in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (II., 2. 5.) we find :

यस्मिन् धीः पृथिवी चान्तरिक्षमोतं मनः सह प्राणैश्च सर्वैः ।

तमेवैकं जानन्न आत्मानमन्या वाचो विमुञ्चन्न अमृतस्यैव सेतुः ॥

He in whom the heaven, the earth and the sky are woven, the mind also, with all the vital airs, know Him alone as the Self, and leave off other words, He is the bank (Setu) of the Immortal.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt, whether the being spoken of as the abode of heaven, earth and so on, is the Pradhāna or the Jīva or the Supreme Brahman.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣa maintains, that it refers to the Pradhāna, because it is the cause of all effects ; therefore, it is more appropriately said to be the abode of heaven and earth, etc. And it is very rightly called the Bank of the Immortal ; just as milk comes out of the udders of a cow in order to nourish the calf, so the Prakṛti, though Unintelligent, engages to bring about the release of the individual soul or Puruṣa, and is rightly called the Bank of the Immortal. The word Ātman or Self is metaphorically applied to Prakṛti, either because she gives everything pleasant to the individual soul, or because she is All-pervading. Or the above passage may refer to the Jīva, who, as enjoyer of all experiences, may well be said to be the abode of heaven and earth, for the abode of heaven and earth refers to the things experienced by the soul. Moreover, it is a well-known thing that the mind and the vital airs (mentioned in the above Mantra) abide in the Jīva and are characteristic attributes of the Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following :

SŪTRA I, 3. 1.

दुभ्वाद्यायतनं स्वशब्दात् ॥ १ । ३ । १ ॥

द्यु- Dyu, heaven. भू- Bhū, earth. आदि Âdi, etc., and the rest. आयतनम् Âyatanaṁ, abode. स्व Sva, peculiarly its own. शब्दात् Šabdât, because of the word.

1. The abode of heaven, earth, etc., (mentioned in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad) is verily Brahman, because the peculiar term used about Brahman occurs therein—65.

COMMENTARY

The peculiar term designating Brahman is the phrase "the bridge of the Immortal," a phrase which is never applied to Prakṛti or Jīva. The word Setu translated as Bank or bridge, comes from the root Sinoti, meaning to bind and so the phrase Amṛtasya Setu means, "He who causes Immortality to be obtained or the Giver of Immortality." Or the word Setu may mean bridge or bank, and is used here as a simile, that is to say, Brahman is like a bridge, that thrown over rivers, etc., helps one to reach the other bank; so He is like a bridge, to cross over this ocean of Saṁsāra and reach to the other bank which is Mukti. Therefore, the phrase "the bridge of the Immortal" being peculiar to Brahman, the above passage refers to Brahman. Moreover, there are other texts to the same effect, showing that Mukti is given alone by Brahman, namely, Brahman alone is the Giver of Immortality. "Knowing Him alone one crosses over death, etc.," says another text, (Svet. Up. तमेव विदित्वाऽतिमृत्युमेति ॥) The author gives a further reason, in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA. I, 3. 2.

मुक्तोपसृप्य व्यपदेशात् ॥ १ । ३ । २ ॥

मुक्त Mukta, the released. उपसृप्य Upasṛpya, creeping up to, resorting to. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesât, because of distinct pointing out, because of declaration.

2. Because it is declared, that this abode of heaven and earth, is the summit to which the Released slowly creep up—66.

COMMENTARY

In a subsequent Mantra of the same Upaniṣad, we find the following declaration :

यदा पश्यः पश्यते स्वमवर्णं कर्त्तारमीशं पुरुषं ब्रह्मयोनिम् ।

तदा विद्वान् पुण्यपापे विधूय निरञ्जनः परमं साम्यमुपेति ॥ ३ ॥

When the seer sees the golden coloured Creator and Lord as the Person from whom Brahmā arises, then possessing true knowledge, he shakes off good and evil, and, free from passion, reaches the highest similarity. (Muṇḍ. Up., III, 1. 3.)

This Being whom the Released reach cannot but be Brahman.

SŪTRA—I, 3. 3.

नानुमानमत्तच्छब्दात् ॥ १ । ३ । ३ ॥

न Na, not. अनुमानम् Ānumānam, the inferred one, *i. e.*, Matter. अतद्-शब्दात् A-tad-śabdāt, because there is no word denoting it.

3. The Pradhāna is not the abode of heaven and earth, because there is no word denoting it to be found in that passage—67.

COMMENTARY

In the passage under discussion, there is no word describing the non-sentient and unintelligent Pradhāna. Therefore, Pradhāna, called here "the inferred one," is not the abode of heaven and earth. On the other hand, words like "omniscient," etc., are found there.

SŪTRA—I, 3. 4.

प्राणभृच् च ॥ १ । ३ । ४ ॥

प्राण-भृच् Prāṇa-bhṛt, the supporter of Prāṇa, *i. e.*, the Jīva च Cha, and.

4. The individual Soul also is not the abode of heaven and earth, because there is no word denoting it, in that passage—68.

COMMENTARY

The word "not" is understood here, from the preceding Sūtra: so also the clause giving the reason, namely, A-tad-śabdāt "there is no word denoting it." Nor the word Ātman, employed in that passage, can be taken to mean the Jīva only. For the word "Ātman" is derived from the verb √Atati "to go," and means the All-pervading Brahman, 'primarily; and secondarily only, it denotes the individual soul. Moreover, the epithets like "all-knowing," etc., found in the above passage, are appropriate only to Brahman. Therefore, because there is absence of words denoting the Jīva in that section, therefore, the abode of heaven and earth cannot be the individual soul.

The individual soul is not meant for this additional reason also.

SŪTRA—I, 3. 5.

भेदव्यपदेशात् ॥ १ । ३ । ५ ॥

भेद Bheda, difference. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesāt, because of the distinct pointing out. च Cha, and.

5. And because the difference between the individual soul and the Supreme Self is distinctly pointed out, in that

passage ; therefore, the Jīva is not the abode of heaven and earth, etc.—69.

## COMMENTARY

The phrase “know Him alone as the Âtman” (II, 2. 5.) distinctly shows that the Brahman alone is the true Âtman, and is separate from the Jīva.

SŪTRA I, 3. 6.

प्रकरणात् ॥ १ । ३ । ६ ॥

प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇāt, because of the context.

6. The context also shows that the Jīva is not the abode of heaven and earth, etc.—70.

## COMMENTARY

The Upaniṣad opens with the question :—ऋस्मिन्तु विज्ञाते सर्वमिदं विज्ञातं भवति “Sir, what is that through which, if it is known, every thing else becomes known ?” (I, 1. 3). This question relates to Brahman, and so the answer must refer to Him and not to Jīva.

SŪTRA I, 3. 7.

स्थित्यदनाभ्यां च ॥ १ । ३ । ७ ॥

स्थिति Sthiti, abiding. अदनाभ्याम् Adanābhyām, eating. च Cha, and.:

7. And on account of differences of state of the two birds, one merely abiding and the other eating, it is not the Jīva that is referred to here.—71.

## COMMENTARY

After having premised that He is the abode of heaven and earth, the Sruti goes on to say : दा सुपर्णा सयुजा सखाया समानं वृक्षं परिषस्वजाते । तयोरन्यः पिप्पलं स्वाद्वत्क्षनश्चन्नन्योऽभिचाकशीति ॥

“Two birds of beautiful plumage, inseparable friends, nestle on the same tree. One of them eats the fruit, thinking it to be sweet, without eating the other merely abides and shines” (Muṇḍ. Up., III., 1. 1).

Now this being, that merely abides and shines, would not have been Brahman, in that case only, if there were not in the preceding passage the statement that he is the abode of the heaven and the earth, etc. For had the Brahman not been mentioned in this passage, then the sudden mention of Brahman in this bird-passage, would have been irrelevant. While the description of the Jīva would not have been inappropriate, for as the Jīva is well known, it has been described here. For this reason also the abode of heaven and earth is Brahman.

Note : Of the two birds, the one that merely illumines, would have referred to non-Brahman, if the preceding passage (Muṇḍ. Up., II., 2. 5) had not referred to Brahman. In order to make this “bird-passage” applicable to Brahman, it is absolutely necessary to make “the heaven-earth” passage also applicable to Brahman.

*Adhikaraṇa II.—The Fulness is Brahman.*

*Viśaya* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, in answer to the question of Nârada, the blessed Lord Sanatkumâra after describing Name, etc., says : "The Bhûmâ ought to be enquired into." Then Nârada says : "Teach me, O Lord, the Bhûmâ." Then Sanatkumâra says : "Where one sees nothing else, hears nothing else, knows nothing else, that is Fulness (Bhûman). Where one sees something else, hears something else, knows something else, that is the Little (Alpam)" (Chh. Up, VII, 23. 24). The whole passage is given here :

## FIRST KHAṇḌA

ॐ अभीहि भगव इति होपससाद सनत्कुमारं नारदस्त ॐ होवाच यदेत्थ तेन मोपसीद ततस्त ऊर्ध्वं वक्ष्यामीति ॥ १ ॥ स होवाचर्ग्वेदं भगवोऽभ्येमि यजुर्वेदं ॐ सामवेदमाथर्व्वं चतुर्थमितिहासपुराणं पञ्चमं वेदानां वेदं पित्र्यं ॐ राशिं दैवं निर्धिं वाकोवाक्यमेकायनं देवविद्यां ब्रह्मविद्यां भूतविद्यां क्षत्रविद्यां नक्षत्रविद्यां ॐ सर्पदेवजनविद्यामेतद्भगवोऽभ्येमि ॥ २ ॥ सोहं भगवो मन्त्रविदेवास्मि नाऽत्मविच्छ्रुतं ॐ ह्येव मे भगवद्दृशेभ्यस्तरति शोकमात्मविदिति सोहं भगवः शोचामि तं मा भगवाञ्छोकस्य पारं तारयत्विति त ॐ होवाच यदे किञ्चैतदध्यगीष्टा नामैवेतत् ॥ ३ ॥ नाम वा ऋग्वेदो यजुर्वेदः सामवेद आथर्व्वणश्चतुर्थ इत्यादि नामैवेतन्नामोपास्वेति ॥ ४ ॥ स यो नाम ब्रह्मेत्युपास्ते यावन्नाम्नो गतं तत्तास्य यथा कामचारो भवति यो नाम ब्रह्मेत्युपास्तेऽस्ति भगवो नाम्नो भूय इति नाम्नो वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ ५ ॥

इति प्रथमः खण्डः ॥ १ ॥

1. Nârada approached Sanatkumâra and said, "Teach me, Sir." He said to Nârada, "Tell me first what thou knowest already, then come to me and I shall tell thee what is beyond that."

2. Nârada said, "I know, Sir, the Rg Veda, the Yajur Veda, the Sâma Veda, and the Atharva Veda, the fourth ; the Itihâsa Purâṇa which is a fifth book among the Vedas ; the science of ancestors, the science of numbers, the science of Devatâs, the science of treasure finding, the undivided original Veda and its twenty-four branches, the Superhuman Deva sciences, the science of Brahman, the science of ghosts, the science of politics, the science of stars, the science of serpents and Deva-officials (Gandharvas) ; all this I know, O Venerable Sir."

3. But Sir, with all this, I am like one who knows the Mantras only (I know the names of the Lord only), but not the Lord. I have heard from personages like your honour, that he who knows the Lord overcomes the grief. I am in grief. Therefore, O Sir, take me over this ocean of grief." Sanatkumâra said to him, "Whatever you have read is verily only the name of the Lord."

4. "Verily Name is the (presiding deity of the) Rg Veda, the Yajur Veda, the Sâma Veda, and the Atharva Veda, the fourth, and the rest. All these are verily Name only. Meditate on Brahman in the Name."

5. "He who meditates on Brahman in Name, gets freedom of movement throughout all that region over which Name has her scope ; he who meditates on Brahman in Name (Uṣâ)."

"Is there something better than Name ?" "Yes, there is something better than Name." "Sir, tell it to me."

## SECOND KHAṆḌA

वाग्वाव नाम्नो भूयसी वाग्वा ऋग्वेदं विज्ञापयति यजुर्वेदं सामवेदमाथर्व्वं चतुर्थमित्यादि वाचमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवो वाचो भूय इति वाचो वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति द्वितीयः खण्डः ॥ २ ॥

1. "Speech is better than Name. Speech makes us understand the R̥g Veda, Yajur Veda, Sāma Veda, and as the fourth the Ātharvāna, and the rest. Meditate on Brahman in speech."

2. "Is there something better than speech?" "Yes, there is something better than speech." "Sir, tell it to me."

## THIRD KHAṆḌA

मनो वाव वाचो भूयो यथा वै द्वे वामलेके द्वे वा कोले द्वौ वाऽक्षौ मुष्टिरनुभवत्येवं वाचश्च नाम च मनोऽनुभवति स यदा मनसा मनस्यति मन्त्रानधीयीत्यथाधीते मनो हि ब्रह्म मन उपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवो मनसो भूय इति मनसो वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति तृतीयः खण्डः ॥ ३ ॥

1. "Mind is higher than Speech. For when two myrobalans or two plums or two Haritaki-fruits, are held in the closed-fist, they are therein enclosed, so are Name and Speech included in the Mind. When one wishes to study the Mantras, he does study them, etc., in Mind is Brahman. Meditate on Brahman in Mind."

2. "Is there something better than Mind?" "Yes, there is something better than mind." "Sir, tell it to me."

## FOURTH KHAṆḌA

सङ्कल्पो वाव मनसो भूयान्यदा वै सङ्कल्पयतेऽथ मनस्यत्यथ वाचमीरयति तामु नाम्नीरयति नाम्नि मन्त्रा एकं भवन्ति मन्त्रेषु कर्माणि ॥ १ ॥ तानि ह वैतानि सङ्कल्पैकायनानि सङ्कल्पात्मकानि सङ्कल्पे प्रतिष्ठितानि स एष संकल्पः संकल्पमुपास्वेति ॥ २ ॥ अस्ति भगवः संकल्पाद्भूय इति संकल्पाद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ ३ ॥

इति चतुर्थः खण्डः ॥ ४ ॥

1. "Will (Mitra) is better than Mind. For when a man wills, then he thinks in his mind, then he utters speech, and sends it forth in the name. In a name all Mantras are included and in Mantras abide all ritual works.

2. "All these, therefore, have their one refuge in will. Have the will as their Lords, and abide in will and so on. This is will. Meditate on Brahman in will."

3. "Sir, is there something better than will?" "Yes, there is something better than will." "Sir, tell it to me."

## FIFTH KHAṆḌA

चित्तं वाव सङ्कल्पाद्भूयो यदा वै चेतयतेऽथ संकल्पयतेऽथ मनस्यत्यथ वाचमीरयति तामु नाम्नीरयति नाम्नि मन्त्रा एकं भवन्ति मन्त्रेण कर्माणि ॥ १ ॥ तानि ह वा एतानि चित्तैकायनानि चित्तात्मनि चित्त प्रतिष्ठितानि चित्तमुपास्वेति ॥ २ ॥ अस्ति भगवश्चित्ताद्भूय इति चित्ताद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ ३ ॥

इति पञ्चमः खण्डः ॥ ५ ॥



1. "Flickering memory (Agni) is verily greater than will. For when a man recollects, then he thinks in his mind, then he sends forth speech, and sends it forth in a name. In name all Mantras are included, and in Mantras abide all ritual works."

2. "All these (beginning with mind and ending in sacrifice) have Chitta as their centre, have Chitta as their lord and are supported in Chitta. Meditate on Brahman in Chitta."

3. "Sir, is there something better than Chitta?" "Yes, there is something better than Chitta." "Sir, tell it to me."

#### SIXTH KHAṆḌA

ध्यानं वाव चित्ताद्भूयो ध्यायतीव पृथिवी ध्यायतीवान्तरिक्षं ध्यायतीव द्यौर्ध्यायन्तीवापो ध्यायन्तीव पर्वता ध्यायन्तीव देवमनुष्याध्यानमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवो ध्यानाद्भूय इति ध्यानाद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति षष्ठः खण्डः ॥ ६ ॥

1. "Dhyāna is better than Chitta. The earth is in meditation, as it were; and thus also the sky, the intermediate region, the heaven, the water, the mountains and Divine Men. Meditate on Brahman in Dhyāna."

2. "Is there something better than Dhyāna?" "Yes, there is something better than Dhyāna." "Sir, tell it to me."

#### SEVENTH KHAṆḌA

विज्ञानं वाव ध्यानाद्भूयो विज्ञानेन वा ऋग्वेदं विजानाति यजुर्वेदं सामवेदमाथर्वणं चतुर्थमित्यादि यज्ञञ्चाग्नञ्च रसञ्चेमञ्च लोकममुञ्च विज्ञानेनैव विजानाति विज्ञानमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवो विज्ञानाद्भूय इति विज्ञानाद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति सप्तमः खण्डः ॥ ७ ॥

1. "Understanding is better than Dhyāna. Through understanding one understands the R̥g Veda, the Yajur Veda, the Sāma Veda, and as the fourth, Ātharvana, and the rest, food and its savours, this world and that, all this we understand through Understanding. Meditate on Brahman in Understanding."

2. "Sir, is there something better than Understanding?" "Yes, there is something better than Understanding." "Sir, tell it to me."

#### EIGHTH KHAṆḌA

बलं वाव विज्ञानाद्भूयोऽपि ह शतं विज्ञानवतामेको बलवानाकम्पयते स यदा बली भवत्यथोत्थाता भवत्युत्तिष्ठन् परिचरिता भवति परिचरन्नुपसत्ता भवत्युपसीदन्द्रष्टा भवति श्रोता भवति मन्ता भवति बोद्धा भवति कर्ता भवति विज्ञाता भवति बलेन वै पृथिवी तिष्ठति बलेनान्तरिक्षं बलेन द्यौर्बलेन पर्वता बलेन देवमनुष्या बलेन पशवश्च वयाँसि च तृणवनस्पतयः श्वापदान्याकीटपतङ्गपिपीलिकं बलेन लोकस्तिष्ठति बलमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ स यो बलं ब्रह्मेत्युपास्ते यावद्वलस्य गतं तत्रास्य यथा कामचारो भवति यो बलं ब्रह्मेत्युपास्तेऽस्ति भगवो बलाद्भूय इति बलाद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इत्यष्टमः खण्डः ॥ ८ ॥

1. "Spiritual power is verily greater than Understanding. Here in this world, one powerful man of spirit makes a hundred men of understanding tremble. If a man is spiritually powerful, he rises to higher planes, rising to higher planes, he serves the Masters, serving the Masters, he attracts Their attention, attracting Their attention, he gets Their teachings and gets Their audience ; then he ponders over Their teachings and begins to understand them, and act upon them ; thus he becomes wise. By power, the earth stands firm, by power the intermediate world stands firm, by power the Deva Loka stands firm, by power the mountains and Divine men, by power the cattle and birds and herbs and trees and beasts down to worms, insects and ants stand firm, by power the world stands firm. Meditate on Brahman in Power.

2. "He who meditates on Brahman in Power gets freedom of movement through the region on which Power has his scope. He who meditates on Brahman in Power." "Sir, is there something better than Power ?" "Yes, there is something better than Power." "Sir, tell it to me."

## NINTH KHAṆḌA

अन्नं वाव बलाद्भूयस् ; अन्नमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवोऽन्नाद्भूय इत्यन्नाद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति नवमः खण्डः ॥ ९ ॥

1. "Food (Aniruddha or spiritual love) is better than power (spiritual knowledge). Meditate on Brahman in food." "Sir, is there something better than food ?" "Yes, there is something better than food." "Sir, tell it to me."

## TENTH KHAṆḌA

आपो वा अन्नाद्भूयस्तस्मादवा सुवृष्टिर्न भवति व्याधीयन्ते प्राणा अन्नं वनीयो भविष्यतीत्यथ यदा सुवृष्टिर्भवत्यनन्दिनः प्राणा भवन्त्यन्नं बहु भविष्यति अप उपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवोऽद्भूयो भूय इत्यद्भूयो वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति दशमः खण्डः ॥ १० ॥

1. "Water (Prāṇa or Spiritual Peace) is higher than food (Spiritual love). Therefore, if seasonable rain were not to fall, all living beings become wretched from a dread of food being scantily produced ; while if the fall of rain is seasonable, all living beings rejoice, saying 'there will be plenty of food. Meditate on Brahman in water.'

2. "Sir, is there something better than water ?" "Yes, there is something better than water." "Sir, tell it to me."

## ELEVENTH KHAṆḌA

तेजो वा अद्भूयो भूयस्तद्वा पतद्वायुमुपगृह्णाकाशमभितपति तदाहर्निशोचति नितपति वर्षिष्यति वा इति तेज उपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवस्तेजसो भूय इति तेजसो वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इत्येकादशः खण्डः ॥ ११ ॥

1. "Fire (Indra or the fire of genius) is verily greater than Water (Spiritual Peace). Therefore, when it pervading the air, heats the atmosphere, people say 'It is warm and sultry, it will rain.' Meditate on Brahman in Fire."

2. "Sir, is there something better than Fire ?" "Yes, there is something higher than Fire." "Sir, tell it to me."

## TWELFTH KHAṆḌA

आकाशो वाव तेजसो भूयान् आकाशमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगव आकाशाद्भूय इत्याकाशाद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति द्वादशः खण्डः ॥ १२ ॥

1. "Ether (Umā or the steady light of genius) is higher than Fire (or the fire of genius). Meditate on Brahman in Ether."

2. "Is there something better than Ether?" "Yes, there is something better than Ether." "Sir, tell it to me."

## THIRTEENTH KHAṆḌA

स्मरो वा आकाशाद्भूयः स्मरमुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगवः स्मराद्भूय इति स्मराद्वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति त्रयोदशः खण्डः ॥ १३ ॥

1. "Memory (Rudra or Spiritual Omniscience) is higher than Ether (or Spiritual genius). Meditate on Brahman in Memory."

2. "Sir, is there something better than Memory?" "Yes, there is something better than Memory." "Sir, tell it to me."

## FOURTEENTH KHAṆḌA

आशा वाव स्मराद्भूयस्याशेद्धो वै स्मरो मन्त्रानधीति वर्ममणिं कुरुते पुत्राँश्च पशूँश्चेच्छत इमञ्च लोकममुञ्चेच्छत आशामुपास्वेति ॥ १ ॥ अस्ति भगव आशाया भूय इत्याशाया वाव भूयोऽस्तीति तन्मे भगवान् ब्रवीत्विति ॥ २ ॥

इति चतुर्दशः खण्डः ॥ १४ ॥

1. "Hope (Sarasvatī or the bliss of divine vision) is better than Memory. Kindled by Hope, Memory reads the sacred Hymns, performs sacrifices, desires sons and cattle, desires this world and that. Meditate on Brahman in Hope."

2. "Sir, is there something better than Hope?" "Yes, there is something better than Hope." "Sir, tell it to me."

## FIFTEENTH KHAṆḌA

प्राणो व आशाया भूयान्यथा वा अरा नामौ समर्पिता एवमस्मिन् प्राणो सर्वं समर्पितं प्राणः प्राणेन याति प्राणः प्राणं ददाति प्राणाय ददाति प्राणो ह पिता प्राणो मता प्राणो भ्राता प्राणः स्वसा प्राण आचार्यः प्राणो ब्राह्मणः ॥ १ ॥ प्राणो ह्येवैतानि सर्वाणि भवति स वा एष एवं पश्यन्नेवं मन्वान एवं विज्ञानव्रतिवादी भवति तच्चेद् ब्रूयुरतिवाद्यसीत्यतिवाद्यस्मीति ब्रूयान्नापन्दुवीत ॥ २ ॥

इति पञ्चदशः खण्डः ॥ १५ ॥

1. "The Chief Breath (Prāṇa) is verily greater than Hope. As the spokes of a wheel are all attached to the nave, so in this Chief Breath are all attached. But the Chief Breath himself moves, through the Supreme Breath. The Supreme Breath gives to the Chief Breath all that He desires, (when the Prāṇa meditates for souls to the Supreme); yea, gives to him his very life. This Supreme Breath is verily the father, the Supreme Breath, the sister; the Supreme Breath, the teacher: the Supreme Breath, the priest."

2. "The Supreme Breath verily exists in all these. He who sees it thus, perceives it thus, knows it thus, becomes the teacher of the highest truth (Ativādin). If the people say to him, thou art an Ativādin, let him say I am an Ativādin. "He need not conceal it." ["Is there, Sir, something higher than Prāṇa"? "Yes, there is something higher than Prāṇa." "Sir, tell it to me."]

## SIXTEENTH KHAṆḌA

एष तु वा अतिवदति यः सत्येनातिवदति सोऽहं भगवः सत्येनातिवदानोति सत्यं त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्यमिति सत्यं भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इति षोडशः खण्डः ॥ १६ ॥

1. "(The Lord called the True is higher than Prāṇa). But he in reality is (a higher) Ativādin, who declares the Lord Viṣṇu to be the True." "Sir, may I become an Ativādin by the grace of the True?" "But we must (first) desire to know the True." "Sir, I desire to know the True."

## SEVENTEENTH KHAṆḌA

यदा वै विजानात्यथ सत्यं वदति नाविजानन् सत्यं वदति विजानन्नेव सत्यं वदति विज्ञानं त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्यमिति विज्ञानं भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इति सप्तदशः खण्डः ॥ १७ ॥

1. "When one understands (the Good Lord as Omniscient) then one declares the Good Lord (Satyam). One who does not understand (Him as Omniscient), cannot declare Him as the Good. Only he who understands the Omniscient, can declare the Good. This Omniscient, however, we must desire to understand." "Sir, I desire to understand the Omniscient."

## EIGHTEENTH KHAṆḌA

यदा वै मनुतेऽथ विजानाति नामत्वा विजानाति मत्वेव विजानाति मतिस्त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्येति मति भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इत्यष्टादशः खण्डः ॥ १८ ॥

1. "When one realises Him as the Thinker, then one knows Him as Omniscient. One who does not so realise cannot understand Him as Omniscient. Only he who knows thus understands the Omniscient. This Thinker, however, we must desire to understand." "Sir, I desire to understand the Thinker."

## NINETEENTH KHAṆḌA

यदा वै श्रद्धात्यथ मनुते नाश्रद्धन् मनुते श्रद्धदेव मनुते श्रद्धा त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्येति श्रद्धां भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इत्येकोनविंशः खण्डः ॥ १९ ॥

1. "When one knows Him as Holy, then one knows Him as Thinker. One who does not know Him as Holy, cannot know him as Thinker. Only He who knows Him as Holy, can know Him as Thinker. This All-holy, however, we must desire to understand." "Sir, I desire to understand the All-holy."

## TWENTIETH KHAṆḌA

यदा वै निस्तिष्ठत्यथ श्रद्धाति नानिस्तिष्ठन् श्रद्धाति निस्तिष्ठन्नेव श्रद्धाति निष्ठा त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्येति निष्ठां भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इति विंशः खण्डः ॥ २० ॥

1. "When one knows Him as firm, then one believes Him holy. One who has no knowledge of His firmness, cannot believe Him as holy. Only he who knows Him as firm, believes Him as holy. This firm Lord, however, we must desire to understand." "Sir, I desire to understand the firm One."

TWENTY-FIRST KHAṆḌA

यदा वै करोत्यथ निस्तिष्ठति नाकृत्वा निस्तिष्ठति कृत्वैव निस्तिष्ठति कृतिस्त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्येति कृतिं भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इत्येकविंशः खण्डः ॥ २१ ॥

1. "When one knows Him as Creator, he knows Him as having firmness. The man who does not know Him as Creator, can never know Him as having firmness. He alone knows Him as firm, who knows Him as Creator. The Creator, therefore, should one desire to know." "Sir, I desire to know the Creator."

TWENTY-SECOND KHAṆḌA

यदा वै सुखं लभतेऽथ करोति नासुखं लब्ध्वा करोति सुखमेव लब्ध्वा करोति सुखं त्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्यमिति सुखं भगवो विजिज्ञास इति ॥ १ ॥

इति द्वाविंशः खण्डः ॥ २२ ॥

1. "When one knows Him as Pleasure, He knows Him as the Creator, he who does not know Him as Pleasure, does not know Him as Creator. Realising Him as Pleasure alone, one knows Him as Creator. This Pleasure, however, we must desire to understand." "Sir, I desire to understand Pleasure."

TWENTY-THIRD KHAṆḌA

यौ वै भूमा तत् सुखं नाल्पे सुखमस्ति, भूमैव सुखं, भूमात्वेव विजिज्ञासितव्यमिति । भूमानं भगवो विजिज्ञासे इति ॥ १ ॥

इति त्रयोविंशः खण्डः ॥ २३ ॥

"1. "He who is the Lord Nārāyaṇa called the Infinity is the real pleasure, without the grace of the Infinity (Bhūman) there is no pleasure for the finite (though Mukta). The Bhūman alone is the Sukham. One must, therefore, enquire into Bhūman." "Sir, I desire to understand Bhūman."

TWENTY-FOURTH KHAṆḌA

यत्र नान्यत्पश्यति नान्यच्छृणोति नान्यद्विजानाति स भूमाऽथ यत्रान्यत्पश्यत्यन्यच्छृणोत्यन्यद्विजानाति तदल्पं यो वै भूमा तदमृतमथ यदल्पं तन्मर्त्यं स भगवः कस्मिन् प्रतिष्ठित इति स्वे महिम्नि यदि वा न महिम्नीति ॥ १ ॥ गो अश्वमिह महिमेत्याचक्षते इस्तिहिरयं दासभार्यं क्षेत्राययायतनानीति नाहमेवं ब्रवीमि ब्रवीमिति इह होवाचान्यो ह्यन्यस्मिन् प्रतिष्ठित इति ॥

इति चत्वारिंशः खण्डः ॥ २४ ॥

1. "Without being permitted by whom, one does not see anything else, does not hear anything else, does not understand anything else, He is the Bhūman. But where one sees a thing under the control of something else, or hears it such, or understands it such, that is the Limited. He who is the Infinite, He is verily the Immortal. But that which is the Limited that is the Mortal." "Sir, in what does this Infinite rest?" "In His own glory, or perhaps not even there."

2. "Cows and horses in this world are said to be glorious, so also elephant and gold, slaves and wives, fields and houses. But I do not mean any such glory." Thus said Sanatkumāra, "I said something different from any worldly glory."

## TWENTY-FIFTH KHANḌA

स एवाधस्तात् स उपरिष्ठात् स पश्चात् स पुरस्तात् स दक्षिणतः स उत्तरतः स एवेदं सर्वमित्य-  
थातोऽहङ्कारादेश एवाहमेवाधस्तादहमुपरिष्ठादहं पश्चादहं पुरस्तादहं दक्षिणतोऽहमुत्तरतोऽहमेवेदं सर्वमिति ॥ १ ॥  
अथात आत्मादेश एवात्मैवाधस्तादात्मोपरिष्ठादात्मा पश्चादात्मा पुरस्तादात्मा दक्षिणत आत्मोत्तरत आत्मैवेदं  
सर्वमिति स वा एष एवं पश्यन्नेवं मन्वान एवं विजानन्नात्मरतिरात्मक्रीड आत्ममिथुन आत्मानन्दः स  
स्वराड् भवति तस्य सर्वेषु लोकेषु कामचारो भवत्यथ येऽन्यथाऽतो विदुरन्यराजानस्तेऽक्षय्यलोका भवन्ति  
तेषां सर्वेषु लोकेष्वकामचारो भवति ॥ २ ॥

इति पञ्चविंशः खण्डः ॥ २५ ॥

1. "He indeed is below, above, behind, before, right and left,—this He indeed is Full. Now the teaching regarding Him called as "I." The "I" is below, the "I" is above, the "I" is behind, the "I" is before, the "I" is on the right, the "I" is on the left, the "I" is verily the Nearest and the Full.

2. "Next follows the teaching regarding Him as the Ātman. The Ātman is below, the Ātman is above, the Ātman is behind, the Ātman is before, the Ātman is on the right, the Ātman is on the left, the Ātman alone is the Nearest and the Full. He who sees Him thus, understands Him thus, thinks Him thus, he always thinks the Ātman to be the highest; he sports in the Ātman, he unites with the Ātman, has the Ātman for his joy, and comes directly under the rule of the Ātman. For him there is freedom of movement in all the worlds. But those who understand Him differently, live in worlds which are perishable, and are under inferior rulers, for them there is no freedom of movement in all the worlds."

## TWENTY-SIXTH KHANḌA

तस्य ह वा एतस्यैवं पश्यत एवं मन्वानस्यैवं विजानत आत्मतः प्राण आत्मत आशाऽत्मतःस्मर  
आत्मत आकाश आत्मतस्तेज आत्मत आप आत्मत आविर्भावतिरोभावावात्मतोऽन्नमात्मतो बलमात्मतो  
विज्ञानमात्मतो ध्यानमात्मतश्चित्तमात्मतः सङ्कल्प आत्मतो मन आत्मतो वागात्मतो नामात्मतो मन्त्रा  
आत्मतः कर्मागयात्मत एवेदं सर्वमिति ॥ १ ॥ तदेष श्लोको न पश्यो मृत्युं पश्यति न रोगं नीत  
दुःखतां सर्वं ह पश्यः पश्यति सर्वमाप्नोति सर्वश इति स एकधा भवति त्रिधा भवति पञ्चधा सप्तधा  
नवधा चैव पुनश्चेकादश स्मृतः शतञ्च दश चैकश्च सहस्राणि च विंशतिराहारशुद्धौ सत्त्वशुद्धिः सत्त्वशुद्धौ  
ध्रुवा स्मृतिः स्मृतिलम्भे सर्वग्रन्थीनां विप्रमोक्षस्तस्मै मृदित कषायाय तमसस्परं दर्शयति भगवान् सनत्कुमारस्त  
स्कन्द इत्याचक्षते तं स्कन्द इत्याचक्षते ॥ २ ॥

इति षडविंशः खण्डः ॥ २६ ॥

1. For the released soul which sees thus, which thinks thus, which understands thus, there is the vision of how the Chief Prāṇa comes out of the Ātman, how the Hope comes out from the Ātman, how the Steady Memory comes out of Him. How the Ether comes out from the Ātman, the Fire from the Ātman, the Water from the Ātman, the appearance and the disappearance of the worlds from the Ātman, Food from the Ātman, Power from the Ātman, Understanding from the Ātman, Meditation from the Ātman, Unsteady Memory from the Ātman, the Will from the Ātman, the Mind from the Ātman, the Speech from the Ātman, the Name from the Ātman, the Mantras from the Ātman, the Karmas from the Ātman, verily the released soul sees how all this universe comes from the Ātman alone.

2. "There is this verse about it: 'The released soul does not see death, nor illness, nor pain.' The released soul sees everything and obtains everything, everywhere. He becomes one, he becomes three, he becomes five, he becomes nine, and it is said he becomes eleven as well, nay, he becomes one hundred and eleven, and one thousand and twenty.

"Right doctrine leads to right thinking. Right thinking conduces to firm meditation. When meditation is firm, all ties are loosened completely, through the grace of the Lord."

To the sage Nārada, with his faults all rubbed out, the great Teacher Śanatkumāra shows the other side of darkness. Śanatkumāra is called the Great Warrior, yea, he is called the Great Warrior.

The word Bhūman here does not denote numerical largeness, but pervasion in the shape of fulness. For the text contrasts this Bhūman with Alpam or small, or little, a word denoting quantity and not number, for it says: "Where one sees something else, that is the Little." Therefore, the contrasted term must possess attributes opposite of "little," namely, "muchness" or "fulness."

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt. Is this Bhūman, Prāṇa or Viṣṇu?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the term Bhūman means the Breath or Prāṇa which is the topic immediately preceding it. Says the Sruti : "The Prāṇa is better than Hope." After this there is no question and reply. Therefore, Prāṇa is the Bhūman. And Prāṇa here means the individual soul, which is always associated with breath, or Prāṇa. And Prāṇa also here does not mean the modification of air merely, but the Jīva. For the section commences with the declaration, "the knower of Ātman (Jīva) crosses over grief" and ends with the conclusion, "all this is of the Ātman (Jīva)." The whole section treats of the individual soul, therefore, the Bhūman, occurring in the middle of the section, must refer to the Jīva. Moreover, the phrase "where one sees nothing else, etc.," is perfectly relevant with regard to the Jīva, for in dreamless sleep (Suṣupti), when all the senses are absorbed in the Prāṇa, there is no seeing, etc. The statement that Bhūman is bliss, is also appropriate to the Jīva, for in Suṣupti one is in bliss, as he says on awakening, "I slept very happily." The whole section has thus determined the Jīvātman, therefore this Bhūman must be construed as applying to the Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : To this objection the author answers by the following Siddhānta Sūtra.

SŪTRA I, 3. 8.

भूमा सम्प्रसादादध्युपदेशात् ॥ १ । ३ । ८ ॥

भूमा Bhūmā, the Full (is Brahman). सम्प्रसादात् Samprasādāt (because of being greater) than the vessel of grace. The Jīva is called Samprasāda, because it is the peculiar object of grace (Prasāda) on the part of the Lord, or

Samprasādat may mean "because possessing great joy and serenity." अधि Adhi, greatest, highest, above. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, because of the teaching. The Bhūma is taught to be higher than the Jīva, the vessel of grace, i. e., the Bhūma is higher than even the Mukta Jīva.

8. The Bhūman is Brahman, because it is taught as possessing highest joy, and being above all.—72.

OR

8. Because the scripture teaches that the Bhūman is greater than the vessel of grace (the Jīva); therefore, the Bhūman is not the human soul.—72.

Note : The Bhūman is not Jīva, because it is taught as higher than Samprasāda or the Released Soul. The Sūtra may also be translated as, "The Bhūman is not Jīva, because it has Samprasāda or excessive serenity, and because it is taught as Adhi or the highest."

#### COMMENTARY

The Lord Viṣṇu is this Bhūman and not the human soul, the companion of Prāṇa. Why? Because it is expressly taught to possess the highest joy (which the Jīva has not). The Bhūman text says, "That which is Bhūman is verily joy." Thus this Bhūman is immense joy, (Vipulasukha), and, moreover, it is taught as the last of the series, and therefore it is the highest or Adhi of all. (Thus one meaning of the Sūtra is that Bhūman is Brahman, because it is taught as the last of the series and therefore it is above all and because it has excessive joy). Or the Bhūman is Brahman, because in Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VIII, 3. 4, it is expressly taught to be greater than the Samprasāda or the vessel of grace or the Jīva) the companion of Prāṇa.

We give that passage here :

अथ य एष सम्प्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसम्पद्य स्वेन रूपेणाभिनिष्पद्यते एष आत्मेति होवाचेतदमृतमभयमेतद्ब्रह्मेति तस्य ह वा एतस्य ब्रह्मणो नाम सत्यमिति ॥

Now that Released Jīva (Samprasāda) after having risen from out this body, reaches the Highest Light, and appears before its True Form who is the Ātman.—Thus he spoke when asked by his pupils. This (Ātman or Viṣṇu) is the Immortal, the Fearless, this is Brahman, and of that Brahman the name is the True Satyam. (Chh. Up., VIII, 3. 4.)

Note : Compare :

एवमेवैष सम्प्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसम्पद्य स्वेन रूपेणाभिनिष्पद्यते स उत्तमः पुरुषः स तत्र पर्येति जहन्नीडन्ममायः क्षीमिर्वा यानैर्वा ज्ञातिमिर्वा नोपजन<sup>७१</sup> स्मरन्निद<sup>७२</sup> शरीर<sup>७३</sup> स यथा प्रयोग्य आचरणे युक्त एवमेवायमस्मिच्छरीरे प्राणो युक्तः ॥

Thus does that Released Jīva (Samprasāda), after having risen out from this body, reaches the Highest Light; and appears before its Own Form, who is the Highest Spirit. He moves about there laughing, playing, and rejoicing, be it with women, carriages, or



relatives, never being conscious of persons near him (so great is his ecstasy). As the charioteer is appointed to the carriage so is the Prāṇa appointed in this body. (Chh. Up., VIII, 12. 3).

The sense is this. The scripture has first taught a series of beings beginning with Name and ending with Prāṇa, and then says, "Prāṇa then is all this. He who sees this, perceives this, and understands this, becomes an Ativādin." Thus the knower of Prāṇa is called an Ativādin. But the scripture then describes a higher Ativādin, when it says, "But in reality he is an Ativādin who declares the Highest Being to be the True (Satya)." Now this Ativādin of the True, is different from the Ativādin of the Prāṇa, because the word "but" introduces a new topic. It serves to set aside the meditation on Prāṇa, and teaches that the highest Ativādin is he who declares the True to be the Highest Being. The True is here Viṣṇu, and it (True) being mentioned as separate from Prāṇa, the Bhūman which refers to the True, must also be different from the Jīva and Prāṇa. This Bhūman is not only something different from Prāṇa, but greater than it. Had Prāṇa been the Bhūman, then the instruction that it is higher than Prāṇa becomes absurd. This Bhūman is taught as something greater than Name up to Prāṇa : therefore, it must be different from Prāṇa (and the series below it). Since every one of the series is greater than the one preceding it; thus Speech is greater than Name, and so on; therefore, the True is greater than Prāṇa, and consequently Bhūman is also greater than Prāṇa, for the teaching about Prāṇa precedes the teaching about Bhūman. Moreover, the word Satya is a well-known term applied to the Supreme Brahman Viṣṇu. Such as "the True, the knowledge, the infinite is Brahman." (Taitt. Up.) "We meditate on the highest Satya."

In the phrase "Satyena Ativadati," the force of the third case in Satyena is that of Hetu that is, he declares the Highest truth, for the sake of the True, or the Supreme Self. The meditation on Prāṇa is higher than meditation on Name up to Hope, therefore, the person who thus meditates on Prāṇa is called an Ativādin, he is an Ativādin compared with those below him. But the meditation on Viṣṇu being superior even to that on Prāṇa; therefore, he who meditates on Viṣṇu is the real Ativādin. Thus it is clear that an Ativādin by Prāṇa is inferior to the Ativādin by the True. For the same reason, the pupil entreates, "Sir, may I be an Ativādin with the True": and the teacher replies, "But we must desire to know the True."

The objection raised by the Pūrvapakṣin that in the Chhândogya text there is no question and answer as to something greater than Prāṇa, and therefore, the Ativādin by the True is the same as the Ativādin by the Prāṇa, (and the instruction about the Âtman must be supposed to come to an end with the instruction about the Prāṇa) is not a proper

objection. The reason for this is, that we do not find that the Ativādin by the True is the same as the Âtivādin by the Prâṇa. It may be asked why does not the pupil ask the question whether there is any thing greater than Prâṇa. To this we reply that the reason is this : With regard to the non-sentient objects extending from name to hope—each of which surpasses the preceding one, in so far as it is more beneficial to man—the teacher does not declare that he who knows them is an Ativādin ; when, however, he comes to the individual soul, there called Prâṇa, the knowledge of whose true nature he considers highly beneficial, he expressly says that, ‘he who sees this, notes this, understands this, is an Ativādin’ (VII, 15. 4.) The pupil, therefore, imagines that the instruction about the self is now completed, and hence asks no further question. The teacher, on the other hand, holding that even that knowledge is not the highest, spontaneously continues his teaching and tells the pupil that the knowledge of the true nature of Śrī Viṣṇu, who is called the True, is the highest knowledge ; and absolutely beneficial for man ; and he only is an Ativādin, who proclaims the supremely and absolutely beneficial being, namely, Śrī Viṣṇu who is also called the True, that is the Highest Brahman. On this suggestion the pupil desirous to learn the true nature, worship, and means of worship, entreats the teacher, saying, “Sir, may I become an Ativādin by the True ?”

The opponent says, the objection has been raised that in the opening passage the word Âtman has been used, and therefore in the concluding passage also, the same Âtman, that is to say, the individual soul, the associate of Prâṇa, is meant. This objection is not valid. The word Âtman principally means the Supreme Self, and not the Jiva Âtman or the individual self.

That Âtman does not mean the individual self is proved by the subsequent passage also where it is said that from the Âtman arises the Prâṇa, etc. If Âtman meant the individual self, then the above statement would be incorrect, for Prâṇa does not arise from the individual self, but from Brahman. This being so, the subsequent statement “where one sees nothing else, hears nothing else, understands nothing else, that is the Bhûman,” becomes valid, for we understand that this applies to the Supreme. For when one perceives the Bhûman, he at that time fails to see and perceive anything else, for when one is plunged in the infinity he cannot have any consciousness of the finite. You cannot say that the ecstasy, which one feels, when one realises the Bhûman is the joy of dreamless sleep, and that where one sees nothing else, hears nothing else, understands nothing else, refers to the dreamless sleep called Suṣupti. For the consciousness of Suṣupti and the little joy that one feels in it, is infinitely inferior to the self-forgetfulness in Bhûman, and the bliss

of its presence. To say that the individual self, in the state of Suṣupti, is the Bhūman is simply ridiculous. Therefore, the Lord Viṣṇu alone is the Bhūman of the passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad under discussion.

SŪTRA I., 3 9.

धर्मोपपत्तेश्च ॥ १ । ३ । ६ ॥

धर्म Dharma, qualities, attributes. उपपत्तेः Upapatteh, because of the reasonableness, because of the suitability. च Cha, and.

9. Because the attributes ascribed to Bhūman are suitable with regard to Brahman only.—73.

COMMENTARY

The attributes which are ascribed to this Bhūman are suitable only with regard to the Supreme Brahman, Lord Viṣṇu, and are applicable to nobody else. Thus: "That which is Bhūman is verily the Immortal (VII, 24. 1)." shows that Bhūman possesses innate immortality. It has innate power of self-supporting. As says the text: "Sir, in what does the Bhūman rest?" "In its own greatness" is the reply. This Bhūman is the refuge of all, as we learn from the text: "The Self is below, above, behind, before, right and left." This Bhūman is the cause of all, for says the text: "The Prāṇa springs from the Self, Hope springs from the Self, Memory springs from the Self; so do Ether, Fire, Water, etc." Therefore, Bhūman is Brahman and nothing else.

*Adhikaraṇa. III.—The Imperishable is God.*

*Viṣaya* : We read in the Brhadâraṇyaka (III, 8. 6. 8.) :

स होवाच यदूर्ध्वं याज्ञवल्क्य दिवो यदवाक् पृथिव्या यदन्तरा धावापृथिवी इमे यद्भूतं च भवच्च भविष्यच्चेत्याचक्षते कस्मिँँस्तदोतञ्च प्रोतञ्चेति ॥ ६ ॥ स होवाच यदूर्ध्वं गार्गी दिवो यदवाक् पृथिव्या यदन्तरा धावापृथिवी इमे यद्भूतञ्च भवच्च भविष्यच्चेत्याचक्षत आकाश एव तदोतं च प्रोतं चेति कस्मिन्नु खल्वाकाश ओतश्च प्रोतश्चेति ॥ ७ ॥ स होवाचेतदैतदक्षरं गार्गी ब्राह्मणा अभिवदन्त्यस्थूलमनयवहस्वमदीर्घमलोहितमस्नेहमच्छायमतमोऽवाप्यनाकाशमसङ्गमरसमगन्धम क्षुद्रकमश्रोत्रमवागमनोऽतेजस्कमप्राणममुखमात्रमनन्तरवाह्यं न तदश्नाति किञ्चन न तदश्नाति कश्चन ॥ ८ ॥

6. She said : "O Yājñavalkya ! That which is above the heaven, and below the

earth, which is between the heaven and earth, which is in the past, present and future, in what is that woven, as warp and woof?"

7. He replied: "O Gārgi! That which is above the heaven and below the earth, which is also between the heaven and the earth, which is in the past, present and future, that is woven as warp and woof in the Ākāśa."

"In what then is the ether woven like warp and woof?"

8. Yājñavalkya replied, "O Gārgi, the Brāhmaṇas call this the Akṣara (the Imperishable). It is neither coarse nor fine, neither short nor long, neither red (like fire) nor fluid (like water); it is without shadow, without darkness, without air, without ether, without attachment, without taste, without smell, without eyes, without ears, without speech, without mind, without light (vigour), without a breath, without a mouth (or door), without measure, having no within and without, it devours nothing, and no one devours it."

*Doubt*: Here arises this doubt: What is this Akṣara or the Imperishable of this passage? Does it denote Pradhāna or matter? Or Jīva, the individual soul, or Brahman, the Supreme?

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The Akṣara here is ambiguous, and may denote any one of the above three, as it is used in that sense in Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, I, 1. 5., etc.

*Siddhānta*: To this Bādarāyaṇa replies, by the following Sūtra, declaring that the Imperishable is Brahman.

SŪTRA 1, 3. 10.

अक्षरमम्बरान्तधृतेः ॥ १ । ३ । १० ॥

अक्षरम् Akṣāram, the imperishable: the Brahman. अम्बरान्तम् Ambarānta, end of space or ether, or up to ether. धृतेः Dhṛteḥ, because of supporting.

10. The Imperishable, referred to in Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 8. 11., is the Supreme Brahman, because we find it declared in this passage that He supports even that which is the end of ether (or every thing up to ether).—74.

#### COMMENTARY

The Akṣara or the Imperishable is the Supreme Brahman, because the text declares that He supports that which lies beyond ether, namely, the unevolved matter or Avyākṛta. Since this Imperishable supports even the Ākāśa or ether, and every thing below it, He must be Brahman.

But even Pradhāna supports every thing up to ether, because it is the cause of all the modified objects in the universe, and so the *Imperishable* may be Pradhāna; or it may refer to the Jīva, which is the support of all non-intelligent objects that it experiences or enjoys. To this doubt the author answers by the next Sūtra:

SŪTRA I., 3. 11.

सा च प्रशासनात् ॥ १ । ३ । ११ ॥

सा Sā, that, namely, the quality of supporting every thing up to space or ether. च Cha, and, प्रशासनात् Praśāsanāt, because of the command.

11. This supporting must refer to Brahman, because the text says that it is through command that such supporting takes place.—75.

COMMENTARY

The supporting of every thing up to space, can only be in Brahman alone, because the text says that it is by command alone that such supporting takes place, and such Supreme command cannot belong either to Pradhāna or to Jīva. The following text shows the command :

एतस्य वा अक्षरस्य प्रशासने गार्गि सूर्याचन्द्रमसौ विधृतौ तिष्ठत एतस्य वा अक्षरस्य प्रशासने गार्गि चावावृथिव्यौ विधृते तिष्ठत एतस्य वा अक्षरस्य प्रशासने गार्गि निमेषा मुहूर्ता अहोरात्रायुर्दमासा मासा ऋतवः संवत्सरा इति विधृतास्तिष्ठन्त्येतस्य वा अक्षरस्य प्रशासने गार्गि प्राच्योऽन्या नद्यः स्यन्दन्ते श्वेतेभ्यः पर्वतेभ्यः प्रतीच्योऽन्यायां यावच्च दिशिमन्वेति एतस्य वा अक्षरस्य प्रशासने गार्गि ददतो मनुष्याः प्रशंसन्ति यजमानं देवा दर्वी पितरोऽन्वायत्ताः ॥ ६ ॥

9. "By the command of that Akṣara (the imperishable), O Gārgi, sun and moon stand apart. By the command of that Akṣara, O Gārgi, heaven and earth stand apart. By the command of that Akṣara, O Gārgi, what are called moments (Nimeṣa), hours (Muhūrta), days and nights, half months, months, seasons, years, all stand apart. By the command of that Akṣara, O Gārgi, some rivers flow to the East from white mountains, others to the West, of to any other quarter. By the command of that Akṣara, O Gārgi, men praise those who give, the gods follow the sacrificer, the father, the Darvi-offering."

Now this supporting every thing by one's mere will and command is impossible in the case of Pradhāna, which being non-intelligent cannot give any command, nor does any bound Jīva can give this command nor any Mukta Jīva also.

SŪTRA I., 3. 12.

अन्यभावव्यावृत्तेश्च ॥ १ । ३ । १२ ॥

अन्य Anya, another. भाव Bhāva, nature. व्यावृत्तेः Vyāvṛtteḥ, on account of the exclusion. च Cha, and.

12. The Imperishable is not Pradhāna nor Jīva, because in the same text we find description of attributes which would exclude another nature than Brahman.—76.

COMMENTARY

In a supplementary passage in the said Upaniṣad, we find a description of the attributes of this Akṣara, which excludes Jīva and Pradhāna, because they do not possess that nature.

तद्वा एतदक्षरं गार्ग्यदृष्टं द्रष्टृश्रु<sup>१७</sup> ओन्नमन्तं मन्त्रविज्ञातं विज्ञातु नान्यदतोऽस्ति द्रष्टु नान्यदतोऽस्ति श्रोतु नान्यदतोऽस्ति मन्तु नाऽन्यदतोऽस्ति विज्ञात्रे तस्मिन्नु खलक्षरे गार्ग्याकाश ओतश्च प्रोतश्चेति ॥ ११ ॥ (Br. Up., III, 8. 11.)

“That Imperishable, O Gārgi, is unseen, but seeing, unheard but hearing, unthought but thinking, unknown but knowing. There is nothing that sees but He, nothing that hears but He, nothing that thinks but He, nothing that knows but He. In that Imperishable, O Gārgi, the ether is woven, warp and woof.”

The Imperishable is declared here as seeing, hearing, etc., and therefore, Pradhāna, which is non-intelligent, is excluded; because the nature of Pradhāna is Jaḍam. Similarly, the declaration that unseen by all He sees everybody, shows that Jīva is not meant, for the nature of Jīva is not all-perceiving.

### *Adhikaraṇa IV.—The Puruṣa seen in the Satyaloka is Brahman.*

*Viśaya :* In the Praśna Up., V, 2, we find the following :

अथ हैनं शैव्यः सत्यकामः पप्रच्छ । स यो ह वै तद्भगवन्मनुष्येषु प्रायणान्तमोक्षारमभिध्यायीत । कतमं वाव स तेन लोकं जयतीति ॥ १ ॥

1. Next Śaibya Satyakāma asked him : “O Master ! what world does he conquer by such (meditation) who amongst men unceasingly meditates on Omkāra, up to his death.”

तस्मै स होवाच । एतद्दे सत्यकाम परञ्चापरञ्च ब्रह्म यदोक्षारस्तस्माद्विद्वानेतेनेषायतनेनेकतर-मन्वेति ॥ २ ॥

2. “O Satyakāma ! that which is denoted by Om is this Brahman, both the higher and the lower. Therefore, the knower of it, through this vehicle alone, reaches one of these two.”

सयथेऽस्मात्रमभिध्यायीत स तेनेव संवेदितगृहेमेव जगत्यामभिसम्पद्यते । तमृचो मनुष्यलोकमुपयन्ते स तत्र तपसा ब्रह्मचर्येण श्रद्धया सम्पन्नो महिमानमनुभवति ॥ ३ ॥

3. “If he meditates on one measure, then by that meditation alone, after death he is welcomed by the Supreme self, and obtains another birth on this earth. The Devas of the R̥g Veda lead him to a human body. He in that birth endowed with austerity, celibacy, and faith, realises of the greatness the fruit of these.”

अथ यदि द्विमात्रेण मनसि सम्पद्यते सोऽन्तरिक्षं यजुर्भिरुन्नीयते । स सोमलोकं स सोमलोके विभूतिं मनुभूय पुनरावर्त्तते ॥ ४ ॥

4. “Next if he meditates in his mind, with two measures, he is carried up by the Yajus Mantras to the Antarikṣa or the world of the moon. Having enjoyed the vast powers of the moon-world, he returns again.”

यः पुनरेतन्निमात्रेणैवोमित्येतेनेवाक्षरेण परं पुरुषमभिध्यायीत स तेजसि सूर्ये सम्पन्नो यथा पादोदरस्त्वचा विशिर्मुच्यत एवं ह वै स पाप्मना विनिर्मुक्तः स सामभिरुन्नीयते ब्रह्मलोकं स एतस्माज्जीवधनात्परात्परं पुरिशयं पुरुषमीक्षते तदैतौ श्लोकौ भवतः ॥ ५ ॥

5. "But, he who understands this Om to consist of three measures, should with this imperishable syllable meditate on the Supreme Puruṣa alone, for thereby he would reach the Tejas or the Sun. As a snake becomes fully liberated from its old skin, thus he verily becomes liberated from all his sins. By the Sāman verses he is carried up thence to the Satyaloka. There, from that high being, the Group Soul of all Jīvas, he gets instruction and sees the (Supreme in-dwelling) Pūruṣa. To that effect are the following two verses :

तिस्रो मात्रा मृत्युमत्यः प्रयुक्ता अन्योन्यसक्ता अनविप्रयुक्ताः । क्रियासु बाह्याभ्यन्तरमध्यमासु सम्यक् प्रयुक्तासु न कम्पने हः ॥ ६ ॥

6. "The three notes become fatal when uttered either singly or in couples, and without harmony. But when properly uttered in high or low or middle tones there is no fear to the wise."

ऋग्भिरेतं यजुर्भिरन्तरिक्षं स सामभिर्यत्तत्कवयो वेदयन्ते । तमोद्गारेणैवायननेनावेति विद्वान् यत्तच्छान्तमजरम मृतमभयं परञ्चेति ॥ ७ ॥

7. "By the Rks one gains this physical world, by the Yajus the astral world, by the Sāman that which the wise only know. The knower of Brahman by the vehicle of the word Om alone, reaches also that which is Peace, undecaying, free from fear, and the Supreme."

*Doubt* : Here arises the following doubt : Whether the object of meditation and the Person seen by one who meditates with three Mātrās is the Chaturmukha Brahmā or the Supreme Lord.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvopakṣin maintains that the Person seen is the Chaturmukha Brahmā. He argues : The worshipper of one Mātrā attains the world of men, the worshipper of two Mātrās obtains the astral plane, therefore the worshipper of three Mātrās must obtain the plane above the astral, namely, the Satyaloka. The Brahmaloka of the text must be interpreted to mean the Satyaloka, the loka of the Chaturmukha Brahmā, and it is here that the worshipper sees the lord of the Brahmaloka, namely, the Chaturmukha Brahmā. Therefore, says the Pūrvapakṣin, the Highest Person of verse 5 is the Chaturmukha Brahmā.

*Siddhānta* : To this objection, the Lord Bādarāyaṇa replies by the following aphorism :

SŪTRA I., 3. 13.

ईक्षति कर्म व्यपदेशात्सः ॥ १ । ३ । १३ ॥

ईक्षति Īkṣati, seeing. कर्म Karma, object. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, on account of being designated. सः Saḥ, he.

13. He, the Supreme Person, is meant in this passage of the Praśna Upaniṣad, V, 2., as the object of seeing, because of the express declaration.—77.

## COMMENTARY

The Person seen in Brahmaloka is not the Chaturmukha Brahmā but the Supreme Lord. Why? Vyapdeśāt—Because there is an express declaration to that effect: and the attributes of the Person seen apply to Brahman only. For in the last verse of the said Upaniṣad we read: "He arrives at this by means of the Ōmkāra; the wise arrives at that which is at rest, free from decay, from death, from fear,—the Highest." Free from decay, free from death, free from fear,—the Highest can apply only to the Supreme Brahman and not to Chaturmukha Brahmā. This being so the word Brahmaloka does not mean the Loka of Brahmā but the Loka or condition which is Brahman Himself: just as we explain the compound word Nīṣādashapati, not as the headman of the Nīṣādas but as a headman who at the same time is a Nīṣāda. In other words, it is a Karmadhāraya compound: and does not mean 'the world of Brahman,' but 'that world which is Brahman.' See the Pūrva Mimāṃsā for Nīṣāda-sthapati Nyāya.

*Adhikaraṇa V—The Dahara or the small is Brahman.*

*Viśaya*: In the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, Chap. VIII, we find the following:

अथ यदिदमस्मिन् ब्रह्मपुरे दहरं पुण्डरीकं वेश्म दहरोऽस्मिन्नन्तराकाशस्तस्मिन् यदन्तस्तदन्वेष्टव्यं तद्वाव विजिज्ञासितव्यमिति ॥ १ ॥

1. There is the city of Brahman (the body) and in it the palace, the small lotus (of the heart), and in that small ether. Now what exists within that small ether, that is to be sought for, that is to be understood.

तच्चेद्ब्रह्मपुरे यदिदमस्मिन् ब्रह्मपुरे दहरं पुण्डरीकं वेश्म दहरोऽस्मिन्नन्तराकाशः किं तदन्त विद्यते यदन्वेष्टव्यं यद्वाव विजिज्ञासितव्यमिति ॥ २ ॥

2. And if they should say to him: Now with regard to that city of Brahman, and the palace in it, i.e., the small lotus of the heart, and small ether within the heart, what is there within that deserves to be sought for, or that is to be understood?

स ब्रूयाथावात्वा अयमाकाशस्तावानेवोऽन्तर्हृदय आकाश उभे अस्मिन् धावापृथिवी अन्तरेव समाहिते उभावग्निश्च वायुश्च सूर्याचन्द्रमसायुभौ विद्युन्नाक्षराणि यन्नास्येहास्ति यच्च नास्ति सर्वं तदस्मिन् समाहितमिति ॥ ३ ॥

3. Then he should say: As large as this ether (all space) is, so large is that ether within the heart. Both heaven and earth are contained within it, both fire and air, both sun and moon, both lightning and stars; and whatever there is of him (the self) here in the world and whatever is not (i.e. whatever has been or will be), all that is contained within it,

तच्चेद्ब्रह्मपुरे यदिदं ब्रह्मपुरे सर्वं समाहितं सर्वानि च भूतानि सर्वे च कामा यदेनज्जरा-  
वाप्नोति म्रियते वा किं ततोऽतिशिष्यत इति ॥ ४ ॥

4. And if they should say to him: If everything that exists is contained in that city of Brahman, all beings and all desires (whatever can be imagined or desired) then what is left of it, when old age reaches it and scatters it, or when it falls to pieces?



स ब्रूयान्नाम्य जरयैतज्जीर्यति न वधेनास्य हन्यत एतत्सत्यं ब्रह्मपुरमस्मिन्कानाः समाहिता एष आत्मा-  
ऽपहतवापमा विजरो विष्टुत्युर्विशोको विजिवत्तोऽपिपासः सत्यकामः सत्यसङ्कल्पो यथा ह्येवेह प्रजा अन्वाविशन्ति  
यथाऽनुशासनं यं यमन्तमभिहामा भवन्ति यं जनपदं यं क्षेत्रभागं तं तमेवोपजीवन्ति ॥ ५ ॥

5. Then he should say : By the old age of the body, that (the ether or Brahman within it) does not age ; by the death of the body, that (the ether or Brahman within it) is not killed. That (the Brahman) is the true Brahma-city (not the body). In it all desires are contained. It is the Self, free from sin, from old age, from death and grief, from hunger and thirst, which desires nothing but what it ought to imagine. Now as here on earth people follow as they are commanded and depend on the object which they are attached to, be it a country or a piece of land.

तथयेह कर्मजितो लोकः क्षीयत एवमेवामुत्र पुण्यजितो क्षीयते तथ इहात्मानमनुविद्य ब्रजन्त्येताः सत्यान्  
कामाः सन्तेषां सर्वेषु लोकेष्वकामचारो भवत्यथ य इहात्मानमनुविद्य ब्रजन्त्येऽश्च सत्यान्  
कामाः सन्तेषां सर्वेषु लोकेषु कामचारो भवति ॥ ६ ॥

6. And as here on earth, whatever has been acquired by exertion, perishes, so perishes whatever is acquired for the next world by sacrifices and other good actions performed on earth. Those who depart without having discovered the Self and those true desires, for them there is no freedom in all the worlds. Those who depart from hence after having discovered the self and those true desires, for them there is freedom in all the worlds.

*Doubt* : The question here arises : What is this Dahara Ākāśa in the lotus of the heart ? Is it the material space or ether or, is it the Jīva or is it the Lord Viṣṇu ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : It is the element called ether, for the world Ākāśa has the well-known meaning of ether or space, or it may be the Jīva or the individual self, because it is spoken of here as the Lord of the city of the body and occupying a small space.

*Siddhānta* : The author replies to this objection by declaring that the Dahara Ākāśa or the "small ether" is Brahman.

SŪTRA I, 3. 14.

दहर उत्तरेभ्यः ॥ १ । ३ । १४ ॥

दहरः Daharaḥ, the small, उत्तरेभ्यः Uttarebhyah, because of the subsequent arguments.

14. The small ether in the lotus of the heart is Brahman, because the subsequent arguments establish it to be so.—78.

#### COMMENTARY

The "small ether" is Lord Viṣṇu, and nothing else. Why? Because of the subsequent arguments to be found in the supplementary passage of the text above given. If the ether within the heart did not mean Brahman, but denoted the elemental ether, then the comparison instituted in the passage "as large as that elemental ether is, so large is

this ether within the heart," would be wholly inappropriate. This is one argument. The next is: The small ether is said to be the support of the earth and heaven, which could not apply to the elemental ether. Nor would the attributes like freedom from evil, etc., be appropriate to the elemental ether or to the individual self (Jiva). In this Sruti the worshipper is taught that the city of Brahman is his body, and in a portion of this body is the heart called the lotus which is the palace of Brahman, and he is taught that in this palace, in this small lotus, there is the small ether, and then what is within that small ether that is to be sought for, that is to be understood. Therefore, it refers to the Supreme Brahman, because this small ether is described to be free from evil, free from old age, free from grief, etc. Therefore, the above passage must be explained by saying that the Supreme Brahman is to be sought in the small ether which is free from evil, etc. Therefore, the Dahara is Viṣṇu and Viṣṇu only.

SŪTRA 1, 3. 15.

गतिशब्दाभ्यां तथा दृष्टं लिंगञ्च ॥ १ । ३ । १५ ॥

गति Gatiḥ, going. शब्दाभ्यां Śabdābhyām, a word, *i.e.*, on account of the going and of the word. The going into "ether;" and the word 'Ētaḥ Brahmaloḥa' = *this* (ether) is Brahma world. तथा Tathā, thus. दृष्टम् Dr̥ṣṭam, seen. लिङ्गम् Liṅgam, mark, sign from which something may be inferred. च Cha, and.

15. Because this ether is that to which the Jīvas go in deep sleep, and because there is a word connecting this small ether with the highest Brahman. This is seen in other texts also, and there is a Liṅgam or inferential mark in this passage also, from which we infer that the small ether is Brahman.—79.

COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, chap. 8., sec. 8, we find the following further description given of this small ether:

तथापि हिरण्यनिधिं निहितमक्षेत्रज्ञा उपर्युपरि संचरन्तो न विन्देयुरवमेवेमाः सर्वाः प्रजा अहरह-  
र्गच्छन्त्य एतं ब्रह्मलोकं न विन्दन्त्यनुतेन हि प्रत्युदाः ॥

As people who do not know the country walk again and again over a hidden gold treasure, but do not know.

Thus do all these creatures day after day go into that Brahma-world, but do not know, being carried away by untruth. (Chh. Up., VIII, 3. 2).

The above passage referring to Dahara or the small ether says that it is the Gati or goal of all creatures, and it is described as *that* Brahma-loka. Therefore, these two descriptions, namely, Gati or goal and the word Ētam—that, referring to Dahara as Brahma-loka, show that the small ether

can be nothing else than the Lord Viṣṇu. Moreover there are other Upaniṣad texts which also show that in deep sleep, the soul becomes united with Brahman:

एवमेव खलु सोम्येमाः सर्वाः प्रजाः मति संपद्य न विदुः सति सम्पद्यामह इति ॥ २ ॥ एवमेव खलु सोम्येमाः सर्वाः प्रजाः सत आगम्य न विदुः सत आगच्छामह इति ॥

All these creatures having become united with the True do not know that they are united with the True. Having come back from the True, they know not that they have come back from the True. (Chh. Up., VI, 9, 2, 10, 2).

The above text shows that in other parts of this Upaniṣad the same idea, that Brahman is the goal, is seen. And the word Brahmo-loka applied to the small ether is a sign that it is the Lord Viṣṇu that is meant here. This Brahmaloка cannot mean "the world of Brahmā," called also the Satyaloka, because it is not possible for Jīvas to go daily in their sleep to Satyaloka, while it is possible for them to enter into Brahman in their sleep, every day.

SŪTRA 1, 3. 16.

धृतेश्च महिम्नोऽप्यास्मिन्नुपलब्धेः ॥ १ । ३ । १६ ॥

धृतेः Dhṛteḥ, on account of supporting. च Cha, and. महिम्नः Mahimnaḥ, greatness. अस्या Asya, of his, (that is, of Brahman). अस्मिन् Asmin, in this ; that is, in this small ether. उपलब्धेः Upalabdheḥ, on account of being observed or found or stated.

16. Because it is further stated that this small ether is the support of the two worlds, a fact which is the peculiar greatness of Brahman alone, therefore this Dahara must be Brahman.—80.

#### COMMENTARY

In continuation of the passage "the small lotus and in it that small ether" (Chh. Up., VIII, 1. 1), the Upaniṣad goes on to compare this small ether with the infinite space and further teaches that all beings get harmonised when they enter into this small ether, and it further employs the term Ātman or Self with regard to it, and lastly it teaches, that it is free from all sins, etc. In continuation of this, the Upaniṣad in VII, 14. 1., declares, "It is a bridge, a liminary support, that these worlds may not be confounded." The whole Chap. VIII, in fact, is one Prakaraṇa and deals with one topic. Therefore, when it uses the word 'Vidhṛtiḥ' or 'liminary support' it refers to this Dahara or small ether. Now because this majesty or greatness of supporting the worlds, is ascribed to this Dahara, therefore, Dahara must refer to Viṣṇu; for who else has this glory of being the

support of all worlds ? In fact, Viṣṇu is expressly stated to be the support of all worlds in other places also, such as Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 4. 22.

अथ य आत्मा स सेतुर्विशृतिरषां लोभानामसम्भेदाय ।

He is the Lord of all, the king of all things, the protector of all things. He is a bank and a boundary, so that these worlds may not be confounded.

This also shows that to be a boundary and a support of the worlds is the distinctive attribute of Lord Viṣṇu only.

SŪTRA I., 3. 17.

प्रसिद्धेश्च ॥ १ । ३ । १७ ॥

प्रसिद्धेः Prasiddheḥ, because of the settled (meaning). च Cha, and.

17. And because it is a settled convention to describe Brahman as ether, therefore, the small ether of Dahara must mean Brahman.—81.

COMMENTARY

The word Ākāśa is known to have, among other meanings, that of Brahman, also ; as we find in the Taitt. Up., II, 7. "For who could breathe, who could breathe forth, if that ether (Ākāśa) were not bliss ?"

*Doubt* : An objector says : This Dahara or small ether may refer to the Jīva, because immediately after the word Dahara, we find the description of the Jīva given in the above passage. It says :

अथ ए एष सम्प्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसम्पद्य स्वेन रूपेणामिनिष्पद्यत एष आत्मेति होवाचेतदमृतमभयमेतद्ब्रह्मेति तस्य इ वा एतस्य ब्रह्मणो नाम सत्यमिति ॥

"Thus does that released soul (Samprasāda), having risen from this body and approached the highest light, appears in its own form. That is Self," he said. "That is the immortal, the fearless, this is Brahman." (Chh. Up., VIII, 3, 4),

This objection is answered by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA I., 3. 18.

इतर परामर्शात् स इति चेत्, न, असम्भवात् ॥ १ । ३ । १८ ॥

इतर Itara, the other one, that is the Jīva. परामर्शात् Parāmarsāt, on account of reference. सः Sah, he ; that is, the Jīva. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. असम्भवात् Asambhavât, on account of impossibility.

18. If it be objected, that there is a reference to the *other*, namely, the Jīva, in the Dahara passage ; and therefore, it means Jīva ; we say no, because it is impossible that the epithets applied to Dahara should apply to the Jīva.—82.

## COMMENTARY

Though there is a reference to the Jīva in the middle of that passage, yet looking to the beginning and the end, and all other epithets applied to Dahara, we cannot say that it refers to Jīva. The eight epithets applied to Dahara in Chhândogya Upaniṣad VIII, 7. 3., cannot apply to the Jīva, namely, the epithets like free from sin, free from decay, etc.

Let it be so. The attributes free from sin, free from decay, free from death, etc., mentioned in VII, 7. 1, can easily be applied to the Jīva, because the Chap. VIII, shows that the whole teaching of Prajâpati refers to the Jīva only. Indra had heard that Prajâpati had declared that there is a self free from sin, old age, etc., and so he goes to Prajâpati to enquire about this Self. Therefore, these eight attributes of the Âtman given in VIII, 7. 1, may apply to the Jīva, and consequently the Dahara mentioned before, may be the Jīva. This doubt is removed by the author in the following Sûtra :

SŪTRA I., 3. 19.

उत्तराच्चैदाविर्भावस्वरूपस्तु ॥ १ । ३ । १९ ॥

उत्तरात् Uttarât, because of a subsequent passage. चैव Chet, if. आविर्भावः Āvirbhāva, manifestation. स्वरूपः Svarûpaḥ, the true nature : essential form. तु Tu, but.

19. If it be objected that from a subsequent passage, the Jīva is meant, we reply, no ; because that passage only declares the manifestation of the true nature of the Jīva, by means of meditation, etc.—83.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu,' 'but,' answers the objection raised in the first half of the Sûtra. The word 'Na' of the last Sûtra is understood here also. In the speech of Prajâpati reference is made to the Jīva, and it is taught that when the Jīva meditates upon Brahman, then there appear in him these eight attributes, namely, freedom from sin, death, etc. These qualities are essentially the qualities of Brahman, and they only appear or manifest in the Jīva, when it meditates on Brahman. Therefore, the Jīva is not referred to here by the word Dahara, for the essential nature of Brahman is to possess these eight qualities eternally, while in the case of the Jīva these qualities are to be acquired by him by Sâdhana or practice. In the case of Dahara these qualities are never hidden, while in the case of the Jīva these qualities are at first hidden by untruth, while later on they manifest in him. Therefore, we find in the Upaniṣad, the statement

that when it has freed itself from the body and has approached the Highest Light, then it appears in its own form. Thus there is a great difference, in the possession of these eight attributes, by the Paramâtman, from all eternity; and their temporary manifestation in the Jīva. The above passage also shows, that the Jīva gets these attributes only then, when it has reached the Highest Person called the Uttama Puruṣa, the Highest Light, Parama Jyotiḥ. Moreover, though these eight qualities manifest in the Jīva, through Sādhana, yet the Jīva can never become the bridge of the two worlds, and the support of the universe, for these attributes are the specific and distinct qualities of the Supreme Lord. Therefore, the Dahara must refer to Brahman.

But if this is so, why a reference has at all been made to Jīva in this section treating of Dahara, in the passage: "Now that released soul, which having risen from this body, etc."—VIII., 3. 4. This question is answered by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA I., 3. 20.

अन्यार्थश्च परामर्शः ॥ १ । ३ । २० ॥

अन्यार्थः Anyārthaḥ, a different meaning. च Cha, and. परामर्शः Parā-marśaḥ, reference.

20. The reference to the Jīva made in this section treating of the small ether, has a different object.—84.

COMMENTARY

The object with which this reference to the individual soul is made in this section, is in order to teach the knowledge of the Supreme Self. It shows that when the Jīva obtains such knowledge, it also possesses these eight-fold qualities belonging to the Supreme Person.

Another objection is raised. The text describes this Dahara as occupying a very small space in the heart, and because Dahara is so small and Jīva is also small, therefore, Dahara must be Jīva mentioned subsequently. This objection is answered by the following Sūtra:

SŪTRA I., 3. 21.

अल्पश्रुतेरिति चेत् तदुक्तम् ॥ १ । ३ । २१ ॥

अल्प Alpa, small. श्रुतेः Sruteḥ, because of the Sruti or scriptural declaration. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. तद् Tad, that. उक्तम् Uktam, has been said.

21. If it be said that the scripture describes the Dahara to be very small, therefore, it must mean the Jīva, and not Brahman; we say no, for the reasons already given.—85.

## COMMENTARY

The answer to the objection raised in this Sūtra has already been anticipated, in the preceding aphorism, I., 2. 7, where it is said that Brahman, though all-pervading, is imagined to be of the size of a span, in order to meditate upon Him as having that much size. It is merely to help memory, that this convention is made, but the Brahman is of the size of the heart. In fact, the text of the Upaniṣad shows that He is Infinite and Inconceivable.

The next Sūtra gives another reason for this conclusion.

SŪTRA I., 3. 22.

अनुकृतेस्तस्य च ॥ १ । ३ । २२ ॥

अनुकृतेः Anukṛteḥ, because of imitation. Tasya, his. च Cha, and.

22. The Jīva cannot be Brahman or the small ether, because the text says that the Jīva imitates Brahman.—86.

## COMMENTARY

The text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad VIII., 7. 3., etc., shows that the eight-fold attributes therein mentioned, which are eternally present in the Dahara, is acquired by the Jīva through Sâdhanâ, in the state of Mukti. This Jīva is described in that section as covered by falsehood in its prior state, and it is only when by meditation on Brahman, this covering of ignorance is torn asunder, then are manifested the eight-fold attributes of being free from sin, free from decay, etc., and it is in this state of Mukti that the Jīva, by getting the light of Parabrahman, becomes like Brahman. The Jīva, therefore, merely imitates Dahara, and is called Dahara in a secondary sense. And it is a well-known thing that the imitation and the original are not the same. As we say in the sentence 'Hanumân imitates the wind in swiftness,' which means that Hanumân is not wind but like it. Similarly, we find in another passage that the Jīva, in the state of Mukti, becomes similar to or imitates Brahman :

यदा पश्यः पश्यते रुक्मवर्णे कर्तारमीशं पुरुषं ब्रह्मयोनिम् । तदा विद्वान् पुण्यपापे विभूय निरञ्जनः परमं साम्यमुपैति ।

When the seer (*i. e.*, the individual soul) sees the brilliant maker, the Lord, the Person, in whom Brahmâ has his source; then becoming wise and shaking off good and evil, he reaches the highest similarity, free from passions. (Mund. Up., III, I. 3.)

SŪTRA I., 3. 23.

अपि स्मर्यते ॥ १ । ३ । २३ ॥

अपि Api, also. स्मर्यते Smaryate, it is traditioned.

23. The Smṛiti also declares this assimilation of the Jīva with Brahman, in the state of Mukti, in certain respects only.—87.

## COMMENTARY

Thus in the Gītā also we find :

इदं ज्ञानमुपाश्रित्य मम साधर्म्यमागताः ।

सर्वेऽपि नोपजायन्ते प्रलये न व्यथन्ति च ॥

Having taken refuge in this Wisdom and being assimilated to My own nature, they are not re-born, even in the emanation of a universe, nor are disquieted in the dissolution. (XIV, 2).

Thus this Smṛti or Gītā also declares that the Muktas become assimilated to the nature of Brahman and manifest some of the attributes. Therefore Dahara is the Lord Hari alone, and not any Jīva.

*Adhikaraṇa VI.—He who is measured by a thumb is Brahman.*

*Viśaya :* In the Katha Upaniṣad, II, 4, 12, we read :

अङ्गुष्ठमात्रः पुरुषो मध्य आत्मनि तिष्ठति । ईशानो भूतभव्यस्य न ततो विजुगुप्सते । एतदे तत् ॥ १२ ॥ अङ्गुष्ठमात्रः पुरुषो ज्योतिरिवाधूमकः । ईशानो भूतभव्यस्य स एवाय स उ श्वः । एतदे तत् ॥ १३ ॥

The person (Puruṣa), of the size of a thumb, 'stands in the middle of the Self (body) as Lord of the past and the future, and henceforward fears no more. This is that.

That person, of the size of a thumb, is like a light without smoke, Lord of the past and the future, he is the same to-day and to-morrow. This is that.

*Doubt :* Here arises the doubt : Is the person of the size of a thumb, the Jīva or the Lord Viṣṇu ?

*Pûrvapakṣa :* The Pûrvapakṣin maintains that the person of the size of a thumb is Jīva, because in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, V, verses 8 and 7, the being of the size of a thumb is expressly stated to be the Jīva.

अङ्गुष्ठमात्रो रवितुल्यरूपः संकल्पाहंकारसमन्वितो यः । बुद्धेर्गुणेनात्मगुणेन चैव आराग्रमात्रोऽप्यपरोऽपि दृष्टः ॥ ८ ॥

8. That lower one also, not larger than a thumb, but brilliant like the sun, who is endowed with personality and thoughts, with the quality of mind and the quality of body, is seen small even like the point of a goad.

गुणान्वयो यः फलकर्मकर्ता कृतस्य तस्यैव स चोपभोक्ता । स विश्वरूपस्त्रिगुणास्त्रिवर्मा प्राणाधिपः सञ्चरति स्वकर्मभिः ॥ ७ ॥

7. But he who is endowed with qualities, and performs works that are to bear fruit, and enjoys the reward of whatever he has done, migrates through his own works, the lord of life, assuming all forms led by the three Guṇas, and following the three paths.

*Siddhānta :* This objection the author answers by the Sūtra, next given :

SŪTRA I., 3. 24.

शब्दादेव प्रमितः ॥ १ । ३ । २४ ॥

शब्दाद् Śabdāt, because of the word. एव Eva, even, only. प्रमितः Pramitah, the measured, the limited ; measured by the thumb.



24. The limited person of the size of a thumb, described in the Katha Upaniṣad is Brahman, because of the word or the epithet applied to It in that very text.—88.

## COMMENTARY

The person of the size of a thumb is the Lord Viṣṇu alone. Why ? Because there is an express term or word, in that very passage, which can apply to Viṣṇu alone. That passage describes this person as Lord of the past and the future. Now this epithet: "The Lord of the past and the future"—cannot be applied to Jīva at all, whose past and the future is bound by his Karmas, and who is not free to possess so much glory.

But how the All-pervading Lord can be said to be limited by the measure of a thumb ? This point is answered by the next Sūtra.

## SŪTRA 1., 3. 25.

हृदयेन तु मनुष्याधिकारत्वात् ॥ १ । ३ । २५ ॥

हृदि Hr̥di, in the heart, with reference to the heart. अपेक्षया Apekṣayā, by reference to. तु Tu, but. मनुष्य Manuṣya, men, human beings. अधिकारत्वात् Adhikāratvāt, because of the qualified.

25. But the size of a thumb is with reference to the human heart, because men are qualified to meditate on Brahman in their heart, and imagine him as limited to that size.—89.

## COMMENTARY

The force of the word "Tu" is to declare limitation, because the Lord is meditated upon in the heart, which in every human being is of the size of his fist or thumb, therefore, He is spoken of as having the measure of a thumb. This has already been described before, under Sūtra I, 2. 7, where we have said that this attributing of a size to Brahman, is based on a mere metaphor, taken from the size of the heart ; and for the sake of devout meditation ; and because His ineffable glory manifests in the heart of His devotees in that form.

But the hearts differ according to the animals, some have larger hearts, some have smaller ; some are more than a thumb, some are less than a thumb. How can it then be said that the person of the size of a thumb is so spoken of with reference to the heart ? This objection is met in the Sūtra by using the word "human." It is the human heart that is the measure here taken, (and not the heart of snakes, horses and donkeys). For though the scriptures are employed in general terms, yet they apply only to human beings, for human beings alone are Adhikāris and not lower

animals. Human beings alone have the faculty of devout meditation ; therefore, the standard of the thumb is taken from the human heart, and so there is no conflict.

Though the hearts of elephants and horses, etc., may be said to be of the size of a thumb, yet there is no conflict here also, for these creatures are incapable of devout meditation. Though the Jīva also is described to have the measure of a thumb, it is so done, because it dwells in the heart, and so metaphorically is said to be of the size of the heart. As a matter of fact, it is atomic in size, for the scripture says that its size is very small.

वालाग्रशतभागस्य शतधा कल्पितस्य च । भागो जीवः स विज्ञेयः स चानन्त्याय कल्प्यते ॥

That living soul (Jīva) is to be known as part of the hundredth part of the point of a hair, divided a hundred times, and yet it is to be infinite. (Śvet. Up., V, 9).

Therefore, the person of the size of a thumb is the Lord Viṣṇu alone.

### *Adikarana VII.—Devas entitled to meditate on Brahman.*

It has been mentioned in the last Sūtra, that the scriptural texts teaching meditation on Brahman are the concern of men, because by so teaching it can be proved that the Highest Brahman has the size of a thumb. The Sāstra, therefore, establishes that men alone are entitled to meditate on Brahman. But this is a wrong view. All those men who are on the path of gradual release (Krama Mukti) pass through the Deva evolution, and become Devas. If meditation on Brahman is enjoined only for men, then those men who have become Devas, are not entitled to meditate on Him. And thus the theory of gradual release would become meaningless, for there would be no release for Devas.

But Devas are entitled to meditate on Brahman as we find from the following text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (I., 4. 10).

तद् यो यो देवानां प्रत्युद्ध्यत स एव तदभवत्, तथर्षीणां तथा मनुष्याणाम् ॥

Whoever of the Devas, knowing Brahman, meditated on Him he verily obtained Him, so also among the Rṣis, so also among the men.

Similarly, the following passage also shows that the Devas worship Brahman :

तद् देवा ज्योतिषां ज्योतिरायुर्होपासतेऽमृतम् ॥

The Devas meditate on that Brahman who is the light of lights, who is the giver of life, and who is immortal.

*Doubt :* Here arises the following doubt. Admitting that meditation on Brahman is taught regarding the Devas in the same way as taught with regard to men, the question remains, is it possible with regard to the Devas, or is it not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says such meditation is impossible with regard to the Devas, because they have got no sense organs and consequently they have got no capability to meditate. The Devas like Indra and the rest, are verily thought-forms, created by the chanting of Mantras, they have no physical sense organs. Consequently, on account of this absence alone, they have not the capability of meditation or the desire for the possession of such attributes as Vairāgya or dispassion, Viveka or discrimination, etc. Hence the Devas are not capable of meditation on Brahman.

*Siddhanta* : To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 3. 26.

तदुपर्यपि बादरायणः सम्भवात् ॥ १ । ३ । २६ ॥

तद् Tad, that; namely, meditation on Brahman. उपरि Upari, above, namely, with regard to the beings who are above men, namely Devas. अपि Api, also बादरायणः Bādarāyaṇa, the sage Bādarāya is of opinion. सम्भवात् Sambhabāt, because of the possibility.

26. The meditation on Brahman, according to the opinion of Bādarāyaṇa, must be admitted with regard to those also, who are above men, in the scale of evolution; because of its possibility with regard to them also (for they also have an organised body.)—90.

#### COMMENTARY

This meditation on Brahman must be admitted with regard to these, who are higher in scale of evolution to mankind, namely, with regard to Devas also. This is the opinion of Lord Bādarāyaṇa. Why has he this opinion? Because the Upaniṣads, the Mantra portion of the Vedas, the descriptive portions of the Vedas, the sacred scriptures known as Itihāsa and Purāṇa, all unanimously describe that the Devas have bodies as believed also by mankind. Since they have bodies, it is possible for them to meditate on Brahman; because the objection of the Pūrvapakṣin was that Devas have no body, and therefore they could not meditate.

*Note* : It is only the Pūrvā Mīmāṃsākas who hold the theory that the Vedic Devatās are not embodied beings, but only creation of the Ṛṣis when they chant the Vedic Mantras. According to this theory, the vibrations produced by the proper singing of the Mantras create these Deva-forms, through which theurgic effects are produced. But this is only a partial truth. The artificial elementals, as these Mantra-Ātmic Devatas are, constitute only a portion of the inhabitants of the Devaloka. There are real Devas also, real Jīvas, passing through Deva evolution, who are not mere creations of Mantras.

Thus the Devas also have the capability of meditating on Brahman, because they possess body and senses made of celestial matter, and they also are capable of feeling disgust and dispassion (Vairāgya) with their own state, however high it may appear to us in lordliness and glory. For compared with the glory of God, the Devas realise keenly the sinfulness, the littleness, the insignificance, and the transitory nature of their own lordliness and glory, and consequently they also are capable of feeling Vairāgya. There is the authority of the Viṣṇu Purāṇa on this subject :

न केवलं द्विजश्रेष्ठ नरके दुःखपडतिः । स्वर्गेऽपि यातभीतस्य क्षयिष्णोर्नास्ति निर्वृतिः ॥

Oh best of the twice-born, not only is sorrow to be found in hell, but it exists in Svarga also, for the inhabitant of heaven is afraid of the transitoriness of heavenly life, so the dweller of heaven also is not free from grief.

Therefore, Devas also desire to acquire the eternal bliss which the knowledge of Brahman gives. For this Brāhmic bliss is free from all taint of evil, and it is an immeasurable, eternal state of joy. For thus is this bliss described in the sacred scriptures. Moreover, we find in the Upaniṣads descriptions of how both the Devas and men went to Prajāpati to learn the Brahama Vidyā, as the following extract from the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad will show :

त्रयाः प्राजापत्याः प्रजापतौ पितरि ब्रह्मचर्यमूषुर्देवा मनुष्या असुराः ॥

The children of Prajāpati are of three sorts, namely, the Devas, the men and the Asuras : They approached their father Prajāpati and dwelt with him as students of Brahma Vidyā. (Br. Up., V, 2.1)

Similarly, in the Chhândagya Upaniṣad, we find that Indra dwelt as a Brahmachārin in the house of Prajāpati for more than one hundred years :

एतद् तद्यदादुरेकशतं इ वै वर्षाणि मघवान् प्रजापतौ ब्रह्मचर्यमुवास ॥

This made in all one hundred and one years, and therefore, it is said that Indra Maghavat lived one hundred and one years as a pupil with Prajāpati. (Ch. Up., VIII, 11. 3.).

Owing to their having bodies, the Devas, therefore, are also qualified for meditation on Brahman.

An objector says : If we admit that Devas have bodies, then there would arise difficulties with regard to sacrifices, for it is impossible for one limited corporeal entity to be simultaneously present at many places of sacrifices, when he is invoked simultaneously by all his worshippers. Therefore, sacrifices become useless, for an embodied Deva, like Indra, cannot be present simultaneously in all the places of worship, where he is invoked. To this objection the author gives the following answer :

SŪTRA I., 3. 27.

विरोधः कमेणीति चेन्, नानेकप्रतिपत्तेर्दर्शनात् ॥ १ । ३ । २७ ॥

विरोधः Virodhaḥ, contradiction. कर्मणि Karmani, with regard to work, with regard to sacrifices. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अनेकः Aneka, many (bodies). प्रतिस्तेः Pratipatteḥ, because of the assumption. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of the observation or seeing.

27. If it be objected that a Deva cannot be an embodied being, for then his presence at many sacrifices simultaneously would be impossible : we reply, no ; because it is observed (that many bodies can be assumed by spiritual entities, for simultaneous appearance in different places).—91.

## COMMENTARY

Even if we admit that Devas have a body, yet this would not contradict the performance of sacrifices ; because great masters of occult forces have the power of creating many bodies, and simultaneously appearing at distant places. Such were the Yogis Saubhari, etc.

Says an objector : “Admitting that for the reason given in this Sūtra, there may arise no difficulty as regards sacrifices, for those who hold the view that Devatās have got bodies, but then arises another difficulty. It relates to the words of which the Veda consists. If words like Indra, etc., refer to embodied beings, then when these beings are not in existence then those words denote no object. Thus before the creation of Indra or after the destruction of Indra, there is a period when no Indra exists. But the Vedas are eternal, and the word Indra occurs in it. To what does then this word refer, during these periods, when there is no Indra ? Is it not like the word “the son of a barren woman ?” If so, as those words have no meaning, so the Vedas also become meaningless. Moreover, in the Pūrva Mimāṃsā it was established that words, objects corresponding to those words, and the power of the words to denote those objects, are all eternal, for a Mimāṃsā Sūtra says :

श्रौत्वस्तिकस्तु शब्देनार्थस्य सम्बन्धः ॥

The relation between the word and its object, is natural and eternal. So if the words like Indra, etc., denoted organised beings, they would make the Vedas non-eternal.

*Siddhānta* : To this objection, the author gives the following reply :

SŪTRA I., 3. 28.

शब्द इति चेन्नातः प्रभवात्, प्रत्यक्षानुमानाभ्याम् ॥ १ । ३ । २८ ॥

शब्दः Śabdaḥ, the word of the Vedas (would become non-eternal) or there would arise contradiction with regard to the eternity of the word. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अतः Ataḥ, because, from this, from the word being

eternal. प्रभवत् Prabhavât, because of the origination. प्रत्यक्षः Pratyakṣa, perception, direct statement, namely, the Śruti or revelation. अनुमानाभ्याम् Anumānābhyām, from inference, from Smṛti, namely, the tradition.

28. If it be objected, that this view would contradict the eternity of the word ; we reply, no ; because the creation of the universe is from the word which is eternal. And the Śruti and Smṛti (the direct statement and inference) also establish the same.—92.

## COMMENTARY

There arises no contradiction of the kind mentioned above, even with regard to the eternity of the Vedic words. Why ? Because from this eternal word arises the creation. The creation of every embodied being, whether Indra or a cow, proceeds from the remembrance of their form and their characteristics, by Brahmā when he utters those words, which by association always suggest the particular form and the characteristics possessed by that form.

*Note :* “When, therefore a special individual of the class called Indra has perished, the creator, apprehending from the Vedic word ‘Indra,’ which is present to his mind, the class characteristics of the beings denoted by that word, creates another Indra, possessing those very same characteristics ; just as the potter fashions a new jar, on the basis of the word ‘Jar’ which is stirring in his mind. But how is this known ? ‘Through perception and inference,’ i.e., through scripture and Smṛti.” (Rāmānuja).

Every Vedic word always expresses a particular type form, and does not express any individual (they are all common terms and not Proper Nouns). By remembering the particular type forms, denoted by those words, Brahmā creates the universe. For forms (Ākṛti) are eternal, and exist in the Archetypal plane, from eternity, before they become concrete in any individual form. The Vedas are like the book of Viśvakarman, in which directions are given as to painting of certain forms or pictures of Devas. Thus for example, it says, “Yama should be pictured as having a sceptre in his hand, Varuṇa as having a noose in his hand” The Vedic words denoting Devas, like Indra, etc., do not express any particular individual of that name, but are a class name like the word cow, etc., and are symbols of particular forms, naturally belonging to a particular class of beings. They do not denote merely individuals, like the word Chaitra, etc.

Therefore, because the Vedic words denote eternal forms, existing in the mind of the Creator, they are not unauthoritative ; and this view of ours, that the Devas possess body, does not contradict the Mīmāṃsā view that the word is eternal. How do you know this ? To this the Sūtra answers by saying, Pratyakṣānumānābhyām, because the Śruti and the Smṛti declare it so.

As an example of Sruti, we have the following :

Thus Prajāpati created Devas, etc., by pondering over the various words of Mantra, Sukta 62 of the ninth Maṇḍala of the R̥g Veda.

Note : We give the Mantra with its word meaning below :

एते असृग्रमिन्दवस्तिरः पवित्रमाशवः । विश्वान्यभिसौमगा ॥

एते Ete, these. असृग्रम् Asrgram, creates. इन्दवः Indavaḥ, drops ; Soma-drops. तिरः Tiraḥ, downward. पवित्रम् Pavitram, pure, purifying, a sieve. आशवः Āśavaḥ, quick, rapid : another reading is आसुवः ॥ विश्वानि Viśvāni, all. अभि Abhi, towards. सौमगा Saubhagā, prosperities.

These rapid Soma-drops have been poured through the purifying sieve. To bring all felicities.

In the Panchaviṁśati Brāhmaṇa (VI, 9. 13. 27. and 12. 1. 3), we find how this Mantra was utilised by Brahmā in making his creation. We read there :

“एते” इति ह वै प्रजापतिर्देवानसृजत् ; “असृग्रम्” इति मनुष्यान् ; “इन्दवः” इति पितॄन् ; “तिरः पवित्रम्” इति ग्रहान् ; “आसुवः” इति स्तोत्रं ; “विश्वानि” इति मन्त्रम् ; “अभिसौमगाः” इति अग्न्याः प्रजा इति ॥

Prajāpati created the Devas, by reflecting on the word “Ete.” He created the men, by the word “Asrgram ;” the Pitaras by the word “Indavaḥ ;” the planets by the word “Tiras Pavitram ;” the songs, by the word “Asuva ;” the Mantras, by the word “Viśvāni” ; and he created all other creatures by the word “Abhisaubhagā.”

Note : The word Etad “this” reminds Brahmā of the Devas presiding over the senses ; the word Asrgra meaning blood, reminds him of those creatures in which blood is the chief life-element, namely, men ; the word Indu, denoting moon, reminds him of the fathers, who live in the moon ; the word Tiras Pavitram meaning “holding of the pure ambrosia” reminds him of the planets where the Soma-fluid exists, the word “Āsuva,” “flowing” recalls the sweet flow of music : the word “Viśva” recalls the hymns sacred to the Viśve-devas ; the word “Abhisubhagā,” meaning “great prosperity,” recalls all creatures.

The Smṛtis like the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, etc., also show the same. As the following :

नामरूपञ्च भूतानां कृत्यानां च प्रपञ्चनम् ।

वेदशब्देभ्य एवादौ पृथक् संस्थाश्च निर्ममे ॥

In the beginning Brahmā created through the words of the Vedas alone, names and forms of all creatures. the manifold rituals of all sacrifices and their different status.”

SŪTRA I, 3. 29.

अत एव च नित्यत्वम् ॥ १ । ३ । २९ ॥

अतएव Ataeva, therefore, for this reason alone. च Cha, and. नित्यत्वम् Nityatvam, the eternity of the Veda.

29. And for this very reason, the eternity of the Veda is proved.—93.

## COMMENTARY

Thus the eternity of the Vedas is established, because, its words denote eternal types, (and not individuals), and because these words remind the creator of the types that he should create. The names like Kāṭhaka, etc., do not mean that the Ṛṣi called Kāṭha was the author of the hymn, but that they were merely the utterers of those hymns, which exist from eternity.

*Note :* We find in the Vedas passages like the following :

"Reverence to the Ṛṣis who are the *makers* of Mantras." It does not mean that any Ṛṣi really made the Mantras. Texts like these suggest to the mind of Brahmā what should be the characteristics and powers of those Ṛṣis who would make the different sections, hymns, and Mantras, and then Brahmā creates them endowed with those characteristics and powers, and appoints them to remember the very same sections, hymns, etc. The Ṛṣis being thus gifted by Prajāpati with the requisite powers undergo suitable preparatory austerities and finally see the mantras and so on, proclaimed by the Kāṭhas and other Ṛṣis of former ages of the world, perfect in all their sounds and accents, without having learnt them from the recitation of a teacher.

A further objection is raised. Let it be admitted that after each minor Pralaya or shorter dissolution (Naimittika) the Lord Brahmā may create the bodies of Devas, etc., by remembering the words of the Vedas and the types mentioned therein, but in the case of the major Pralaya, called the great Latency (Prākṛtika) when Brahmā himself vanishes, along with all worlds, how can then he create a new world on the basis of the Vedas, when the Vedas themselves vanish ; and how can we speak of the eternity of the Veda ? To this objection the author gives the following reply :

SŪTRA I., 3. 30.

समाननामरूपत्वाच्च आवृत्तावप्यविरोधो दर्शनात् स्मृतेश्च ॥ १ । ३ । ३० ॥

समान Samāna, same, equality. नाम Nāma, name. रूपत्वात् Rūpatvāt, on account of form, च Cha, and. आवृत्तौ Āvṛttau, in repetition, when after a Mahāpralaya or Great Latency there is a first creation of the world. अपि Api, also. अविरोधः Avirodhaḥ, want of contradiction. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of seeing, because of the Sruti. स्मृतेः Smṛteḥ, from the Smṛti. च Cha, and.

30. Even in the case of first creation (after a Great Latency), there is no contradiction (with regard to the



eternity of the words of the Veda), because the names and forms remain the same. As appears from Śruti and Smṛti.—94.

## COMMENTARY

The word Cha in the Sūtra is used to remove the doubt raised. The word Âṛtti means renovation, primal creation after the Great Latency. Even after a Great Pralaya, there is no contradiction with regard to the eternity of Vedic words, because the new creation proceeds on the sameness of names and forms, etc., as in the preceding creation. In a Mahāpralaya or Great Latency, the Vedas and the types denoted by the words of the Vedas all of which are eternal objects, merge into the Lord Hari and become one in Him. This merging is in that aspect of Hari, which is called His Sakti or energy. They remain in Him in a state of Latency. When the Lord desires to create, they come out from Him again, and become manifest. The creation of individuals is always preceded by a reflection on the words of the Vedas and types denoted by them, whether such reflection is by the Lord Hari Himself, or by the four-faced Brahmā.

*Note :* After a great Latency, Hari creates the Vedas, in exactly the same order and arrangements as they had had before, and reflecting on its words and types, He emits the entire world, just as it had been before, from the element called Mahat down to the Brahmāṇḍa and Brahmā. He then imparts the Vedas to Brahmā and entrusts him with the task of creating lower beings. The Lord Hari at the same time pervades the world so created, as its Antaryāmin or Inner Ruler.

A subsequent creation is similar to the past creation : just as a potter, who makes a pot, by remembering the word "pot" and the form which the word calls up in his mind, though there may be no actual pot as a mould before him. As is the case in Minor Latency, the same is the rule in the case of Great Latency. The difference is this, that after a Great Latency, the Lord Himself creates all elements from Mahat downwards up to Brahmāṇḍa, and emitting Brahmā from His body. He teaches him the Vedas and entrusts him with the task of further creation. In the case of Minor Pralaya, Brahmā does not cease to exist, nor do the elements; and consequently Brahmā himself creates the universe after every Minor Pralaya.

Whence is all this known ? The Sūtra replies by saying Darśanāt Smṛtes cha, from the Śruti and the Smṛti. The Śruti passages are like the following :

आत्मा वा इदमेक एवाग्र आसीत्, स ऐक्यं लोकानुसृजाः ॥

Ātman was alone in the beginning. He willed, may I create the worlds.

यो ब्रह्माणं विदधाति पूर्वं यो वै वेदांश्च प्रदिशोति तस्मै ।

He who first creates Brahmā and delivers the Vedas to Him (Svet. Up., VI, 18).

सूर्याचन्द्रमसौ धाता यथा पूर्वमकल्पयत् ।

The Creator fashioned the new universe and created the sun and moon just as they were in the beginning. (R̥g Veda, end.)

The Smṛti passages are the following :

न्यग्रोधः सुमहानल्पे यथा बीजे व्यवस्थितः । संयमे विश्वमखिलं बीजभूते तथा त्वयि ॥

As a mighty banyan tree lies concealed in the small seed, similarly in thee, O Lord ! as the Great Seed, lies concealed the whole universe, when thou drawest it in, at the time of the Great Latency.—(Viṣṇu Purāṇa).

So also in the Varāha Purāṇa :

नारायणः परो देवस्तस्माज् जातश्चतुर्मुखः ॥

The Highest God is Nārāyaṇa, from Him was born the four-faced One.

So also in the Bhāgavata :

तेने ब्रह्म हृदा य आदिकवये ॥

He who mentally imparts the Vedas to the First Sage, Brahmā.

To sum up the whole. When the time of the Great Latency comes to close (and the hour strikes for a new creation), then the Lord God of All remembers the constitution of the world immediately preceding the Pralaya, and formulates this desire: "Let me become manifold." He separates into its different parts the whole body of spirit-and-matter which had merged in Him. Thus the enjoying souls and the objects of enjoyment—the spirit and matter—come out from him as separate entities now. After this, the Lord creates the entire world just as it had been before, from the great principle called Mahat down to the cosmic egg and Brahmā. He then manifests the Vedas in exactly the same order and arrangement as they had been before, and He teaches them mentally (not orally) to Brahmā. He entrusts to him the task of the new creation of the whole remaining universe, from Devas downwards, just as it was before. At the same time He, entering into the world, presides in it as its Inner Ruler and Controller. Brahmā also, through the grace of the Lord, gets the power of omniscience and through the help of the words of the Vedas, remembering the types, etc., creates new Devas, like those of the previous world-period. Thus the Veda, when it uses the words like Indra, etc., refers to eternal types of Indra, etc., and as these types are eternal, though the forms vanish at every Pralaya, therefore the Vedas are eternal.

Thus there is no conflict or contradiction, when it is said that the word is eternal, for it means that the types represented by those words

are eternal. Thus the Devas have the capability of meditating on Brahman, since they possess an organised body ; and since the Devas have this capability, there is no conflict in the text relating to the meditation on the person of the size of the thumb. With regard to the Devas a person of the size of the thumb is to be measured by the thumb of the Devas, as in the case of men he is measured by the thumb of man.

Now we enter into the consideration of the question whether the Devas are qualified or not, for these Vidyās or meditations, of which they themselves are the objects meditated upon.

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we find a Vidyâ called the Madhu Vidyâ.

The Sun is verily honey to the Devas, the Heaven is like the cross beam, the intermediate region is the beehive. And the rays are the sons. (III, I. I.)

Here the Sun is said to be honey or nectar of the Devas and five classes of Devas called Vasu, Rudra, Âditya, Marut and Sâdhyas worship or meditate on this nectar ; each class being headed by its chief. They become satisfied by looking at this honey. The Sun is said to be the honey, because he is the abode of a certain nectar, to be brought about by certain sacrificial works, to be known from the R̥g Veda and so on, and the reward of such meditation as mentioned in those texts is the attainment of the position of the Vasus, Rudras, Âdityas, and so on.

*Note :* This meditation on the Sun produces the status of Vasu, etc. The point is, should the Devas undertake this meditation, when the fruit of such meditation is the attainment of the status of a Vasu, etc. ? The Devas already have reached this status, and so to them this Madhu Vidyâ is useless.

The author gives first the opinion of others, as regards this point :

SŪTRA I, 3. 31.

मध्वादिष्वसम्भवादनधिकारं जैमिनिः ॥ १ । ३ । ३१ ॥

मधु Madhu, in honey. आदिषु Âdiṣu, and in the rest असम्भवात् Asambhavât, on account of the impossibility. अनधिकारम् Anadhikâram, non-qualification. जैमिनिः Jyiminîh, the sage called Jaimini.

31. Jaimini is of opinion, that the Devas are not qualified to undertake meditations like Madhu Vidyâ and so on, because of the impossibility.—95.

#### COMMENTARY

According to the sage Jaimini, the Devas are not entitled to undertake meditations like Madhu Vidyâ, etc., because it is impossible for one and the same person to be the object of meditation as well as the person

meditating. Moreover the Devas like Vasu, etc., already belong to the class of Vasus, etc., and so in their case, the fruit being already accomplished, the meditation is useless. The Devas have nothing to gain by such meditation ; and so they have no desire for this meditation ; for they already possess that which is the fruit of such meditation. For both these reasons, Jaimini holds that the Devas are not qualified for meditations, like Madhu Vidyâ etc., in which they themselves are the objects of meditation. He gives another reason for his view.

SŪTRA 1., 3. 32.

ज्योतिषि भावाच्च ॥ १ । ३ । ३२ ॥

ज्योतिषि Jyotiṣi, in the light, in the Highest Brahman. भावात् Bhāvāt, because of the existence, because it consists of. च Cha, and.

32. And because the meditation of the Devas consists in worshipping the Light, therefore, they do not stand in need of any lower meditation.—96.

COMMENTARY

In the Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad, we find that the Devas meditate on the Great Light, the Supreme Brahman alone, and they do not worship anything lower. That text is as follows :

यस्मादवाक् संवत्सरोऽहोभिः परिवर्त्तते ।

तद् देवा ज्योतिषां ज्योतिरायुर्होषामतेऽमृतम् ॥

Him from whom proceed the year along with the days, Him the Devas meditate upon as the Light of Lights, as Immortal Life. (Br. Up., IV, 4. 16).

Both men and Devas have this in common, that both are entitled to meditate on the Supreme Brahman, the Light of Lights. The special mention that the Devas meditate on this Light of Lights, indicates, by implication, that they are not entitled to (or rather do not stand in need of) meditations on other objects than the Supreme Brahman.

The view of the Pūrvaapakṣa given in these two Sūtras, is thus controverted by the author.

SŪTRA 1., 3. 33:

भावं तु बादरायणोऽस्ति हि ॥ १ । ३ । ३३ ॥

भावं Bhāvam, the existence (of the qualification to undertake the meditations like Madhu Vidyâ, etc.,) Tu, तु but. बादरायणः Bâdarâyanaḥ, the sage called Bâdarâyana. अस्ति Asti, is, (there is the possibility of such meditation). हि Hi, because.

33. But Bâdarâyana maintains the existence of qualifications for such meditation, because there is possibility of it.—97.

## COMMENTARY

The word Tu is used in order to remove the doubt raised by the Pūrvapakṣin. In the meditations like Madhu Vidyā, etc., the Devas have a right, according to the opinion of Lord Bādaīyana. Because though these Devas have attained the position of Vasu, Âditya, etc., yet it is possible that they may have a desire of attaining the same position of Vasuhood or Âdityahood, etc., in the next Kalpa also, and so they may meditate on Brahman in the form of, and residing in, Vasu, Âditya, etc. For meditation on Brahman is taught here to be of two kinds: *firstly*, Brahman is meditated upon as effect and *secondly*, he is meditated upon as cause.

*Note* : When meditation is on a form like that of Vasus, etc., it is meditation on Brahman as effect, namely meditation on Brahman as he appears in the form of creatures. But in the same Madhu Vidyā there is the latter section which enjoins meditation on Brahman as cause.

The sense is this, the Devas who are Vasus, Âdityas, etc., in this Kalpa, meditate on Brahman as Vasu, Âditya, etc., with the object of becoming Vasu, Âditya, etc., in the next Kalpa. When they have attained Vasuhood or Âdityahood by such meditation in the next Kalpa, then they meditate on Brahman as the Inner Ruler of Vasus, Âdityas, etc., and worshipping Brahman as cause, they shall attain release in the next Kalpa.

Moreover, the words Vasu, Âditya, etc., are not confined to these Devas, but they denote Brahman also. In this view, the section on Madhu Vidyā does not teach meditation on Devas called Vasus and Âdityas, etc., but on Brahman, who is called also Vasu, Âditya, etc. Near the end of that section we find this declaration, "he who knows this Brahma Upaniṣad, etc." This shows that this is an Upaniṣad teaching Brahma Vidyā, and not meditation on any inferior being like the Devas called Vasu, Âdityas, etc.

*Note* : The worship of insentient objects cannot give Puruṣārtha (the highest end of man). Therefore, this Khaṇḍa does not teach the worship of inanimate objects like the sun, etc.

In fact, in the concluding passage (Khaṇḍa XI) the Śruti expressly says that the teaching herein given is Brahma Vidyā and not any lower Vidyā, for it says, "Let the father tell this Brahma Vidyā to his eldest son." It further says "He who knows this Brahma Upaniṣad thus," etc. How can the worship of inanimate objects give Mukti or Brahma-pada? That the whole of these Khaṇḍas relate to Brahma Vidyā, is further shown by the statement made in Khaṇḍa XI, where the Śruti says, "In what place He neither rises nor sets" and "for Him there is perpetual day." These are applicable primarily to Mukta Jīvas only. (Thus this portion of the Upaniṣad deals with Brahma Vidyā only and not with Aparā Vidyā as understood by others). Moreover, to whom can primarily belong the possession of Yaśas—wisdom, Tejas—bliss, Indriyam—lordliness, Vīryam—strength, Annādyam—magnanimity and Rasatvam—power, but to the Supreme Lord? For says a Śruti "His name is the great Yaśas."

Nor is this objection valid that the Âdityas and Vasus, etc., have already attained the position indicated by their names, and so they have no objects of desire in this direction left; and therefore, this meditation is useless for them. For we find in the world, that the people, though having sons in this life, have still a desire to get sons in the next life; (and consequently perform sacrifices for the attainment of sons in the next life). Moreover, the various meditations taught in this Madhu Vidyâ, are really meditations on various aspects of Brahman, and consequently when the Devas meditate on those aspects of Brahman (in the form of Vasus, Âdityas, etc.,) they are really meditating on Supreme Brahman; and consequently the statement that the Devas meditate on the Light of lights only is also not contradicted.

The following text shows that the Devas also perform sacrifices, etc.

प्रजापतिरकामयत प्रजायेयेति ; स एतदग्निहोत्रम् मिथुनमपश्यत् । तदुदिते सूर्ये जुहोदिति ॥

Prajâpati desired, 'let me create beings.' He saw a pair called the Agnihotra (the fire-sacrificer). He therefore sacrificed when the sun arose.

देवा वै सन्नमासत ।

The Devas performed the sacrificial session.

These texts of the Sruti show that the Devas are qualified to perform sacrifices also, why should not then they be qualified to perform meditations like Madhu Vidyâ also? The Devas stand in no need of these sacrifices to attain any personal end of their own, but they do so in order to carry out the command of the Lord, and to maintain the world-process.

*Note:* When the Devas perform sacrifices even in order to carry out the Divine Will in creation, no doubt can really arise whether the Devas ever meditate on the Lord or not.

An objector says: How can Devas be called Mumukṣus or a-thirst after Release, when they voluntarily renounce Release or rather postpone it, to an indefinite period? For Devas or even men who meditate according to Madhu Vidyâ, wilfully suffer delay in getting release till the end of the Kalpa, and take upon themselves the duty of the high offices like those of Âdityas and Vasus? For the real Mumukṣutva is a burning desire for release and consists in spurning all objects of desire and all joys; yea, even the joys of the Highest World of Brahmâ? How can then these followers of Madhu Vidyâ be called true aspirants after Release when they wilfully take the by-path of cosmic power? True; this is so, but it must be admitted that there are certain Beings, who owing to some unknown or mysterious action of their Karmas have to undertake the duties of world-rule, and because the sacred books expressly teach the existence

of these Exalted Ones, who voluntarily accept, or rather prefer, the burden of cosmic agents, to the peace of final Release.

This Adhikaraṇa shows that when even the Devas also work unselfishly, and meditate through Madhu Vidyā, much more should human beings do the same.

### *Adhikaraṇa VIII.—The Śūdras or child-souls not qualified to Vaidic meditation.*

In the previous part, it has been mentioned that men as well as the Devas are qualified to meditate on Brahman, because they have the capability and other requisites for such meditation. Now this cannot take place without study of the Vedānta texts, for Brahman is said in the scriptures "the Aupaniṣada Puruṣa," the Spirit revealed by the Upaniṣads. Consequently the question arises, are all men indiscriminately qualified to the study of the Upaniṣads? To this, the answer ultimately given is that baby-souls, which are just coming out of animality into humanity, are not entitled to study Upaniṣads or meditate on Brahman at once.

In the Cbhândogya Upaniṣad there occurs the story of a king called Jānaśruti. He was a hospitable prince and profuse in his generosity, possessing many good qualities. The mighty sages called Devarṣis were satisfied with his high-mindedness and, assuming the form of flamingoes, they flew across his palace, when the prince was lying in open air, on the roof of his terrace, in a sultry summer night. One of these flamingoes, who was in front, was addressed by another flamingo, who was in the rear, thus :

"Oh short-sighted one, seest thou not the auric light of this noble prince, extending from his body, high up into the air? Do not heedlessly cross his aura, lest it may destroy thee." Hearing this the other flamingo answered : "Is his aura stronger than that of Raikva of the car? Raikva is one who is always on his car, making pilgrimages from one sacred place to another, and thus sanctifying with his aura, all those shrines. He possesses Brāhmīc aura, far more potent than the aura of this mere petty prince."

The object of the compassionate Ṛṣis was to break the shell of self-complacency into which this prince had unconsciously fallen, so that he might exert to know the Brahma Vidyā, and might not rest satisfied with the mere performance of charity, though on a very large and profuse scale. The king hearing this speech of the flamingoes, found out his inferiority to Raikva, and was distressed in his heart, and passed his night in a state of restless grief. When it was dawn and the Royal bards were discoursing soft music praising the king and his many royal qualities, the prince, rising from his bed, at once sent for his chamberlain, and told him to find out without delay, where was this Raikva, who was always on the move in his car. The chamberlain, after much search, found him in a retired spot, sitting under his car and scratching his itches. He at once returned to the king and informed him of his discovery. The king taking cows, gold and chariots, went to Raikva, and presenting them to him, said, "Teach me, Venerable Sir, the God that you worship." Raikva replied : "Away with thy necklace and thy chariots, O Śūdra ! Let these cows remain with thee." Thus discarded, and called a Śūdra, the king

went back and brought more wealth, cows, chariots, and even his daughter, as a present for the sage. But Raikva again addressed him with the opprobrious title of Śūdra, saying "O Śūdra, hopest thou to gain this knowledge through these means?" However, he relented ultimately and taught the king the Samvarga Vidya or the meditation on the laws of dissolution.

*Viśaya:* Thus Raikva twice addressed the king as Śūdra in the passages which are quoted below in the original :

तदुह जानश्रुतिः पौत्रायणः षट् शतानि गवां निष्क्रमश्चतरीरथं तदादाय प्रतिलक्ष्मं तच्छाभ्युवाद ॥ १ ॥

1. Therefore Jānaśruti Pautrayana having taken six hundred cows, a necklace, and a carriage drawn by a pair of mules, went to Raikva and addressed him thus :

रयिक्षेमामि षट् शतानि गवामयं निष्कोऽयमश्चतरीरथो नु म एतां भगवो देवतां शाधि यां देवतामुपास्स इति ॥ २ ॥

2. "O Raikva ! these six hundred cows, this pearl necklace, this carriage with mules are presents for you. Teach me, O master, that Deity whom you worship."

तमु ह परःप्रत्युवाचाह हीरंत्वा शूद्रतैव सह गोभिरस्त्विति तदुह पुनरुव जानश्रुतिः पौत्रायणः सहस्रं गवां निष्क्रमश्चतरीरथं दुहितरं तदादाय प्रतिलक्ष्मं ॥ ३ ॥

3. To him said Raikva : "Fie ! the necklace and the carriage, O Śūdra, be thine, even together with the cows." Then Jānaśruti, taking again a thousand cows, a pearl necklace, a carriage yoked with a pair of mules, and his daughter, went back to Raikva.

तच्छाभ्युवाद रयिक्षेदं सहस्रं गवामयं निष्कोऽयमश्चतरीरथ इयं जाशऽयं ग्रामो यस्मिन्ना स्तस्त्वेव मा भगवः शाधीति ॥ ४ ॥

4. He said to him : "Raikva, these one thousand cows, this pearl necklace, this carriage drawn by a pair of mules, this girl for thy wife, and this village in which thou dwellest are thy fee. Teach me, O master."

तस्य ह मुखमुपदृक्षन्नुवाचाजहरेमाः शूद्रानेनैव मुखेनालापयिष्यथा इति ते हैते रयिकपशीनाम महावृषेण यत्रास्मा उवास तस्मै होवाच ॥ ५ ॥

5. Then Raikva, after looking for a while at the face of the girl, said, "Take away these gifts, O Śūdra, thinkest thou to speak with me through this means?" Then Raikva relented and told him. These are the Raikvaparna villages in the land of the Mahāvṛṣas, where Raikva dwelt in order to teach him.

*Note :* This Adhikarāṇa appears to be an interpolation. The question whether a Śūdra is entitled to the study of the Vedas or not has been answered in favour of the Śūdras by no less an authority than 'Syami Dayānanda Sarasvatī, the founder of the Ārya Samāj. He quotes the ancient scriptures to show that in the Vedic age, there was no such restriction. The condition of the Śūdras became worse in the Puranic period only. The degradation of the Śūdras was preceded by the decline of the Brāhmaṇas, who, when they lost their inherent greatness, began to rely, more and more, on their privilege. The honor which was spontaneously given to them because of their knowledge and wisdom and purity of life, was now extorted by them merely on the strength of their birth and race.

*Doubt :* Here arises this doubt. Is a Śūdra qualified to study the Vaidic Science or not, and perform Vaidic meditations ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The Pūrvapakṣin says that a Śūdra is qualified to study the Vedas, for the following reasons : *firstly*, because every man is



general, is stated to be so qualified; *secondly*, because the Sūdra possesses the capability of so studying; *thirdly*, because the express text of the Sruti uses the word Sūdra, which is an indication that Sūdra is qualified; *fourthly*, in the Purāṇas and the rest, we find persons like Vidura and others described as possessing a knowledge of Brahman. Therefore, for all these reasons, a Sūdra is qualified for Vaidic study and Vaidic meditation.

*Siddhānta* : This objection, the author answers by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 3. 34.

शुगस्य तदनादर श्रवणात् तदाद्रवणात् सूच्यते हि ॥ १ । ३ । ३४ ॥

शुक् Suk, sorrow, grief. अस्य Asya, his, namely, of Jānaśruti. तत् Tat, that, namely, that grief. अनादर Anādara, disrespect, the disrespectful speech of the flamingo, who taunted him for want of Brahman-knowledge. श्रवणात् Sravanāt, because of hearing. तदा Tadā, then. अद्रवणात् Adravanāt, because of resorting to, or going to him, *i. e.*, to Raikva. सूच्यते Sūchyate, is intimated, is referred to. हि Hi, because.

34. The reason why Raikva addressed Jānaśruti as Sūdra was to intimate that he (Raikva) by his occult powers knew that Jānaśruti was overwhelmed with sorrow on hearing the disrespectful speech of the flamingo and, therefore, he had come to him on hearing such speech.—98.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Na (not) of the Sūtra I., 3. 28, is understood in this Sūtra also. The Sūdra is not qualified to undertake Vaidic study or Vaidic meditation. Why? Because Jānaśruti is not a Sūdra.

*Note* : The word Sūdra is literally derived from two words : Śuk, meaning grief, and Dravati, to go ; because Jānaśruti, through grief, on hearing the taunting words, went to Raikva ; therefore, Raikva calls him Sūdra or grief-impelled. The use of this term indicates that Raikva knew, by his clairvoyance, the whole incident of the flamingoes.

When Jānaśruti Pautrāyana, who was ignorant of Brahman-knowledge, heard the taunting words of the flamingo, who said, "Can he be compared with Raikva of the car?" He was overpowered with grief, at this disrespectful speech of the flamingo, and he went to Raikva who knew Brahman. Thus the use of the word Sūdra by Raikva in this story, does not mean that Jānaśruti was a Sūdra by birth, but that he was sorrow-stricken. Raikva uses the words Sūdra in order to indicate his thought-reading and clairaudient powers, his almost divine omniscience. It has no reference to the class called Sūdra.

*Note :* This is a very forced meaning given to the word Sūdra ; the whole of this Adhikarāṇa about Sūdras together with the preceding one about the Devas, appears to be an interpolation of some later author. There is a break in the continuity of the aphorisms, by the irruption of these two Adhikarāṇas. That they are a digression is admitted by both Rāmānuja and Buladeva. Bādarāyaṇa was not illiberal-minded, as the anonymous author of these interpolated Sūtras tries to make him out.

If Jānaśruti is not a Sūdra, and if the word Sūdra is applied to him in its etymological sense of "grief-impelled," then to what class did he belong ? The next Sūtra answers this by saying that he was a Kṣatriya.

SŪTRA I., 3. 35.

क्षत्रियत्वावगतेश्चोत्तरत्र चैत्रयेन लिङ्गात् ॥ १ । ३ । ३५ ॥

क्षत्रियत्व Kṣatriyatva, the state of his being a Kṣatriya, the fact of Jānaśruti's being a Kṣatriya. अवगतेः Avagateḥ, on account of being known or understood. च Cha, and. उत्तरत्र Uttaratra, in a subsequent passage. चैत्रयेन Chaitrarathena, with Chaitraratha. लिङ्गात् Liṅgāt, because of the inferential mark.

35. That Jānaśruti was a Kṣatriya is understood from the whole story, because the concluding portion gives the story of a Kṣatriya, Abhipratârin who was a Chaitraratha, as is known from an inferential mark later on.—99.

#### COMMENTARY

We learn from the account given in the Upaniṣad that Jānaśruti must have been a Kṣatriya, because he was a generous giver of wealth, possessed of faith, was a ruler of a kingdom, which no Sūdra is. He has a chamberlain whom he sends in search of Raikva, and because he gave alms, such as, cows, necklace, chariots, daughter, etc. These things are not possible in any but a Kṣatriya, because these are the qualities of a king. Thus the opening passage of the story gives us sufficient indication that Jānaśruti was a Kṣatriya. Similarly, the concluding passage also of this section shows that he was a Kṣatriya. In the conclusion, where the Samvarga Vidyâ comes to an end, we find a mention of one Abhipratârin who knew this Brahma Vidyâ. He was undoubtedly a Kṣatriya for the reasons given later on. In the concluding passage we find that a Brahmachâri begged food from Saunaka, son of Kapi, and Abhipratârin, son of Kâkṣaseni. When these two were serving food to others, this Brahmachâri was told that the givers of food knew Samvarga Vidyâ. But how do you know that this Abhipratârin was a Kṣatriya and a Chaitraratha, for there is no express mention of these two facts in the story. To this the Sūtra answers, "Liṅgāt." We know this from inferential mark. Saunaka Kâpeya and Abhipratârin Kâkṣaseni were connected with Samvarga Vidyâ. They were sitting together at a meal which also shows

that there must have been some connection between Abhipratârin and Kâpeya. From Tâpdyā Brâhmaṇa (20. 12. 5) we learn that "the Kâpeyas made Chaitraratha perform that sacrifice." Thus Kâpeyas are connected with the Chaitrarathas. In the Chhândogya story we find that a Kâpeya is connected with an Abhipratârin. Therefore, the Abhipratârin of the Chhândogya must have been a Chaitraratha. For it was a well-known custom in ancient India, that a Brâhmaṇa family was always connected with a Kṣatriya family and not with more than one family. That the Chaitraratha was a Kṣatriya is proved by another text which says, "from him there was descended a Chaitraratha who was a Kṣatrapati or prince." Therefore, it proves that Abhipratârin was a Chaitraratha and a Kṣatriya.

Therefore, it is proved that these two worshippers of Samvarga Vidyâ, namely, Kâpeya and Abhipratârin, were one a Brâhmaṇa and the other a Kṣatriya, and with regard to this Samvarga Vidyâ they were connected as the teacher and the disciple. Raikva and Jânaśruti are also connected together as teacher and disciple, and as Raikva was a Brâhmaṇa, therefore Jânaśruti must have been a Kṣatriya. Therefore, it has been proved logically and by reasoning, that a Sûdra is not qualified to study the Vedas or to perform Vaidic meditations.

*Note :* That this Sûtra is an interpolation is proved by the fallacious reasoning that will be apparent to every tyro in logic. The argument adduced in this Sûtra may be thus summarised. Jânaśruti must be a Kṣatriya, because Raikva was a Brâhmaṇa. The argument that Jânaśruti was a prince, and therefore, he must be a Kṣatriya, begs the whole question. It is a historical fact that there were many Dâsa kings in ancient India. They were all Sûdras, but all the same they were enlightened and generous princes, like Jânaśruti. The argument that a Brâhmaṇa is connected with Jânaśruti is no argument at all. In the first place, it is not true that Brâhmaṇas were not Purohitas of Sûdras ; *secondly*, Raikva is not the family Guru or Purohita of Jânaśruti. Raikva was a wandering Faqir, whom Jânaśruti adopts as his teacher temporarily only. Nor are there any indications in this Upaniṣad to show that Raikva was a Brâhmaṇa. His epithet "of the car" is rather curious for a person belonging to the highest caste. Very likely he was a Kṣatriya, for we know from the Upaniṣads that Brahma Vidyâ was confined to the Kṣatriyas in the beginning ; and it is from the Kṣatriyas that the Brâhmaṇas learnt it. The second portion of the argument is also no argument at all. The section on Samvarga Vidyâ mentions two persons of the name of Kâpeya and Abhipratârin. But there is nothing to show to what caste they belong. Abhipratârin is not expressly stated to be a Kṣatriya. The argument by which he is made out a Kṣatriya is this : The Kâpeyas were the family priests of Chaitrarathas. A Kâpeya is found dining together with an Abhipratârin. Therefore, Abhipratârin must be a Chaitraratha. This forced logic, which is simply no logic, is a mark of modern bigotry, rather than the ancient simplicity of a Rṣi.

संस्कार Saṁskāra, the purificatory ceremonies, the sacraments, the investiture with sacred thread. परामर्शत् Parāmarśat, because of the reference, because the Śāstras say that investiture with a sacred thread is the preliminary ceremony to the study of Vedānta. Because of the implication. तद् Tad, that ceremony. अभाव Abhāva, absence. अभिलाषात् Abhilāpāt, because of the declaration. च Cha, and.

36. The scriptures take it for granted that the sacraments are preparatory to Brahma-knowledge, and with regard to a Śūdra there is a declaration that such sacraments are not possible for him.—100.

## COMMENTARY

In another Sruti we find: "Let him invest a Brāhmaṇa at the age of eight and then teach him, a Kṣatriya at the age of eleven and a Vaiśya at the age of twelve." This shows that investiture with sacred thread is a necessary preliminary to the study of sacred literature, and the three higher castes are only entitled to it. In another text we find that there is an express declaration that a Śūdra has no sacraments. It says a Śūdra cannot perform a fire-sacrifice or ordinary sacrifice or sacraments or vows. Therefore, a Śūdra is a disqualified person because he is outside the pale of the three castes, because no sacraments are ordained regarding him, and the study of the Vedas pre-supposes the performance of the sacraments.

The next Sūtra further strengthens the view that a Śūdra can have no Saṁskāra.

## SŪTRA 1., 3. 37

तद्भावनिर्धारणे च प्रवृत्तेः ॥ १ । ३ । ३७ ॥

तद् Tad, that, namely, the Śūdrahood. अभाव Abhāva, absence, negation. निर्धारणे Nirdhāraṇe, in ascertainment. च Cha, and. प्रवृत्तेः Pravṛtṭeḥ, because of taking steps to, because of the procedure.

37. Because Gautama in the legend of Jābāla takes the precaution of first ascertaining that the latter is not a Śūdra and then he proceeds to invest him with the sacred thread.—101.

## COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya itself there is a legend of Gautama and Jābāla. Jābāla went to Gautama and said, "Teach me, Sir." Gautama asked him, "To what Gotra do you belong?" He being a foundling, said, "I do not know, Sir, to what Gotra I belong." By this truthful speech, it was ascertained that Jābāla was not a Śūdra and Gautama says, "No one

not a Brāhmaṇa has the courage to say so." He then asks him to bring the sacred fuel and he invests him with the sacred thread. This action of Gautama, in first convincing himself as to the caste of the candidate and then proceeding to teach him after investing him with sacred thread, shows that a Sūdra cannot be taught the Vedas. The word Brāhmaṇa used by Gautama includes the Kṣatriyas and the Vaiśyas also. This story of Gautama and Jābāla also indicates that the sacraments are necessary before one can study the Vedas.

*Note:* The story of Jābāla and Gautama does not prove anything of the kind. Jābāla was a foundling and he asked his foster-mother what was his Gotra, because he wanted to study the Vedas. His mother said, "I found you abandoned and so I cannot tell you what is your Gotra. Go to your teacher and tell him that you are the adopted son of Jābāla and your name is Jābāla." He does so; and Gautama is pleased with his frankness. Gautama does not test his caste, but his moral qualifications. Certainly according to Gautama every truthful man ought to be classed as Brāhmaṇa for the purposes of Vaidic study. Sūdras, if not liars and possessing high moral qualities, are entitled to be classed as Brāhmaṇas. The Brāhmaṇahood depends upon the qualities of the soul. As a general rule, the presumption is in favour of a soul possessing Brāhmaṇic qualities, if it is born in a Brāhmaṇa's family. The selection of a family depends upon the Karmas of the soul. But all admit that in this Kali age, there has arisen a confusion of castes. The Brāhmaṇic family need not possess the attributes of a Brāhmaṇa; and so a soul born in such family need not be a Brāhmaṇic soul. The Śāstras say that, if a family follows for seven generations the professions of another caste, the descendants in the eighth generation should be classed as members of the caste to which that profession legally belongs. Judged by that standard many families have lost their right to be styled Brāhmaṇas.

SŪTRA I., 3. 38.

श्रवणाध्ययनार्थं प्रतिषेधात् स्मृतेश्च ॥ १ । ३ । ३८ ॥

श्रवणं Sravana, hearing, attending recitations. अध्ययनं Adhayayana, studying. अर्थं Artha, object, wealth, acquirement of riches. प्रतिषेधात् Pratishedhāt, on account of the prohibition. स्मृतेः Smṛteḥ, because there is a Smṛti text. च Cha, and.

38. The Sūdra is forbidden to hear and study the Vedas, cannot acquire riches in order to perform sacrifices, and there are Smṛti texts also to the same effect. Therefore, the Sūdra is not qualified.—102.

COMMENTARY

Says a text: "The Sūdra is verily like a biped beast, he is like a moving cemetery, therefore, one should not recite the Vedas in the presence of a Sūdra." "Sūdra is like a beast unfit for sacrifices." These texts prohibit Vaidic study, and so the Sūdra is not qualified for meditation. He is not qualified to hear the Vedas, necessarily cannot study it or know its meaning or perform the sacrifices enjoined therein.

Thus by prohibiting the Sūdra from hearing the Vedas recited, all these things are prohibited by implication.

The following Smṛti texts also show the same : "A Sūdra is not entitled to perform the fire-sacrifices, nor Yajñas, nor also the study of the Vedas ; for him is ordained one duty alone, the service of the three twice-born castes. A Sūdra immediately becomes degraded if he studies the Vedic words."

As regards the objection that the Sūdras like Vidura or Dharma Vyādha, etc., had the knowledge of Brahman, and consequently were Mukta Jīvas, we reply that they were born Siddhas and possessed Divine knowledge from their very birth, on account of the merit acquired in the past life. They had studied the Vedas in their past lives and so they became Mukta Jīvas in their present life without such study even. Their case is like that of Vāmadeva who had also a Siddha Prajñā. Their examples do not shake our position.

Though the Sūdras are prohibited from studying the Vedas, and performing Vedic sacrifices, yet they are entitled to salvation or Mokṣa, by the knowledge obtained through hearing the recitation of Purāṇas (and study of books like the Bhagavad Gītā, etc.) A Mukta Sūdra is as holy, as any other Mukta Jīva, but the difference is only in the degree of their happiness.

*Note :* This last paragraph is not according to strict Brāhmanism. It is a concession to the spirit of the age, and is the charter of the emancipation of the Sūdra in ancient India. It appears that there were three distinct stages in the status of a Sūdra in ancient India. First, he was looked upon as a conquered people, but not with contempt and not as a slave. There were many Sūdra kings, who were invited to the sacrificial sessions of the Aryan princes and priests. That was the earliest stage ; when the Aryan conquest of India was not yet complete, and the Sūdras had a right of hearing the Vedas and performing the Vedic sacrifices if so inclined. The second stage commenced when the Aryans had firmly established their rule in India, and were no longer afraid of the conquered races. In this stage the Sūdras were relegated into the ranks of slaves. The third stage commenced with the great reformers like Śrī Kṛṣṇa, Buddha, Chaitanya, etc., who gave the rights to the Sūdras to study and acquire Dharma, and get Mukti, through the studies of Purāṇas and Smṛti. Practically the whole of India has become a vast Sūdra camp now-a-days, uneducated, ignorant and not knowing the Vedas. The repressive policy of the Brāhmaṇas in prohibiting the Sūdras from studying the Vedas has recoiled upon them, and the Brāhmaṇa class as a whole, is as much degraded as the Sūdra in these days. Injustice always brings its own punishment.

### *Adhikaraṇa IX.—The Thunderbolt is Brahman.*

*Note :* The Sūtras I, 3, 26-37 are evidently not of Bādarāyaṇa, and they have been clumsily interpolated by some bigoted priest of the later days, for they break the continuity of the subject. The Puruṣa of the size of thumb is the subject under discussion,

but some over-enthusiastic friend of Hinduism has introduced these thirteen Sūtras to prove that the Devas are capable of meditation and the Śāndras are not so qualified. This is in direct opposition to the aphorism of Vyāsa who says *Manuṣya Adhikāratvāt* "all human beings are qualified to meditate on Brahman." That the whole of this is a *digression* is admitted by Rāmānuja and Baladeva. The latter says :

प्रकृतं समन्वयं चिन्तयति ॥

Having finished the digression, the author takes up the main topic.

In the Kāṭha Upaniṣad, we find this further description of the person of the size of a thumb :

अङ्गुष्ठमात्रः पुरुषोन्तरात्मा सदा जनानां हृदये सन्निविष्टः । तं स्वाच्छरीरात् भृहेन्मुञ्जादिवेधीकां धैर्येण ।  
तं विद्याच्छुक्रममृतं तं विद्याच्छुक्रममृतमिति ॥ १७ ॥

The Person not larger than a thumb, the inner self, is always settled in the heart of men. Let a man draw that self forth from his body with steadiness, as one draws the pith from a reed. Let him know that self as the Bright, as the Immortal ; yes, as the Bright, as the Immortal. (VI, 17).

यदिदं किञ्च जगत्सर्वं प्राण एजति निःसृतम् । महद्भयं वज्रमुद्यतं य एतद्विदुरमृतास्ते भवन्ति ॥

Whatever there is, the whole world, when gone forth (from the Brahman) trembles in its breath. That Brahman is a great terror, like a drawn sword (Vajra). Those who know It become immortal. (VI. 2).

*Doubt* : What is the meaning of the word Vajra here ? Does it mean the thunderbolt or Brahman ?

*Pūrvaśakṣa* : It means the thunderbolt, because it causes great fear and trembling. Though it is mentioned that those who know this thunderbolt become immortal, yet it is merely a panegyric, and is not to be taken in its literal sense, for release depends on knowledge of Brahman. No doubt this Vajra is described here as Prāṇa or life, but it is called Prāṇa in the sense of protector (Prāṇiti). Nor is there anything in the context here, to show that this raised thunderbolt may mean Brahman.

*Siddhānta* : The author answers this by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA. I., 3. 39.

कम्पनात् ॥ १ । ३ । ३० ॥

कम्पनात् *Kampanāt*, because of trembling.

39. Because the whole universe trembles from fear of Him, therefore the Person of the size of a thumb and the thunderbolt refer to Brahman.—103.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "thunderbolt" occurs here between two verses describing the Person of the size of a thumb, namely II., 4. 12 and II., 6. 17, and the whole world is said to tremble from fear of him, therefore the context as

well as the description shows that the thunderbolt means Brahman. Even in the Brahmaparivarta Purāṇa we find the following :

चक्रं चक्रमण्डप, वज्रनादजमुच्यते ।

खण्डनात् खड्ग एवैव, हेतिनामा हरिः स्वयं ।

The Lord Viṣṇu is called Chakra (generally translated as discus), because He is in constant rotatory motion and goes everywhere (Chakramāṇa), and He is Vajra or thunderbolt because He regulates (Varjana) the universe ; and He is called the Khaḍga or the sword because He cuts asunder (Khaṇḍana) the evil-door ; and Hari is called Heti because He is the Saviour.

Therefore, when Viṣṇu is represented as having a Chakra or discus, a Vajra or thunderbolt, and a Khaḍga or sword, in His hand, it means that He is All-pervading and keeps the universe in constant motion, that he is the great Regulator and the Destroyer of all evil. And the Scripture always described the Supreme Self as the life of the world (Prāṇa), and one of whom every one is in terror. That Scriptural idea that He is a great terror is symbolised in this verse by one expressive term "Vajra," the thunderbolt, denoting that all beings move in their proper sphere and do not transgress it, because He is the great Regulator. This epithet 'Vajra' applied to the Person of the size of a thumb shows that, that Person is Brahman. Cf., Tait. Up., II., 8. 1.

SŪTRA I., 3. 40.

ज्योतिर्दर्शनात् ॥ १ । ३ । ४० ॥

ज्योतिः Jyotiḥ, light, the supreme lordliness. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, on account of being seen.

40. The Person of the size of a thumb and the thunderbolt must refer to Brahman, because we see that He is called light (possessing lordliness) in a passage immediately preceding it.—104.

COMMENTARY

In the same Upaniṣad, Valli V, verse 15, we find the following :

न तत्र सूर्यो भाति न चन्द्रतारकमेवा विद्युतो भान्ति कुतोऽयमग्निः । तमेव भान्तमनुभाति सर्व्वेभ्यस्तस्य भासा सर्व्वमिदं विभाति ॥ १५ ॥

Him the sun does not illumine, nor the moon and the stars. Nor do these lightnings, much less this Fire illumine Him. When He illumines all (the Sun etc.) then they shine after (Him with His light). This whole universe reveals His light (in His light and its light is His).

Between this verse and the next verse, II., 6. 3, occurs this verse relating to the thunderbolt. That next verse is given below :

भयादस्याग्निस्तपति भयात्तपति सूर्यः । भयादिन्द्रश्च वायुश्च मृत्युर्धावति पञ्चमः ॥ ३ ॥



3. From terror of Brahman fire burns ; from terror, the sun burns ; from terror Indra and Vāyu, and Death, as the fifth, runs away.

Therefore, the Vajra must mean Brahman. Everywhere, in fact, the Upaniṣad texts describe Brahman as possessing Supreme luminousness. Therefore, in this Vajra passage also, which comes immediately after the passage describing luminosity and before the passage describing fear, it must mean Brahman. Moreover, the Person of the size of the thumb who is described for the purposes of meditation as extremely luminous and holding an upraised thunderbolt in His hand, refers to Brahman and not to an inferior deity.

### *Adhikaraṇa X.—The Ākāśa is Brahman.*

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we read :

आकाशो वै नाम नामरूपयोर्निर्वदिता ते यदन्तरा तद्ब्रह्म तदमृतं स आत्मा ।

The ether is the evolver of forms and names. That within which these forms and names are (or 'that which is within or without these forms and names') is Brahman, the Immortal, the Self (VIII., 14).

*Doubt* : A doubt here arises whether the being here called Ākāśa or ether means the Mukta Jīva, who has shaken off all bonds, or the Supreme Self ?

*Pûrvapakṣa* : The Pûrvapakṣin says, the Ākāśa here refers to the Mukta Jīva. For in the clause immediately preceding it the Mukta Jīva is described as a horse that has shaken off all dust, etc., from his hair, or as the moon free from eclipse in the following verse :

श्यामाच्छ्वलं प्रपद्ये श्वलाच्छ्वलं प्रपद्येऽथ इव रोमाणि विधूय पापं चन्द्र इव राहोर्मुखात्प्रमुच्य भूत्वा शरीरममृतं कृतात्मा ब्रह्मलोकमभिसम्भवामीत्यभिसम्भवामीति ॥ १ ॥

Shaking off all evil, as a horse shakes his hair, and as the moon frees himself from the mouth of Rāhu ; having shaken off the body I obtain, satisfied, the uncreated world of Brahman.

Moreover, in this very passage the words "Te yad antarā tad Brahma" that which is without forms and names is Brahman—shows that the Jīvātman is meant, when in the state of Mukti, it throws off all forms and names. And Jīvātman can very appropriately be called the upholder or evolver of name and form, because previous to Mukti, it assumes all forms and names such as of a Deva and man, etc. And it may very well be called Ākāśa in the sense of Prakāśa or splendour or luminosity, The passage, therefore, refers to the Released soul, and it is called here Brahman, the Immortal, because it attains that state.

*Siddhānta* : The Ākāśa here means Brahman, as is shown in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 3. 41.

आकाशोऽर्थान्तरत्वादिव्यपदेशात् ॥ १ । ३ । ४१ ॥

आकाशः Ākāśaḥ, ākāśa, ether, space. अर्थान्तरत्वादि Arthāntaratvādi, different meaning, etc., Artha=meaning, Antaratva,=differentness, Ādi=etc., for other reasons. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesāt, on account of the designation.

41. The word Ākāśa here refers to the Supreme Self, and not to the Released soul, because it is a designation of something different from the individual soul, and for other reasons also.—105.

## COMMENTARY

The sense of the Sūtra is this. The power of evolving name and form is proved here not to belong to the freed soul, but to Ākāśa. The Jivātman, when in bondage, cannot evolve name and form, because it has not the power; on the contrary, it is under the influence of Karma, and is itself involved in name and form, and is incapable, therefore, to evolve them. Nor can it evolve name and form in its Released state, because the Sūtra, IV, 4. 17, expressly states that in the state of Release the Jīva does not take part in the world business, while the Supreme Self is mentioned in all Scriptures, as the Creator of the universe and to be the evolver of names and forms. Thus अनेन जीवनात्मनानुप्रविश्य नाम रूपे व्याकरवाणि । entering into them with this Living Self, let me evolve names and forms (Chh. Up., VI, 3).

Therefore, it must be understood that the Highest Self is the Ākāśa of this passage.

The word Ādi, "etc.," in the Sūtra refers to the Brahmahood: the unconditioned greatness, etc., mentioned in the said passage. For Brahmahood, that is greatness, and so on, in their unconditioned sense, belong to the Highest Self only. Nor is it right, as the Pūrvapakṣin says, that the clause immediately preceding it refers to the Mukta Jīva. On the contrary, the clause "I obtain the Brahma-world" shows that the topic immediately preceding it is Brahman, which the Released soul obtains. The word Ākāśa, moreover, means all-pervading, and it is inapplicable to Jīva, while its application to the Supreme Self is a well-known thing.

**Pūrvapakṣa:** An objection is raised: Let it be so, yet it does not establish that there is a separate Brahman other than and different from the Mukta Jīva; and therefore, all these are attributes of the Mukta Jīva; because there is no difference between the two and so all your above argument has no force. Thus in the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 3. 7, the Jīva in the state of its bondage is first described in the passage:

कतम आत्मेति योऽयं विज्ञानमयः प्रायेषु हृद्यन्तरज्योतिः पुरुषः स समानः सन्नुभौ लोकावनुसञ्चरति ध्यायतीव लेलायतीव सहि स्वप्नो भूत्वेमं लोकमतिक्रामति मृत्यो रूपाणि ।

"Who is that Self?" Yājñavalkya replied: "He who is within the heart, surrounded by the Prāṇas (senses), the person of light, consisting of knowledge. He, remaining the same, wanders along the worlds, as if thinking, as if moving during sleep (in dream), he transcends this world and all the forms of death (all that falls under the away of death, all that is perishable)."

The text then goes on to describe this very Jīva when it attains Mukti as Brahman. That passage is the following :

स वा अयमात्मा ब्रह्म विज्ञानमयः ।

"That Ātman is indeed Brahman, the Vijñānamaya," etc. (IV, 4-5).

This shows that the released soul is identical with Brahman. Similarly in another passage of the same, after describing the state of Mukti in the words: "Anukāmayamāṇaḥ, etc., free from all desires, etc.," the Scripture goes on to say: "Having become Brahman, he goes to Brahman" (IV, 4-6).

Note: We give below the whole of this passage:

तद्देशं श्लोको भवति ॥ तदेव सक्तः सह कर्मणेति लिङ्गं मनो यत्र निषक्तमस्य ॥ प्राप्यान्तं कर्मणस्तस्य यत्किञ्चेह करोत्ययं ॥ तस्माद्धोकात्पुनरेत्यस्मै लोकाय कर्मण इति नुक्तामयमानोऽथाकामयमानो योऽकामो निष्काम आसक्तम आत्मकामः न तस्य प्राप्ता उत्क्रामन्ति ब्रह्मैव सन् ब्रह्माप्येति ॥ ६ ॥

"And there is this verse: "To whatever object a man's own mind is attached, to that he goes strenuously together with his deed; and having obtained the end the (last results) of whatever deed he goes here on earth, he returns again from that world (which is the temporary reward of his deed) to this world of action."

"So much for the man who desires. But as to the man who does not desire, who not desiring, freed from desires, is satisfied in his desires, or desires the Self only, his vital spirits do not depart elsewhere,—being Brahman, he goes to Brahman." (Br. Up., IV, 4. 6.).

This also shows that the Jīva in the state of Mukti is identical with Brahman. In the conclusion of that text also, the same fact is repeated when describing the fruit of Brahmajñāna:

स वा एष महानज आत्माजरोऽमरोऽमृतोऽमयो ब्रह्माभयं वै ब्रह्माभयं हि वै ब्रह्म भवति न एष वेद ॥

This great, unborn Self, undecaying, undying, immortal, fearless, is indeed Brahman. Fearless is Brahman, and he who knows this becomes verily the fearless Brahman (IV, 4. 25).

Thus the beginning, the middle, and the end, of this passage shows that the Jīva in the state of Mukti is identical with Brahman, therefore, wherever in the Upaniṣads we find any statement that Jīva is separate from Brahman, it must be understood that the difference is created by

Upādhi or limiting adjunct ; such as, the difference between the Ghatākāśa and Mahākāśa, the space within the jar and space outside it. There is no difference between these two, and when the Upādhi or the jar is broken, the space remains the same. So when the Upādhi of the Jīva is broken, the Jīva becomes Brahman, and attains to his own greatness. Jīva in this state may very well be called the Creator of the universe, etc., for it manifests then the divine attributes of creation, etc. Thus there is no difference between the Mukta Jīva and Brahman.

*Siddhānta* : This objection is answered by Bādarāyaṇa in the following Sūtra .

SŪTRA I., 3. 42.

सुषुप्त्युत्क्रान्त्योर्भेदेन ॥ १ । ३ । ४२ ॥

सुषुप्ति Suṣupti, the dreamless sleep, deep sleep. उत्क्रान्ति Utkrānti, departing at the time of death. Suṣuptyutkrāntyoḥ, in deep sleep and departing. भेदेन Bhedena, by the difference.

42. The text designates the Supreme Self as different from the Jīva, whether it be in the state of deep sleep or at the time of departure.—106.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Vyapadeśāt (on account of designation) of the last Sūtra is understood here also, and must be supplied here in order to complete the sense. In the above passage of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, no doubt can properly arise that the Mukta Jīva is identical with Brahman. Because the text there sharply and clearly draws the distinction between the Jīva and Brahman, whether that Jīva be in the state of deep sleep or at the point of death. In the state of deep sleep the Jīva is said to be embraced by the Lord in the passage, Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 3-21.

तद्यथा प्रियया स्त्रिया सम्परिष्वक्तो न बाह्यं किञ्चन वेद नान्तरमेवायं पुरुषः प्राज्ञेनात्मना सम्परिष्वक्तो न बाह्यं किञ्चन वेद नान्तरं तद्वा अस्त्येतदात्मकाममात्मकाममकाम रूपं शोकान्तरम् ॥ २१ ॥

Now, as a man when embraced by beloved wife, knows nothing that is without, nothing that is within, thus this person, when embraced by the Intelligent (Prājña) Self (Brahman) knows nothing that is without, nothing that is within. This indeed is his (true) form, in which his wishes are fulfilled, in which the self (only) is his wish, in which no wish is left, free from any sorrow.

Similarly, the difference between the Jīva on the point of death, and Brahman is shown in the passage IV, 4-35, where the Jīva is described as groaning, mounted by Brahman, who carries it along thus out of the body :

तद्यथा नः सुसमाहितमुत्सर्जयायादेवमेवायं शरीर आत्मा प्राणिनात्मनान्वारूढमुत्सर्जयाति यत्रैतदूर्ध्वोच्छ्वासी भवति ॥

Now as a heavy-laden carriage moves along groaning, thus does the Jivātman, mounted by the Intelligent Self (Brahman), moves along groaning, when a man is thus going to expire. (IV, 3-35).

Now it is impossible that the unconscious, the little knowing Jīva, either lying in deep sleep or departing from the body, should at the same time be embraced or mounted by itself, being all-knowing. Nor can the embracing and mounting Self be some other Jīva; for no such Self can be all-knowing.

The objector says : "The point at issue is, whether the Mukta Jīva is or is not identical with Brahman. You have only established that the Jīva in the state of deep sleep and while expiring, is different from Brahman. That we admit also, for in these two states the Jīva still has an Upādhi." This objection is answered by the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 3. 43.

पत्यादिशब्देभ्यः ॥ १ । ३ । ४३ ॥

पति Pati, Lord, Protector. आदि Âdi, et cetera, and the rest. शब्देभ्यः Sabdebhyaḥ, words. Paty-âdi-sabdebhyaḥ, on account of words like Pati, etc.

44. The Mukta Jīva is not identical with Brahman, because of such words as Lord, etc., applied to Him in that passage.—107.

#### COMMENTARY

In that passage of the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, we find the words Pati, etc., employed, which shows that the Mukta Jīva could not have been meant :

स वा एष महानज आत्मा योऽयं विज्ञानमयः प्राणेषु य एषोऽन्तर्हृदय आकाशस्तस्मिञ्छ्वेते सर्वम्य वशी सर्वस्येशानः सर्वस्यधिपतिः स न साधुना कर्मणा भूयान्नो एव साधुना कनीयान् एष सर्वेश्वर एष भूताधिपतिरेष भूतपाल एष सेतुर्विधरण एषां लोकानामसम्भेदाय ॥

And that is that great unborn Self, who consists of knowledge, is surrounded by the Prāṇs, the ether within the heart. In it there reposes the ruler of all, the lord of all, the king of all. He does not become greater by good works, nor smaller by evil works. He is the Lord of all, the King of all things, the Protector of all things. He is a bank and a boundary, so that these worlds may not be confounded.

This shows that Brahman is different from the Mukta Jīva. For we cannot predicate the lordliness over all, the ruling of all, the kingship of all to Mukta Jīva, for the Sūtra, IV, 4-17, declares that the released soul does not possess the power to create the universe, etc. Moreover, in the Taittirīya Âraṇyaka we find that Brahman alone is the dweller within of all beings, and their Ruler.

For He is described as:

अन्तः प्रविष्टः शास्ता जनानाम् ॥

Nor can it be said that the difference between the Jīva and Brahman is due to the Upādhi or limiting adjunct only, and therefore, is phenomenal and not real; because we find in the Scriptures that the difference exists even in the state of Release. In the Adhikarāṇa Sūtra II., 3. 41, this will be explained further on, where it will be taught that the statement that 'Ayamātmā Brahma'—"self is Brahman" is true only in the sense that the Jīva is a part of Brahman, and it has some of the attributes of Brahman. Similarly, the sentence 'Becoming Brahman he attains Brahman' means that the eight-fold attributes become manifest in the Jīva and thus he resembles Brahman; and this is the meaning of the phrase "Becoming Brahman," for other texts like 'Paramam sāmānyam upaiti'—he reaches the highest similarity' also show that similarity only is reached and not identity. The phrase "Reaching Brahman" is attaining this similarity. Therefore, Jīva is always different from Brahman, whether it be in the state of bondage or of release. This being established, it follows that the Ākāśa said to be the evolver of name and form in Chhândogya. Upaniṣad VIII., 14, is Brahman and not any released soul. This difference between Jīva and Brahman was established in the Sūtras I., 1. 16 & 17 also. But there it was done in a general way, while in the present Sūtra it is specifically established that even in the state of Mukti, the Jīva retains its separate identity.

## FIRST ADHYĀYA

### FOURTH PĀDA

*Adikaraṇa I—Avyakta of Kāṭha Upaniṣad, I., 3. 11, means  
body and not Prakṛti*

We pay our reverence to Bādarāyaṇa called Kṛṣṇadvaipāyana, who has wisdom as his ornament, and who like the sun has dispelled with the rays of his logic, the deep darkness of the fallacious reasoning of Sāṅkhya.

*Viśaya* : It has already been stated before, that the Supreme Brahman is the cause of the universe, and that He alone should be inquired into, in order to obtain Mukti, that He is the seed of the creation, the sustenance, and dissolution of the universe, that He is different from the dead matter called Jaḍam, and the individual souls called the Jīvas, that He has infinite powers, which are inconceivable; and that He is omniscient and possesses all auspicious attributes : He is free from all shadow of imperfection and has the power of realising all his purposes. The Sūtras now try to reconcile those texts, found in some Upaniṣads, which lend some countenance to the theory maintained by Kapila, as to there being a Pradhāna and individual souls, independent of God.

In the Kāṭha Upaniṣad we read :

इन्द्रियेभ्यः परा ह्यर्था अर्थेभ्यश्च परं मनः ।

मनसस्तु परा बुद्धिर्बुद्धेरात्मा महान् परः ॥ १० ॥

महतः परमव्यक्तमव्यक्तान् पुरुषः परः ।

पुरुषाच्च परं किञ्चित् सा काष्ठा सा परा गतिः ॥ ११ ॥

Beyond the senses there are the objects, beyond the objects there is the mind, beyond the mind there is the intellect, the Great Self is beyond the intellect. Beyond the Great, there is the Unevolved, beyond the Unevolved, there is the Person. Beyond the Person there is nothing—this is the goal, the highest road (I., 3. 11).

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Does the word Unevolved (Avyakta) mean the Pradhāna of the Sāṅkhyas or body.

*Pūrṇapalaśa* : The opponent says : It means the Pradhāna, because the text says that beyond the Mahat is the Avyakta, and beyond Avyakta there is the Puruṣa. This is the order in which the Sāṅkhyas also mention their Tattvas.

*Siddhānta* : This objection is answered by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 4. 1.

आनुमानिकमप्येकेषामिति चेन्, न, शरीररूपकविन्यस्तगृहीतेर्दर्शयति च ॥ १ । ४ । १ ॥

आनुमानिकम् Ānumānikam, that which rests on inference, namely, the Pradhāna. अपि Api, also. एकेषाम् Ekeṣām, of some : i.e., of the Kāthakas. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. शरीर Sarira, body. रूपम् Rūpaka, simile. विन्यस्त Vinysta, contained. गृहीतेः Gṛhiteḥ, because of the reference. दर्शयति Darśayati, shows. च Cha, and.

1. If it be said that the Kātha Upaniṣad mentions the Pradhāna, we say no. The word Avyakta occurs there in a passage, containing a simile of the body, and must, therefore, mean "body"; and the text shows this also.—109.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'of some' means the Kāthas. The Kāthaka Śruti refers to the Pradhāna called "the inferred one." The word Avyakta means that which is not vyakta, "manifest or evolved," and refers to the substrate of matter called Prakṛti or Pradhāna. This objection is answered by the second half of the Sūtra, which declares that the Avyaktam here does not mean "unmanifested," but "body." Because it occurs in a passage where the body is compared to a chariot and the other things like mind, Buddhi, etc., as various objects connected with this chariot. In fact, the whole passage shows this. In order to understand it fully, we give below the entire passage :

आत्मान् ५ रथिनं विद्धि शरीर ५ रथमेव तु ।  
 बुद्धिन्तु सारथिं विद्धि मनः प्रग्रहमेव च ॥ ३ ॥  
 इन्द्रियाणि हयानाहुर्विषया ५ स्तेषु गोचरान् ।  
 आत्मेन्द्रियमनोयुक्तं भोक्त्याहुर्मनीषिणः ॥ ४ ॥  
 यस्त्वविज्ञानवान् भवत्ययुक्तेन मनसा सदा ।  
 तस्येन्द्रियाण्यवश्यानि दुष्टाश्वा इव सारथेः ॥ ५ ॥  
 यस्तु विज्ञानवान् भवति युक्तेन मनसा सदा ।  
 तस्येन्द्रियाणि वश्यानि सदश्वा इव सारथेः ॥ ६ ॥  
 यस्त्वविज्ञानवान् भवत्यमनस्कः सदाऽशुचिः ।  
 न स तत्पदमाप्नोति स ५ सारञ्चाधिगच्छति ॥ ७ ॥  
 यस्तु विज्ञानवान् भवति समनस्कः सदा शुचिः ।  
 स तु तत्पदमाप्नोति यस्माद्भूयो न जायते ॥ ८ ॥  
 विज्ञानसारथिर्यस्तु मनः प्रग्रहवान्नरः ।  
 सोऽध्वनः पारमाप्नोति तद्विष्णोः परमम्पदम् ॥ ९ ॥  
 इन्द्रियेभ्यः परा ह्यर्था अर्थेभ्यश्च परं मनः ।  
 मनसस्त परा बुद्धिर्बुद्धेरात्मा महान् परः ॥ १० ॥  
 महतः परमव्यक्तमव्यक्तात् पुरुषः परः ।  
 पुरुषाच्च परं किञ्चित् सा काष्ठा सा परा गतिः ॥ ११ ॥



एष सर्वेषु भूतेषु गूढात्मा न प्रकाशते ।  
 दृश्यते त्वग्रया बुद्ध्या सूक्ष्मया सूक्ष्मदर्शिभिः ॥ १२ ॥  
 यच्छेदाद्भ्रमनसी प्राज्ञस्तथच्छेज्ज्ञान आत्मनि ।  
 ज्ञानमात्मनि महति नियच्छेत्तथच्छेच्छान्त आत्मनि ॥ १३ ॥

3. Know the Self to be sitting in the chariot, the body to be the chariot, the intellect (Buddhi) the charioteer, and the mind the reins.

4. The senses they call the horses, the objects of the senses their roads. When He (the Highest Self) is in union with the body, the senses, and the mind, then wise people call him the Enjoyer.

5. He who has no understanding and whose mind (the reins) is never firmly held, his senses (horses) are unmanageable, like vicious horses of a charioteer.

6. But he who has understanding and whose mind is always firmly held, his senses are under control, like good horses of a charioteer.

7. He who has no understanding, who is unmindful and always impure, never reaches that place, but enters into the round of births.

8. But he who has understanding, who is mindful and always pure, reaches indeed that place, from whence he is not born again.

9. But he who has understanding for his charioteer, and who holds the reins of the mind, he reaches the end of his journey, and that is the highest place of Viṣṇu.

10. Beyond the senses there are the objects, beyond the objects there is the mind, beyond the mind there is the intellect, the Great Self is beyond the intellect.

11. Beyond the Great there is the Undeveloped, beyond the Undeveloped there is the Person (Puruṣa). Beyond the Person there is nothing—this is the goal, the highest road.

12. That Self is hidden in all beings and does not shine forth, but it is seen by subtle seers through their sharp and subtle intellect.

13. A wise man should keep down speech and mind ; he should keep them within the Self which is knowledge ; he should keep the knowledge within the Self which is the Great ; and he should keep that (the Great) within the Self which is the Quiet.

This passage shows that the pilgrim desirous to reach Viṣṇu, the Supreme Goal, is represented here, in the simile of a charioteer, his body is represented as a chariot, his senses as the horses, his emotional and intellectual faculties as the charioteer, etc. It further shows that he who has these faculties under control, reaches the highest state of Viṣṇu, at the end of his journey. The verses under discussion only show how to control these in succession, and how the control of one is easier or more difficult, according as one is grosser or more subtle. The text thus refers only to those entities, which have previously appeared in the simile under the names of chariot, horses, charioteer, the reins, etc., because the words are almost the same. Now contrasting the words of the simile, with the words of the passage under discussion, we see that 'body' is only left out, and therefore, the word 'Avyakta' must denote the body, which is the remainder that we get by this method of exhaustion, and from the context also. It has no reference to the Sāṅkhya Tattvas, for it is against.

the theory of the Sāṅkhyas. The Sāṅkhyas do not admit that the Arthas are the cause of the Indriyas, and so higher than these ; nor that the Manas is higher than Arthas.

*Note :* In the simile (verses 3 to 9) we have the following entities :

ENTITY.	SIMILE.
Sarīra (body)	chariot.
Buddhi (reason)	charioteer.
Manas (lower intellect)	reins.
Arthas (objects)	roads.
Indriyas (senses)	horses.

The same idea is expressed in verses 10 and 11, showing, how one is more difficult to control than the other. Thus Indriyas (senses) are easier to control than the Arthas (objects.) The objects easier than the Manas, and the Manas easier than Buddhi.

The Soul is said to be the chariot-seated, because it is the principal enjoyer ; and lord of the chariot (*i. e.*, of the body, the instrument of enjoyment). The Buddhi is the driver, as it brings pleasure or pain to the soul, according as it has discrimination or not

Now an objection is raised, how can the body which is manifest and visible (Vyakta), be said to be unmanifest and unevolved ? The author replies to this in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA 1., 4. 2.

सूक्ष्मन्तु तदर्हत्वात् ॥ १ । ४ । २ ॥

सूक्ष्मं Sūkṣmam, the subtle, the permanent atoms, the causal body. तु Tu, but. तत् Tat, that, its. अर्हत्वात् Arhatvât, because of its capability.

2. But by the word body is meant the subtle body, and the term Avyakta or unmanifest is capable of being applied to it.—110.

#### COMMENTARY

That word 'Tu' is employed in the Sūtra in order to remove the above doubt. By Sarīra is not meant here the dense body, but the highest, the subtlest body or the causal body. Why do you say that it denotes the causal body ? Because of its capability, that is to say, the causal body can appropriately be called Avyakta or unmanifest. In fact in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4. 7, the Kāraṇa Sarīra is called by the term unevolved or Avyākṛta, and shows that before the world came into manifestation, it was in the form of a seed or causal body.

तदेदं तद्व्याकृतमासीत् तन्नामरूपाभ्यामेव व्याक्रियतेऽसौ नामायमिदं रूप इति तदिदमप्येतर्हि नामरूपाभ्यामेव व्याक्रियतेऽसौ नामायमिदं रूप इति स एष इह प्रविष्ट आनखाग्नेभ्यो यथा क्षुरः क्षुरधानेऽवहितः स्याद्विश्वंभरो वा विश्वंभरकुलाये ॥

Now all this was then undeveloped. It became developed by form and name, so that one could say, 'He, called so and so, is such a one.' Therefore, at present also all this is developed by name and form, so that one can say, 'He, called so and so, is such a one.' He (Brahman or the Self) entered thither, to the very tips of the finger-nails, as a razor might be fitted in a razor-case, or as fire in a fireplace, etc.

But another objection is raised: If the Avyakta or unevolved is taken to be matter in its subtle state constituting the causal body, what objection is there to interpret it as the Pradhâna of the Sâṅkhya system, for there also Avyakta means matter in a subtle state. This objection is answered by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA I., 4. 3.

तदधीनत्वादर्थवत् ॥ १ । ४ । ३ ॥

तद् Tad, its, his, on him, that is on the Lord. अधीनत्वात् Adhinatvāt, on account of dependence. अर्थवत् Arthavat, having a sense or a meaning, subserving an end or purpose.

3. The Pradhâna is capable of producing her effects, not independently as the Sâṅkhyas hold, but because she is dependent upon Brahman, the Supreme Cause.—111.

COMMENTARY

We do not totally deny the existence of Pradhâna, what we contest is the theory of the Sâṅkhyas, according to which Pradhâna produces the world by her own independent action. Matter in its subtle state subserves an end, by its dependence on the Supreme Person. Because the Lord looks on the matter and energises her, that she has the power of producing the world. In her own nature she is Jaḍam. As we find in the Śvetâśvatara Upaniṣad, IV., 9 and 10 :

छन्दांसि यथाः क्रतवो व्रतानि भूतं भव्यं यच्च वेदा वदन्ति । अस्मान्मायी सृजते विश्वमेतत् तस्मिन् श्रान्यो मायया सन्निरुद्धः ॥ ९ ॥ मायां तु प्रकृतिं विषान्मायिनं तु मोहेश्वरम् । तस्यावयवभूतैस्तु व्याप्तं सर्वमिदं जगत् ॥ १० ॥

That from which the maker (Māyin) sends forth all this—the sacred verses, the offerings, the sacrifices, the panaceas, the past, the future, and all that the Vedas declare—in that the other is bound up through that Māyā.

Know then Prakṛti (nature) is Māyā (art) and the Great Lord the Māyin (maker) ; the whole world is filled with what are his members.

य एको वर्णो बहुधा शक्तियोगात् वर्णाननेकान् निहितार्थो दधाति । विचैति चान्ते विश्वमादौ स देवः स नो बुद्ध्या शुभया संयुजक्यु ॥ १ ॥

He, the sun, without any colour, who with set purpose by means of his power (Śakti) produces endless colours, in whom all this comes together in the beginning, and comes asunder in the end—may He, the God, endow us with good thoughts,

So also in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa we find that Pradhāna by her own unaided exertions does not produce the universe.

स एव भूयो निजवीर्यचोदितां स्वजीवमायां प्रकृतिं सिसृक्षतीम् । अनामरूपात्मनि रूपनामनी विधित्समानोऽनुसारं शास्त्रकृत् ॥

The Lord entered into Prakṛti, in order to create the universe, after having endowed her with His own powers, and which contained in her the power of deluding the Jīvas. He, the Great Revealer of all Scriptures, also entered into the Jīvas, which had no names and forms before, and which thereby obtained such name and form, in order that they may enjoy the fruit of their actions, and attain liberation.

Similarly, in Viṣṇu Purāṇa we find :

प्रधानं पुरुषञ्चापि प्रविश्यात्मेच्छया हरिः ।

क्षोभयामास संप्राप्ते सर्गकाले व्ययाव्ययौ ॥

Hari the Great Lord enters into Pradhāna and the Jīvas by his own free will, and energises them, when the hour for creation strikes. He enters into Pradhāna which constantly undergoes modification ; and into the Jīva who, is without modification.

So also in the Gītā we find, (IX, 10) :

मयाध्यक्षेण प्रकृतिः स्यते सचराचरम् । हेतुनानेन कौन्तेय जगद्विपरिवर्तते ॥

Under me, as supervisor, Prakṛti sends forth all the moving and unmoving objects ; because of this, O Kaunteya, the universe revolves (See also Gītā, VII, 4-7).

For these reasons, while admitting the existence of the Pradhāna, we oppose the theory of the Sāṅkhyas which declares the Pradhāna to be an independent cause of creation. We modify their teaching by declaring that the Pradhāna is a dependent cause of creation.

In the next Sūtra, the author gives another reason for holding that the Avyakta of the Kaṭha Upaniṣad is not to be interpreted as Pradhāna.

SŪTRA 1., 4. 4.

ज्ञेयत्वावचनाच्च ॥ १ । ४ । ४ ॥

ज्ञेयत्वं Jñeyatva, of the nature of being known, an object of knowledge. अवचनाच्च Avachanât, because of non-mention. च Cha, and.

4. Because there is no statement, in this passage of the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, that the Avyakta is an object of knowledge, therefore, the Avyakta does not mean the Sāṅkhya Pradhāna.—112.

#### COMMENTARY

The Sāṅkhyas say that liberation (Kaivalya) is obtained by the knowledge of Pradhāna, as being distinct from Puruṣa. So according to the Sāṅkhyas, Release depends upon this discriminative knowledge ; and according to them this *knowledge* of Pradhāna as separate from Puruṣa is

necessary in order to attain certain powers. But there is no such mention in this Upaniṣad that the knowledge of Avyakta is necessary to get Release, or to obtain powers. Therefore, Avyakta here cannot mean the Pradhāna of the Sāṅkhyas.

*Note:* According to the Sāṅkhyas the Kaivalya is attained by knowing that the Puruṣa is different from Prakṛti. The knowledge of Prakṛti is thus an essential of release. But the Kāṭha Upaniṣad nowhere mentions that the knowledge of "Avyakta" is necessary for release. The Avyakta, therefore, of the Kāṭha Upaniṣad is not the Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas.

SŪTRA I., 4. 5.

“वदति” इति चेन्, न ; प्राज्ञो हि प्रकरणात् ॥ १ । ४ । ५ ॥

वदति Vadati, the verse says, or the text says. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. प्राज्ञः Prājñah, the Intelligent Self, the Paramātmān. हि Hi, because. प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇāt, of the subject-matter.

5. If it be said that the text does teach that this Avyakta is to be known, we say no, because the declaration about knowing, refers to the Supreme Self, and the context also shows it to be thus.—113.

#### COMMENTARY

An objector says “the text declares that the Avyakta is to be known, for immediately after the above verses is the following :

अशब्दमपशंमरूपमव्ययं तथाऽरसस्मित्यमगन्धवच्च यत् ।

अनाद्यनन्तममृतः परब्रह्मं निचाय्य तन्मृत्युमुखात्प्रमुच्यते ॥

He who has meditated on that which is without sound, without touch, without form, without decay, without taste, eternal, without smell, without beginning, without end, beyond the Great, unchangeable, is freed from the jaws of death (Kāṭha Up., II., 3. 15).

This description applies to Pradhāna, very well ; because it is without sound, without touch, etc., and is beyond the Great, or Mahatattva. This passage, by using the word Nichāyya, which means “having known or perceived,” shows that Pradhāna ought to be known. Therefore, the objection raised in the last Sūtra that this Upaniṣad nowhere teaches the knowing of Pradhāna falls to the ground.

This objection is raised in the first half of the present Sūtra and is answered by the second half. The reference is here not to the Pradhāna, but to the Supreme Self called Prājña. “Beyond the Great or Mahat” does not mean “beyond the Mahatattva” of the Sāṅkhyas, but beyond Hiranyagarbha, and Jīva ; because the Jīva is called Great or Mahat, in the above passage. The whole context shows that the Aśābdam, etc.,

refers to the Supreme Self, and not to the Pradhāna. Thus verse 11, declares "Beyond the Person there is nothing. This is the goal, the highest road." So also, "That Self is hidden in all beings and does not shine forth, but it is seen by subtle seers, through their sharp and subtle intellect."

The author gives another reason for holding that Pradhāna is not meant in this passage of the Kaṭha Upaniṣad.

SŪTRA I., 4. 6.

त्रयाणामेव चैवमुपन्यासः प्रश्नश्च ॥ १ । ४ । ६ ॥

त्रयाणाम् Trayāṇām, of the three, namely, three boons asked by Nachiketas. एव Eva, only. च Cha, and. एवम् Evam, thus. उपन्यासः Upanyāsaḥ, mention. प्रश्नः Praśanaḥ, question. च Cha, and.

6. Moreover, there is mention in this Upaniṣad, of only three things or boons ; and the question also relates to three things only.—114.

COMMENTARY

The force of 'Cha' is to remove doubt. In this Kaṭha Upaniṣad, three boons are only asked by Nachiketas, namely, that his father should be well disposed towards him ; that he should be taught the secret of the celestial fire ; and that he should be initiated into the mystery of the Self. (Moreover, three objects of knowledge only are to be found here, and the question is relating to those three objects, namely, the means of knowledge, the person knowing, and the end to be realised). There is no question here relating to Pradhāna, or any other object, and so it would have been irrelevant for the teacher, to have given any information about Pradhāna, regarding which no question was asked. Therefore, the Avyakta here does not refer to Pradhāna.

SŪTRA I., 4. 7.

महद्वत् च ॥ १ । ४ । ७ ॥

महद्वत् Mahadvat, like the Mahat. च Cha, and.

7. And as the word 'Mahat.' occurring in this passage, is not taken to refer to the 'Mahat' of the Sāṅkhyas, so also the Avyakta here does not denote the Pradhāna of that philosophy.—115.

COMMENTARY

In the passage under consideration, we find it stated "higher than the intellect is the Great Self Mahân-âtma." Now no one has ever

contended that this "Mahat" used here refers to the Sāṅkhya Mahattatva, on the contrary, it is unanimously taken to mean the Jīvātman. Why should then the word Avyakta be taken to mean Prakṛti? The word Avyakta, being taught here to be higher than the Jīvātman, must be something different from Pradhāna. The Buddhi is the Mahat of the Sāṅkhyas. But in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, the Mahat is said to be higher than Buddhi—Buddherātmā mahān paraḥ. So the Mahat of the Kaṭha Upaniṣad is different from the Mahat of the Sāṅkhyas.

*Adhikaraṇa II.—The Ajā of Śvetasvatara Upaniṣad, IV., 5, does not mean Pradhāna.*

The author next refutes another wrong interpretation given by the Sāṅkhyas, of a verse from another Upaniṣad. This is to be found in Śvetasvatara Upaniṣad, IV., 5 :

अजमेकां लोहितशुक्लवर्णां बहीः प्रजाः सजमानां सरूपाः । अजो ह्येको जुषमाणोऽनुशेते जहात्येनां  
भुक्तभोगामजोऽन्यः ॥ ५ ॥

There is one unborn being (Ajā), red, white, and black, uniform, but producing manifold offspring. There is one unborn being (Ajā) who loves her and lies by her ; there is another who leaves her, while she is eating what has to be eaten.

*Doubt :* Does the word Ajā, *unborn*, mean here the well-known Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas, or the divine power of the Brahman mentioned in the Upaniṣad ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The word Ajā here denotes the Sāṅkhya Prakṛti, because she is called 'unborn,' that is, not an effect, and because she is said to produce manifold offspring by her own unaided effort.

*Siddhānta :* The Ajā here does not mean Prakṛti, as the author proves in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA 1., 4. 8.

चमसवद्विशेषात् ॥ १ । ४ । ८ ॥

चमसवत् Chamasavat, like a cup. अविशेषात् Avišeṣāt, because there is no special characteristic.

8. The word Ajā here does not denote the Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas, because there is no special characteristic of her mentioned here, it is unlike the mention of the word 'Chamasa' or cup in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, where it does not convey its literal meaning of the "cup," but means the skull of the head.—116.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Na' is to be read into this Sūtra from I, 4. 5. The word Ajā here cannot mean the well-known Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas, because there are no special characteristic marks of Prakṛti in this passage. It simply means here "*one that is not born*," and need not necessarily mean the unborn Prakṛti. It is not like the word 'cup' used in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (II, 2. 3) where, owing to the context, it is taken to mean the 'skull,' and not a vessel from which one drinks. But there is nothing in the context here which would lead us to infer, that the 'unborn' meant Prakṛti. That passage is the following :

तदेव श्लोको भवत्यर्वाग्विलक्ष्मस ऊर्ध्वबुध्नस्तस्मिन् यशो निहितं विश्वरूपं तस्यासत ऋषयः सप्ततीरवा-  
गष्टमी ब्रह्मणा संविदानेत्यर्वाग्विलक्ष्मस ऊर्ध्वबुध्न इतीदं तच्छिर एष ह्यर्वाग्विलक्ष्मस ऊर्ध्वबुध्नस्तस्मिन् यशो निहितं  
विश्वरूपमिति प्राणा वै यशो निहितं विश्वरूपं प्राणानेतदाह तस्यासत ऋषयः सप्ततीर इति प्राणा वा  
ऋषयः प्राणानेतदाह वागष्टमी ब्रह्मणा संविदानेति वाग्यष्टमी ब्रह्मणा संवित्ते ॥ ३ ॥

There is a cup having its mouth below and its bottom above. Manifold glory has been placed into it. On its lip sit the seven Ṛṣis, the tongue as the eighth communicates with Brahman. What is called the cup having its mouth below, its bottom above, is this head, for its mouth, (the mouth) is below, its bottom (the skull) is above. When it is said that manifold glory has been placed into it, the senses are verily manifold glory, and he, therefore, means the senses. When he says that seven Ṛṣis sit on its lip, the Ṛṣis are verily the (active) senses, and he means the senses. And when he says that the tongue as the eighth communicates with Brahman, it is because the tongue, as the eighth, does communicate with Brahman.

In the above verse of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, we cannot take the word Chamasa in its etymological sense, namely, that implement by which anything is (Chamyate) drunk. We cannot say it means a cup there, though, the literal meaning of the word is "an implement of eating." Of course, words, the meaning of which we know through their derivation, are not to be taken in their literal sense, without considering the context, the general possibility, the general subject-matter, etc., of the passage in which such words occur. For this reason Ajā may mean the Prakṛti; but when we look out to see whether this word which by its derivation means 'unborn' can be taken to mean the Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas, we find that there are no such considerations of general possibility, of general subject-matter, and so on in this Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad by which such a meaning could be given to it. Nor is there anything in that passage, by which one may know that Ajā there possesses the power of creation independently of the Lord; all that that passage says is this that Ajā gives birth to 'manifold offspring,' it does not say that she creates unaided, therefore also Ajā here does not refer to the Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas, which creates unaided.



The author gives another special reason to show that the word Ajâ means here the divine power so often mentioned in the Vedas and not the Prakṛti of the Sāṅkhyas.

SŪTRA I., 4. 9.

ज्योतिरुपक्रमा तु तथादधीयते एके ॥ १ । ४ । ९ ॥

ज्योतिः Jyotiḥ, light, the Supreme Brahman. उपक्रमा Upakramā, commencing with, beginning with. Jyotir-upakramā, she who has her beginning in Brahman. Whose cause or source is Light. तु Tu, but. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, for this reason. अधीयते Adhiyate, some read, some recensions have the reading. That is, another Sāṅkhins read. The reference is to Âtharvāṇas. एके Eke, some.

9. But this Ajâ is described as having Her beginning in Light, as we find in some recensions, and therefore, it cannot mean Prakṛti—117.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu' or 'but' has the force of declaring that there is no doubt about it. The word Jyotiḥ in the Sūtra means Brahman, because we find 'light' meaning Brahman in passages like these : "On Him the Devas meditate, He who is the Light of lights" (Bṛi. Up., X., 4. 16) "Ajâ has her beginning in Light" means she has Brahman for her cause, the word "beginning" means here the "cause." Therefore Brahman is the primary cause of Ajâ herself, and it has not the literal meaning of 'unborn' here ; just as the word 'Chamasa' had not the literal meaning of 'an implement of eating,' in the above passage of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, because it has a special sense here. In the above passage of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad it was specifically said that the cup had its mouth below and its bottom above, and that the head was this cup. By that description given there, we came to know that the 'cup' there meant the 'skull.' Similarly in this Svetâśvatara Upaniṣad in Chapter I we find that Ajâ is used along with the word 'Devâtmaśakti,' the 'divine power,' and again in Chapter IV., we find the word 'Śakti' 'divine power' used. Therefore, as we find reference to the 'divine power,' wherever the word Ajâ is used, we infer that it means divine power. We give those verses here below :

ते ष्वानयोगाश्रुता अपश्यन् देवात्मशक्तिं स्वयुद्धेर्निगूढाम् । यः कारयानि निखिलानि तानि काशा-  
स्वयुक्तान्यपि तिष्ठत्येकः ॥

The sages devoted to meditation and concentration, have seen the power belonging to God himself (Devâtmaśakti), hidden in its own qualities (Guna). He, being one, superintends all those causes, time, self, and the rest—(Sve. Up., 1., 3).

शाहौ द्रावजावीशानीशावजा ह्येका भोक्तृभोगार्थयुक्ता । अन्ततश्चात्मा विश्वरूपो ह्यकर्ता त्रयं यदा विंदते  
ब्रह्मेतत् ॥ ९ ॥

There are two, one knowing (Īśvara), the other not knowing (Jīva), both unborn (Ajā), one strong; the other weak, there is she the unborn (Ajā), through whom each man receives the recompense of his works ; and there is the infinite Self (appearing) under all forms, but himself inactive. When a man finds out these three, that is Brahman.—Śve. Up., I., 9.)

य एको वर्णो बहुधा शक्तियोगात् वर्णानेकान् निहितार्थो दधाति । विचैति चान्ते विश्वमादौ स देवः  
स नो बुद्ध्या शुभया संयुनक्तु ॥ १ ॥

He, the Lord, without any colour, who with set purpose by means of his power (Śakti) produces endless colours, in whom all this comes together in the beginning, and comes asunder in the end—may he, endow us with good thoughts.—(Śve. Up., IV., 1)

Therefore, Ajā does not mean Prakṛti. The author gives an additional reason for this interpretation, in the second half of this Sūtra "Tathāhi," etc. The word 'Hi' means here 'for this reason also.' As some Upaniṣads read that Prakṛti herself is born of Brahman, and so Ajā in its literal sense of 'unborn' cannot apply to Prakṛti. Thus in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, we read (I, 1. 9) : 'Tasmāt etat Brahma nāma rūpam annam cha jāyate'—'from him are produced this Brahman, name, form and food.' The word Brahma here means the Pradhāna, having the three qualities of Sattva, Rajas, and Tamas ; and we find it used in this sense in the Gītā also (XIV., 3) मम योनिर्महद्ब्रह्म, etc. My womb is the great Brahman, in that I place the germ ; thence cometh the birth of all beings, O Bhārata. This shows that Prakṛti herself is produced from the Lord.

If Prakṛti denoted by the word Ajā, has its cause in Brahman, how, can it be called Ajā or 'unborn,' or if it is strictly and really 'unborn,' how can we say that it originates in Brahman ? The next Sūtra gives a reply to this.

SŪTRA I., 4. 10.

कल्पनोपदेशाच्च, मध्वादिवदविरोधः ॥ १ । ४ । १० ॥

कल्पना Kalpanā, the creative power of thought, formation, creation.  
उपदेशाच्च Upadeśāt, from teaching, on account of teaching. च Cha, and.  
मध्वादिवत् Madhu-ādi-vat, like honey and the rest. अविरोधः Avirodhah, there is no conflict.

10. Because it is taught that the Pradhāna is the creation of the Lord, so there is no contradiction in calling her both created and uncreated, as is the case of honey (i. e., the sun, about which it can be correctly said that he rises and sets, as looked from

the earth, and rises not and sets not, as looked from the centre.)—118.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Cha' in the Sūtra denotes the removal of the doubt that has arisen. There is no conflict in calling the Prakṛti *created*, as well as *unborn*, for both are possible in her case. The word Kalpanā in this Sūtra means creation, and not imagination, as we find it used in the following verse of the Ṛg Veda: 'Yathā pūrvam akalpayat,' "as formerly the creator made the sun and the moon." We call Pradhāna *created*, because there is a statement in the Scriptures that she comes out of the Tamas Śakti of Brahman. The truth is this: there is a power of the Supreme which is eternal and very subtle called Tamas. As we find in:

'Tama āsit tamasā gūḍham agre.' (Ṛg Veda, X., 1. 29. 3.)

"In the beginning was the Tamas in union with Brahman."

'Yadā tamas tan na divā na rātriḥ.' "When there was Tamaś, that neither day nor night. गौरनादवती etc. "Prakṛti is a cow, but voiceless" (Chulika Upaniṣad.)

This Tamas, at the time of Pralaya, becomes united with Brahman, but not merged in him. During Pralaya thus united with Him, it remains as a part of Brahman; and we cannot say that she has *merged* into Brahman. It is not a state of merging, like that of the earth merging into water, or of water *merging* into fire (gas) etc., as mentioned in the Śrutis. The Śrutis distinctly say that the elements beginning with Pṛthivī up to Akṣara, become *merged* into its higher; but with regard to Tamas there is no such statement of *merging*. On the contrary, it is distinctly said that Tamas becomes *united* with the Supreme. This becoming united with the Supreme means that on account of its being extremely subtle, it is impossible to separate it from the Lord. It does not mean that it has become the Lord. The force of the affix Chvi in the word *Eki Bhavati*, 'becomes one' denotes such *union* not *identity*. Therefore, when the Supreme Lord desires to create, then this Tamas Śakti, which was one with the Lord, becomes separated from him and there arises the Avyakta, called also Prakṛti, with her three-fold attributes or Guṇas in equilibrium. The Scripture says the Mahat merges (Laya) into Avyakta. The Avyakta merges (Laya) into Akṣara. The Akṣara merges (Laya) into Tamas. So also in the Mahā Bhārata we find, "From Him arose the Avyakta, possessing the three-fold qualities (Guṇas). From this Avyakta arises in succession, Mahat and other Tattvas." Thus the teaching being distinctly given that the Pradhāna is created, we come to the conclusion that the Prakṛti has two states. It exists either as

a cause, when it can be said to be *unborn*, or it exists as an *effect*, when it is said to be produced. So also we find in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa : "From Pradhāna and the Puruṣa both unborn as cause and both also as effects of Brahma." At the time of creation, the Guṇas like Sattva, etc., arise in her and she becomes distinguished by names and forms, and gets the names of Pradhāna Avyakta, etc. and in that state Jyotirupakramā, born from the light, born of Brahman. The Sūtra then says, "That this is analogous to the case of honey and the rest," for in the Chhāndogya Upaniṣad, Chapter III, there is a section relating to honey called Madhu Vidyā. There it is shown that the sun exists in a two-fold state. In its causal state all its rays become one in it, but in its state of effect, they become separate from him, and they become honey, or the object of enjoyment to the Devas like Vasu, etc. Similarly, the sun looked at as a cause is really unmoving; but as an effect, he appears to move; and rises and sets. As in the case of the sun, both statements are correct, that he rises, and he rises not; so in the case of Ajā, that she is created and uncreated; that she is born as well as unborn.

*Adhikaraṇa III.—The Pañcha-pañcha-janāḥ of Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 17, does not refer to the 25 elements of the Sāṅkhyas.*

*Viṣaya:* In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (IV., 4-16, 17, and 18), we read:

यस्माद् वाक्संवत्सरोऽहोभिः परिवर्तते ॥ तदेवा ज्योतिषा ज्योतिरायुर्होपासतेऽमृतम् ॥ १६ ॥ यस्मिन् पञ्च पञ्च जना आकाशश्च प्रतिष्ठितः ॥ तमेव मन्य आत्मानं विद्वान्ब्रह्मायुतोऽमृतम् ॥ १७ ॥ प्राणस्य प्राणमुत चक्षुषश्चक्षुस्त ओत्रस्य ओत्रं मनसो ये मनो विदुः ॥ ते निचिक्षुर्ब्रह्मपुराणमग्रम् ॥ १८ ॥

He in whom the five beings and the ether rest, him alone I believe to be the Self,—I who know, believe Him to be Brahman; I who am immortal, believe Him to be immortal.

They, who know the life of life, the eye of the eye, the ear of the ear, the food of the food, the mind of the mind, they have comprehended the ancient primeval Brahman.

*Doubt :* Do the words five, five people (Pañcha, pañcha janāḥ) mean the twenty-five categories of Kāpila system or merely five? Then the word Pañcha Janāḥ would be a Bahuvrihi compound, qualified by the term Pañcha, thus making a Karmadhāraya compound. In this sense it would mean, "The five beings, every one of which is called a Pañcha-jana."

*Purvapakṣa :* The phrase 'pañcha-pañcha-janāḥ' means 'five times

five, i.e.: twenty-five, and Janâḥ or products.' It refers to the twenty-five Tattvas of the Sāṅkhyas. Otherwise, 'five, five people has no meaning. No doubt, Kapila enumerates twenty-five Tattvas, while in this Upaniṣad passage there are twenty-seven substances enumerated, including Âkāśa and Âtman. This anomaly, however, is not of much importance. The word Janâḥ does mean Tattva also, as we find in the sentence "janas tattva-samûhaka."

*Siddhānta* : This objection is met by the author in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 4. 11.

न संख्योपसंग्रहादपि नानाभावादतिरेकाच्च ॥ १ । ४ । ११ ॥

न Na, not. संख्या Saṅkhyā, number. उपसंग्रहात् Upasaṅgrahāt, on account of mention, or enumeration. अपि Api, even. नाना Nānā, many. भावात् Bhāvāt, beings. अतिरेकात् Atirekāt, on account of excess. च Cha, and.

11. Even the enumeration of numbers peculiar to the Sāṅkhyas, does not make this passage refer to their Prakṛti, because the Tattvas of the Sāṅkhyas have diversity, and because there is an excess in the above enumeration—119.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Api' or even shows possibility, that is to say, that if five times five products be taken for the Sāṅkhyas categories, still the passage will be open to certain objections. Those objections are two. (i) The categories of the Sāṅkhyas are not five collections of five; they are twenty-five *separate* things that enter into the composition of every being. (ii) The above passage also enumerates twenty-seven and not twenty-five; for it includes Âtma and Âkāśa as separate entities, from the five times five mentioned above. We must not fall into the error of thinking that the twenty-five categories of the Sāṅkhyas are meant, merely by hearing the phrase 'five times five.'

How then do you explain the above passage? We reply to this as follows : The word Pañcha-janâḥ is a group-denoting term, and is the special name belonging to all the members of that group. The group consists of five members, each of whom is called a Pañcha-janâḥ. Therefore, the phrase Pañcha-pañcha-janâḥ does not mean five times five beings, but five beings, every one of whom is called a Pañcha-janâḥ. It is just

like the phrase Saptarṣi, which denotes the constellation Ursa Major, consisting of seven stars. The word Saptarṣi is a special name of every one of these stars, and when we say seven Saptarṣis we do not mean seven times seven stars, but seven stars each one of whom is called a Saptarṣi. Therefore, Pañcha-pañcha-janāḥ does not mean five times five products, but five people every one of whom is called a Pañcha-janāḥ.

*Note* : The term Pañcha-janāḥ is formed under Pāṇini I., 1. 15 and denotes a special name. There are certain beings, the special name of which is five people, and of these beings the additional word Pañcha predicates that they are five in number. The twenty-five Tattvas of the Sāṅkhyas are these: Prakṛti, 2-8 seven modifications of it, namely, Mahat, etc., which are causal substances as well as effects; and 9-24 sixteen effects and, (25) the 25 soul which is neither a causal substance nor an effect. See Sāṅkhya Kārika 3.

Who then are these beings called Pañcha-janāḥ? To this the next Sūtra gives the reply.

SŪTRA I., 4. 12.

प्राणादयो वाक्यशेषात् ॥ १ । ४ । १२ ॥

प्राणादयः Prāṇādayaḥ, the Prāṇa and the rest. वाक्य Vākya, a sentence. शेषात् Seṣāt, because of the complement: the subsequent passage which completes the verse.

12. The five beings referred to in the above passage of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad are the Prāṇa and the rest, as appears from the next verse of that Upaniṣad.—120.

COMMENTARY

The Prāṇa and the rest are given in the following verse :

प्राणस्य प्राणमुत चक्षुषश्चक्षुरुत श्रोत्रस्य श्रोत्रमन्नस्यान्नं मनसो ये मनो विदुः ॥ ते निचिक्वुर्ब्रह्म पुराणमग्रम् ॥

They who know the life of life, the eye of the eye, the ear of the ear, the food of the food, the mind of the mind, they have comprehended the ancient, primeval Brahman. (Bṛ. Up., IV., 4. 18)

So the five beings are life, eye, ear, food, and mind, every one of which is called a Pañcha-janāḥ.

*Objection* : But this is possible only in the recension of the Mādhyandinas, who read the additional word Annasya Annam. But in the Kāṇva recension that phrase Annasya Annam is omitted and we have only four. This objection is answered by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA I., 4. 13.

ज्योतिषैकेषामपत्यन्ने ॥ १ । ४ । १३ ॥

ज्योतिष Jyotiṣā, by light; by counting "light" as among the above list. एकेषाम् Ekeṣām, of some texts or recensions, i. e., of the Kāṇvas. असति Asati, in the absence of, or there not existing. अन्ने Anne, food.

13. In the text of some (Kāṇvas) the word 'light' is mentioned instead of food, and this makes up the number five.—121.

## COMMENTARY

In the recension of the Kāṇvas though the word 'Annam' is not mentioned, yet in the passage immediately preceding, we find the word Jyotiṣ or light mentioned. Taking this word Jyotiṣ along with the four words mentioned in the above verse, we get the number five. Thus in Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 16, we find the word Jyotiṣ mentioned in the passage: "Him the Devas worship as the Light of lights."

In both recensions, the word Jyotiṣ occurs in verse 15, yet in one case we make up the number five by counting the word Jyotiṣ, and in the other by counting the word Annam.

*Note* : The Pañcha-janāḥ of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad is the name of the five senses, every sense is called a Pañcha-janāḥ, and so Pañcha-pañcha-janāḥ has no reference to the Sāṅkhya categories.

*Adhikarana IV.—Brahman is the Sole Cause*

The Sāṅkhya philosopher raises a further doubt. It cannot be said that the Vedānta texts teach only one doctrine that "the Brahman is the sole cause of creation": for in those texts we find other causes of creation also mentioned. Thus in Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II., 1. 1., we find that creation proceeds from Self or Brahman: "From that Self sprang Âkāśa, from Âkāśa, air, etc." This passage shows that the cause of creation is Âtmā. But in another passage of the same Upaniṣad, we find that Asat or non-being is the cause of the universe. For in II., 7. 1., we read: "In the beginning was Asat, from it arose the Sat. That made itself its Self, therefore, it is called the self-made."

This shows that the cause of creation is Asat and not Âtmā. While in some other Upaniṣads, we find that Âkāśa is the cause of creation. As in the passage of Chhândogya Upaniṣad, I., 9. 1., we find that Âkāśa is the origin of the universe. Similarly, in another passage we find that Prāṇa is the origin of the universe: "All these creatures enter verily into Prāṇa, etc." (Chh., Up., I., 11. 4). In another passage Asat is said to be the cause of the universe (Taitt. Up., II., 7. 1). In another place Sat is said to be the cause of the universe, as Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 2. 1.: "Sat alone was in the beginning." Again we find that Avyakta is said to be the cause of the universe, as in Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I., 4. 7. "Now all this was then Avyākṛta (undeveloped), it became developed by form and name." Thus the Upaniṣads are not consistent, as regards the cause of the universe;

whether it is Sat or Asat, Ākāśa or Prāṇa, Avyākṛta or Ātman, all these are mentioned as the cause of the universe. Thus it is not possible to ascertain that Brahman alone is taught in the Upaniṣads as the cause of the universe ; while it is possible to say that Pradhāna alone is taught to be the cause of the universe, as we find from the passage of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad already quoted above. Moreover, the words Sat and Asat, Prāṇa or Ākāśa, and Avyākṛta, can very well be applied to Pradhāna, for they are some of them the effects of Pradhāna, such as Ākāśa and Prāṇa, while others are the names of Pradhāna itself. While these terms cannot be all applied to Brahman. Of course, in some passages we find that Ātmā and Brahman are also said to be the cause of the universe ; but these two terms can be applied to Pradhāna also. The literal meaning of the word Ātman is 'all-pervading,' and Pradhāna is all-pervading, while Brahman literally means that which is pre-eminently great (Vṛhat) ; and so Pradhāna may be called Brahman also. While Pradhāna is called Asat in its aspect of modified things and it is called Sat or being in its causal or eternal aspect. Similarly, it is called Prāṇa as it is an element produced from it. And the terms thinking, etc., represented in those passages may also apply to Pradhāna in a metaphorical sense, meaning commencement of action. So when the Upaniṣad says : 'It thought let me become many,' it means that Pradhāna commenced the action of multiplication. Therefore, all the Upaniṣad passages relating to creation harmonise better with the theory of Pradhāna being the creator than of Brahman.

*Siddhānta* : This objection is answered by the author in the next Sūtra.

*Note* : The Sanskrit of the passages referred to above are given below :

तस्माद्वा पतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः । आकाशाद्वायुः । वायोरग्निः । अग्निरापः । अद्भ्यः पृथिवी । पृथिव्या ओषधयः । ओषधीभ्योऽन्नम् । अन्नाद्देतः । रेतसः पुरुषः ॥ (Taitt., Up., II., 1. 1.)

From that Ātman sprang Ākāśa, from Ākāśa air, from air fire, from fire water, from water earth ; from earth herbs, from herbs food, from food seed, from seed man.

असद्वा इदमग्र आसीत् । ततो वै सद्जायत । तदात्मानं स्वयमकुर्वत् । तस्मात्तत्सुकृतमुच्यत इति ॥

The Non-Being (Asat) was this in the beginning ; from it arose the being (Sat). That made itself its Self. Therefore, it is called the Self-made. (Taitt., Up., II., 7. 1.)

अस्य लोकास्य का गतिरित्याकाश इति होवाच सर्वाणि ह वा इमानि भूतान्याकाशादेव समुत्पन्नन्त आकाशं प्रत्यस्तं यन्त्याकाशो ह्येवेभ्यो ज्यायानाकाशः परायणम् ॥

"What is the goal of this world ?" He replied : "The Ākāśa, all beings verily come out of the Ākāśa, and merge into the Ākāśa. The Ākāśa is greater than these, the Ākāśa is the refuge. (Chh., Up. I., 9. 1.)

कतमा सा देवतेति ॥ ४ ॥ प्राण इति होवाच सर्वाणि ह वा इमानि भूतानि प्राणमेवाभिसंविशन्ति प्राणमभ्युज्जिह्वे ॥



“Who is that deity”? He replied : “Prāṇa. All these beings verily (come out of Prāṇa and) merge into the Prāṇa.” (Chh., Up., I., 11. 7).

सदेव सोम्येदमग्र आसीत् ॥

The Sat alone was in the beginning less (Chh., Up., VI., 2. 1).

तद्धेदं तद्व्याकृतमासीत् तन्नामरूपाभ्यामेव व्याक्रियतेऽसौ ॥

All this was then Avyākṛta, it became Vyākṛta, (developed) by name and form. (Br. Up., I., 4. 7).

SŪTRA I., 4. 14

कारणत्वेन चाकादिषु यथा व्यपदिष्टोक्तेः ॥ १ । ४ । १४ ॥

कारणत्वेन Kāranatvena, as a cause, by being the cause. च Cha, and. चाकाशदिषु Ākāśādiṣu, with reference to Ākāśa and the rest. यथा Yathā, as. व्यपदिष्टः Vyapadiṣṭaḥ, described. उक्तेः Ukteḥ, on account of being declared.

14. The Brahman is described in the Upaniṣads as cause of Ākāśa and the rest, and the Brahman so described must be taken to be the cause of the universe, and not Ākāśa and the rest which are created by Brahman.—122.

#### COMMENTARY

The word ‘Cha’ is used in the Sūtra in the sense of ‘but,’ and removes the doubt raised in the preceding passage. It is possible to ascertain from the Vedānta texts that Brahman *alone* is the sole cause of the universe, because with regard to ether and the rest, Brahman as described in the Upaniṣads is declared to be the cause. “The Brahman as described” of the Sūtra means the Brahman distinguished by omniscience, omnipotence, and other qualities as described in the defining Sūtra, I., 1., 2. That Brahman alone is described in the Vedāntas to be the cause of Ākāśa and the rest. Thus the passage of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 1. 1, says, “Brahman is true, infinite and intelligence;” and shows that He has the qualities of omniscience, etc. This very Brahman is said to be the cause of the universe in the next sentence “from that Self (Ātman) sprang Ākāśa, etc.” Therefore, the word Self or Ātman used here must refer to Brahman as described above—Satyam Jñānāmanantam—and not taken in its etymological sense of all-pervading. Similarly, in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 8. 1., “Sad eva somya idam agre āsit”—“Being alone was in the beginning, one only without an equal,” shows that Sat was in the beginning. And the next verse shows : “He thought—let me become many—” “And He created light, etc.” Here also the creation of light, etc., proceeds from an intelligent being, who thinks, and therefore the Sat of this

passage must mean Brahman, who thinks ; and not Pradhāna, an unintelligent entity. Thus wherever creation is described, it refers to Brahman as defined in the beginning, namely, a being who is omniscient, omnipotent, etc. Of course, effect is similar to the cause, and therefore, sometimes an effect is spoken of as cause. But this argument can apply in the case of Brahman also. For where the text describes Âkāśa or Prāṇa to be the cause of the universe, we say they really mean Brahman and not Pradhāna, for though they may be the effect of Pradhāna in a secondary sense, they are the effect of Brahman. This we shall explain later on in detail. The five words Âtman, Âkāśa, Prāṇa, Sat, and Brahman, literally denote *all-pervading, all-luminous, all-controlling, the Essence, and the Great*, respectively, and so in their literal sense also, these terms are more appropriate with regard to Brahman, than with regard to Pradhāna. While the term Îkṣan "thinking" is absolutely inappropriate with regard to Pradhāna, and a metaphorical meaning is given to this term by the Sāṅkhyas, in order to harmonise their theory with the texts.

*Note :* The word îkṣan is found in the Chhândogya passage referring to Sat. *Vide, Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 1. 1.*

The next Sūtra explains the two words Asat (non-being) and Avyākṛta (undeveloped). These two words in their ordinary sense cannot be applied to Brahman, for He is neither *non-being*, nor *undeveloped*. Therefore, those Upaniṣad texts which say that creation proceeds from the *non-being* or the *undeveloped*, must be now explained.

SŪTRA 1., 4. 15.

समाकर्षात् ॥ १ । ४ । १५ ॥

समाकर्षात् Samākarsāt, from its relevency, from its connection. By drawing in (the word Brahman from a contiguous sentence).

15. The words Asat and Avyākṛta also denote Brahman, because of the relevency of that meaning in the passages where they occur ; and because the word Brahman may be drawn into the sentences, where these words occur, from the passage near them.—123.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Asat occurs in Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II., 7, in the following passage :

असौ इदमग्र आसीत् । ततो वै सद्जायत ॥

In the beginning this was non-existent (Asat). From it was born what exists.

This passage is preceded by the following :

He wished, may I be many, may I grow forth. He brooded over Himself (like a man performing penance). After He had thus brooded, He sent forth (created) all, whatever there is. Having sent forth, He entered into it. Having entered it, He became Sat (what is manifest) and Tyat (what is not manifest), defined and undefined, supported and not supported, (endowed with) knowledge and without knowledge (as stone), real and unreal. The Satya (true) became all this whatsoever, and therefore, the wise call it (the Brahman) Satya (the true).

On this there is this Sloka : In the beginning this was non-existent, Asat.

This shows that the word 'Asat' refers to Brahman, which is the subject under discussion in the previous verse. The word here does not mean 'non-being' or 'non-existent,' but it shows that before the creation, the distinction of names and forms did not exist, and Brahman also then did not exist in the sense that he was not connected with names and forms. And as he had then no name and form, he is said to be Asat or non-existent. In fact, the text of the Taittirīya Upaniṣad in this portion deals with Brahman, for in a passage in the same Valli, (II., 4. 1) we find it stated that Brahman is bliss, and this Brahman called bliss which is treated in verse V, is the subject-matter of this seventh Anuvāka also.

Note : The word Asat here cannot mean matter or non-being, because in this very passage we find that the description given of it can apply only to Brahman, and not to matter or non-being. To understand it we give the whole passage here :

"In the beginning this was non-existent, Asat. From it was born what exists (Sat). That made its Self, therefore, it is called the Self-made. That which is Self-made is a flavour (can be tasted) for only after perceiving a flavour one can perceive pleasure. Who could breathe, who could breathe forth, if that bliss (Brahman) existed not in the ether (in the heart) ? For he alone causes blessedness."

When he finds freedom from fear and rest in that which is invisible, incorporeal, undefined, unsupported, then he has obtained the fearless. For if he makes but the smallest distinction in it, there is fear for him. But that fear exists only for one who thinks himself wise, (not for the true sage).

On this there is also this Śloka :

"From terror of it (Brahman) the wind blows, from terror the sun rises ; from terror of it Agni and Indra; yea, Death runs as the fifth."

This shows that Asat here cannot mean anything but Brahman. Even in this sixth Anuvāka the seer of this Upaniṣad clearly says that Brahman is not Asat in the literal meaning of that word, therefore when he uses the words "Asat was in the beginning," he uses it in a sense totally distinct from its ordinary denotation. Thus in the sixth Anuvāka we find :

"He who knows the Brahman as non-existing, Asat, becomes himself non-existing. Asat. He who knows the Brahman as existing, Sat, him we know himself as existing, Sat."

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad also we find that Asat in the sense of non-being absolutely is not the source of creation. Thus Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI, 2. 1., begins with the famous text : 'Sad eva somyedam agra āsid ekam evādvitīyam,' which means "Being was in the beginning one only, without an equal." That

passage refutes later on the view that Asat was in the beginning. This also shows that Asat could not but mean Brahman, and it means Brahman in his latent state, when this world, which we call "Sat" was not. The Chhândogya passage VI., 2. 1, starts by putting two hypotheses, namely, Sat was in the beginning, and Asat was in the beginning and then it goes on to say :

"Some say that Asat was in the beginning, one only without a second." And it refutes this theory by saying, "How can it be, that being or Sat could come out of non-being or Asat?" The implication is how can that which is absolutely *non-being* or Asat can have any relation to time also, and how can we say that Asat *was*? To say that Asat was meant that non-being existed, which would be an absurd proposition. For all these reasons the Asat of Taittiriya Upaniṣad refers to Brahman.

Similarly, the word Avyākṛta of Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4. 5., also means Brahman there. It literally means undeveloped and is generally applied to Prakṛti. But in the passage above referred to, it could not have that meaning. To understand this we give the whole passage here :

Now all this was then undeveloped (Avyākṛta). It became developed by form and name, so that one could say, 'He, called so and so, is such a one.' Therefore, at present also all this is developed by name and form, so that one can say, 'He, called so and so, is such a one.'

He (Brahman or the Self) entered thither, to the very tips of the finger nails, as a razor might be fitted in a razor-case, or as fire in a fireplace.

He cannot be seen, for, in part only, when breathing, he is breath by name, when speaking, speech by name; when thinking, mind by name. All these are but the names of His acts. And he who worships (regards Him as the one or the other), does not know him, for He is apart from this (when qualified) by the one or the other (predicate). Let men worship Him, as Self, for in the Self all these are one. This Self is the footstep of everything, for through it one knows everything. And as one can find again by footsteps what was lost, thus he who knows this finds glory and praise.

The word Avyākṛta used in the above passage is to be understood to mean Brahman as the Inner Self of the undeveloped. We must draw in the word Brahman from the subsequent passage "he entered in it up to the nails," and explain Avyākṛta in the light of the subsequent passage. It would thus appear that Brahman alone, by the mere force of his will, becomes developed in name and form, and Avyākṛta or undeveloped, therefore, means the state of Brahman, in so far as He has not yet evolved through name and form. Otherwise, if Avyākṛta were taken as referring to Prakṛti, it would go against the whole current of the Vedānta texts, and against the Sūtra which declares that all Vedānta texts refer to Brahman. It is thus a settled conclusion that Brahman is the sole cause of the universe, and not Pradhāna.

*Adhikaraṇa V.—The Puruṣa of the Kauṣika Upaniṣad is Brahman.*

The Sāṅkhya raises another objection, and the author refutes it. In the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa the sage Bālāki promises to teach Brahman by saying, 'I shall tell you Brahman.' And he goes on to describe sixteen things as Brahman, beginning with the sun. All these, however, are set aside by the king Ajātaśatru who says none of them is Brahman. When the sage Bālāki is thus silenced, Ajātaśatru gives the teaching about Brahman in these words :

स होवाच । यो वै बालके एतेषां पुरुषाणां कर्त्ता, यस्य चैतत् कर्म स वै वेदितव्य इति ॥

"He who is the cause of these different persons and to whom there belongs this Karman, He is to be known."

*Note :* The Sāṅkhyas explain the above Mantra thus :

'He who is the cause of these different Puruṣas and to whom there belongs this Karman, He indeed is to be known.

*Note :* Balākā mentions first the Puruṣa in the sun as Brahman. Then on being refuted by Ajātaśatru, he goes on mentioning the various Spirits (Puruṣas) in the moon, in the lightning, in the thunder-cloud, in the wind, in the ether, in the fire, in the waters, in the mirror, in the shadow, in the echo, in the sound, in the sleep, in the body, in the right eye, in the left eye, Thus Bālāki exhausted all his idea of Brahman. Then Ajātaśatru asks him thus :

Then verily the son of Balākā became silent. Ajātaśatru said to him, "Thus far only (reaches thy knowledge), O son of Balākā ?" 'Thus far only,' he replied. Ajātaśatru said, 'Speak not proudly without cause (saying), "Let me tell thee Brahman." O son of Balākā, He who is the maker of these spirits, whose work is all this, He verily is the being to be known.' Then truly the son of Balākā came up to him with fuel in his hand, saying, "Let me attend thee (as my Guru)."

Ajātaśatru said to him, "This I consider contrary to nature that a Kṣatriya should instruct a Brāhmaṇa. Come, I will tell thee all I know." Then having taken him by the hand, he set forth. They came to a man asleep. Then he pushed him with his staff, and he at once rose up. Ajātaśatru said to the son of Balākā, 'Where, O son of Balākā, lay this spirit asleep, where was all this done, whence came he thus back ?' Then the son of Balākā knew not what to reply. Ajātaśatru said to him, "This is where, O son of Balākā, this spirit lay asleep, where all this was done, and whence he thus came back. The vessels of the heart named Hitā proceeding from the heart, surround the great membrane (round the heart) ; thin as a hair divided into thousand parts and filled with the minute essence of various colours, of white, of black, of yellow, and of red. When the sleeping man sees no dreams so ever, he abides in these.

*Doubt :* Here arises the doubt : Does this Upaniṣad teach the Puruṣa of the Sāṅkhyas, who is the enjoyer and the Superintendent of

the Prakṛti, or does it mean the Blessed Viṣṇu, Lord of all? The phrase—"to whom this work belongs"—connects the being to be known with work; and such a being is mentioned there as the enjoying soul, the ruler of Prakṛti. Further, both of them go to a sleeping person. That also shows that the teaching here given is about the human soul, and not about the Lord. Further on, also, the text treats of the enjoining soul, in the sentence: 'As the master feeds with his people, nay, as the people feed on the master, thus does this conscious Self feed with the other Selves.' Therefore, the passage relates to the individual soul. The word Prāṇa or *life* applied to him is also appropriate, for Prāṇa here means the individual soul, in so far as supporting life. The sense of the Upaniṣad passage is this: He who is the cause of different persons residing in the sun, etc., and who is instrumental towards the retributive experiences of the individual souls, and to whom there belongs Karman, good and evil, to which there is due his becoming such a cause, He indeed is to be known. His essential nature is to be recognised, in distinction from Prakṛti. Thus the Sāṅkhya's Jiva is the object of knowledge taught in this Upaniṣad. And, therefore, the Brahman which Ajātaśatru promised to teach is this Jiva in a state of emancipation and free from Prakṛti; for, as a matter of fact, there is no other Īśvara except the emancipated soul. And thinking etc., also are appropriate to such a soul, and He is ruler of Prakṛti who is the mother of the universe.

*Siddhanta*: This objection of the Sāṅkhyas, the author answers by the following Sūtra:

SŪTRA I., 4. 16.

जगद्धाचित्वात् ॥ १ । ४ । १६ ॥

जगत् Jagat, the world. वाचित्वात् Vāchitvāt, because of the denotation.

16. The word 'Karman' in the Kauṣika Upaniṣad does not mean *work*, but it denotes creation or the *world*.—124.

#### COMMENTARY

In this passage, the individual soul of the Sāṅkhyas is not the topic discussed; but the Supreme Person, the sole object of the Vedānta teaching. The whole difficulty arose from the sentence "to whom this Karma belongs," and if the word Karma were taken in its ordinary sense, the above passage could not refer to Brahman, for Brahman is not bound by

Karma. But the word Karma there is accompanied by the word Jagat, in the above Upaniṣad, and therefore, we take this word Karma there to mean the *universe* consisting of the individual souls and matter, (spirit and matter). In fact, the force of the word is this : In the phrase, to whom this *work* belongs, the word Karma refers to the universe, because Brahman is the cause of the universe, and therefore, the word Karman must refer to the word *world*. The truth is this : The word Karma is derived from the root Kr. 'to create, to make' ; and it means here creation and not *work* and not the technical Karma. And when this meaning can be given to Karma, it is wrong to give it the meaning of good and evil actions. When Karma is taken to mean 'creation' also, then the word Etat "this" also receives its proper force. It removes then the doubt that the individual soul is the creator. And according to the Sāṅkhyas the individual soul is not the creator, for creation belongs to Prakṛti. Nor can you Sāṅkhyas say, that Puruṣa may be called 'creator' by Adhyāsa or superimposition and connection with Prakṛti, for according to Sāṅkhya the Puruṣa is Asaṅga, or free from all connections. Therefore, the above passage does not refer to the Jiva of the Sāṅkhyas, but to the Supreme Lord, who alone is the creator of this universe. This also frees Ajātaśatru from the censure of having told a lie, for he promises in the opening passage, "I will teach you Brahman," and when Bālāki mentions sixteen Puruṣas one after the other, he tells him this is false and himself then goes on to teach the true Brahman. Thus Ajātaśatru implies that the various Puruṣas of Bālāki were not the *true* Puruṣa and he (Ajātaśatru) was going to tell the truth. Therefore, it is clear he meant to teach some Person, other than the various persons spoken of by Bālāki. If he also meant to teach a Jiva, then there would be no difference between his teaching and that of Bālāki whom he implicates of teaching a false doctrine. His teaching is, therefore, something different. He says, "The various persons mentioned by Bālāki are not Brahman, but that they are creations of Brahman, and that He is the maker of those persons." What he meant to say is that the Being of whom this, namely, the universe, is the Karma or creation, is the Supreme Lord and the Highest Cause.

*Note :* The passage which gave rise to the doubt was the phrase "Yasya vā etat karma sa vai veditavyaḥ" "of whom verily this is the Karma, He ought to be known." The word Karma generally means the good and evil deeds of a Jiva, and so the above passage was open to misconception. But the word Etat in the same passage is the real key to right interpretation. Of whom This is the work. To what does the word This refer ? It, in fact, refers to the sixteen persons mentioned by Bālāki. Therefore, the word *work* does not mean here the good and evil deeds of the Jiva, but the *world* or the universe.

The Pūrvapakṣin raises another objection saying there are inferential marks in this Upaniṣad passage pointing to the Jiva and the

circumstance that the mention is made of the chief vital air or Prāṇa we must hold that this section treats of the Jīva and not of the Highest Self.

This objection the author disposes of in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA I., 4. 17.

जीवमुख्यप्राणलिङ्गान्, नेति चेत्, तद्व्याख्यातम् ॥ १ । ४ । १७ ॥

जीव Jīva, the individual soul. मुख्य-प्राण Mukhya-prāṇa, the principal life-breath, the chief vital air. लिङ्गात् Liṅgāt, because of the inferential marks. न इति Na iti, not thus. चेत् Chet, if. तत् Tat, that. व्याख्यातम् Vyākhyātam, has been explained.

17. If it be objected, that in the above passage of the Kauṣika Upaniṣad, we have characteristics given, leading to the inference that either the Jīva, or the Chief Prāṇa, is the subject taught there, and not Brahman ; we reply that this is not so ; for the reasons already given in Sūtra I., 1. 31—125.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Sūtra I., 1. 31, which dealt with the topic of the dialogue between Indra and Pratardana, this objection was raised and answered. All those arguments would apply here also. There it was shown that when a text is interpreted as referring to Brahman, on the ground of a comprehensive survey of its initial and concluding clauses, all other inferential marks which point to other topics, such as Jīva or Prāṇa, etc., must be so interpreted, that they may harmonise with the principal topic. In this passage also, the initial clause refers to Brahman, in the sentence, 'Shall I tell you Brahman ?' So also the concluding clause is, "Having overcome all evils, he obtains pre-eminence among all beings, sovereignty and supremacy, yea, he who knows this." Thus the initial and concluding clauses here also refer to Brahman ; and if in the middle of this passage we find any mark, from which Jīva or any other topic may be inferred, we must so interpret that passage as to refer to Brahman, in order to avoid contradiction. Nor is this topic redundant, as being already taught in Sūtra I., 1. 31, for the chief point discussed here is the word Karma, which was liable to misinterpretation. Therefore, this Adhikarāṇa does teach something new.

An objection is raised : The word Karma was in grammatical construction with the word Etat in the above Upaniṣad passage, and so the word Karma was explained as this universe, and though the word Prāṇa also found there is in construction with Etat and so is applied to



Brahman, and thus the whole context may be applied to Brahman, so far as these two words are concerned ; but how do you get over the difficulty of the other references in this very passage to Jīva? The words Karma and Prāṇa have been interpreted by you as meaning the universe and Brahman, because the word *Etat* is there in construction with them. But there is no such word in regard to Jīva, and from the questions and answers given in this passage, we find that the Jīva is taught to be Brahman, and that there is no separate Brahman other than the released Jīva. The reference to Jīva is very clear in this passage ; and admitting your argument that the topic here is Brahman, the thing taught is that there is no Brahman other than the Jīva. The question asked in the above passage is, "Where, O Bālāki, did this person sleep? Where was he? Whence did he thus come back?" This shows that the question relates to Jīva only. And that the place where the Jīva goes to sleep are the Naḍis : and all the sense-organs become one in this Jīva at the time of sleep ; and this Jīva is called also Prāṇa here. Thus the whole question and answer shows, that reference is to the Jīva. And when the awakening takes place, the Jīva comes out from the place of sleep. Thus the whole passage proves that the topic is of the Jīva, and that Jīva who is called here Prāṇa is Brahman. To this objection the next Sūtra gives an answer.

SŪTRA I., 4. 18.

अन्यार्थन्तु जैमिनिः प्रश्नव्याख्यानाभ्यामपि चैवमेके ॥ १ । ४ । १८ ॥

अन्यार्थम् Anyârtham, a different meaning or purport. तु Tu, but. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini. प्रश्न Praśna, from question. व्याख्यानाभ्यां Vyākhyānābhyām, from answer, or explanation. अपि Api, also. च एवम् Cha evam, and thus एके Eke, some, that is, some texts.

18. The sage Jaimini thinks that the mention made of the Jīva in the above Upaniṣad passage has another meaning, namely, it aims at conveying the idea that Jīva is different from Brahman, because the question and answer shows it ; and some recensions show it clearly.—126.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Tu "but" shows that the above doubt is wrong. The description of Jīva, in the passage under discussion, is not with the object of showing that the topic is that of the Jīva, or that the Jīva is Brahman. But it aims at showing, according to the opinion of Jaimini, that the Jīva is separate from Brahman. Why do you say so? Because

the question and answer in the above passage shows it. We give the whole passage here to understand properly the discussion raised :

Then verily the son of Balākā became silent. Ajātaśatru said to him, "Thus far only (reaches thy knowledge), O son of Balākā ?" "Thus far only," he replied. Ajātaśatru said, "Speak not proudly without cause, (saying) 'Let me tell thee Brahman,' O son of Balākā. He who is the maker of these spirits, whose *work* is all this. He verily is the Being to be known." Then truly the son of Balākā came up to him, with fuel in his hand, saying "Let me attend thee (as my Guru)." Ajātaśatru said to him, "This I consider contrary to nature that a Kṣatriya should instruct a Brāhmaṇa. Come, I will tell thee all I know." Then having taken him by the hand, he set forth. They came to a man asleep. Ajātaśatru called him, (saying) "Oh thou vast one, clothed in white raiment, king Soma." The man still lay asleep. Then he pushed him with his staff, and he at once rose up. Ajātaśatru said to the son of Balākā, "Where, O son of Balākā, lay this spirit asleep, where was all this done, whence came he thus back ?" Then the son of Balākā knew not what to reply. Ajātaśatru said to him, "This is where, O son of Balākā, this spirit lay asleep, where all this was done and whence he thus came back. The vessels of the heart named Hitā, proceeding from the heart, surround the great membrane (round the heart); thin as a hair divided into a thousand parts; and filled with the minute essence of various colours, of white, of black, of yellow, and of red. When the sleeping man sees no dreams soever, he abides in these.

"Then is he absorbed in that Prāṇa. Then the speech enters into it with all names, the sight enters with all forms, hearing enters with all sounds, the mind enters with all thoughts. When he awakes, as from blazing fire, sparks go forth in all directions; so from this soul all the Prāṇas go forth to their several stations, from the Prāṇas go forth the Devas, from Devas the worlds. Thus is the true Prāṇa, identical with Prajñā, entering this body and soul, it penetrates the nails and hairs of the skin. Just as a razor placed in a razor-case, or fire in the home of fire, thus this soul, itself Prajñā, enters this body and soul, to the hairs and nails. The inferior souls follow this Soul, as the household, the householder. As the householder feeds with his household, and as the household feed on the householder, so this Soul, itself Prajñā, feeds with those souls, and thus those souls feed on this Soul. As long as Indra did not know this Soul, so long the Asuras overcame him. When he knew It, then having conquered and slain the Asuras, he attained the pre-eminence of all gods and all beings, he attained sovereignty and empire. Thus, too, is it with him who hath this knowledge, having destroyed all sins,—he attaineth the pre-eminence of all beings and sovereignty and empire, who knoweth thus, who knoweth thus."

The question, "Where was this person when asleep? etc.," and the answer, "When sleeping, he sees no dream, then he becomes one in that Prāṇa alone, etc." shows that Jīva is separate from Brahman. So also the passage, "From that Self the organs proceed, each towards its place, from the organs the gods, from the gods the worlds, etc.,"—all this shows that the passage teaches Brahman as something separate from Jīva. The word Prāṇa here means the Supreme Self, because He is well-known as that into which the soul enters and sleeps. In Him the Jīvas merge in sleep, and in Pralaya; and from Him they come out on awakening. The mention of the veins or the Nāḍis is not to show that they are the abode of the Jīva in deep sleep, for the abode is Brahman, called Prāṇa here, but

that these Nādis or veins act as gateways merely to the abode of sleep. The whole passage thus teaches that the Supreme Self is the abode, to which the tired Jīva goes after the day's labour, to find rest in sleep, and from which it comes out in the morning to begin his work again.

Not only Jaimini is of this opinion, but in the recension of this Upaniṣad story according to the Vājasaneyins, a clear distinction is drawn in their texts, between the Jīva and Brahman. In their reading of the dialogue between Ajātaśatru and Bālāki, they use the word Vijñānamaya, and read it as different from Brahman. The text is :

"Where was then the person, consisting of intelligence, and from whence did he thus come back ?—When he was thus asleep then the intelligent person, having through the intelligence of the senses, absorbed within himself all intelligence, lies in the ether that is within the heart."

Now the word 'ether' is known to denote the Highest Self ; cf. the text 'there is within that the small ether' (Chh. Up., VIII., 1. 1). This also shows that the Supreme Lord is the object of knowledge taught in this Upaniṣad.

### *Adhikaraṇa VI.—The Ātman of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 5, is Brahman and not Jīvātman.*

*Viśaya :* In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad there is a dialogue between Yājñavalkya and his wife Maitreyī. In the course of his teaching, after premising, "verily a husband is not dear, that you may love the husband, but that you may love the Self, therefore the husband is dear, etc., etc.," he goes on to say, "Verily everything is not dear, that you may love everything, but that you may love the Self, therefore everything is dear. Verily, the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked, O Maitreyī ! When the Self has been seen, heard, perceived and known, then all this is known."

*Doubt :* What is this Self which is to be seen, to be heard, etc. ? Is this the Jīvātman, taught by the Sāṅkhyas, or is it the Supreme Self ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The Pūrvapakṣin says it refers to the Sāṅkhya Jīvātman or Puruṣa, because the opening clause begins with the statement about husband, wife, etc., and love for them. In the middle also there is reference to Jīvātman, when it is said, "When he has departed, there is no more consciousness." This also shows that the reference is to a transmigrating soul, subject to birth and death, love and hatred. So also the concluding statement "how should he know the knower," also shows that the individual soul, who is the knower, is the topic of discussion. Of course, there is this statement also contained here, that by knowing the Self, everything else is known, and so one can say that the Self referred

to here cannot be the individual soul, but the Supreme Self ; for the knowledge of the individual soul does not lead to the knowledge of all. But this is no valid objection, for all created objects are for the sake of enjoyer, namely, the individual soul. Therefore, when the soul is known we can figuratively say, that all objects are known, for they exist for the sake of the soul. Similarly, the objection is raised that this passage teaches also that the knowledge of the Self leads to immortality, therefore, the Self should be the Supreme Self and not the individual soul or Jīva, for getting a knowledge of the Jīva is not a cause of immortality. This objection is also not valid, because according to Sāṅkhya system also immortality is obtained through the cognition of the true nature of the Jīva viewed as free from all erroneous imputation to itself of the attributes of non-sentient matter. Thus all other characteristic marks, in the above passage of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, by which one may think that they refer to Brahman, should be explained away. Therefore, says the Pūrvapakṣin, the discussion here is about the Jīvātman, and not the Supreme Lord, and Prakṛti, ruled and guided by the Jīva, is the cause of the universe.

*Siddhānta* : This objection the author removes by the following Sūtra :

To understand this Adhikarāṇa we give below the entire passage of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, fourth Adhyāya, fifth Brāhmaṇa.

अथ ह याज्ञवल्क्यस्य द्वे भाव्ये बभूवतुर्मैत्रेयी च कात्यायनी च तयोर्है मैत्रेयी ब्रह्मादिनी बभूव स्त्री-  
प्रैव तर्हि कात्यायन्यथ ह याज्ञवल्क्योऽन्यदन्तमुपाकरिष्यन् ॥ १ ॥

1. Yājñavalkya had two wives, Maitreyi and Kātyāyanī. Of these, Maitreyi was conversant with Brahman, but Kātyāyanī possessed such knowledge only as women possess. And Yājñavalkya, when he wished to get ready for another state of life (when he wished to give up the state of a householder, and retire into the forest)

मैत्रेयीति होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः प्रव्रजिष्यन्वा अरेऽहमस्मात्स्थानादस्मि हन्त तेऽनया कात्यायन्यान्तं  
करवाणीति ॥ २ ॥

2. said, "Maitreyi, verily I am going away from this, my house (into the forest). Forsooth let me make a settlement between thee and that Kātyāyanī."

सा होवाच मैत्रेयी यन्नु म इयं भगोः सर्वार्थं पृथिवी वित्तेन पूर्णा स्यात्स्यां न्वहं तेनामृताऽऽहो३ नेति  
नेति होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यो यथैवोपकरणवतां जीवितं तथैव ते जीवितं स्यादमृतत्वस्य तु नाशस्ति वित्तेनेति ॥ ३ ॥

3. Maitreyi said : "My Lord, if this whole earth, full of wealth, belonged to me, tell me should I be immortal by it, or not ?"

"No," replied Yājñavalkya, "like the life of rich people will be thy life. But there is no hope of immortality by wealth."

सा होवाच मैत्रेयी येनाहं नामृता स्यां किमहं तेन कुर्यां यदेव भगवान्वेत्य तदेव मे विब्रूहीति ॥ ४ ॥

4. And Maitreyi said, "What should I do with that by which I do not become immortal? What my Lord knoweth (of immortality), tell that clearly to me."

स होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः प्रिया वै खलु नो भवती सती प्रियमवृधद्धन्त तर्हि भवत्येतद्व्याख्यास्यामि ते व्याचक्षाणस्य तु मे निदिध्यासस्वेति ॥ ५ ॥

5. Yājñavalkya replied : 'Thou who art truly dear to me, thou hast increased what is dear (to me in thee). Therefore, if you like, Lady, I will explain it to thee, and mark well what I say.'

स होवाच न वा अरे पत्युः कामाय पतिः प्रियो भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय पतिः प्रियो भवति ; न वा अरे जाययै कामाय जाया प्रिया भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय जाया प्रिया भवति ; न वा अरे पुत्राणां कामाय पुत्राः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय पुत्राः प्रिया भवन्ति ; न वा अरे वित्तस्य कामाय वित्तं प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय वित्तं प्रियं भवति ; न वा अरे पशूनां कामाय पशवः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय पशवः प्रिया भवन्ति ; न वा अरे ब्रह्मणः कामाय ब्रह्म प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय ब्रह्म प्रियं भवति ; न वा अरे क्षत्रस्य कामाय क्षत्रं प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय क्षत्रं प्रियं भवति ; न वा अरे लोकानां कामाय लोकाः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय लोकाः प्रिया भवन्ति ; न वा अरे देवानां कामाय देवाः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय देवाः प्रिया भवन्ति ; न वा अरे वेदानां कामाय वेदाः प्रिया भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय वेदाः प्रिया भवन्ति ; न वा अरे भूतानां कामाय भूतानि प्रियाणि भवन्त्यात्मनस्तु कामाय भूतानि प्रियाणि भवन्ति ; न वा अरे सर्वस्य कामाय सर्वं प्रियं भवत्यात्मनस्तु कामाय सर्वं प्रियं भवति ; आत्मा वा अरे द्रष्टव्यः श्रोतव्यो मन्तव्यो निदिध्यासितव्यो मैत्रेयात्मनि खल्वरे दृष्टे श्रुते मते विज्ञात इदं सर्वं विदितम् ॥ ६ ॥

6. And he said : 'Verily, a husband is not dear, that you may love the husband ; but that you may love the Self, therefore a husband is dear.'

'Verily, sons are not dear, that you may love the sons ; but that you may love the Self, therefore sons are dear.'

'Verily, a wife is not dear, that you may love the wife ; but that you may love the Self, therefore a wife is dear.'

'Verily, wealth is not dear, that you may love wealth ; but that you may love the Self, therefore wealth is dear.'

'Verily, cattle are not dear, that you may love the cattle ; but that you may love the Self, therefore cattle are dear.'

'Verily, the Brāhmaṇ-class is not dear that you may love the Brāhmaṇ-class ; but that you may love the Self, therefore Brāhmaṇ-class is dear.'

'Verily, the Kṣatriya-class is not dear, that you may love the Kṣatriya-class ; but that you may love the Self, therefore the Kṣatriya-class is dear.'

'Verily, the worlds are not dear, that you may love the worlds ; but that you may love the Self, therefore the worlds are dear.'

'Verily, the Devas are not dear, that you may love the Devas ; but that you may love the Self, therefore the Devas are dear.'

'Verily, the Vedas are not dear, that you may love the Vedas ; but that you may love the Self, therefore the Vedas are dear.'

'Verily, creatures are not dear, that you may love the creatures ; but that you may love the Self, therefore the creatures are dear.'

'Verily, everything is not dear, that you may love everything ; but that you may love everything, therefore everything is dear.'

'Verily, the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked, O Maitreyi ! When the Self has been seen, heard, perceived, and known, then all this is known.'

ब्रह्म तं परादाद्योऽन्यत्रात्मना ब्रह्म वेद क्षत्रं तं परादाद्योऽन्यत्रात्मनः क्षत्रं वेद लोकास्तं परादुर्योऽन्यत्रात्मनो लोकान्वेद देवास्तं परादुर्योऽन्यत्रात्मनो देवान्वेद देवास्तं परादुर्योऽन्यत्रात्मनो देवान्वेद वेदास्तं परादुर्योऽन्यत्रात्मनो वेदान्वेद भूतानि तं परादुर्योऽन्यत्रात्मनो भूतानि वेद सर्वं तं परादाद्योऽन्यत्रात्मनः सर्वं वेदं ब्रह्मेदं क्षत्रमिमे लोका इमे देवा इमे वेदा इमानि सर्वाणि भूतानीदं ५ सर्वं यदयमात्मा ॥ ७ ॥ स यथा दुन्दुभेर्हन्यमानस्य न बाह्याच्छब्दाच्छक्नुयाद्ग्रहणाय दुन्दुमेस्तु ग्रहणेन दुन्दुभ्याघातस्य वा शब्दो गृहीतः ॥ ८ ॥ स यथा शङ्कस्य ध्मायमानस्य न बाह्याच्छब्दाच्छक्नुयाद्ग्रहणाय शङ्कस्य तु ग्रहणेन शङ्कध्मस्य वा शब्दो गृहीतः ॥ ९ ॥

7. 'Whosoever looks for the Brāhmaṇ-class elsewhere than in the Self, was abandoned by the Brāhmaṇ-class. Whosoever looks for the Kṣatriya-class elsewhere than in the Self was abandoned by the Kṣatriya-class. Whosoever looks for the worlds elsewhere than in the Self was abandoned by the worlds. Whosoever looks for the Devas elsewhere than in the Self, was abandoned by the Devas. Whosoever looks for the Vedas elsewhere than in the Self, was abandoned by the Vedas. Whosoever looks for the creatures elsewhere than in the Self, was abandoned by the creatures. Whosoever looks for anything elsewhere than in the Self, was abandoned by anything.'

This Brāhmaṇ-class, this Kṣatriya-class, these worlds, these Devas, these Vedas, all these beings, this everything, all is that Self.

8. 'Now as the sounds of a drum, when beaten, cannot be seized externally (by themselves), but the sound is seized, when the drum is seized, or the beater of the drum.

9. 'And as the sounds of a conch-shell, when blown, cannot be seized externally (by themselves), but the sound is seized, when the shell is seized, or the blower of the shell.'

स यथा वीणायै बाधमानायै न बाह्याच्छब्दाच्छक्नुयाद्ग्रहणाय वीणायै तु ग्रहणेन वीणावादस्य वा शब्दो गृहीतः ॥ १० ॥

10. 'And as the sounds of a flute, when played cannot be seized (externally by themselves), but the sound is seized, when the flute is seized, or the player of the flute.'

स यथाद्रिभाग्नेरभ्याहितस्य पृथग्भूता विनिश्चरन्त्येवं वा अरेऽस्य महतो भूतस्य निश्चितमेतच्चवृत्तेदो यजुर्वेदः सामवेदोऽथर्वाङ्गिरस इतिहासः पुराणं विद्या उपनिषदः श्लोकाः सूत्राण्यनुव्याख्यानानि व्याख्यानानीष्टं ५ हुतमाशितं पायितमयञ्चलोकः परश्च लोकः सर्वाणि च भूतान्यस्यैवैतानि सर्वाणि निश्चितानि ॥ ११ ॥

11. 'As clouds of smoke proceed by themselves out of lighted fire kindled with damp-fuel, thus verily, O Maitreyi, has been breathed forth from this Great Being what we have as R̥g Veda, Yajur Veda, Sāma Veda, Atharvāṅgīrasas, Itihāsas, Purāṇa, Vidya, the Upaniṣads, Ślokas, Sūtras, Anuvyākhyānas, Vyākhyānas, what is sacrificed, what is poured out, food and drink, this world and the other worlds, and all creatures. From Him alone all these were breathed forth.'

स यथा सर्वांसामापा ५ समुद्र एकानयनमेव ५ सर्वेषां ५ स्पर्शानां त्वचेकायनमेव ५ सर्वेषां ५ रसानां जिह्वेकायनमेव ५ सर्वेषां गन्धानां नासिकेकायनमेव ५ सर्वेषां ५ रूपाणां चक्षुरेकायनमेव ५ सर्वेषां शब्दानां ५ श्रोत्रमेकायनमेव ५ सर्वेषां ५ सङ्कल्पानां मन एकायनमेव ५ सर्वासां विद्यानां ५ हृदयमेकायनमेव ५ सर्वेषां कर्मणां ५

हस्तावेकायनमेव५ सर्वेषामानन्दानामुपस्थ एकायनमेव५ सर्वेषां विसर्गाणां पायुरेकायनमेव५ सर्वेषामध्वानां पादावेकायनमेव५ सर्वेषां वेदानां वागेकायनम् ॥ १२ ॥

12. 'As all waters find their centre in the sea, all touches in the skin, all tastes in the tongue, all smells in the nose, all colours in the eye, all sounds in the ear, all percepts in the mind, all knowledge in the heart, all actions in the hand, all pleasures in the organ of generation, all evacuations in the arms, all movements in the feet, and all the Vedas in the speech.'

म यथा सैन्धवधनोऽन्तरोबाह्यः कृत्स्नो रसधन एवैव वा अरेऽयमात्माऽनन्तरोऽबाह्यः कुलः प्रज्ञानधन एवैतेभ्यो भूतेभ्यः समुत्थाय तान्येवानुविनश्यति न प्रेत्य संज्ञाऽस्तीत्यरे ब्रवीमीति होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः ॥ १३ ॥

13. 'As a mass of salt has neither inside nor outside, but is altogether a mass of taste, thus has indeed that Self neither inside nor outside, but is altogether a mass of knowledge; and having risen from out the elements, vanishes again in them. When he has departed, there is no more knowledge (name), I say, O Maitreyi,' thus spoke Yājñavalkya.

सा होवाच मैत्रेय्यत्रैव मा भगवान्मोहान्तमापीपिपन्न वा अहमिमं विजानामीति स होवाच न वा अरेऽहं मोहं ब्रवीम्यविनाशी वा अरेऽयमात्माऽनुच्छित्तिधर्मा ॥ १४ ॥

14. Then Maitreyi said: 'Here, Sir, thou hast landed me in utter bewilderment. Indeed I do not understand him.'

But he replied: 'Maitreyi, I say nothing that is bewildering. Verily, beloved, that Self is imperishable, and of an indestructible nature.'

यत्र हि द्वैतमिव भवति तदितर इतरं पश्यति तदितर इतरं जिघ्रति तदितर इतरं५ रसयते तदितर इतरमभिवदति तदितर इतरं५ शृणोति तदितर इतरं मनुते तदितर इतरं५ स्पृशति तदितर इतरं विजानाति यत्र त्वस्य सर्वमात्मैवाभूत्तत्केन कं प्रश्येत्तत्केन कं जिघ्रेत्तत्केन कं५ रसयेत्तत्केन कमभिवदेत्तत्केन कं५ शृणुयात्तत्केन कं मन्वीत तत्केन कं५ स्पृशेत्तत्केन कं विजानीयायिनेदं५ सर्वं विजानाति तं केन विजानीयात्स एष नेति नेत्यात्माऽगृह्यो न हि गृह्यतेऽशीर्यो न हि शीर्यतेऽसङ्गो न हि सज्यतेऽसितो न व्यथते न रिष्यति विज्ञातारमरे केन विजानीयादित्युक्तानुशासनासि मैत्रेयेतावदरे खल्वमृतत्वमिति होत्स्वा याज्ञवल्क्यो विजहार ॥ १५ ॥ पञ्चमं ब्राह्मणम् ॥ ५ ॥

15. 'For when there is as it were duality, then one sees the other, one smells the other, one tastes the other, one salutes the other, one hears the other, one perceives the other, one touches the other, one knows the other; but when Self is only all this, how should he see another, how should he smell another, how should he taste another, how should he salute another, how should he hear another, how should he touch another, how should he know another? That Self is to be described by No, no! He is incomprehensible, for he cannot be comprehended, he is imperishable, for he cannot perish, he is unattached, for he does not attach himself; unfettered, he does not suffer, he does not fail. How, O Beloved, should he know the knower? Thus O Maitreyi! Thou hast been instructed. Thus far goes immortality.' Having said so, Yājñavalkya went away (into the forest).

SŪTRA. I., 4. 19.

वाक्यान्वयात् ॥ १ । ४ । १६ ॥

वाक्य Vākya, (of the) sentence. अन्वयात् Anvayāt, because of the connection or the connected meaning.

19. (The whole of the above text of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad refers to the Supreme Self only); for (thus alone a satisfactory connection of its sentences (can be made out).—127.

## COMMENTARY

In this portion of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad the Supreme Self alone has been taught and not the Jīva of the Sāṅkhya system. Why do we say so? Because by studying all that has gone before that passage, we find that it is related to Brahman, which is the subject-matter of the whole text. In fact, the whole sentence “the Self must be seen, etc.,” can give a proper meaning, when so considered, in connection with all that precedes or follows it.

This construction of the sentence is further strengthened by the opinion of the three sages Āśmarathya, Auḍulomi, and Kāśakṛtsna.

SŪTRA I., 4. 20.

प्रतिज्ञासिद्धेलिङ्गमाश्मरथ्यः ॥ १ । ४ । २० ॥

प्रतिज्ञा Pratiññā, promise, enunciation. सिद्धेः Siddheḥ, of fulfilment. लिङ्गम् Liṅgam, mark. आश्मरथ्यः Āśmarathyah, the sage Āśmarathya.

20. (The word Ātman in the sentence ‘Ātman must be seen, etc.’ must mean the Supreme Self), because thus alone the *promise* made (that by the knowledge of the Self everything is known) can be fulfilled. This fulfilment of the Pratiññā is the mark that the word Ātman here refers to :the Supreme Self. This is the opinion of Āśmarathya.—128.

## COMMENTARY

Yājñavalkya laid down the proposition “by the knowledge of the Self everything is known.” This proposition itself shows that the Self means the Supreme Self, and cannot mean the Jīva-self. Therefore, when he says in a subsequent passage “the Ātman must be seen, heard, etc.,” he could not have meant the Jīvātman, but the Paramātman, for the knowledge of the Jīvātman cannot lead to the knowledge of all; while, on the other hand, the knowledge of the Supreme Ātman, who is the supreme cause, leads to the knowledge of everything else, because it is its effect. Nor can you say, the knowledge of every effect is merely a figurative speech, and the knowledge of the human soul may figuratively be said to lead to the knowledge of the universe. For had it been a figurative speech merely, and having promised that by the knowledge



of the Self everything is known, then Yājñavalkya could not have said, "whosoever looks for the Brāhman-class elsewhere than in the Self was abandoned by the Brāhman-class, whosoever looks for the Kṣatriya-class elsewhere than in the Self, was abandoned by the Kṣatriya-class, etc." for this shows that he meant by the word Self, the Supreme Self, the abode of the Brāhman, Kṣatriya and other classes, and support of the whole universe, and who is in every form. This is impossible in the case of any self other than the Supreme, for He alone is the support of the universe. Moreover, in verse 11, he says, "As clouds of smoke proceed by themselves, out of lighted fire kindled with damp fuel ; thus verily, O Maitreyi, has been breathed forth from this Great Being what we have as Rg Veda, Yajur Vedas, Sāma Veda, Atharvāṅgirasas, etc." This also shows that the Self about which Yājñavalkya is speaking is the Supreme Self, and not the Jīva-self, because he is represented as the Creator of the whole universe, and all that it contains ; and it is not possible in the case of the Jīva-self, who is in the bondage of Karma. Nor a compassionate and true teacher like Yājñavalkya would teach his wife Maitreyi the truth about the Jīva-self and not about Brahman, when she had proved her worthiness for it, by discarding all wealth and desiring only release. The knowledge of the Jīva-self never leads to immortality, while there are numerous texts which declare that the knowledge of the Supreme Self alone is the cause of Mukti. Therefore, the Âtman of the passage under discussion is the Supreme Self.

Now an objection is raised again : The Âtman of this passage must be the Jīva because dearness, etc., is attributed to it, in the shape of husband, wife, etc., and that it is the transmigrating self and therefore, Jīva. Nor is it proper to explain Âtman as Paramâtman, merely because thereby the promise (of knowing everything by knowing one) is fulfilled. Nor is it right to say that the worshipper of God becomes the creator of all and the support of all : and gives satisfaction to all. Nor is it right to quote the following verse of the Padma Purāṇa in support of your position : "He who has worshipped Hari has given satisfaction to the whole universe. All animals feel delighted there, all plants and living things get satisfaction thereby." This is merely a poetical exaggeration, for the worshipper of Hari does not show forth the power of satisfying the whole universe. We do not find it as a fact.

To this objection the author replies :

SŪTRA I., 4. 21.

उत्क्रमिष्यत एवं भावादित्यौडुलोमिः ॥ १ । ४ । २१ ॥

उत्क्रमिष्यतः Utkramiṣyataḥ, of the person about to depart, or about to approach the Supreme at the time of Mukti. एवं Evam, thus. भवार् Bhāvāt, condition ; 'Evam-bhāvāt' means "on account of this condition" namely, "becoming beloved of all, etc." इति Iti, thus. औदुलोमिः Auḍulomiḥ, the sage Auḍulomi.

21. In the opinion of Auḍulomi, the human soul at the moment of entering into Release acquires all these conditions of the Puruṣa.—129.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Utkramiṣyataḥ means "of a person who has become perfect in his practice and is about to attain the Supreme Self." Such a wise man acquires this state (Evam-bhāva) namely, becoming dear to all, etc. Therefore, the word Âtman used in the initial clause of this passage also means the Supreme Self, and not the Jiva-self. This is the opinion of the sage Auḍulomi. The meaning of the initial passage is this : "Verily, a husband is not dear that you may love the husband, but that you may love the Self, therefore the husband is dear." This means, if one thinks that for the sake of the husband or for one's own sake one should become dear to him, this will not make the husband dear to her, but when you love the Self, namely the Supreme Self, then your husband will love you, for through the Supreme Self flows all the love of the other selfs, and the grace of the Supreme Self on his devotee makes every other inferior self love that being.

*Note :* The Lord blesses his devotees by saying, "Let every object be pleasant to my devotees and useful to them. Let my devotees having me in their heart, as their ruler and guide, be pleasant to all objects useful to them." This blessing of the Lord is the object which the devotees always desire to attain. Husband, etc., appear dear to the devotees not because they are husband, etc., but because they are the abode of the Supreme beloved, the Lord. And thus thinking, every object becomes helpful to the devotees, and becomes pleasant to them.

The word 'Kāma' in the above sentences means "wish or will" and the phrase "Âtmanastu Kāmāya" means "to fulfil the will of the Supreme Self, to carry out the will of the Supreme Self." The force of the Dative case in the word Kāmāya is that indicated in the Pāṇini Sūtra, 2. 3. 14 S. 581. When the Lord is worshipped with perfect devotion, He causes every object to become pleasant and dear to His devotee. As we read in the Bhāgavata: "One who is humble, calm, quiet in mind, and controlled in conduct, and who is content in his heart, finds the whole universe full of joy, for such have I made it for him."

Or, the passage may mean, to please the husband or to carry out the will of the husband, it, does not make the husband dear, but to carry out the will of the Supreme Self, the husband is made dear. As we read

in the Bhāgavata : "Who is a greater object of endearment than He by relation to whom everything else becomes dear, whether it [be Prāṇa or Buddhi, Manas, or body, wife or children, riches or wealth, etc.?" In this interpretation, the word Kāma must be taken to mean 'happiness.' That is to say, it is the joy of the Supreme Self that makes the husband dear, etc., not the husband by his own power. Therefore, by connection with whom, by the mere will of whom, or by relation with whom, even an unpleasant thing becomes pleasant, that Hari alone should be searched, He alone should be questioned, He alone should be seen, for He is the Most Sweet. Moreover, the word Âtman used here cannot mean the Jīva, for this reason also, that the primary significance of this word is the Supreme Lord. It is only in a secondary sense, that Âtman means Jīvâtman. Therefore, in the initial clause "Âtmanastu Kāmāya," in the middle clause "Âtmāvā are Draṣṭavyaḥ," the word Âtman means the Supreme Self in both places. We cannot take the word Âtman to mean Jīva in the initial clause, and to mean the Supreme Âtman in this middle clause. For if you were to do so, we should be going against the well-known maxim of interpretation by which one and the same word, occurring in a single passage, must be interpreted in the same way. Otherwise, there would arise the fallacy called Vākya-bheda or splitting of the sentence. Even if we were to split the sentence, and interpret the word Âtman in the initial clause as meaning the Jīvâtman, and in this middle clause as meaning the Paramâtman, we do not gain anything thereby. For the Âtman is taught as the object to be seen, and as the means to lead to immortality, which the Âtman of the initial passage could not evidently be, and the command that Âtman must be seen would be useless with regard to the Jīvâtman. Auḍulomi is evidently a Nirguṇa Âtmavādin and his opinion is that the sole nature of Âtman is intelligence only. As we find from Sūtra, IV., 4. 6. How can, then, we ascribe to this Auḍulomi the view that in the state of Release, the soul manifests divine powers? For, according to him, in the state of Release, the soul is pure intelligence only, and has no other powers. Moreover, Auḍulomi is not against Bhakti and in order to remove Avidyā and to manifest the true nature of the Self, namely, the pure intelligence, Auḍulomi does countenance the view that Hari must be worshipped. For in a subsequent Sūtra, his view has been set forth, that Bhakti is necessary in order to get Brahma-knowledge. That Sūtra is 'Ârttvijyam iti Auḍulomiḥ tasmai hi parikṛyate' (III., 4. 45). Thus Bhakti alone is the accomplisher of all desires and nothing else.

Let it be so. But the explanation is open to another objection. In the same passage we find in verse 12 :

'As a lump of salt, when thrown into the water, becomes dissolved into water and cannot be taken out again, but whenever we taste water it is salt, thus verily, O Maitreyi,

does this Great Being, endless, unlimited, consisting of nothing but knowledge, rise out from these elements, and vanish again into them. When he has departed there is no more consciousness, I say, O Maitreyi."

How do you reconcile this statement with your theory that the whole passage of this dialogue between Yājñavalkya and Maitreyī refers to the Supreme Self and not the Jīva? Evidently, the above extract can refer only to the Jīva, for it states that when a man dies, there is no consciousness left. Therefore, it is more appropriate to explain the whole of this dialogue as having reference to the Jīvātman of the Sāṅkhya philosophy, than to the Paramātman of the Vedānta.

The doubt thus raised is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA I. 4. 22.

अवस्थितेरिति काशकृत्स्नः ॥ १ । ४ । २२ ॥

अवस्थितेः Avasthiteḥ, because of abiding, because the Brahman abides within the Jīva. इति Iti, thus. काशकृत्स्नः Kāśakṛtsnaḥ, the sage Kāśakṛtsna.

22. Kāśakṛtsna is of opinion, that departing from the body in the above passage, though primarily applicable to the Jīva, applies to Brahman also, on account of its abiding within the individual soul.—130.

#### COMMENTARY

Brahman is to the human individual soul, like the lump of salt to water; both are indissolubly united together. It is this Brahman, which is denoted in the above passage as "Vijñānaghana," "consisting of nothing but knowledge," and is other than the Jīva. He is called the Great Being, endless and unlimited, attributes which apply only to the Paramātman. The death mentioned there is only with reference to the Jīva in a secondary sense. It is really the Brahman that passes out of the body, and as Brahman abides within the Jīva, He is said to go out of the body, when the Jīva goes out. The above passage really teaches that Brahman is inside the Jīva, as the salt is inside the water, and so it teaches something about the Supreme Self, and not about the individual soul. According to the opinion of Kāśakṛtsna, the Great Being, endless and unlimited, consisting of nothing but knowledge, is the Supreme Self, and not the individual self, because the distinction is drawn between these two, in this passage, where one is spoken of as salt, and the other as water.

To recapitulate, Maitreyī asks Yājñavalkya the means to immortality, when she says : “What should I do with that by which I do not become immortal ? What my Lord knoweth (of immortality), tell that to me.” To this question, Yājñavalkya replies :

‘Verily, the Ātman is to be seen, to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked, O Maitreyī ! When we see, hear, perceive, and know the Self, then all this is known.’

Thus he declares the means of attaining immortality, namely, knowing the Ātman. Then he mentions some of the characteristic marks of this Ātman in the passage :

‘Now as the sounds of a drum, when beaten, cannot be seized externally (by themselves), but the sound is seized, when the drum is seized, or the beater of the drum.’

‘And as the sounds of a conch-shell, when blown, cannot be seized externally (by themselves), but the sound is seized, when the drum is seized, or the beater of the shell.’

This shows the means of meditation, namely, the control of the senses. Thus to get immortality, the only means is worship of and meditation on the Lord, and the method of such worship and meditation consists in the control of our senses and mind. Thus having given general instruction as to meditation and worship, Yājñavalkya goes on to expand the idea of Brahman, and His all-creative power, in the next two verses :

10. As clouds of smoke proceed by themselves out of a lighted fire kindled with damp fuel, thus, verily, O Maitreyī, has been breathed from this Great Being what we have as R̥g Veda, Yajur Veda, Sāma Veda, Atharvāṅgirasas, Itihāsa (legends), Purāṇa (cosmogonies), Vidyā (knowledge), the Upaniṣads, Ślokas (verses), Sūtras (prose rules), Anuvyākhyānas (glosses), Vākyānas (commentaries). From him alone all these were breathed forth.

11. As all waters find their centre in the sea, all touches in the skin, all tastes in the tongue, all smells in the nose, all colours in the eye, all sounds in the ear, all percepts in the mind, all knowledge in the heart, all actions in the hands, all movements in the feet, and all the Vedas in speech.

Thus having repeated the object of meditation, and the means of meditation, in the above two verses Yājñavalkya winds up with the saying, “As a lump of salt, when thrown into water, becomes dissolved into water, etc.,” in order to encourage the aspirant, and increase his desire for getting Mokṣa or immortality. He shows, in this passage, that an aspirant for immortality is always in the presence of his Lord, as water is always in contact with the salt. But the person who does not worship the Lord, gets separated from the Lord, and of him it is said that the Lord rises out from these elements, and vanisheth again in the end. This rising and vanishing of the Lord applies only to the Jīva who does not worship the Lord, and who therefore constantly undergoes repeated births and deaths ; and is bound to the wheel of Saṁsāra, because he identifies himself with his body, and does not know the Supreme Self. Then Yājñavalkya goes on to say : “When he has departed there is no

more Sañjñā (संज्ञा); which means, when a person who has reached Mukti, (for "departed" here means "attaining Mukti") by final separation from all bodies, there is no more Sañjñā or distinction of names, with regard to Mukta Jīva. For names like man, angel, Deva, etc., are applicable only so long as the Jīva has a body. As in the state of Mukti, the Jīva has no such body, he has no such Sañjñā or name. His consciousness then is not limited by his body, and he attains to his natural, innate self-knowledge and he unites in his self all elemental forces, and does not think of himself as a man or a Deva, etc. Then Yājñavalkya goes on to say : "For when there is, as it were, duality, then one sees the other, one smells the other, etc." This shows that even of the released or Mukta Jīvas, the Supreme Lord is the abode, and such Jīvas are not apart from Brahman, for being apart from Brahman is duality. And he further adds : "How should we know him, by whom he knows all this," which means that the Lord is a most difficult object of knowledge. And Yājñavalkya ends by saying : "How, O Beloved, should we know the Knower ?" Which means, 'how can that omniscient Lord be known, without His grace and without worshipping Him.' The only method of knowing Him is his worship, coupled with His grace. Thus even in the last sentence, Yājñavalkya reiterates the idea that the worship of the Lord is the means of attaining immortality, and the immortality itself consists in attaining the Supreme Self. Thus in this Brāhmaṇa of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad the topic throughout is the Supreme Self, and not the Puruṣa of the Sāṅkhya philosophers, nor their Prakṛti, guided and ruled by such Puruṣa.

*Adhikaraṇa VII.—Brahman is both the operative  
and the material cause.*

*Viśaya* : Having thus refuted the theory of Pradhāna and Puruṣa of the Nirīśvara Sāṅkhya, the author now refutes the doctrine of Śeśvara Sāṅkhya, namely, Yoga; and proves that all passages and texts of the Upaniṣads, referring to the cause of the universe, are to be interpreted referring to Brahman, the Supreme Self. Thus we find the following texts :

तस्माद्वा एतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः । आकाशाद्वायुः । वायोरग्निः । इत्यादि ॥

From that Self (Brahman) sprang ether (Akāśa, that through which we hear); from ether air (that through which we hear and feel); from air, fire (that through which we hear, feel, and see); etc.—Taitt. Up., II, 1. 1.

यतो वा इमानि भूतानि जायन्ते । येन जातानि जीवन्ति । यद् प्रयन्त्यभिसंविशन्ति, etc. ॥

That from whence these beings are born, that by which when born they live, that into which they enter at their death, try to know that. That is Brahman.—Taitt. Up., II., 1. 1.

सदेव सोम्य इदमग्र आसीत् एकमेवाद्वितीयम् ॥ स ऐक्यत, बहु स्याम प्रजायेय ॥

In the beginning, my dear, there was that only who is one only without a second. It thought, "may I be many, may I grow forth."—Chh. Up., VI., 2. 1.

आत्मा वा इदमेक एवाग्र आसीत् । नान्यत् किञ्चन मिषत् । स ईक्षत, लोकान् नु सृजा इति ॥

In the beginning all this was self, one only ; there was nothing else blinking whatsoever. He thought "shall I send forth worlds." He sent forth these worlds.—Ait. Up., II., 1. 2.

*Doubt* : Now in these passages is Brahman to be considered as merely the operative cause or the operative as well as the material cause ?

*Pûrvapakṣa* : The Pûrvapakṣin says, that all these passages of the Upaniṣad show that Brahman is the efficient cause only of creation, and not its material cause, and though matter is said to come out of Him, it is so said metaphorically only. In fact, the creation is always said to proceed from the Īkṣan or thinking of Brahman, or looking of Brahman. Therefore, Brahman is the creator of the universe in the same sense as a potter is said to be the creator of a pot. The material cause of the universe is the eternal Prakṛti. Moreover, the material things of the world have more resemblance with the primordial matter-stuff Prakṛti, than with Brahman who is pure intelligence. Nor can you say that the efficient cause is itself the material cause. For we find in this world, that the material cause is always the inert matter, separate and distinct from the efficient cause, which is always an intelligent being. Thus the material cause of pot is the material and non-sentient clay, while, the efficient cause is the intelligent being, the potter. Similarly, we find in this world one single effect, the result of many different contributing causes, and instrumental agencies. Therefore, we cannot discard the well-known rule of experience and say, that one and the same Brahman is both the material and the operative cause of the world. Therefore, it is Prakṛti, superintended by the Lord, that modifies itself and constitutes the material cause of the whole universe, while Brahman is the operative cause alone. Nor is this the theory of ours based upon mere reasoning. We have authority for it also :

विकारजननीमक्षा (माया) महारूपमज्ञां भ्रुवाम् ।

ध्यायतेऽध्यासिता तेन, तन्यते प्रेरिता पुनः ॥

सृजते पुरुषार्थं च तेनैवाधिष्ठिता जगत् ।

गौरमाद्यन्तवती सा जनित्री भूतभाविनी ॥

सितासिता च रक्षा च सर्वकामदुषा विभोः ।

पिवन्त्येनामविषमामविहाताः कुमारकाः ॥

एकस्तु पिबते देवः स्वच्छन्दोऽत्र वशानुगाः ।

ध्यानक्रियाभ्यां भगवान् मुक्तेऽसौ प्रसभं विभुः ॥

सर्वसाधारणीं दोग्ध्रीमिज्यमानां क्षुद्यज्वभिः ।

चतुर्विंशति संख्याकमव्यक्तं व्यक्तमुच्यते ॥

"The mother of all changes, the non-intelligent, having eight-fold form (the five elements and Manas, Buddhi and Ahaṅkāra) unborn, permanent, is Prakṛti. The Lord thinks of her and being controlled by the Lord and superintended by Him, she creates the universe and commanded by Him, she produces all these effects. Under His guidance she creates all these objects for the benefit of the soul. Her who produces all effects, the non-working one, the unborn one wearing eight forms, the firm one—she is known (by the Lord) and ruled by him, she is spread out and incited and ruled by him, she gives birth to the world for the benefit of the souls. A cow she is without beginning and end, a mother producing all beings, white, black and red, milking all wishes for the Lord. Many babes unknown drink her, the impartial one, but one God only following his own will, drinks her submitting her to him. By his own thought and work the mighty God strongly enjoys her, who is common to all, the milk-giver, who is honoured by the holy sacrificers. The non-evolved when being counted by twenty-four is called the Evolved." (Chullika Upaniṣad).

The two verses preceding these are also given below :

अष्टपादे शुचिर्हंसं त्रिपुत्रं मणिमव्ययम् ।

द्विवर्तमानं तेजसैद्धं सर्वः पश्यन्न पश्यति ॥

All men seeing, do not see this brilliant Hansa having eight feet, and three cords, this unchanging jewel existing in two conditions and refulgent with light.

*Note* : The eight feet are the five elements, earth, water, air, fire and ether, mind (Manas), intellect (Buddhi) and self-consciousness (Ahaṅkāra). The three cords are either Dharma (virtue), Artha (profit) and Kāma (pleasure), or the Guṇas or the three Nāḍis. The two conditions are the subtle and the dense bodies. The Âtman is like a necklace on our throats, but we do not see it. The Hansa literally means the destroyer of of ignorance.

भूतसंमोहने काले भिन्ने तमसि वैश्वरे । अन्तः पश्यति सत्त्वस्थं निर्गुणं गुणगह्वरे । अशक्यः सोऽन्यथा द्रष्टुं ध्येयमानः कुमारकः ॥

When the dark ignorance, the deluder of all men, the great Nescience, the veil covering the Lord, is rent asunder, then he sees the Nirguṇa Lord, within him, dwelling in the Buddhi, in the cavity containing all Guṇas. He the Blessed Child, the Eternal Youth, is to be seen by meditation alone and not otherwise.

So also the Smṛti (Viṣṇu Purāṇa) :

यथा सन्निधिमात्रेण गन्धः क्षोभाय जायते ।

मनसो नोपकर्तृत्वात् तथासौ परमेश्वरः ॥

सन्निधानाद् यथाकाशकालाभाः कारणे तरोः ।

तथैवापरिणामेन विश्वस्य भगवान् हरिः ॥



निमित्तमात्रमेवासौ सृष्टानां सर्ग कर्मणि ।

प्रधानकारणीभूता यतो वै सृज्यशक्त्यः ॥

"As a scent, by its mere contact with olfactory nerves, produces a mental change (though it does not directly act on the mind), so the Supreme Lord, without any direct action, produces vibrations (Kṣobha) in matter. As Space, Time, etc., by their mere presence are said to be the cause of the growth, etc. of a tree, though they do not directly cause such growth, etc., so the Lord Hari, without undergoing any modifications Himself, is said to be the cause of the universe. In the act of creation, the Lord is merely a concomitant (Nimitta) cause, and not an active agent, the creative forces (Śaktis) are verily the primary causes.

Therefore texts which declare that Brahman is the material cause of the universe, should be somehow explained away.

*Sidhānta* : To this the author answers :

SŪTRA I., 4. 23.

प्रकृतिश्च प्रतिज्ञा दृष्टान्तानुपरोधात् ॥ १ । ४ । २३ ॥

प्रकृतिः Prakṛtiḥ, the material cause, the Prakṛti. च Cha, and. प्रतिज्ञा Pratijñā, the proposition to be proved, promisory statement, the enunciation. दृष्टान्त Dṛṣṭānta, illustrative instances. अनुपरोधात् Anuparodhāt, on account of this not being in conflict.

23. Brahman is the material cause also, because this view is not opposed to the illustrations and the proposition sought to be established, in the Upaniṣad texts under consideration.—131.

#### COMMENTARY

Brahman is not only the operative cause of the universe, but is the material cause as well ; for thus alone is harmony established between Upaniṣad texts which show the propositions to be established and illustrations to be given. Thus in Chhandogya Upaniṣad, VI., 1. 3., we find Uddālaka asking his son Svetaketu, who had returned from his teacher's house, after having finished his days, conceited, considering himself well-read and stern :

ॐ श्वेतकेतुर्हस्तेष्वेय आस त ५ ह पितोवाच श्वेतकेतो वस ब्रह्मचर्यं न वै सोम्याऽस्मत्कुलीनोऽननूय्य ब्रह्मबन्धुरिव भवतीति स ह द्वादशवर्षं उपेत्य चतुर्विंशतिवर्षः सन्वान् वेदानधीत्य महामना अनूचानमानी स्तब्धं पयाय त ५ ह पितोवाच श्वेतकेतो यन्नु सोम्येदं महामना अनूचानमानी स्तब्धोऽस्युत तमादेशमप्राप्यो येनाश्रुतं श्रुतं भवत्यमतं मतमविज्ञातं विज्ञातमिति कथं नु भगवः स आदेशो भवतीति ।

Svetaketu, as you are so conceited, considering yourself so well-read and so stern, my dear, have you ever asked for that Ādeśa (generally translated as instruction, but meaning here the Ruler) by which we hear what cannot be heard, by which we perceive what cannot be perceived, by which we know what cannot be known ?

Here the proposition to be proved is the existence of that Ruler or Ādeśa by knowing whom alone, everything else is known. This Ādeśa or Ruler must be the material cause also, otherwise how can His knowledge lead to the knowledge of the material universe. If he were merely the operative cause, then from mere knowledge of an operative cause you cannot know the material cause. In the case of the potter and the pot, the two causes are different, not so however here, for the above passage clearly shows the unity of the operative cause and the material cause. Not only the proposition to be proved asserts this unity, but the illustrations given in the whole of that chapter of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad, prove the same. Thus, to give a few illustrations :

यथा सौम्यैकेन मृत्पिण्डेन सर्वं मृन्मयं विज्ञातं स्याद्वाचारम्भणं विकारो नामधेयं मृत्तिकेत्येव सत्यम् ॥ ११ ॥  
 यथा सोम्यैकेन लोहमयिना सर्वं लोहमयं विज्ञातं स्याद्वाचारम्भणं विकारो नामधेयं लोहमित्येव सत्यम् ॥ २ ॥  
 यथा सोम्यैकेन नखनिकृन्तनेन सर्वं काष्णायसं विज्ञातं स्याद्वाचारम्भणं विकारो नामधेयं कृष्णायसमित्येव सत्यमेव सोम्य स आदेशो भवतीति ॥ ३ ॥ न वै नूनं भगवन्तस्त एतद्वेदियुर्यदध्येतद्वेदियन् कथं मे नावक्ष्यन्निति भगवा स्वत्वेमेतद्ब्रवीन्निति तथा सोम्येति होवाच ॥ ४ ॥

My dear, as by one clod of clay all that is made of clay is known, the difference being only a name, arising from speech, but the truth being that all is clay.

And, as, my dear, by one nugget of gold all that is made of gold is known, the difference being only a name, arising from speech, but the truth being that all is gold.

And, as, my dear, by one pair of nail scissors all that is made of iron (Kārṣṇāya-sam) is known, the difference being only a name, arising from speech, but the truth being that all is iron, thus, my dear, is that Ādeśa.

These illustrations show that by knowing the material cause, you know the various substances or effects of that matter, and they are opposed to the view that Brahman is only the operative cause. Nor is it possible to know the pot, from the knowledge of the potter alone. But here the text says, "you can know this universe by mere knowledge of Brahman alone." Therefore, for the sake of harmony between the proposition to be established and illustrations given therein, we conclude that Brahman is the material cause of the universe, while the text expressly declares Him to be the operative cause as well.

SŪTRA 1, 4. 24.

अभिध्योपदेशाच्च ॥ १ । ४ । २४ ॥

अभिध्या Abhidhyā, will ; reflection. उपदेशाद् Upadeśāt, on account of instruction or teaching, or statement. च Cha, and, on account of the statement of many creations.

24. Brahman is both the operative and the material cause of the universe, because of the statement that the

creation is His will and because former creations were also from His will.—132.

## COMMENTARY

The force of “Cha” or “and” is to include creations that have gone before. The text says :

सोऽकामयत् । बहुस्यां प्रजायेयेति । स तपोऽतप्यत् । स तपस्तप्त्वा । इदं सर्वमसृजत् । यदिदं किञ्च । तत्सृष्ट्वा । तदेवानुप्राविशत् । तदनुप्रविश्य । सच्च त्याच्चाभवत् ॥ (Taitt. Up., II. 6. 1.)

He wished, may I be many, may I grow forth. He brooded over himself (like a man performing penance). After he had thus brooded, He sent forth (created) all, whatever there is. Having sent forth, He entered into it. Having entered it, He became Sat (what is manifest), and Tyāt (what is not manifest).

This also shows that from the Supreme Self comes out this universe, consisting of sentient and non-sentient beings, and dwelling in various localities, and all this is merely the result of the will of the Lord ; so it is established, that He is the material as well as the operative cause of the universe in this creation, as well as in all the previous creations.

## SŪTRA I., 4. 25.

साक्षाच्च चोभयान्नात् ॥ १ । ४ । २५ ॥

साक्षाच्च Sākṣāt, directly. च Cha, and; (has the force of inclusion). उभय Ubhaya, both (the material and the operative cause). आक्षान्नात् Āmnānāt, because of direct statement.

25. And both are directly stated, therefore, Brahman is both the material and the operative cause—133.

## COMMENTARY

The force of ‘Cha’ is here that of denoting inclusion. The scripture directly states that Brahman is alone the material as well as the operative cause of the world :

किं स्विद् वनं क उ स वृक्ष आसीत्, यतो वावापृथिवीनिष्ठतज्जुः ।

मनीषिणो मनसा पृच्छन्तेतत्, यदध्यतिष्ठद् भुवनानि धारयन् ॥

ब्रह्म वनं ब्रह्म स वृक्ष आसीत्, यतोवावा पृथिवी निष्ठतज्जुः ।

मनीषियो मनसा प्रब्रवीमि वो ब्रह्माध्यतिष्ठद् भुवनानि धारयन् ॥

What was the tree, what wood in sooth produced it, from which they fashioned out the earth and heaven ?

Ye thoughtful ones enquire within your spirit, whereon he stood when he established all things. Brahman was the wood, Brahman the tree from which they shaped heaven and earth ; ye wise ones, I tell you, it stood on Brahman, supporting the worlds.—Rg Veda, I., 81, 4) and (Taitt. Brāhmaṇa, II., 8. 9. 6.)

The question asked here, and the answer given, shows that Brahman is both the material and the operative cause of the universe. The "tree" here refers to the material cause, and its effects are heaven and earth. The Lord of the world created the heavens and the earth, from the tree which was its material cause, and that tree was Himself. "They fashioned" is in the plural number, but the sense is really "he fashioned." The anomaly of the plural number used for the singular is a Vedic license. The question is put from the worldly point of view, namely, what is the tree, what was the support of that tree, what was the support of the universe, what materials and instruments were used by Brahman when creating. To all these worldly questions the answer given is transcendental, and shows that Brahman is not to be judged by any worldly standard. He is transcendental in His attributes and substance, and thus is both the operative and the material cause of the universe.

SŪTRA I., 4. 26.

आत्मकृतेः परिणामात् ॥ १ । ४ । २६ ॥

आत्मकृतेः Âtmakṛteḥ, on account of making itself. परिणामात् Pariṇāmât, owing to modification.

26. Brahman is the operative as well as the material cause of the universe, because of his making himself so, and by modifying himself into the universe.—134.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 6. we find सोऽकामयत "He wished, may I be many" and a subsequent passage says that तदात्मानम् स्वयमकुरुत "itself made Its Self." This shows that the object as well as the agent, in the act of creation, is the same Supreme Self alone who was mentioned in the opening passage "He wished, may I be many." Thus He alone has both these forms, namely, the agent as well as the object. But,—says an objector—how can one and the same being, established in one place as an agent, become also the object, with all its imperfections, etc. ? To this question the Sūtra answers by the word Pariṇāmât: Brahman becomes the object *by modification*. This Pariṇāma or modification does not conflict with the idea of Brahman being eternally unchangeable (Kūṭastha), for there can be a modification not in conflict with unchangeableness.

The truth of the matter is this : Brahman has three powers, as we learn from the following Śrutis :

प्रधानं क्षेत्रपतिर्गुणेशः ॥

He is the Lord of Nature (Pradhāna) and of the soul (Kṣetrajña) and the regulator of Guṇas (Śvet. Up., VI., 16).

परास्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रूयते । स्वाभाविकी ज्ञानबलक्रिया च ॥

His various powers are sung in the Vedas, the deeds of wisdom and deeds of strength, natural to him. (Śvet. Up., VI., 8).

So also is the following Smṛti :

विष्णुशक्तिः परा प्रोक्ता क्षेत्रज्ञाख्या तथापरा ।

अविद्या कर्मसंज्ञाऽन्या तृतीया शक्तिरिष्यते ॥

The Viṣṇu Sakti is called Parā Sakti, His power as manifested in the souls of men is called Aparā Sakti. His third Sakti is called Avidyā, named also Karma. (Viṣṇu Purāṇa).

In the Sāstras Brahman is described as being both the operative and the material cause of the world. He is the operative cause through his power called the Parā Śakti. He is the material cause, through his other two Saktis called the Aparā Sakti and Avidyā Sakti, which work through the souls and nature (matter). As when a person is said to be a white man, it means that the attribute of whiteness is predicable of him, and the attribute of blackness cannot be applied to him. The qualities positive or negative exhaust their force with expressing the quality of the objects, and do not go further.

The Sruti also says :

य एको वर्णो बहुधा शक्तियोगात् वर्णाननेकान् निहितार्थो दधाति । विचैति चान्ते विश्वमादौ स देवः स नो बुद्ध्या शुभया संयुतकृत् ॥

The one, formless being, with his purposes hidden, who, *with various powers*, creates many forms; from whom the world rises in the beginning and to whom it returns at the end, may he grant us good understanding. (Svet. Up., IV., I.)

Thus with regard to the one and the same Brahman, both these powers are valid: As the operative cause He is Kūṭastha or unchangeable; as the material cause He is Pariṇāmi or subject to modification; as possessed of subtle nature, He is the agent; and possessed of gross nature, He is the object. This we infer from illustrations of the clod of clay, etc., given in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 1. 1., as well as from the very words of this aphorism, which uses the term Pariṇāmât.

In this way we have thus refuted also the doctrine of Vivartta, which says that the world is an illusion, a superimposition on the true Brahman (as the snake is a superimposition on the rope, which appears like a snake), and that the world is, therefore, not real. It is not possible that there should be the superimposition of the world on Brahman, as is the superimposition of silver on the mother-of-pearl, which through mistake may appear like silver. Because this superimposition presupposes that [the object is in front of the person who falls into the illusion. But Brahman is not an

object placed in front of anybody, like the mother of silver or rope, because He is all-pervading.

If it be said that Ākāśa or space is also all-pervading, but ignorant people superimpose upon it the qualities of colour, by saying the sky is blue, etc., and so an all-pervading object may be liable to superimposition; to this we reply, this is not so, because superimposition is not possible in Brahman, as it is in the case of Ākāśa, since Brahman is not an object of attainment or perception as Ākāśa is, and it is never possible that Brahman can have any Upādhi. Moreover, the appearance of a thing as something which it is not, is the same to all intents and purposes, as if that thing had changed its nature. And this is not possible, unless there is illusion, for without illusion there is no possibility of mistaken appearance. This illusion being separate from Brahman falls in the category of Vivarta, and thus we come to the vicious circle in reasoning. For we have to assume the existence of a separate entity called illusion, in order to explain the theory of Vivarta or illusion. In the Scriptures, the world is sometimes said to be a mere illusion, no doubt, but it is said so in order to produce disgust and indifference towards it, and not that the world is really non-existent or an illusion. Thus say the wise who know the truth. Had the world been a mere illusion and hallucination, then there would be no definite laws in this world, such as we find in the elements which constitute the world, such as a particular group of atoms constitutes a particular object, and that object always has the same number of atoms, neither more nor less. If the world were an illusion, we should expect the indefiniteness of elements, for illusion has no laws and may be subject to any change. The change of condition is seen only with regard to objects which are real and subject to law. With regard to objects which are non-real, and whose nature is not fixed, we cannot say that they can undergo any change of condition, for objects of illusion undergo changes at every moment, and such change is not a change of condition, but inherent in the nature of illusion. Therefore, the true Scriptural doctrine is that of Paripāma, namely, that the world is a modification of Brahman and is real; while the theory of illusion or Vivarta has no foundation in the Scriptures.

SŪTRA I., 4. 27.

योनिश्च हि गीयते ॥ १ । ४ । २७ ॥

योनिः Yonih, the womb, the source. च Cha, and हि Hi, because. गीयते Gīyate, is sung, is described, or called.

27. Brahman is both the material as well as the operative cause of the universe, because some texts so describe Him.—135.

## COMMENTARY

The following texts of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad call Him the Yoni of the universe :

यद् भूतयोनिं परिपश्यन्ति धीराः ॥

That whom the wise regard as the womb of all beings. (I., 1. 6.).

वर्तारमीशं पुरुषं ब्रह्मयोनिम् ॥

The maker, the Lord, the Person, Brahman, the womb. (III., 1. 6.)

The word "maker" shows that he is the operative cause, while the term "womb" shows that He is the material cause also. The word Yoni or womb always denotes the material cause. As in the sentence : "The earth is the Yoni or womb of herbs and trees, etc."

True, in ordinary language and in the Vedas, a distinction is drawn between the material and the operative cause, and ordinarily we do not find one person combining in himself both these qualities, for many causes are required to bring about any particular result in worldly life ; yet the express texts above quoted leave no room for doubt, that so far as God is concerned, He is both the operative and the material cause.

### Adhikaraṇa VIII.—All names are names of God.

*Viśaya* : The present section is commenced in order to show that there are no Upaniṣad texts, which would go against the propositions above established. There are some texts, which apparently establish that Pradhāna or Śiva or some other deity than Viṣṇu is the cause of the universe, while others prove that the individual self, the Jīva, is such a cause. In the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad we find the following texts, showing that Śiva is the cause of the world-creation, etc., and not Hari :

क्षरं प्रधानममृताक्षरं हरः क्षरात्मनावीशते देव एकः । तस्याभिध्यानाद्योमनात् तत्त्वभावात् भूयश्चान्ते विश्वमायानिवृत्तिः ॥ १० ॥

The Pradhāna is changeful ; Hara (*lit.*, the Destroyer) is immortal and unchangeable. The one God rules the changeable Pradhāna and the unchangeable human soul. By meditating on Him, by communion and unity with Him, the world-illusion is completely removed and comes to an end. (I., 10).

एको हि रुद्रो न द्वितीयाय तस्थुर्वै श्मल्लोकान् ईशत ईशनीमिः । प्रत्यङ्जनास्तिष्ठति सञ्चुकोचान्तकाले संसृज्य विश्वा भुवनानि गोपाः ॥ २ ॥

Rudra (*lit.*, the killer of all pains) who rules all worlds with His powers, is one only—the wise do not acknowledge a second. He exists behind all persons. He creates all the worlds, preserves them and rolls them up at the end. (III., 2).

ओ देवानां प्रमथश्चोद्भवश्च विश्वाधिपो रुद्रो महर्षिः । हिरण्यगर्भं जनयामास पूर्वं स ओ ह्रस्व्या शुभया संयुनक्तु ॥ ४ ॥

He who is the cause of the birth and the power of all the Devas, Rudra, the Lord of all, the Omniscient, who, at the beginning begot Hiraṇyagarbha, may He grant us good understanding. (III., 4.)

यदाऽतमस्तत्र दिवा न रात्रिर्न सत्र चासच्छिव एव केवलः । तदक्षरं तत् सवितुर्वरेण्यं प्रज्ञा च तस्मात् प्रसूता पुराणी ॥ १८ ॥

When darkness is removed, there is neither day nor night, neither being nor non-being, but only the Śiva alone. He is unchangeable. He is adored by the Śāvitṛī. From Him flows the Ancient Wisdom. (IV., 18.)

The following texts similarly show that the creation proceeds from Pradhāna :

प्रधानादिदमुत्पन्नं प्रधानमधिगच्छति ।

प्रधाने लयमभ्येति न ह्यन्यत् कारणं मतम् ॥

From Pradhāna (*lit.*, the Best, the Chief) is produced this universe, it goes back into Pradhāna, it is sustained by Him ; verily there is no other cause recognised by the wise.

The following text shows that the world proceeds from the Jīva :

जीवाद् भवन्ति भूतानि, जीवे तिष्ठन्त्यचञ्चलाः ।

जीवे च लयमिच्छन्ति, न जीवात् कारणं परम् ॥

From the Jīva (*lit.*, the life, the Giver of life) proceeds all beings, they remain sustained by the Jīva firmly, they merge into the Jīva ; there is no higher cause than the Jīva.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt. Do the words Hara, etc., used in the above extracts, denote what they ordinarily mean or are they to be taken in their etymological significance, as denoting Brahman ?

*Pûrvapakṣa* : These words must be taken in their ordinary significance and denote Śiva, Pradhāna and Jīva, respectively.

*Siddhānta* : This objection is met by the author by the following Sûtra.

SŪTRA I., 4. 28.

एतेन सर्वे व्याख्याता व्याख्याताः ॥ १ । ४ । २८ ॥

एतेन Etena, by this, by the method of interpretation indicated in the above Sûtras. सर्वे Sarve, all (words like Hara, Rudra, etc.) व्याख्याताः Vyākhyātāḥ, are explained.

28. Thus are (to be) explained all words (like Hara, etc.)—136.

#### COMMENTARY

The words like "Hara," etc., should be explained by the method above indicated. All such words denote the Supreme Brahman, because all names and words are His name. As says the following text :

नामानि विश्वानि न सन्ति लोके यदाविरासीत् पुरुषस्य सर्वम् ॥



All names that exist among mankind have come out from Him, the Puruṣa (and so primarily apply to Him).

The Bhāllaveya Śruti also says the same :

नामानि सर्वाणि यमाविशन्ति, तं वै विष्णुं परममुदाहरन्ति ॥

"Him denote all the names, they all declare the Supreme Brahman, the Lord Viṣṇu."

Vaiśampāyana also has said that all these names are the designation of Śrī Kṛṣṇa. In the Skanda Purāṇa also it is written :

"Excepting the names of Nārāyaṇa and such like, Hari gave all his other names (like those of Rudra, etc.) to different Deities."

The guiding principle, however, is this : Where there is no conflict of teachings, there the names like Hara, Rudra and the rest, denote the respective Devas popularly so called. But where there arises a conflict, there these names denote the Lord Viṣṇu alone.

The repetition of the word Vyākhyātāḥ is meant to indicate the termination of the Adhyāya.

Let our hearts be ever fixed on the Lord Kṛṣṇa, who, as if in sport, creates, maintains, and destroys the whole universe, who is the Supreme Lord, whose powers are inconceivable, infinite and true; and in whom all the Vedas find their final goal and fulfilment.

Here ends the fourth Pāda of the first Adhyāya.

*Note:* Thus the word Hara when applied to God means the Destroyer, who breaks up all the elements into their primordial state at the time of Pralaya. (Harati tattvāṇi, layābbhimukham nayati); Rudra means the destroyer of all pains. (Rujam drāvayati): Śiva means the Blessed One, the Auspicious One, Pradhāna means the Best, the Chief; Jīva means the Life, the giver of life; and so on.

## SECOND ADHYĀYA

### FIRST PĀDA.

---

दुर्युक्तिद्रोणजवाणविक्षितं परीक्षितं यः स्फुटमुत्तराश्रयम् ।

सुदर्शनेन श्रुतिमौलिमव्ययं व्यधात् स कृष्णः प्रभुरस्तु मे गतिः ॥

May that Lord Kṛṣṇa be my refuge and goal, who with His discus called Sudarśana protected in the womb of his mother Uttarā, the holy Parīkṣita, the son of Abhimanyu, even before his birth, from the burning arrows of the cruel son of Droṇa.

*Note* : This verse has a double meaning. It may be applied to Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana and the author of the Sūtras also.

In the first Adhyāya, it was established that the Lord of all is the chief object, which the Vedānta texts teach ; that He is the material as well as the operative cause of all ; that He is different from everything ; that He is the Inner Self of all things ; that He is free from all imperfections ; that He possesses inconceivable infinite powers, and has measureless auspicious qualities. This was established by the Samanvaya or correct interpretation of all the Vedānta texts. But in the second Adhyāya, it would be proved that all contrary views establishing Pradhāna to be the cause of the universe are wrong ; and it will reconcile the conflicts of Smṛti and reasonings, which go to establish that contrary view, by proving that those reasonings are fallacious, and the systems of creation, etc., established by the Vedānta are the only right view. Thus this chapter proves that the philosophy of Kapila is not supported by Vedānta texts.

---

### *Adhikaraṇa I.—The Refutation of Sāṅkhya.*

At first, the author of the Sūtras disproves that Sāṅkhya is opposed to the sacred texts and removes the doubt that the Vedānta view contradicts those texts which establish the Sāṅkhya theories. It shows that, properly speaking, there is no foundation for the Sāṅkhya view in the Vedānta texts.

*Doubt* : Here the doubt arises, whether the view that Brahman is the sole cause of the universe, as established by the reconciliation of the texts, in the first Adhyāya, is not contradicted by the Sāṅkhya Smṛti.

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The opponent says, if Brahman is the sole cause of the universe, then what becomes of those texts which establish the Sāṅkhya view that Pradhāna is the material cause of the universe. According to Vedānta, this Sāṅkhya Smṛti would find no scope. Kapila, the author of Sāṅkhya, is called a Ṛṣi in the following text of the Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad :

यो योनिं योनिमधितिष्ठत्येको विश्वानि रूपाणि योनीश्च सर्वाः ।

अविं प्रसूतं कपिलं यस्तमग्रे ज्ञानैर्विमर्शि जायमानञ्च पश्येत् ॥

"It is the one who superintends every cause, all forms and all germs ; who sustains with knowledge the wise Kapila, the first born, and who saw him born."—(Svet. Up., V., 2)

This sage Kapila is thus an authoritative person, because the Śruti itself calls him the Ṛṣi Kapila. This Ṛṣi acknowledges the validity of fire-sacrifices, etc., as taught in the Karma Kāṇḍa (and is not a scoffer of ritualism like some other heretics). He has composed the Sāṅkhya Smṛti, as Jñāna Kāṇḍa, in order to teach men the nature and means of getting release, to those who desire Mukti. The first aphorism of his system is :

अथ त्रिविधदुःखः सत्यन्तनिवृत्तिरत्यन्तपुरुषार्थः ॥

अथ Atha, now, त्रिविधः Trividha, three-fold. दुःख Duhkha, sorrow. अत्यन्त Atyanta, complete. निवृत्तिः Nivṛtṭiḥ, cessation. अत्यन्त Atyanta, complete. पुरुषार्थः Puruṣārthaḥ the *summum bonum*.

The complete cessation of three sorts of sorrows is the highest end of man.

In another aphorism he says :

न दृष्टार्थसिद्धिर्निवृत्तेरप्यनुवृत्तिदर्शनात् ।

न, Na, not. दृष्टार्थ Dṛṣṭārtha, visible means. सिद्धिः Siddhiḥ, attainment. निवृत्तेः Nivṛtteḥ, after cessation. अपि Api, also. अनुवृत्तिः Anuvṛtti, return. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of being found.

This cessation of pain is not possible by material means, because the relief afforded by them is temporary only ; and there is the recurrence of pain.

In this system the non-sentient Pradhāna is the independent cause of the world ; and Pradhāna creates the world in order to give release to the bound Jīvas, or for her own sake. Though insentient, it creates the world ; just as the insentient milk turns of its own accord into curd, etc. If, therefore, Brahman be held to be the sole cause of the universe, then the Sāṅkhya doctrine becomes contradicted and will find no scope anywhere, because it is entirely devoted to the setting forth of theoretical truth and not practical duty, and if it is not accepted in that quality, it is of no use whatsoever. Therefore, Vedānta texts should be so construed as not to contradict the system of Kapila who is a great authority. It can not be said, that if we interpret Vedānta texts in conformity with Sāṅkhya.

then Manu and other Smṛtis like that would be contradicted. There is no harm, if Smṛtis like Manu and the rest are contradicted on theoretical points, for such contradictions would not make those works useless. For Manu and similar works inculcate practical religious duty, and are authoritative in matters of Karma Kāṇḍa and will thus have a scope of their own. The Sāṅkhya Smṛti, however, is purely theoretical.

*Siddhānta* : This objection the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 1.

स्मृत्यनवकाशदोषप्रसंग इति चेत् न अन्यस्मृत्यनवकाशदोषप्रसंगात् ॥ २ । १ । १ ॥

स्मृति Smṛti, the Smṛti, the Kapila philosophy. अनवकाश Anavakāśa, non-room, want of application, redundancy. दोष Doṣa, fault. प्रसङ्गः Prasāṅgaḥ, result. इति Iti, thus चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अन्य Anya, other. स्मृति Smṛti, the Smṛti. अनवकाश Anavakāśa, non-scope or redundancy. दोष Doṣa, fault. प्रसङ्गात् Prasāṅgāt, because of the result.

1. ( If it be objected that ) the ( Kapila ) Smṛti will find no scope ( under Vedāntic interpretation ), we say no ; because ( under the Sāṅkhya interpretation ) there would result the fault of want of scope for other Smṛtis ( like that of Manu, etc. )—137.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Anavakāśa means want of room, want of scope, in other words, becoming totally useless. The objection to the Vedānta texts being explained, by force of Samanvaya, as teaching that Brahman is the sole cause of the universe, is that the Sāṅkhya Smṛti does not find any scope under that interpretation ; therefore, the Vedānta texts ought to be explained in a way opposite to that which would appear from their superficial plain meaning. This objection is raised in the first part of the Sūtra.

It is answered in the second half of the Sūtra, which says, let it be so that the Sāṅkhya Smṛti finds no scope, for otherwise other Smṛtis like those of Manu and the rest which are in harmony with the Vedānta teaching and which declare that Brahman is the universal cause, would become useless. Thus there is a choice of two evils : should the Vedānta texts be interpreted in a distorted way, so as to give scope to the Sāṅkhya Smṛti, or should they be interpreted in a natural way, so as to give room to Manu and the rest. The greater evil is not to give scope to Manu and the rest. Manu and the Smṛtis like that establish that the Lord

is the cause of the creation, etc., of the universe, and that the theory of Kapila is not correct. Thus Manu (Chapter I. V.) says :

आसीदिदं तमोभूतमप्रज्ञातमलक्षणम् । अप्रतर्क्यमविज्ञेयं प्रसुप्तमिव सर्वतः ॥ ततः स्वयम्भुर्भगवान्, अव्यक्तो  
व्यञ्जयन्निदम् । महाभूतादिवृत्तौजाः प्रादुरासीत्तमोनुदः ॥ योऽसावतीन्द्रियग्राह्यः सूक्ष्मोऽव्यक्तः सनातनः ।  
सर्वभूतपयोऽचिन्त्यः स एष स्वयमुद्बभौ ॥ सोऽभिध्याय शरीरात् स्वात् सिद्ध्युर्विविधाः प्रजाः । अप एष  
ससर्जदौ तासु बीजमवाप्तुजत् । तदगडमभवद्ध्येमं सहस्रांशुसमपभम् । तस्मिन् जज्ञे स्वयं ब्रह्मा सर्वलोक-  
पितामहः ॥

This (universe) existed in the shape of darkness, unperceived, destitute of distinctive marks, unattainable by reasoning, unknowable, wholly immersed, as it were, in deep sleep.

Then the divine Self-existent (Svayambhu, himself) indiscernible, (but) making (all) this, the great elements and the rest, discernible, appeared with irresistible creative power, dispelling the darkness.

He who can be perceived by the internal organ (alone), who is subtle, indiscernible, and eternal, who contains all created beings and is inconceivable, shone forth of his own (will).

He, desiring to produce beings of many kinds from his own body, first with a thought created the waters, and placed his seed in them.

That (seed) became a golden egg, in brilliancy equal to the sun ; in that (egg) He himself was born as Brahman, the progenitor of the whole world.

Similarly, Parāśara says in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa :

विष्णोः सकाशादुद्भूतं जगत्तैव च स्थितम् । स्थितिसंयमकर्तासौ जगतोऽस्य जगच्च सः ॥ यथोष्णोनाभि-  
र्हृदयादूर्णो सन्तत्यवक्त्रतः । तथा विहृत्य भूयस्तां प्रसृत्येवं जनार्दनः ॥

From Viṣṇu there sprang the world, and in Him it abides ; He makes this world persist and he rules it. He is the world. As the spider draws out the thread from his stomach, and again draws it into his body, similarly the world is emitted from the body of the Lord and merges back into it.—Viṣṇu Purāṇa.

There are other Smṛtis also to the same effect. These find no scope in Karma Kāṇḍa and are concerned with theoretical truth only. They cannot be explained as helping Karma Kāṇḍa. They are taught for the sake of Jñāna, because they teach practical duties, with the object of purifying the mind, so the knowledge of Brahman may arise therein.

(All abstract science and philosophy are of no practical utility, except in so far as they conduce to mental culture ; or to put it in the words of the Hindu Philosophy, Jñāna Kāṇḍa has no concern with actions, but only with the purification of the mind.) The following Śruti text shows that the purification of the mind is the object of Jñāna Kāṇḍa :

तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणा विविदिषन्ति यज्ञेन दानेन तपसाऽनाशकेन ॥

The Brāhmaṇas try to know Him through the studies of the Vedas, by sacrifices, by alms, by austerities and by fasting.—Br. Up., IV., 4. 22.

No doubt in some cases we find the performance of these things lead to the falling of rain, to the begetting of sons, to the attainment of heaven, etc. That is, however, only side-results or bye-products, which arise occasionally ; with the object to produce faith in the scriptures ; and their higher object is to produce knowledge of Brahman. In fact, the entire Veda including the Karma Kāṇḍa has this object, as says the text :

सर्वे वेदा यत्पदमामनन्ति तपाँसि सर्वाणि च यददन्ति । यद्विद्वन्तो ब्रह्मचर्यञ्चरन्ति तत्ते पदँसंग्रहेण ब्रवीम्योमित्येतत् ॥ १५ ॥

Whose form and essential nature all the Vedas declare and in order to attain Whom they prescribe austerities, desiring to know whom the great ones perform Brahmacharya, that symbol I will briefly tell thee. It is Om. (Katha Up., I., 3. 15).

So also the text :

नारायणपरा वेदाः, etc.

“All the Vedas declare Nārāyaṇa alone,” etc.

Nor can we settle the meaning of the Vedānta texts by means of the Sāṅkhya Smṛti of Kapila, for then we should have to accept the extremely undesirable conclusion, that all the other Smṛtis quoted are of no authority, and it would be establishing a conclusion opposed to the whole tendency of the sacred scriptures. For settling the meaning of a text is to show clearly the whole current of the scripture. Sāṅkhya Smṛti does not possess this qualification. Therefore, it is against scripture, evolved out of one's own inner consciousness and not the production of any authoritative (Āpta) person. We are, therefore, not afraid of the contingency that the Sāṅkhya Smṛti would find no scope in Vedānta. Let the Sāṅkhya Smṛti be totally discarded when by so doing we save those other very numerous class of Smṛtis which closely follow the doctrine of the Vedānta.

It is not proper to show undue preference for Sāṅkhya Smṛti merely on the strength of its being composed by an Āpta or authoritative person. For in that case, we shall have to admit many a conflicting Smṛti, such as those of Gautama, etc., who were also Āptas, but who have given different theories about the world, soul and God and thus we shall be landed into the absurdity of believing contradictory theories, merely because their authors were Āptas (or reliable honest persons). The result of which will be that we shall never know what was the truth. Moreover, it is a well-known maxim that when there is a conflict between two Smṛtis, then that Smṛti alone is to be followed which is in harmony with the sacred scriptures (Śruti) : and that alone ought to be respected.

Since our opponent raises the objection on the strength of Kapila's Smṛti, therefore our author says, "we shall refute him by his own argument," namely, by the strength of other Smṛtis such as those of Manu, etc. For if the argument of the opponent has any force, it comes to this, that scope should be given to the Smṛtis, and the Vedānta should be so explained that the Smṛtis should not be discarded.

Taking our stand on this proposition of our opponent we say, that we must so explain the Vedānta that it may give scope to the largest number of Smṛtis, such as Manu and the rest.

As regards the objection, that the author of the Sāṅkhya is spoken of respectfully by the Sruti itself, in the famous passage of Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad (V., 2), we reply that you have not properly understood that verse. It does not refer to Kapila, the founder of Atheistic Sāṅkhya, but to a different being altogether. The verse really means, "He who before the creation of the world produced the sage Kapila' (namely, the Golden-coloured Brahmā) in order to maintain the universe and who sustains this Brahmā with the knowledge of the past, present and future, we worship that Lord God." The word Kapila here means Golden-coloured, and is another name of Brahmā called Hiranyagarbha, referred to in this very Upaniṣad in Verse 4 of the 3rd Chapter: "He who is the cause of the birth and power of the gods, Rudra, the lord of all, the omniscient, who at the beginning begot Hiranyagarbha, may he grant us good understanding." That this first-born with the Golden colour is Brahmā, we find also from Verse 12, Chapter IV of this Upaniṣad. Thus the sacred scripture refers to another being altogether, when it uses the word Kapila; and it does not refer to the founder of the atheistic science, for he misinterpreted the meanings of the Sruti. Therefore, if this later Kapila is called an unauthoritative person (Anāpta) we are not showing any disrespect to the Sruti. On the other hand, the authoritativeness of Manu is stated in unambiguous language in the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, where it is said, "Whatever Manu has declared that is a panacea."

Similarly, Śrī Parāśara is mentioned in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa to have obtained the knowledge of the supersensuous worlds and of the true nature of Devatās, through the blessing of Pulastya and Vasiṣṭha. Thus both Manu and Parāśara are undoubtedly Āptas, but not so Kapila. The sage Kapila who founded the Sāṅkhya Smṛti opposed to the Vedic doctrine, was a particular Jīva, born in the family of Agnivamśa and deluded by the mysterious power of the Lord, he propounded this false philosophy. He is not that Kapila who was the son of Kardama, for he was an incarnation of Viṣṇu.

*Note :* There are two persons of the name of Kapila mentioned in our books : they should not be confounded. The founder of the atheistic Sāṅkhya was a different person from the Kapila mentioned with great respect in Bhāgavata Purāṇa and the Bhagavad Gītā. See our Chhândogya Upaniṣad, page 242.

Thus we find in the Padma Purāṇa :

कपिलो वासुदेवाख्यः सांख्यं तत्त्वं जगाद ह ।

ब्रह्मादिभ्यश्च देवेभ्यो भृगुवादिभ्यस्तथैव च ॥

तथैवासुरये सर्वं वेदार्थैरुपबृंहितम् ।

सर्ववेद विरुद्धञ्च कपिलोऽन्य जगाद ह ॥

सांख्यमासुरयेऽन्यमै कुतर्कपरिवृंहितम् ॥

One Kapila called also Vāsudeva taught the philosophy of Sāṅkhya to the Devas, Brahmā and the rest, to the Rsis, Bhṛgu and the rest, as well as to Āsuri. He taught the doctrine full of harmony with the teachings of the Vedas. There was another Kapila who also taught a Sāṅkhya philosophy, fully opposed to all the Vedic teachings, and he had also a disciple called Āsuri, who was other than the first Āsuri. His Philosophy is full of false reasoning and bad arguments.

Therefore, there is no fault if the Sāṅkhya Smṛti be entirely discarded, because it is opposed to the Vedas and is the work of a person who is not an Āpta.

SŪTRA II., 1. 2.

इतरेषाञ्चानुपलब्धेः ॥ २ । १ । २ ॥

इतरेषाम् Itareṣām, of others, namely, of other points mentioned in the philosophy of Sāṅkhya. च Cha, and. अनुपलब्धेः Anupalabdheḥ, because of the non-perception, because of their not being found in the Vedas.

2. Many other doctrines taught in the Sāṅkhya philosophy are also not found in the Vedas. hence this system is not authoritative.—138.

#### COMMENTARY

It is not only because Sāṅkhya teaches that Pradhāna is the author of creation, which makes it unauthoritative ; but it teaches other doctrines also, which have no foundation in the Vedas. Thus it teaches that souls are pure consciousness and all-pervading, that bondage and release is the work of Prakṛti alone, and these two are effects of Prakṛti. It further teaches that there is no Supreme Spirit, the Lord of all. It also holds that time is not a Tattva. It holds that the Prāṇas are merely forms of the functions of the five senses, and have no separate existence of their own. All these heterodox doctrines are to be found there.



*Adhikaran II.—The refutation of Yoga.*

Says an opponent, admitted that the Vedānta text should not be explained in the light of the Sāṅkhya philosophy, because it is opposed to the theory of Vedānta. But they may be explained according to the philosophy of Yoga, because it is based on the teachings of Vedānta and is not opposed to it. In fact, Yoga is in harmony with sacred scriptures, and may be called a Srauta philosophy. It is mentioned in the Upaniṣads thus :

तां योगमिति मन्यन्ते स्थिरामिन्द्रियधारणाम् ।

अपमत्तस्तदा भवति योगो हि प्रमवाप्ययौ ॥ ११ ॥

That they hold to be Yoga, which is the firm restraint of the senses. Then one becomes not heedless. Yoga should be performed with regard to the Lord, from whom is the origin and destruction of all things.—*Kaṭha Upaniṣad*, VI., 11.

We find many such reference to Yoga in the Upaniṣads thus :

मृत्युप्रोक्तान्चित्केतोऽथ लब्ध्वा विद्यामेतां योगविधिञ्च कृत्स्नम् । ब्रह्मप्राप्ता विरजोऽभूद्विमृत्युरन्योऽप्येवं यो विदध्यात्ममेव ॥ १८ ॥

Nachiketas having then obtained all this knowledge and practice of Yoga imparted by Yama, attained Brahman, became free from Rajas and beyond death ; another who thus knows the spirit certainly becomes so.—*Kaṭha Upaniṣad*, VI., 18.

Similarly, the method of postures and other members of Yoga are taught in the Gītā also, where it says, that one should sit with his body straight and neck not bent, etc. Therefore, the Lord Patañjali composed this Yoga Smṛti in order that men may conquer Saṁsāra, by crossing over the difficult ocean of the world. He is one of the best authors and he has composed this philosophy through his great Yoga powers. Thus his first aphorism is :

अथ योगानुशासनम् । १—१.

Now an explanation of Yoga.—1—1.

योगश्चित्तवृत्तिनिरोधः १—२.

Yoga is the cessation of the modifications of thinking principle.—1—2.

These Sūtras are not opposed to Vedānta. If this Yoga Smṛti, which merely deals with the teaching of the concentration of the mind, be held unauthoritative, then it will find no scope anywhere else ; and if the Vedānta texts are to be explained by the method of Samanvaya, without regard to any other Smṛti, then this Yoga becomes redundant. Therefore, the Vedānta texts should be so explained as to give room to Yoga Smṛti, and the doctrine of Samanvaya should not be carried to this extreme.

The Smṛtis like Manu and the rest, being concerned with Karma Kāṇḍa, may be contradicted in certain parts by the Yoga Smṛti ; but they will still have room, inasmuch as they teach practical duties (Dharma). Therefore, says the Purvapakṣin, the Vedānta texts should be construed by the Yoga Smṛti and not in accordance with the above-mentioned Samanvaya.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 3

एतेन योगः प्रत्युक्तः ॥ २ । १ । ३ ॥

एतेन Etena, by this ; namely, by the refutation of the Sāṅkhya Smṛti. योगः Yogaḥ, Yoga doctrine as to creation. 'प्रत्युक्तः Pratyuktaḥ, has been refuted.

3. By the above refutation of the Sāṅkhya Smṛti, the Yoga Smṛti is also to be understood to have been refuted—  
139.

#### COMMENTARY

On similar grounds as those by which the Sāṅkhya theory of creation has been refuted, the theory of Yoga is also refuted thereby. For the Yoga theory on this subject is opposed to Vedānta. If the Vedānta texts are to be explained by the light of the Yoga Smṛti, then the other Smṛtis, like that of Manu and the rest, which are in harmony with the Vedas, would become useless ; and will have no scope. Therefore, the Vedānta texts about creation are not to be explained in accordance with the Yoga Smṛti.

It cannot be said that the Yoga theory about creation is not opposed to the Vedānta theory about cosmogony. For in the Yoga philosophy also, the Pradhāna is said to be the *independent* cause of creation. According to the Yoga, the Lord and the Jīvas are mere consciousnesses (Chitīmātrāḥ) and both are all-pervading (Vibhu). Not only is the Yoga theory opposed to Vedānta in these matters, it is opposed also in other respects, such as : Yoga holds that Mukti is merely the cessation of pain, which is a result of Yoga practice. All these theories are opposed to the teachings of Vedānta on these points. We do not find in the Vedānta texts the mention of the three-fold means of right knowledge, admitted by the Yoga. The latter holds that the Pramāṇas are perception, inference and testimony. Nor do we find in the Vedānta texts the mention of the five Vṛttis or functions of the mind, mentioned by Yoga. The Yoga holds that Chitta or mind or thinking principle has five modifications, right knowledge, false knowledge, fancy, sleep and memory. There is no

such classification of mental functions in the Vedānta texts. All these things are to be found in the Yoga philosophy alone. Therefore, Yoga Smṛti being opposed to Vedānta on these matters, is not a valid Smṛti. If it be said, the Yoga philosophy would find no scope otherwise, we say, let it be so. But since it is opposed to the Vedānta, we are not afraid, if it has no scope left to it. In fact, all the arguments adduced to refute Sāṅkhya may be adduced against the Yoga also. The real truth about the Lord as revealed in the Vedānta, about the Jivas, about the cause of bondage and salvation, and the means of getting salvation will be described later on.

This being so, how do you explain those Vedānta texts which expressly mention Yoga and its various members, such as the following :

सिद्धन्तं मथाप्य समं शरीरं तदीन्द्रियाणि मनसा सन्निवेश्य । ब्रह्मोदुपेन प्रतरेत विद्वान् स्रोतांसि  
सर्वाणि भयावहानि ॥ ८ ॥

Making his body, with its three raised parts steady and placing his senses into the heart with his intellect, the wise men should cross all the fearful streams by means of the rafter of Om, the Brahman.—*Svet. Up.*, II., 8.

नित्यो नित्यानां चेतनश्चेन्नानामेको बहूनां यो विदधाति कामान् । तत् कारणं सांख्ययोगाधिगम्यं  
ज्ञात्वा देवं मुच्यते सर्वपाशैः ॥ १३ ॥

The Eternal among the eternal ones, the Consciousness of the conscious beings who though one, dispenses to many their objects of desire—one who knows that God, the cause who is knowable by Sāṅkhya and Yoga, is freed from all bonds.—*Svet. Up.*, VI., 13.

The words Sāṅkhya, Yoga, however, here mean metaphysical knowledge and meditation, and have no reference to the systems of philosophy bearing those names.

Release cannot be obtained by the method taught in Yoga, namely, by the discrimination of the difference between Puruṣa and Prakṛti, which is the favourite method of Yoga and Sāṅkhya. According to Vedānta, release depends on the grace of God *plus* the knowledge of God, and not upon the knowledge of the difference between man and matter. This will be proved by the following texts :

वेदादमेतं पुरुषं महान्तमादित्यवर्णं तमसः परस्ताद् ।

तमेव विदित्वा तिमृत्युमेति नान्यः पन्था विषतेऽयनाय ॥ ८ ॥

I know this Great Spirit, shining like the sun and transcending the world of darkness. It is only by knowing Him that one escapes death ; there is no other path to go upon.—*Svet. Up.*, III., 8.

तमेव धीरो विज्ञाय प्रज्ञां कुर्वीत ब्राह्मणः ॥ नानुध्यायाद् बहुल्लब्धवान्वाचो विग्लापनं हि  
प्रदिति ॥ २१ ॥

Knowing Him alone, let the wise Brāhmaṇa constantly meditate. Let him not study many books, for verily all that is waste of energy.—*Br. Up., IV., 4. 21.*

एतद् यो ध्यायति रसति भजति सोऽमृतो भवति ।

He who meditates on Him, feels joy in Him and is devoted to Him, alone gets immortality and no one else.

Moreover, that portion of the Sāṅkhya or Yoga, which is not opposed to the Vedānta, is admitted valid by us also. We do not cherish any animosity against the whole of Sāṅkhya or of Yoga : but take exception only to certain theories of theirs, as to creation and the method of obtaining release. The fact is, we simply discard the portions expressly opposed to the Vedānta, and accept the rest of the philosophy of Yoga and Sāṅkhya.

True, the Yoga is not non-theistic like the Sāṅkhya, for it admits the existence of God, in its several Sūtras, such as the following :

ईश्वरप्रणिधानाद्वा ।

ईश्वर, Īśvara, God. प्रणिधानात्, Prapīdhānāt, by resignation to the will of. वा Vā, or. Concentration may be attained by complete devotion to the Lord.

क्लेशकर्मविपाकाशयैरपरामृष्टः पुरुषविशेष ईश्वरः ।

क्लेश, Kleśa, pain. कर्म, Karma, acts. विपाक, Vipāka, fruits of act. आशयैः, Āsayaiḥ, by the store. अपरामृष्टः Aparāmrṣṭaḥ, untouched. पुरुष, Puruṣa. विशेषः, Viśeṣaḥ, particular Spirit, ईश्वरः, Īśvaraḥ, Lord.

"The Lord is a particular Spirit untainted by evil, suffering, acts and the fruits of actions," etc.

Yet these Sūtras are not absolutely necessary for the Yoga system, and many say that the author of Yoga was not in his right mind when he framed these particular aphorisms, and they are merely a mistake of his.

Similarly, Gautama, the author of Nyāya, and Kaṇāda, the author of the Vaiśeṣika, were deluded when they propounded their theories regarding creation and release : which are also opposed to the Vedānta.

These will be refuted later on. No doubt these authors are also very learned and wise, but their delusion is the result of either too much conceit of their own knowledge, thinking that they were omniscient, or because the Lord had so willed that they should start such theories, for some mysterious purpose of His own. In fact, some hold that these theories were necessary in order to clearly bring out the perfect symmetry and harmoniousness of the Vedānta.

The present Sūtra opens a new Adhikaraṇa, inasmuch as the Yoga differs from the Sāṅkhya in admitting the existence of the Lord ; and so

the doubt arose that the refutation of the Sāṅkhya did not necessarily involve the refutation of Yoga. To remove that doubt, this Adhikharana has been started. The Saṅgati is Atideśa or analogy. Though the author of Yoga is no less a personage than the Great Hiranyagarbha himself, yet even he should be discarded on points where he contradicts Vedānta.

### *Adhikarāṇa III.—The Vedas are eternal and infallible.*

Says an objector : If the Smṛtis like the Sāṅkhya and the rest are to be set aside as non-valid and Anāpta, merely because they are opposed to the Vedas, then you must first establish that the Vedas themselves are infallible and contain nothing which is opposed to science or reason. The present section is commenced to remove that doubt, and to establish the infallibility of the Vedas.

*Doubt* : The doubt is raised in the following form. Is the Veda fallible or infallible ? Is it the production of an Āpta or an Anāpta ? Had the Veda been infallible, then all that it says would come out to be true. But that is not the case. For example, it says, "Let a person desiring rain, perform the Kârîrî Sacrifice." Now the performance of the Kârîrî Yajña does not invariably produce rain. Therefore, the Veda is not infallible.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 4.

न विज्ञानत्वादस्य तथात्वञ्च शब्दात् ॥ २ । १ । ४ ॥

न Na, not. विज्ञानत्वाद् Vilakṣaṇatvât, because of the difference of character. अस्य Asya, of that, of the Veda. तथात्वम् Tathâtvam, suchness, the eternity, the authority. च Cha, and. शब्दात् Sabdât, from the Word, from the Scripture.

4. The Veda is not unauthoritative (like the Sāṅkhya, etc.) because of its being of a different character altogether, and because its eternity is established from the Word.—140.

#### COMMENTARY

The Veda is not unauthoritative, like the Smṛtis of the Sāṅkhyas and the rest. Why ? Vilakṣaṇatvât. Because it has a different character. Every human production is liable to four-fold error : that is, heedlessness, wrong-headedness (trying to establish a proposition merely through a spirit of argumentation and against one's own inmost conviction), error or delusion, and want of ability, owing to imperfection of instruments. No such errors of authorship are possible in the case of the Veda. For

it is eternal and has no human being for its author. And its Tathātva, suchness, the possession of such attribute, namely, its eternity, is proved from the Word itself. As says a Sruti :

तस्मै नूनं अभिषवे वाचा विरूप नित्यया । वृष्णे चोदस्व सुष्ठुतिम् ॥

तस्मै, Tasmai. to him, to the Agni. नूनं Nūnam, now. अभिषवे, Abhidyaive, to the well-satisfied. वाचा, Vāchā, with Speech. विरूप, Virūpa, O sage Virūpa. नित्यया, Nityayā, with the Eternal. वृष्णे, Vṛṣṇe, to the Powerful. चोदस्व, Chodasva, praise. सुष्ठुतिम् Su-ṣṭutim, a fair praise.

Now, O Virūpa, rouse for Him, Strong God who is ever Self-content, fair praise with the Eternal Vedic Speech— Rg Veda, VII., 94. 6.

Thus the Sruti itself calls the Mantras by the significant epithet of the Nitya-vāk or the Eternal Voice. The Smṛtis also declare the Veda to be eternal. Thus in the following :

अनादि निधना नित्या वागुत्सृष्टा स्वयम्भुवा ।

आदौ वेदमयी दिव्या यतः सर्वाः प्रवृत्तयः ॥

The Self-existing Lord, in the beginning of creation, sent forth the eternal, beginningless voice, the divine Veda ; from which proceeded all the other scriptures.

The Smṛtis like those of Manu and the rest, are authoritative, because they are based on the Veda, and for no other reason. In the Sūtra, I., 3. 29, the eternity of the Veda was established by reasoning, in the present Sūtra it is established by authority ; herein consists the difference between these two Sūtras.

But, says an objector, the Vedas are non-eternal, because we find in them a statement to the effect that they were created, at a certain time, and every thing that is created, has an end, necessarily, some time or other. The following verse of the Puruṣa Sūkta shows that the Vedas are created :

तस्माद् यज्ञात् सर्वहुतः ऋचः सामानि जज्ञिरे ।

छन्दांसि जज्ञिरे तस्माद् यजुस् तस्मादजायत ॥

तस्माद् Tasmât, from Him. यज्ञात् Yajñât, from that Sacrifice, सर्वहुतः Sarva-hutah, all-offered, general sacrifice. ऋचः R̥chah, the ऋक् R̥ik, hymns. सामानि, Sāmāni, the Sāma hymns. जज्ञिरे Jajñire, were born or produced. छन्दांसि, Chhandaंसि, the Chhandas. जज्ञिरे Jajñire, were born or produced. तस्मात् Tasmât, from Him. यजुस् Yajus, the Yejur Veda. तस्मात् Tasmât, from Him. अजायत, Ajāyata, was born, produced.

From that great general sacrifice, R̥chas and Sāma hymns were born, therefrom were spells and charms produced ; the Yajus had its birth from Him—Rg Veda, X 90. 9.

To this we reply, this is not so. By the word Jan "was born" we mean "was manifested"; and not *born* in the ordinary sense. As has been said in the following verse :

स्वयम्भुरेव भगवान वेदो गीतस्त्वया पुरा ।

शिवाद्या ऋषिपर्यन्ताः स्मर्त्तारोऽस्य न कारकाः ॥

This Lord Veda is Self-existent (that is eternal). Thou, O God, hast sung it out of old. The great ones from Śiva down to the Ṛṣis are its reciters only and not its authors.

Nor can it validly be objected, that the Vedas are unauthoritative, because they do not always produce the results promised by them. The production, of any particular result, depends upon the capacity of the person performing the act. A competent person (like a competent chemist) always gets the predicted result, by the proper chanting of the hymns, while an incompetent person (like a tyro in Chemistry) fails to get the expected result. The failure of the result only proves the incompetency of the agent and not the defectiveness of science. While the Smṛtis like the Sāṅkhya and the rest are unauthoritative, not because they fail to produce the results promised by them, but because they are in conflict with the teachings of the Vedas on these important points of Creation, Release, etc.

*Adhikaraṇa IV.—The Superintending Devas are denoted by terms like Fire, Earth, etc.*

*Objection :* Let it be so. But how do you reconcile the absurd sayings of the Vedas, such as the following :

"The Fire willed let me become many ; the Waters willed let us become many."—*Chhândogya Upaniṣad*, VI., 4., etc.

"These Prâṇas quarrelling among themselves went to Brahmâ and asked who was the best amongst them."—*Bṛ Up.*

The elements like fire, etc., are non-sentient objects, and to say that they willed or quarrelled, is as reasonable as to say that the sons of a barren woman held a discussion. Therefore, one portion of the Vedas being proved unauthoritative, the portion relating to Brahman being the cause of the world, is also without authority. The Pradhâna is, therefore, the cause of the world.

*Reply :* To this the author replies by the following Sûtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 5.

अभिमानि व्यपदेशन्तु विशेषाद्गतिभ्याम् ॥ २ । १ । ५ ॥

अभिमानि Abhimâni, the presiding deity of the elements, etc. व्यपदेशः Vyapadeśaḥ, pointing out of, denotation of. तु Tu but. विशेष Viśeṣa, on account of

distinction, because of being so qualified. The epithets applied to these elements show that the superintending Devas are meant. अनुगतम् Anugatibhyām, on account of their entering. The subsequent passage expressly shows that the Devas entered into them.

5. The words fire, etc., however, denote there the superintending Devas, because the epithet "Deva" is mentioned there, and the statement that they entered these elements prove it also.—141.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" shows that the doubt above raised is being removed. In the phrases "the fire will'd," etc., the conscious superintending Devas of these elements are meant and not the uncscious elements. Why do you say so? Because of the specific epithet "Deva" is given therein. In those very passages we find that Fire, etc., are called Devas. Thus the whole passage is given below to understand the argument.

सदेव सोम्येदमग्र आसीदेकमेवाद्वितीयं तदेक आहुः सदेवेदमग्र आसीदेकमेवाद्वितीयं तस्मादसतः सज्जायेत ॥१॥

1. The Sat alone was in the beginning, one only, without an equal. About this the others say, the Asat alone existed in the beginning, one only without a second. From that Asat was produced the Sat.

कुतस्तु खलु सोम्यैवं स्यादिति होवान् कथमसतः सज्जायेतेति सदेव सोम्येदमग्र आसीदेकमेवाद्वितीयम् ॥२॥

2. "But, O child, how could it be thus?" said the father. "How from Asat should be born the Sat? Therefore, the Sat alone existed, O child, in the beginning, one only, without an equal."

तदेकत बहुस्यां प्रजायेयेति तत्तेजोऽसृजत तत्तेज ऐकत बहुस्यां प्रजायेयेति तदपोऽसृजत ॥

3. He thought, "I shall assume many forms and create beings." He created Fire. The Fire thought, "I shall assume many forms and create beings." That created the waters.

ता आप ऐकन्त बह्व्यः स्याम प्रजायेमहीति ता अन्नमसृजन्त ॥

4. The Waters thought, "We shall assume many forms and create beings." They created the Food.

सैवं देवतेकत इन्ताहमिमास्तिन्नो देवता अनेन जीवेनात्मनाऽनुप्रविश्य नामरूपे व्याकरवायीति ॥ २ ॥

2. That God thought, "These three Devatās are well-created; now I shall enter into them with that aspect of mine called the Living Self, and shall develop name and form."

Thus the specific epithet of the Devatā is applied to these three, and so they cannot mean inanimate elements, but are sentient beings, or cosmic Intelligences.



Similarly, the quarrel about the Prāṇas refers to the Devatās, as the following extract will show :

अवातो निःश्रेयसादानं एता ह वै देवता अहंश्रेयसे विवदमाना अस्माच्छरीरादुच्चकमुस्तद्वाभूतं शिष्ये-  
ऽथेतद्वाक्-विवेश तद्वाचा वदच्छिष्य एवथेतच्छुः प्रविवेश तद्वाचा वदच्छुषा पश्यच्छिष्य एवाथैनच्छ्रोत्रं प्रवि-  
वेश तद्वाचा वदच्छुषा पश्यच्छ्रोत्रेण शृण्वच्छिष्य एवाथेतन्मनः प्रविवेश तद्वाचा वदच्छुषा पश्यच्छ्रोत्रेण  
शृण्वन्मनसा ध्यायच्छिष्य एवाथेतन्माणः प्रविवेश तत्त एव समुत्तस्थौ तदेवाः प्राणो निःश्रेयसं विचिन्त्य  
प्राणमेव प्रज्ञात्मानमभिसंस्तूय सहितैः सर्वैरस्माहोकादुच्चक्रमुः ।

Next follows the recognition of the pre-eminence of the Prāṇa by the other Devatās. All the Devatās contending with one another to assert their own pre-eminence, went out of the body. It lay like a piece of wood. Then speech entered into it. It spoke and lay down still. Then the eye entered into it, when it spoke and saw, but still lay down. Then the ear entered into it, when it spoke, saw and heard, but still lay down. Then the mind entered into it, when it spoke, saw, heard, and thought, but still lay down. Then the Prāṇa entered into it, when it immediately got up. All these Devas knowing the Prāṇa to be pre-eminent and fully comprehending Him as the Conscious Self went out of this world with all these.—Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II., 9.

Thus here also the epithet Deva is applied to these senses. Consequently the quarrel was among the Devas of the senses and not between unconscious sense organs.

Not only the specific epithet Deva is applied to these, but in another Upaniṣad we find that the Devas entered into these elements, etc, in order to regulate their activities. Thus in the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, II., 4. 2. 4 :

ता एता देवताः सृष्टा अस्मिन् महर्त्यर्णवे प्रापन् । अग्निर्वाग्भूत्वा मुखं प्राविशद् । वायुः प्राणो भूत्वा  
नासिके प्राविशद् । आदित्यश्चक्षुर्भूत्वाऽन्तिष्ठी प्राविशद् । दिशः श्रोत्रं भूत्वा कर्णौ प्राविशन् ।

1. Those Devatās, Agni and the rest, after they had been created, fell into this great ocean.

4. Then Agni having become speech, entered the mouth. Vāyu having become scent, entered the nostrils. Āditya having become sight, entered the eyes. The Diś, having become hearing, entered the ears.

Thus it shows that the superintending Devas of senses are meant by the terms Agni, etc. This entering of the Devas constitutes another reason for holding that sentient entities are meant, and not unconscious elements, etc. Similarly, the Bhaviṣya Purāṇa is to the same effect :

पृथिव्याद्यभिमानिन्यो देवताः प्रथितौजसः । अचिन्त्याः शक्त्यस्तासां दृश्यन्ते मुनिभिश्च ताः ॥

The superintending Devas of the earth, etc., possessed of mighty powers, and inconceivable energies, are actually seen by the sages.

Similarly, the phrase "the stones float, etc.," are to be explained as praises of the Devas within them. And, as a matter of fact, they did float

on the water when Śrī Rāma bridged the ocean. The Devas held up the stones and made them float on water. Thus there is nothing unauthoritative in the Vedas. Consequently, the Vedānta teaching, that Brahman is the sole cause of the universe, is firmly established, and is not open to objections raised by the Sāṅkhya.

*Adhikaraṇa V.—Brahman is the material cause of the universe established by reasoning.*

*Objection :* The Sāṅkhya comes to the attack again, this time not relying on the texts, but on pure ratiocination, and says that Brahman cannot be the material cause of the universe. It is true, that the Sāṅkhya himself admits that in matters transcendental, relating to the true nature of the Self and of cosmogony, etc., reasoning is of little avail, and must be abandoned in favour of the Śruti. It has the following aphorism :

श्रुतिविरोधात् न कुतर्कापसदस्यात्मलाभः ॥

श्रुति Śruti, the sacred Revelation, विरोधात् Virodhāt, because of the conflict or contradiction. न Na, not. कुतर्क Kutarka, bad reasoning. अपसदस्य Apasadasya, of the inferior person. आत्मलाभः Ātma-lābhaḥ, attainment of the Self.

The attainment of the Self cannot take place by mere false reasoning, because opposed to the Scripture.—VI., 35.

This homage paid by the Sāṅkhya to Śruti is merely a lip homage, for the Sāṅkhya appeals to Śruti merely to find fault with his opponent. The doubt raised is to this effect.

*Doubt :* Is it possible for Brahman to be the material cause of the universe or is it not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The opponent says that Brahman cannot be the material cause of the universe, because the world is of a different nature from Brahman, Brahman is conceived to be Omniscient, Omnipotent, All-pure and possessing pure joy as His nature. The world, on the other hand, is admittedly seen to consist of ignorance, impotence, impurity, and sorrow. Thus there is no dispute that the two, the God and matter, are diametrically opposed to each other in their nature. It is a fact of daily experience that the effect has the nature of the cause. Just as a jar or a crown or a piece of cloth has the same nature as the clay or the gold or the threads of which it is made. Therefore, the world being of a different nature to Brahman, cannot have him as its material cause. We must, therefore, search out some appropriate material cause of the world. And that we find in the Pradhāna alone. The world consists of joy, sorrow and delusion,

and for such a world, the Pradhāna consisting of Sattva, Rajas and Tamas is the most appropriate cause. "But," says the Vedāntin, "we explain this by positing the existence of two emergies (Saktis) consisting of Spirit and Matter, and both dwelling in Brahman, and thus there is no difficulty in understanding how this world, as an effect, proceeds from Brahman." But this also does not solve the difficulty. The world still remains of a different character from its material cause, the Brahman. From a very subtle material cause, like the two energies, Spirit and Matter, it is not easy to explain how this gross world, that we see around us, comes into existence. Similarly, there are other differences between the world and Brahman. Therefore, the world has not Brahman for its material cause ; because it is essentially different from Brahman ; and the Scripture must, in matters worldly, take the help of Reason to ascertain the truth. This then is the Pûrvapakṣa.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra answers this objection.

SŪTRA II., 1. 6.

दृश्यते तु ॥ २ । १ । ६ ॥

दृश्यते Dr̥syate, is seen. The coming out of the gross from the subtle is a matter of experience. तु Tu, but.

6. But it is seen, (that a thing totally different from another may be the material cause of that thing).—142.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "but" removes the doubt above raised. The word "not" of Sūtra II., 1. 4, is understood here also. The statement that the world cannot have Brahman for its material cause, because it is of a totally different nature from him, is not correct ; because it is seen in everyday experience, that things entirely different in their essential natures, stand as material cause and effect. Thus the rise of different qualities from things of different nature. (As the quality of intoxication arising from sugar). Or as the birth of living worms from the dead honey. Or as the coming out of elephants and horses from the tree of all-desire. Or of gold from the philosopher's stone. Referring to this coming out of matter from the Spirit, the Âtharvāṇikas says :

यथोर्ध्वनाभिः सृजते गुह्ये च यथा पृथिव्यामोषधयः सम्भवन्ति । यथा सतः पुरुषात् केशलोमानि तथाऽङ्गरात् सम्भवतीह विश्वम् ॥ ७ ॥

As the spider stretches forth and gathers together its threads, as herbs grow out of the earth, as from a living man come out the hair, so from the Imperishable comes out this universe.—Munḍakā Upaniṣad, I., 1. 7.

*Adhikaraṇa VI.—Non-being not the First cause.*

An objector again comes forward and says : If the material cause be different in its essential nature from the effect, if Brahman differs in nature from its effect, the world ; then it means that the cause and effect being essentially different, the world before its origination was non-existent in Brahman, the cause. In other words, the world was a nothing (Asat), before origination and the one (Brahman) only existed then. But you, who hold that the world is a real effect, and is real, cannot hold this view.

To this the author replies :

SŪTRA II., 1. 7.

अप्रदिति चेत्, न, प्रतिषेधमात्रत्वात् ॥ २ । १ । ७ ॥

असत् Asat, non-existing, absolute, nothing. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. प्रतिषेध Pratiṣedha, a denial, a prohibition. मात्रत्वात् Mātratvāt, because, merely.

7. If it be objected, that the world is then an absolute unreality, we say no, for there was merely a denial in the previous Sūtra of the sameness of nature between the cause and the effect, and not that the two are *substantially* different.—143.

## COMMENTARY

The objection raised by the opponent is no real objection. Because the denial in the previous Sūtra was only with regard to the rule that the cause and effect must be of the same nature essentially. It was not meant that the *substances* of the two should also be different. (Thus the effect of the union of oxygen and hydrogen is essentially different in qualities from the two gases but there is no *substantial* difference between the effect, water and the cause, oxygen and hydrogen. The *substance* is the same). Our position is that Brahman himself becomes modified into the world, and then manifests different characteristics. The meaning is this. When you say that because there is difference of nature between the cause Brahman and the effect world, and therefore, Brahman cannot be the material cause of the world, do you mean to say, that because all the attributes of Brahman do not re-appear in the effect, therefore, the effect is not due to Brahman, or do you intend to say that because only some characteristics appear and the others do not, therefore, Brahman is not the cause ? You cannot mean the first, for then there would be no

such thing as cause and effect, for the cause and effect are not identical in *all* characteristics. The very relationship of cause and effect implies that there is some difference between them. For though the lump of clay be the cause of the jar made out of it, yet the jar does not possess the lumpiness of the clay, but has a different form altogether. If, however, you mean the second, and say that no characteristics of Brahman appear in the world, you are evidently wrong. For Brahman is Sat or Being, and this characteristic of His re-appears in the world, for the world possesses *existence*. Nor can you say, that because these particular attributes of Brahman do not appear in the world, such as His joyousness, etc., therefore, the world is not His effect. You cannot pick and choose the qualities at random, for then anything may become the cause of any other thing; and everything will be the cause of everything else, and the law of causation would be reduced to absurdity.

Says an objector, we do not hold any such absurd position. But we demand that the particular attributes which differentiate the cause from other objects, should re-appear in the effect, for the relation of cause and effect is constituted by the persistence in the effect of those characteristic points which differentiate the cause from other things. The characteristics by which the thread differs from gold, persist in the cloth manufactured from the thread, and in the bracelet made from gold.

To this, we reply, that this is not an invariable rule. For this rule is violated in the production of worms from the honey, and so on. Nor is gold in every respect the same as the bracelet; there is the difference of condition between the two. Though the world and Brahman are different, as the philosopher's stone is different from gold, yet they have this in common, that both are essentially one in *substance*, as the gold and bracelet. Therefore, the world, though an effect, is not unreal.

The Sāṅkhya opponent comes forward now with another objection :

SŪTRA II., 1. 8.

अपीतौ तद्वत् प्रसंगादसमञ्जसम् ॥ २ । १ । ८ ॥

अपीतौ Apitau, at the time of Pralaya or the great dissolution in re-absorption. तद्वत् Tadvat, like unto that, like the effect. The cause would become like the effect, when the effect is re-absorbed in it at the time of Pralaya. प्रसङ्गात् Prasāṅgāt, on account of the consequences. असमञ्जसम् Asamañjasam, inappropriate.

*Objection :* If Brahman is the material cause of the universe, then in Pralaya, when the world is re-absorbed in Him, Brahman would have all the consequences of the

world (tainted with all its defects), and thus the Vedānta text would become inappropriate.—144.

## COMMENTARY

If Brahman, with His subtle energy consisting of Spirit and Matter, is the material cause of the world,—a world full of misery and many a defect, injurious to the progress of the human soul ;—then when it is re-absorbed in Brahman, at the time of Pralaya, Brahman would become tainted with all the concomitant consequences of matter. The force of Vat in the Sūtra is that of Iva or 'like.' As the world is not the final object of man, (for admittedly the goal is different), so the Brahman would not be the goal of man. For in the state of Pralaya the world being one with Brahman, the latter will have all the defects of the former. (As the pungent assafoetida when mixed with any condiment, scents the whole food with its pungent and disagreeable smell). That being so there would arise inappropriateness, for all those Upaniṣad texts which declare that Brahman is Omniscient, free from taint, etc., would become contradicted. Thus, for this additional reason also, Brahman is not the material cause of the world.

*Siddhānta.* The author sets aside this objection in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 9.

न तु दृष्टान्तभावात् ॥ २ । १ । ९ ॥

न Na, not. तु Tu, so, but. दृष्टान्त Drṣṭānta, instances, illustrations भावात् Bhāvāt, because of the existence of.

9. But this is not so ; as there are instances to this effect.—145.

## COMMENTARY

By the word 'Tu,' the possibility of the objection is set aside. There is no inappropriateness in the Brahman's being the material cause of the universe. For there are instances to show that the cause is not tainted by the defects of the effect. Though the world is full of misery, etc., yet the Lord God is all pure, etc. He remains always untouched by evil. As in one picture, the different colours, like the blue, yellow, etc., remain in different parts of the canvas, and do not overlap each other ; so the qualities of the world remain in their proper locality in Brahman. Or, to take another instance. As youth, childhood, and old age, which are attributes of embodied beings, belong to the body only and not to the embodied Self ; or the attributes of blindness, deafness, etc, belong to

the senses and not to the embodied Self ; so the defects of the world do not appertain to Brahman. Thus all those modifications belonging to matter and antagonistic to the highest end of Man, appertain to the energies of Brahman, and are attributes of His Energies (Śaktis) and remain in His Śaktis and do not pervade the pure Brahman. We hold that Brahman is the material cause of the world. This theory is not only free from any objections, but the opposite theory of the Sāṅkhya, that the Pradhāna is the material cause of the world, is open to the following objection :

SŪTRA II. 1. 10.

स्वप्ने दोषाच् च ॥ २ । १ । १० ॥

स्वप्ने Svapakṣe, in his own side, in the theory of the Sāṅkhya himself. दोषाच् Doṣāt, because of the fault, or objection. च Cha, and.

10. The objections raised by the Sāṅkhya to the Vedānta theory apply with equal force to the Sāṅkhya theory itself.—146.

#### COMMENTARY

“O Sāṅkhya, the faults that you find with our theory, are to be found in your theory as well. These have been pointed out in another place.” One fault found is that the Upādāna of the Cause is different from the effect, or the world. In the Sāṅkhya also the same objection applies. The Pradhāna is conceived to be void of sound and the rest. The world generated by Pradhāna has the attributes of sound, etc. Thus the cause is different from the effect here also. The effect thus being different from the cause, the objection that the effect is non-existent and unreal, remains. Similarly, when in the state of re-absorption, all objects merge into Pradhāna and become one with it, there is pervasion into the Pradhāna of all the effects of the world, and so the objection raised in Sūtra 8 applies to Pradhāna also. Similarly, all the objections raised against the Brahman theory apply to the Pradhāna theory as well. The Brahman theory deduces the creation from a conscious Being or Spirit ; the Pradhāna from unconscious matter. Moreover, in the Pradhāna theory of creation, the very motive of creation falls to the ground ; for the Pradhāna being unconscious, can have no motive at all. This will be mentioned in greater detail, when examining that theory later on.

The author now shows that the scriptures, when supported by ratiocination are the cause of ascertaining the truth, and consequently reason has its proper place in this system.

SŪTRA. II., 1. 11.

तर्कापतिष्ठानादप्यन्यथानुमेयमिति चेदेवमप्यनिर्मुक्तं प्रसङ्गः ॥ २ । १ । ११ ॥

तर्क Tarka, reasoning, ratiocination, controversial reasoning. अपतिष्ठानात् Apratiṣṭhānāt, because not having any fixity or finality. अपि Api, also. अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise, contrary. अनुमेयम् Anumeyam, to be inferred, inferable, इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. एव Evam, thus. अपि Api, thus, also. अनिर्मुक्तं Anirmokṣa, want of release प्रसङ्गः Prasaṅgaḥ, consequence.

11. If it be said that there being no finality about reasoning, it is always possible to infer the truth of the opposite ; we say "no," for then the undesirable consequence would follow that there would be no final release also.—147.

## COMMENTARY

Owing to the differences of the brains of men, their reasoning powers are also different. There is no finality about reasoning. A position established by reason by one man, is found to be demolished the next day by the stronger intellect of the other man. Therefore, showing no regard to reasoning, we must believe Brahman to be the material cause of the world, because the Upaniṣad teaches so. Even with regard to the acknowledged great thinkers, there is no finality about their reasoning also. Great thinkers like Kapila, Kaṇāda, etc., are seen to refute each other.

*Objection :* Nor can it be said that there is no reasoning which is absolutely unassailable, for then the reasoning by which argumentation is held to be non-conclusive would itself become invalid. If every reasoning be inconclusive, then all worldly activities would come to an end. Human activities are all based upon inference, the future is predicted from the present, and past. The actions which have been found pleasant or painful in their results in the past, are followed or avoided, by reasoning alone. For it is inferred that they would produce the same consequences, in the future also.

*Reply :* In this view also, the existence of Release would not be established. A proposition established by pure human intellect, unaided by intuition, is always liable to be set aside by a higher intellect, born in another time or place. Release, therefore, can never be obtained by methods evolved by the human brain, but is to be found by Upaniṣad method only.



It is perfectly true, that in certain secular matters, reasoning is absolute (such as mathematical reasoning); but in matters transcendental, such as the existence of God, of after life, of final Release, etc., the pronouncements of human intellect can never be perfectly free from doubt; because these are matters not within the scope of mind; they are beyond its scope. For Brahman is inconceivable, and consequently unarguable. If you allow reasoning in the matter of Brahman, then you not only contradict the Sruti, but your own assertion becomes incongruous. For says the Sruti :

नैवा तर्केण मतिरापनेया प्रोक्तान्येनैव सुज्ञानाय प्रेष्ठ । यान्त्वमापः सत्यवृत्तिर्वतासि त्वादृङ्मो भूयान्न-  
चिकेतः प्रष्टा ॥ ९ ॥

This belief which thou hast got, cannot be brought about nor destroyed by argument. When taught by the True Teacher the Self becomes easily realised. O dearest, strong is thy resolution. Enquirers like thee, O Nachiketas, are not many.—*Katha Up*, I., 2. 9.

The Smṛti also is to the same effect :

अपे विदन्ति मुनयः प्रशान्तात्मेन्द्रियाशयः ।

यदा तदेवासत्तर्कैस्तिरोधीयेत विप्लुतम् ॥

O Ṛṣi! the sages with their body, senses and mind tranquil, realise that Truth, but when it is overwhelmed with dry reasoning, it vanishes.

Therefore, as Sruti is the highest authority in matters of Law (Dharma), so also it is the only authority, in matters theological (Brahman). Of course, the reasoning auxiliary to Sruti is always allowed, for the word Mantavya, used in the Sruti itself, shows that Brahman should be Mantavya or reasoned about also. The Smṛti also says that one must interpret a passage of law by reasoning and looking to all that precedes it and follows it. See Manu, XII. 106.

### *Adhikaraṇa VII.—Kaṇāda and Gautama refuted.*

The author has refuted the arguments of the Sāṅkhyas and the Yoga philosophers as regards God being the operative cause only and not the material cause of the world. Now he refutes the Smṛtis of Kaṇāda and Gautama, and answers the objections brought forward by them. According to Kaṇāda and others, if Brahman be taken to be the material cause of the world, then those philosophies would find no scope at all. For, according to them, the bigger atoms are formed by the aggregation of smaller atoms. When two small atoms unite they give rise to a molecule called dvi-aṇu or a dyad, and so the triad, etc. The whole world is made up of atoms, which are the ultimate material cause of the universe and

not the Brahman or Prakṛti. Brahman being supposed to be all-pervading, cannot be the material cause of the world, for it is limited.

*Siddhānta* : To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II, 1. 1<sup>o</sup>.

एतेन शिष्टापरिग्रहा अपि व्याख्याताः ॥ २ । १ । १ ॥

एतेन Etena, by this, by the above reasoning. शिष्टाः Siṣṭāḥ, the remaining systems like those of the Atomists. अपरिग्रहाः Aparigrahāḥ, not acknowledged by the Vedas, not accepted of the Vedas. अपि Api, also. व्याख्याताः Vyākhyātāḥ, are explained or refuted.

12. Hereby other systems not in harmony with the Vedas, are also refuted.—148.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Siṣṭāḥ means the remaining. The word Aparigrahāḥ means those systems which do not acknowledge or accept (Parigraha) the Vedas as authority in these matters, but which rely on reason alone ; and which are not countenanced by the Veda. The Sūtra teaches that by the demolition of the Sāṅkhya doctrine given above, the remaining theories not comprised within the Vedas are also refuted, such as the theories of Kaṇāda and Akṣapāda, etc., for they are opposed to the Vedas on these points. The reasons are the same as in the case of Sāṅkhya.

Nor is there any fixed rule in the theory of the Ārambha Vāda that this is the minimum with which a thing must commence. For we see it contradicted in the case of a cloth commenced with a large thread in a double cloth ; and in the case of sound born of Ākāśa.

We give below an extract from the commentary of Rāmānuja, to show the exact bearing of the question treated in this section. This translation is from Dr. Thibaut's Vedānta Sūtras, Rāmānuja.

"Here however a new objection may be raised, on the ground, namely, that since all these theories agree in the view of atoms constituting the general cause, it cannot be said that their reasoning as to the causal substance is ill-founded. They indeed, we reply, are agreed to that extent, but they are all of them equally founded on Reasoning only, and they are seen to disagree in many ways as to the nature of the atoms, which by different schools are held to be either fundamentally void, or non-void, having merely cognitional or an objective existence, being either momentary or permanent, either of a definite nature or the reverse. either real or un-real, etc. This disagreement proves all those theories to be ill-founded, and the objection is thus disposed of."—Rāmānuja.

Thus even as regards the nature of the atom, there is no unanimity of opinion. Kaṇāda and Gautama hold it to be permanent, while the four Schools of the Bauddhas hold it to be impermanent.

*Note :* The Vaibhāsika Bauddhas hold that the atoms are momentary but have an objective existence, (Kṣanikān artha-bhūtan). The Yogācāra Bauddhas hold it to be merely cognitional (jñāna-rūpām) The Mādhyamikas hold it to be fundamentally void (Śūnya-rūpām). The Jainas hold it to be real and non-real (Sad-asad-rūpām).

The author raises another objection and disposes of it :

SŪTRA II., 1. 13.

भोक्तापत्तेर्विभागश्चेत् स्याल्लोकवत् ॥ २ । १ । १३ ॥

भोक्ता Bhoktrā, with the enjoyer, with the Jiva. आपत्तेः Āpatteḥ, from becoming. विभागः Avibhāgaḥ, non-distinction. चेत् Chet, if. स्यात् Syāt, it may be लोकवत् Loka-vat, as in the ordinary life ; as in the world.

13. If Brahman be the material cause of the world, then there would be no distinction between the Enjoyer (Jīva) and the Lord. To this we reply, it need not be so, as we see in ordinary life.—149.

#### COMMENTARY

*Objection :* Your opinion is that Brahman as possessing the subtle energy is himself the material cause, and as possessing the gross energy he is even the effect. Let us see whether this view is sound or not. Now energy is not different from the substance of which it is the energy ; therefore, the Jiva, the subtle energy of Brahman, is not different from Brahman. Thus your theory of the two emergies of Brahman, lands you into this contradiction. Thus it follows that the Jiva and Brahman become one. Therefore, the texts like “two birds” “when it sees the other as the Lord,” etc., become null and void and the difference established by them is ignored.

*Reply :* To this objection we reply : It is not so. Even in ordinary life, the energy is seen different from the person possessing it. Thus a man armed with a sword is a single man, but the sword is different from the man, though it represents the energy of the man. Therefore, Brahman possessed with Śakti is nothing more than Brahman, yet the Śakti is different from Brahman. Thus there is no fault in this theory of Brahman and His two Śaktis.

#### *Adhikaraṇa. VIII.—The world is non-different from Brahman*

Now the author wishes to establish that, though the world may be considered as having Brahman for its material cause, yet it does not follow

that the world is the same as Brahman. In the previous Sūtra, II, I, 7, and other subsequent Sūtras, the non-difference of the world from Brahman was assumed, and it was on this assumption, that the proof was given that Brahman was the material cause of the world. The present Sūtra raises an objection against that very non-difference, and then proceeds to refute it.

The question is: Is this world, which is an effect, different from Brahman or is it not different? The followers of Kanāda hold the view that the effect is always different from its cause. Their reasons are as follows: (i) The difference of ideas. For cause and effect are the objects of different ideas. For a lump of clay, which is the cause, is a different idea from the jar, which is its effect. (ii) The difference of words. The word "jar" applied to the effect, is never applied to the "lump" of clay which is its cause. Thus the cause and effect are not only represented by different ideas in our minds, but by different words also. (iii) The difference of adaptability. Thus a jar is used in fetching water from the well, while no water can be fetched in a lump of clay. (iv) The difference of forms. The cause clay is a mere lump in shape; the effect, namely, the jar, has a difference shape, with a broad neck, etc. (v) The difference of time. The cause is prior in time, the effect is posterior. Thus for all these reasons, the effect is different from the cause. If it were not different, then the activity of the person producing the effect would be useless. If a jar be the same as a lump of clay, then the activity of the potter is useless. For a jar would come into existence in spite of such activity. If it be said, that the effect, although always existing, is at first non-manifest; and then is manifested; so the activity of the agent is necessary, and thus activity is not purpose-less: this view also is not correct. The question arises, does the effect exist before manifestation or does it not? Or, is the manifestation existent or non-existent prior to the activity of the agent? The manifestation cannot be existent prior to such activity, for then that activity will be purposeless, and it would follow that the effect should be ever perceptible. Moreover, this would result in removing the distinction between the eternal and non-eternal things. If it be assumed that one manifestation requires another manifestation to account for it, then we are driven into a *regressus in infinitum*. If it be held that manifestation is non-real (Asat), then we lapse into the theory of the Asat-kārya-vāda; according to which the effect does not exist before its origination. Therefore the Purvapakṣa is that the effect is different from the cause, and that activity of the agent is not necessary for the production of the effect, if the effects were unreal. Therefore, the Naiyāyikas hold that from a material cause, which is Asat, is produced an effect which is Sat.

*Siddhānta* : This view of the Vaiśeṣikas is refuted by the author in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 14.

तदनन्यत्वमागम्भणशब्दादिभ्यः ॥ २ । १ । १४ ॥

तत् Tat, therefore, from that, from Brahman, the cause of the world. अनन्यत्वम् Ananyatvam, non-difference, the identity. आगम्भण Ārambhana, the word Ārambhana as found in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad शब्दादिभ्यः Sabdā-dibhyaḥ, from the words the beginning of which is the term Ārambhana.

14. The non-difference of the world from THAT (namely, from Brahman) is established in those verses of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad which commence with the word Ārambhana—150.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Tat means *from that*, namely from Brahman, the material cause of the world, and who possesses two Saktis called the Jīva and Prakṛti, the Spirit and Matter. This world is verily an effect, which is not at all anything other than its cause, namely, Brahman. How do you know this ? We learn it from all those passages which commence with the word Ārambhana. We give those passages below :

ओं श्वेतकेतुर्हारीष्ये आस तं ह पितोवाच श्वेतकेतो वस ब्रह्मचर्यं न वै सोम्याऽस्मत्कुलीनोऽन-  
नूच्य ब्रह्मवन्पुरिव भवतीति स ह दादशर्च उष्ट्य चतुर्विंशतिवर्षः सर्वान् वेदानधीत्य महामना अनू-  
चानमानी स्तब्ध पथाय तं ह पितोवाच श्वेतकेतो यन्नु सोम्येदं महामना अनूचानमानी स्तब्धोऽस्तुत  
तमादेशमश्राव्यो येनाश्रुतं श्रुतं भवत्यमतं मतमविज्ञातं विज्ञातमिति ।

(i) Hariḥ, Om. There lived once Svetaketu Āruṇeya (the grandson of Aruṇa). To him his father (Uddālaka, the son of Aruṇa) said : “Svetaketu, go to school ; for there is none belonging to our race, darling, who, not having studied (the Veda), is, as it were, a Brāhmaṇa by birth only.”

(ii) Having begun his apprenticeship (with a teacher) when he was twelve years of age, Svetaketu returned to his father, when he was twenty-four, having then studied all the Vedas, conceited, considering himself well-read, and stern.

(iii) His father said to him : “Svetaketu, as you are so conceited, considering yourself so well-read, and so stern, my dear, have you ever asked for that instruction by which we hear what cannot be heard, by which we perceive what cannot be perceived, by which we know what cannot be known ?”

कथं नु भगवः स आदेशो भवतीति यथा सोम्यैकेन मृत्पिण्डेन सर्वं मृन्मयं विज्ञातं स्याद्वाचार-  
म्भणं विज्ञारो नामधेयं मृत्तिकेत्येव सत्यम् ॥ १ ॥

(iv) “What is that instruction, Sir ?” he asked. The father replied : “My dear, as by one clod of clay all that is made of clay is known, the difference being only a name, arising from speech, but the truth being that all is clay.”

यथा सोम्यैकेन लोहमयिना सर्वं लोहमयं विज्ञातं<sup>७</sup> स्याद्वाचारम्भणं विकारो नामधेयं लोहमित्येव सत्यम् ॥ २॥

(v) "And as, my dear, by one nugget of gold all that is made of gold is known, the difference being only a name, arising from speech, but the truth being that all is gold ?

यथा सोम्यैकेन नखनिकृन्तनेन सर्वं काष्णायिसं विज्ञातं<sup>७</sup> स्याद्वाचारम्भणं विकारो नामधेयं कृष्णाय-  
समित्येव सत्यमेव<sup>७</sup> सोम्य स आदेशो भवतीति ॥ ३ ॥

(vi) "And as my dear, by one pair of nail-scissors all that is made of iron (Kāṣṇā-yasam) is known, the difference being only a name, arising from speech, but the truth being that all is iron, thus, my dear, is that instruction."

न वै नूनं भगवन्तस्त एतदेदिदं पुर्यद्वयेतद्वेदिष्यन् कथं मे नावद्यजिति भगवा<sup>७</sup> स्त्वेवमेतद् ब्रवीत्विति  
तथा सोम्येति होवाच ॥ ४ ॥

(vii) The son said : "Surely, those venerable men (my teachers,) did not know that. For if they had known it, why should they not have told it to me ? Do you, Sir, therefore, tell me that." 'Be it so,' said the father.

सदेव सोम्येदमग्र आसीदिकमेवाद्वितीयम् । तदैक्षत बहुस्याम् प्रजायेय ॥

"That which is Being (*i.e.*, this world which now, owing to the distinction of names and forms, bears a manifold shape) was in the beginning one only (owing to the absence of the distinction of names and forms). He thought may I be many, may I grow forth."—(Chh. Uṇp., VI., 2. 3.)

The whole of this is thus explained by Rāmānuja : For these texts prove the non-difference from Brahman of the world consisting of non-sentient and sentient beings. This is as follows. The teacher, bearing in mind the idea of Brahman constituting the sole cause of the entire world and of the non-difference of the effect from the cause, asks the pupil, 'Have you ever asked for that instruction by which the non-heard is heard, the non-perceived is perceived, the not-known is known ? Wherein there is implied the promise that, through the knowledge of Brahman, the general cause, 'its effect, *i.e.*, the whole Universe, will be known. The pupil not knowing that Brahman is the sole cause of the Universe, raises a doubt as to the possibility of one thing being known through another, 'How then, Sir, is that instruction ?' and the teacher thereupon, in order to convey the notion of Brahman being the sole Universal cause, quotes an instance showing that the non-difference of the effect from the cause is proved by ordinary experience, as by one clod of clay there is known everything that is made of clay ; the meaning being 'as jars, pots, and the like, which are fashioned out of one piece of clay, are known through the cognition of that clay, since their substance is not different from it.'

In order to meet the objection that according to Kapāda's doctrine the effect constitutes a substance different from the cause, the teacher next proceeds to prove the non-difference of the effect from the cause, by reference to ordinary experience. "Vāchārambhaṇam vikāro nāmadheyam mṛttiketyeva satyam." Ārambhaṇam must here be explained as that which is taken or touched (*a-rabh-a-labh* ; and 'alambhaḥ sparśahiṇsayoh') compare Pāṇini, III., 3, 113, as to the form and meaning of the word. 'Vāchā,' "on account of speech," we take to mean "on account of activity by speech" ; for activities such as the fetching of water in a pitcher, are preceded by speech, 'Fetch water in the pitcher,' and so on. For the bringing about of such activity, the material clay (which had been mentioned just before) touches (enters into contact with) an effect (Vikāra), *i.e.*, particular make or configuration, distinguished by having a broad bottom and resembling the shape of a belly and a special name (Nāmadheya), *viz.*, pitcher, and so on, which is applied to that effect ;

or, to put it differently, to the end that certain activities may be accomplished, the substance clay receives a new configuration and a new name. Hence jars and other things of clay are clay (Mṛttikā), i.e., are of the substance of clay, only, this only is true (Satyam) i.e., known through authoritative means of proof, only (Eva) because the effects are not known as different substances. One and the same substance, therefore, such as clay or gold gives occasion for different ideas and words only as it assumes different configuration, just as we observe that one and the same Devadatta becomes the object of different ideas and terms and gives rise to different effects, according to the different stages of life, youth, old age, etc., which he has reached. The fact of our saying 'the jar has perished' while yet the clay persists, was referred to by the Pūrvaśakṣin as proving that the effect is something different from the cause, but this view is disproved by the view held by us that origination, destruction, and so on, are merely different states of one and the same as causal substance. According as one and the same substance is in this or that state, there belong to it different terms and different activities, and these different states may rightly be viewed as depending on the activity of an agent. (Dr Thibaut.)

If it be held that the pot is different from the clay, there would arise objections as to their having double weight, etc., The weight of a lump of clay being one unit, and that of the pot another; when it is weighed in the balance, the weight ought to be double. (But the jar does not show any increase of weight. Thus the substance remains the same. The jar is not the lump of clay *plus* jar, but the same lump). So also in other respects. (The chemical analysis of jar shows the same materials as that of the lump of clay).

The jar is not an effect like the illusion (Vivarta) of silver in the shell. For silver is found to exist separately as a distinct substance from the mother of pearl.

Thus also is answered the objection of those persons who say that the word 'iti' in 'Mṛttikā iti eva satyam' is useless.

Nor can you say that the theory of manifestation (Abhivyakti) has no scriptural authority for it. For we find in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa the following :

कल्पान्ते कालसृष्टेन योऽन्धेन तमसावृतम् ।

अभिव्यनक् जगदिदम् स्वयं रोचिः स्वरोचिषा ॥

"At the end of the Kalpa, the self-luminous Lord manifested (Abhivyanak) this world which was covered with blinding darkness wrought by Time, through His self-luminous Power (Chitśakti)."

Nor is this theory open to the two objections of (i) accomplishing a thing which is already accomplished, (ii) and *regressus in infinitum*. For it is not acknowledged by us that manifestation existed prior to the activity of the agent. Nor do we acknowledge that one manifestation requires another manifestation to manifest it and so on.

Says an objector : If so, then you are open to the objection of maintaining the theory of Asatkārya (namely, that the effect does not exist.

before its origination). For the activity of the agent manifests the effect which did not exist before: and thus the activity of the agent creates the effect. To this we reply, this is not so. The activity of the agent produces manifestation, but does not produce the effect—for the manifestation is not effect. The effect is that which has the power of self-manifestation.

Manifestation is proved by the substratum of which it is the manifestation. In other words, the manifestation of the substrate constitutes the manifestation of the world. But the manifestation in the form of Sāṁsthāna Yoga is a constant manifestation and thus there is no fault in the theory set out by us. On the other hand, those who maintain that an effect is the result of a cause which is Asat or non-existent (in other words, that an effect is altogether different from its cause) are wrong, because it is not capable of any proof and is self-contradictory. For if it were so, then the result will be as follows: the effect will be non-existent before the activity that manifests it, and consequently anything would be the effect of any other thing, and everything would produce the same effect and everything would come out of everything else. Since non-existence is present everywhere, and an effect before its manifestation is non-existent, according to you, therefore, an effect can be produced from anything. Thus not only oil would be extracted from sesamum, but we shall get milk from the same seeds also. Because oil being non-existent in the seed, and being the result of the activity of the agent, milk may be extracted, likewise, from the seed by the same activity. Moreover, the theory is open to another objection. If the effect were altogether non-existent prior to its origination; then production of a thing would be agentless. Nor can you say that some energy inherent in the cause would regulate the particular effect which that cause would produce; for there can be no relationship between an existent cause and a non-existent effect.

Moreover, we have the following dilemma also: Does the origination originate itself or does it not? If the first, then there is *regressus in infinitum*; for one origination we require another origination to originate it, and so on. In the second alternative the effect being non-existent and non-eternal, the origination becomes impossible. Thus both these alternatives are wrong. It would follow also that we must perceive an effect always or must not perceive it at all. If you say origination being itself an origin, what is the necessity of imagining another origin for it; then we say it is the same thing as the theory of manifestation; and in that case the theory of origination and the theory of manifestation become identical.

The author now shows from further arguments that the effect is non-different from the cause by the following aphorism:



SŪTRA II., 1. 15.

भावे चोपलब्धेः ॥ २ । १ । १५ ॥

भावे Bhāve, in the existence, in the alternative that the effect exists.  
च Cha, and. उपलब्धेः Upalabdheḥ, because of the perception.

15. And because in the effect is perceived the cause.—  
151.

## COMMENTARY

In the effects, like a jar or a crown, we perceive the existence of the clay or gold which are the causes of the effects called jar and crown. In fact, the recognition of the clay, etc., in the jar, etc., would not have been possible, had the effect been absolutely different from its cause. An objector may say, but we do not recognise the cause in the elephants, horses, etc., which are produced from the Kalpa tree, for there is nothing in common between the tree, and its effect, horses, elephants, etc. To this we reply, that there is no force in this objection. Here also there is the recognition of the cause in the effect. The Kalpa tree is a physical object, and so also are the horses and elephants; therefore, as far as the physical matter is concerned, the recognition is possible. But says an objector: there is no recognition of fire in the smoke and smoke, being the effect of fire, ought to show fire in it. To this we reply, that smoke is really the effect of damp fuel, which when coming in contact with fire throws off its earthly particles, in the form of smoke. That the smoke and fuel are identical, and that we can recognise the fuel in the smoke, is proved by the fact that smoke has smell as well as the fuel, and the smell is generally of the same kind as that of the fuel.

SŪTRA II., 1. 16.

सत्त्वाच्चावरस्य ॥ २ । १ । १६ ॥

सत्त्वात् Sattvāt, because of the existence. च Cha, and. अवरस्य Avarasya, of the posterior, namely, of the effect which is posterior in time to the cause.

16. The effect is non-different from the cause, because it is existent in the cause, identically, even prior to its manifestation, though in time it is posterior. Or, because of the existence of the effect, which is posterior in time to the cause, in which it exists, even from before, as an identity.—152.

## COMMENTARY

The effect is non-different from the cause for this additional reason also that before its manifestation it exists in latency in the cause. Thus says the Sruti: "Being only was in the beginning." So also says the Smṛti :

बीहिबीजे यथा मूलं नालं पत्राङ्कुरौ तथा ।  
 काण्डं कोशंस्तथा पुष्पं क्षीरं तद्वच्च तण्डुलः ॥  
 तुषः कणाश्च सन्तो वै यान्त्याविर्भावमात्मनः ।  
 प्ररोहहेतुसामग्रीमासाद्य मुनिसत्तम ॥  
 तथा कर्मस्वनेकेषु देवाद्यास्तनवः स्थिताः ।  
 विष्णुशक्तिं समासाद्य प्ररोहमुपयान्ति वै ॥  
 न च विष्णुः परं ब्रह्म यतः सर्वमिदं जगत् ।  
 जगच्च यो यत्क्षेदं यस्मिंश्च लयमेष्ट्यति ॥

As in the seed of barley, there exists in latency, the root, the stem, the leaf, the bud, the carpels, the ovary, the flower, the milk, the rice, the husk, and the seeds ; they manifest out of the seed when they get proper conditions and materials to manifest them, O best of the sages ! Similarly, in innumerable Karmas exist all bodies of Devas and others. when they come in contact with Viṣṇu energy they get into manifestation. Verily that Viṣṇu is the supreme Brahman from whom proceeds all this universe, from whom is the sustenance of this universe and in whom is its dissolution.

We can get oil only from sesamum because it exists in the seed, though in latency, but not from sand, because it does not exist in it. Both in the world and in the Brahman the existence is the same, and because in Brahman everything exists so it can come out of it.

We have already established previously the identity of the effect with the cause even after the origination of the former. In the next two aphorisms will be established the same identity of the effect with the cause, even after the destruction of the effect and its merging into the cause.

## SŪTRA II., 1. 17.

असत्त्व्यपदेशान्नेति चेन्न धर्मान्तरेण वाक्यशेषात् ॥ २ । १ । १७ ॥

असत् Asat, non-existent. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, because of the designation. न Na, not. इति, Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. धर्मान्तरेण, Dharmāntareṇa, on account of another attribute. वाक्यशेषात् Vākyaśeṣāt, because of the complementary passage.

17. If it be said that the effect does not exist in the cause after dissolution, because there is a text designating it as non-being,

we reply it is not so, since the word Asat or non-being refers to another attribute of the effect and does not mean absolute non-existence, as would appear from the complementary passage of that text—153.

## COMMENTARY

An objector says : Let it be so, but we find the following passages also in the Sruti :

असदा इदमग्र आसीत् ।

Asat was this verily in the beginning (Taïtt. Up., II., 6. 1.)

Here we see that the effect is called Asat or non-being, and consequently the effect does not exist in the cause at the time of Pralaya, and vanishes absolutely. To this objection we reply that this is not so, for the word Asat used in that passage does not refer to absolute non-existence, as you take it to mean, but it refers to another attribute of the effect, namely : non-manifestation. The word Sat and Asat should be understood as referring to two attributes of one and the same object, namely, to its gross or manifested condition and subtle or unmanifested condition. An object existing as cause is in subtle condition, and existing as effect it is in gross condition, therefore the word Sat means the gross condition of an object, and Asat means the subtle condition. Thus the word Asat here refers to the subtle condition of the object and is the designation due to another attribute of the object as different from the gross condition. But how do you explain the word Asat which literally means non-being as meaning here the subtle condition ? We do so in order to make the sense of the passage consistent with what follows in the same text. For further on we find the following : (We give the whole passage here in order to understand the reasoning).

असदा इदमग्र आसीत् । ततो वै सद्जायत । तदात्मानं स्वयमकुरुत । तस्मात्तत्सुकृतमुच्यत इति ।  
यदे तत्सुकृतम् ।

Asat indeed was this in the beginning, from it verily proceeded the Sat. That made itself its Self, therefore it is said to be self-made.

The words "Asat made itself its Self" clear up any doubt as to the real meaning of the word Asat. For if the word Asat meant absolute non-being, then there would be a contradiction in terms ; for a non-being can never make itself the Self of anything. Similarly, the word "Āsit" or "was" becomes absurd when applied to Asat, in the sense of absolute non-being, for absolute non-being can never be said to exist and was meant existed. An absolute non-being can have no relation with time,

past or present, nor can it have any agency as we find in the sentence : "It made itself its Self," Therefore, the word Asat here should be explained as a subtle state of an object.'

SŪTRA II., 1. 18.

युक्तेऽशब्दान्तराच्च ॥ २ । १ । १८ ॥

युक्तेः Yukteḥ, from reasoning. शब्दान्तरात् Śabdāntarāt, from another text of the Vedas. च Cha, and.

18. Being and non-being are attributes of things, as is proved by reasoning and other text of the Vedas.—154.

#### COMMENTARY

The cause of our thinking and saying "the jar exists" is the fact that the lump of clay assumes a particular form of a neck, hollow belly, etc., while the material remains the clay only. On the other hand, we think and say, "the jar does not exist" when the clay takes a condition opposite to that of the jar, namely, when it is broken into two pieces, etc. Therefore, existence and non-existence, when applied to objects, show their different conditions only, and non-existence in this connection does not mean absolute non-existence. The Smṛti also declares the same fact, as we find in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa :

मही घटत्वं घटतः कपालिका च चूर्णरजस्ततोऽणुः ॥

The clay assumes the form of a jar, the jar becomes a potsherd, which in its turn, when broken into pieces, may be reduced into powder as dust, but the clay remains the same in all these conditions. The further analysis of the dust would reduce into atom of the physical plane, but the matter never vanishes.

Therefore, the reason is this that we do not perceive any absolute non-existence of the jar and when we say that the jar does not exist, we only mean that the jar has been resolved into its two halves or into a still more fine condition ; there is no absolute annihilation of the jar ; this is the reasoning or Yukti.

The word Asat being thus explained, the word Sat is its opposite, and thus non-being and being really mean the subtle and gross state of matter.

As regards the other text, we find it in the well known passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad :

सदेव सोम्य इदमग्र आसीत् । एकमेवाद्वितीयम् ॥

The being alone existed in the beginning, one alone without a second.

Thus both through reason and authority of the Vedic text, we come to the conclusion that the word Asat used in the Taittiriya passage does not

mean absolute non-existence, like the non-existence of the horn of a hare, but it means the subtle condition into which all objects are resolved at the time of Pralaya. When this world merges into the supreme Brahman, in a very subtle state, that condition of the Universe is called non-being or Asat, on account of its extreme subtleness. Therefore, we come to the conclusion that even prior to its origination the world existed, and thus the effect is not different from the cause, but is the cause in a different form. The saying: "Non-being can never come into being because of the impossibility, nor being can be the result of the activity of an agent, because of the futility of such agency, but the whole process of creation is an indescribable mystery" is a wrong statement, and proceeds from not understanding the true significance of the words 'being' and non-being' as applied in the Upaniṣads. For there does not exist something inexplicable different from Sat and Asat: namely, the Mâyâ of the Mâyâ-vâdins. The latter hold the theory that Mâyâ is neither being nor non-being but something different from both and is utterly inconceivable.

The author now gives some illustrations, in order to confirm the doctrine that effect is something real and is not different from the cause,

SŪTRA II., 1. 19.

पटवच्च ॥ २ । १ । १६ ॥

पटवत् Paṭavat, like a piece of cloth. च Cha, and.

19. And as a piece of cloth is not different from its threads, so the effect is not different from its cause.—155.

COMMENTARY

As the materials of a piece of cloth existed from before in the form of threads, and as these threads, when arranged in a particular way length-wise and crosswise manifest the cloth, similarly, this whole universe existed as the subtle energy of Brahman, and when Brahman desires to create, it assumes manifestation as the external world. The word "And" of the Sūtra shows that other illustrations like the seed and the tree may be given here also.

SŪTRA II., 1. 20.

यथा च प्राणादिः ॥ २ । १ । २० ॥

यथा Yathā, as. च Cha, and. प्राणादिः Prāṇādiḥ, the vital airs called Prāṇa, Apāna, Vyāna, Samāna and Udāna.

20. And as the different vital airs are modifications of the chief Prāṇa, so the effect is not different from its cause.—156.

## COMMENTARY

As in Yogic trance induced by Prāṇâyâma or control of breath, all the various life functions such as respiratory, digestive, etc., cease for the time being, and these separated functions known as Prāṇa, Apāna, etc., merge in the main Prāṇa, and exist in latency in it, but when the Yogi comes out of the trance, these functions manifest themselves and come out of the same chief Prāṇa, and take possession of the various organs such as the heart, lungs, etc., and manifest their different functions; similarly, at the time of Pralaya, the universe loses all its specific differentiations and merges in the subtle energy of Brahman, but exists in Brahman in that aspect, and at the time of new creations it emerges from Him, because He desires to create, and then assumes different forms called the Pradhâna, the Mahat, etc.

The word "and" in the Sūtra indicates that the last illustration of the piece of cloth, and the present one of the life functions, should be read together as one illustration. In fact, there are no illustrations anywhere with regard to the theory that the effect is something non-real, and different from the cause (Asat-kārya-vāda). No one has ever seen the birth of a son of a barren woman, nor the sky-flower, for these are contradictions in terms. Therefore Brahman, though one only, has two energies, the subtle and the gross, the one consisting of all the aggregates of egos (Jīvas) and the other of all the aggregates of matter (Prakṛti). In other words, Brahman has two energies called Spirit and Matter, and possessing these two energies Brahman Himself is thus the material cause of the universe, and consequently the universe as the effect is not different from the Brahman, but has Brahman for its Self. Thus is established the proposition that the effect is non-different from the cause. But Brahman, though manifesting as an effect, retains through His mysterious attributes, all His powers in their fullness, that He possessed before manifestation. The manifestation does not cause any decrease in Brahman. As says the Smṛti (Viṣṇu Purāṇa) :

ओं नमो वासुदेवाय तस्मै भगवते सदा । व्यतिरिक्तं न यस्यास्ति व्यतिरिक्तोऽखिलस्य यः ॥

Om, salutation to that adorable Lord Vāsudeva, than whom there is nothing greater but who is above all this universe.

### *Adhikarāṇa IX.—Brahman is the operative cause.*

In the Sūtra I, 4. 23, it was shown that Brahman was the material as well as the operative cause of the universe. In the Sūtra II, 1. 6 and the rest have been answered the objections raised to the view that

Brahman was the material cause of the universe, and by answering such objections, the author has strengthened the former view. He now confirms the latter view also, by showing that none but Brahman is the operative cause of the universe, and he answers the objections of those who hold that Mukta Jīvas are creators of universes.

One side hold the view that Brahman is the operative cause of the universe, because of the texts like the following :

कर्तारमीशम्

He is the agent, He is the Lord and He is the Creator.

The other side who hold the view that Mukta Jīva is the creator of the universe, quote the following text in support of their position :

जीवाद् भवन्ति भूतानि

All beings arise from the Jīva.

They maintain that if Brahman were the Creator of the universe, it would detract from His perfection, because the world is full of imperfections. Therefore, they maintain that Mukta Jīvas alone create the universe.

Thus arises the doubt: Is God the Creator of the universe or is some highly developed Mukta Jīva its cause, because we find texts supporting both positions ?

This doubt the author removes by the following Sūtra, showing that no Jīva, however high, can ever produce the universe.

इतरव्यपदेशाद्विताकरणादिदोषप्रसक्तिः ॥ २ । १ । २१ ॥

इतर Itara, of the others, of those who maintain the view that the Jīva is the creator of the universe. Or "Itara" may mean "of the other, namely, of the Jīva as agent of the universe." व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, from the designation. हित Hita, good, beneficial. अकरणादि Akaraṇādi, not creating, etc. दोष Doṣa, imperfection, fault. प्रसक्तिः Prasaktiḥ, result, consequence.

21. If the other view be held that Jīva is the creator of the universe, then the result would be, that the creation would be liable to the objection that the Jīva creates intentionally that which is not beneficial to it—157.

#### COMMENTARY

Those who hold the view that Jīva is the creator of the world must answer the objection: "Why does it create a world which is not beneficial

to it?" If man creates the world, why does he create it full of imperfections, through which he suffers? If man is the master of his own destiny, and there is no Lord to award the results of good and bad actions, and if man alone was the creator of his world, then he certainly would not create it such, which he knows would be painful to him. The world, therefore, is the creation of no man, because we find that it has the fault of not doing that which is beneficial to man; on the contrary, doing that which is non-beneficial to him. Thus no man willingly wants to labour, etc., but the conditions of the world are such, that no man can live in it without labouring and undergoing troubles, etc. The world, therefore, is not the creation of any man. No wise and independent person is ever seen to create his own prison-house, like the silk-worm, and after creating such a house enter into it wilfully, to suffer all the miseries of confinement. Nor does any human being, being himself pure, would voluntarily enter into a body full of all impurities. The man, prior to creation, being supposed to be free and pure, voluntarily confines himself into a body of flesh, full of impurities; and enters into a self-created world where he has no freedom of action. Nor has any one ever seen any Jīva to create the Cosmic matter called Pradhāna or the matter of the Buddhic and Ahāṅkāric planes, nor the matter of the physical plane even. Fire, air, ether, etc., are the production of no man. In fact, the brain of man reels in even contemplating the wonderful organism of this universe. Therefore, the theory that the world is man-made is wrong. On the other hand, it is God alone who is the Creator of the universe, and the objection why He has created the world full of imperfections while He Himself is perfect, will be answered later on.

But an objector may say that if Brahman be the creator, then He also is liable to the objection of creating a world full of misery, and with great effort, and after such creation He has entered into it and thus He also voluntarily creates a world of misery, and then entering into it, lives in it. To this the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 22.

अधिकं तु भेदनिर्देशात् ॥ २ । १ । २२ ॥

अधिकम् Adhikam, greater than the Jīva, Brahman is greater than the Jīva. तु, but. भेदः Bheda, difference. निर्देशात् Nirdeśāt, because of the pointing out.

22. But Brahman is greater than Jīva, because the scriptures declare His difference from the Jīva.—158.



## COMMENTARY

The word "But" sets aside the doubt above raised. Brahman is greater than man, because He possesses vast power and consequently is something infinitely superior to man. The entering of the Brahman into the world which He creates is no bondage to Brahman, while the entering of man into the world, if created by the man himself, is a cause of bondage of man. The difference between man and God is distinctly taught in the scriptures. Thus in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (III., 1. 2) :

समाने वृक्षे पुरुषो निमग्नोऽनीशया शोचति मुह्यमानः ।

जुष्टं यदा पश्यत्यन्यमीशमस्य महिमानमिति वीतशोकः ॥

Though seated on one and the same tree, the Jīva bewildered by the Divine Power sees not the Lord and so grieves. But when he sees the eternally worshipped Lord and His glory, as separate from himself, then he becomes free from grief (and fit for Mukti).

This verse clearly shows the difference between the Jīva, full of sorrow and delusion, and the Supreme Self, full of great lordliness and glory.

So also in the Gītā (XV., 16 and 17 verses) :

द्वाविमौ पुरुषौ लोके क्षरश्चाक्षर एव च ।

क्षरः सर्वाणि भूतानि कूटस्थोऽक्षर उच्यते ॥

उत्तमः पुरुषस्त्वन्यः परमात्मेत्युदाहृतः ।

यो लोकत्रयमाविश्य विभर्त्यव्यय ईश्वरः ॥

There are two sorts of Jīvas in this world, the bound and the free ; the bound are all these beings, and the free are those who rest in the Rock of ages.

The Highest Puruṣa is verily Another, declared as the Supreme Self, He, who pervading all, sustaineth the three worlds, the indestructible Lord.

Similarly, in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa (Book I, Chap. II, Verses 16 & 24) :

प्रधानपुरुषव्यक्तकालानां परमं हि यत् । पश्यन्ति सूरयः शुद्धं तद्विष्णोः परमं पदम् ।

प्रधानपुरुषव्यक्तकालास्तु प्रविभागशः । रूपाणि स्थितिसर्गान्तव्यक्तिसद्भावहेतवः ॥

विष्णोः स्वरूपात् परतोहि तेऽन्ये । रूपे प्रधानं पुरुषश्च विप्र ।

तस्यैव तेऽन्येन धृते विद्युक्ते । रूपेण यत्तद् दिज्ज कालसंक्षम् ॥

He who is higher than matter (Pradhāna), Jīvas, manifested world and time, He is the highest Viṣṇu, about whom the scriptures declare : "The wise see the highest pure form of that Lord Viṣṇu." Matter and Jīva are distinct from Viṣṇu though they are also two aspects of Him. That aspect by which the Lord brings about the union of spirit with matter, at the time of creation, and their separation from each other during dissolution, is called Time. (Thus the supreme Viṣṇu has four aspects, the root of matter called Pradhāna, the root of spirit called Puruṣa, the manifested universe called Vyakta and the time called Kāla).

Similarly, in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

पतदीशनमीशस्य प्रकृतिस्थोऽपि तद् गुणैः ।

न युज्यते सदात्मन्येयं बुद्धिस्तदाश्रया ॥

This is the glory of the Lord, that His devotees, though plunged in all-defiling matter, are not defiled by its contact, nor bound by her energies, because their mind is always refuged in the Lord.

Moreover, in the sūtra I., 2. 8, it has been shown that the Lord though living in the world and in the Jīvas is not tainted by this contact. Thus the Lord possessed of inconceivable and infinite power creates the world by His mere will, enters into it in order to sport in it, and with it; and when it begins to decay, He destroys it and rejuvenates it, just as a spider. By such a creation, etc., of the world, there does not accrue to the Lord the slightest taint.

An objector says : Man and God are, however, one in essence, the difference between them is that of degree alone, just as the difference between the space confined within a jar and the infinite space outside it. Space is one and not different. To this we reply, it cannot be so, because we do not admit that the supreme Brahman is liable to division or limitation like space (we cannot cut off a portion of Brahman and say,—the so much is Jīva and the other is Lord). Nor is the Jīva and Brahman related like the reflection of the moon in the water and the moon in Heaven. "Reflection no doubt does not possess all the glory and the perfection of the original, and man being a reflection of God is lower than God, but essentially the same." But we do not admit this, because the Lord being formless, it is impossible that there should be any reflection of Him. Reflection can be of matter only, no one has ever seen the reflection of spirit. The third illustration, given by the Advaitins, that of the king's son, is also inapt. A king's son brought up among the shepherds, considered himself so and never knew his lineage. Once a wise man passed that way and told him, 'Thou art not a shepherd's child but the son of the king.' No sooner had he heard it, than his delusion vanished and he realised his own greatness. Similarly, so long as man is overpowered by ignorance, he thinks himself man, but when knowledge comes, he knows that he is God. To this we reply, that God being one according to this theory, and man being essentially God, the delusion which a man is under must be the delusion which affects God, and thus it detracts from the Omniscience and Omnipotence of God. There existing no other being but God, the ignorance which makes man think himself separate from God, and a distinct individuality, must be an ignorance indwelling in God Himself. God is thus subject to delusion and illusion.

SŪTRA II., 1. 23.

अश्मादिवच्च तदनुपपत्तिः ॥ २ । १ । २३ ॥

अश्मादिवत् Aśmādivat, like stone, etc. च Cha, and. तत् Tat of that अनुपपत्तिः Anupapattiḥ, impossibility.

23. And as stones, etc., are not creators of the universe, so the Jīvas, which are equally finite, have no power to create the world, for it is impossible that any Jīva should create the world, just as it is impossible for a piece of iron, wood, etc.—159.

COMMENTARY

The Jīva though sentient is as much non-independent as a piece of stone, or wood or iron or a clod of clay ; and consequently it is not possible for such a Jīva to be the creator of the world out of himself. The Śruti also says that the Lord is the creator as the following text :

अन्तः प्रविष्टः शास्ता जनानाम् ।

“He is the ruler of all beings, He is within every body.”

Similarly, Gītā also says :

ईश्वरः सर्वभूतानां हृद्देशेऽर्जुन तिष्ठति ।

आमयन् सर्वभूतानि यन्त्रारूढानि मायया ॥

O Arjuna, this Īśwara, dwelling in the hearts of men, makes them work by His mysterious power, and causes them to revolve, as though mounted on a potter's wheel.

SŪTRA II., 1. 24.

उपसंहारदर्शनः चेति चेत् क्षीरवद्भि ॥ २ । १ । २४ ॥

उपसंहार Upasamhāra, completion, bringing to an end. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of the seeing. न Na, not. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. क्षीरवत् Kṣīra-vat, like milk. The word वत् has the force of an instrumental case here : See Sūtra of Pāṇini, तेन तुल्यं क्रिया etc. हि Hi, because.

24. If it be said that Jīva is the creator, because we see him bringing to conclusion many acts, we say it is not so, as is the case with the milk.—160.

COMMENTARY

The Jīva is not perfectly inert like a piece of stone, etc., he has the power of action, because we see him bringing to a finish any act that he commences. Nor is this agency of the Jīva a delusion, because there is

nothing to show that the Jīva is not the real agent in the acts that he does. If it be said, let the Jīva be an agent, but he is an agent only subordinate to the will of God, we reply, it is not so, for we have first to imagine a God, whom we do not see in the world, and next to add further that he is the mover of all other sentient beings of the world; the theory, therefore, that God is the inciter of all souls to action is wrong, on account of its very clumsiness. Therefore, the Jīva himself is the agent, through his own self-initiated activity, and not because he is impelled to action by any external laws.

To the objection raised in the last paragraph the author replies by saying, it is not so, for as in the case of milk. Because the Jīva has the power of agency only so far as the cow produces milk. The cow has no power of her own to produce milk, for the production of milk is not a voluntary act of the cow. It is the Prāṇa force that is primary agent in the production of milk, as says the Smṛti, "It is the Prāṇa that changes the food into various humours of the body, such as chyle, milk, etc." Similarly, though we see the Jīva producing some effect, yet he is not independent in his act. The primary agent is the supreme Lord. This will be further explained in Sūtra II., 3. 39, where it will be shown that the activity of every Jīva proceeds from the Highest Self as its cause.

If it be said that we do not see the hand of God in the acts of men, to this the author answers by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 1. 25.

देवादिवदिति लोके ॥ २ । १ । २५ ॥

देवादिबद् Deva-ādi-vat, like devas and the rest. The word Vat has the force of sixth case here. इति Iti, thus. Another reading is अपि Api, 'also,' लोके Loke, in the world.

25. God, though invisible, is the creator of the world, just as the devas, though invisible, are seen to work in the world—161.

#### COMMENTARY

Devas like Iudra, etc., are not visible, yet we see their activities in the world, such as the production of rain, etc. Similarly, God though not perceptible in the world, is the unseen creator of it.

The author now gives another reason to show the absurdity of holding any Jīva to be the author of the universe.

SŪTRA. II., 1. 26.

कृत्स्नप्रसक्तिर्निरवयवत्वशब्दव्याकोपो वा ॥ २ । १ । २६ ॥

कृत्स्न Kṛtsna, entire, complete. प्रसक्तिः Prasaktiḥ, employment, activity, निरवयवत्व Niravayavatva, without form, without members, indivisible, without parts. शब्द Śabda, text. व्याकोपः Vyākopaḥ, contradiction, violation, stultification. वा Vā, or.

26. Either the Jīva is entirely absorbed in every activity, or else there would be a violation of the text that Jīva is without parts.—162.

## COMMENTARY

He who holds the theory that the Jīva is the creator, must accept the conclusion that inasmuch as the Jīva is without parts, its entire self is present in every act. But this cannot be said, because in raising a light thing like grass, etc., we do not see the employment of the entire force of the Jīva. When the Jīva puts his entire self into any action, all his power is manifested therein. As in raising a heavy stone, the Jīva puts in all his power, but he does not do so in raising a light straw, and so the exertion in raising a straw is infinitely less. Nor can you say, that in the latter case, the entire Jīva is not active but only a portion of it. Because it is an admitted fact, that Jīva is partless. Therefore, we cannot say that the entire Jīva is present in the act of raising a stone, but only a portion of it is present in raising a straw. You may say, where is the harm if you admit that the Jīva has parts. To this we reply that then you will be stultifying all those texts of the scripture which declare that the Jīva is without parts, as for example :

This self is atomic and is to be known by mind alone in which the chief Prāṇa has completely withdrawn his five-fold activities. The mind of all beings is entirely interwoven by these five Prāṇas and is consequently never quiet. But when the mind is perfectly pure, then the soul manifests its powers.

Thus the soul is atomic and consequently partless. As regards those texts which say that the world is produced by the Jīva, we have already explained that the word Jīva there does not mean the individual soul, but the living Lord. Therefore, the theory that the Jīva is the creator of the world is untenable.

Now we shall consider whether the above two objections apply to the agency of Brahman. The objector may say that Brahman is also entire and indivisible, therefore, if in all acts He puts Himself in His entirety than in raising a straw, etc., He will employ His entire powers, but that is not possible, because it is done by a fraction of His power,

or rather it is possible to be accomplished by a portion of His power. On the other hand, if He puts in only a portion of His power in any activity, then there is violence done to those texts which declare Brahman to be partless and actionless.

Thus the same two objections apply in the case of Brahman being the agent, as in the case of the Jiva. To this the author replies.

SŪTRA II., 1. 27.

श्रुतेस्तु शब्दमूलत्वात् ॥ २ । १ । २७ ॥

श्रुतेः Sruteḥ, from the scripture, on account of revelation. तु Tu, but. शब्द Sabda, word. Revelation. मूलत्वात् Mūlatvāt, because of the root.

27. But the above defects do not apply in the case of Brahman, because the scriptures so declare it, and the Word of God alone is the root from which we learn anything about these transcendental subjects.—163.

#### COMMENTARY

The word “Tu” removes the above doubt, The word “not” is understood in this Sūtra, and is to be drawn from II., 1. 24. In the case of Brahman being the agent, the above imperfections do not apply. Why do we say so, because the scripture declares it to be so, such as : Brahman is transcendental, inconceivable, pure knowledge and yet He has a form, He is possessed of knowledge ; and though He is one, He is manifold also, and though He is partless, He has parts, and though He is immeasurable, He is yet measured, He is the creator of all, yet unmodified Himself. Similarly, in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, III., 1. 7.

बुद्ध्यच्च तद्विषयमचिन्त्यरूपं सूक्ष्माच्च तत् सूक्ष्मतरं विभाति ।

दूरात्सुदूरे तदिहान्तिके च पश्यत्स्विहैव निहितं गुहायाम् ॥ ७ ॥

The Lord shines forth as great, divine and inconceivable. He appears as smaller than the smallest, He is far off as well as near, and to the discerning, He is verily here in the cavity of the heart.

This text also shows the paradoxical and transcendental powers of Brahman. Similarly, another text says : Lord Govinda is without parts, is one, His form is mere existence, intelligence and bliss. While another text says : He has a crown of peacock hair, has a very pleasant form and unobstructed intelligence. In the Gopāla Upaniṣad we read, though one He shines forth as many. In the Māṇḍukya Upaniṣad, we find Him described as partless and yet having parts,

अमात्रोऽनन्तमात्रश्च द्वैतयोपशमः शिवः । ओंकारो विदितो येन स मुनिः नेतरो जनः । स मुनि-  
नेतरो जनः ।

He who knows the Lord as partless and yet full of infinity of parts, as the destroyer of all false knowledge and blissful, is verily a sage and no one else ; he is verily a sage and no one else.

Similarly, in the Kathopaniṣad (II, 20) we find Him described as measured though immeasurable :

आसीनो दूरं ब्रजति शयानो याति सर्वतः ।

वस्तुमदामदन्देवं मदन्यो ज्ञातुमर्हति ॥ २० ॥

Sitting He goes afar, resting He moves everywhere, who other than my Self is able to know that God who is the dispenser of pleasure and pain.

So also Rg Veda, 10, 81, 3, (Śvet. Up., III., 3) says :

सर्वः पृथिवीदं रत् सर्वतोऽक्षिशिरोमुखम् ।

सर्वतः श्रुतिमहोक्ते सर्वमवृत्त्यतिप्रति ॥

विश्वश्चक्षुरस्त विश्वतो मुखो विश्वतो बाहुस्त विश्वतस्पात् ।

संवाहुभ्यां धमति सप्तत्र्यर्धावाभूमी जनयन् देव एकः ॥ ३ ॥

That one God, having His eyes, His face, His arms, and His feet in every place, when producing heaven and earth, forges them together with His arms and His wings.

So also in Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad, IV., 17 :

एष देवो विश्वकर्मा महात्मा सदा जनानां हृदये सन्निविष्टः । हृदा मनोग मनताभिस्तुतो य एष दि-  
दुर्मृतास्ते भवन्ति ॥ १७ ॥

This God is the creator of all, is the Highest Self, He is always present in the hearts of men, with heart of love and the mind concentrated, the wise who know Him verily become immortal.

स विश्वकृद्भिरविदात्नयोनिर्ज्ञः कालकालो गुणी सर्वविद यः । प्रधानक्षेत्रज्ञपतिर्गुणैः स एतारमोक्ष-  
स्थितिवन्धहेतुः ॥ १६ ॥

He is the creator of all, He is the heart of all, the source of Ātman, the Omniscient, the Creator of time, possessed of all auspicious attributes and knowing all. He is the Lord of all matter and spirits, He is the Lord of all Guṇas, He is the cause of transmigratory existence and release, bondage and freedom.

So also in VI., 19 :

निष्कलं निष्क्रियं शान्तं निरवयं निरञ्जनम् । असृज्य परं सेतुं दग्धेन्धनमिवाननम् ॥ १९ ॥

He is partless and actionless, pure and taintless, all peace. He is the supreme bridge of immortality, He is like fire that remains when the fuel is all burnt.

These texts of Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad show very distinctly the possession by the Lord of powers which appear to us self-contradictory, and hence impossible. But in matters transcendental, we are to be guided by scripture and not by our mere reasoning.

But, says an objector, are we to renounce our reason in favour of scripture, when there is pure contradiction, such as the assertion, the fire has drenched the cloth? Is not such a statement a logical absurdity? To this the Sūtra replies, "Śabda-mūlatvāt." The knowledge of Brahman and His attributes being founded on the scripture, and the scripture alone, we have no right to say that the scriptures are illogical, if they describe God as having attributes which are paradoxical. These inconceivable attributes must be accepted by us with regard to Brahman, because the only proof of Brahman is the word alone. Nor is it so mysterious altogether. We see some distant analogy of it in the inconceivable powers of certain gems and charms to produce magical effects. Because a thing is inexplicable or inconceivable, there is no reason to hold it impossible.

To sum up: There are three sorts of proofs, namely: sensuous (Pratyakṣa), inferential (Anumāna) and scriptural authority or the word of God (Śabda). In the case of the first two kinds of knowledge, there is always room for mistake and hallucination. Thus a sensuous perception may be a pure hallucination, caused either by hypnotic suggestion or disease of the senses. A man may see a person standing in front of him, or the cut off head of Chitra, while as a matter of fact this may be all due to pure hypnotism. Thus 'Pratyakṣa' or sense-knowledge is not always absolutely reliable. Similarly, the knowledge based upon inference is also liable to error. Ordinarily, the proposition is true when we say, "There is no smoke without fire;" but in some cases, the person would not be justified in inferring the existence of fire from mere smoke. A great fire, when quenched by water, gives rise to a large amount of smoke, a person seeing such smoke and suffering from cold may go to the place where that smoke is rising from, but will be disappointed when he sees there charred coals and no fire. Thus inference is also liable to error. The only proof which is free from all these possibilities of errors is the word, whether it is the word of God as recorded in the scripture or the word of an inspired sage called Āpta or the perfect, or the word of a person who is competent and honest. Thus the statements: "There is snow on the tops of the Himalayas, there are gems in the depths of the Oceans" are always true. The word not only corroborates perception and reason, it is sometimes independent of both, and often declares that which neither reason nor perception can ever tell us. Thus a man who has been once deceived by seeing an illusory decapitated head may take a real decapitated head to be an illusion. But when he is told, from the voice of silence, that it is a real head and not an illusion, his ignorance is removed and he gets true knowledge. So also a traveller suffering from cold, may be running towards the place where smoke is rising, thinking that he will find relief there. But a person, who knows the real nature of that smoke, may save him from disappointment,



by saying, "Do not go there, there is no fire, smoke is rising from the fire that has just been quenched by the rains."

The word as an instrument of proof supports and corroborates perception and inference. Thus a man may have a jewel necklace on his throat, but having forgotten it may be searching it everywhere. But when he is told, "Thou hast the necklace on thy throat;" he is saved all further trouble and anxiety. So also the word is the only means of knowing things which cannot be known either by perception or reason, or at least, which cannot be known by every man by his own perception and reason. Thus the movements of the heavenly bodies and their influences, have been declared to us by the astronomers and the experts in that department. The word, therefore, of these persons is our only means of knowing when a certain celestial phenomenon will take place, such as an eclipse or the rising of a comet. Thus here also we see, that the word is a higher means of knowledge, than our own perception or reason. In worldly matters, the word is admittedly superior in its probative force to perception and reason. Much more is it so in matters other-worldly, where we have to depend on the testimony of seers and saints, and the highest testimony of all, the word of God or Scripture. As says the Śruti :

"The non-knower of Vedas can never think even of the Supreme." Therefore, the scripture being self-proved, is not open to any objections.

SŪTRA II., 11. 28.

आत्मनि चैवं विचित्राश्च हि ॥ २ । १ । २८ ॥

आत्मनि Âtmani, in the Self, in the Lord. च Cha, and. एवं Evam, thus. विचित्राः Vichitrâḥ, manifold, variegated. च Cha, and. हि Hi, because.

28. And thus is the power of the Self, because manifold objects are seen (to be produced from the tree of all desires).—164.

#### COMMENTARY

As from the Tree-of-all-desires or from the philosopher's stone possessing lordly powers and inexplicable mysterious energy, there come out elephants, horses, etc., and as these wonderful creations are mysterious, and are credible simply on the authority of scriptures, similarly, is the power of the Âtman, the Lord of all, the Supreme Viṣṇu, who gives rise to Devas, men, and lower beings. If we can believe, on the authority of scriptures, in the wonderful powers of the Tree-of-all-desires, or in the philosopher's stone, why should we not believe, on the same authority, in the mysterious powers of the Lord? It is scripture alone that gives us any information

of the existence of these mysterious things. We do not question, when animals come out of the Tree-of-all-desires, whether they are created by the entire tree or by a portion of it, or whether any particular part of the tree has power to produce any particular animal. We see and mark the result, and leave the thing as a mystery, admitting that there is no scope for reasoning here. Similarly, is the case with the Lord in His creative agency. We should not question whether the Lord is active in His entirety in any particular creative act, or whether it is done by a portion of His energy. We must simply accept the statement as we find it.

The word "Ātmāni" is exhibited in the locative case in the sūtra in order to show that the Self is the receptacle or support of all effects. The second "Cha" is in order to indicate that when such wonderful things are believed by us as the existence of the Tree-of-all-desires, or the philosopher's stone, why should we hesitate to believe in the mysterious power of the Lord? The word "Hi" implies that the facts above mentioned are well known in all these Purāṇas, etc. Therefore, the conclusion is that the theory that Brahman is the agent of creation, is more reasonable than the theory of any Jīva being such agent. The next Sūtra strengthens this view.

SŪTRA II. 1. 29.

स्वप्ने दोषाच्च ॥ २ । १ । २६ ॥

स्वप्ने Svapakṣe, in one's own view, in the opponent's theory that the Jīva is the creative agent. दोषाद् Doṣāt, because of the defect of imperfections च Cha, and.

29. And because all these objections are similarly applicable to your view also, therefore, it is not to be accepted.—165

#### COMMENTARY

The objection raised by you to our theory equally applies to your theory also. If Jīva is the creative agent, does he create with his entire energy or a portion of his energy? In the case of Brahman, the objection has been answered by us already, but in the case of Jīva being the agent, there is no possibility of getting out of the difficulty.

Now the author raises another objection and answers it. The doubt arises whether Brahman shows any partiality to any Jīva, and, if so, whether it is possible for such a Brahman to be the creator. The text says Brahman is pure truth, knowledge and infinity. He is mere being, etc. In these texts we do not find any energy attributed to Him. It is seen

that beings possessed of energy or power (Śakti) have only the capacity to produce wonderful results, such as a carpenter and others. A man may have the whole knowledge of the art of carpentry, but if he has no power, he cannot accomplish any thing. To this objection, the author answers :

SŪTRA II. 1. 30.

सर्वोपेता च तद्दर्शनात् ॥ २ । १ । ३० ॥

सर्वं Sarva, all, all powers. उपेता Upetā, endowed with, possessed with. This is a word formed with the affix "Treh." The crude form is "Upetr." च Cha, and, alone. तत् Tat, that, the possession of such power. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because it is seen.

30. The Lord alone is possessed of all powers, because it is so seen in the text.—166.

#### COMMENTARY

The supreme Self alone is endowed with all sorts of energies (Śakti). Because we find Vedic texts to that effect:

Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, I. 3 :

ते ध्यानयोगानुगता अपश्यन् देवात्मशक्तिं स्वगुणैर्निगूढाम् । यः कारणानि निखिलानि तानि काला-  
त्मदुक्तान्यधिनिष्ठित्येकः ॥ ३ ॥

They, immersed in meditation, saw the self-energy of the God, concealed in its own qualities. Who one alone pervades and presides over all other causes, such as time, nature, destiny, etc.

So also Svet. Up., IV. I. :

य एकोऽवर्णो बहुधा शक्तियोगाद् वर्णाननेकान् निहितार्थो दधाति ।

विचैति चान्ते विस्वमदौ स देवः स नो बुद्ध्या शुभया संयुज्जतु ॥

He who, one and without any colour, creates many colours through His manifold powers, and who places in them all beneficial objects with His purposes hidden, who at the time of Pralaya withdraws within Himself the whole universe. May He endow us with good understanding.

So also Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad, VI., 8 :

न तस्य कार्यं कारणं च विद्यते न तत् समश्चाभ्यधिकश्च दृश्यते । परास्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रूयते  
स्वभाविकी ज्ञानबलक्रिया च ॥ ८ ॥

There is no effect and no cause known of Him, no one is seen like unto Him or better. His high power is revealed as manifold, as essential, and so His knowledge, force, and action.

Similarly, in the Smṛti we find Him described as possessing powers of various sorts; such as Viṣṇu Śakti is said to be the highest.

No doubt these powers are all inconceivable as says the Smṛti : He is without hands and feet, His power is inconceivable, He is the Lord of Self, not to be found by reasoning, and possessed of thousands of

powers. Therefore, it follows that Brahman is the agent in the act of creation, etc., because of His being endowed with infinite and inconceivable powers. The texts declaring that Brahman is the true knowledge, bliss, etc., reveal His essential nature, while, on the other hand, the texts like Devātma Śakti etc., of the Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad, declare His manifold powers. Consequently, the nature of Brahman is one which is endowed with powers. Therefore, in the texts "He willed, etc.," "He saw, etc.," we find Him possessed of the power of volition (Saṅkalpa) and the rest. Both sorts of texts—those declaring Brahman to be mere knowledge, existence, bliss, etc. and those declaring Him as willing, thinking and creating, etc.,—are of equal validity and authority, because both are Śrutis and there is no difference in them as such.

The author raises another objection and answers it again.

*Objection:* Brahman cannot be the creator or agent, because He has no sense organs. Though Devas and others are possessed of powers, yet they are seen to be active agents in creation because they have got sense organs and not because they have got merely powers. But Brahman is without sense organs, how can He be capable of world activity? Even the same Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad, (III, 19) that you have quoted, to prove the possession of all powers by Brahman, declares definitely that He has no sense organs:

अपाणिपादो जवनो ग्रहीतो पश्यत्यचक्षुः स शृणोत्यकर्णः । स वेत्ति वेद्यं न च तस्यास्ति वेत्ता तमादुरग्यं पुरुषं महान्तम् ॥ १९ ॥

He sees without eyes, He hears without ears, without hands and feet He hastens and grasps, He knows whatever is knowable, but of him there is no knower; they declare Him to be the first, and the mighty person.

To this objection the author replies :

SŪTRA II., 1. 31.

विकरणत्वाच्चेति चेत्तदुक्तम् ॥ २ । १ । ३१ ॥

विकरणत्वात् Vikarṇatvāt, on account of the absence (Vi) of instruments (Karṇa) of action and perception, that is, on account of the absence of sense organs. न Na, not. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. तत् Tat, that, that objection. उक्तम् Uktam, explained or answered.

31. If it be objected that Brahman cannot be the agent of creation, because He does not possess sense organs, then we reply that this objection has already been met by the scripture itself.—167.

#### COMMENTARY

The objection that Brahman cannot be the agent, because He has no sense organs, is answered by the very text of the Upaniṣad quoted by

you to show that He possesses no sense organs. The three verses of Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad are given below in order to understand the context (Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, VI, Verse 7 to 9);

तमीश्वराणां परमं महेश्वरं तं देवतानां परमं च देवतम् ।  
 पतिं पतीनां परमं परस्ताद् विदाम देवं भुवनेशमीड्यम् ॥ ७ ॥  
 न तस्य कार्यं करणं च विद्यते न तत् समश्वाभ्यधिकश्च दृश्यते ।  
 परास्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रूयते स्वाभाविकी ज्ञानबलक्रिया च ॥ ८ ॥  
 न तस्य कश्चित् पतिरस्ति लोके न चेशिता नैव च तस्य लिङ्गम् ।  
 स कारणं करणाधिपाधिपो न चास्य कश्चिज्जनिता न चाधिपः ॥ ९ ॥

We know that God who is the adorable Lord of all the worlds, who is the highest Lord of all lords, who is the highest God of all gods, who is the Master of masters and who is Greater than the great one (Prākṛti)—7.

Of him there exists no (Prākṛtik) body, nor sense organs, nor such activity. There is no one equal to Him nor superior. His power is seen to be the highest, and is sung to be manifold—the natural powers consisting of knowledge, force and activity—8.

There is no master over Him in this world, nor any ruler of Him. Nor is there any mark by which He can be known. He is the great cause, the Lord of the lords of the senses, there is no father of Him, nor any lord over Him—9.

*Note :* The Logoi like Rudra, Brahmā, etc., are called Lords or Iśvaras ; Indras, etc., are called Devatās or Gods ; Dakṣa and other Prajāpatis are called Masters or Patīs. These are the various classes of divine hierarchies.—The powers of the Lord are threefold, called Jñānaśakti, Balaśakti, and Kriyāśakti. They are innate or Svābhāvikī. "There is no mark of Him" means, there is nothing in this world by which His existence and powers can be inferred, they are known only through revelation.

Though in the verse beginning with "He has neither hands nor feet, etc.," it was mentioned that the Great Spirit did every act without the instrumentality of sense organs, yet the present verses clear up any doubt that might have remained, as to how there can be any activity without sense organs. This being is called Puruṣam-Mahāntam, the Great Spirit, because He is the Ruler of all spirits. When it is said He has no activity or sense organs or body, it is meant that His body is not made of Prākṛtik matter, nor are His sense organs of the same. Consequently, His activity is not Prākṛtik but super-Prākṛtik. When, therefore, the Śruti says, "He has no Kārya, it only denies such physical activity, because He certainly does possess activity of the highest order, as He is endowed with Parāśakti. That Śakti or power is natural to Him and hence it is called Svābhāvikī. In fact, it is the very essence of His Self. It is due to this Parāśakti, this Svābhāvikī śakti, that He manifests His threefold powers, namely, that of Jñāna, Bala and Kriyā—Knowledge, Force and Activity. Since no one possesses this transcendental attribute, this Parāśakti, therefore, no one is equal to Him. It follows from this that

no one can be superior to Him. So also, though He is devoid of Prākṛtik sense organs, yet He possesses organs which are the essential parts of His nature, and hence there is possibility of activity in Him.

Others say, the above text about His grasping without hands and hastening without feet, etc., does not prohibit the possession by Him of the sense organs. It only prohibits the exclusive use of a particular organ, for a particular purpose. Ordinary beings grasp only through the hand, and can run with the feet. But with the Lord there is no such restriction as regards the sense organs; with Him every organ is capable of being used for the purposes of every other organ. In fact, the same Upaniṣad further on says that all His organs are universal in their activity. It says:

सर्वतः पाणिपादं तद् सर्वतोऽङ्शिरोमुखम् । सर्वतः श्रुतिमल्लोके सर्वमावृत्य तिष्ठति ॥ १६ ॥

His hand and feet are everywhere, so also His eyes, head and mouth; He hears everything in the universe, because His ears are everywhere. He exists enveloping this all.

So also in the Bhāgavata, it is declared that every limb of His is endowed with the power of performing all functions of all the senses. This extraordinary power of the sense organs of the Lord was manifested in His last Avatāra of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, at the time of forest-picnic, in Bṛndāvana, among His companions of boyhood. In this view of the above verses, the word "Kāryam" should be explained as "to be accomplished." In other words, when the Sruti says there is no "Kārya" for Him, it means there is nothing to be accomplished by Him, because He is already perfect and full. In this interpretation the word "Karaṇa" or sense organs may be explained as something to be laid down, something to be done. The rest is the same as in the first explanation.

In the next Sūtra, the question is raised, whether Brahman has any motive to create the universe. The *prima facie* view is that He has no motive, because He is perfect and this view is set forth in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 1. 32.

नप्रयोजनवत्त्वात् ॥ २ । १ । ३२ ॥

न Na, not. प्रयोजनवत्त्वात् Prayojanavattvāt, being endowed with a motive.

32. The Lord has no inclination towards creation, because He has no motive.—168.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Na" is understood in this Sūtra from the last one. The word "Na-prayojana-vattvāt" is a compound word meaning "because being motiveless." The usual form would have been "A-prayojana-vattvāt." The Lord can have no urging towards creation, because being perfect, He has no motive to create. In the world, every activity is seen to exist on a motive beneficial either for one's own-self, or for the sake of another. The motive beneficial to His own self, cannot exist in the case of the Lord, because He being perfect, all His wishes are ever fulfilled, as the scripture repeatedly declares. Nor is His motive to do something beneficial to others, because the creation evidently is for the sake of punishing the Jīvas, and making them suffer the pains of birth and death. An all-compassionate Lord would not create a universe, merely to punish the erring Jīvas for their misdeeds. And no one creates anything without a motive. Therefore, it follows that the Lord has nothing to urge Him to creation.

This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 1. 33.

लोकवत् लीलकैवल्यम् ॥ २ । १ । ३३ ॥

लोकवत् Lokavat, as in the world, as in an ordinary life. तु Tu, but, लीला Līlā, sport, play. कैवल्यम् Kaivalyam, merely.

33. The motive of the Lord in creating the world is mere sport only, as we see in ordinary life.—169.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" removes the above doubt. Though all-full and desiring nothing, yet the motive which prompts the Lord towards the creation of this wonderful world is mere sport only, and has no object beneficial to Him in view. As in ordinary life, men full of cheerfulness, when awakening from sound sleep, begin to dance about without any object, but from mere exuberance of spirit, such is the case with the Lord. This Līlā or the sport of the Lord is natural to Him, because He is full of self-bliss. As says the Māṇḍukya Upaniṣad (Kārikā):

भोगार्थं सृष्टिरित्यन्ये क्रीडार्थमिति चापरे ।

देवस्यैव स्वभावोऽयमाप्तकामस्य का सृष्टा ॥

Some think that the creation is for the sake of enjoyment (of the Creator), while others think that it is for the sake of recreation, (to shake off the lethargy of the Pralaya sleep or the ennui of the solitude of Pralaya). This (act of creation) of God is His nature (without any motive). What motive can there be for one who has all His desires satisfied ? —(Mān., Up., I., 9.).

To the same effect is the Smṛti (Nārāyaṇa Samhitā) :

सृष्ट्यादिकं हरिर्नैव प्रयोजनमपेक्ष्य तु ।

कुरुते केवलानन्दाद् यथा मत्तस्य नर्तनम् ॥

पूर्णानन्दस्य तस्येह प्रयोजनमतिः कुतः ।

मुक्ता अप्याप्तकामाः स्युः किमु तस्याखिलात्मनः ॥

The creation, etc., of Hari does not depend on any motive, He does so out of sheer joy, as the drunkard dances through frenzy. He who is full of all bliss can have no motive whatsoever. When even the Muktas have got all their desires fulfilled through Him, What unfulfilled desire can there be in the case of the Lord who is the Self of the universe ?

But a man intoxicated with drink has no consciousness of what he is doing. Is the Lord also devoid of consciousness, like the drunkard ? For then, He would not be omniscient. We do not say so. All that we say is that man does play and become sportive through the mere exuberance of spirit and sheer joyfulness of life ; such is the case with Brahman. The Advaitins explain the words "as we see in ordinary life" by the well-known example of respiration that goes on even in deep sleep, and which is altogether involuntary and motiveless. This analogy, however, is open to the objection that that Lord is subject to deep sleep and loses consciousness, as man does. The example given by the Viśiṣṭādvaitins is that of a prince who amuses himself without any motive, at the game of balls. This analogy, however, is open to the objection that playing at a game of balls is not altogether motiveless, for the prince gets some pleasure by the play.

### *Adhikaraṇa X.—The Lord is neither partial nor cruel.*

The author again raises an objection and then goes on to remove the doubt. The theory, that Brahman is the Creator, is open to the objection that the Lord is either partial or cruel ; for He creates Devas and men, some of whom enjoy happiness and others suffer misery. This theory is, therefore, not a congruous one. But the texts say that the Lord is neither cruel nor partial. How can then such a Lord be the Creator ? To this objection the author answers by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 1. 34.

वैषम्यनैर्घृण्येन न सापेक्षत्वात् तथा हि दर्शयति ॥ २ । १ । ३४ ॥

वैषम्य Vaiṣamya, inequality, partiality. नैर्घृण्येन Nairghṛṇyena, cruelty. न Na, not. सापेक्षत्वात् Sāpeksatvāt, because the creation depends upon the Karma of creatures, because of having regard to Karma. तथा Tathā, so. हि Hi, because. दर्शयति Darśayati, the scripture declares.



34. There exist no partiality and cruelty in the Lord, because the pleasure and pain, suffered by beings, has regard to their Karmas, and so also the scriptures declare.—170.

## COMMENTARY

In Brahman, as Creator, there exists no fault of partiality or cruelty. The differences of condition in which creatures are born, and the pleasure and pain which they suffer, depend on their own Karmas, and the Lord creates the environment, in which the creatures are placed, with the strictest regard to such Karma. The proof of this is the scripture itself. For in the Kauṣītākī Upaniṣad, III., 8, we find the following :

एष ह्येनं साधु कर्म कारयति तं यमन्वानुनेष्ट्येष एवैनमसाधु कर्म कारयति तं यमेभ्यो लोकेभ्यो ननुत्सते ।

For He makes him whom He wishes to lead up from these worlds do a good deed, according to the tendencies created by his past Karmas, and the same makes him whom He wishes to lead down from these worlds, do a bad deed according to bad tendencies generated by the past Karmas.

*Note* :—Every act of man is really done under the will of the Lord. A man can do a good or bad deed, only if the Lord so wills it, for He is the sole agent in this world. But this world of the Lord is not capricious and lawless. The man who has done good Karmas in the past, gets further energy from the Lord to do better Karmas in this life, and thus rise higher. It is in this way only that the Lord makes him whom He wishes to lead up from these worlds do a good deed. And so also the reverse. The wish of the Lord has always regard to the karmas of the Jīva.

Jīvas get the condition of Deva-hood through the will of the Lord, similarly they get the condition of the denizens of hell through the same will of the Lord. The Lord is the operative cause of the suffering and the enjoyment of the Jīvas. But this will of the Lord has always regard to the Karma of the Jīva.

## SŪTRA II., 1. 35.

न कर्माविभागादिति चेन्नानादित्वात् ॥ २ । १ । ३५ ॥

न Na, not. कर्म Karma, karman, actions, acts of the Jīvas. अविभागात् Avibhāgāt, because of non-distinction. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अनादित्वात् Anāditrāt, because of beginninglessness.

35. (The theory of Karma) cannot (explain the inequality and cruelty seen in this universe, because when the creation first started) there was no distinction (of souls and consequently) of Karmas. This (objection, however,) is not valid, because there is no beginning of creation.—171.

## COMMENTARY

An objector may say, your theory of Karma only pushes the difficulty one step back. No doubt, it explains to some extent the inequalities and sufferings of Jivas in their present life. They may be the results of acts done in the past life. But since in the beginning of creation, there were no Jivas, nor were their acts, they must have been created with inequalities, in order to act differently. If they had been created all equal, there is no reason to hold that their acts would have been different. The Sruti also says, "The Being or the God (Sat) alone existed in the beginning, one only without a second" (Chhândogya, VI. 1.) This shows that when the creation started, there were no Karmas or Jivas, distinguishable from Brahman. He alone existed, all in all. To this objection, raised in the first half of the Sūtra, the next half gives the answer, by saying 'this is not so because of the beginninglessness.' The Karmas and the Jivas are beginningless, just like Brahman, and this is the theory adopted by the author. Thus there is no fault, because every subsequent Karma is motivated by the tendencies generated by the past Karmas. In Pralaya, the Karmas, good or bad, done by the Jivas, are not absolutely destroyed. The next Kalpa is conditioned by the Karmas of the past. So also in the Bhaviṣya Purāṇa :

पुण्यपापादिकं विष्णुः कारयेत् पूर्वकर्मणा ।

अनादित्वात् कर्मणश्च न विरोधः कथञ्चन ॥

The Lord Viṣṇu makes the Jivas do good or bad deeds in accordance with their past Karmas, nor is there any conflict in this position, because the Karmas have no beginning.

If you say that Karmas being beginningless, the theory is tainted with the fault of *regressus in infinitum*, we say it is not so, because we find authority for it in reason also. The well-known case of the seed and the tree is in point. Is the seed first or the tree? Nor is it any objection that God being bound to create according to the Karmas of the Souls, loses His independence. The Lord certainly is independent, but He is not capricious and whimsical. Had He created the world with perfect disregard to the karmas of the Jivas, He might have proved His omnipotence to some minds, but to the majority, His act would have appeared capricious and cruel. In fact, the authorities clearly show that the substance and Karma and time are equally co-eternal with the Lord, and He creates the universe, with a full regard to all these three. It is not only the Karma that conditions the universe, but the substance (or the matter stuff), and time are also important factors in creation. Of course, these three are subordinate to Īśvara, but He never disregards their existence in His act of creation. The Lord is not partial or cruel, or wanting in omnipotence. In fact, the theory of Karman and the beginninglessness of creation reconcile all the difficulties. You cannot say that this theory is open to the same objection as the theory

of specific creation. You cannot say it is the falling of the smugglers unwittingly into the hands of the tax-collectors.

*Note.*—Certain merchants, in order to evade customs duties, went by a roundabout way, to avoid the customs house. In the dark night, they missed their way, and after wandering for some time, they took shelter in a roadside house. In the morning, it was found that the house in which they had taken shelter, was the customs house which the traders were trying to avoid. Thus they had not only to pay the tax, but were punished also for trying to cheat the customs. This maxim is called "Morning in the customs house."

Our theory is not open to this objection of "Morning in the customs house." In order to avoid the imputation of cruelty and inequality to the Lord, we have explained the eternity of creation, and you cannot say that since the Lord is not bound to regard the Karmas, because He is independent, His creating a world full of misery, simply to punish the souls for their karmas, brings you back to the same difficulty, which you were trying to avoid. The Lord, being perfectly independent, certainly could have created a world all full of joy, and with complete disregard to the Karma of the Jīvas. But then His actions, instead of being regulated by any law, would have been lawless, and it would not be a creditable attribute of the Lord. Therefore, His creation of a world with perfect regard to the Karma of the Jīvas, and to time and substance, does not detract from His omnipotence. But it rather shows forth His great wisdom and compassion. Though He can act against all the laws of matter, spirit and Karma, yet He is not doing so, and His making the Jīvas act in accordance with the tendencies generated by their beginningless Karma, is a matter for His glory, and not an instance of His partiality.

---

### *Adhikaraṇa XI.—The grace of the Lord is not partiality.*

In the previous Sūtras, it has been shown that Brahman is neither partial nor cruel. Now is taken up the question, whether the Lord by showing special grace to his devotees, is not open to the objection of partiality. It is a fact, that the Lord shows "partiality" to His devotees, for He specially protects them and specifically fulfills their desires. The doubt therefore arises :—Is not this special protection of His devotees and this fulfilling of their want, a mark of partiality in the Lord? He will protect His devotee from the mouth of the lion, but He will allow ordinary men to be devoured by the beast. This objection the author answers by saying that it is not so.

SŪTRA II., 1. 36.

उपपद्यते चाऽप्युपलभ्यते च ॥ २ । १ । ३६ ॥

उपपद्यते Upa-padyate, it is proved to exist, it is reasonable that it should be so. च Cha, and. उपलभ्यते Upalabhyate, is found (in the scripture). च Cha, and.

36. Such partiality to His devotees is reasonable in the Lord, and is observed also in the scriptures.—172.

## COMMENTARY

The special grace shown by the Lord to His devotees is no doubt "partiality" but the Lord, the kind lover of His devotees, has such "partiality," and it is reasonable that it should be so. It is the natural, inherent power of the Lord, to show forth His grace on those who have Bhakti, and devotion for him. This special grace is not an arbitrary functioning of the Lord's will, but it also has regard to the factor of Bhakti or devotion in the Jīva to whom such special grace is shown. Nor does this conflict with the statement that the Lord is free from partiality. For this sort of "partiality" to His devotees, instead of being a fault in the Lord has been praised in the scriptures as adding to His glory. For the scripture says that this is the highest jewel among the perfections of the Lord, this grace on His devotees. If the Lord had not this quality of showing special grace, then all His other attributes, however great, would not have been attractive to mankind, and would not have evoked devotion and love towards Him. This shows the reasonableness of the existence of this "partiality" in the Lord.

Not only is this reasonable, but the revelation and the tradition also declare it:

नायमात्मा प्रवचनेन लभ्यो न मेधया न बहुना श्रुतेन ।

यमेवैव वृणुते तेन लभ्यस्तस्यैव आत्मा विवृणुते तं स्वाम् ॥ ३ ॥

This Self cannot be gained by dissertations (devoid of devotion), nor by mere keen intellect, nor by much hearing. It is gained only by him whom the Self chooses. To him this Self reveals His form.—(Mundaka Upaniṣad III. II. 3).

तेषां ज्ञानी नित्ययुक्त एकभक्तिर्विशिष्यते ।

प्रियो हि ज्ञानिनोऽत्यर्थमहं स च मम प्रियः ॥

Of these, the wise, constantly harmonised, worshipping the one, is the best ; I am supremely dear to the wise, and he is dear to me.—(Gītā, VII. 17.)

समोऽहं सर्वभूतेषु न मे द्वेषोऽस्ति न प्रियः ।

ये भजन्ति तु मां भक्त्या मयि ते तेषु चाप्यहम् ॥

The same am I to all beings ; there is none hateful to Me nor dear. They verily who worship Me with devotion, they are in Me, and I also in them—(Gītā, IX. 29)

अपि चेत्सुदुराचारो भजते मामनन्यभाक् ।

साधुरेव स मन्तव्यः सम्यक् व्यवसितो हि सः ॥

Even if the most sinful worship Me with undivided heart, he too must be accounted righteous, for he hath complete faith in Me—(Gītā, IX. 30)

क्षिप्रं भवति धर्मात्मा शश्वच्छान्तिं निगच्छति ।

कौन्तेय प्रतिजानीहि न मे भक्तः प्रणश्यति ॥

Speedily he becomsth virtuous (his sins being all destroyed) and desists from his evil ways, and attains to eternal peace. O Kaunteya, know thou for certain, that My devotee perisheth never. (Gītā, IX. 31.)

SŪTRA II., 1. 37.

सर्वधर्मोपपत्तेश्च ॥ २ । १ । ३७ ॥

सर्वं Sarva, all. धर्मं Dharma, attributes, qualities. उपपत्तेः Upapatteh, because of the reasonableness, because of being proved च Cha, and.

37. And because it is proved that all attributes are present in Brahman, however conflicting they may be with each other, therefore He is just to all, and “partial” to His devotees.—173.

#### COMMENTARY

It has been proved above, that in the supreme Lord, whose essential nature is inconceivable, there exist all attributes and qualities, whether harmonious in themselves or self-contradictory. It follows that along with His perfect justice and equality, He has this attribute of showing favour and “partiality” to His devotees. The wise, therefore, do not find any greater difficulty in reconciling the existence of these two heterogeneous attributes in Him, than in any other similar pair of attributes which are opposite to each other, and which still exist in him. For example, He is essentially all-knowledge, and yet *possessing* knowledge ; He is essentially formless and colourless, and yet possessing the most ravishing form that enchants the heart of His devotees ; similarly, though He is perfectly just and equal to all, yet he does show favour and special grace to His devotees. Not only the pair of opposites exist in him, but all harmonious attributes also are to be found in him ; such as He is forgiving, kind, compassionate and merciful to all. The Smṛti also says to the same effect (Kūrma Purāṇa) :

ऐश्वर्ययोगात् भगवान् विरुद्धार्थोऽभिधीयते ।

तथापि दोषाः परमे नैवाहार्या कथञ्चन ॥

The Lord is described as possessing self-contradictory and opposite attributes, because He has supreme power. Though He has these attributes, yet no evil or falsehood should ever be attributed to Him. On the contrary, all these conflicting attributes should be reconciled with each other so far as possible.

Thus it has been proved that the Lord, though equal to all, is yet the friend of His devotees.

Here ends the first Pâda, of the second Adhyâya of the Vedânta Sûtras and the Govinda Bhâṣya.

## SECOND ADHYĀYA

### SECOND PADA.

कृष्णदेवाय नमो यः सांख्याद् युक्तिरयटकान् ।

द्वित्वा युक्त्यसिना विश्वं कृष्णक्रीडास्थलं व्यधात् ॥

I salute Vyāsa, called also Kṛṣṇa, the island-born, who has removed with the sharp edge of the sword of his reason, the thorny bushes of the heterodox systems, like the Sāṅkhya and the rest, and who has thus made this world a plain ground for the Lord Kṛṣṇa to play upon.

*Note:* The Sāṅkhya author Kapila, as well as the Buddhists and Jainas, maintains that the world is without any God. Kapila says that the world originates from matter (Pradhāna). The Buddhists maintain that atoms are the cause of creation. The Jainas hold the same view. A class of Buddhists hold the view that the whole world is void, while all three are united in the view that there is no Creator of the world in the sense of a conscious and intelligent being. Philosophers like Kaṇāda (the Author of Vaiśeṣika Sūtras) and Patañjali appear to have admitted the existence of a God, but practically they are as atheistic in their tendencies as the Sāṅkhyas and the rest, because they do not admit the God as taught in the Vedas. Vyāsa, seeing this world full of the thorns of the false philosophies of Kapila and the rest, and finding it impossible that the Lord should tread this earth with His soft feet and be not pierced with the thorns, prepared the way for His coming, by cutting away these wild growths, with the sword of his sharp reasoning. The Lord Kṛṣṇa manifested Himself, after the world was prepared for His coming, by the Vedānta teaching of Vyāsa.

---

### *Adhikaraṇa I. Pradhāna is not the cause of the world.*

In the first Pāda of the second Adhyāya, the author has answered the objections raised by his opponents to the system propounded in his Sūtras. He had been on the defensive in the last chapter. Now he takes up an aggressive attitude, and attacks the position of his opponents and refutes their systems by proving the uncritical and unphilosophical nature of their doctrines. This was necessary in order to protect the weak-minded from going astray, and from abandoning the ancient highway of the Vedas, and from being attracted by the fallacious arguments of these plausible systems, and wandering in the pleasant labyrinths of these philosophers, and thus losing their way and getting destroyed. The author first takes up the Sāṅkhya system and refutes it.

The Sāṅkhya professor Kapila has made a collection of Sūtras in which he has enumerated various Tattvas or primeval principles or elements of creation. According to him, Prakṛti is the name given to the original

root of matter, and it is defined by him as the state of equilibrium of the three attributes of matter, namely, Sattva or rhythm, Rajas or activity, and Tamas or inertia. From this Prakṛti comes out Mahat, the Great Principle, from Mahat proceeds Ahaṅkāra, from Ahaṅkāra the five Tanmātras, the two sorts of senses (the cognitive senses and the senses of action) and the gross elements. Thus the twenty-four Tattvas are Prakṛtic, namely, (i) Mahat, (ii) Ahaṅkāra, (iii) to (vii) the five subtle elements called the Tanmātras, the Tanmātra of sound, of touch, of colour, of taste and of smell, (viii) to (xiii) the five Jñāna-indriyas and the five Karma-indriyas and Manas. The Jñāna-indriyas are the senses of hearing, touch, seeing, tasting and smelling; the Karma-indriyas are organ of speech, the hands, the feet, the generative and the excretive organs, (xiv) to (xix) the five elements (ether or Ākāśa, air or Vāyu, fire or Agni, water or Apas and earth or Pṛthivī). Added to these twenty-four is the class of Spirits or Puruṣas or Egos. This constitutes the twenty-five Tattvas or classes of the Sāṅkhyas. The three primeval qualities—Sattva, Rajas and Tamas when in equilibrium constitute Prakṛti. The essential nature of Sattva is joy, of Rajas, pain and of Tamas, delusion. As the world is the effect of these three qualities, we find in it joy, pain and inertness. The same object may possess all these three Guṇas, at one and the same time, with regard to different persons looking at it, and to the same person at different times. As a beautiful girl is an object of joy to the accepted lover, an object of pain to the rejected rival and an object of indifference to an ascetic; or as a wife, when in good humour, is a source of joy; when in anger, a source of pain, and when away from her husband, a source of delusion. Such is this world full of joy, pain and delusion.

It has been mentioned above, that the senses are of two sorts. Ten of them are external, one is an inner sensory called also Manas; thus altogether there are eleven senses. The Prakṛti is eternal and all-pervading. It is the root or the primeval cause, and no further cause of it need be enquired into, as we find in Sūtra I., 67 of the Sāṅkhyas.

मूले मूलाभावादमूलं मूलम् ।

Since the root has no root, the root (of all) is root-less, (that is to say, there is no other cause of Prakṛti, because there would be a *regressus in infinitum* if we were to suppose another cause, which by parity of reasoning, would require another cause, and so on without end.)

It is not limited and is the material cause of all. It is all-pervading, as asserted in Sūtra VI., 36 of the same.

सर्वत्र कार्यदर्शनाद् विमुक्तम् ।

She, Prakṛti, is all-pervading, because her products are seen everywhere.



Kārikā (3) says :

मूलप्रकृतिरविकृतिर्महदायाः प्रकृतिविकृतयः सप्त ।

षोडशवस्तु विकारो, न प्रकृतिर्न विकृतिः पुरुषः ॥

The Mūla Prakṛti or the Root-matter is not produced. The Great Principle (Mahat) along with Ahankāra and the five Tanmāstras make a group of seven, which are both producer and the produced. Sixteen are the produced only (the eleven senses and the five elements) ; and the Spirit or the Egos are neither the producer nor the produced.:

To sum up, out of the twenty-five Tattvas of the Sāṅkhyas, Mūla Prakṛti is never produced, though producer of everything else. Its opposite, the Puruṣa or the ego, is also eternal and never produced. But it produces also nothing, because it is changeless. Between these two poles of Spirit and Matter, lie the twenty-three other Tattvas, seven of which are both producers and produced, the remaining sixteen being produced only.

This Prakṛti, eternally producing everything, herself insentient, but the cause of the enjoyment and liberation of innumerable sentient beings, and though super-sensuous and incognisable by any perceptive means, is yet to be inferred by her effects. Though one, she has many heterogeneous attributes, and through her power of modification, she produces this wonderful world, beginning with Mahat and the rest ; and thus she is the operative and the material cause of the universe. Puruṣa, on the other hand, is attributeless, all-pervading consciousness, and separate for every separate body, is to be inferred from the existence of this organised life, because no organised life can exist, but for the sake of something else. As is to be found in Sūtra I., 66 :

संघातपराधेत्वात् पुरुषस्य ।

(The existence) of Soul (is inferred) from the fact that the combination (of the principles of Prakṛti into their various effects) is for the sake of another (than unintelligent Prakṛti or any of its similarly unintelligent products.) The application of the argument in this particular case is as follows :

- (i) The thing in question, *viz.*, Prakṛti, the 'Great one,' and the rest (of the aggregates of the unintelligent) has, as its fruit (or end), the (mundane) experiences and the (eventual) liberation of some other than itself ;
- (ii) Because it is a combination ; and
- (iii) (Every combination), as a couch or a seat, or the like, (is for another's use, not for its own, and its several component parts render no mutual service.)

Since Puruṣa is free from all action and modification, neither produced by anything, it follows that it is agentless and without enjoyment. Suffering and enjoyment, as well as agency, belong to Prakṛti and not Puruṣa. But the man mistakes the Puruṣa as agent or enjoyer through

illusion. When Prakṛti and Puruṣa come together, their very juxtaposition produces an interchange of attributes among each other; namely, consciousness appears in matter, and agency and enjoyment in spirit. This is Adhyāsa or super-imposition, or falsely attributing the qualities of the one to the other. Nature is really unconscious, but the vicinity of Spirit makes it appear as if conscious. On the other hand, the Spirit is neither the agent nor the enjoyer, but the vicinity of matter causes it to look as if it was so. From this want of discrimination, arises all the suffering of the soul, while liberation consists in realising this difference.

The person who has become indifferent to Prakṛti has attained Mokṣa. Such, in short, is the theory of the Sāṅkhyas. In this system the means of the right knowledge (Pramāṇa) are three, namely: sensuous perception, inference and testimony, as is to be found in Sūtra I., 88:

त्रिविधं प्रमाणं । तत्सिद्धौ सर्वसिद्धेर्नाधिक्यसिद्धिः ॥

Proof is of three kinds: there is no establishment of more, because if these be established then all (that is true) can be established by one or other of these three proofs, *viz.*, 'sense' (Pratyakṣa), 'the recognition of signs' (Anumāna) and 'testimony' (Śabda), to the exclusion of 'comparison' which is reckoned in the Nyāya as a specially distinct source of knowledge, etc.

As regards Pratyakṣa or sensuous perception and testimony we have not much difference with the Sāṅkhyas, because these two things deal with accomplished objects. Our difference with them is as regards certain inferences which they have drawn. By a certain mode of reasoning, they have deduced the conclusion that Pradhāna is the cause of the universe; it is this reasoning which is fallacious. If we can refute their arguments about Pradhāna being the cause of the universe, we practically refute their whole philosophy, because this is the central point of their system. Their argument regarding this is contained in three Sūtras, namely, I., 130, 131 and 132.

परिणामात् ।

130—Because of their measure, (which is a limited one, Mind and the rest are products; whereas the only two that are uncaused, *viz.*, Prakṛti and Soul are unlimited).

समन्वयात् ॥

131—Because they conform (to Pradhāna). Mind and the rest are products, "because they will (follow) and correspond with Pradhāna, *i.e.*, because the qualities of Pradhāna are seen in all things:" and it is a maxim that that which is the effect is derived from the cause, and implies the cause.

शक्तिशैलि ॥

132—And, finally, because it is through the power (of the cause alone, that the product can do aught, as a chain restrains an elephant only by the force of the iron that it is made of.)

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt: Is Pradhāna both the operative and the material cause of the universe, or not?

The Pūrvapakṣin says:—Pradhāna is the operative as well as the material cause of the universe, because the world consists of three attributes of Sattva, Rajas and Tamas, and so we infer that the primal cause also must have in it these three attributes. For nothing can be in the effect which is not in the cause. As we see in the case of jars, etc., that their material cause is clay which belongs to the same category as the jar. Moreover, inert objects can become agents, for we use active verbs in connection with such objects. Such as “the tree brings forth fruits,” “the water is moving.” Therefore, Pradhāna alone is the material cause of the universe and creator of it as well.

*Siddhānta:* To this view the author replies by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 1.

रचनानुपपत्तेश्च नानुमानम् ॥ २ । २ । १ ॥

रचना Rachanā, construction. अनुपपत्तेः Anupapatteḥ, on account of the impossibility. च Cha, and. न Na, not. नानुमानम् Ānumānam, the Inferred One, namely, Pradhāna whose existence we infer from the existence of the world.

1. The Inferred One (Ānumāna) is not the cause of the world, : because it is impossible for her to have created the universe (since she is unintelligent).—174.

#### COMMENTARY

Pradhāna is called ‘Ānumānam’ or the Inferred One, because her existence is purely hypothetical. (Just as the ether of the modern scientists is an entity postulated merely to explain certain phenomena, such as, those of light, magnetism, etc., so Pradhāna is postulated by the Sāṅkhyas in order to explain the cause of the universe). This hypothetical Pradhāna is neither the material nor the operative cause of the world. The world shows wonderful construction and design, and it is impossible for unintelligent matter, to have produced this wonderful universe, without the directive action of an intelligent agent. No one has ever seen a beautiful palace constructed by the fortuitous coming together of bricks, mortar, etc., without the active co-operation of intelligent agents, like the architects, masons, and the rest. The word ‘and’ in the Sūtra is employed in order to indicate by implication, that the argument based upon Anvaya (undistributed middle) has no proving force.

*Note* : The argument based upon Anvaya is a sort of fallacy. For example, to infer that all cows must be white, because whiteness is present (Anvaya) in some cows. Whiteness is merely an accidental attribute. Whiteness is not the cause of the class-characteristic of cows.

Physical objects like flowers, beautiful jars, etc., no doubt, have the presence in them of the quality of producing pleasure. But the feeling of pleasure is altogether an internal feeling, and we cannot say that flowers and pots have the nature of pleasure in them, though they excite pleasure in man. Pleasure is altogether an attribute of the soul and not of matter. So Matter cannot be said to have the quality of joy, or delusion, etc.

*Note* : For a fuller discussion of this point see Velīnta Sūtra, Rāmānuja, S. B. E., Vol. XLVIII, p. 491.

#### SŪTRA II., 2. 2.

प्रवृत्तेश्च ॥ २ । २ । २ ॥

प्रवृत्तेः Pravṛtṭeḥ, because of the activity. च Cha, and. It has the force of "only" here.

2. And because the inert matter becomes active, only when there is the directive action of intelligence in it.—175.

#### COMMENTARY

The phrase "of the inert matter, when an intelligent entity is a directing energy" must be supplied in the Sūtra to complete the sense. The activity, properly speaking, ought therefore to be attributed to the directive intelligence, rather than to the inert matter. That which sets matter into motion is the real agent. We do not say that the chariot moves of itself, but that the charioteer is the real mover of the carriage by directing the movements of the horses. Therefore, the phrases like the "tree brings forth fruits" really mean that the Inner Guide, the Supreme Lord, directs the activity of the tree, and makes it bring forth the fruits. The fruit, therefore, is really produced by the Lord, through the instrumentality of the tree. This we learn from the scripture, describing the Inner Ruler (see Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II., 7., 3 to 23). This will become clearer further on.

The force of *and* in the Sūtra is that of *only*. "I do" can be asserted only by an intelligent Self. Every activity is seen as the result of an intelligent agent. Inert matter, therefore, has no agency. To put it in other words, matter or Pradhāna has no self-initiated activity of its own.

If you say that it is possible for the world to have been created by the mere coming together of Spirit and Matter, or Puruṣa and Prakṛti, and by the mutual superimposition of the attributes of the one on those of the other, then we ask the following question : What is the cause of this superimposition which takes place by the mere coming together of Spirit and Matter ? Does it inhere as a substance in them or is it a modification of Spirit and Matter ? It cannot be the first, for in that case the liberated souls would also have this superimposition, for it is one of the innate qualities of Spirit. Nor can it be the latter, for if superimposition be the modification of Prakṛti, then it itself being an effect, cannot be the cause of its own self. The question therefore remains, What is the cause of this *Adhyāsa* or superimposition ? Nor can it be a modification of Spirit, for according to your system, Spirit is changeless

An objector says : The milk by its own inherent quality is changed into curd ; or the water falling from the clouds though having one taste becomes bitter, sweet, acid, etc., according to the fruit in which it enters, whether it be that of a mango or of a toddy or of Nim, etc. Similarly, Pradhāna also, though homogeneous like water, becomes modified into different kinds, according as it comes in contact with the different Karmas of the Jivas. The differences in the bodies and environments, etc., of souls are the effects of the past Karmas of these beings. To this the author replies by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 3.

पयोऽम्बुवचेतवपि ॥ २ । २ । ३ ॥

पयस् Payas, milk. अम्बु Ambu, water. वच् Vat, like चेत Chet, if. तत्र Tatra, there. अपि Api, also.

3. If it be said that Pradhāna of herself modifies into her various products, like milk or water, without the guidance of any intelligence we reply, there also the intelligence guides the change.—176.

#### COMMENTARY

Even in the case of the change of pure water into different saps and juices, or the change of pure milk into curd, it is the directive action of intelligence that produces the change. And this we infer from the example of chariot, etc. We may not see the intelligent driver of the chariot, but we infer his existence from the motion of the car. Similarly, though we may not see the intelligence working in the tree or the milk,

we can infer its existence from these changes. Nor is this a question of inference only, but we have the sacred authority of the scripture as well. (See the Antaryāmin Brāhmaṇa of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad).

SŪTRA., II., 2. 4.

व्यतिरेकानवस्थितेश्चानपेक्षत्वात् ॥ २ । २ । ४ ॥

व्यतिरेक Vyatireka, in the absence of anything else, different. अनवस्थितेः Anavasthiteḥ, because of the non-existence, because of the non-necessity. च Cha, and, also. अनपेक्षत्वात् Anapekṣatvāt, because of the independence.

4. As before creation there existed no other cause except Pradhāna, so there would be no necessity of any other cause than the Pradhāna herself to produce her changes.—177.

#### COMMENTARY

The force of 'Cha' in the Sūtra is that of *also*. There is this additional reason also to be adduced against the Sāṅkhya theory. According to it Pradhāna independently can produce the whole creation. Before the beginning of creation, there existed no other cause than Pradhāna. Nor was there any necessity for the existence of any other cause, for all the changes which Pradhāna undergoes are self-initiated. There is no mover or stopper of the motion of Pradhāna except the Pradhāna herself. This theory of the Sāṅkhyas is, however, to be given up because the true theory is that it is the presence of Puruṣa that starts the changes in Pradhāna. Thus even according to Sāṅkhya theory Pradhāna herself is not the sole creator. But in some mysterious way the proximity of Puruṣa initiates the change. This goes against the theory that the pure inert matter or Pradhāna is this producer of change. The Sāṅkhyas, therefore, cannot consistently say that Pradhāna of herself produces all changes without any extraneous help. The theory of proximity is open also to objection. If the proximity causes the change, the Puruṣa is always in proximity with Prakṛti, and in the state of Pralaya also this proximity cannot be broken. The result would be that creation would start even during Pralaya. The Sāṅkhya may say the Karmas of the Jīvas being dormant in Pralaya, no creation can start then. To this we reply, what is there to prevent the awakening of Karmas in Pralaya? Thus the theory of the Sāṅkhyas is self-contradictory.

Says the Sāṅkhya philosopher : "We see that grass, creepers, leaves, etc., transform themselves, through their inherent nature, into milk, without the help of any other cause. Similarly, Pradhāna also transforms

herself into Mahat, etc., without the guidance of an intelligent principle." To this the author replies by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 5.

अन्यत्राऽभावाच्च न तृणादिवत् ॥ २ । २ । ५ ॥

अन्यत्र Anyatra, elsewhere, namely, elsewhere than in cows. अभावात् Abhāvāt, because of the absence. च Cha, and, only. न Na, not. तृणादिवत् Tṛṇādivat, like grass, etc.

5. It is not like the transformation of grass, etc., (into milk, when eaten by a cow), because there is absence of such transformation in another place (namely, when eaten by a bull).—178.

COMMENTARY

The word 'Cha,' and, has the force of only. This argument of the Sāṅkhyas is not sound. Because it is not natural for the grass to always transform itself into milk when eaten by an animal. It is only when a female animal eats it that it is so transformed. When eaten by a male animal no such change is visible. If it was natural for the grass to always change itself into milk, irrespective of the locality or the person absorbing it, then we shall see grass changing into milk even when lying at a quadrangle of a street. But we do not see any such change. Therefore, it is not the natural quality of the grass to change itself into milk, but it is only when it comes in relation with a particular animal, that it is so changed. And here also it is the will of the Supreme Lord that brings about the change, not because an animal has eaten it.

It has been proved that Pradhāna being inert has no self-initiated activity of her own. But even if we admit for argument's sake, that she has such an activity, it will not help much the cause of the Sāṅkhyas. The author shows this in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 6

अभ्युपगमेऽप्यर्थाभावः ॥ २ । २ । ६ ॥

अभ्युपगमेऽपि Abhyupagamepi, even if it be accepted. अर्थे Artha, purpose. अभावात् Abhāvāt, because of the absence.

6. Even if it be accepted that Pradhāna has self-initiated activity yet it is a useless theory, because it serves no purpose.—179.

## COMMENTARY

The word "not" is understood in this and the subsequent three Sūtras. The theory of the Sāṅkhyas is that Pradhāna is moved to activity in order to cause experience and liberation of the Jīva. Her object is that the Jīva after enjoying her, and finding her full of evil, should become indifferent to her, and thus attain liberation, which consists in such indifference. The activity of Pradhāna is purely altruistic, with the object of giving experience and joy to the soul. She has no purpose of her own to be served by her activity. In the Sāṅkhya Sūtra, III, 58, it is thus stated :

प्रधानस्यः परार्थं स्वतोऽप्यभोक्तृत्वादुद्वेष्टकुम्भवहनवत् ॥

Pradhāna creates for the sake of another, and though it be spontaneous—for she is not the enjoyer—just like a camel that carries the saffron for the sake of his master and not for himself. Sāṅkhyas believe that the Jīva is actionless, though the experiencer. They say that the Jīva can be a non-agent and yet experience the fruit of activity, just like a person who may not cook food himself, yet all the same eat it when cooked by another.

For such an activity of Prakṛti is not a reasonable proposition to be accepted. It serves no purpose, even if such an activity be accepted. For, what is the aim of such activity? It is either to produce experience in the Jīva, by showing him the various sides of Prakṛti, or to produce liberation of the Puruṣa, by making him indifferent to her charms. The first object, namely, to produce experience in the Jīva, cannot be the result of any activity of Prakṛti. For, it is admitted that before there was any such activity in Prakṛti, the Puruṣa existed as a mere intelligence, actionless, changeless, self-satisfied. Why should such a Puruṣa go out of his bliss of isolation, to see the enchanting play of Prakṛti? Merely because the Prakṛti is active, is no reason for holding that Puruṣa must undergo the change in the shape of looking at her. It, therefore, follows that the activity of Prakṛti cannot be the cause of the experience of the Puruṣa. Nor can such activity be the cause of liberation of the Puruṣa, because before such activity, the Puruṣa was already in a state of liberation. Why should the Prakṛti make herself active in order to produce the liberation of the Puruṣa, when it was already liberated?

If it be said that wherever the Prakṛti is active it is bound to produce some change in the consciousness of Puruṣa, for it is in proximity with Prakṛti, and thus the mere activity of Prakṛti is the cause of experience of the Puruṣa, then we say that your proposition is rather too large. Merely because a soul is in proximity with matter, is no reason why it should be affected by the activity of such matter; for then even



the Mukta souls would also be affected by such activity, and fall into bondage again, since matter is all-prevading, and the proximity of spirit and matter is eternal and impossible of removal.

The Sāṅkhyas say that if the Prakṛti is not active by her own inherent power, then we have another theory to propound. The correlation between spirit and matter, is like that of a blind and a lame man. One has no power of motion, the other has no power of vision. The spirit is lame and is void of all power of motion. Prakṛti is blind, though possessing all power to move. Each by himself is incapable of achieving any result. But when the lame (spirit) comes in contact with the blind (but moving (matter), it makes this blind matter become active and directs all her movements. Or, to take another illustration, as a magnet itself without motion, can set in motion the iron in its proximity, so the spirit, itself motionless and changeless, sets in motion Prakṛti, when both come in contact with each other. Thus this reflection of spirit in matter, makes the matter appear intelligent, and sets in motion her creative activity. To this theory of the Sāṅkhyas, the author replies by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II, 2. 7.

पुरुषाश्मवदिति चेत् तथापि ॥ २ । २ । ७ ॥

पुरुष Puruṣa, man. अश्म Aśma, stone, magnetic stone. वद् Vat, like. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. तथापि Tathāpi, so also.

7. If it be said that Prakṛti creates like the lame man directing the blind, or like the magnet moving the iron, even then the theory is open to objection—180.

#### COMMENTARY

The insentient matter has no power of self-initiated activity, and the instances of the lame man guiding the blind, or the magnet moving the iron, do not remove the difficulty. The inability of the Pradhāna to act independently remains the same. The lame man, though incapable of walking, yet possesses the power of seeing the road and of guiding another, etc. Similarly, a blind man, though incapable of seeing, has the capacity of understanding those instructions and acting upon them. In the case of the magnet and the iron there is the bringing of the magnet in the proximity of the iron. But the soul is ever actionless, without any attributes, and incapable of any such change. If it be said that the soul undergoes no change, but its mere proximity produces the change in Prakṛti, then the soul being *always* near to the Pradhāna, it would

follow that creation also would be eternal, and there would never be any emancipation for the soul. Moreover, the lame and the blind are both conscious entities, and the iron and the magnet are both insentient matter, and consequently the instances given are not to the point.

The Sāṅkhyas hold that the creation depends upon the superiority and inferiority of the Guṇas, and the world results from a certain relation between principal and subordinate entities, as a consequence of such difference of Guṇas. This view is refuted by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II, 2. 8.

अङ्गित्वानुपपत्तेश्च ॥ २ । २ । ८ ॥

अङ्गित्वं Angitva, the relation of being the principal अनुपपत्तः Anupapattēh, on account of the impossibility and unreasonableness. च Cha, and.

8. It is impossible that any one of the Guṇas may be the principal in the state of Pralaya and hence the world would not originate.—181.

COMMENTARY

Pradhāna has been defined to be the equilibrium of the three Guṇas, Sattva, Rajas and Tamas. In the state of Pradhāna, no Guṇa is superior or inferior to the other. Every one of them is equal to the other, and consequently the relation of subordinate and principal could not exist then. Nor can you say that Īśvara or Kāla (Lord or Time) brings about the disturbance in the equilibrium, and this makes some Guṇas superior to the other, because you Sāṅkhyas do not admit the existence of the Lord, nor do you hold Time to have any separate existence of its own. Thus Kapila, in Sūtras I. 92 and I. 93, asserts that the existence of God cannot be proved, and the world is not created by any intelligent being :

ईश्वरासिद्धेः ॥ १ । ९२ ॥

It is not proved that there is a God. I. 92.

युक्तबद्धयोरन्यतराभावान् न तत् सिद्धिः ।

उभयथाऽप्यसत्कृत्वम् ॥ १ । ९३ ॥

And further it is not proved that He exists, because whoever exists, must be either free or bound, and of free and bound. He can be neither the one nor the other. Because either way He would be inefficient. Since, if He were free, He would have no desires which as compulsory motives would instigate Him to create, and if He were bound, He would be under delusion. He must be on either alternative unequal to the creation, etc., of this world.—I., 93.

In Sūtra II. 12, the Sāṅkhya denies the separate existence of Time.

दिक्कालावकाशादिभ्यः ॥

Space and time arise from the other.

Nor can it be said that the soul is the creator, because according to your theory, the very nature of the soul is perfect indifference to every thing. Sūtra I, 163. The Puruṣas, therefore, being perfect Udāsins, have no interest to bring about the breaking of the equipoise of the Prakṛti and making one Guṇa superior to the other. Hence the creation is not caused by the relative superiority and inferiority of the Guṇas. Moreover, admitting that in every successive creation and in Pralaya, the Guṇas will always be unequal in their force, but in the first creation there will be nothing to bring about this inequality. In other words, admitting, for argument's sake, that there is inequality among Guṇas in the ordinary state of creation and may have come about without any reason, it would follow that in Pralaya also the inequality will be brought about without any reason, and then Pralaya would be no Pralaya. For creation would start up then also. And if inequality can be brought about without any cause, it may also follow that in the beginning it may be not also brought about without any cause.

But, says the Sāṅkhya, we must infer that the Guṇas are of various nature and of wonderful attributes, because we see their effect in this world and therefore the objections raised by you do not apply. To this the author replies by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 9

अन्यथाऽनुमितौ च ज्ञशक्तियोगात् ॥ २ । २ । ९ ॥

अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise. अनुमितौ Anumitau, in case of inference. च Cha. and. ज्ञ Jñā, intelligence. शक्ति Śakti, power, वियोगात् Viyogāt, because of being destitute of.

9. Even if it be inferred otherwise, yet the Pradhāna cannot create, because it does not possess the power of being a conscious entity.—182.

COMMENTARY

Even if it be admitted as an inference that the Guṇas must have different attributes and mysterious powers, still it does not answer the difficulty raised by us. Pradhāna being supposed to be insentient, has not the power of self-consciousness. Being thus destitute of it, it has not the idea of any plan or design. It cannot say, as an intelligent entity would say, "Let me create the world in such and such a way." Creation never proceeds from dead matter, not overshadowed by intelligence. (No more than a house can be built by mere bricks and mortar without the supervision and active agency of the architect and masons.) Without the

directive action of intelligence, the Guṇas, however wonderful in their powers and attributes, cannot of themselves create the universe.

The author concludes this portion by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 10.

विप्रतिषेधाच्चासमञ्जसम् ॥ २ । २ । १० ॥

विप्रतिषेधात् Vipratishedhāt, because of contradiction. च Cha, and. असमञ्जसम् Asamañjasam, objectionable, not harmonious : untenable.

10. Because (the theory of the Sāṅkhya is full) of internal contradictions, hence (it not being a consistent theory) is untenable.—183.

#### COMMENTARY

There are internal contradictions in this philosophy propounded by Kapila, hence it is inconsistent and untenable and should be rejected by those who desire the highest good. For example, it holds that Prakṛti is active for the sake of Puruṣa alone, who is the experiencer, the seer, the supervising agent. It holds the soul to be something different from all bodies and vehicles. Thus in I., 139, it declares :

शरीरादित्यतिरिक्तः पुमान् ॥ १ । १३९ ॥

Soul is something else than the body, etc.—I., 139.

संहतपरार्थत्वात् ॥ १ । १४० ॥

Nature is a compound and a combination because that which is combined is for the sake of the other.—I., 140.

Thus in these two Sūtras, the Spirit and Matter are contrasted. The Spirit is single, indivisible and non-material, the Matter is composite and divisible, and exists only for the sake of the soul. But later on, this very soul is defined to be as actionless, changeless, attributeless, devoid of all agency, fruition and sentiency. It is said to be a pure isolation. In one place it says that Jadaḥ or matter is non-luminous and luminosity belongs to the soul. But in the next Sūtra it contradicts itself when it says: "The soul has not intelligence for its attribute." Thus intelligence belongs neither to the soul nor to the matter.

Note: We give below the original Sāṅkhya Sūtras to understand this passage properly :

त्रिगुणादिविपर्ययात् ॥ १ । १४१ ॥

: And Soul is something else than the body, etc., because there is (in Soul) the reverse of the three Qualities etc., (because they are not seen in it.)—I., 141.

अधिज्ञानाच्चेति ॥ १ । १४२ ॥

And Soul is not material because of its superintendence over Nature. (For a Superintendent is an intelligent being, and Nature is unintelligent).—I., 142.

भोक्तृभावात् ॥ १ । १४३ ॥

And Soul is not material because of its being the experienter.—I., 143.

केवल्यार्थं प्रकृतेः ॥ १ । १४४ ॥

It is for Soul and not for Nature, because the exertions are with a view to isolation from all qualities, a condition to which Soul is competent, but Nature not.—I., 144.

जडप्रकाशयोगात् प्रकाशः ॥ १ । १४५ ॥

Since light does not pertain to the unintelligent, light, which must pertain to something or other, is the essence of the Soul which, self-manifesting, manifests whatever else is manifest.—I., 145.

निगुणत्वात् न चिद्धर्मा ॥ १ । १४६ ॥

It (Soul) has not Intelligence as its attribute, because it is without quality.—I., 146.

The Sāṅkhyas are further inconsistent inasmuch as that in one place they say that it is Soul that undergoes bondage, owing to its want of discrimination, and that it attains release when it discriminates between the Guṇas and itself, while at another place it says that bondage and release belong to the Guṇas and not to the Soul, which is eternally free. As in Sūtras III., 71 and 72.

नैकान्ततो बन्धमोक्षौ पुरुषस्यविवेकादृते । प्रकृतेराजस्यार्त्तं मसङ्गत्वात् पशुवत् ॥ ७१ ॥

Bondage and Liberation do not belong actually to Soul, and would not even appear to be but for non-discrimination. But in reality, the aforesaid Bondage and Liberation belong to Nature alone.—71.

It really belongs to Nature, through consociation,—like a beast *i.e.*, through her being hampered by the habits, etc., which are the cause of pain;—just as a beast, through its being hampered by a rope experiences Bondage and Liberation.—72.

Thus there are many internal contradictions in this system of the Sāṅkhyas and they can be easily found out by any one who studies them carefully.

### *Adhikaraṇa II.—The refutation of the atomic system.*

The author now refutes the theory of the Vaiśeṣikas. They hold the opinion that there are four sorts of atoms, namely, earthy (physical), watery (astral), fiery (mental) and aerial (Buddhic). These atoms are partless, but possess the quality of colour, touch, taste and smell, and are spherical in form. At the time of Pralaya, they exist in a latent state, without originating any effect, but at the time of creation, they originate this world by combining together in forming binary and ternary compounds: owing to their being in contact with the Souls, having *Adṛṣṭa* in them. In this theory, two atoms are brought into activity by the

action of Adṛṣṭa of the soul residing in them. The souls in the atoms set them in motion, and thus there takes place the union of two atoms, and a binary is formed which is "small." Thus three causes operate to produce a binary, namely, two atoms (Samavāyi cause), their union (Asamavāyi cause), and the Adṛṣṭa of the souls, which brings about the union and which thus constitutes the operative cause (Nimitta cause), and so on. Similarly, from three binary molecules, set in motion by the Adṛṣṭa of the souls within them, there is produced the "big" called the ternary. Two atoms cannot produce a ternary, for a thing requires a bigger cause and larger number of atoms. A bigger effect must have a larger cause. Similarly, four ternaries give rise to a quaternary, and so on bigger and bigger things are produced. Thus by the conglomeration of the molecules are produced the big (visible) earth, the big waters, the big fire, the big air. The colour, taste, scent, etc., seen in the effect, are dependent on the particular colour, etc., inherent in the ultimate atoms which are its Samavāyi cause. The qualities latent in the cause produce the qualities in the effects which are manifest. Thus the world comes into existence. When the Lord wishes to destroy the world, He withdraws from the binaries, the active force of affinity which had brought about the union of two atoms, when this affinity is destroyed the two atoms fall asunder, and thus the binary ceases to exist. The binary being thus destroyed, the ternary and others are also destroyed, and thus the earth, etc., cease to exist. Thus when the thread is destroyed the cloth is destroyed. The qualities of colour, etc., cease also with the cessation of their substrate, the binaries, etc. This is the method of the dissolution of a world. The atoms in this system are called Parimaṇḍala or spherical. The size of an "ultimate atom" (Parimaṇḍala) is called Pārimaṇḍalyam. A binary is called in this system Aṇu or "atom," while the name Paramāṇu is given to the "ultimate atoms." (The size of a binary is called short or small, Hrasva, or atomic, while the size of the ternary is called big or Mahat (or rather that which has a *perceptible magnitude*.)

*Note :* The word Parimaṇḍala is the name of the "ultra atom" in this system ; while the Aṇu of other systems corresponds with the Dvyaṇu or binary of this. Similarly, the words Hrasva or short and Mahat or big are differently used here. Every binary is a Hrasva, everything above the binary is Mahat.

*Doubt :* Here arises the doubt : Is it a consistent theory to hold that the world is produced by the atoms (without the guidance of the Lord) ?

*Purvapakṣa :* The Adṛṣṭas of the souls bring about the union of atoms by setting in motion the two atoms. The atoms being thus set in motion, come into union, and thus a binary is produced ; and so on. There is no inconsistency in this view, and it is the right view.

*Siddhānta* : The creation is not thus brought about. The next Sūtra shows this.

SŪTRA II., 2. 11.

महद् दीर्घवद् वा ह्रस्वपरिमण्डलाभ्याम् ॥ २ । २ । ११ ॥

महद् Mahat, big, that which has *magnitude*. दीर्घ Dirgha, the long, that which has extension and is perceptible to the senses. वद् Vat, like. Vâ, or; it has the force of "and" here. ह्रस्व Hrasva, short, the binary, the sub-atomic molecule परिमण्डलाभ्याम् Parimaṇḍalābhāym, from the atomic.

*Note* : May not these four words be the names of the four kinds of ethers known to the Theosophists ? Parimaṇḍala the most subtle, literally the all-spherical, would correspond with the atomic plane. The Hrasva would be the sub-atomic. Mahat would be the super-etheric, and the Dirgha would be the etheric.

11. And as the origination of the big (magnitude) and long (extension) from the short (dimensionless) and the atomic (sizeless) is untenable, so is the rest of the Vaisesika system—184.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "or" has the force of "and" here. The word "untenable" is to be supplied from the last Sūtra to complete the sense. The theory of the Vaiśeṣikas is untenable in its entirety, as their view of the origination of the ternary from the binary, and the atomic, without the aid of the Lord is untenable. The other portions of this system, such as their account of the origin of earth, is equally untenable, along with their theory of the sizeless atoms and dimensionless sub-atoms giving rise to the ternary having magnitude and dimension. There are inherent self-contradictions in this theory. It holds that the atoms are without magnitude, but still they give rise to ternaries and others, which have magnitude. This is unreasonable, for no amount of adding up of atoms without magnitude, will give birth to a molecule with magnitude. A piece of cloth is produced by the threads which themselves have parts, and six sides by which they can be joined with each other. If the threads were partless, they could not have given rise to a piece of cloth. Therefore, it must be admitted that the atom has also a magnitude and occupies space. Otherwise the union of thousands of atoms would not give rise to anything more than an atom, and would not differ in extension from a single atom. Consequently there would not arise other kinds of extensions known as Mahat, Dirgha, etc. It is merely a mental idea that a product

having a larger bulk must have a larger number of constituent atoms. But even if it be admitted, then the atoms themselves must be admitted to have parts, and those parts will have further parts, and thus there will be *regressus in infinitum*. Moreover, a mustard seed will be similar to a mountain, for both have an infinity of parts. Therefore, to say that the ternary which is big and long, is produced by the binary, which in its turn is produced by the atom, is to assert something which is void of sense.

This Sūtra should not be explained, as some have done it, as refuting an objection raised to the Vedānta theory of Brahman being the general cause ; for this chapter deals in refuting the theories of the opponents and not in supporting one's own theory.

The Vaiśeṣika system is open to further objection, as shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 12.

उभयथापि न कर्मास्तदभावः ॥ २ । २ । १२ ॥

उभयथापि Ubhayathâpi, in both ways, on both assumptions also. न Na, not. कर्म Karma, action, motion. अतः Ataḥ, therefore. तदभावः Tat-abhâvaḥ, the absence of that.

12. On both assumptions (whether the Adṛṣṭa is in the atom or in the soul) there is no motion, and consequently there is absence of the origination of the world.—185.

#### COMMENTARY

The argumentative philosophers (the Vaiśeṣikas) hold that the world is produced by the successive formation of compounds like binary, ternary, etc., owing to the union of atoms. Now arises the question : How is this primal motion brought about ? Is it caused by the Adṛṣṭa residing in the atoms or caused by the Adṛṣṭa residing in the souls ? It cannot be the first ; for the Adṛṣṭa, which itself is the resultant of the good and bad deeds of the soul, cannot possibly reside in atoms. It must inhere in the soul. Nor can it be caused by the Adṛṣṭa residing in the soul ; for the Adṛṣṭa residing in the soul cannot produce motion in the atom. Thus on both these views the motion of the atom is not explained. A third alternative may here be set up by the Vaiśeṣikas, namely, that the motion originates in the atoms, as soon as they come in the proximity of the souls charged with any definite Adṛṣṭa. But this also is not a reasonable view. For there can be no proximity or contact between the souls which are partless, and the atoms which also are partless, for there can be no contact between two objects, both of which have no parts by which they



can come in contact. Thus in both these ways Adrṣṭa cannot be the cause of the first motion given to the atoms. We have already proved before that an insentient object cannot move another, because of its inertness, until it is set in motion by a sentient being. We have seen that all motion of objects is initiated, guided and directed by intelligence and intelligent beings. Nor can the soul be the cause of the primal motion of the atoms at the beginning of a creative period. Because in Pralaya, according to the Vaiśeṣikas, the soul itself lies dormant *without possessing any intelligence*, and hence is in no way superior to the atom. Nor can it be said that the primal motion of the atom is caused by the will of the Lord in conformity with the Adrṣṭa of the Jīvas, because His will is eternal and so the creation ought to be eternal. During the Pralaya—say the Vaiśeṣikas—there is no creation because the Adrṣṭas of the Jīvas do not mature and are not awakened, and consequently the will of the Lord is not active. The reply to this is that this view is also wrong, because all the materials being present, the creation ought to take place, irrespective of the maturity. Consequently, there is no definite cause found, which can explain the primal motion of the atoms, for neither the Adrṣṭa residing in the Jīvas or in atoms, nor the will of the Lord is a determined cause. The atoms being thus without any motion, in the beginning of the creation, they cannot come together and form an aggregate. Since they cannot come together to form the aggregates, the molecules, binary, etc., cannot be produced and consequently there can be no creation. On a parity of reasoning, there can be no Pralaya also.

*Note :* The refutation of the Vaiśeṣika system is only with regard to their explanation of the first motion of the atoms. The Vedānta does not deny the existence of the atoms, but it denies the Vaiśeṣika doctrine of the Karmas of the souls being the cause of the primal motion of the atoms. The Vedānta holds that creation depends entirely on the will of the Lord, and that will is not influenced by the Karmas of the soul. If the Adrṣṭas be the cause of the motion, then there is nothing whatever to prove that these Adrṣṭas, which spring from the diverse actions of souls, performed during many lives, should remain in a condition of latency without maturity, for the full period of the Pralaya. If the Adrṣṭas had any power of their own, irrespective of the will of the Lord, why should they remain dormant, for this long period of time? The atomic theory, therefore, is bound to fall back upon the Vedānta doctrine, that it is the will of the Lord that keeps the Adrṣṭas immature.

SŪTRA II., 2. 13.

समवायाभ्युपगमाच्च साम्यादन्वस्थिते ॥ २ । २ । १३ ॥

समवाय Samavāya, concomitant cause. This is a technical term of the Vaiśeṣika philosophy. अभ्युपगमाच्च Abhyupagamācch, because of the acceptance, because of the acknowledgment. च Cha, and. साम्याच्च Sāmyācch, from equality,

because of equality, by parity. अनवस्थितेः Anavasthiteh, because of the non-finality, because there results a *regressus in infinitum*.

13. The Vaiśeṣika doctrine is untenable on account of the acceptance by it of the (fictitious) relation called Samavāya, from which results by parity of reasoning an infinite regress.—186.

## COMMENTARY

The Vaiśeṣikas admit the relation called Samavāya, and hence their doctrine is untenable. Why is it so? Because the Samavāya relation is equal to any other relation, and hence it requires another Samavāya to explain it, and that Samavāya would require another Samavāya to explain it. The atoms come together to form a binary molecule through the relationship called Samavāya. If there was no Samavāya relationship, there would be no conjunction of atoms. But this Samavāya relationship is a mere assumption, for like every other relationship, it is equally inexplicable. If two atoms come together through Samavāya relationship, it would require another Samavāya to bring about this relationship. Thus there would be an infinite regress. The Samavāya produces the notion of quality, action and general characteristics. Thus it is a mere relation like any other relation, and if it were not so it would prove too much. As a mere relation we have already said that it requires another Samavāya to explain it, and is open to the objection of Anavasthā. If it be said that the relationship is to be assumed in order to account for the inseparable connection between two things, and that this relation is the essential nature of the thing, then it must be assumed everywhere. It cannot be said that the nature of Samavāya is inseparable connection, for that also is open to the same objection. For then every quality would be found everywhere, in other words, the holders of this doctrine of Samavāya will have to admit that the quality of smell would be found in the air, the quality of sound in the earth, the quality of form in the Âtman and the quality of intelligence in light. In other words, every quality would be found everywhere, because Samavāya being a unity it would be present everywhere. But this is not a fact, therefore, Samavāya relationship is an incongruous assumption.

Note: For the explanation of the word Samavāya, see Vaiśeṣika Sūtra, S. B. H., Vol. VI., page 243 (Vaiśeṣika Philosophy, Second edition).

SŪTRA II. 2. 14.

नित्यमेव च भावात् ॥ २ । २ । १४ ॥

नित्यम् Nityam, eternal. एव Eva, even च Cha, and. भावात् Bhāvāt, because of the existence.

14. The world would be eternal because Samavāya is eternal.—187.

COMMENTARY

If the Samavāya is admitted to be eternal, then the world, of which it is the relation, would also be eternal. But this is untenable, for even the Vaiśeṣikas do not believe the world to be eternal.

*Note :* If Samavāya (which in modern chemical phraseology may be described as the affinity which brings about the union of atoms) is an eternal cause, then creation would be eternal, because affinity is eternal. If Samavāya be considered as the destructive cause, which separates the atoms, then the Pralaya would be eternal. If the atoms have the tendency, of affinity in them, then the creation would be eternal ; if they have the opposite tendency, then the dissolution would be eternal. Thus the Samavāya cause, translated as the combinative cause, is open to this objection also, for it leads to the absurdity of eternal creation or eternal dissolution.

SŪTRA II. 2. 15.

रूपादिमत्त्वाच्च विपर्ययो दर्शनात् ॥ २ । २ । १५ ॥

रूपादिमत्त्वात् Rūpā-ādi-mattvāt, because of possessing colour, etc. Because the atoms of the Vaiśeṣikas possess colour, taste, smell and touch. च Cha, and. विपर्ययः Viparyayah, the reverse, the opposite. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because it is observed.

15. The Vaiśeṣika theory is further untenable because its atoms have colour, etc., and because the reverse is also observed in them.—188.

COMMENTARY.

The Vaiśeṣikas admit that the atoms of earth, water, fire and air possess the attributes of colour, taste, smell and touch and that they are eternal and partless. But the reverse of this is the logical result of their assumption, and their atoms ought to be non-eternal and having parts. Because it is so observed in ordinary life. Anything that possesses colour, etc., is liable to destruction. Such as jars, etc. The atoms, therefore, of the Vaiśeṣikas must therefore have the seed of destruction in them, and must be made up of parts like a jar. Thus this doctrine is full of inherent contradictions.

SŪTRA II., 2. 16.

उभयथा च दोषात् ॥ २ । २ । १६ ॥

उभयथा Ubhayathā, in both ways, whether you accept the atoms to have colour, etc., or you do not accept it so. च Cha, and. दोषात् Doṣāt, because of the difficulties.

16. And there are difficulties in both cases.—189.

## COMMENTARY

If it be accepted that the atoms have not colour, taste, etc., then we cannot explain the possession of these qualities by earth, water, etc., for that which is not in the cause cannot be in the effect. If we take the contrary view, and hold that the atoms have colour, taste, etc., then the theory is open to the objection raised in the last Sūtra. Thus in both ways, the atomic theory is untenable.

## SŪTRA II., 2. 17.

अपरिग्रहाच्चात्यन्तमनपेक्षा ॥ २ । २ । १७ ॥

अपरिग्रहात् Aparigrahât, because it is not accepted (by the orthodox sages like Manu, etc.), च Cha, and. अत्यन्तम् Atyantam, altogether, totally. अनपेक्षा Anapekṣâ, disregard.

17. The atomic theory is not accepted by authoritative sages, therefore it is to be disregarded altogether.—190.

## COMMENTARY

Some regard may be shown to the doctrine of Kapila and the rest, because authoritative sages like Manu and others have accepted portions of their philosophy. But this doctrine of atoms, being opposed to the Vedas, no sages have accepted any portion of it, hence it is undemonstrated and should be disregarded by every one who aims at the highest end of man.

*Adhikaraṇa III.—The Buddhist doctrine examined.*

Now the author disproves the Buddhistic teaching. The Buddha had four disciples, who founded four systems of philosophy, called respectively Vaibhāṣika, Sautrāntika, Yogāchāra and Mādhyamika. The Vaibhāṣikas hold that every external object, which is perceived, is real. The Sautrāntikas hold that there is no proof whether external objects really exist or not, the ideas only exist, and the external objects are inferred from these ideas. Thus the Vaibhāṣikas hold that the external objects are directly perceived, while the Sautrāntikas maintain that the outward world is an inference from ideas. The third class, the Yogāchāras hold that ideas alone are real and there is no external world corresponding to these ideas.

The outward objects are unreal, like dream objects. The Mādhyamikas maintain that even the ideas themselves are unreal, and there is nothing that exists except the void (Sūnyam). Such were the doctrines held by these four classes of Buddhists. All of them agree in maintaining that every existing object has only a momentary existence. The first two classes, namely, the Vaibhāṣikas and Sautrāntikas, hold that all outward things may be classed under two heads, namely, physical and mental, the physical itself is sub-divided into two parts, Bhūta or elements, and Bhautika or elementals. Similarly, all mental objects are divided into two classes, mind or Chitta, and mental or Chaitika. They further hold that there are five Skandhas, namely, Rūpa, Vijñāna, Vedanā, Saṁjñā and Saṁskāra. Among these the four so-called elements—earth, water, fire and air—are produced by the aggregation of four kinds of atoms, earthy, watery, fiery and airy, possessing respectively the attributes of hardness, fluidity, hotness and mobility. These four elements compose the bodies and senses of the various beings. All external objects thus constitute one Skandha, called the Rūpa Skandha, consisting of elements and elementals. The second Skandha called Vijñāna, is the stream of consciousness which gives the notion of egoity. In other words, this I-ness is the Vijñāna Skandha. This is also called the Atmā, the enjoyer, the agent. The third Skandha called Vedanā consists of the sentiency of pleasure and pain. It may be called the Skandha of feeling. The fourth Skandha called the Saṁjñā consists of names such as Deva Datta, etc. All words thus constitute this fourth Skandha. The fifth Skandha, called Saṁskāra, consists of the attributes of the mind, such as affection, hatred, delusion, merit, demerit, etc. The four last Skandhas collectively are called Chitta-Chaitika, mind-mental, or internal objects. All activities depend upon them and they constitute the inner motive of every thing. All internal objects are thus Chatus-Skandhi or belonging to any one of these four Skandhas. All external objects belong to one Skandha alone, namely, the Rūpa Skandha. Thus the whole world consists of these two kinds of objects, internal and external. Except these two, there exists nothing else like ether, etc.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is this theory valid or not ?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : This theory is valid, because it explains all world-activity.

*Siddhānta* : This is not so, as shown in the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II, 2. 18.

समुदाय उभयहेतुकेपि तदमाप्तिः ॥ २ । २ । १८ ॥

समुदायः Samudāyah, the aggregate, all objects. उभयहेतुके Ubhaya-hetuke, having two causes, namely, the external and the internal. अपि Api, also.

तत् प्रवृत्तिः Tat-aprāptih, there is non-establishment of that. There is not proved the world-order.

18. Even admitting that the whole aggregate has as its cause these two classes of objects, still there is not explained the world-order.—191.

COMMENTARY

The above theory of the Bauddhas which classifies all objects under two heads, one aggregate being called the external, the other internal, is not sufficient to explain the world-order. Because all aggregates are unintelligent and there is no permanent intelligence admitted by the Bauddhas which can bring about this aggregation. According to the Bauddhas every thing is momentary in its existence, there is no permanent intelligent substance which brings about the conjunction of these Skandhas. If it be said they come together of their own internal motion, then the world would become eternal, for Skandhas being eternal, and possessing motion of their own, they will be constantly bringing about creation. Thus this theory is untenable.

The holder of the Buddhistic doctrine here says: In our system there is a concatenation of cause and effect, beginning with Avidyā.

*Note :* Thus through Avidyā arises desire, aversion, etc., which compose the Saṃskāra Skandha. From this arises cognition or the kindling of the mind which composes Vijñāna Skandha. From this arises the six sense organs which compose the Vedanā Skandha. And from sensation again arises Avidyā. Thus the circle goes on.

We Buddhists hold this theory of the circle of causation, and as this circle is not refuted by any one and is admitted by all and as it moves like the Persian wheel, by which water is drawn from the well, so our theory is not open to any objection raised by you. Thus Avidyā produces Saṃskāra, from which comes out Vijñāna, Nāma-rūpa, the body, the touch, the sentiency, the thirst (Tṛṣṇā), the activity, the birth, the species, the decay, the death, the grief, the lamentation, the pain, and despondency.

*Note :* These are all technical terms of the Buddhists. Avidyā means the idea of permanency in a thing which is really impermanent, such as the idea that the flame is permanent while it is momentarily changing. From this Avidyā arise desire, aversion, etc., which constitute the Saṃskāra Skandha. From this Saṃskāra Skandha arises that vague consciousness which exists in prenatal condition, and this consciousness is called Vijñāna. From this Vijñāna arises the four elements earth, water, fire and air, which constitute the body of all beings, and this is called Nāma. From this Nāma (the four elements) are formed the bodies of all beings and which is called Rūpa, because the bodies are either black or white. This embryonic body is called Nāma-Rūpa. The embryo then develops the six senses called the Ṣaṭ-āyatana. From these senses, by their mutual contact, arises Sparśa, touch or contact, with external objects. From this contact with external objects arises feeling or Vedanā. From this Vedanā arises desire or thirst, whence successively

arise Upādāna, etc., mentioned above. Thus goes on this eternal cycle of causation. For further explanation see note to the next Sūtra.

This theory is refuted by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 19.

इतरेतरप्रत्ययत्वादिति चेन्नोत्पत्तिमात्रनिमित्तत्वात् ॥ २ । २ । १६ ॥

इतरेतर Itara-îlara, mutual, one another. प्रत्ययत्वात् Pratyayatvât, because of being the cause. One being the cause of the other. The word Pratyaya here means the cause. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. उत्पत्तिमात्र Utpatti-mâtra, merely production, of the origin merely. निमित्तत्वात् Nimittatvât, because of there being efficient cause only.

19. If it be said that the world is produced by the mutual causality of Avidyâ, etc., we say no, because they are merely the efficient causes of the immediately subsequent links.—192.

#### COMMENTARY

If you say that this aggregate or the world is formed by the mutual causation of Avidyâ and the rest, as described above, we say it is not so. For your link of causation explains only the origin of the subsequent from the previous. It only explains how Vijñâna arises from Saṁskâra, etc. It does not explain how the aggregate is brought about. An aggregate called Saṅghâta always shows a design, and is brought about for the purposes of enjoyment. (A Saṅghâta like a house may be explained to have been produced by a putting together of bricks, mortar, etc., but they do not explain the design). You say that there is no permanent Âtmâ. Your Âtmâ is momentary only. For such a momentary soul, there can be no enjoyment or experiencing. Because the enjoying soul has not produced the merit or demerit whose consequences it has to enjoy. It was produced by another momentary soul. Nor can you say the momentary soul suffers the results of the acts done by its ancestral soul, for then that ancestral soul must be held to be permanent and not momentary, and if you hold any soul to be permanent, you give up your theory of the momentariness of everything. But if you hold everything to be impermanent your theory is open to the objection already made. Hence the theory of the Saṅgatas is untenable.

*Note :* The series beginning with Nescience comprises the following members : Nescience, impression, knowledge, name and form, the abode of the six, touch, feeling, desire, activity, birth, species, decay, death, grief, lamentation, pain, mental affliction, and the like."

The commentators agree on the whole in their explanations of the terms of this series. The following is the substance of the comment of the *Brahma vidyābharṇa* : Nescience is the error of considering that which is momentary, impure, etc., to be permanent, pure, etc. Impression (affection, *saṃskāra*) comprises desire, aversion, etc., and the activity caused by them. Knowledge (*Vijñāna*) is the self-consciousness springing up in the embryo.—Name and form is the rudimentary flake—or bubble-like condition of the embryo. The abode of the six (*Ṣaḍāyatana*) is the further developed stage of the embryo in which the latter is the abode of the six senses. Touch (*Spṛṣa*) is the sensation of cold, warmth, etc., on the embryo's part. Feeling (*Vedanā*) the sensations of pleasure and pain resulting therefrom. Desire (*Tṛṣṇā*) is the wish to enjoy the pleasurable sensations and to shun the painful ones. Activity (*Upādāna*) is the effort resulting from desire. Birth is the passing out from the uterus. Species (*Jāti*) is the class of beings to which the new-born creature belongs. Decay (*Jarā*). Death (*Maraṇam*) is explained as the condition of the creature when about to die (*Mumūrṣa*). Grief (*Śoka*) is the frustration of wishes connected therewith. Lament (*Parivedanam*) is the lamentation on that account. Pain (*Duḥkha*) is such pain as is caused by the five senses. *Durmanas* is mental affliction. The 'and the like' implies death, the departure to another world and the subsequent return from there.—(Dr. Thibaut.)

SŪTRA II., 2. 20.

उत्तरोत्पादे च पूर्वनिरोधात् ॥ २ । २ । २० ॥

उत्तर Uttara, in the next, in the subsequent. उत्पादे Utpāde, on the origination, on the production. च Cha, and. पूर्वनिरोधात् Pūrva-nirodhāt, because there is stoppage or cessation of the preceding.

20. There can be no causal relation between *Avidyā* and the rest, because when the subsequent is produced the preceding one ceases to exist.—193.

COMMENTARY

In this Sūtra the author criticises the view that *Avidyā*, etc., give rise to the terms in their subsequent series. He shows that *Avidyā*, etc., cannot stand even in causal relation to the next term in the series. The Buddhists being the upholders of the doctrine of momentary existence of everything, admit that when a thing comes into existence in a subsequent moment, the thing that existed in the preceding moment has totally ceased to exist. An effect produced in a subsequent moment is the result of the total destruction of the cause that existed in the preceding moment. This being their doctrine, the series of *Avidyā*, etc., cannot stand to each other in the relation of cause and effect. For the cause having totally ceased to exist cannot stand in the relation of the originator to the effect which comes into existence in the subsequent moment. Because we always perceive that the cause subsists in the effect as the thread subsists in the cloth. But the Buddhists hold that existence originates from non-existence, for they maintain that the effect cannot manifest without the



destruction of the cause, the tree cannot appear until the seed is destroyed.

This view is next refuted by the author.

SŪTRA II., 2. 21.

असति प्रतिज्ञोपरोधो यौगपद्यमन्यथा ॥ २ । २ । २१ ॥

असति Asati, if there was non-existence, if the effect originates from the non-existence of the cause. प्रतिज्ञा Pratijñā, admitted principle. उपरोधः Uparodhaḥ, contradiction. यौगपद्यम् Yaugapadyam, simultaneousness. अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise.

21. If the cause ceases to exist when the effect manifests itself, then there results contradiction of the admitted principle that the universe is caused by the Skandhas. Otherwise there would arise simultaneousness of the cause and effect.—194.

COMMENTARY

The admitted principle of the Buddhists is that the world originates from the Skandhas. If, therefore, it be said that an effect may originate even when the cause is totally non-existent, then it would contradict the admitted principle. Non-existence being present everywhere, any thing will arise anywhere, always. If, however, it be said that the antecedent momentary existence of the cause lasts so long as the effect does not originate, then we are landed in the other difficulty, namely, the cause and the effect exist simultaneously together, for the cause would then remain in the effect. This would also go against the accepted doctrine of the Buddhists that everything is momentary merely. Therefore, it follows that the effect does not originate from non-existence.

The author next refutes the tenet that there can be absolute annihilation of the substance. The Buddhists hold that substances like jar, etc., totally cease to exist like the flame of the lamp. The author disproves this theory next.

SŪTRA II., 2. 22.

प्रतिसंख्याप्रतिसंख्या निरोधाप्राप्तिरविच्छेदात् ॥ २ । २ । २२ ॥

प्रतिसंख्या Pratisaṅkhyā, (destruction) depending upon the volition of some conscious entity. अप्रतिसंख्या Apratisaṅkhyā, (destruction) not depending upon any voluntary agency. निरोधः Nirodhaḥ, destruction, cessation. अप्राप्तिः Aprāptiḥ, non-establishment, non-demonstration. अविच्छेदात् Avicchedāt, because there is no complete interruption.

22. Nor can there be established the two sorts of destructions, the volitional and the non-volitional, because there is never any complete interruption.—195.

## COMMENTARY

Pratisaṃkhyā-nirodha is the destruction of things dependent upon the volition of some conscious agent. Thus when a man says I shall destroy this jar and takes a hammer and reduces it to pieces. The other form of destruction which is non-dependent on the will of any sentient agent is called Apratisaṃkhyā-nirodha. These two, together with Âkāśa or space, which is defined to be the absence of all obstruction or covering, are the three kinds of non-entities believed by the Buddhists. A destruction like this is called Niravaya Vināśa or absolute destruction or Nirupākhyā Śūnyam or total void. Everything else is momentary only. As is found in the following aphorism. "Everything which is an object of conception other than these three (the two sorts of Nirodha and Âkāśa) is temporary and composite."

The author will refute later on the theory that Âkāśa is a non-entity. At present he refutes the wrong doctrine of the two sorts of Nirodha. These two sorts of Nirodhas cannot be established or are impossible, because (Avicchedât), on account of the absence of interruption. An object which is existent cannot be absolutely annihilated, for the words origination and destruction of a substance really mean only change of condition of the substance. It only undergoes modification or a change of condition, but the substance is a entity and remains permanent. You cannot say that when a candle is burnt out, it is totally annihilated. As we find in other cases that destruction is only a change of condition, we can easily infer that in the case of the candle also there can be no total destruction.

*Note :* It is no longer a matter of inference now, but a positively proved fact, that when a candle burns out, it is not lost, but undergoes a change of condition. The first experiment shown in Chemistry is generally to prove the proposition that substance can never be annihilated.

We do not certainly perceive the candle when it is burnt out, but the materials of which it consisted, continue to exist in a very subtle state and hence they are imperceptible. If there were the absolute annihilation of even a single real substance, then in the next moment you will see the whole universe reduced to annihilation, and you yourself will not exist to see it. Consequently absolute annihilation is an impossibility and cannot be proved.

*Note :* The following extract from Dr. Thibaut's *Vedānta Sūtra*, S. B. E., Vol. 34, page 410, explains the reasoning of this Sūtra very clearly :

A series of momentary existence constituting a chain of causes and effects can never be entirely stopped ; for the last momentary existence must be supposed either to produce its effect or not to produce it. In the former case the series is continued ; the latter alternative would imply that the last link does not really exist, since the Buddhists define the Sattā of a thing as its causal efficiency (*cf.* Sarvadarśanasamgraha). And the non-existence of the last link would retrogressively lead to the non-existence of the whole series.

The Author next refutes the notion of release as entertained by the Buddhists.

SŪTRA II., 2. 23.

उभयथा च दोषात् ॥ २ । २ । २३ ॥

उभयथा Ubhayathā, in either case. च Cha, and. दोषात् Doṣāt, because there are objections.

23. In both cases there are objections and hence the very idea of release is not established.—196.

COMMENTARY

The word 'not' is understood in this and the three subsequent Sūtras from the Sūtra II., 2. 19. The Buddhists define Mokṣha or release to be the cessation of the series of Avidyā and the rest, which constitute the world cycle called Samsāra. Does this release accrue from Direct knowledge of the truth or of itself ? It cannot be the first, for then the acceptance by the Buddhists of the form of destruction called Apratisaṅkhyā-nirodha would be useless ; nor can it be the latter, for then all the disciplines and methods of meditation laid down by the Buddhists become useless. Thus their teaching cannot stand the test of reasoning, and in this system release can never be established.

The author next refutes the doctrine of the Buddhists that Ākāśa is an absolute non-entity.

SŪTRA II., 2. 24.

आकाशे चाविशेषात् ॥ २ । २ । २४ ॥

आकाशे Ākāśe, in the case of Ākāśa or space or ether. च Cha, and. अविशेषात् Aviśeṣāt, because of no specific difference.

24. The tenet of the absolute non-existence of Ākāśa is also untenable, because there is no difference in this case also.—197.

## COMMENTARY

The doctrine that space is an absolute non-entity is not tenable. Why do you say so? Avišeṣāt, because there is no difference in the case of Ākāśa from any other kind of substance which is an object of perception. We *perceive* space when we say "the hawk flies in space." The space, therefore, is as much a real substance, as the earth, etc. As we know the earth by its quality of smell, water by its quality of taste and so on, so we know from the quality of being the abode of objects, the existence of space, and that it has the attribute of Sound. Thus Ākāśa is a real substance and not a non-entity. You Buddhists also say that air exists in Ākāśa. If Ākāśa was totally non-existent, what would be the receptacle of air? Nor can you say that space is nothing but the absence of any occupying object. This also cannot stand to reason. Consequently Ākāśa is not a negative substance of the logicians. The logicians hold that absence or Abhāva is of three sorts: Prāk-abhāva, prior non-existence, as the non-existence of the jar before its being made by the potter; second, Pradhvaṣṭa-abhāva, or absence by destruction, as when a jar is broken into pieces; third, Atyanta-abhāva, absolute non-existence, as the horn of the hare, which is absolutely a fiction. Ākāśa is none of these three kinds of absence. If Ākāśa be a non-entity, then the whole universe would become devoid of space. For if you say that Ākāśa is nothing, but the absence of covering or occupying body, then it cannot be the covering of earth, etc., and if Ākāśa is non-perceptible, because there is an occupying body like earth, etc., then we are landed into a position that the whole universe is without space, because something or other exists everywhere. If you say that Ākāśa exists then there would be non-perception of earth, etc. Thus on neither view the definition of Ākāśa given by you is tenable.

*Note:* Nor is it possible to hold that Space is nothing else but the non-existence (Abhāva) of earth, and so on, for this view collapses as soon as set forth in definite alternatives. For whether we define Space as the antecedent and subsequent non-existence of earth, and so on, or as their mutual non-existence, or as their absolute non-existence — on none of these alternatives we attain the 'proper' idea of Space. If, in the first place, we define it as the antecedent and subsequent non-existence of earth, and so on, it will follow that, as the idea of Space can thus not be connected with earth and other things existing at the present moment, the whole world is without Space.

If, in the second place, we define it as the mutual non-existence of earth, and so on, it will follow that, as such mutual non-existence inheres in the things only which stand towards each other in the relation of mutual non-existence, there is no perception of Space in the intervals between those things (while as a matter of fact there is). And, in the third place, absolute non-existence of earth, and so on, cannot of course be admitted, and as non-existence (Abhāva) is clearly conceived as a special state of something actually existing, Space even if admitted to be of the nature of Abhāva, would not on that account be a futile non-entity (something 'Tuchcha' or 'Nirupākhyā.')

—Dr. Thibaut.

SŪTRA II, 2. 25.

अनुस्मृतेश्च ॥ २ । २ । २५ ॥

अनुस्मृतेः Anusmṛiteḥ, because of the memory, or recognition. च Cha, and.

25. The fact of memory or recollection also proves that things are not momentary.—198.

## COMMENTARY

Anusmṛitiḥ or remembrance is the idea or cognition of what was previously perceived. It is also called recollection or recognition. In recollection we recognise the thing that was perceived in the past, and assert about it, "this is the thing that was seen before." This at least proves that the person who recollects cannot be a momentary thing. Therefore, all things are not momentary. You cannot say that this recognition of the thing, is only the recognition of similarity, as when we say "this is the Ganges" or "this is the flame which we saw before." In the case of the Ganges and the flame, no doubt, it is a false assumption to say, it is the same as it was before, for the water in the river is not the same, nor the particles which constitute the flame. In their case, there is no oneness of the object. The perception is merely of similarity. But unless there be one permanent knowing subject, who can perceive the similarity, in the past with the present, he cannot assert "this is the Ganges or this is the flame which was in the past." In other words, the knowing subject must be permanent and not momentary. It may be possible, that sometime doubts may arise as regards an external object, and one may not be able to assert whether it is identically the same object which was perceived in the past or something similar to it. But with regard to the Self, the cognising subject, there can never arise any such doubt "whether I am the same who was in the past." For it is impossible that the memory of a thing perceived by another should exist in one's own self. Nor can you say, that there is unity of succession, and that one impression vanishes after giving birth to a similar impression, and this current of impressions gives the notion of unity. For if successions of impressions are identical with the preceding ones, then it practically comes to the same thing as the admission of a permanent chain of similar impressions, and this permanent chain may well be called Âtmâ, and thus it would also refute the Buddhistic theory. But if it is not admitted, then the fact of recollection or remembrance cannot be explained. Moreover, what do you mean by "momentariness"? Do you mean by it that which is related to a moment, or that which originates or is destroyed in a moment? It cannot be the first, for even a permanent object must be related to a

moment, for many moments must pass over it. Nor can it be the second, for we do not perceive objects coming into existence in a moment or vanishing in a moment. Thus the theory of momentariness of all things is refuted. These very arguments refute also the theory of *Dr̥ṣṭi-sr̥ṣṭi*. For this theory, which posits that creation is constant and going on at every moment and depends upon one's seeing it, is only the theory of momentariness in another garb. Consequently things are not momentary.

The author next takes up the theory of the Sautrāntikas and proves its untenableness. They maintain that objects leave their ideas in our consciousness—ideas of their having certain colour, form, etc., and though they may vanish and exist no more, they exist in our consciousness as ideas, and are inferred as such. Therefore, the ideas are only existing things, and their manifoldness is caused by the manifoldness of external objects. This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II, 2. 26

नासतोऽदृष्टत्वात् ॥ २ । २ । २६ ॥

न Na, not. असतः Asataḥ, of the unreal, of the object which is destroyed and no longer exists. अदृष्टत्वाद् Adṛṣṭatvāt, because it is not perceived or seen.

26. Of that which no longer exists, there can be no persistence in cognition, because it is nowhere seen to be so.—199.

#### COMMENTARY

The Sautrāntikas hold that a thing that has perished imparts its form to the cognition, and on the foundation of that form, yellow colour and so on, the thing itself is inferred. The special cognitions, such as yellow colour, etc., cannot be the forms of things that have perished, and exist only in cognition; for we never see it in actual reality. When the substance perishes, the qualities that inhere in that substance perish along with it. We do not see the qualities passing over to another object, when the substance itself is gone. Nor can you say that objects like jars, etc., are merely inferences and have no real external existence. When a person sees a jar, he says, "I see the jar," he does not say, "I have the idea of a jar in my mind, and I infer there must be something outside of me which I call a jar." For this kind of idealism is contradicted by the very pronouncement of our consciousness, which declares that the jar exists outside. This is a special objection to the Sautrāntika theory. It

follows, therefore, that the existence of a jar, which is an object of perception, is not inferred from the idea of jar formed in our cognition. Such existence is intuitively given by the very fact of perception.

The author next shows a common defect which taints both these theories of the Vaibhāṣikas and the Sautrāntikas.

SŪTRA II., 2. 27.

उदासीनानामपि चैवं सिद्धिः ॥ २ । २ । २७ ॥

उदासीनानाम् Udaśinānām, of persons who are perfectly indifferent and non-active. अपि Api, also. च Cha, and. एवम् Evam, thus. सिद्धिः Siddhiḥ, accomplishment.

27. If things were all momentary, then even persons who are non-active, will accomplish all their objects without any exertion.—200.

#### COMMENTARY

If things originate from non-existence, because every thing is momentary, then persons who never exert will accomplish their objects by their mere laziness, because effects are produced without any real cause. In the theory of universal momentariness, the thing does not exist in the next moment, and so there can be no effort to attain a thing desired or to ward off a thing not desired, for there would remain no motive for such exertion, because the good things would be obtained without exertion, and evil warded off similarly. A believer in this doctrine would never exert either to attain heaven or release. But the Buddhists, however, are inconsistent in their actions, for believing in the momentariness of all objects, they still exert for Mokṣa. As a matter of fact, every one believes that in order to attain an end he must employ appropriate means and exert properly. Consequently these two schools merely tend to delude mankind. For they lay down practices for the attainment of heaven and final release for souls which in their theory are momentary, and believing that entity can arise from non-entity, they still exert for the realisation of their objects, and as if they believed that the world originated not from a non-entity, but from the Skandhas which (according to them) are real substances. Their theory being thus self-contradictory deserves no serious consideration.

*Note :* This refutation of the Vaibhāṣika and the Sautrāntika system proceeds upon a misconception of the true doctrine taught by these schools. They are not so absurd as the Brāhmaṇical commentators have made them out. It is very doubtful whether the Sūtras themselves refer to these doctrines, for they do not employ any words which can lead to the existence of these doctrines. Bādarāyaṇa wrote long before the rise of these

modern Buddhistic schools and it is not likely that he would have referred to them. If the Sūtras are interpreted as referring to these schools which arose in quite historical times—some five hundred years after Christ, then we are faced with the difficulty of assuming that Bādarāyaṇa wrote after 500 A. C.

---

### *Adhikaraṇa IV.—Yogāchāra theory considered*

The Vaibhāṣikas and the Sautrāntikas being thus refuted, now come forward the Yogāchāras. They say that the Lord Buddha assumed the existence of external things, and in his system of Vaibhāṣika and Sautrāntika he showed the relation of those things with thought, merely out of deference to those weak-minded disciples of his, who were attached to external things. As a fact, the Lord did not believe in the reality of the external world. His highest doctrine is represented by the Yogāchāra system, according to which the Vijñāna Skandha or cognition alone is real.

According to this system, an object like jar, etc., which is perceived in cognition, is nothing more than cognition. The Vijñāna modifies itself into the form of the object. You cannot say that without external objects the worldly business cannot be transacted, for to this we reply that in dream also there are no external objects, and still all activities are performed with the thought objects. Even those who believe in the reality of external objects, have to admit that those objects are cognised in so far as the mind becomes modified in the shape of those objects. If it were not so there would not arise phrases like, 'I know the jar, I know the cloth.' Thus all worldly activities can well go on with mere cognition, and all practical thought and intercourse are rendered possible by cognition alone. What is then the necessity of assuming an external object corresponding to these ideas? Nor can it be objected that thought-forms of internal cognitions being very minute and subtle, cannot have the form of the large and big things like a jar or a mountain. But a little consideration will show that we cannot object that how can a small thing like the mind contain big things like these. Mind or idea itself is the power of illumination. It illumines or shines forth, it has a form and because it has a form, it has the possibility of shining forth in the shapes of all these objects. (And the smallness of the mind is no reason against its containing large objects, for a small object like the retina of the eye contains within it all the visible external world). Says the objector, if there were no real external objects what causes the mind to assume the manifold shapes? To this we reply, the mind assumes different shapes owing to the different Vāsanās or desire-impressions



submerged in it. (Just as these Vāsanās or desire-impressions left in the mind create the dream world in sleep, so the external world in the waking consciousness is also the result of the Vāsanās). The manifoldness of cognition is thus caused by the manifoldness of the Vāsanās, and this we can easily find out by a little thinking. For wherever there is Vāsanā there is a change of mental form, corresponding to the Vāsanā, but whenever the series of Vāsanās are stopped, the mind also stops. Moreover, you also admit that the cognition and the object of cognition are always co-existent, and that the act of perception is one. We never see an object without the corresponding conception of it, consequently there is no necessity of admitting the existence of an external object corresponding to the internal idea. But as a matter of fact the object of knowledge is identical with cognition, and is not separate from it. We are conscious of only one form, namely, the idea, though this idea appears to us at the same time as an external object. The latter, however, is an error. And since we are always conscious of ideas and things together only, it is useless to assume that the thing is something different from the idea. Thus the ideas only exist.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt, is every thing merely an idea, and is it possible to have practical thought and intercourse without external objects, just as it is done in dream ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Yogāchāras say, all practical purposes are well rendered possible by admitting the reality of ideas only, for no good purpose is served by the additional assumption of external objects corresponding to internal ideas.

*Siddhānta* : The external world really exists as is shown by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA., II., 2. 28.

नाभाव उपलब्धेः ॥ २ । २ । २८ ॥

न Na, not. अभावः Abhāvaḥ, non-existence of the external things. उपलब्धेः Upalabdheḥ, because they are perceived, because we are conscious of them.

28. The external things are not non-existent. because our consciousness bears testimony to their existence.—201.

#### COMMENTARY

As it is the consciousness alone by which we judge the existence or the non-existence of a thing, we must admit that the external things are

existent, because our consciousness says they are existing. Moreover, the very words we use show that we admit the existence of external things. We say "the knowledge of a jar," a sentence which assumes that *knowledge* is different from the *jar*. No theory is worth consideration by the wise which goes against the testimony of one's consciousness. The Yogācāra may say: "I do not affirm that I have no consciousness of an object, I also feel that the object appears as an external thing, but what I affirm is this, that I am always conscious of nothing directly but of my own ideas, and hence the so-called appearance of the external things is the result of my own ideas." To this we reply that the very fact of your consciousness proves that there is an external object giving rise to the idea of externality. ("That the outward thing exists apart from consciousness, has necessarily to be accepted on the ground of the nature of consciousness itself. No body when perceiving a post or a wall is conscious of his perception only, but all men are conscious of posts and walls and the like as objects of their perception.") —Dr. Thibaut.

Moreover, in the sentence 'I know the pot' there are three things given, the knower the "I," the knowledge and the object of knowledge. The verb *to know* is an active verb requiring an agent as well as an object. The whole world believes it so and makes others believe it also. Therefore, to say that there is only knowledge, but no object of knowledge, is merely to court ridicule and derision. Consequently, it is established that an object is separate from knowledge.

Says an objector: "If a jar and the rest are separate from the knowledge of them, how is it that this knowledge arises in cognition." If you say that it shines forth in consciousness, then by the knowledge of the one jar we ought to know every thing external, for all external things have the common attribute of being *different* from knowledge, being the *other*. If one thing which is non-knowledge is known, every non-knowledge must be known. To this we reply, it is not so. All external objects, no doubt, have this thing in common that they are different from the perceiving subject. They all come under the category of non-self or object. Certainly, we know every thing as non-self by knowing *one* non-self. That is to say, the general relation of the non-self to the self, is known by knowing one non-self. But there are many non-selves and their special relation to the self are different; one object is yellow, another is red and it cannot be said that the knowledge of the yellow object is the same as that of the red object. For yellowness and redness are two different ideas altogether, and there must be two external objects to give rise to two different ideas.

Ideas and things certainly are concomitant, they always go together. But this concomitance, instead of proving that things are unreal and that

ideas only are real. proves just the contrary. For the very fact that they go together shows that they are different things and not one. Moreover, the Lord Buddha, while denying the reality of external things admitted the separate existence of the external world. For he says, 'The form which is perceived internally appears like an external object.' He uses the word '*like*' an external object, which shows that he admitted the reality of the external objects. Otherwise he would not have used this word. For no one makes a comparison with a thing which is absolute unreality. No one says he is *like* the son of a barren woman, or like the mare's nest.

*Note :* The following quotation from Saṅkara is clearer : "Nobody when perceiving a post or a wall is conscious of his perception only, but all men are conscious of posts and walls and the like as objects of their perception. That such is the consciousness of all men, appears also from the fact that even those who contest the existence of external things bear witness to their existence when they say that what is an internal object of cognition appears something *like* the external. For they practically accept the general consciousness which testifies to the existence of an external world, and being at the same time anxious to refute it they speak of external things as '*like* something external.' If they did not at the bottom of their hearts acknowledge the existence of the external world, how could they use the expression "like something external." No one says, "Viṣṇumitra appears like the son of a barren mother." If we accept the truth as it is given to us in our consciousness, we must admit that the object of perception appears to us as something external, not *like* something external.

Now the author refutes the theory that external objects need not exist at all, because all different ideas can well be explained as originating from Vāsanās without the necessity of believing in the real existence of any external objects. The opinion of the Yogācāras is that all practical thought and intercourse are possible without assuming the existence of *things*, in addition to the *ideas*. As in dream a person has intercourse and practical communication with other things and objects, while they are nothing but his own ideas, similarly in the waking state also, without any external things, the manifoldness of ideas may be explained through the Vāsanā. This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA. II, 2. 29.

वैधर्म्याच्च न स्वप्नादिवत् ॥ २ । २ । २६ ॥

वैधर्म्यात् Vaidharmyāt, on account of difference of nature. च Cha, and. न Na, not. स्वप्नादिवत् Svapnādivat, like dreams and the rest, i. e., like hypnotic suggestion, mirage, illusion.

29. The ideas of the waking state are not like those of the dream state, because they are of a different nature.

## COMMENTARY

In the dream state and in the state of reverie and hypnotic suggestion there are no external objects like jar, etc., and all experiences therein and different ideas are caused merely by one's own consciousness, and not by anything really outward to the person dreaming, so also it may be in the waking state. This view is not possible, because the ideas of the dreaming state are different from those of the waking. The objects of the dream state have not the same characteristics as those of the waking state. The objects perceived in dream are memories of waking experiences. In the waking state they are perceptions and not memories. The objects in the dreaming states instantly change their forms and are found to be unreal, as soon as a man awakes from sleep. In other words, the dream objects are sublated by waking consciousness. On the other hand, the objects perceived in the waking state do not change so instantaneously. Even after hundreds of years, they will have the same appearance as now. Moreover, we never have the consciousness of their being unreal. They are never sublated. True, we have said above, that things perceived in dream are mere memories, but this is only a partial statement of fact. The true opinion of Bādarāyaṇa is that the supreme Lord really *creates* objects in the dream state, and makes the soul experience them. They are, therefore, also real, only the difference is that the Lord creates them for a temporary purpose and for a particular soul only; while the external world He has created for *all* souls and for the Cosmic period, and given them greater fixity. This opinion will be fully expounded in the Sūtra III., 2. 1., where he will show that all dream objects are also creations of the Lord and not of the soul.

The author now refutes the view that manifoldness of ideas can be explained by the manifoldness of Vāsanās without the assumption of external objects.

SŪTRA II., 2. 30

न भावोऽनुपलब्धेः ॥ २ । २ । ३० ॥

न Na, not. भावः Bhāvaḥ, existence of mere ideas without corresponding things, or existence of mere Vāsanās. अनुपलब्धेः Anupalabdheḥ, because they are not perceived.

30. The Vāsanās do not exist without corresponding external objects, because it is never so perceived in experience.—203.

## COMMENTARY

Vāsanās can have no existence according to your theory, for you hold that there are no external objects. We know that Vāsanās are produced by external objects; where there is no external object there is no Vāsanā. This is demonstrated by the rule of identity and difference. We never see any Vāsanā originating without any external object. The Yogāchāras cannot explain how the Vāsanās originate. And as they do not believe in the existence of external objects, they cannot explain the existence of Vāsanās even. According to their doctrine, the existence of Vāsanās is impossible, as they do not admit the perception of external things. The variety of Vāsanās is caused by the variety of external objects, according to us.

Vāsanā is really a kind of mental impression or Saṁskāra. This Saṁskāra or impression cannot exist without some permanent substratum, in which it may inhere. But the Yogāchāras do not believe in any permanent substratum, hence for this reason also their so-called Vāsanās or mental impressions cannot exist. This the author shows in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 31.

क्षणिकत्वाच्च ॥ २ । २ । ३१ ॥

क्षणिकत्वात् Kṣaṇikattvāt, because of momentariness. च Cha, and.

31. The Vāsanās have no permanent substratum, because of their theory of universal momentariness.—204.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Na' is understood in this Sūtra from the preceding aphorism. According to your theory there is no permanent substratum in which Vāsanās may inhere. For you believe that everything is momentary. According to you, the external ideas that we have during an earth life (Pravṛtti Vijñāna) and the Cosmic ideas which cease only with the cessation of a world period or Pralaya (Ā-laya Vijñāna) and which exist in the Monad are all momentary. Thus there being no conscious self which is permanent in past, present and future, it is not possible to have remembrance, recognition and so on, which are subject to mental impressions dependent on place, time and cause. All these Vāsanās, memories, and thoughts, practically presuppose some absolutely unchangeable Self or principle, equally connected with the past, the present and the future. Consequently this Vijñāna-mātra-vāda is unworthy of further consideration, for it cannot explain how the Vāsanās can exist without a permanent substratum, and how they can be manifold in the absence of that substratum.

*Adhikaraṇa V.—Mādhyaṃika theory refuted.*

The Yogācāra being thus refuted, now comes forward the Mādhyaṃika who holds the doctrine of universal void. He says, "The Lord Buddha admitted the existence of external objects and of ideas, only for the sake of those less intellectual pupils of his, who could not at once grasp his real doctrine of universal void. All the preceding theories of the momentariness of things and ideas are so many concessions to these, and may be considered as rungs of the ladder leading to this theory. This is the real doctrine of the Lord, and as a matter of fact, neither the external objects nor the ideas exist in reality. The only reality is Sūnyam, the Great Void, and the reaching of this nothingness constitutes Release or Mokṣa. This is the true secret taught by the Lord and it is proved thus: Sūnya or nothing is self-existent and self-proved, because no cause need be assigned for its production. It is only a thing, which exists, that requires a cause to explain its origination. But No-thing requires no such cause or explanation. Further, a thing which *is* (Sat) must originate either from some existent things or not. It cannot originate from a thing which is existent or from a being, because we do not see a tree to originate with sprout, leaves, etc., so long as the seed is not destroyed. It is only when the seed is destroyed, that the tree originates. Thus a Sat or a thing cannot originate from a being. Nor can it originate from a non-being (Abhāva), for we do not see the origination of tree, sprout, etc., from a seed which has been roasted. Similarly, nothing can originate of itself, for then it would be dependent upon Ātmā, which would be a useless assumption. Nor can any motive be assigned for a thing originating from itself. Nor can it originate from anything else, for then it would follow that any thing might originate from any thing, for all things alike are *other* things. Thus there being no origination, there is also no destruction. Therefore, the words like Origination, Destruction, Being, Non-being are mere illusions and the only reality is the Sūnyam.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Is it true to believe that Sūnyam is the only reality or is it not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Sūnyam is the only reality because it is self-proved while other things being based upon illusion have no real existence. The Great Void constitutes reality.

*Siddhānta* : The Sūnyam is not the reality as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 32.

सर्वथानुपपत्तेश्च ॥ २ । २ । ३२ ॥

सर्वथा Sarvathā, in every way. अनुपपत्तेः Anupapatteḥ, because of the improbability, because of its not being proved. च Cha, and.

32. The doctrine of the Void is in every way unproved.—205.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Na' is understood in this Sūtra. What is the Sūnyam of yours, is it a being or a non-being or both being and non-being? In any way, you cannot establish your doctrine. If you say it is a being, then you give up your position and admit that Sūnyam is a being; if you say it is a non-being, then your declaration amounts to this, that you establish that every thing is nothing. But you must admit yourself to be a being and your reasoning also to be something, and not nothing and this also contradicts your theory that all is nothing. If you say it is both being and non-being, then it also contradicts your own theory and lands you into undesirable results. Moreover, the means of knowledge by which Sūnyam is to be proved must at least be real and must be acknowledged to be true, for if such means of knowledge and arguments be themselves nothing, then the theory of nothingness cannot be established. And if those means and arguments be true, then something certainly is proved, and then also the theory of universal nothingness is disproved. Thus Sūnyavāda is disproved in every way. Thus it is to be inferred that the Lord Buddha taught these three self-contradictory doctrines in order to delude the world. At one time he teaches the reality of the external world, next the reality of ideas only, and lastly general nothingness, and thus he has made it clear that his object was to delude the Asuras. The doctrine of the Lokāyatikas or materialists, being perfectly futile, the author of the Sūtras has made no attempt to refute them. Thus the Buddhistic doctrine being refuted, its sister doctrine the Māyāvāda also stands refuted. The doctrine that creation depends upon perception (Dṛṣṭi Sṛṣṭivāda) and the doctrine that the creation is an illusion as the illusion of the snake in the rope (Vivartavāda) have also this in common with the Buddhistic teaching, that they also believe the things to be momentary. Hence the refutation of Buddhism refutes these theories also.

*Adhikaraṇa VI.—The Jaina theory examined.*

Now the author shows the faults of the Jaina theory. The doctrine of the Jainas is that substances are of two kinds, Jīva or souls and Ajīva

or Non-souls. The Jīva is sentient, and intelligent, has the size of the body which it occupies, and has parts or members. The Ajīva or Non-souls are of five kinds, namely, (i) Dharma or Merit, (ii) Adharma or De-merit, (iii) Pudgala or Bodies, (iv) Kāla or Time, and (v) Ākāśa or Space. Dharma or Merit is that which causes motion or progress. Adharma or De-merit is that which causes the stationariness of a thing. Both these are all-pervading. The Pudgala or Body is that which possesses colour, smell, taste and touch. It is of two sorts, namely, Atomic, and Molecular or compounded of Atoms. Air, Fire, Water, Earth, Bodies of Creatures and the various plans or Worlds are Compounds and not Atomic. The Atoms, which are the causes, are not of four sorts, but of one nature. Through a modification of their nature, they assume different forms like earth, etc. Time is a particular Atomic substance, which is the cause of the distinction of past, present and future. Space is one, infinite and is that which contains others and has dimensions. These six substances (the Jīva and the five non-Jīvas) are called Dravyas and this world consists of them. Among these, with the exception of the Atoms, the remaining five are called Asti-kāyas. Such as the Jīva-Asti-kāya, the Dhama-Asti-kāya, the Adharma-Asti-kāya, the Pudgala-Asti-kāya and the Ākāśa-Asti-kāya. The word Asti-kāya denotes the substance that occupies different parts of Space. In other words, any space-occupying substance may be called an Asti-kāya. The Jainas describe seven categories, which are helpful for the purposes of the release of the Souls. They are these substances arranged in a different order, namely, (i) Jīva or Soul, (ii) Ajīva or Non-soul, (iii) Āsrava or influx or channel, (iv) Nirjara or decay or exhaustion of passions, (v) Saṁvara or hinderance or obscuration, (vi) Bandha or bondage, and (vii) Mokṣa or release. Among these, the Jīva has already been defined, namely, the substance which has knowledge, etc., as its qualities. Ajīva or non-Soul is everything which is the object of enjoyment of the Soul. The Āsrava or channel is that through which the Soul flows towards the external objects; it is the channel of communication between the Soul and the world, in other words, the senses are called Āsrava. The Saṁvara or the obscuration are indiscrimination, want of dispassion, etc., which hinder the opposite attributes of discrimination, etc. Nirjara or exhaustion is that which destroys totally or which exhausts the source of lust, anger, etc., such as austerities, like plucking off of hairs, sitting on hot stones, etc. Bondage is the current or cycle of birth and death, caused by eight kinds of Karmas. These eight kinds of Karmas are comprised under two heads, namely, four Ghâtika Karmas or particular evil deeds which obstruct the natural innate knowledge, wisdom, seeing, vigour and pleasure of the Jīva. Four Aghâti Karmas, which are particular kinds of virtuous acts, by which is accomplished the connection of the Soul with the Body, the wrong notion of identifying the Soul with the



Body, and indifference towards pleasure and pain, as well as desire of pleasure and avoidance of pain. Release or Mukti consists either in remaining stationary in Space above all worlds, or in which there is constant progress towards higher regions. This is to be accomplished by means of the practices taught in the Jaina scriptures. They cause liberation from these eight kinds of Karmas, and manifest the true nature of the Soul. Their practices are called the three jewels, namely, the right knowledge, the right seeing, and the right conduct. They establish these substances by their system of reasoning called the Sapta-bhaṅgi-nyāya, called also Syād-vāda. (i) Syād-asti, somewhat it is or may be it is, (ii) Syād-nāsti, somewhat it is not or may be it is not, (iii) Syād-avaktavyaḥ, it may be predicated a little, or may be it is not predicable, (iv) Syād-asti-cha-nāsti-cha, may be or somewhat it is or it is not, (v) Syād-asti-cha-avaktavyaḥ-cha, may be or somewhat it is and is not predicable, (vi) Syād-nāsti-cha-avaktavyaḥ-cha, may be or somewhat it is not and is not predicable, (vii) Syād-asti-cha-nāsti-cha-avaktavyaḥ-cha, may be or somewhat it is and it is not and it is not predicable.

The word 'Syād' is an Indeclinable and has the sense of "somewhat," "somehow," "not fully." The word "Sapta-bhaṅgi" means that system of reasoning in which the seven rules are refuted (Bhaṅga—broken). Those seven rules are: (i) Existence or Sattvam, (ii) Non-existence or Asattvam, (iii) Sad-asattvam or existence and not existence, (iv) Sad-asad-vilakṣaṇattvam, something different from existence and non-existence, (v) Sattve-sati-tad-vilakṣaṇattvam, while there is existence it is different from it, (vi) Asattvesati tad-vilakṣaṇattvam, while there is non-existence yet it is different from it, (vii) Sad-asattve-sati-tad-vilakṣaṇattvam, while there is existence and non-existence, yet it is different from it. Thus there are seven kinds of theories regarding the reality of substances or world, some holding it to be existent or real, others holding it to be non-real, a third class holding it to be neither real nor non-real, and so on. To disprove these several theories of existence, is the object of this Sapta-bhaṅgi-nyāya, or the reasoning by which the seven theories are refuted. This is necessary everywhere, for every object is either real or non-real, eternal or non-eternal, different or non-different and is manifold on account of these attributes. If the object is absolutely existent then it will exist always, everywhere, in every mode and no one will ever desire either to acquire it, or to abandon it (as no one ever desires to acquire air or reject it, since it exists everywhere). A thing which one already has can never become an object of acquisition, nor is it possible to abandon it, just as gravity, which is everywhere, cannot be abandoned. If, however, the substances do not exist absolutely, but exist only to some extent, and sometimes and for some person and place and somehow, then only it is possible to make exertion to acquire it, or attempt to reject it.

All exertions and cessation of exertion are possible only with regard to objects which are not absolute existences. All objects are either Dravyas or different modifications of Dravyas, and called Paryāya. The Dravya or substance alone is qualified by the attribute of Sattva or real, while Paryāya or modification has the quality of Asattva or non-real. Paryāya or modification is the particular state in which the substance may exist. They have different conditions of permanency and non-permanency, of origination and destruction, etc. The substance is permanent, its modification is impermanent, the substance is real, its modifications are unreal, the substance has no origin or destruction, its modifications have origin and destruction. This is the theory of the Jainas.

*Doubt*: These several categories taught by the Arhats, namely, Souls, Non-souls, etc., are they reasonable or not?

*Pūrrapakṣā*: This theory is reasonable, because it is established by the logic of seven paralogsims.

*Siddhānta*: This is, however, not true; every thing is not of an ambiguous nature as the Jainas hold. This is established by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 2. 33.

नैकस्मिन्नसम्भवान् ॥ २ । २ । ३३ ॥

न Na, not. एकस्मिन् Ekasmin, in one substance. असम्भवात् Asambhavât, because of the impossibility.

33. These categories cannot be established, because it is impossible that in one substance there may simultaneously exist opposing qualities, such as real and non-real, etc.—206.

#### COMMENTARY

These categories of the Jainas and their seven-fold reasoning cannot be established, because in one substance it is not possible that contradictory qualities should exist simultaneously. No one ever sees the same object to be hot and cold, at the same time. Moreover, it would be useless to lay down rules of practice for the attainment of heaven, for the avoidance of hell, or for release ; because there being no certainty about anything,

the heaven may as well be hell, and final release not different from these. Since every thing is ambiguous, there would be nothing to distinguish heaven, hell and release from each other. Not only would arise the confusion with regard to objects of the other world, but of this world also. If the things are indefinite, and if every thing is "somehow it is, somehow it is not," then a person wanting water, will go and take fire to quench his thirst, and so on with every thing else; for it may be that fire is hot, it may be that fire is cold. Similarly, in this system, there exists not only difference between objects but non-difference also; thus water is not only different from fire, but it is also not different from it, and hence a man may desist from fire, if he wants water, when he thinks of the difference between the two; but he may try to use fire, as water, when he thinks of their non-difference. Their logic, therefore, is fragile as the thread of a spider and cannot stand the strain of reasoning. As a matter of fact, substances are definite and the means of establishing their definiteness are the various categories or Bhaṅgas, and the Soul is the subject that makes this definition, and the fruit of this process is definite conception. But in this system of indefiniteness, nothing can be asserted as either existing or non-existing, and nothing can be known for certainty. What is, therefore, the use of examining this system any further, and when nothing is ascertainable in this system?

In the next Sūtra the author refutes that doctrine of the Jainas which declares that the Soul has the size of the body.

SŪTRA II., 2. 34.

एवं चात्माकात्स्न्यम् ॥ २ । २ । ३४ ॥

एवं Evam, thus. च Cha, and. आत्म Âtmā, Soul or Âtman. आकात्स्न्यम् Akârtsnyam, not entireness, limitedness.

34. And in this view of the Jainas, the Soul also becomes mutilated, and loses its entireness.—207.

#### COMMENTARY

The Jaina thory is open not only to the objection of predicating contradictory attributes, like existence and non-existence, etc., to the same object, at the same time; but their Âtman also becomes non-entire and mutilated. They hold that the Jiva has the size of the body that it animates. Therefore, the Soul of a child or a youth being smaller in size, would not be able to fill completely the body of the grown-up man.

nor would the Soul of a man, being of the size of the man, fill the entire body of an elephant, if owing to some fault of his past Karmanas, he is condemned to occupy that body. The body being thus too big for the Soul, it would not perceive the pleasure and pain in its entire organism. Similarly, when it is condemned to occupy a small body, like that of a mosquito or a gnat, it would be too big for that body and would not be able to enter it fully.

SŪTRA II., 2. 35.

न च पर्यायादप्यविरोधविकारादिभ्यः ॥ २ । २ । ३५ ॥

न Na, not, च Cha, and, पर्यायात् Paryāyāt, on account of the assumption of the doctrine of Paryāya or successive change; namely, that the Soul contracts and dilates, in succession, according to the size of the body. अपि Api, also. अविरोधः Avirodhaḥ, non-contradiction. विकारादिभ्यः Vikārādibhyaḥ, because it would be open to the objection of change, etc.

35. Nor would this contradiction be removed by assuming the theory of Paryāya, for then the Soul would be liable to change and the rest—208.

#### COMMENTARY

The Jaina may say the Soul is really indefinite in its size, and therefore, when it animates the bodies of an infant or a youth, it has that size, and when it occupies the bodies of horses or elephants, it expands itself to that size: and so by successive expansion and dilatation (just like a gas), it fully occupies the entire body that it for the time being animates: and thus there is no objection to our theory that the Soul is of the size of the body. To this, we say, that it cannot be so. Because it involves the undesirable assumption of the Soul being liable to change. In your own theory you also admit that the Soul is changeless. But if this Paryāya theory be admitted, then the Soul would become liable to change, and consequently it would become non-permanent. This is a conclusion which neither you nor any body else desires. Hence your theory is not a reasonable one.

There is another theory, that the Soul undergoes no change then only when it assumes the body of Release or the body of Mukti. In that body, the Soul has the size of the body and is unchanging as that body is unchanging and permanent. This modified theory which holds that the final size of the Soul results from the Muktadeha and in which the size and the Soul are both permanent because the Soul does not pass into another body, is also not reasonable. If this final body is produced at a certain period of time it must be liable to destruction. If it is not produced at a

particular period of time, then it is the eternal body of the Soul, which it possesses from the very beginning, and it being its real size, your theory of Paryāya falls to the ground. Moreover, in your theory of every thing being indefinite, this ultimate size of the Soul may either be existent or non-existent, and so there would be no permanency of this size also.

In the next Sūtra the author shows the faults in the theory of release as taught by the Jainas.

SŪTRA II., 2. 36.

अन्यावस्थितेश्चोभयनित्यत्वादविशेषात् ॥ २ । २ । ३६ ॥

अन्यावस्थिते Antyāvasthiteh, in the final state, on account of the permanency of the final condition or release. च Cha, and. उभय Ubhaya, both. नित्यत्वात् Nityatvāt, of being permanent. अविशेषात् Avišeṣāt, because there being no difference.

36. The final condition or the state of release being not different from the worldly state, because both are eternal, so this theory is untenable.—209.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Not" is understood in this Sūtra from the last one. There is no peculiarity or difference according to the Jainas between the state of release and the mundane state. Both are permanent according to them. The Mukti is defined by them as eternal progress upward or remaining in the Aloka ākāśa. Both these are called states of release, whether the Soul makes eternal progress or is fixed in the Aloka-ākāśa. Thus there is no difference between the worldly existence and release. For motion, whether in the worldly cycle or whether in a straight line of infinite progression, is after all mundane. Moreover, no one can ever feel happiness in a state of constant upward motion, or in standing stationary without any support in one place. Thus both these ideas of the Mukti of the Jainas are not Soul-satisfying. The Jaina may say such a state of constant motion or permanent fixture may be a state of pain to an embodied Soul, but not to disembodied Mukta Jīva. To this we say, that even in the state of Mukti, the Soul has its various members and feels their burden just as it feels the weight of the body. Moreover, neither the condition of eternal progress nor the permanent fixture in Aloka ākāśa can be said to be eternal, because they presuppose action and consequently liability to certain destruction also. Therefore, this Jaina theory is futile and ludicrous. This refutation of the Jaina theory includes also the

refutation of the Mâyāvādins, the secret friends of the Jainas, who also assert that this world is a Mâyâ, neither real, nor non-real; and that Brahman taught in the Upaniṣads is not predicable by any words.

### *Adhikaraṇa VII.—Pāśupata system reviewed.*

The author now refutes the opinions of sectarians like the followers of Paśupati, Gaṇeśa and Sūrya. The Pāśupatas maintain that cause, effect, meditation (Yoga), discipline (Vidhi), and the end of pain are the five categories revealed by the great Lord Paśupati Himself, in order to break the bonds of the Soul called herein Paśu or animal. In this system Paśupati is the operative cause, and Mahat and the rest are the effects. The Yoga is the meditation, concentration, etc., through Omkāra. The Vidhi is the discipline such as bathing three times a day, etc., while the end of pain means release or Mokṣa. These are the five categories of the Pāśupatas. Similar to this doctrine, are the teachings of the followers of Gaṇeśa and Sūrya, who hold these deities to be the operative cause, and the Prakṛti and time are the causes of the creation of the world through the operative agency of these deities. By worshipping them the Soul attains proximity with these gods, and there accrues complete cessation of all pains, which is Mokṣa.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt, whether these systems of Pāśupatas and the rest are reasonable or not.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that this system is reasonable, because we see in ordinary life also, that an agent like a potter, etc., is only the operative cause of the jar which he makes, he is not its material cause. God, therefore, is only the operative cause of the universe, and not its material cause. The matter is supplied by the eternal Prakṛti. The disciplines laid down also are reasonable and practical.

*Siddhānta* : This is not the right view, as the author shows in the next Sūtra.

ŚĪTRA II., 2. 37.

पत्युरसामंजस्यात् ॥ २ । २ । ३७ ॥

*पत्युः* Patyuh, of the Lord, the doctrine of the three Patis or the Lords, *viz.*, Paśupati, Gaṇapati, and Dinapati. *असामंजस्यात्* Asāmañjasyāt, on account of untenableness, inappropriateness.

37. The teaching of Paśupati is also not right, because of its inappropriateness.—210.

## COMMENTARY

The word "not" is understood in this Sūtra. The doctrine taught by Paśupati is not right, because it is inappropriate, that is to say, it is opposed to the Vedas. The Vedas teach that the one God Nārāyaṇa is the sole cause of the creation of the world, while other deities like Brahmā, Rudra etc., are creatures of Him. It teaches that release depends upon devotion (Bhakti), knowledge (Jñāna), and the proper performance of the duties of one's order and caste as taught by Nārāyaṇa. As we find in the Mahā Upaniṣad :

तदाहुरेको ह वै नारायण यासीन्न ब्रह्मा न ईशानो नापो नाग्नीसोमौ, नेमे द्यावापृथिवी न नक्षत्राणि न सूर्यः स एकाकी नर एव । तस्य ध्यानान्तस्थस्य यत्नः स्तोममुच्यते । तस्मिन् पुरुषोश्चतुर्दशाजायन्त एका कन्या । दशेन्द्रियाणि मन एकादशम् । तेजो द्वादशम् । षडङ्गारम्बोदशः ! प्राणाश्चतुर्दश आत्मा । पञ्चदशी बुद्धिः । पञ्चतन्मात्राणि पञ्चमहाभूतानि । म एष पञ्चविंशतः पुरुषः । तं पुरुषं पुरुषो निवेश्य । नाम्य प्रजा न संवत्सरा जायन्ते संवत्सरादधि जायन्ते ॥ १ ॥

इत्थं पुनरेव नारायणः सोऽन्यत्कामो मनसा ध्यायेत तस्य ध्यानान्तस्थस्य ललाटात् व्यक्तः शूलपाणिः पुरुषोजायत बिभ्रन्किङ्कयं सत्यं ब्रह्मचर्यं तपो वैराग्यं मन ऐश्वर्यं मप्रगवा व्याहृत्य ऋग्यजुः सामाथर्वाङ्गिरसः सर्वाणि हृन्दांसि तान्यङ्गेष्वभितानि ॥ २ ॥

Thus say the sages how creation arose. Nārāyaṇa alone existed in the beginning. There was neither Brahmā nor Iṣāna, nor Water, nor Fire, nor Moon : nor these heaven and earth ; nor the stars, nor the Sun. He being alone, did not rejoice (and so entered into meditation). Of Him thus meditating, there arose sacrifice and the hymns of the Vedas. From Him arose fourteen Puruṣas and one Daughter, namely, ten Indriyas and Manas the eleventh, Tejas the twelfth, Ahaiṅkāra, the thirteenth, and Prāṇa, the fourteenth, called Atmā. (These are the fourteen Puruṣas). Fifteenth is the Daughter called Buddhi. (Ātmā is the fifteenth the daughter above-mentioned, according to Saṅkarānanda). (From Him arose) the five Tanmātras, and the five Mahābhūtas. This Nārāyaṇa is the twenty-five-fold Puruṣa (or He who pervades these twenty-five principles). . . Of Nārāyaṇa thus meditating there arose from His forehead Sūlapāṇi having three eyes, holding Śrī, Truth, Brahma-charya, Austerity, Dispassion, etc.

This shows that the four-faced Brahmā arose from Nārāyaṇa as well as Paśupati or Siva. In another Upaniṣad also we find the same (Nārāyaṇa Upaniṣad) :

अथ पुरुषो ह वै नारायणोऽकामयत प्रजाः सृजेयेति । नारायणात्प्राणो जायते । मनः सर्वेन्द्रियाणि च । खं वायुर्ज्योतिरापः पृथिवी विश्वस्य धारिणी । नारायणाद्ब्रह्मा जायते नारायणाद्भूतो जायते नारायणात्प्रजापतिर्जायते नारायणादिन्द्रो जायते नारायणादष्टौ सवो नारायणादेकादश रुद्रा नारायणाद्वादशादित्याः सर्वा देवताः सर्वे ऋषयः सर्वाणि हृन्दांसि सर्वाणि च भूतानि नारायणादेव समुत्पद्यन्ते नारायणे प्रलीयन्ते नारायणे प्रलीयन्ते ॥ १ ॥

Now verily Nārāyaṇa the Puruṣa desired, "Let me create offspring." From Nārāyaṇa were produced the Prāṇa, Manas and all the sense organs. From Him arose the ether, air,

light, water, and earth, the upholder of all. From Nārāyaṇa arose Brahmā, from Nārāyaṇa was produced Rudra, from Nārāyaṇa was produced Prajāpati, from Nārāyaṇa was produced Indra, from Nārāyaṇa the eight Vasus, from Nārāyaṇa the eleven Rudras, from Nārāyaṇa the twelve Ādityas, all Devatās, all Ṛṣis, all Hymns, all Beings verily are produced from Nārāyaṇa and they merge into Nārāyaṇa.

So also in the R̥g Veda (X. 125., 1 to 8) we find :

अहम् रुद्रेभिः वसुभिः चरामि अहम् आदित्यैः उत विश्वदेवैः ।

अहम् मित्रावरुणा उभा विभर्मि अहम् इन्द्राग्नी अहम् अश्विना उभा ।

1. I travel with the Rudras and the Vasus, with the Ādityas and All-Gods I wander. I hold aloft both Varuṇa and Mitra, Indra and Agni, and the Pair of Aśvins.

अहम् सोमम् आहनमम् विभर्मि अहम् त्वष्टारम् उत पूषणम् भगम् ।

अहम् दधामि द्रविणम् हविष्मते सुप्रअव्ये यजमानाय सुन्वते ॥

2. I cherish and sustain high-swelling Soma, and Tvaṣṭar, I support Pūṣan, and Bhaga.

I load with wealth the zealous sacrificer who pours the juice and offers his oblation.

अहम् राष्ट्री संगमनी वसुनां चीकितुषो अथमा यज्ञियानाम् ।

ताम् मा देवाः विश्वदधुः पुरुत्रा भूरिस्थात्राम् भूरिअवेशयन्तीम् ॥

3. I am the Queen, the gatherer-up of treasures, most thoughtful, first of those who merit worship.

Thus Gods have established me in many places with many homes to enter and abide in.

मया सः अन्नम् अस्ति यः विपश्यति यः प्राणिति यः ईम् शृणोति उक्तम् ।

असन्तवः माम् ते उपक्षिपन्ति श्रुधि श्रुत श्रद्धिन्म् ते वदामि ॥

4. Through me alone all eat the food that feeds them,—each man who sees, breathes, hears the word outspoken.

They know it not, but yet they dwell beside me. Hear, one and all, the truths as I declare it.

अहम् एव स्वयम् इदम् वदामि जुष्टम् देवेभिः उत मानुषेभिः ।

यम् कामये तम् तम् उग्रम् अणोमि तम् ब्रह्माणम् तम् अविम् तम् सुमेधाम् ॥

5. I, verily, myself announce and utter the word that Gods and men alike shall welcome.

I make the man I love exceeding mighty, make him a sage, a Ṛṣi, and a Brahman.

अहम् रुद्राय धनुः आ तनोमि ब्रह्मद्विषे शरवे हन्तवै ऊँ ।

अहम् जनाय समदम् कृणोमि अहम् बावापृथिवी आ विवंश ॥

6. I bend the bow for Rudra that his arrow may strike and slay the hater of devotion.

I rouse and order battle for the people, and I have penetrated Earth and Heaven.

अहम् सुवे पितरम् अस्य मूर्धन् मम योनिः अप्सु अन्तः समुद्रं ।

ततः वितिष्ठे भुवना अनु विश्वा उत अमूम् धाम् वर्ष्मणा उप स्पृशामि ॥

7. On the world's summit I bring forth the Father ; my home is in the waters, in the ocean.

Thence I extend over all existing creatures, and touch even yonder heaven with my forehead.



अहम् एव वातः इव प्र वामि आरभमाणा भुवनानि विश्वा ।  
परः दिवा परः एना पृथिव्या एतावती महिना सम् बभूव ॥

8. I breathe a strong breath like the wind and tempest, the while I hold together all existence.

Beyond this wide earth and beyond the heavens I have become so mighty in my grandeur.

Similarly in the Yajur-Veda (Bṛhadâraṇyaka, IV., 4. 22.) we find it stated :

The knowers of Brahman seek to understand him by the study of the Veda, by sacrifice, by gifts, by penance, by fasting and he who knows him becomes a Muni.

So also (Bṛhadâraṇyaka, IV., 4. 21) :

Let a wise seeker of Brahman, after he has discovered Him, practise wisdom (that is, meditate on Him).

So also in (Bṛhadâraṇyaka, IV., 5. 6) :

Verily the Ātmā is to be seen to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked.

So also the Smṛtis, following in the footsteps of the Vedas, declare this truth over and over again. In some places, no doubt, of the Vedas and the Smṛtis the word "Paśupati," "Gaṇeśa," "Sūrya," etc., are used and they are described as the Ruler of all, the Cause of all, the Creator of all, etc. But in those places these words are to be taken in their etymological sense as applying to Nārāyaṇa. Thus the word 'Paśupati' there would mean the Lord of all Souls, 'Gaṇeśa' the Lord of hosts, 'Sūrya,' the Goal of the wise (Sūri), just as the word Indra in the Veda is the name of the Supreme Lord, being derived from the root √ Ind "to rule." Thus all the Vedas and the Smṛtis really describe Nārāyaṇa, the Supreme Brahman and not any lower deity. The proper interpretation of Vedic texts, therefore, is that "Supreme Brahman is the real Creator."

The sectarians like Pāśupatas and the rest have, by mere arguments and reasoning, established the existence of the Lord. But reasoning must be according to worldly rules, and it cannot establish such existence. These sectarians also hold that the Lord is only the operative cause which cannot be established by reasoning. Because it is impossible that the Lord should be the mere operative cause of the world, for then His connection with the world cannot be established. In ordinary worldly life we see, that a potter, who is merely the operative cause of the pot, has a certain connection with the clay with which he fashions the pot. What is that connection of the Lord with Pradhāna and the Souls, with which He creates the world? These sectarians cannot establish that connection. The next Sūtra shows this.

~

SŪTRA II., 2. 38.

सम्बन्धानुपपत्तेश्च ॥ २ । २ । ३८ ॥

सम्बन्ध Sambandha, connection, relation "of the Lord with the world."  
अनुपपत्तेः Anupapatteh, because of the impossibility. च Cha, and.

28. The Lord can have no connection as Creator of the world, with the world, because of the impossibility of such a connection.—211.

## COMMENTARY

These sectarians hold that a Lord is without a body, consequently such a Lord can have no connection with Matter and Spirit. An embodied being, like a potter, can have such relation with clay, etc., because he has a body. But a bodiless Lord can have no such connection. Thus the very connection of Lord with Matter cannot be established in this theory.

SŪTRA II., 2. 39.

अधिष्ठानानुपपत्तेश्च ॥ २ । २ । ३९ ॥

अधिष्ठान Adhiṣṭhāna, superintendence or rulership, or staying in a place, having a position. अनुपपत्तेः Anupapatteḥ, because of the impossibility. च Cha. and.

39. A bodiless Lord cannot create the world, because He cannot occupy a position.—212.

## COMMENTARY

Controlling a thing is the function of embodied beings. It is by virtue of occupying a particular position, that an embodied being, like a potter, can control the clay and produce the effects like pots, etc. A disembodied being cannot do this.

It may be said that the Soul also is unembodied, but it rules the sense organs and the body, without any particular position, so the Lord also may control Pradhāna. To this the next Sūtra replies :

SŪTRA II., 2. 40.

करणवच्चैत्र भोगाऽऽदिभ्यः ॥ २ । २ । ४० ॥

करणवत् Karanavat, like the instruments of senses. चैत्र Chet, if. न Na, not. भोगादिभ्यः Bhogādibhyah, on account of enjoyment, etc.

40. If it be said that the Lord rules Matter, as the Soul rules the sense organs, we reply it cannot be so, because the Soul has to undergo certain experiences of pleasure and pain owing to its Karmas, not so the Lord.—213.

## COMMENTARY

You cannot say that Matter exists in Pralaya and the Lord creates the world with it, controlling it just as the Soul controls the sense organs.

You cannot say so, because the connection of the Soul with the body is in order that it may undergo certain experiences of birth and death, pleasure and pain, in order to get the results of its Karmas. But there is no such Karma in the case of the Lord. Why should then the Lord have any connection with Pradhāna, in order to create the world? If His connection is just like that of the Soul, then He would be subject to birth and death, pleasure and pain. When He will be in connection with Pradhāna that will be His birth, and He will be happy. When in Pralaya He renounces the Pradhāna, that will be His death and He will feel pain. Thus He will be no God at all.

It may be said, let us admit then that the Lord has also some sort of Karma, some sort of Aḍṛṣṭa, some sort of *good* Karma and *good* Aḍṛṣṭa, and that it is on account of such Karma, that the Lord gets the body with which He creates the universe. Just as we see a mighty monarch, owing to his great merit, gets a body and sphere of control or empire, over which he rules, but not so a poor Soul having not high merit behind it. This theory is also open to the following objection :

SŪTRA II., 2. 41.

अन्तवत्त्वमसर्वज्ञता वा ॥ २ । २ । ४१ ॥

अन्तवत्त्वम् Anavattvam, finiteness. असर्वज्ञता Asarvajñatā, want of omniscience. वा Vā, or.

41. If the Lord has Karma, (however high and refined it may be), then He would be either a finite being or not possessed of omniscience.—214.

COMMENTARY

If the Lord has a body, on account of some Karma of His own, then He would be finite like any ordinary Jīva, nor would He be omniscient. For he only who is not subject to Karma can appropriately have omniscience. But the Pāṣupatas maintain that the Lord is destructionless and all-knowing. Thus there arises this contradiction in their theory. Says the Pāṣupata, "But does not this objection apply to your Brahman also ; for you also believe that your God is a personal one? To this we reply, that our theory of a personal Brahman is not open to this objection, for we do not believe in this on account of any reason or arguments, but because it is so mentioned in the scriptures. The sacred revelation describes Brahman with personal attributes, and we never try to reconcile this description with reason. In fact, in Sūtra II., 1. 27, we have already shown this.

The holy Bādarāyaṇa does not show any disrespect to the mighty deities like Paśupati or Gaṇapati or Dinapati; all that he means is that these Patīs or Lords are not independent agents, as their worshippers misconceive, but work under the will and direction of the supreme Brahman. The author of the Sūtras refutes only the mistaken notion of these sectarians, when they attribute perfect independence to their deity. Since they are Cosmic Agents or Lords, we acknowledge that they deserve all reverence and worship, but we do not forget their subordinate position to the Over-Lord. Those five Sūtras are meant thus to refute the doctrine of these Patīs or Lords. The word 'Pati' is mentioned in the Sūtra without any distinctive attribute, and thus includes all the three Patīs, namely, the Lord of the Soul, the Lord of the hosts, and the Lord of the day.

Others hold that these Sūtras refute the Lord of the argumentative philosophers and the rationalists, who try to establish the existence of a God by mere reasoning without revelation.

### *Adhikaraṇa VIII.—The Śakti theory reviewed.*

The author now refutes the theory of the Śāktas. They hold that Śakti alone is the cause of the world, that She is possessed with the attributes of omnipotence, omniscience and the rest.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is it possible that Śakti should be the independent Creator of the world ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : No agent can accomplish any thing without energy or Śakti. The effect must, therefore, be attributed not to the apparent agent. A red-hot iron has the power of burning, but the effect of burning should be properly attributed to the fire, and not to the iron through which the fire manifests itself. It is the eternal energy, working through the Lord, that creates the world, and the Lord without the Energy has no creative power. Thus Śakti is the real Creator.

*Siddhānta* : The author refutes this by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II, 2. 42.

उत्पत्त्यसम्भवात् ॥ २ । २ । ४२ ॥

उत्पत्ति, Utpatti, origination, creation. असम्भवात् Asambhavât, on account of the impossibility.

42. Śakti alone cannot create, for creation is impossible without the co-operation of the Lord.—215.

## COMMENTARY

The word “*not*” is understood in this Sūtra. The followers of Sakti have imagined Her to be the sole cause of the world, by reasoning alone, unsupported by Vedic authority. Since they base their theory on reason, they must be refuted by such reason as would appeal to the common sense of mankind. It is not possible that Śakti should be the Mother of the whole Universe, because She has no power of origination singly. We do not find in this world immaculate conception, nor do women give birth to children without connection with men. To attribute omniscience, etc., to Sakti is the mere outcome of non-reasoning, because we do not find energy showing these attributes anywhere. Says a Śākta, “We admit that there is a Puruṣa (Śiva), the husband of Sakti, and She creates the universe through Her connection with Him.” To this we reply that this also is not right, as is shown in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 2. 43.

न च कर्तुः करणम् ॥ २ । २ । ४३ ॥

न Na, not. च Cha, and. कर्तुः Karttuḥ, of the agent “Śiva.” करणम् Karanam, sense organ.

43. The Creator has no sense instruments to come in connection with Śakti.—216.

## COMMENTARY

Even if it be admitted that there is a Lord, who has connection with Sakti, yet in His case also there is absence of sense instruments like body, etc., with which He may create the universe. Thus it is not possible that such a Puruṣa can have any connection with Śakti. If, however, it be assumed that He has a body and sense organs, then the objections raised in Sūtra II., 2. 40, would apply to Him.

But says an objector : It need not be that the body and the sense organs of the Lord, are like ours, made of matter and the result of Karma, He may have a body consisting of eternal knowledge, volition, etc. To this the author answers by the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 2. 44.

विज्ञानादिभावे वा तदप्रतिषेधः ॥ २ । २ । ४४ ॥

विज्ञान Vijnāna, knowledge. आदि Âdi, and the rest भावे Bhāve, of the nature of. वा Vâ, or. तत् Tat, that. अप्रतिषेधः Apratiṣedhaḥ, non-contradiction.

44. If it be said that the body of the Lord consists of knowledge and so on, then there is no contradiction (for such a Lord is our Brahman).—217.

## COMMENTARY

If this Lord of the Śāktas be assumed to have body and sense organs, consisting of eternal knowledge, volition, etc., then there is no contradiction; and the Śākta theory would become included in the Vedānta theory of Brahman. For, we do admit that the creation proceeds from such a Lord.

We do not refute the theory of the Śāktas as a whole, but only that portion of it which makes Śakti independent of the Lord. The extreme Śāktas hold that Śakti *alone* is the cause of the universe. This must not be respected by any one who wishes to attain final beatitude. The author, therefore, finishes up with the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 2. 45.

विप्रतिषेधाच्च ॥ २ । २ । ४५ ॥

विप्रतिषेधाच्च Vipratishedhāt, on account of contradiction with all authorities, च Cha, and.

45. The theory of the extreme Śāktas is untenable, because it contradicts all sacred authorities—218.

## COMMENTARY

The theory that Sakti *alone* creates the world is untenable, since it contradicts the revelation, the tradition and reason. As we find in the Padma Purāṇa :

श्रुतयः स्मृतयश्चैव युक्तयश्चेश्वरं परम् ।

वदन्ति तद् विरुद्धं यो वदेत् तस्मान्न न चाश्रयः ॥

The Srutis, the Smṛtis and reasonings all are unanimous in declaring that the Lord is the Supreme. He who declares any thing against it is the vilest of the vile.

The force of the word "and" in this Sūtra is to bring in the reasoning of II., 2. 42, here also.

Thus in this Pāda has been shown that the paths of the Sāṅkhyas, Vaiśeṣikas and the rest down to the Śāktas, are strewn with thorns and are full of difficulties, while the path of Vedānta is free from all these defects and should be trodden by every one who wishes his final beatitude and emancipation.

Here ends the Second Pāda of the Second Adhyāya of the Vedānta Sūtras and Govinda Bhāṣya.

## SECOND ADHYĀYA

### THIRD PĀDA

व्योमादिविषयां गोभिर्विमर्ति विजधान यः ।

स तां मद विषयां भास्वान् कुण्डः प्रशिह्निष्यति ॥

May that Kṛṣṇa who has destroyed with the rays of His wisdom the wrong notions of people about ether, etc., destroy also my worldly propensities.

#### *Adhikaraṇa I.—Ether is a product*

In the Second Pāda has been shown the fallacious reasoning contained in the theories regarding Pradhāna and others. In the Third Pāda will be shown the origination of various Tattvas from the Lord of all at the time of creation; their merging into Him again at Pralaya, as well as that the Souls do not originate (but are eternal) and that they have a body of intelligence in which resides knowledge, that they are Atomic but all-pervading through the rays of their knowledge, that they are agents and portions of Brahman. It will further be shown that the various Avatāras like those of the Fish, etc., are full and complete manifestations of the Lord. It will also be shown that the diversities seen among the Jivas are caused by their Karmas. All this is demonstrated by refuting the contrary arguments, in the present Pāda.

The order of the origin of the various Tattvas held authoritative in this system is that which is laid down in the Scriptures like those of Subāla, etc., namely, Pradhāna, Mahat, Ahaṅkāra, Tanmātras, Senses and the Gross Elements beginning with Ether. The order of succession, as we find laid down in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad and the rest, has also been discussed here, in order to show that there is no real conflict between these texts of the Subālas and the Taittirīyas. This will be clearly shown later on.

स देव सोम्येदमग्र आसीदेकमेवाद्वितीयं तद्वैक आदुरसदेवेदमग्र आसीदेकमेवाद्वितीयं तस्मादसः सज्जायेत ॥ १ ॥ कुंस्तु खलु सोम्येव स्यादिति होवाच कथमसतः सज्जायेतेति सत्त्वेव सोम्येदमग्र आसीदेकमेवाद्वितीयम् ॥ २ ॥ तदेतत् बहु स्यां प्रजायेयेति तत्तेजोऽसृजत तत्तेज ऐतत् बहु स्यां प्रजायेयेति तदधोऽसृजत तस्माद्यत्र क च शोचति स्वेदते वा पुरुषस्तेजस एव तदध्यापो जायन्ते ॥ ३ ॥ ता आप ऐच्छन्त बह्व्यः स्याम प्रजायेमहीति ता अन्नमसृजन्त तस्माद्यत्र क च वर्धते तदेव भूयिऽमन्नं भवत्यद्भ्य एव तदध्वन्नाद्यं जायते ॥ ४ ॥

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, we find the following (VI, 2, Verses 1 to 4).

1. The Sat (Good) alone, O child, existed in the beginning (for this creation), one only without an equal. About this others say, the Asat (Void) alone existed in the beginning of this creation, one only without a second, from that Void (Asat) was produced the Plenum (Sat).

2. "But, O child, how could it be thus?" said the Father. "How from the Void should be born the Plenum?" Therefore, the Sat (the Good) alone existed, O child, in the beginning of this creation, one only, without an equal.

3. He thought, "I shall assume many forms (in order to govern the world) and create beings." He created Fire. The Goddess of Fire thought, "I shall assume many forms and create beings." She created the Waters (Apas). Therefore, wherever and whenever any body weeps or perspires, water comes out; for it is from fire that water is produced.

4. The (God of) water thought, "May I multiply and create beings!" He created (Rudra, the God of) Food (Earth). Therefore, wherever and whenever it rains much food is produced; therefore, from Water alone is produced all food fit for eating.

In this passage it is mentioned that Fire, Water and Food came out of Brahman, and are, therefore, products. This gives rise to the doubt, namely, whether Âkāśa or Ether is also produced or not. In this text there is no mention of the creation of Ether. The Pūrvapakṣin, therefore, starts the next Sūtra by declaring that Ether has no origin, because the text is silent about it.

SŪTRA II. 3. 1.

न वियदश्रुतेः ॥ २ । ३ । १ ॥

न Nā, not. वियद् Viyat, Ether, Space. अश्रुतेः Aśruteḥ, on account of no Scriptural statement, on account of its not being mentioned in this text.

1. The Ether has no origin, because it is not heard in the above text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad.—219.

COMMENTARY

Ether is eternal and all-pervasive. It has no origin, because had it an origin the above text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad would not have omitted to mention such a fact. Since there is such an omission in that Upaniṣad which treats of the successive origin of the various elements and confines itself, solely, to Fire, Water and Earth and is silent about Ether, we are right in asserting that Ether has no origin.

This *primâ facie* view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II. 3. 2.

अस्ति तु ॥ २ । ३ । २ ॥

अस्ति Asti, is, there is an origin. तु Tu, but.

2. But there is the origin of Ether also.—220,



## COMMENTARY

The word "but" is used in this Sūtra in order to remove the doubt raised in the preceding Sūtra. The Ether certainly has an origin. Though the Chhândogya Upaniṣad does not mention its origin, we find it expressly stated in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad; and it is a well-known rule of interpretation that the omission of one text should be supplied from another when possible.

तस्मादा एतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः । आकाशादायुः । वायोरग्निः । अग्नेरावः । अद्भ्यः पृथिवी ।

From that Self (Brahman) sprang Ether (Ākāśa, that through which we hear); from ether air (that through which we hear and feel); from air fire (that through which we hear, feel and see); from fire water (that through which we hear, feel, see and taste); from water earth (that through which we hear, feel, see, taste and smell).

This text shows that Ether also has its origin in the Lord.

The Pūrvapakṣin again raises the same doubt by explaining the above Taittiriya passage metaphorically. He says that the origin of Ether is not to be taken in its literal sense, but figuratively only. The Space or Ether being all-pervading, we cannot imagine its creation. Therefore, when any one says that Space is created, it is to be taken in a figurative sense. Thus as in a crowd, one may say "make space", which does not mean "create space," but to make room for some person by removing the crowd.

## SŪTRA II, 3, 3.

गौणमम्भवान् शब्दाच्च ॥ २ । ३ । ३ ॥

गौणी Gaunī, figurative. अम्भवान् Asambhavât, because of the impossibility. शब्दान् Śabdât, because of the Scripture च Cha, and

3. Creation of Ether is figurative only, because it is impossible to create it and because of the text.—221.

## COMMENTARY

It is not possible to imagine the origin of Space or Ether. The great philosophers like Kaṇāda and the rest have fully shown that Space cannot be created, but is eternal. The origin which the Taittiriya text mentions is figurative only, as we find people say "make space" or "the space is made." It is impossible to make space, for it is formless and all-pervading. If Ether was also a product, what is its cause? There cannot be an effect without a cause. Moreover, the express text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad shows that Ākāśa has no origin. It says "Vāyu and Antarikṣa (Space)—both are immortal." (Bṛ. Up., II, 3, Verses 2, 3).

Thus from this text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, we learn that Space has no origin.

(The doubt raised in this Sūtra will be answered in the Sūtra after the next). An objector may say that the word "Sambhūta" is used in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, and it has the definite meaning of "born" or "produced." In the case of Fire and the rest, mentioned in that text, the word "produced" is taken in its literal sense. How do you interpret the same word, used in the same passage, in a figurative sense? The rule of interpretation is that if a word is used in the same passage several times, it must be explained everywhere in the same sense, and not in its literal sense in one place, and in its figurative sense in another. This objection is thus answered by the Pūrvapakṣin.

SŪTRA II., 3. 4.

म्याच्चैकस्य ब्रह्मशब्दवत् ॥ २ । ३ । ४ ॥

म्यात् Syāt, there may be, that is, one word may be used in a secondary as well as a primary sense in the same sentence. च Cha, and. एकस्य Ekasya, of one word. ब्रह्मशब्दवत् Brahmaśabdavat, like the word Brahman.

4. One word may have a double sense in the same sentence as the word Brahman in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, III., 2—222.

COMMENTARY

The word Brahman occurs in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, III., 2. and subsequent passages thus—

नयमा ब्रह्मजिज्ञान्स्व नयो ब्रह्म ॥

"Try to know Brahman by penance, for penance is Brahman." Now in this sentence, the Brahman in the first part is taken in its literal sense of denoting the Supreme Being, while in the second portion it is used in a secondary meaning, namely, the means of knowing Brahmaa. Similarly, the word "Sambhūta" used in Taittirīya, II., 1., may be taken in a secondary sense with regard to Ākāśa and in its primary sense with regard to other elements like fire, water and earth. Therefore, this text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad declaring the origination of Ether is superseded by the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad where there is no mention of the origin of Ether.

This objection of the Pūrvapakṣin is thus answered by the author:

SŪTRA. II., 3. 5.

प्रतिज्ञाहानिरव्यतिरेकाच्छब्देभ्यः ॥ २ । ३ । ५ ॥

प्रतिज्ञा Pratijñā, promissory statement, enunciation of the general proposition. अहानिः Ahāniḥ, non-abandonment, adherence to. अव्यतिरेकात् Avyatiirekāt,

on account of non-difference. शब्देभ्यः Sabdebhyaḥ, from the words, namely, from the expressed texts of the Veda.

5. The adherence to the proposition enunciated in the beginning of Adhyāya VI of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad can take place only then, when the existence of nothing else than Brahman is posited and this is the case proved from the words of the sacred scriptures also—223.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, Chapter VI, Khanda I, Uddālaka promises to teach his son that 'by which we hear what cannot be heard, by which we perceive what cannot be perceived, by which we know what cannot be known.' This promise can only be fulfilled if Brahman, which is evidently meant by Uddālaka, be the only substance existing in the beginning of creation. If in the beginning every thing be held to be non-different from Brahman, it would be then only that the knowledge of Brahman would lead to the knowledge of every thing else. But if the effect (world) be different from Brahman then the knowledge of Brahman would not necessarily lead to the knowledge of the world. The word non-difference in the Sūtra means that one must realise that Brahman is the material cause of the world as well, not only the operative cause. Hence this universal proposition asserted in the beginning of Chapter VI of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, namely, that one substance by knowing which every thing else is known, leads to the conclusion that every thing else is caused by Brahman, and hence we interpret the sixth Khanda of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad in conformity with this general proposition. We, therefore, hold that even Uddālaka held the opinion that Âkāśa also originated from Brahman, though he does not expressly say so.

Not only is this to be inferred from the general promissory statement above referred to, but from the other texts of the same Upaniṣad also. Thus VI., 2. 1, begins with the well-known statement

मदेव सौम्य इदमग्रयासीत् । एकमेवाद्वितीयम् ।

In the beginning, My dear, there was That only Which Is, One only without a second.

Again in VI., 8. 7, and in subsequent Khandas he asserts :

स य एषोऽग्निमेतदात्म्यमिदं सर्वं तत्सत्यम् ।

Now that which is that subtle essence, in it all that exists has its self, it is the true.

These passages show that in the beginning Brahman alone existed, and every thing else existed in Brahman in a state of unity or non-difference

from Him. They existed in such a subtle state that one could not say that they were separate from Brahman. These two passages of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad show that *before* creation (or in Pralaya) one-ness (Ekamevâdvitīyam) of every thing was the case, and during and after creation (Sṛṣṭi) Aitad-âtmyam is the Law, namely, every thing in creation has Brahman for its innermost Self.

If it be objected, "There is no express text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad declaring the origination of Âkâśa and you cannot infer from mere reasoning that Chhândogya Upaniṣad also meant to teach that Âkâśa is a product," then we reply that it is not so. The next Sūtra gives the reason :

SŪTRA II., 3. 6.

यावद्विकारं तु विभागो लोकवत् ॥ २ । ३ । ६ ॥

यावद्विकारम् Yâvatvikāram, so far as all modifications go, wherever there is an effect. तु Tu, but. विभागः Vibhāgaḥ, division, origination. लोकवत् Lokavat, like in the world.

6. But the Upaniṣad teaches that whatever is an effect has an origin, as we see in the world.—224.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" shows that the doubt raised in the last Sūtra is being removed. The phrase 'All this has its self in Him, etc., etc.,' is a proposition stating that every effect has its origin in Him. In sacred texts like those of Subhāla Upaniṣad, we find that Pradhâna, Mahat, and the rest are all effects, and those texts expressly teach that they have their origin from Brahman. This is just like what we find in ordinary world.

If a man says, "All these are sons of Chaitra" and then he gives certain particulars about the birth of one of them, he implies thereby that it applies to the birth of all the rest. Similarly, when the Upaniṣad says that "All this has its self in Him," and then it goes on to give the origin of some of them from Him, such as fire, water and earth, it does not mean that others have not their origin in Him, but it only means that it was not thought necessary to give a detailed account of their origin. In fact, in Subhāla Upaniṣad it is stated that Pradhâna, Mahat and the rest have their origin in Brahman. Therefore, though there is no express text in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad as to the origin of Âkâśa, yet we infer from the universal proposition therein laid down that "EVERY THING has its self in Him," that Âkâśa also has its self in Brahman, and so is produced from Brahman.

The word 'Vibhāga' or 'division' means here 'origination.' The Sūtra,

II, 3, 3, asserts that we cannot conceive the origin of space. To this it may be replied that the powers of Brahman are mysterious and inconceivable, and Ākāśa arises from Brahman, though we cannot conceive how space can have any origin.

In some passages, Ākāśa no doubt is said to be Amṛtam or immortal, birthless and deathless, but we must understand it in a figurative sense, and not absolutely in its literal. Because we find in other passages that it has an origin and destruction. Thus we infer that Ākāśa also must have been taught by Uddālaka to have an origin and an end. Ākāśa is an element, like fire and air; therefore, it must have an origin. It is the substrate of impermanent qualities like sound, etc., and so also it must be impermanent. This is the direct argument to prove the origin and destruction of Ākāśa. The indirect argument to prove it is, 'whatever has no origin is eternal as the Soul,' and 'whatever has permanent qualities is eternal as the Soul,' but the Ākāśa not being like Soul in these respects, cannot be eternal. Thus both from direct and indirect reasoning, we infer the impermanency of Space. This Sūtra answers the objection raised in II, 3, 4, also. Therefore, the opinion of the modern philosophers, who hold that space has no origin, is untenable.

In the next Sūtra the same arguments are applied analogically to prove the origin of Vāyu also.

### *Adhikaraṇa II.—Air is a product.*

SŪTRA II, 3, 7.

एतेन मातरिश्वा व्याख्यातः ॥ २ । ३ । ७ ॥

एतेन Etena, by this (the explanation about the Ākāśa being a product). मातरिश्वा Mātarīśvā, the mover in mother-space, the child of the virgin mother, the Vāyu, the Christ. व्याख्यातः Vyākhyātaḥ, is explained.

7. Hereby is explained the origination of the Air also.—225.

#### COMMENTARY

This explanation regarding the origination of space, explains also that Air has an origin as well, and is an effect. When space itself has an origin, Air which moves in space, must have an origin. The argument is as follows :

The Pūrvapakṣin says that Air has no origin, because the Cuhāndogya Upaniṣad is silent upon this point. To this it is replied that Air originates from Ākāśa, because it is so mentioned in the Taittiriya

Upaniṣad. To this the Pūrvapakṣin rejoins that the birth of Air mentioned in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad is figurative only, because Air is said to be one of the immortals along with Ākāśa (See the text quoted from the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad under Sūtra II., 3. 3). To this we reply that even in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, the origination of Air is taught by implication, because it teaches that *every thing* has its self in Brahman, and that Uddālaka promises to teach *one* such thing, by knowing which every thing else would be known. Air, therefore, must also be an effect. No doubt, in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, air is said to be an immortal, but He (the God of air) is only relatively immortal or during one Kalpa. He never dies.

This Sūtra might well have been included in the Sūtra II., 3. 1, by making the latter somewhat like this, 'Nā viyat-mātarīśvānu, aśruteḥ,' 'the space and air have no origin because the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is silent on this.' But the author has not made the Sūtra thus, in order to indicate that in Sūtra II., 3. 9, the Anuvṛtti of Mātarīśvā alone is current, and not that of Ākāśa. Had the Sūtra not been separately enunciated, we could not have read the Anuvṛtti of Air alone in the Sūtra II., 3. 9, but of *both* Air and Space. Hence the necessity of Yoga-vibhāga or the splitting of one possible Sūtra into two

### Adhikaraṇa III.—Sat has no origin.

The author now raises another doubt : whether the Sat mentioned in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 2. 1, has any origin or not, for when it says, "Sat alone existed in the beginning, one only without a second," the doubt may arise, whether the Sat also has any origin. In other words, whether the Brahman itself has any origin. When such final causes as the Root-matter and space have origin, it is possible that Sat or Brahman may also have origin. For it is a final cause, like the Root-matter or Pradhāna, and like Space. In fact, a text of the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, (IV., 3) clearly says that Brahman also is born or has an origin.

त्वं स्त्री त्वं पुमानसि त्वं कुमार उत वा कुमारी । त्वं जीर्णो दग्धेन वंचसि त्वं जानो भवसि विश्वतोमुखः ॥

Thou art woman, thou art man, thou art youth, thou art maiden: thou, as an old man, totterest along on thy staff, thou art born with thy face turned everywhere.

This shows that Brahman also has an origin. The author answers this doubt by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 23. 8.

असम्भवस्तु सतोऽनुपपत्तेः ॥ २ । ३ । ८ ॥

असम्भवः Asambhavaḥ, non-origination. तु Tu, but. सः Sataḥ of the Sat of Brahman. अनुपपत्तेः Anupapatteḥ, on account of the impossibility (of there being an origin of Brahman).

8. But there can be no origin of Sat, because of its impossibility. (and unreasonableness).—226.

## COMMENTARY

The word "but" is used in order to remove the doubt. Of Brahman who is entitled to the designation of Sat, (*i.e.*, that which exists), there can be no origin or Sambhava. Why do we say so? Because he is the causeless cause of all, and of such a cause there can be no origin. Other causes may have an origin, nay they are bound to have an origin, but that which is the Sat, by its very name, cannot have any origination. Hence the same Śruti of Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad says (VI., 9):

न तस्य कश्चित् पतिरस्ति लोके न चेशना नेव च तस्य लिङ्गम् । स कारणं कारणाधिपतिर्न चास्य कश्चिज्जनिता न चाधिपः ॥ ६ ॥

There is no master of His in the world, no ruler of His, not even a sign of Him. He is the cause, the Lord of the lords of the causes, and there is of Him neither parent nor lord.

Nor is it valid to say that because every cause has an origin, Brahman being a cause, must have an origin. This would be against all sacred texts and reasonings. A final cause being admitted by you, it is not desirable to search any cause of it, for then there would be an infinite regress. That which is the root cause, must be admitted to be rootless. As says the Sāṅkhya Sūtra, I., 67 :

मूले मूलाभावादमूले मूलम् ।

Since the root has no root, the root (of all) is root-less, (that is to say, there is no other cause of Nature, because there would be a *regressus in infinitum*, if we were to suppose another cause, which, by parity of reasoning, would require another cause, and so on without end).

Thus removing the doubt as to whether Brahman has any origin or not, it is implied that Brahman alone being the Supreme cause is free from all origination, and every thing other than Brahman, such as Pradhāna, Mahat, etc., has no origin. The special Sūtras teaching the origin of Ākāśa and Vāyu are illustrative only; because they could have been deduced from the general proposition that every thing else than Brahman has an origin.

#### Adhikaraṇa IV.—The fire originates from air.

Having finished the digression about Brahman, the text now goes on with the reconciliation of the conflicting Śrutis as to the origination of fire. Some texts say that the fire originates direct from Brahman as the Chhândogya

Upaniṣad, IV., 2. 2. Others declare that it originates from air. Those texts are given below :

तदेक्षत बहु स्याम् प्रजायेयेति तत्तेजोऽसृजत ।

तत् तेजोऽप्रेक्षत बहु स्यां प्रजायेयेति तदपोऽसृजत ।

तस्माद् यत्र क च शोचति स्वेदने वा पुरुषस्तेजस एव तदध्यापो जायन्ते ।

It thought, may I be many, may I grow forth. It sent forth fire. The goddess of fire thought, may I be many, may I grow forth. She sent forth water. Therefore, wherever and whenever any body weeps or perspires, water comes out ; for it is from fire that water is produced. (See page 331 *ante*).

तस्माद्वा एतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः । आकाशाद् वायुः । वायोरग्निः । अग्नेरापः ।

From that Self sprang Ākāśa ; from Ākāśa, air ; from air, fire : from fire, water.

The Pūrvapakṣin says that fire comes direct from Brahman as taught in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad and the text of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad can be explained by interpreting the ablative case in the sense of showing sequence. 'Vâyoh Agnih.' The word Vâyoh is in the ablative case, and may be translated either as 'from Vāyu' or 'after Vāyu.' If translated 'after creating Vāyu, Brahman created Fire' there would be no conflict between the two Upaniṣads. The Siddhānta view, however, is that fire originates directly from air, and the next Sūtra teaches this.

SŪTRA., II., 3. 9.

तेजोतस्तथाद्याह ॥ २ । ३ । ६ ॥

तेजस् Tejas, fire. अतः Atah, from it, namely, from Mâtariśvan. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, because. आह Âha, says (the Scripture).

9. From Air is produced Fire, for thus says the Scripture.—227.

COMMENTARY

From Mâtariśvan comes out the Fire, and the Scripture teaches this also. 'Vâyoh Agnih'—'from Air, fire.' The sense is this. The word 'Sambhūta' or 'sprang' is used immediately before, and the sentence means 'from Air sprang Fire,' and we cannot translate this sentence 'after Air sprang Fire.' The primary meaning of the ablative case is that of 'from' and not 'after.' When the primary meaning is possible, it is not desirable to take the secondary meaning. No doubt, every thing springs or is produced really from Brahman, but some come out directly and others through the mediation of a link. As will be taught in Sūtra II., 3. 12. Thus there is no conflict between the Chhândogya and Taittiriya teaching.



*Adhikaraṇa V.—Water is produced from Fire.*

Now the author teaches the origin of Water. In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, Water is mentioned as originating direct from Brahman, while in other places it is mentioned as originating from Fire :

एतस्माज्जायते प्राणो मनः सर्वेन्द्रियाणि च । खं वायुर्ज्योतिरापः पृथिवी विश्वस्य धारिणी ॥ ३ ॥

From him (when entering on creation) is born breath, mind, and all organs of sense, ether, air, fire, water, and the earth, the support, of all. (Muṇḍaka, II. 1. 3).

In the Chhândogya and Taittirīya Upaniṣads, Water is said to be produced from Fire (Chh. Up., VI., 2. 3).

तत् तेज ऐक्यं बहु स्याम प्रजायेयेति तदपोसृजत ।

That fire thought, may I be many, may I grow forth. It sent forth water.

So also in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II., 1.

अग्नेरापः ।

From Fire sprang Water.

*Doubt* : Does water come out directly from fire or from Brahman ?

*Pūrvepakṣa* : Water comes out directly from Brahman as the Muṇḍaka text teaches. The ablative case must be explained in the sense of *after* ; and as regards the Chhândogya text, we must admit that there is a plain contradiction between it and the Muṇḍaka, which is simply irreconcilable.

*Siddhānta* : There is no such conflict as you apprehend. The next Sūtra answers your doubt.

SŪTRA II, 3. 10

आपः ॥ २ । ३ । १० ॥

आपः Āpah, waters. [अतः Atah, from it. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, because. आह Āha, says the Scripture.]

10. From Fire is produced Water, for thus says the Scripture.—228.

## COMMENTARY

The phrase "from it, thus the Scripture teaches" is to be supplied into this Sūtra, from Sūtra II, 3. 9, in order to complete the sense. The Water is produced from Fire, because the Scripture says : "That fire thought may I be many, may I grow forth. It sent forth water. (Ch. Up. VI., 2. 3)."

"From fire, water (Taittirīya, II., 1)."

There is no room for interpretation regarding a text which is express and un-ambiguous. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad also is given the reason, why water comes out of fire.

"And, therefore, whenever any body anywhere is hot and perspires, water is produced on him from fire alone."

Similarly, when a man suffers grief and is hot with sorrow, he weeps and thus water is also produced from fire.

*Adhikarāṇa VI.—Earth is produced from water and the word "food" in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad means earth.*

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we further find :

ता आप येज्जन्त बह्वयः स्याम प्रजायेमहीति ता अन्नमसृजन्त ॥

"Water thought may I be many, may I grow forth. It sent forth food."

Now what is the meaning of the word "food" here ? Does it mean rice, barley, etc., or does it mean earth ? The Pūrvapakṣin says it means corn, grain, etc., because of the reason given in the same Upaniṣad. *viz.*, "Therefore, whenever it rains anywhere, most food is then produced. From water alone is eatable food produced."

This shows that the word Annam means barley, etc., and not earth. This is one Pūrvapakṣa. Another Pūrvapakṣa arises from the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad where the earth is declared to come out directly from Brahman, and the Taittiriya Upaniṣad where it is said to come out from water. To remove both these doubts, the next Sūtra declares the Siddhānta view :

SŪTRA II., 3. 11.

पृथिव्यधिकाररूपशब्दान्तरेभ्यः ॥ २ । ३ । ११ ॥

पृथिवी Prthivī, earth. अधिकार Adhikāra, because of the context, because of the subject-matter. रूप Rūpa, colour. शब्दान्तरेभ्यः Sabdāntarebhyah, on account of other texts.

11. The word "food" in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 2. 4. means "earth." because the context there is about the creation of the great planes of existence, and because colour is mentioned regarding it, and because there are other sacred texts also.—229.

#### COMMENTARY

By the word Annam we must take here to mean "earth," and not barley, rice, etc., and this for three reasons :

(i) The whole Adhikāra or subject-matter of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI. 2, is the creation of elements, such as fire, water, etc. Food is not a Mahābhūta or element, hence its mention here would do violence to the context. It must, therefore, be explained as meaning an element, *i. e.*, earth.

(ii) Colour is mentioned with regard to food, which also shows that the word "food" here means "earth." Thus it is said, "the red colour

of the flame is the colour of fire, the white colour of the flame is the colour of water, the black colour of the flame is the colour of food (earth)."

(iii) There is an express text of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (Abhyah Prthivi), "from water, earth"; which clearly shows that earth is produced.

Of course, the reason given in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is more applicable to food than to earth, but then we must explain the word food as a figure of speech, the effect taken for the cause. Earth never arises from rain, ordinary eatables do arise from rain. And the reason given by the Chhândogya : "Whenever it rains anywhere most food is then produced" is applicable strictly to food. The word food here is used as a figure of speech for earth.

*Adhikaraṇa VII.—The great elements all arise direct  
from Brahman.*

The author in the preceding Sūtras has shown the creation of Ākāśa etc., in a certain order, the succession being that from ether arises air, from air fire, from fire water, and from water earth. This succession is given merely to remove doubt and controversy regarding the order of manifestation of these elements. As a matter of fact, there was no necessity of teaching it here, because the Sūtra I, 1. 2., defines Brahman to be the cause of the origination of everything. The root-matter Pradhâna, the great principle Mahat, and the rest, have been shown to arise out of Brahman in that Sūtra. Now is taught details about this origination. In the Subâla Upaniṣad we find :

किं तदासीत् ? तस्मै स बोवाच न सञ्जासन्न सदसदिति । तस्मात् तमः संजायते । तमसो भूतादि-  
भूतादेराकाशमाकाशश्च वायुवायोरग्निरग्नेरापोऽङ्गथः पृथिवी तदण्डमभवदिति ॥

The pupils ask, "What existed in the beginning?" To them, replied the teacher, 'neither being nor non-being, neither being-non-being existed then. It was both being and non-being. From it arose the Tamas (darkness), from Tamas arises the Bhûtâdi, from Bhûtâdi springs Ākāśa ; from Ākāśa, Vāyu ; from Vāyu, Fire, from Fire. Water ; from Water, Earth ; and this became an egg.'

Between Tamas and Ākāśa should be read the Akṣara, the Avyakta and the Mahat. And after Bhûtâdi should be read Tanmâtras and the Indriyas. Thus the complete order of creation is from Being-non-being arises Darkness, from Darkness arises the Imperishable ; from the Imperishable, the Unevolved ; from the Unevolved, the Great Principle ; from it the Tanmâtras ; from Tanmâtras, Indriyas or sense organs ; and then the five elements. This we must do, in order to harmonise the subsequent passage in the same Upaniṣad regarding the absorption of elements at the time of Pralaya. That passage is given below :

सन्दग्ध्वा सर्वाणि भूतानि पृथिव्यप्सु प्रलीयते । आपस्तेजसि लीयन्ते । तेजो वायौ विलीयते ।  
वायुराकाशे विलीयते । आकाशमिन्द्रियेभ्विन्द्रियाणि तन्मात्रेषु ; तन्मात्राणि भूतादौ विलीयन्ते । भूतादि-

महति विलीयते । महानव्यक्ते विलीयते । अव्यक्तमक्षरं विलीयते । अक्षरं तमसि विलीयते । तम एकीभवति परस्मिन् । परस्मात् न सन्नान्न सदसदिति ॥

When all beings are thus burnt up, the earth is merged in water, water in fire, fire in air, air in the ether, the ether in the sense-organs, the sense-organs in the Tannmātras, the Tannmātras in the Bhūtādi, (Ahaṅkāra) ; the Bhūtādi in the Great Principle, the Great Principle in the Unevolved, the Unevolved in the Imperishable ; the Imperishable is merged in Darkness : Darkness becomes one with the highest Divinity.

The highest Divinity is that which has been defined as neither Sat (dense world) nor Asat (the subtle world), neither Sat-Asat (the mixture of the two forms) ; but something transcending both and from which arise the Sat and Asat.

The word Bhūtādi in the above means the principle of Ahaṅkāra which is three-fold. From the Sātvika Ahaṅkāra arises Manas and the Devatās. From the Rājas Ahaṅkāra arise the sense-organs, from the Tāmasa Ahaṅkāra arise the Tannmātras, from which arise the five gross elements.

In the Gopāla Upaniṣad it is said :

पूर्वं ह्यस्मेवाद्वितीयं ब्रह्मासीत् । तस्मादव्यक्तं व्यक्तमेवाक्षरम् । तस्मादक्षरात् महाम् । महतो वा अहङ्कारस्तस्मादहङ्कारात् पञ्च तन्मात्राणि । तेभ्यो भूतानि तैरावृत्तमक्षरं भवतीति ।

In the beginning there existed Brahman alone, one without a second. From Him arose the Unevolved and the Evolved, the Imperishables ; from the Imperishable came the Great Principle, from the Great Principle Ahaṅkāra, from the Ahaṅkāra the five Tannmātras from them the five gross elements ; the Imperishable is covered by all these.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt, do these Pradhāna and the rest originate directly from Brahman, or from that which is mentioned immediately before it ?

*Pūrvapakṣin* : They arise not directly from Brahman, but from the Tattvas immediately preceding.

*Siddhānta* : They arise directly from Brahman as is shown in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 3. 12

तदभिध्यानादेव तु तल्लिगात् ॥ २ । ३ । १२ ॥

तत् Tat, that, his. अभिध्यानात् Abhidhyānāt, because of the volition, reflection. एव Eva, even. तु Tu, but. तत् Tat, his. लिगात् Liṅgāt, because of the inferential mark. सः Sah, he.

12. Brahman is the direct cause, because the text shows that they were produced by His reflection, which is an inferential mark.—230.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'but' is employed in order to remove the doubt. That Lord of all, endowed with the energy of Tamas and the rest, as mentioned in the Subāla Upaniṣad, is alone the direct cause of all these effects, beginning with Pradhāna and ending with earth. Why do we say so ? Because creation of every one of these Tattvas is preceded by the volition of the Lord as mentioned in the Scripture. Everywhere we find "He desired, may I be many, may I grow forth." This volition cannot belong to insentient objects like fire, air, etc., but to Brahman alone. He determines upon having various abodes, such as Pradhāna and the rest ; and dwelling in each. He successively creates the various elements. This Liṅga or indicatory mark shows that Brahman entering into Darkness and the rest, modifies them into the various forms of Pradhāna and the rest. Another Śruti also says that earth, fire, etc., are the bodies of the Lord. As for example, in the Antaryāmi Brāhmana of the Bhṛadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 7. 3, etc., and the Subāla Upaniṣad, which declares "whose body is the earth, etc., whose body is the Unevolved."

*Adhikarana VIII.—The Lord is the Chief cause working through matter.*

SŪTRA II., 3. 13.

विपर्ययेण तु क्रमोत् उपपद्यते च ॥ २ । ३ । १३ ॥

विपर्ययेण Viparyayeṇa, through the reverse. तु Tu, but. क्रमः Kramah, order. अतः Ataḥ, from this, from the Supreme Lord. उपपद्यते Upapadyate, becomes possible. च Cha, and.

13. The reverse order (of creation or involution) mentioned in other Upaniṣads, becomes also possible if Brahman is the supreme cause of all—231.

## COMMENTARY

The word "but," has the force of "only," here. In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (II., 1. 3.) we find the following :

एतस्माज्जायते प्राणो मनः सर्वेन्द्रियाणि च । खं वायुर्ज्योतिरापः पृथिवी विश्वस्य धारिणी ॥

From this is born Prāṇa, Manas and all the sense, ether, air, light, water and the earth, the support of all.

Here Prāṇa and Manas come first, while in the Subāla Upaniṣad, Pradhāna and Mahat come first. This reversing of the order of succession, can be reconciled only then, if every thing comes directly from Brahman,

the Lord of all. In that case, it matters little, in what order you describe the various emanations, and hence the scriptures do not follow any particular order, when they describe the coming out of these elements from Brahman. The Supreme Lord being the Inner Controller of every element, produces the next element through the first. Hence we say that from Him, the Supreme Lord, is produced all this, and the various texts can be reconciled if we hold that from this Supreme Lord, endowed with His different energies, are produced the various effects. Thus when the Śruti says, "From fire is produced water," it means that from the Supreme Lord endowed with the energy of fire, is produced water. If this meaning is not given, then the text becomes irreconcilable. "The Supreme Lord is the material cause of every thing, is the creator of every thing, and by knowing Him alone, every thing else is known." This declaration of the scripture would be stultified, if we hold the contrary view that these Tattvas are produced not by Brahman directly, but from the Tattva preceding it. The Tattvas like the Pradhāna and the rest being insentient, cannot modify themselves into their succeeding Tattva, without the co-operation of an intelligent cause. This is the force of the word "Cha" in the Sūtra. Therefore, it follows that Brahman is the direct cause everywhere.

*Adhikarāṇa IX.—Buddhi and Manas also are directly produced from Brahman*

The author now raises a doubt as to whether Buddhi and Manas, mentioned in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, as coming after Prāṇa, are also directly produced from Brahman or from Prāṇa.

SŪTRA II., 3. 14.

अन्तरा विज्ञानमनसीक्रमेण तर्लिगादिति चेन्नाविशेषात् ॥ २ । ३ । १४ ॥

अन्तरा: Antarāḥ, the intermediate ones, namely, Manas and the Indriyas, that occur between Prāṇa and Ākāśa of the Muṇḍaka Śruti. विज्ञान Vijnāna, knowledge, the organs of knowledge. मनसी Manasī, the mind, the word Vijnāna-Manasī is a compound in the dual case. क्रमेण Krameṇa, in the order of succession. तद लिगात् Tat-liṅgāt, because of an inferential mark of this. इति Iti, thus, चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अविशेषात् Aviśeṣāt, because there being no particular difference.

14. If it be objected that the organs of cognition and mind, occurring between Prāṇa and the Elements, in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, are mentioned in their order of succession,

owing to an inferential mark of this ; we say, no, because on account of non-difference.—232.

## COMMENTARY

By the word “Vijñāna” is meant here the sense-organs of the body. An objector says, that the text of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad “from Him is born Prāṇa, Manas and all the sense-organs, ether, air, fire, water and the earth the support of all,” declares not only the creation of these Tattvas by the Supreme Lord, but their *order* of succession also. In fact, this Śruti is specifically confined to teach the particular order of emanation. You cannot press this text in upholding your theory that all Tattvas originate directly from Brahman, as you have done in your last Sūtra. The order of succession of ether, air, fire, water and earth may be learnt from other texts also, such as that of the Subāla Upaniṣad. The mention of this in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad is confirmatory of the *order* of succession already taught in the Subāla. This text, therefore, has the indicatory mark in it, of teaching the *order* of succession ; just like the text of the Subāla Upaniṣad. Consequently, Manas and the Indriyas, mentioned in this text, between the Prāṇa and the Elements, show the *order* of the origination of these, namely, first comes out Prāṇa, from Prāṇa comes out Manas, from Manas all organs of cognition, from them Ākāśa, from Ākāśa Air, from Air Fire, from Fire Water, and from Water Earth. You cannot employ this text in determining the *direct* origination of the Tattvas from Brahman.

This objection raised in the first half of the Sūtra is answered by the last portion of it. Na-aviśeṣāt—it is not so, because there is no difference. All the various Tattvas mentioned in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, beginning with Prāṇa and ending with earth, are taught as coming out directly from the Lord and there is nothing particular about Manas and the sense-organs that they should have come out from Prāṇa and not from the Lord. In fact, the word “Etasmat” of that text, is to be read along with every one of these Prāṇa, Manas, etc. Thus, “*from Him* is born Prāṇa, *from Him* is born Manas, *from Him* is born the Indriyas, etc.” The sense is this, the Lord desired to become many, and as a result of such desire, *all* these things Prāṇa, Manas, etc., came out of Him.

*Note :* The inferential mark or Līnga mentioned in this text is to be found in the Subāla Upaniṣad, where the *same order* is given as in the Muṇḍaka. Since the Subāla Upaniṣad text is explained by all authorities as teaching the particular *order* of succession, and the present commentator also admits the same, as in the first Sūtra of the present Pāda ; the Muṇḍaka text must also be interpreted as teaching the *order* of succession, because there is no difference between the texts of the Muṇḍaka and the Subāla in this

respect. Thus the *similarity* of the two texts, is an inferential mark, teaching us that both texts are meant to declare the order of succession. The full Pūrvapakṣa is this. In the Muṇḍaka text the word Prāṇa means the Mahat Tattva, the Sūtra-Ātma, the first emanation. Manas means the Sāttvik Ahaṁkāra. Indriya means the Rājasa Ahaṁkāra ; and "Ether etc." all mean the Tāmasa Ahaṁkāra, the effects being everywhere taken for their cause. For Manas has as its cause the Sāttvik Ahaṁkāra ; the Senses the Rājasa Ahaṁkāra ; and the five elements the Tāmasa Ahaṁkāra. Thus there is absolute identity between the Subāla and the Muṇḍaka texts, and as the Subāla text teaches the order of succession, the Muṇḍaka text must also teach the same. The reply to this is that the Muṇḍaka text has a separate purpose altogether. It teaches the *direct* emanation from Brahman of every thing. The most important word in this text is 'Eṭasmāt', "from Him," namely, "Eṭasmāt Prāṇaḥ," "Eṭasmāt Manaḥ, etc., from Him Prāṇa, from Him Manas, etc."

In the Gītā (X., 8) also we find that the Lord declares :

अहं सर्वस्य प्रभवो मत्तः सर्वं प्रवर्तते ।

इति मत्वा भजते मां बुधा भावसमन्विताः ॥

I am the origin of all ; all evolves from me, understanding thus, the wise adore Me in rapt emotion.

So also in the Vāmana Purāṇa :

तत्र तत्र स्थितो विष्णुस्तत्तच्छक्तिं प्रबोधयेत् । एक एव महाशक्तिः कुरुते सर्वमञ्जसा ॥

The Lord Viṣṇu entering into each Tattva awakens the energy latent in it. He, the one Great Energy, alone produces all this in its beautiful order.

All these Smṛti texts show that from the Supreme Lord directly come Pradhāna and the rest. There is no conflict between the texts of the Subāla and those of the Taittirīya and the Chhândogya Upaniṣads. No doubt the word Tamas or Darkness does not occur in the latter Upaniṣad. But the Subāla text means that the Supreme Lord possessed with the energy of Tamas and the rest, creates in succession various effects, beginning with Pradhāna and ending with Vāyu. This is all understood in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad and is to be read into it from the Subāla Upaniṣad to complete the text.

Thus supplying the omission of the Chhândogya from the Subāla, every thing becomes reconciled. Therefore, where the Chhândogya says, 'He sent forth fire,' the word 'He' here means the Lord endowed with His energies of Tamas, Imperishable, the Unevolved, the Mahat, the Ahaṁkāra the Âkāśa and the Vāyu. The Lord endowed with all these energies and vivifying all these energies said, May I be many, May I grow forth, and then He sent forth fire.' Similarly, the Taittirīya text is also incomplete, it begins the creation with Âkāśa by saying, from this Âtman arose Âkāśa. There also we must supply the same omission as we did in the case of the Chhândogya, namely from this Âtman endowed with the energy of Tamas and the rest up to Ahaṁkāra came out Âkāśa. In other words, that Supreme Lord who had awakened the energies of Tamas, of the Imperishable, of the Unevolved, of Mahat and of Ahaṁkāra created Âkāśa, etc.



Thus the full text of creation given in the Subāla Upaniṣad is the standard to judge and supply the omissions of the other texts.

*Adhikaraṇa X.—All words are names of God primarily and secondarily they denote other things.*

An objector says, if Hari, the Lord of all, is the self of every thing, then all words denoting moveable and immoveable objects are really names of Hari. But as a matter of fact, we all know that those words are employed primarily to denote those objects and secondarily to denote the Lord. Therefore, you will have to admit that when the Śruti uses the phrase 'the fire thought, May I be many, May I grow forth,' the word fire can denote Brahman only in a secondary sense, and not primarily. This objection is answered by the next Sūtra which declares that all things moveable and immoveable abide in the Lord, and the terms denoting those things are the primary names of God and secondarily, they are names of things.

SŪTRA II., 3. 15.

चराचरव्यपाश्रयस्तु स्यात्तद्व्यपदेशोऽभाक्तस्तद्भावभावित्वात् ॥ २ । ३ । १५ ॥

चराचर Charācchara, moveable and immoveable. व्यपाश्रयः Vyapāśrayaḥ, being the abode or who abides in. तु Tu, but. स्यात् Syāt, may be. तत् Tat, that, those. व्यपदेशः Vyapadeśaḥ, designation, denotation. अभाक्तः Abhāktaḥ, non-figurative. तद्भाव Tad-bhāva, that denotation expressing Him, denoting the Lord. भावित्वात् Bhāvitvāt, on account of being in the future.

15. But these words may denote primarily the Lord, because He abides in the things moveable and immoveable, though this meaning of the word as denoting Brahman primarily is learnt in a future time after hearing the scripture.—233.

COMMENTARY

The word "but" removes the doubt raised in the last paragraph. The words which in ordinary use are names of things moveable and immoveable, are primarily the names of the Lord, because these moving and stationary objects are His bodies and because He abides in them. Those objects get their particular names from the particular aspect of Brahman residing in them. This Tad-bhāva or the power of words to denote the names of the Lord, is not known to all men at once, but it is a matter

which they come to know after studying the sacred Vedānta scriptures. In fact, the object of the Vedānta is to give rise to the knowledge that every word is really the name of the Lord. As says the Śruti, "He desired, May I be many," "He is Vāsudeva, than whom there is nothing else." (Gopāla Upaniṣad). In the Viṣṇu Purāṇa (III., 7-16) also :

कटकमुकुटकर्णिकादिभेदैः कनकमभेदपीड्यते यथैकम् ।

सुरपशुमनुजादि कल्पनाभिर्हरिखिन्नभिर्हृदीयते तथैकः ॥

As the gold is one, though manufactured into different objects like the bracelet, the crown, the ear-ring, etc., similarly, one Lord Hari pervades all Jīvas whether they be angels, men, or animals.

In the Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad, I., 9, we find the same idea :

The sense is this, all words denoting power or energy primarily denote the person possessing the power or energy, because energies have for their substratum the person possessing the energies.

### *Adhikarāṇa XI—Jīva is not created but is eternal.*

In the previous Sūtras we have defined the Lord and determined His nature. He was defined as that from which every thing originates but which has no origin, because He is the root cause. Now the author begins to describe the Jīva and to determine his nature. Therefore, he at first sets aside the wrong notion that the Jīva has any origin.

*Note:* The Lord possesses two powers (Śakti), namely, the Chit (all the Jīvas) and Achit or inanimate nature. In the previous Sūtras the inanimate nature or Achit has been discussed in various texts relating to this aspect of the Lord. And it has been shown how they arise from the Lord. Now upto the end of this Pāda the nature of the Jīva is described. One class holds the view that Jīva is not eternal, but is born and dies and the scriptural ceremonies relating to birth and death show that the Jīva is non-eternal. The author however proves that Jīva is eternal, and the scriptural ceremonies refer to the bodies of the Jīva and not to the Jīva.

The texts like the following give rise to the above doubt, "From whom arose the mother of all universe." The mother of the universe is the primary energy of the Lord. This we find in the Mahānārāyaṇa Upaniṣad, I., 4, which is a part of the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka :

यतः प्रसृता जगत् प्रसृती तोयेन जीवान्यसत्तर्ज भूम्याम् ।

यदोषधीभिः पुरुषान्यशूँश्च विवेश भूतानि चराचराणि ॥

From whom is the birth of the creatrix of the universe, who poured down the souls along with the cosmic water on this earth, He who through the herbs entered into men and animals, all moveables and immoveables.

So also in the Chhāndogya Upaniṣad we find, "O dear, all these beings have the Sat for their origin."

*Doubt:* Here arises the doubt whether the Jīvas have origin or not.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says the whole universe consisting of sentient or insentient creatures admittedly being an effect, it follows that souls are created like every other thing. If they were not created, but be held to be co-eternal with God, then you violate the promissory statement made in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (VI., 1. 1) that by knowing which every thing else is known. For if Jivas were co-eternal with God, then by knowing Brahman, Jivas will not be known.

*Siddhānta* : The souls however have no origin, but are eternal as shown in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 3. 16.

नात्माश्रुतेर्नित्यत्वाच्च ताभ्यः ॥ २ । ३ । १६ ॥

न Na, not. आत्मा Ātmā, self, Jiva, soul. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, on account of scriptural statement. नित्यत्वाच्च Nityatvāt, on account of the eternity. च Cha, and. ताभ्यः Tābhyah, from them, i.e., from the Śruti and Smṛti.

16. The soul has no origin, because of the scriptural statement to that effect ; it is eternal and intelligent, because from them (Śruti and Smṛti) this is the conclusion.—234.

COMMENTARY

The self or Ātman here means the Jivātman or the soul. It has no origin. The Śruti declares it to be so.—(Kāth., Up., I., 2. 18).

न जायते म्रियते वा विपश्चिन्नायं कुतश्चिन्न बभूव कश्चिद् । अजो नित्यः शाश्वतोऽयमुपायो न हन्यते हन्यमाने शरीरे ।

This experiencer of different pleasure and pain is not born nor does it die ; it sprang from nothing, nothing sprang from it. The ancient is unborn, eternal, everlasting ; he is not killed though the body is killed.

So also in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, I., 9.

ज्ञाज्ञौ द्वावजावीशानीशवजा ह्येका भोवत्तुभोगार्थयुक्ता । अनन्तश्चात्मा विश्वरूपो ह्यकर्ता त्रयं यदा विंदते ब्रह्मेतद् ॥ ९ ॥

There are two, one knowing (Jīvara), the other not-knowing (Jīva), both unborn, one strong, the other weak ; there is she, the unborn, through whom each man receives the recompense of his works ; and there is the infinite Self (appearing) under all forms, but Himself inactive. When a man finds out these three, that is Brahma.

This also shows that the Jīva is without any birth. Moreover, from these two, namely from the Śruti and the Smṛti, we learn that the Jīva is eternal. The force of the word "Cha" in this Sūtra is to indicate that the Jīva is intelligent also. The Śrutis like the following declare the soul to be eternal—(Kāth., Up., II., 5. 13).

नित्योऽनित्यानाञ्चेतनश्चेतनानामेको बहूनां यो विदधाति कामान् । त्रमात्मस्थं येऽनुपश्यन्ति धीरास्तेषां शान्तिः शाश्वती नेतरेषाम् ।

The Eternal among the eternal. the Consciousness among all consciousnesses, the One who bestows the fruits of Karmas to many Jīvas, the tranquil-minded ones who see Him seated in their Ātmā, get eternal happiness, but not the others.

Similarly, it is unborn, eternal, everlasting; He is not killed though the body is killed.

This being the nature of the soul, the phrases like this, "Yajñadatta is born, he is dead"; and all worldly ceremonies relating to birth and death, have reference only to the *bodies* taken up by the Jīvas and not to the Jīvas themselves. In fact, the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad clearly says that a man is said to be born, when he assumes a body; and he is said to die, when he dissociates himself from the body. Thus birth and death are with reference to the body and not the soul. The text of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad is the following (IV., 3. 8) :

स वाऽयं पुरुषो जायमानः शरीरमभिमम्यमानः पाप्मभिः स<sup>७</sup>सृज्यते स उक्तामन् त्रियमाणः पाप्मनो विजहाति ॥ ८ ॥

On being born the soul *assumes a body*, and becomes united with all evils; on dying he *departs from the body*, and leaves all evils behind.

So also in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (VI., 11. 3.) we find :

This body verily dies when the Jīva abandons it, but the Jīva never dies.

If this is so, how do you reconcile the statement made by the scripture that by knowing one every thing else is known, which implies that God is the *only existence*, and Jīva also is an effect and has an origin. This, however, we reconcile by saying that the word "effect" is only the name of the same Brahman, when existing in a different condition as a manifestation. Brahman has two energies. When both of them are latent in Him, they are said to be non-existent; when they come out of Him the world is said to originate. The difference, however, between the Jīva and the Pradhāna is this. The non-sentient objects like Pradhāna and the rest, which are the objects of enjoyment of the soul, undergo a change of essential nature when they originate from Brahman. But the souls (Jīvas) being the enjoyers, do not undergo any such change of essential nature when they come out of Brahman. The only change in their case consists in the contraction and expansion of intelligence. In the state of Pralaya, the intelligence of the soul is in a state of contraction; and during the creation, the intelligence of the soul is in a state of expansion. In both cases, however, whether of contraction or expansion, the soul undergoes no change of essential nature. No doubt, both Souls and Matter are effects, or creatures of Brahman, as sent forth by Brahman; and hence they may be called as effects. And in this way, there is no contradiction in the statement that by knowing Brahman every thing else is known. For by knowing the cause the effect is certainly known. This

view harmonises all the Śrutis. The conclusion is that the Jīva has no origin,

*Adhikaraṇa XII.—The nature of the Jīva is that it is the knower and the knowledge both.*

Now the author determines the essential nature of the soul. There are some texts which show that the soul is the knower and others that it is knowledge. Thus the Antaryāmin text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad shows that soul is knowledge.—(Bṛhadāraṇyaka, III., 7. 22).

यो विज्ञाने तिष्ठन्विज्ञानादन्तरो यं विज्ञानं न वेद यस्य विज्ञानं शरीरं योविज्ञानमन्तरो यमयत्येष त आत्मान्तर्याम्यमृतः ॥

He who dwells in knowledge (Vijñāna), and within knowledge, whom knowledge does not know, whose body knowledge is, and who pulls (rules) knowledge within, He is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the immortal.

In another text we find. "I slept soundly, I didn't know any thing." It thus appears that in one place the soul is called Vijñāna or knowledge, in another it is the knower; knowledge being only its temporary attribute, for, in deep sleep it has no knowledge.

*Doubt* : Therefore, arises the doubt whether the soul is merely knowledge, or whether its essential nature is that of a cognising subject.

*Purvapakṣa* : The essential nature of the soul is intelligence or knowledge, because the text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad shows that the soul is Vijñāna or intelligence. The self-consciousness or cognition is merely the attribute of Buddhi and the assertion "I slept soundly," is really the assertion of Buddhi, when in contact with the soul. The soul is not the knower.

*Siddhānta* : The soul is, however, the knower, and it is not the superimposition of Buddhi on the soul, that makes soul appear as a knower, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 3. 17.

ज्ञोतृ एव ॥ २ । ३ । १७ ॥

ज्ञः Jñāh, the knower. अतएव Ataeva, for this very reason,

17. The Jīvātman is the knower, for this very reason; because the scripture says so.—235.

COMMENTARY

The Jīvātman is not knowledge alone, and though its form is that of intelligence, its essential nature is that of a knower. As says the Prasna Upaniṣad, (IV., 9.) :

एष हि द्रष्टा स्पर्शश्च श्रोता घ्राता रसयिता मन्ता बोद्धा कर्ता विज्ञानात्मा पुरुषः । स परेऽक्षरे आत्मनि सम्प्रतिष्ठते ॥

Verily he is the beholder, the toucher, the hearer, the smeller, the taster, the thinker, the determiner, the doer, the Vijñānātmā, the Puruṣa. He (who knows this Puruṣa) becomes established in the Highest Self.

The phrase *for this very reason* means, that because the scripture declares it to be so. We hold the soul to be the knower, because the scripture declares it to be so, and we do not allow our reason any scope here. In fact, we take our stand on the text of the Vedānta Sūtra, II., 1. 27, which declares that the scripture alone is the root from which we learn any thing about these transcendental subjects. The Jīva is declared in the Smṛtis also to be the knower, having knowledge as its essential form. On the strength of the assertion, "I slept soundly, I had no knowledge of any thing," we cannot say that the soul is mere intelligence, and that it becomes the knower, only when it comes in contact with Buddhi; for then you contradict all those texts which declare the soul to be the knower. Therefore, it follows that the soul is both the knower and has knowledge for its essential nature.

### Adhikaraṇa XIII.—Jīva is atomic.

Now the author tries to ascertain the size of the soul. In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, it is said that the soul is atomic in its size.—(III., 1. 9),

एषोऽणुरात्मा चेतसा वेदितव्यो यस्मिन् प्राणः पञ्चधा संविवेश । प्राणैश्चित्तं सर्वमोतं प्रजानां अस्मिन् विशुद्धे विभवत्येष आत्मा ॥

This *atomic* soul is to be known by that mind alone, in which the chief Prāṇa has completely withdrawn the five-fold activities; for the mind of all created beings is entirely interwoven by these five Prāṇas and is never quiet. This *atomic* soul is to be known by that mind which being perfectly pure makes the soul manifest its power.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is the soul atomic as declared in the above Śruti or is it all-pervading ?

*Pūrvaapakṣa* : The soul is all-pervading, because another text says that it is Mahat or big. Even the opponents also admit the validity of the following Śruti, (IV., 4. 14—22, Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad) where it is said, this Ātman is Mahat and unborn :

स वा एष महानज आत्मा योऽयं विज्ञानमयः प्राणेषु य एषोऽन्तर्हृदय आकाशस्तस्मिच्छेते ॥

And he is that great unborn Self, who consists of knowledge, is surrounded by the Prāṇas, the ether within the heart, wherein it reposes.

Here the soul is called great and so it cannot be atomic. It is called atomic in a figurative sense only.

*Siddhānta* : The soul is really atomic, as the next Sūtra shows it,

SŪTRA II., 3. 18.

उत्क्रान्तिगत्यागतीनाम् ॥ २ । ३ । १८ ॥

उत्क्रान्ति Utkrānti, passing out. गति Gati, going. आगतीनाम् Agatīnām, returning.

18. The soul is atomic, because the scripture declares that it passes out, it goes and returns ; while such declarations would be unmeaning if the Jiva were omnipresent.—236.

## COMMENTARY

The word “atomic” is understood here, and is to be read in this Sūtra from II., 3. 20, where it is used by the Pūrvapakṣin. The Sūtra is in the genitive case (gatinām) but the force of the genitive is that of the ablative. This Jiva is atomic in its size, and not all-pervading and that for three reasons : (i) the scriptures declare its passing out; and an all-pervading substance cannot pass out. The following text of the Bṛhad-āraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (IV., 4. 2) shows the method of the soul's passing out at the time of death :

तस्य हैतस्य हृदयस्याग्रं प्रद्योतते तेन प्रद्योतेनैष आत्मा निष्क्रामति चक्षुषो वा मूर्ध्नो वाऽन्येभ्यो वा शरीरेदेशेभ्यस्त्वमुत्क्रामन्तं प्राणोऽनूत्क्रामति प्राणमनूत्क्रामन्तं सर्वे प्राणा अनूत्क्रामन्ति स विज्ञानो भवति स विज्ञानमेवान्ववक्रामति ॥

The point of his heart becomes lighted up, and by that light the Self departs, either through the eye, or through the skull, or through other places of the body. And when he thus departs, life (the chief Prāṇa) departs after him, and when life thus departs, all the other vital spirits (Prāṇas) depart after it. He is conscious, and being conscious he follows and departs.

(ii) Another verse of the same shows where souls of some persons go after death (Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 11.)

अनन्दा नाम ते लोका अन्धेन तमसाऽऽवृताः ॥ ताँस्ते प्रेत्याभिगच्छन्त्यविद्राँसोऽबुधा जनाः ॥

There are indeed those unblest worlds, covered with blind darkness. Men who are ignorant and not enlightened go after death to those worlds.

(iii) Similarly, in IV., 4. 6 of the same Upaniṣad it is shown that the soul returns :

तदेव श्लोको भवति, तदेव सक्तः सह कर्मण्येति लिङ्गं मनो यत् निष्कृतमस्य ॥ प्राप्यान्तं कर्मणस्तस्य यत्किञ्चेह करोत्ययम् ॥ तस्माद्लोकान्पुनरेत्यस्मै लोकाय कर्मण इति ॥

And here there is this verse : “To whatever object a man's own mind is attached, to that he goes strenuously together with his deed; and having obtained the end (the last results) of whatever deed he does here on earth, he returns again from that world (which is the temporary reward of his deeds) to this world of action.”

These three texts of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad show the passing out, moving and returning of the soul. If the soul were all-pervading, then these things could not be possible for it.

In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa also it is declared :

अपरिमिता भ्रुवास्तनुभृतो यदि सर्व्वगतास्तर्हि न शास्यतेति नियमो भ्रुव नेतरथेत्यादिका हि स्मृतिः ॥

O Lord, if the soul were measureless, fixed and all-pervading, then there would not arise the relationship of being ruled and the ruler. Thou, O Lord ! couldst not be its ruler nor it the ruled. But if it were atomic that would be possible.

The Lord, however, is both atomic and all-pervading at the same time ; and *moving* and *returning*, when attributed to the Lord are not contradictions, because he possesses mysterious powers, and all paradoxical statements are appropriate in his case.

The soul may be all-pervading, and unmoving and still the epithet of going out may be applied to it in a figurative sense, as it is applied to the ruler of a village, when he ceases to be its ruler. The all-pervading soul, when it ceases to rule the body, is said to pass out of the body. There is no real passing out. When it has the Abhimāna of a body, it is said to be born, there is no real birth. The word "Utkrānti", therefore, may possibly be explained in a figurative sense. But the Sūtra uses two other words "Gati" and "Āgati," going or returning. These words cannot be explained metaphorically. A non-moving soul cannot be said to *go out* or *come back*. The next Sūtra shows this.

SŪTRA II, 3. 19.

स्वात्मनश्चोत्तरयोः ॥ २ । ३ । १६ ॥

स्वात्मनः Svātmanah, through the self. च Cha, and, only. उत्तरयोः Uttarayoh, of the latter two, namely, of Gati and Āgati.

19. The latter two, namely, moving and returning, can be effected only through the self (and cannot be explained in a metaphorical way).—237.

COMMENTARY

The two last attributes mentioned in the previous Sūtra can only have relation with the self, because the actions denoted by these verbs reside in an active agent. They cannot be explained metaphorically. That being so, the word Utkrānti or "passing out" must also be taken in its literal sense. It must mean that the soul is a definite something, which passes out of the body at the time of death ; and not that it is an all-pervading substance that ceases to have any connection with the body. In fact,



the method of passing out shows that a particular portion of the heart is lighted up and catching hold of that ray of light, the soul passes out of the body. The same idea is expressed in the Gītā also (also (X., V-8.) :

शरीरं यदवाप्नोति यच्चाप्युत्क्रामतीश्वरः ।

गृहीत्वैतानि संयाति वायुर्गन्धानिवाशयात् ॥

When the soul acquireth a body and when He abandoneth it, He seizeth these and goeth with them, as the wind takes fragrances of flowers from their receptacles (from the anthers of flowers in which fragrances reside).

The statement, "these three words, 'passing out,' 'moving' and 'returning' have a metaphorical sense only, and mean souls abandoning the idea of rulership over the body or assuming such idea," is wrong, because in that view the statement of the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, (III., 3.) will be irreconcilable. There it is said :

यत्रैतत्पुरुष आर्तो भरिष्यन्नाबल्यं न्येत्य मोहं नेति तदाहुर्दृक्कमीचित्तं न शृणोति न पश्यति वाचा वदत्यथास्मिन्प्राण एवैकधा भवति तदेनं वाक्सर्वैर्नामभिः सहाप्येति चक्षुः सर्वै रूपैः सहाप्येति श्रोत्रं सर्वैः शब्दैः सहाप्येति मनः सर्वैर्ध्यातैः सहाप्येति स यदा प्रतिबुध्यते यथाग्नेज्ज्वलतो विस्फुलिङ्गा विप्रतिष्ठेरन्नेवमेवैतस्मादात्मनः प्राणा यथायतनं विप्रतिष्ठन्ते प्राणैर्भ्यो देवा देवैर्भ्यो लोकाः ॥ ३ ॥

When a man is thus sick, going to die, falling into weakness and faintness, they say : "His thought has departed, he hears not, he sees not, he speaks not, he thinks not." Then he becomes one with that Prāṇa alone. Then speech goes to him (who is absorbed in Prāṇa) with all names, the eye with all forms, the ear with all sounds, the mind with all thoughts. And when he departs from this body, he departs together with all these.

The word used in the original is "Saha" or together. This would not have been used, had soul been all-pervading. When the same action is done by two subjects, one principal and the other subordinate, there the word "Saha" is used, as in the sentence, "The father eats together with the son." Therefore, when this Upaniṣad uses the phrase, "He departs together with all these," it must mean actual departing and not metaphorical. The illustration given in the Gītā of the wind taking up the fragrance from the receptacle of the flower, also shows the actual taking up of something and carrying it away, for the relationship of the wind with the fragrant substance is that of the seizer and the seized. This also answers the theory of the Māyāvādins who consider soul to be like the portion of space, enclosed within a jar, and that its passing out or coming in are merely phrases having no meaning, except that breaking up of the jar or coming into existence of it. It is only through ignorance that one thinks that the soul goes out or comes into the body, say the Māyāvādins. Their theory has no scriptural authority.

SŪTRA II, 3. 20.

नाणुरतच्छ्रुतेरिति चेन्नैतराधिकारात् ॥ २ । ३ । २० ॥

न Na, not अणुः Aṇuḥ, atom. अतः Atat, not that, namely, opposite of Aṇu. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, because of a Śruti or scriptural text. इति Iti, thus. चेन्न Chet, if. न Na, not. इतरा Itarā, the other, namely, the Supreme Self and not the Jiva self. अधिकारात् Adhikārāt, because of the context or topic.

20. If this be said that "the soul is not atomic because there is scriptural text contrary to that," we reply, it is not so. That text refers to the Supreme Self, because that is the context.—238.

## COMMENTARY

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Jiva is not atomic, says the Pūrvapakṣin, because in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, he is described as infinite. The original text is given below (IV., 4. 22) :

स वा एष महानज आत्मा योऽयं विज्ञानमयः प्राणेषु य एषोऽन्तर्हृदय आकाशस्तस्मिन्वेते सर्वस्य वशी सर्वस्वशानः सर्वस्याधिपतिः स न साधुना कर्मणा भूयान्नो एवासाधुना कनीयान् एष सर्वेश्वर एष भूताधिपतिरेष भूतपाल एष सेतुर्विधरण एषां लोकानामसम्भेदाय तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणा विविदिषन्ति यश्चेन दानेन तपसाऽनाशकेनैव विदित्वा मुनिर्भवति एतमेव प्रव्रजिनो लोकमिच्छन्तः प्रव्रजन्ति ।

And he is that great unborn Self, who consists of knowledge, is surrounded by the Prāṇas, the ether within the heart. In it there reposes the ruler of all, the Lord of all, the king of all. He does not become greater by good works, nor smaller by evil works. He is the Lord of all, the king of all things, the protector of all things. He is a bank and a boundary, so that these worlds may not be confounded. Brāhmaṇas seek to know him by the study of the Veda, by gifts, by sacrifice, by penance, by fasting, and he who knows him, becomes a Muni. Wishing for that world (for Brahman) only, mendicants leave their homes.

Here the Ātmā is described as Mahat or great ; it, therefore cannot be small or atomic. This objection is raised in the first part of the Sūtra and the answer is given in its second half.

*Siddhānta* : The Ātmā referred to in this Śruti is not the Jiva-Ātman, but the other or the Parama-Ātman, because the topic here is that of the Supreme Self, and not of the individual soul. No doubt the subject is started in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 3. 7, by the following description of the Jiva self :

कतम आत्मेति योऽयं विज्ञानमयः प्राणेषु हृद्यन्तर्ज्योतिः पुरुषः स समानः सन्नुभौ लोकावनुशङ्करति ध्यायतीव लेलायतीव सहि स्वप्नो भूत्वेमं लोकमतिक्रामति मृत्यो रूपणि ।

Janaka Vaideha said : "Who is that Self ?"

Yājñavalkya replied : He who is within the heart, surrounded by the Prānas (senses), the person of light, consisting of knowledge. He, remaining the same, wanders along the two worlds, as if thinking, as if moving. During sleep (in dream) he transcends this world and all the forms of death (all that falls under the sway of death, all that is perishable).

Yet in the middle IV., 4. 13, the topic started is that of the Supreme Self and consequently the word Mahat refers to Parama-Ātman and not to the Jiva. The passage is given below

यस्यानुविशतः प्रतिबुद्ध आत्माऽस्मिन्सन्देहे गहने प्रविष्टः । य विश्वकृत्स हि सर्वस्य कर्ता तस्य लोकः  
स तु लोक एव ॥ १३ ॥

Whoever has found and understood the Self that has entered into this patched-together hiding-place, He indeed is the creator, for He is the maker of every thing, His is the world, and He is the world itself.

This verse and the verses which follow it all describe the Supremo Self and consequently the word Mahat used in one of these verses (IV., 4. 22) cannot refer to the Jiva-Ātman but shows the greatness of the Supreme Self. To understand the whole argument, those verses are also given below :

इहैव सन्तोऽथ विद्यस्तद्वयं न चेदवेदीर्महती विनष्टिः । स एतद्विदुरमृतास्ते भवन्त्येतरे दुःखमेवापि  
यन्ति ॥ १४ ॥ यदेतमनुपश्यत्यात्मानं देवमञ्जसा । ईशानं भूतभव्यस्य न ततो विजुगुप्सते ॥ १५ ॥  
यस्मादर्वाक्संवत्सरोऽहोभिः परिवर्त्तते । तद्देवा ज्योतिषां ज्योतिरायुर्होपासतेऽमृतम् ॥ १६ ॥ यस्मिन् पञ्च  
पञ्चजना आकाशश्च प्रतिष्ठितः । तमेव मन्य आत्मानं विद्वान्ब्रह्मामृतोऽमृतम् ॥ १७ ॥ प्राणस्य प्राणमुत  
चक्षुषश्चक्षुस्त ओन्नस्य ओत्रे मनसो ये मनो विदुः । ते निचिकयुर्ब्रह्म पुराणमग्न्यम् ॥ १८ ॥ मनसेवानु-  
द्रष्टव्यं नेह नानास्ति किञ्चन । मृत्योः स मृत्युमाप्नोति य इह नानेव पश्यति ॥ १९ ॥ एकधैवानु-  
द्रष्टव्यमेतदप्रमेयं ध्रुवम् । विरजः पर आकाशादज आत्मा महान्ध्रुवः ॥ २० ॥ तमेव धीरो विज्ञाय प्रज्ञां  
कुर्वीत ब्राह्मणः । नानुष्यायाद्ब्रह्मब्रह्मन्वाचो विग्लापनं हि तदिति ॥ २१ ॥

14. While we are here, we may know this ; if not, I am ignorant, and there is great destruction. Those who know it, become immortal, but others suffer pain indeed.

15. If a man clearly beholds this Self as God, and as the Lord of all that is and will be, then he is no more afraid.

16. He behind whom the year revolves with the days, Him the Gods worship as the light of lights, as immortal life.

17. He in whom the five beings and the ether rest, Him alone I believe to be the Self,—I who know, believe Him to be Brahman ; I who am immortal, believe Him to be immortal.

18. They who know the life of life, the eye of the eye, the ear of the ear, the mind of the mind, they have comprehended the ancient, primeval Brahman.

19. By the mind alone it is to be perceived, there is in it no diversity. He who perceives therein any diversity, goes from death to death.

20. This Eternal Being that can never be proved, is to be perceived in one way only ; It is spotless, beyond the ether, the Unborn Self, great and eternal.

21. Let a wise Brāhmaṇa, after he has discovered Him, practise wisdom (meditation). Let him not seek after many words, for that is mere weariness of the tongue.

SŪTRA II., 3. 21.

स्वशब्दोन्मानाभ्यां च ॥ २ । ३ । २१ ॥

स्वशब्दः Svaśabdaḥ, its own word, the very word Anu or atom. उन्मानाभ्याम् Unmānābhyām, on account of the measure or comparison. च Cha, and.

21. The soul is atomic, because the very word atom is applied to it, and because its measure is also given in the scriptures.—239.

COMMENTARY

In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 1. 9, already quoted before, the word "Anu" is directly applied to the soul. Similarly, comparison of the soul is made with very small things, to show its measure or size. The word Unmāna means "measuring a thing by comparing it with another." Thus in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, V., 9, we find the following comparison :

बालाग्रशतभागस्य शतधा कलितस्य च ।

भागो जीवः स विज्ञेयः स चानन्त्याय कल्प्यते ।

The Jīva is to be known as part of the hundredth part of the point of a hair divided a hundred times, and yet it is to become immortal, and Mukta.

The word "Ānantya" in the above verse does not mean infinity but deathlessness, namely, Mukti. The word 'Anta' means death. The condition of deathlessness is called 'Ānantya.' These two scriptural texts—the direct statement of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, and the simile of the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, show that the soul is atomic.

If it be objected that soul being atomic must be confined to a particular portion of the body and it could not perceive sensations extending over the whole body, the reply is thus given by the author.

SŪTRA II., 3. 22.

अविरोधश्चन्दनवत् ॥ २ । ३ । २२ ॥

अविरोधः Avirodhaḥ, non-conflict, non-contradiction. चन्दनवत् Chandana-vat, like sandal-wood.

22. There is no contradiction, because the sensation is felt as in the case of sandal oil.—240.

COMMENTARY

A drop of sandal oil of the first quality called Hari Chandana placed in one part of the body causes a pleasant sensation all over the body, similarly, the soul though residing in a particular portion of the body

perceives all that is going on throughout the world. Thus it is in the Brahmanḍa Purāṇa :

अणुमात्रोऽप्ययं जीवः स्वदेहं व्याप्य तिष्ठति ।

यथा व्याप्य शरीराणि हरिचन्दनविष्णुः ॥

This soul though of the size of an atom pervades the whole body, just as the drops of Hari Chandana, placed in a particular part of the body, pervade throughout the body with their pleasant sensation.

*Note :* Soul dwells in the heart.

SŪTRA II., 3. 23.

अवस्थितिवैशेष्यादिति चेन्नाऽभ्युपगमाद्धृदि हि ॥ २ । ३ । २३ ॥

अवस्थिति Avasthiti, residence, abode. वैशेष्यात् Vaiśeṣyāt, on account of specialisation. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अभ्युपगमात् Abhyupagamāt, on account of acknowledgment, on account of acceptance. हृदि Hṛdi, in the heart. हि Hi, because.

23. If it be said, "the sandal drop has a particular abode, while the soul has no such abode ; and therefore, it is not atomic ;" we say, this is not so ; because it is acknowledged that the soul has a particular abode, namely, in the heart.—241.

COMMENTARY

We see the sandal oil to be in actual contact with some particular portion of the body, but the soul is not seen to be in any particular part of the body ; nor can we infer its existence in any particular part of the body, for the reason would show that it must be all-pervading throughout the body, because it perceives the sensation throughout. The illustration, therefore, of the sandal oil is not to the point. This objection is answered by the latter part of the Sūtra. There is no occasion to employ our reason in trying to find out the particular spot of the body where the soul resides. The scripture distinctly mentions that the soul resides in the heart. Thus in the Prasṇa Upaniṣad (III, 6,) we find :

हृदि शेष आत्मा

The Soul is in the heart.

In the next Sūtra, the author shows his final opinion, declaring that though the soul is atomic, it can perceive sensations all over the body, through its rays ; as shown in the case of a flame ; and even thus there would be no conflict.

SŪTRA II., 3. 24.

गुणाद्वालोक्तवत् ॥ २ । ३ । २४ ॥

गुणाद् Guṇāt, on account of its quality (of intelligence). वा Vā, or. आलोकवत् Ālokavat, like light.

24. Or the soul may pervade the whole body, by its quality of intelligence, as the flame pervades the whole room by its rays.—242.

## COMMENTARY

The soul, though atomic, pervades the whole body by its attribute of intelligence, namely, by its power of sentiency just as light. The sun or a candle, though placed in a particular spot, illumines the whole universe or the room, by their rays. Similarly the soul, though residing in the heart, perceives all sensations. As says the Lord in the Gītā (XIII, 33) :

यथा प्रकाशयत्येकः कृत्स्नं लोकमिमं रविः ।

क्षेत्रं क्षेत्री तथा कृत्स्नं प्रकाशयति भारत ॥ ३३ ॥

As the one sun illumineth all this universe, so the soul illumines the whole of this body.

You cannot say that the rays of the sun are particles detached from it, and spread themselves all over the world ; for if it were so, then the sun will be constantly losing its mass and decreasing in size ; but this is not the case. Moreover, gems like rubies, etc., give out rays of light without losing their weight, as may be observed by any one. In the case of gems, we know that no material particles are given out by them. Their light is their quality, and not any portion of their substance.

*Note.*—This theory is, however, now an exploded one. The rays of the sun are really particles of matter, so light that they cannot be weighed. The loss of the sun's mass is constantly being replenished by the fall of meteors into it. In the case of gems, like radium, which emit light, it is a scientific fact that that light is matter and a portion of the substance of the radium and not its quality. Similarly, the soul pervades the body, by its light, which is really a substance of the soul. The highest vesture of the soul consists of the Kāraṇa Śarīra and it is through the particles of this Kāraṇa Śarīra that the soul comes in contact with the external world, namely, its body. The Kāraṇa Śarīra is constantly being replenished by the matter of the highest plane.

In the above Sūtra it has been shown that a quality can function in a place apart from the substance of which it is the quality. As light can function and illumine an object in a place different from the place where the flame is, of which the light is a quality. The author shows this by another illustration.

SŪTRA. II., 3. 25.

व्यतिरेकोगन्धवत् तथा हि दर्शयति ॥ २ । ३ । २५ ॥

व्यतिरेकः Vyatirekaḥ, distinction, difference, गन्धवत् Gandha vat, like the odour. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, verily. दर्शयति Darśayati, the scripture shows or declares.

25. The quality may function in a place distinct from the thing qualified, as in the case of smell, for thus the scripture also declares.

## COMMENTARY

As smell of flowers and the rest, being the quality of flowers, etc., are perceived even in a place distinct from the objects of which they are the qualities, so the sentiency, which is the quality of the soul, may function in head, feet, etc., namely, in places other than the heart, where the soul dwells. The scripture also declares this, for we find in the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad the following (III. 6) :

प्रज्ञया वाचं समारुह्य वाचा सर्वाणि नामान्याप्नोति प्रज्ञया प्राणं समारुह्य प्राणेन सर्वान्गन्धानाप्नोति  
प्रज्ञया चक्षुः समारुह्य चक्षुषा सर्वाणि रूपागयाप्नोति प्रज्ञया श्रोत्रं समारुह्य श्रोत्रेण सर्वान्छब्दानाप्नोति  
प्रज्ञया जिह्वां समारुह्य जिह्वया सर्वानन्नरसानाप्नोति प्रज्ञया हस्तौ समारुह्य हस्ताभ्यां सर्वाणि कर्मागयाप्नोति  
प्रज्ञया शरीरं समारुह्य शरीरेण सुखदुःखे आप्नोति प्रज्ञयोपस्थं समारुह्योपस्थेनानन्दं रतिं प्रजातिमाप्नोति  
प्रज्ञया पादौ समारुह्य पादाभ्यां सर्वा इत्या आप्नोति प्रज्ञयैव धियं समारुह्य प्रज्ञयैव धियो विशातव्यं  
कामानाप्नोति ॥ ६ ॥

Having by Prajñā (sentiency or the power of feeling) taken possession of speech (tongue), he utters by the tongue all words. Having by sentiency taken possession of the nose, he smells all odours. Having by sentiency taken possession of the eye, he sees all forms. Having by sentiency taken possession of the ear, he hears all sounds. Having by sentiency taken possession of the tongue, he obtains all tastes of food. Having by sentiency taken possession of the two hands, he performs all actions. Having by sentiency taken possession of the body, he obtains pleasure and pain. Having by sentiency taken possession of the organ, he obtains happiness, joy and offspring. Having by sentiency taken possession of the two feet, he performs all movements. Having by sentiency taken possession of the brain (dhī), he generates all thoughts and perceives all thought-forms.

Though the smell of a flower extends to a great distance from the flower, yet it is not cut off from it, just as the light of a gem, like radium, though extending to a great distance, is not cut off from the gem. As we find in the following Smṛiti.

उपलभ्याप्सु चेद् गन्धं केचिद् द्रुयुरनैपुणाः ।

पृथिव्यामेव तं विद्यादपो वार्युच संश्रितम् ॥

If any one finding smell in water may say, the smell is the quality of water, he is verily mistaken ; for smell is always the quality of earth, though it may be found in different places, such as in water or air. (One mistakes the air or water to have scent, because temporarily the scent has taken these objects as its place of manifestation).

In the Śruti we find it declared (Praśna, IV. 9) :

एष हि द्रष्टा स्पर्ष्टा श्रोता प्राता रसयिता मन्ता बोद्धा कर्ता विज्ञानात्मा पुरुषः । स परेऽक्षरे आत्मनि सम्प्रतिष्ठते ॥ ९ ॥

For he it is who sees, hears, smells, tastes, perceives, conceives, acts, he whose essence is knowledge, the person, and he dwells in the highest, indestructible self.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt, whether intelligence which is an attribute of the soul is eternal or not.

*Pūrvapakṣa* :—The Pūrvapakṣin says, the soul is inert like stone ; and intelligence manifests in it, when mind comes in contact with it. Had intelligence been a permanent quality of the soul, then it would not have been lost in deep sleep ; when according to all texts and experience, the soul knows nothing. The intelligence of the soul is therefore an accidental quality, manifested in the soul by its contact with mind ; just as the fire, which is not the quality of the iron, manifests in the iron when it is heated in the fire. Had knowledge been the permanent attribute of soul, then it would not have been lost in deep sleep. Moreover, if intelligence were the natural and inseparable quality of the soul, then there was no necessity of an organ of intelligence like the mind ; for just as if seeing was the invariable attribute of the soul, there would be no necessity of an organ like the eye to perceive an object. In fact, the Śruti which declares that the soul has no consciousness in deep sleep, and the Śruti (Bṛhadāraṇyaka, IV. 5. 14) which declares that the attributes of the soul are never lost, but are eternal and indestructible, conflict with each other. Hence it follows that intelligence is an accidental quality of the soul.

*Siddhānta* : Intelligence is a permanent attribute of the soul, as is shown by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II. 3. 26.<sup>1</sup>

पृथगुपदेशात् ॥ १ । ३ । २६ ॥

पृथक् Prīthak, separate. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, because of teaching or statement.

26. The intelligence of the soul is permanent, because there is separate statement in the scripture to that effect.—244.

COMMENTARY

In the text of the Praśna Upaniṣad as well as in that of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka we find a distinct statement made to the effect that the attributes of the soul also are eternal. The Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV. 5. 14) distinctly says that not only is the Jīvātman imperishable, but its qualities also are indestructible. It is not by contact with mind that the soul manifests its quality of intelligence, for both being partless there can be no contact between them. The intelligence of the soul becomes obscured when it turns its face away from the Lord, and it manifests when this obscuration is destroyed by turning its face towards the Lord. As we find in the following text of Śaunaka :—

यथा न क्रियते ज्योत्स्ना मलप्रज्ञालान्मये ।

दोषप्रज्ञानात् न ज्ञानमात्मनः क्रियते तथा ॥ १ ॥



यथोदपानखननात् क्रियते न जलान्तरम् ।

सदेव नीयते व्यक्तिमसतः सम्भवः कुतः ॥ २ ॥

तथा हेयगुणध्वंसादबरोधादयो गुणः ।

प्रकाशयन्ते न जन्यन्ते नित्या एवात्मनो हि ते इति ॥ ३ ॥

As by rubbing off the dust from a gem the light is not created in the gem, but the light, which is the inherent attribute of the gem, manifests itself owing to the removal of the covering dust, similarly the intelligence of the soul manifests itself when the faults are removed. As by digging the earth, water comes out of a well, but is not created by the act of digging, similarly the soul manifests its intelligence when the layers of ignorance concealing it are removed ; just as the water of the spring bubbles up when the super-incumbent layers of earth are removed by digging. In fact when the obscuring faults are destroyed, the innate qualities of the soul manifest themselves ; they are not created, because they are the eternal attributes of the Jīva.

The text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (III. 7. 22) says :—

यो विज्ञाने तिष्ठन्विज्ञानादन्तरो यं विज्ञानं न वेद यस्य विज्ञानं शरीरं यो विज्ञानमन्तरो यमयत्येव  
त आत्मान्तर्याम्यमृतः ॥ २२ ॥

He who dwells in Vijñāna (knowledge, Jivātmā), and within knowledge, whom knowledge does not know, whose body knowledge is, and who pulls (rules) knowledge within he is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the immortal.

This declares that the soul is knowledge, and not the knower. The apparent doubt raised by this Śruti is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II. 3. 27.

तद्गुणसारत्वात्तद्व्यपदेशः प्राज्ञवत् ॥ २ । ३ । २७ ॥

तत् Tat, that. गुण Guṇa, quality, that quality or those qualities, on account of the quality or qualities of that, that quality, namely, the quality of intelligence or knowledge. सारत्वात् Sāratvāt, being the essence. तत् Tat, that, namely, knowledge. व्यपदेशः Vyapadeśaḥ, designation. प्राज्ञवत् Prājña-vat, like the term Prājña, when applied to the Lord.

27. The soul gets the designation of knowledge, because that quality is its essential attribute, as the Lord Viṣṇu is called Prajñā or omniscience, because it is His essential attribute.—245.

COMMENTARY

Though the Jīva is the knower, yet it is sometimes designated as knowledge, because that quality of knowledge is its essential nature. The word 'Sāra' means a quality which never can be discarded, which is the essential nature of the thing, the absence of which makes the thing non-existent. The above text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad no doubt designates the soul by the term knowledge and not knower, but it is just like the other texts of the same Upaniṣad where the Lord Viṣṇu is called

Truth, Knowledge and Infinity, and which does not mean that the Lord is not Omniscient, because He is called Omniscience ; that He is not the Knower because He is called Knowledge, etc. In fact, these texts show that the soul is Knower and its essential attribute is knowledge. The next Sūtra shows this more clearly.

SŪTRA II, 3. 28.

यावदात्मभावित्वाच्च न दोषस्तद्दर्शनात् ॥ २ । ३ । २८ ॥

यावत् Yāvat, wherever, so long as. आत्म Ātma, the soul, the individual self. भावित्वात् Bhāvitvāt, on account of existing. च Cha, and. न Na, not. दोषः Doṣaḥ, objection, fault. तत् Tat, that. दर्शनात् Darsanāt, on account of being seen.

28. There is no objection in designating the soul, whose essential nature is knowledge, as knower also, because the knowledge exists so long as the self exists, and this we observe also.—246.

COMMENTARY

There is no fault in our reasoning if we assert the soul to be both knowledge as well as the knower. We perceive that the knowledge of the soul is co-eternal with the soul, and exists so long as the soul exists, namely, for ever. The soul verily exists from beginningless time to eternity, and such is also its knowledge. An illustration of this we observe in the case of the sun. The sun and its light are co-eternal, and the sun, though essentially luminous, is also the maker of illuminations, of others ; it is both the light and the illuminator. And so long as the sun will exist, we can apply both these designations to it, and though the two are really identical, yet they appear as two, hence their different designations.

An objector may say, knowledge is an attribute of the soul, and is not eternal, because it does not exist in the state of deep sleep and it originates because there are objects of knowledge to produce it. This is answered by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II. 3. 29.

पुंस्त्वादिवत्तस्य सतोभिव्यक्तियोगात् ॥ २ । ३ । २९ ॥

पुंस्त्वादिवत् Pūmstvādivat, like the virile power, like the power of procreation. तु Tu, but. अस्य Asya, its, namely, of knowledge. सतः Sataḥ, of the existing. अभिव्यक्तियोगात् Abhivyaktiyogāt, on account of manifestation.

29. But this knowledge always exists in the soul even in deep sleep (though in latency) like the procreative and other

powers in the child, and there is manifestation of it only in the waking state.—247.

#### COMMENTARY

The word “but” is employed in order to set aside the objection above raised. The word “Na” is understood in this Sūtra. It is not the case that in deep sleep knowledge does not exist, but it originates in the waking state. Why do we say so? Because this knowledge exists, though potentially, even in the state of dreamless sleep, and makes its manifestation only in the waking state. An illustration of this is seen in the case of virile power and others. They remain latent, in an infant, though these powers exist in the soul yet they are not apparent, it is only in youth that they manifest themselves. Similarly, the knowledge exists even in Suṣupti, though it manifests itself in the Jāgrata and Svapna. The scripture itself shows that there is such manifestation, and that knowledge does exist even in deep sleep. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV, 3. 30) and the rest we find the following :

यदे तन्न विजानाति विजानाति विजानान्वै तन्न विजानाति न हि विज्ञातुर्विज्ञातेर्विपरिलोपो विद्यतेऽवि-  
नाशित्वाच्च तु तद्वितीयमस्ति ततोऽन्यद्विभक्तं यद्विजानीयात् ॥

And when (it is said that) there (in the Suṣupti) he does not know, yet he is knowing, though he does not know. For knowing is inseparable from the knower, because it cannot perish. But there is then no second, nothing else different from him that he could know.

This shows that knowledge exists even in Suṣupti, but it does not manifest itself because there are no external objects to manifest it. Otherwise the Jīva itself could not exist in a state of deep sleep. It is the conjunction with the senses which is the exciting cause of knowledge and manifests it. Had knowledge not at all existed in the soul, it could never have manifested itself in the waking state, as when the virile power is not in a man, as in congenital eunuchs, it never manifests itself, even when such eunuchs attain youth. Therefore, it is established that Jīva is atomic in size, has knowledge for its essential nature, and that this attribute of knowledge is the eternal property of the soul.

Now the author refutes the view of the Sāṅkhya philosophers who maintain the opposite doctrine, namely, that the knowledge of the soul is not eternal.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Now the Pūrvapakṣin says, it is appropriate to assert that soul is mere knowledge and all-pervading. It is all-pervading because its effect is perceived everywhere. Had it been atomic it would not have perceived pleasure and pain in all parts of its body. Had it

been of medium size, then it would be non-eternal, which is not accepted by any orthodox school of philosophers.

*Siddhānta* : The following Sūtra sets forth the Siddhānta view :

SŪTRA II., 3. 30.

नित्योपलब्ध्यनुपलब्धिप्रसंगान्यननियमोवान्यथा ॥ २ । ३ । ३० ॥

नित्य Nitya, always, permanent. उपलब्धि Upalabdhi, perception, consciousness. अनुलब्धि Anupalabdhi, non-perception, non-consciousness. प्रसङ्गः Prasangaḥ, result, consequence. अन्यतर Anyatara, otherwise, either of the two. नियमः Niyamaḥ, restrictive rule. वा Vā, or. अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise, namely, if the soul were mere knowledge and omnipresent.

30. Otherwise there would be permanent consciousness or permanent unconsciousness, or else a restriction with regard to one or the other.—248.

#### COMMENTARY

If the view be maintained that the soul is mere knowledge and omnipresent, then would result the undesirable consequence that it would be either always conscious, or always non-conscious. Not only this, there would be a restriction or prohibition with regard to one or the other. The sense is this. It is a well-known fact, that there are consciousness and non-consciousness. Of these two states, if the cause were a soul which was omnipresent, and mere knowledge ; then these two states would be perceived simultaneously and always, by all people. If such a soul be the cause of consciousness only (but not of unconsciousness), then no one nowhere would ever be unconscious. If the soul be the cause of non-consciousness, then no one nowhere would ever be conscious. We cannot say that consciousness and unconsciousness depend upon sense organs, and the soul is conscious when it is in contact with the sense organs ; and it is unconscious when there is no such contact. For according to your theory, the soul being omnipresent is *always* in contact with sense organs. Moreover, in this theory all souls being omnipresent, are in contact with all bodies, and therefore should experience pleasure and pain everywhere. This Sūtra also indirectly refutes the view, that the particular experiences which a particular soul undergoes are the results of its past Karma and its Aśṛṣṭa, which Aśṛṣṭa depends upon the particular thoughts and desires entertained by that soul. The objection raised in this Sūtra applies to systems cognate to the Sāṅkhya. In our system the soul being atomic is separate for every other separate body, and so our theory is not open to this objection. Though it is atomic, it can work in all places, in

succession, not simultaneously ; and hence the objection based on the souls being omnipresent does not apply to this theory. The atomic soul perceives the pleasure and pain, by the pervasion of its attribute, as has already been mentioned in Sūtra II., 3. 24.

*Note* : The Sāṅkhya theory is that souls are many, separate for every body, but every soul is omnipresent and pure knowledge.

The Sāṅkhya Sūtra, VI., 36, declares that Pradhāna is all-prevading, and VI., 45 that the souls are many. And Sūtra, VI., 59, declares that the soul is all-prevading.

### *Adhikarana XIV.—The Jīva is an agent.*

Now the author considers the following text of the Taittirīya Upaniṣad (II., 5. 1) :

विज्ञानं यज्ञं तनुते । कर्माणि तनुतेऽपि च । विज्ञानं देवाः सर्वे । ब्रह्म ज्येष्ठमुपासते । विज्ञानं ब्रह्म चेद्रेद । तस्माच्चेन्न प्रमाद्यति । शरीरे पाप्मनो हित्वा । सर्वान्कामान्समश्नुत इति ॥

Vijñāna performs the sacrifice, it performs all sacred acts. All Devas of the senses attend upon Vijñāna as the great, as the oldest. If a man knows Vijñāna as the great, and if he does not swerve from it, he leaves all evils behind in the body, and attains all his wishes.

*Doubt* : Now arises the following doubt : Is the soul, described in the above text by the word "Vijñāna," an agent ? It apparently is, for the text says "Vijñāna or soul performs all sacrifices," and all the Devas of the senses are attendant upon Vijñāna. But, says the Pūrva-pakṣin, the soul is not an agent, because we have the following text to the contrary (Kāth., II., 18) :

न जायते म्रियते वा विपश्चिन्नायं कुतश्चिन्न बभूव कश्चित् । अजो नित्यः शाश्वतोऽयम्पुराणो न हन्यते हन्यमाने शरीरे ॥ १८ ॥

The Soul is not born, it dies not ; it sprang from nothing, nothing sprang from it. The ancient is unborn, eternal, everlasting, he is not killed, though the body is killed.

This text of the Kāṭha Upaniṣad declares that the soul is not an agent, but that Prakṛti is the agent. The Gītā also says to the same effect (III., 27) :

प्रकृतेः क्रियमाणानि गुणैः कर्माणि सर्वशः ।

अहंकारविमूढात्मा कर्ताऽहमिति मन्यते ॥

All actions are wrought by the qualities of nature only. The self, deluded by egoism thinketh : "I am the doer."

So also Gītā, XIII., 20 :

कार्यकारणकर्तृत्वे हेतुः प्रकृतिरुच्यते ।

पुरुषः सुखदुःखानां भोक्तृत्वे हेतुरुच्यते ॥

Matter is called the cause of the generation of causes and effects, Spirit is called the cause of the enjoyment of pleasure and pain.

Therefore we have the following :

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The soul is not an agent, Prakṛti is the agent. By realizing the truth one comes to know that she is the true agent, while one wrongly attributes to himself the idea of agency. The soul is merely the enjoyer of the fruit of action, and not an agent.

*Siddhānta* : To this Pūrvapakṣa the answer is given by the following Sūtra which declares that the soul is an agent.

SŪTRA II., 3. 1.

कर्ता शान्त्रार्थवत्त्वान् ॥ २ । ३ । ३१ ॥

कर्ता Kartā, agent. शान्त्रार्थवत्त्वान् Sāstrārthavattvāt, on account of the scripture having a purport.

31. The soul is alone the agent, and not the Prakṛti, for thus the scriptures can have a rational interpretation.—249.

#### COMMENTARY

The Jiva alone is the agent and not the Guṇas of Prakṛti. Why do we say so ? Because, the scriptures can have no purport if the Guṇas were the agents. In the scriptures we find injunctions like the following : "Let the person who desires heaven perform sacrifice ;" "Let the person meditate on the Supreme Luminous Self ;" etc. These texts can have a meaning only if the sentient souls were the agent, for agent alone can enjoy the fruit. They are meaningless if the Guṇas were to be the agents, for if the non-sentient Guṇas were the agents, the injunctions would not have been addressed to the sentient souls, but to the insentient Guṇas. The object of the scriptural injunction like the above is to produce in the soul a motive or desire to perform certain actions, in order to enjoy certain fruits. The injunctions produce the *idea* in the soul that certain acts are followed by certain results, and when that *idea* is produced, then the soul enters upon action, in order to enjoy the fruits thereof. This *idea* of cause and effect between certain action and its result or consequence cannot be produced in Prakṛti, which is insentient and consequently incapable of having any such conception. Therefore, Prakṛti is not the agent but the soul.

In the next Sūtra the author further shows that soul is the agent.

*Note* : The following quotation from Rāmānuja gives a more detailed reasoning : If a non-sentient thing were the agent, the injunction would not be addressed to another being (*viz.*, to an intelligent being—to which it actually is addressed). The term "Śāstra" (scriptural injunction) moreover comes from *Śas*, to command, and commanding means impelling to action. But scriptural injunctions impel to action through giving

rise to a certain conception (in the mind of the being addressed), and the non-sentient Pradhāna cannot be made to conceive anything. Scripture, therefore, has a sense only, if we admit that none but the intelligent enjoyer of the fruit of the action is at the same time the agent. Thus the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā declares "the fruit of the injunction belongs to the agent" (III., 7, 18).

The Pūrvapakṣin had contended that the text "if the slayer thinks, etc.," proves the self not to be the agent in the action of slaying, but what the text really means is only that the Self as being eternal cannot be killed. The text, from Smṛti, which was alleged as proving that the Guṇas only possess active power, refers to the fact that in all activities lying within the sphere of the Saṃsāra, the activity of the Self is due not to its own nature, but to its contact with the different Guṇas. The activity of the Guṇas, therefore, must be viewed not as permanent, but occasional only. In the same sense Smṛti says, "The reason is the connection of the soul with the Guṇas, in its births, in good and evil wombs" (Gītā, XIII., 21). Similarly, it is said there (XVIII., 16) that "he who through an untrained understanding looks upon the isolated Self as an agent, that man of perverted mind does not see," the meaning being that, since it appears from a previous passage that the activity of the Self depends on five factors (as enumerated in *St.* 16), he who views the isolated Self to be an agent has no true insight.

SŪTRA II., 3. 32.

विहारोपदेशात् ॥ २ । ३ । ३२ ॥

विहार Vihāra, play, sporting about. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, on account of declaration.

32. The soul is the agent, because the scripture declares that even in the state of Mukti it has pleasant activities.  
—250.

COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad the soul of the Mukta is thus described, (VIII., 12. 3) :

एवमेवैष सम्प्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसम्पद्य स्वेन रूपेणामिनिष्पद्यते स उत्तमः पुरुषः  
स तत्र पत्येति जज्ञन्कीडन्रममाणः स्त्रीभिर्वा यानैर्वा ज्ञातिभिर्वा नोपजन<sup>७</sup> स्मरन्निद<sup>७</sup> शरीर<sup>७</sup> स यथा  
प्रयोग्य आचरणे युक्त एवमेवायमस्मिच्छरीरे प्राणो युक्तः ॥ ३ ॥

He through whose grace this released soul, arising from its last body, and having approached the Highest Light, is restored to its own form is the Highest Person. The Mukta moves about there laughing, playing and rejoicing, with women, with carriages, with other Muktas of his own period or of the past Kalpas. (So great is his ecstasy) that he does not remember even the person standing near him, nor even his own body. And as a charioteer is appointed by his master to drive the carriage, just so is this Prāṇa appointed to drive this chariot of the body.

This shows that even the Mukta Jiva plays about. Thus we arrive at the conclusion that mere activity is not the cause of sorrow, (for then the Mukta Jivas would not have been active), but it is perverted activity alone which is the cause of pain, or to use technical phrase of the

Gītā, "It is the connection of the Soul with the Guṇas which is the cause of pain."

SŪTRA II., 3. 33.

उपादानात् ॥ २ । ३ । ३३ ॥

उपादानात् Upādānāt, on account of taking up, moving, seizing.

33. The soul is agent because in the state of sleep it takes the Prāṇas along with it.—251

COMMENTARY

In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (II., 1. 18.) we find the following :

स यत्रैतत्स्वप्नायाचरति ने हास्य लोकास्तदुतेव महाराजो भवत्युतेव महाब्रह्मण उतेवोच्चावचं निगच्छति स यथा महाराजो जानपदान् गृहीत्वा स्वे जनपदे यथाकामं परिवर्त्ततैवमेवैष एतत्प्राणान् गृहीत्वा स्वे शरीरे यथाकामं परिवर्त्तते ॥ १८ ॥

But when he moves about in sleep (and dream), then these are his worlds. He is, as it were, a great king ; he is, as it were, a great Brāhmaṇa ; he rises, as it were, and he falls. And as a great king might keep in his own subjects, and move about, according to his pleasure, within his own domain, thus does the soul control the various Prāṇas and move about, according to his pleasure, within his own body.

In the Gītā also we find (XV., 8) :

शरीरं यद्वान्तेति यच्चप्युत्क्रामतीश्वरः ।

गृहीत्वैतानि संयाति वायुर्गन्धानिवाशयात् ॥

When the soul acquireth a body and when he abandoneth it, he seizeth these and goeth with them, as the wind takes fragrances from their flowery receptacles.

This shows that the Jīva is an agent, because it takes up the Prāṇa. As the magnet draws the iron, so the Jīva draws the Prāṇas. No doubt, the Prāṇas are the agents in seizing external objects. They are the agents in all physical activities of the body, but the soul is the direct agent in catching hold and seizing the Prāṇa, and making it work or not work. There is no other agent with regard to the taking up of Prāṇa.

The author gives another reason in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 3. 34.

व्यपदेशाच्च क्रियायां न चेन्निर्देशविपर्ययः ॥ २ । ३ । ३४ ॥

व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśat, on account of direction, designation. च Cha, and. क्रियायाम् Kriyāyām, in action, in the performance of sacrifices. न चेत् Na-chet, if not so. निर्देश Nirdeśa, grammatical construction. विपर्ययः Viparyayaḥ, difference, opposite.

34. The soul is an agent also on account of the scriptures directing it to perform actions. If it were not the



agent, the grammatical construction would have been different.—252.

## COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya text, already mentioned before under Sūtra II., 3. 31, the word “Vijñāna” is used in the nominative case, meaning “the soul performs the sacrifice, it performs all works.” This shows that the soul is agent principally in all worldly and Vedic works, and it is the soul which is designated as performing all works sacred and secular. If the word “Vijñāna” there did not denote the soul, but the Buddhist principle, then the grammatical construction would have been different. It would not have been put in the nominative case, but in the instrumental case—instead of “Vijñānam” the form would have been “Vijñānena,” for Buddhi is merely the instrument of action and could not be put in the nominative case. But the text does not show it so. If Buddhi were the agent, then we have to imagine some other instrument through which it performs action, for all activities are accomplished through instruments only. Therefore, the dispute is nominal only, for there is no agency without an instrument, and where an instrument is spoken of as an agent, there the agent and the instrument are considered identical.

An objector may say: If Jīva was the agent, then he would create only that which was beneficial to it, and not that which was injurious, for an agent is always independent. This is no valid objection. Though the Jīva intends to create all conditions beneficial to itself, yet owing to the counteracting force of its past Karmas, which are concomitant causes, sometimes its efforts result in producing undesirable effects. Therefore, it follows that the soul alone is the agent.

This being so, the texts which declare that soul is not an agent are to be explained as declaring that the soul is not an independent agent. Its activities are dependent on the will of the Lord.

The scriptures—says an opponent—do not really mean to say that the soul is an agent, because the soul suffers pain; and had it been the creator of its conditions, it would not have suffered pain, for it would have created such conditions only which would have been joyful. This argument goes too far, for then the texts which declare explicitly that a man should perform full-moon and new-moon sacrifices are to be explained in a different way, namely, that Buddhi has to perform these sacrifices, not man. Thus the non-agency of the soul would make the scriptural texts absurd.

The author now shows the objections to which the theory of Pradhāna being the agent is open.

SŪTRA II., 3. 35.

उपलब्धिवदनियमः ॥ २ । ३ । ३५ ॥

उपलब्धिवत् Uplabdhivat, like perception, like the case of sentiency or non-sentiency as in Sūtra II., 3. 20. अनियमः Aniyamaḥ, want of determinateness, want of definiteness.

35. If the soul were not the agent, then there would be indefiniteness of all activities, just as in the case of consciousness, if it were all-prevading.—253.

## COMMENTARY

In the previous Sūtra (II., 3. 30) it has been shown how indefinite would be the consciousness of the soul if it were omnipresent. On similar reasoning it can be shown that if all activities belong to Prakṛti, and not to the soul, then there would be similar vagueness with regard to all activities. For Prakṛti being all-pervading and the common possession of all souls, all actions would result in producing experiences in all souls, or in not producing experiences in any soul.

*Note :* As air is all-prevading, any vibration in air, such as sound, produces the same sensation in all persons, similarly Prakṛti, being all-pervading, any activity in or of Prakṛti will produce the same experience in all souls, and any inactivity would stop the activity of all souls.

You cannot say that the activity of the Prakṛti in a particular locality would only produce experience in that soul, which is in proximity with it, and not in another which is at a distance from that locality, (as sound is heard by persons near its source, and not at a too great distance). For in your theory the souls being equally omnipresent with Prakṛti, will experience the activities of Prakṛti, wherever it may be active, for its proximity with Prakṛti is present everywhere.

SŪTRA II., 3. 36.

शक्तिविपर्ययात् ॥ २ । ३ । ३६ ॥

शक्ति Śakti, power. विपर्ययात् Viparyayāt, on account of difference or inversion.

36. If Prakṛti were the agent, then there would be the inversion of the power of enjoyment attributed to the soul, and that power of enjoyment would belong to Prakṛti.—254.

## COMMENTARY

If Prakṛti were the agent and not the soul, then the power of enjoyment which is attributed to the soul, must be attributed to Prakṛti, for enjoyment always is experienced by the agent, and not by a third person. There is no such vicarious punishment or reward. If a man

does an act, he experiences its result, and not a third party. If Prakṛti be the agent, there is no reason why the soul should be the enjoyer. In the Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad (I., 8) the existence of the soul is established, because it enjoys the fruit of its action. If the soul were not the agent, that argument also will be invalid. For this reason also soul is the agent, for vicarious suffering or enjoyment is unreasonable.

SŪTRA II., 3. 37.

समाध्यभावाच्च ॥ २ । ३ । ३७ ॥

समाधि-अभावात् Samādhi-abhāvāt, on account of the absence of Samādhi. च Cha, and.

37. If Prakṛti were the agent, then there would be the absence of Samadhi also.—255.

#### COMMENTARY

The theory that Prakṛti is the agent is open to this objection also, that under it Samādhi itself becomes impossible; and consequently there can be no release, because Samādhi is the instrument of release. Now Samādhi consists in the realisation of the idea "I am separate from Prakṛti." If Prakṛti were the agent, then Prakṛti would have to formulate this notion, "I am separate from Prakṛti," which would mean "I am separate from myself." Now Prakṛti cannot formulate any such notion, because it is non-intelligent; and because the idea itself of being separate from one's ownself is an impossible notion. Even the extremists who would attribute no activity to the soul are forced to admit its activity so far as Mukti is concerned. They admit that it is the soul which by its effort of Samādhi realises its difference from Prakṛti and thus gets Mukti. But if the soul were absolutely inactive this effort of realising Samādhi would be impossible for it. Hence it follows that the soul alone is the agent.

*Adhikaraṇa XV.—Activity is an essential attribute of the soul, though it may not be always actually active.*

Now the author shows by an illustration, that the soul is active by its inherent power, as well as by employing instruments.

SŪTRA II., 3. 38.

यथा च तक्षोभयथा ॥ २ । ३ । ३८ ॥

यथा Yathā, as. च Cha, also, and. तक्ष Takṣa, the carpenter. उभयथा Ubhaya-yathā, in both ways.

38. The soul is active in both ways like unto the carpenter.  
—256.

## COMMENTARY

As a carpenter is agent in the act of carpentry through the medium of his instruments, such as axe, plane, saw, borer, etc., and is agent also directly in the act of holding those instruments and grasping them in his hands, so also the Jiva is an agent in a two-fold sense. It works on the external world indirectly through the instrumentality of the sense organs, and it is also directly agent in the act of controlling the Prāṇas. In other words, the soul has double agency, one through the Prāṇa, the other by seizing hold of the Prāṇa itself and directing it into different channels. This explains why in certain scriptural texts agency is attributed to Matter and not to the Soul. It is because importance is given to the instrument, therefore, it is said that the Guṇas act and not the Jiva. Thus, as in ordinary language, one may say that the axe cuts, etc., such phrases are figurative only, and as there is preponderance of Guṇas in such acts, so the action is attributed to the Guṇas. In fact, the Gītā declares it clearly that “re-incarnation of the soul in good or bad family is regulated by the use it has made of its implements, namely, the Guṇas.” (Gītā, XIII, 21) :

पुरुषः प्रकृतिस्थो हि भुङ्क्ते प्रकृतिजान्गुणान् ।

कारणं गुण संगोऽस्थ सदसद्योनिजन्मसु ॥

Soul, ruling matter, useth the implements (Guṇas) made of matter. The cause of its birth in good and evil wombs is the right or wrong employment of these implements (Guṇas).

This explains those passages which declare Guṇas to be the agent, such as the Gītā, III., 27 :

प्रकृतेः क्रियमाणानि गुणैः कर्माणि सर्वशः ।

अहंकारविमूढात्मा कर्ताऽहमिति मन्यते ॥

All actions are wrought by the Guṇas of nature only. The self, deluded by egoism, thinketh : “I am the doer.”

If the soul is the real agent, why does the above verse say that the man who thinks himself to be the agent is a fool? And why is this repeated again in verse, XVIII., 16 :

तत्रैवं सति वर्तारमात्मानं केषलं तु यः ।

पश्यत्यकृतबुद्धित्वाच्च स पश्यति दुर्मतिः ॥ १६ ॥

That being so, he verily who—owing to untrained Reason—looketh on his Self, which is isolated, as the actor, he, of perverted intelligence, seeth not.

The reply to this is that every act has five factors. The man who ignores the four and thinks himself to be the sole agent, is called in these verses a fool, one of perverted intelligence. The five factors are mentioned in the same (XVIII., 14.)

अधिष्ठानं तथा कर्ता करणं च पृथग्विषम् ।

विविधाश्च पृथक्चेष्टा देवं चैवात्र पञ्चमम् ॥ १४ ॥

The body, the soul, the various organs, the diverse kinds of energies, and the Supreme Lord also, the fifth, are the five factors in all acts.

We cannot take these verses in the superficial sense as teaching that the soul is isolated and never an agent, for in that very book we find that the soul does perform act, for the sake of getting Mukti. If the soul could perform no action, no direction could be issued to it to *exert* for salvation. Such as we find in the Gîtâ, XVIII., 65 :

मन्मना भव मद्भक्तो मद्याजी मां नमस्कुरु ।

मामेवैष्यसि सत्यं ते प्रतिजाने प्रियोऽसि मे ॥

Merge thy mind in Me, be My devotee, sacrifice to Me, prostrate thyself before Me, thou shalt come even to Me. I pledge thee My truth ; thou art dear to Me.

So also IX, 34 :

मन्मना भव मद्भक्तो मद्याजी मां नमस्कुरु ।

मामेवैष्यसि युक्तवैवमात्मानं मत्परायणः ॥ ३४ ॥

On Me, fix thy mind ; be devoted to Me, sacrifice to Me ; prostrate thyself before Me ; harmonised thus in the Self, thou shalt come unto Me, having Me as thy supreme goal.

So also XVIII., 55 :

भक्त्या मामभिजानाति यावान्यश्चास्मि तत्त्वतः ।

ततो मा तत्त्वतो ज्ञात्वा विशते तदनन्तरम् ॥ ५५ ॥

By devotion he knoweth Me in essence, who and what I am ; having thus known Me in essence he forthwith entereth into the Supreme.

These verses show that Mukti is for that soul only which *performs* the act of meditation on the Lord. No doubt, there are passages declaring that the soul neither kills nor is killed, such as II., 19, etc. They mean that the effect of slaying, as cutting asunder into two pieces, never accrues to the soul. The soul, being eternal, can never be cut asunder or slain. But those passages do not mean that a person, who unrighteously kills another, will not suffer the moral consequences of that act, for the Gîtâ has already established that the agency belongs to the soul, and the soul must enjoy or suffer the good or bad effects of its deeds. This also explains how the saints or devotees are said to perform no action, though they are ordered to worship the Lord. The great Saints, the Bhâgavatas,

not only worship the Lord in this world, but in heaven also after they have attained Mukti ; but their worship is considered to be no action in the ordinary sense of the word ; for they worship without any taint of Guṇas, and their devotion is of pure spiritual energy, and the Guṇas are completely submerged in their case, and play a very subordinate part.

Referring to this we find in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa the following :

सात्त्विकः कारकोऽसङ्गी रागान्धो राजसः स्मृतः ।

नामसः स्मृतिविभ्रष्टो निर्गुणो मदव्यपाश्रयः ॥

The Sāttvic agent is he who performs all acts without attachment to the Guṇas, the Rājasa agent performs all acts blinded by his attachment to the Guṇas, the Tamasic agent has no memory, and performs all actions ignorantly, while the Nirguṇa agent is he who does every act with perfect resignation to My will.

The experiencing of pleasure and pain is always the function of the soul, pure and simple, and never of matter or Guṇas, as says the Gītā very clearly (XIII., 20) :

कार्यकारणकर्तृत्वं हेतुः प्रकृतिरुच्यते ।

पुरुषः सुखदुःखानां भोक्तृत्वे हेतुरुच्यते ॥

Matter is called the cause of the generation of causes and effects. Spirit is called the cause of the enjoyment of pleasure and pain.

Though pleasure and pain always co-exist with Guṇas, yet they, being of the nature of consciousness or feeling, have the soul element predominating in them, for the power of consciousness belongs to the soul alone and the Guṇas do not predominate in the sentiency of pleasure and pain, for matter is opposed to consciousness. It is a well-known fact, that the essence of soul is consciousness, the feeling of pleasure and pain. The soul is self-luminous, and hence intelligence as well as agency must be understood to be the essential qualities of the soul. In fact, the Śruti also declares the same (Praśna Upaniṣad, IV., 9.) :

एष हि द्रष्टा स्प्रष्टा श्रोता व्राता रसयिता मन्ता बोद्धा कर्ता विज्ञानात्मा पुरुषः । स परंस्त्वं आत्मनि सम्प्रतिष्ठते ॥ ६ ॥

For he it is who sees, hears, smells, tastes, perceives, conceives, acts, he whose essence is knowledge, the person, and he dwells in the highest, indestructible Self.

The illustration of the carpenter also shows that the agency of the soul is not perpetual but depends upon its volition. It may or may not be active as it pleases. It is not subject to the law of inertia of Matter. A material particle once in motion, is always in motion without any power of stoppage unless some external force comes in

*Adhikaraṇa XVI.—Soul in its activity is dependent on the Lord.*

Now another doubt is raised as regards this activity of the soul.

*Doubt :* Is this activity of the soul self-dependent or dependent on another ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* It is self-dependent, because injunctions and prohibitions of the scriptures have a meaning only if the soul were self-dependent in its activity and not otherwise. When the scripture says, "let a person desirous of heaven perform sacrifice," "let a Brāhmaṇa not drink wine, and let him forsake all sins," etc., it means that the soul is independent in its activity, for orders are addressed only to those who of their own free volition and thought have the power of entering on an action or refraining from an action.

*Siddhānta :* The soul is not independent in its activity, but depends on the Highest Self, as is shown in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 3. 39.

परतु तच्छ्रुतेः ॥ २ । ३ । ३९ ॥

परतु Parāt, from the Supreme Lord. तु Tu, but. तच्छ्रुतेः Tat-śruteḥ, on account of this being declared by scriptures.

39. But the activity of the soul is from the Highest Lord as its cause, because the scriptures declare it so.—257.

COMMENTARY

The word 'but' is employed in order to remove the doubt raised by the Pūrvapakṣin. The activity of the soul proceeds from the Highest Lord as its cause. Why do we say so ? Because the scripture declares it to be thus. Such as "The Lord is within all, the ruler of all creatures ;" "Who dwelling in the Jīva-ātman, is different from Jīva-ātman, whom the Jīva-ātman does not know, whose body the Jīva-ātman is, who rules the Jīva-ātman from within, He is thyself the Inner Ruler, the Immortal."

So also in Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, III., 8 :

एषः खेनेन साधु कर्म कारयति तं यमन्वानुनेषत्येष एवेनमसाधु कर्म कारयति तं यमेभ्यो लोकेभ्यो-  
नुत्सरे ॥

For the Lord makes him whom he wishes to lead up from these worlds, do a good deed ; and the same makes him, whom He wishes to lead down from these worlds, do a bad deed.

All these texts show that the Lord is the highest motive power of the soul.

Let it be so. If the agency of the soul is dependent on the Highest Lord, then all injunctions and prohibitions of scriptures become useless, for the man then becomes a mere automaton moved by the Spirit within. The scriptures only enjoin acts and omissions on persons who have power of their own to do an act or to refrain from doing an act.

To this objection the following Sūtra gives a reply.

SŪTRA II., 3. 40.

कृतप्रयत्नापेक्षन्तु विहितप्रतिषिद्धावैयर्थ्यादिभ्यः ॥ २ । ३ । ४० ॥

कृत Kṛta, made. प्रयत्न Prayatna, effort. अपेक्षः Apekṣaḥ, having regard to, with a view. तु Tu, but. विहित Vihita, ordained, injunction. प्रतिषिद्ध Pratiṣiddha, prohibited. अवैयर्थ्यादिभ्यः A-vaiyarthya-ādibhyaḥ, on account of non-meaninglessness.

40. The Lord makes the soul to act having regard to the effort made by it, so that injunctions and prohibitions of the scriptures may not become meaningless.—258.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'but' removes the doubt raised. The Lord causes the Jīva to act in a particular way, not arbitrarily, but having regard to the tendencies generated by it, by the good or evil deeds performed by it in its past lives. Hence the above objection is no longer valid. The different fruits which the souls experience are the results of the differences of their actions, good or bad, just as the different fruits which the trees produce are the results of the differences of seeds. The Lord is the exciting cause of the growth of the tree like the rain. The seed is the particular cause of the particular kind of fruit produced, the rain is the general cause. If there were no rain, we shall never see the diversities of smell, taste, of the fruits, flowers, etc., which we find in the vegetable creation, for no plants will grow in the absence of water. Similarly, there may be abundance of water and still no plants will grow if there be no seeds. The result is that the good or bad experiences are the consequences dependent upon the actions of the soul and not the arbitrary act of the Lord. Similarly, a man may be an agent, though impelled to that action by another, and be still responsible for his acts. Therefore, the responsibility of the soul does not cease, though the impelling cause is the Lord.

On what authority do we say so? Because otherwise the injunctions and prohibitions of the scriptures would be meaningless.

The words "Ādi, etc." in the Sūtra suggest that the grace and punishment of the Lord are also not arbitrary acts, but regulated by the



actions of the Jīva. It is only in this way that scriptural commands do not become purportless. If the soul were a mere automaton, like a piece of wood or stone, impelled by the Lord to do good or bad deeds, then the words of the scripture will lose their authoritativeness and the responsible agent would be the Lord Himself. In the Kauṣītakī Upaniṣad, it is certainly said : "The Lord makes him whom He wishes to lead up do a good deed, etc." There also the Lord wishing to lead up a particular soul impels that soul to do good act, for the phrase "wishing to lead up" means the grace of God and impelling a Jīva to good deeds. Similarly, the phrase "wishing to lead down" means punishment and impelling a Jīva to perform evil deeds. If the Jīva was like an automaton, then the grace and punishment would have no meaning with regard to his actions, nor could the charge of cruelty brought against the Lord be answered in that view of the case. Therefore, soul is a responsible agent, though no doubt a secondary agent, while the Lord is the causative agent, because without His permission, the soul can do nothing. Thus there is a complete reconciliation of the two views.

### *Adhikaraṇa XVII.—The soul is a part of God.*

Now the author in order to strengthen the view set forth in the previous Sūtras teaches that the Jīva is a portion of Brahman. In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, III. 1. 1., we find the following :

इति सुपर्णा सयुजा सखाया समानं वृक्षं परिषस्वजाते ।

तयोरेक्यः पिप्पलं म्याह्वयन्नश्नन्नन्योऽभिचाकशीति ॥ १ ॥

Two birds, inseparable friends, cling to the same tree. One of them eats the sweet fruit, the other looks on without eating.

This reference to two birds in this verse is evidently to the Lord and the Jīva, to the God and the soul.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Is the Lord Himself the Jīva, appearing as such owing to the limitations of Māyā, or is the Jīva a part of the Lord dependent on Him, invariably related to Him, but separate from Him, like the rays of the sun ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says the Lord Himself limited by Māyā is the Jīva. As says the Atharvan Śruti (Brahma-Bindu Upaniṣad, verse XIII) :

वदसंभृतमाकाशं लीयमाने घटे यथा ।

वटो लीयेत नाऽऽकाशं तद्वज्जीवो नभोपमः ॥ २३ ॥

As a space enclosed in a jar remains in its own place even when the jar is moved to another locality—for it is the jar that is moved and not the space, or as a jar enclosing

a space may be broken into pieces but the space remains the same and is not destroyed, so is the soul like space.

The Śrutis like "Thou art that," etc., also become harmonised in this view of the case, namely, that the soul and the Lord are identical.

*Siddhānta* : The soul and the Lord are not identical as shown by the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA II., 3. 41.

अंशो नाना व्यपदेशादन्यथाचापि दामकित्वादित्वमधीयत एके ॥ २ । ३ । ४१ ॥

अंशः Aṁśah, part. नाना Nānā, many, multifarious, difference. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, on account of the declaration. अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise. च Cha, and. अपि Api, also. दास Dāsa, servant. कितव Kitava, gambler. आदित्वम् Āditvam, and the rest. अधीयते Adhiyate, record. एके Eke, some (texts).

41. The soul is a part, because the Lord is described as having manifold relations with the soul, and also because some texts record him as identical with Brahman, like slaves and fisherman, etc.—259.

#### COMMENTARY

Jīva is a part of the Supreme Lord like the rays of the sun, which are separate from it, but which continually accompany it and which in a way are dependent upon it. Why do you say so? Because the scripture describes the manifold relations of the soul with the Lord. Thus in the Subāla Upaniṣad, we hear : "One God Nārāyaṇa is the creator, is the destroyer, is the Divine, is the mother, is the father, is the brother, is the abode, is the refuge, is the friend, verily He, the Nārāyaṇa, is the goal of all." So also in the Gītā, IX., 18 :

गतिर्भर्ता प्रभुः साक्षी निवासः शरणं सुहृत् ।

प्रभवः प्रलयः स्थान निघ्नानं बीजमव्ययम् ॥ १२ ॥

The Path, Husband, Lord, Witness, Abode, Shelter, Lover, Origin, Dissolution, Foundation, Treasure-house, Seed imperishable.

The scriptures declare manifold relation of the Lord with the soul, such as He is the creator, the Jīva is the created; He is the ruler, the other is the ruled; He is the support, the other is the supported; He is the Lord, the other is the servant; He is the lover, the other is the beloved; He is the object of attainment, the other is the attainer; and so on. On the other hand, the Atharvān Śruti also describes Him in another way, namely, His unity with Jīva, showing all-pervasiveness by which He pervades the Jīva, and thus the Jīva is looked upon as identical with

Brahman. In other words, the texts declare *both* the difference of the Lord and the Jīva, and His *unity* with the Jīva in the sense of its pervading the Jīva. Thus the following text :

ब्रह्मदासा ब्रह्म दाशा ब्रह्ममे कितवाः ।

Brahman is the slaves. Brahman is these fishermen, and Brahman is these gamblers, etc.

These declarations of unity would not be possible, if there were no difference in essential nature between God and Soul. No one can himself be the creator as well as the created, himself the pervader as well as the pervaded, nor the Supreme Lord who is the highest intelligence can be the slave, the fisherman, etc. If He were to be so, then all those texts would be stultified which teach indifference to all worldly objects. Nor can it be said that the Lord limited by Mâyâ is transformed into slave, fisherman, etc.

*Note :* The Jīva is said to be a part or Amśa, of Brahman, because in that view only the apparently conflicting texts of the Upaniṣads can be reconciled. Some texts declare the difference of Brahman from the soul in very distinct terms. Brahman is the creator, soul the created, Brahman the ruler, soul the ruled, etc. While there are equally contrary texts, which declare Brahman to be identical with every soul, whether that of a slave, a fisherman or a gambler, etc., How are these texts to be reconciled? Some texts declare Nānātva or difference, others declare Anyathâ or non-Nānātva or unity. According to Bādarāyaṇa the reconciliation consists in considering the soul as an Amśa or part of the Lord, for in that view only, it is possible to consider it as different from the Lord, as well as non-different from Him.

The soul is not a part of Brahman in the sense of a piece of stone cut off from a rock by the chisel. Jīva is not in that sense a cut off portion of the Lord, for if it were so then it would contradict all those texts which declare Brahman and soul to be incapable of division, and not liable to any change. Therefore, the Jīva is described as a part of Brahman, in the sense of being a subordinate member of Brahman, separate from Him, but related to Him, as the created, the ruled, the supported, etc. The subordinate relation of the soul to Brahman is established by the fact that all energies of the soul are from the Lord. As says the Smṛti (Viṣṇu Purāṇa, Book VI, Ch. 7, verses 61—64) :

एतत् सर्वमिदं विश्वं जगदेतच्चरः।चरम् ।

परब्रह्मस्वरूपस्य विष्णोः शक्तिसमन्वितम् ॥ ६० ॥

विष्णुशक्तिः परा प्रोक्ता क्षेत्रज्ञाख्या तथापरा ।

अविद्या कर्मसंज्ञान्या तृतीया शक्तिरिष्यते ॥ ६१ ॥

The whole of this universe consisting of moveable and immoveable Jīvas is energised by the energy of Viṣṇu, the Supreme Brahman. The energies are of three sorts, the divine energy which is the highest, and called the Viṣṇu Sakti, the Jīva energy which is

lower than this and is called the Kṣetrajña Śakti, and third the material energy called the Avidyā or Karma energy.

The word Amśa used in this Sūtra is to be understood in a sense similar to that when we say the orb of Venus is a hundredth *part* of that of the moon. This definition of Amśa or part does not transgress the definition which says: "Part is the particular localisation of a whole or a particular portion of one substance, inhering in that substance but not separate from that substance." Thus Brahman as possessor of all energies is one entire substance, while Jīva has a portion of this Brahma energy, and in that sense it is a part of Brahman, and thus is subordinate to Brahman. In other words, the word Amśa or part is to be taken in the sense of subordinate. When we say "Jīva is a part of Brahma" we mean "Jīva is subordinate to Brahman."

The statements that the human soul is like a space enclosed in a jar, not different from the space outside the jar, are to be reconciled by holding that when the limiting condition or Upādhi is destroyed then there is the union of the two. It does not mean absolute identity. The phrases like "thou art that," etc., also declare that "the thou" is dependent upon "the that," for all its functions. In other words, the sentence "thou art that" means "all thy functions are dependent upon Brahman." In fact, all the previous texts and illustrations of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, show this to be the real meaning of the great saying "thou art that;" it has no other meaning. Consequently, it follows that the Jīva is different from the Lord and this difference is manifest; for one is the ruler, the other is the ruled; one is omnipresent, the other is atomic; and so on. The opposite view that the Jīva and the Lord are identical cannot be fairly deduced from the scriptural texts.

In support of this view that the Jīva is a part of Brahman in the sense of being subordinate to Him, the author now quotes a Vedic Śruti.

SŪTRA II., 3. 42.

मन्त्रवर्णति ॥ २ । ३ । ४२ ॥

मन्त्रवर्णति Mantravarnāt, because of the description given in the sacred Mantra.

42. The Jīva is a part of Brahman because the Mantra also describes it to be so.—260.

COMMENTARY

नावानस्य महिमा ततो ज्यायाँश्च पुरुषः ।

पादोऽयं सर्वा भूतानि त्रिषादभ्यासृष्टं दिवीति ॥ ६ ॥

Even the Rg Veda, X., 90. 3, declares :

Such is His greatness, yea, the Lord is even greater. All souls constitute one quarter of Him. His immortal three quarters are in Heaven.

This Mantra, which is to be found in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, III., 12. 6, declares distinctly that all Jīvas constitute a Pāda or portion of Brahman. In fact, the word Pāda and Aṁśa are identical. Both mean "a part" or "a portion." This Mantra uses the word 'Sarvā-bhūtāni' in the plural number, while in the Sūtra the word Aṁśa is in the singular number. The singular here is used in a generic sense to denote all souls. Incidentally it may be mentioned that the souls are many as declared in this Mantra. In other places also singular must be taken as denoting the whole class, thus as in Sūtra, II., 3. 19, the word "Ātman" is used in the singular number, but denotes the whole class of Jīvātmans.

SŪTRA II., 3. 43.

अपि च स्मर्यते ॥ २ । ३ । ४३ ॥

अपि Api, also. च Cha, and. स्मर्यते Smaryate, it is so written in the Smṛti.

43. The Smṛti also declares the soul to be a portion of Brahman.—261.

COMMENTARY

In the Gītā, XV., 7, we find :

ममैवांशो जीवलोके जीवभूतः सनातनः ।

मनः षष्ठानीन्द्रियाणि प्रकृतिस्थानि कर्षति ॥ ७ ॥

A part of me verily has become the Jīva in this world of Jīvas and is eternal. It draweth round itself the senses of which the mind is the sixth, veiled in matter.

The Lord has used the word "eternal" in the above showing that the Jīvas are eternal and not fictitious portions like space enclosed in a jar. Here also the word Aṁśa is used showing that the Jīva is always dependent upon the Lord and that all its activities are subordinate to Him.

In the Padma Purāṇa the essential nature of the Jīva is more definitely stated :

ज्ञानाश्रयो ज्ञानगुणश्चेतनः प्रकृतेः परः ।

न जातो निर्विकारश्च एकरूपः स्वरूपभाक् ॥ १ ॥

अणुर्नित्यो व्याप्तशीलश्चिदानन्दात्मकस्तथा ।

ब्रह्मर्षोऽभ्ययः साक्षी भिन्नरूपः सनातनः ॥ २ ॥

अदाहोऽल्क्ष्योऽक्लोबोऽशोभ्योऽक्षर एव च ।

यवमादिगुणैर्युक्तः शेषभूतः परम्य वै ॥ ३ ॥

मकारेणोच्यते जीवः क्षेत्रज्ञः परब्रह्म सदा ।

दासभूतो हरेरेव नान्यस्यैव कदाचनेति ॥ ४ ॥

The Jīva is an intelligent receptacle having intelligence as its quality, it is the giver of sentiency to its various vehicles and is beyond Prakṛti. It is not born; it is not subject

to modification, it has one form, unchanging in its essence. It is atomic and eternal, having the quality of pervasion and consisting of knowledge and bliss. It is designated by the word "I," is unchanging, is the witness and eternal. It is incombustible, uncleanable and can neither be wetted nor dried away. It is imperishable as well. Possessing these attributes it is a part of Brahman, a servant of the Lord. The letter "Ma" denotes the Jīva called also the knower of the field. It is the slave of the Lord but of no one else ever.

The words "possessing these attributes and the rest" refer to the other qualities of the Jīva not definitely mentioned in the above extract, such as the Jīva is an agent, the enjoyer, the self-luminous, etc. Luminosity is of two kinds according to the difference of the substance and the quality. The first depends for its enkindling on its own self, the second is the particular substance which is the cause of enkindling himself as well as another. Such is the Self or Jivātman. The flame of a candle illumines the eye and is itself a lighted mass and its burning is dependent upon itself and it manifests itself by its own light and is not like jar, etc., which manifest themselves through another's light. Therefore, the flame is self-luminous. But there is this difference between the flame and the soul that the flame being material cannot shine forth or illumine itself, in other words, has no self-consciousness. But the soul is self-luminous like the flame and illumines others like the flame, but has the additional attribute of self-illumination, of self-consciousness, which the light has not. Therefore, it is said that the soul illumines itself, is self-luminous and of the form of intelligence.

### *Adhikaraṇa XVIII—The Avatāras like Fish, etc., are not part of Brahman but Brahman itself.*

As a digression the author here considers the subject of Avatāras. In the Gopālatāpani Upaniṣad it is said (p. 195. Thirty-two Upaniṣada, Ānanda Āśram Series).

एको वशी सर्वगः कृष्ण इत्येकोऽपि सन्ब्रुवा यो विभाति ।

तं पीठस्थं येऽनुभजन्ति धीरास्तेषां सुखं साश्वतं नेतरेषाम् ॥

There is one ruler, all-pervading, the Lord Kṛṣṇa, the adored of all and though one shines forth as many, the wise who worship Him as seated in the throne of the heart enjoy eternal happiness but not so the others.

Similarly, in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa it is said (I. 2. 3) :

एकानेकस्वरूपाय स्थूलसूक्ष्मात्मने नमः ।

अव्यक्तव्यक्तभूताय विष्णवे मुक्तिहेतवे ॥ ३ ॥

Salutation to that Lord Viṣṇu whose essential nature is one as well as many, who is both subtle and the gross, who is both manifest and unmanifest, who is the cause of salvation.

Here the Lord is called as one, in the sense of being the whole, and is called as having many forms, in the sense of having taken many *Amśa-kalā* *Avatāras*.

*Doubt* : Now the doubt arises : Are these *Amśa-kalā* *Avatāras* portions of Viṣṇu, in the same sense as the *Jīva* is a portion of the Lord, or is there any difference ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : There is no difference between the *Jīvas* and these *Amśa* *Avatāras*, for both are *Amśas* or parts of Brahman, and as such there is equality of attributes between them.

*Siddhānta* : This is not so, as shown in the next *Sūtra*.

SŪTRA., II., 3. 44.

प्रकाशादिवन्नैवंपरः ॥ २ । ३ । ४४ ॥

प्रकाशादिवत् *Prakāśādivat*, like light and the rest. न *Na*, not. एवम् *Evam*, thus. परः *Parah*, the highest, the supreme, the *Avatāras* like the Fish, etc.

44. The supreme *Avatāras* like the Fish and the rest, are not thus *Amśas* of Brahman as the *Jīva* is ; like the light and so on.—262.

COMMENTARY

Though denominated by the term *Amśa*, the *Avatāras* like the Fish and the rest, are not *Amśas* in the same sense as the *Jīva* is said to be. The word *Amśa*, applied to the *Avatāras*, means the entire Brahman. This the author explains by the example of "light and the rest" : As sun is said to be light, and the firefly also is said to be light, yet the word light applied to the sun has altogether a different meaning from the word light applied to the firefly. There is no oneness of form between the sun and the firefly. Similarly, though the nectar and the wine are both liquids, and are equally termed liquids, yet they are not the same ; in the same way the *Avatāras* and the *Jīvas*, though *Amśas* of Brahman, yet are not the same.

SŪTRA II, 3. 45.

स्मरन्ति च ॥ २ । ३ । ४५ ॥

स्मरन्ति *Smaranti*, the *Smṛtis* declare. च *Cha*, and.

45. The *Smṛtis* also declare the same.—263.

COMMENTARY

In the *Mahāvarāha Purāṇa* we read as follows :

स्वांशश्चाथ विभिन्नांश इति द्वांश इष्यते ।

अंशिनो यत्तु सामर्थ्यं यत्स्वरूपं यथा स्थितिः ॥ १ ॥

तदेव नाशुमात्रोऽपि भेदः स्वांशंशिनो कश्चित् ।

विभिन्नांशोऽल्पशक्तिः स्यात् किञ्चित् सामर्थ्यमात्रयुगिति ॥ २ ॥

सर्वे सर्वगुरोः पूर्णाः सर्वदोषविवर्जिता इति च ॥

The *Amśa* is used in two senses, (i) the *Amśa* or part of one's ownself and hence identical with himself, (ii) a part separate from one's ownself. The first called *Svāmśa* is absolutely identical with the whole, of which it is a part. It has all the powers, the nature and the condition of the original; there is not the slightest difference between it and its prototype. The second called *Vibhinna Amśa* has lesser power, lesser energy, lesser attributes than the original. The *Sva-amśas* are all full of perfect attributes and free from all defects.

The sense of the above is this : In the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* it is said : "These *Avatāras* are the partial manifestations (*Amśakalā*) of the Supreme Person, but *Kṛṣṇa* is the Lord Himself." This verse does not mean that other *Avatāras*, like the Fish and the rest, are in any respect inferior to the Lord; but that they are the Supreme Lord in His entirety, and are not *Amśas* in the same sense as the *Jīvas* are the *Amśas* of the Lord. On the other hand, they are like the various aspects of the same Lord manifesting different powers, just like the crystal and the rest, which show different attributes at different times. When the Lord in his *Avatāra* manifests *all* His powers, then He is called a *full* *Avatāra*, but when He manifests only a *portion* of His powers, then he is said to be a *partial* *Avatāra*. In His *Avatāra* as *Kṛṣṇa*, all the six powers were fully manifested, but in other *Avatāras*, a fewer number of these powers were shown forth, and hence they were called *Amśakalās*. It may be illustrated by the example of a great professor, who is master of all the sciences, and who is, therefore, called a perfect master; but when he addresses a lower class of intellects, he may not expound to them all the six *Śāstras*, but only a particular portion; and in that aspect of his teaching, he may be called a partial teacher; though as a matter of fact, he is master of six sciences. It is only in the Lord *Kṛṣṇa*, the infant sucking at the breast of mother *Yasodā*, that we find the perfect manifestation of all the six attributes which constitute the Godhead, such, for example, supreme love for all humanity or an object of supreme love for all humanity, the maker of the supremely sweet heavenly music which turns the head of even the wisest Gods like *Brahmā* and the rest, the possessor of the most ravishing and beautiful form, which enchants all who behold it, and immeasurable compassion and the rest. These attributes are fully mentioned in the tenth Skandha of the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*. The Lord in His manifestation of *Śrī Kṛṣṇa* was attended by *all* His energies, like *Rādhā* and the rest, as described in the *Puruṣa Bodhini Śruti*. But in His other *Avatāras*, like those of the Fish and the rest, He did not bring down *all* His energies, nor did He manifest *all* His attributes. But these *Avatāras* were identical with the Lord and though called *Amśas*, they were not parts of Brahman in the same sense as *Jīvas* are said to be



His parts. In the R̥k-parīṣiṣṭa the various powers of the Lord are fully described.

The author now adduces another argument to prove the same conclusion.

SŪTRA II., 3. 46.

अनुज्ञा परिहारौ देहसम्बन्धात् ज्योतिरादिवत् ॥ २ । ३ । ४६ ॥

अनुज्ञा Anujñā, permission (to do good or bad deeds). Hence activity. परिहारौ Parihārau, exclusion, cessation from activity (i e., Mukti or Release). देहसम्बन्धात् Dehasambandhāt, on account of connection with a body ज्योतिरादिवत् Jyotirādivat, as in the case of light and so on. The word 'Jyotiḥ' means 'eye.'

46. In the case of the Jīvas, there is wordly activity or cessation therefrom (Release), on account of their connection with bodies, but not so in the case of the Avatāras. The Jīvas are like light in the eye (depending for its vision upon the activity or cessation of the light of the sun).—264.

#### COMMENTARY

Though the Jīva is an Aṁśa of the Lord, yet on account of its connection with Avidyā from beginningless time, and on account of its connection with a body, it is under the control of the Lord, and with regard to it we find texts declaring permission and exclusion. But no such control by the Lord is related with regard to the Avatāras like Fish and the rest. On the other hand, they are described as the Lord and as uninfluenced by their bodies which they assume. Thus there is a great difference between the Avatāras and the Jīvas.

The word *permission* means inciting a person to do good deeds, as we find in the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, that the Lord makes him whom he wants to raise up do good deeds, etc. (Kauṣītaki, III., 8.)

The word *exclusion* means cessation from work (good or bad), hence Mukti, as we find in the texts "knowing Him one transcends death."

As an illustration of this, the author says, "It is like light and the rest." The word 'light' here means 'eye' or the power of vision. As the eye, though a part of the sun, is yet manifold on account of its relation with the various bodies, and as it depends for its activity on the permission of the sun, and ceases to be active when the sun does not permit it; in other words, the vision depends on the presence or absence of the light of the sun, so the Jīvas depend for their activity or release on the

permission or will of the Lord. But the Avatāras are parts of the Lord, like the rays of the sun which are identical with the sun, and can never be excluded from the sun, and do not depend upon any permission or exclusion of the sun. Thus there is a vast difference between the Jivas and the Avatāras.

SŪTRA II., 3. 47.

असन्ततेश्चाव्यतिकरः ॥ २ । ३ । ४७ ॥

असन्ततेः Asantateḥ, on account of non-connectedness or non-perfection. च Cha, and. अव्यतिकरः Avyatikaraḥ, want of confusion.

47. The Jīva is incomplete and hence there is no possibility of confusion between the Jīva and the Avatāra. —265.

COMMENTARY

The Jīva is incomplete and not perfect like the Avatāra, hence it can never be confounded with the Avatāra, like the Fish and the rest. The Jīva is atomic in size and hence non-full; as we find it described in texts like that of the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, V., 9, which says "the Jīva is to be known as part of the hundredth part of the point of a hair." While the Avatāras are declared to be full as in the text :

पूर्णमदः पूर्णमिदं पूर्णात्पूर्णमुदच्यते । पूर्णस्य पूर्णमादाय पूर्णमेवावशिष्यते ॥

That (the root of all Avatāras) is full, this (the visible Avatāra) is also full, from that full this full emanates. Taking away this full from that full the full still remains behind.

The Pūrvapakṣin had adduced the reason for holding the Jīva to be identical with Avatāras, because of the epithet 'Amśa' being applied to both. The author shows in the next Sūtra the logical fallacy in the reasoning of the Pūrvapakṣin.

SŪTRA II., 3. 48.

आभास एव च ॥ २ । ३ । ४८ ॥

आभासः Ābhāsaḥ, fallacy. एव Eva, mere. च Cha, and.

48. The reason for holding the Jīva and the Avatāras to be similar is a mere fallacy.—266.

COMMENTARY

The reason adduced by the Pūrvapakṣin to prove the similarity of the Jīva with the Avatāra is that both are equally designated by the word 'Amśa.' There is a logical fallacy (of undistributed middle) in this argument. The reasoning may be fully set out in this form :

The Jīva is a part or Amśa of Brahman—the Avatāra is a part or Amśa of Brahman; therefore, the Jīva is an Avatāra.

It is the same reasoning the absurdity of which is apparent to every body if stated fully thus:

All dogs are animals—all men are animals ; therefore, all dogs are men.

The word 'Cha' in the Sūtra implies that other illustrations of such fallacious arguments may also be given here. Thus though the earth and the ether are both *substances*, yet we cannot infer that both are therefore similar; or existence and non-existence are both *categories*, but we cannot infer that, therefore, both are similar. In short, there lurks the fallacy of undistributed middle in all these reasons.

The conclusion, therefore, is that the word 'Amśa' when applied to the Avatāra means the non-manifestation of the entire Divine powers, while the same word when applied to the Jivas means subordination to Divinity.

### *Adhikaraṇa XIX—Jivas are not all similar and equal.*

Having thus finished the digression, the author now takes up the context about the attributes of the Jivas. In the Kathopaniṣad we find the following text (II., 5. 13) :

नित्योऽनित्यानां चेतनश्चेतनानामेको बहूनां यो विदधाति कामान् ।

तमात्मस्य येऽनुपश्यन्ति धीरास्तेषां शान्तिः शाश्वती नेतरेषाम् ॥

The eternal among the eternal, the consciousness among all the consciousnesses, the one who bestows the fruits of Karmas to many Jivas, the tranquil-minded ones who see Him seated in their Ātmā, get eternal happiness, but not the others.

*Doubt*: This text shows that the Jivas are many, but have all the same attribute of being eternal and intelligent. Are they, therefore, all similar ?

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that because all Jivas possess the same attributes of eternality and intelligence; therefore, they must be all similar.

*Siddhānta* : The Jivas are not all similar as shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 3. 49.

अदृष्टानियमात् ॥ २ । ३ । ४९ ॥

अदृष्ट Adṛṣṭa, the fate, the Karmas. अनियमात् Aniyamāt, on account of non-determinateness, on account of non-similarity.

49. The Jivas are not similar, because their Karmas are various.—267.

#### COMMENTARY

The word *not* is understood in this Sūtra from Sūtra II., 3. 44. The Jivas do not all experience the same kind of pleasure and pain, because

though their essential nature is the same, yet on account of the variety of their Karmas, they are all different in their experiences, etc. The Karmas or Adr̥ṣṭas are beginningless. The Jīvas have different Adr̥ṣṭas, in this sense also that they have worshipped the Lord in different ways.

If it be said that the difference between the Jīvas is owing to the differences in their loves and hatreds, in their desires and affections, that also does not fully explain the case, as the author shows in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 3. 50.

अभिसन्ध्यादिष्वपि चैवम् ॥ २ । ३ । ५० ॥

अभिसन्ध्यादिषु Abhisandhyādiṣu, in regard to their purposes and the rest. अपि Api, also. च Cha, and. एवम् Evam, thus.

50. And thus they are different with regard to their inclinations and the rest.—268.

COMMENTARY

The differences of desires and hatreds are not final causes which determine the differences of the Jīvas; these desires and inclinations, loves and hatreds have for their cause the Adr̥ṣṭas of the Jīvas, and thus Adr̥ṣṭas are the final causes which determine the differences of the Jīvas. Desires and inclinations are only the secondary causes. The word “Cha” in the Sūtra indicates that the momentary differences also between the souls are to be explained on similar grounds.

If it be said that the differences between the Jīvas rise from the differences of environments in which they are placed, in favourable environments like Svarga and the rest, or in unfavourable environments like the earth, etc.; to this also we reply that it is not so. For the environments themselves require a cause behind them. The next Sūtra explains this.

SŪTRA II., 3. 51.

प्रदेशादितिचेन्नान्तर्भावान् ॥ २ । ३ । ५१ ॥

प्रदेशात् Prādeśāt, on account of locality or environments. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अन्तर्भावान् Antarbhāvāt, because of being included or comprehended.

51. If it be said that on account of the differences of environments there is caused the diversity among the souls, we reply it is not so, because the differences of environments are comprehended under Adr̥ṣṭa.—269.

## COMMENTARY

The souls are placed in heaven or hell, in favourable or unfavourable environments owing to their different Karmas or Adr̥ṣṭas; therefore, the ultimate cause of the diversity observable among the souls is not the environments, but the Adr̥ṣṭas of the soul. For it is observed that two Jīvas placed under exactly the same environments do not act in an identical way, but show forth a diversity of nature; thus it follows that diversity among the souls is caused by the beginningless Adr̥ṣṭas of the Jīvas.

Here ends the third Pāda of the Second Adhyāya of the Govinda Bhāṣya on the Brahma Sūtras.

---

## SECOND ADHYĀYA

### FOURTH PĀDA

त्वज्जाताः कलितोत्पाता मत्प्राणाः सन्त्यमित्रमित्रम् ।

एतान् शधि तथा देव यथा सत्पथगामिनः ॥

O, God, (the sportful one, who creates the Prāṇa), born of thee my life-breath and the senses are constantly prone to evil and absorbed in worldly matters. Control them thus, O Lord, that they may follow the path of virtue. These my life-breaths and senses created by thee are naturally prone to evil and lead me astray. O destroyer of evil, train them so that they may change their course and follow the path of virtue.

### *Adhikaraṇa 1.—The Prāṇas have their origin from Brahman*

In the third Pāda, the author has reconciled the conflict of the texts regarding the origin on the various elements. In the fourth Pāda he reconciles the conflicts of the texts regarding the super-elements, namely, the Prāṇas. The Prāṇas are divided into two classes, namely, the Prāṇas strictly so called, and the Prāṇas metaphorically so called. The eleven senses, sight, hearing, etc., are called Prāṇas in a secondary meaning. The five Prāṇas known as Prāṇa, Apāna, Vyāna, Samāna and Udāna are the principal Prāṇas. Among these the author first takes up the eleven senses, which also are called Prāṇas in a secondary sense.

We find in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 1., 3., the following :

एतस्माज्जायते प्राणो मनः सर्वेन्द्रियाणि च ॥ खं वायुर्ज्योतिरापः पृथिवी विश्वस्य धारिणी ॥

From this is born Prāṇa, Manas and all the senses, ether, air, light, water and the earth, the support of all.

*Doubt* : The origin is mentioned here of the senses. Is this origin to be taken in a metaphorical sense, like the origin of the souls ; or is it to be taken in its literal sense, like the origin of ether, etc. ?

*Pūrvapakṣin* : The Pūrvapakṣin says that the Prāṇas have no origin, for they are eternal, like the Jīvas ; and existed even before creation. The following text shows this :

असदा इदमग्र आसीत् तदाहुः किं तदासीदिति श्रवणो वाव ते असदासीत् तदाहुः के ते श्रवणा इति प्राणा वाव श्रवणः ।

Non-being, truly this was in the beginning. Here they say, what was that ? Those R̥ṣis indeed were that Non-being, thus they say. And who were those R̥ṣis ? The Prāṇas indeed were those R̥ṣis.

This text shows that the R̥ṣis existed before creation and the R̥ṣis in the plural number are explained by the text to mean the Prāṇas. Hence

the senses existed before creation and have no origin. The text of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, quoted above, showing that Prāṇas have an origin, must be taken in a metaphorical sense.

*Siddhānta* : The Prāṇas have origin, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 1.

तथा प्राणाः ॥ २ । ४ । १ ॥

तथा Tathā, thus, for the same reason. प्राणाः Prāṇāḥ, the Prāṇas.

1. The Prāṇas also originate in the same way as ether and so on.—270.

COMMENTARY

As ether and other elements originate from the Supreme Brahman in the same way do the Prāṇas or the senses also originate from Him. This we say because before creation it is declared that everything was one, and direct texts also show that from the Supreme Lord come out the Prāṇas, Manas and all the senses. The text of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 3. 1, already quoted above clearly shows this. The origin of the Prāṇa is not to be taken in a metaphorical sense, like the origination of the soul. For the Jīvas have intelligence as their essential nature, and are free from all those six modifications, which we find with regard to material objects. Therefore, the origin of the Jīvas mentioned in some texts have rightly been explained a metaphorical way, while the origin of the senses ought not to be so explained, because the senses are modifications of Prākṛtic matter and with regard to them the origin is to be taken in its primary sense. This being so, the word Ṛṣi or Prāṇa mentioned in the text quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin is to be interpreted as meaning Brahman, and the Prāṇa here means the Omniscient Lord, the Great Ṛṣi or the Seer.

But in the above text the word Prāṇa is in the plural number, how can it refer to the Supreme Brahman? The word Ṛṣi also is in the plural number therein. The plural number is to be taken in a secondary sense, as we find in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 2.

गौण्यसम्भवात् ॥ २ । ४ । २ ॥

गौणी Gaunī, secondary. असम्भवात् Asambhavāt, on account of impossibility.

2. The plural number as applied to Brahman must be taken in a secondary sense, because it is impossible that Brahman should be many.—271.

## COMMENTARY

The plural number is figurative only, because the Lord being essentially one, and there not being many Lords; the plural number is not literally applicable to Him. Of course, He may be looked upon as plural with regard to His various manifestations. One Lord, like an actor, plays many a part on the stage of the world; or like a crystal shows many a facet scintillating with diverse hues. The sacred texts also say the same, "who essentially one appears as manifold," "reverence to Him who is one and yet manifold."

SŪTRA II., 4. 3.

तत्प्राक्भूतेश्च ॥ २ । ४ । ३ ॥

तत् Tat, that, namely Brahman. प्राक् Prāk, before (creation). भूतेः Śruteḥ, on account of the sacred text. च Cha, and.

3. Because before creation, the texts declare that Brahman alone existed.—272.

## COMMENTARY

In Pralaya, there do not exist many objects, so the plural number is inappropriate for that reason also. All substances, whether Spirits or Matter, are resolved in the Para-Brahman in Pralaya. There is in Pralaya a state of unity and the texts repeatedly declare this unity. Therefore, the plural number in the above text describing Pralaya, must be taken in a secondary sense.

*Note* : In Pralaya the matter is resolved in Brahman's Tamas Sakti and does not retain its nature as matter. The Jīvas also are resolved in Brahman, but in a different sense. They retain their individuality. They are like bees in a lotus flower, when the flower closes up its mouth. The bees are there inside the flower; but as they do not manifest or appear outside as bees, but are in the heart of flower; the flower only is said to exist. This is the merging of the Jīvas in Pralaya. The Lord withdraws them all into His bosom, and there they go to sleep in Pralaya, and as they do not appear as Jīvas, the Supreme Brahman is said to be the only entity existing then.

The author gives another reason to show how the word Prāṇa is here to be interpreted as meaning Brahman.

SŪTRA II. 4. 4.

तत्पूर्वकत्वाद्वाचः ॥ २ । ४ । ४ ॥

तत्पूर्वकत्वाद् Tat-pūrvakatvāt, having for its antecedent that, because before creation. वाचः Vāchaḥ, of speech, of name, the Brahman in His subtle energy.

4. Because the Speech existed even before the creation of Pradhāna and the rest.—273.



## COMMENTARY

The word Speech here means names of all objects other than Brahman. The 'Vāk' or the Word existed even before the creation of the Pradhāna and the rest. In that state of Pralaya, there did not exist any objects having name and form. Consequently, there did not exist any instruments, namely, any senses.

The Prāṇas, therefore, as meaning senses, did not exist then, consequently the word Prāṇa in the above text must be taken to mean Brahman. The following text also shows that before creation there did not exist any objects having name and form (Br. Up., I., 4. 7).

तदेतद् तद्व्याकृतमासीत्तन्नामरूपाभ्यामेव व्याक्रियतेऽसौ नामायमिदं रूपं इति ॥ ७ ॥

Now all this was then undeveloped. It became developed by form and name, so that one could say, "He, called so and so, is such a one."

Therefore, the sense is that the Prāṇas have an origin just like the elements, ether, etc., and are not eternal.

### *Adhikaraṇa II.—The senses are eleven.*

*Note:* The author now attempts to reconcile the number of the senses. The Pūrva-pakṣin says the senses are seven and he relies upon Kaṭha Upaniṣad, VI., 10, where the senses are said to be seven. He also relies on the text of Brhadāraṇyaka, IV., 4. 1, where also the enumeration of the senses is seven.

Having reconciled in the previous Adhikaraṇa the conflict of the texts as regards the senses—whether they are eternal or created—the author now reconciles the conflict as regards the number of the senses. The following text shows that the senses are seven (Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 1. 8) :

सप्त प्राणाः प्रभवन्ति तस्मात्सप्ताचिवः समिधः सप्त होमा ॥

सप्त इमे लोका येषु चरन्ति प्राणा गुहाशया निहिताः सप्त सप्त ॥ ८ ॥

The seven sense-currents are produced from Him, with their corresponding seven perceptions, the seven kinds of objects of perception, the seven co-relations and these seven organs in which move the sense-currents. For the purpose of producing knowledge, the seven are placed in every human being.

The following text shows that the senses are eleven, (Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III., 9. 4) :

कतमे रुद्रा इति दशमे पुरुषे प्राणा आत्मेकादशस्ते यदास्माच्छरीरान्मर्त्यादुत्क्रामन्त्यथ रोदयन्ति तच्चद्रोदयन्ति तस्माद्भुदा इति ॥

He asked: "Who are the Rudras?" Yājñavalkya replied: "These ten vital breaths (Prāṇas, the senses, i.e., the five Jñānendriyas and the five Karmendriyas), and Ātman, as the eleventh. When they depart from this mortal body, they make us cry (Rodayanti), and because they make us cry, they are called Rudras."

*Doubt* : Are the senses seven or eleven ?

*Pûrvapakṣa* : The senses are seven and the author shows this in the following Sûtra of the Pûrvapakṣa.

SŪTRA II., 4. 5.

सप्तगतेर्विशेषितत्वाच्च ॥ २ । ४ । ५ ॥

सप्त Sapta, seven. गतेः Gataḥ, on account of the going. विशेषितत्वाच्च Viśeṣitatvât, on account of the specification. च Cha, and.

5. The senses are seven because the seven senses accompany the departing soul and because the text also specifies those seven. —274.

COMMENTARY

The senses are seven only, because we find scriptural text showing that the seven accompany the departing soul. Thus the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, VI., 10, enumerates these seven senses.

यदा पञ्चावतिष्ठन्ते ज्ञानानि मनसा सह ॥

बुद्धिश्च न विचेष्टति तामाहुः परमां गतिम् ॥ १० ॥

When the five organs of perception, along with emotions are at rest and apart from their objects, and the Intellect even does not exert itself, that state they call the highest road (to God-vision).

This text of Kaṭha Upaniṣad describes the condition of Yoga and specifies the senses as Jñânâni or the senses of perception. The seven senses are the five well-known senses and Manas and Buddhi. These are the only senses of the Jîva. The so-called five Karmendriyas—hands, feet, speech, etc.,—are called Indriyas or senses in a secondary meaning only ; because they do not accompany the departing Jîva and because they are of smaller use to him.

*Siddhânta* : To this Pûrvapakṣa the author answers by the following Siddhânta Sûtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 6.

हस्तादयस्तु स्थितेऽतो नैवम् ॥ ६ ॥

हस्तादयः Hastâdayaḥ, hands and the rest. तु Tu, but. स्थिते Sthite, while abiding in the body. अतः Ataḥ, therefore. न Na, not. एवम् Evam, thus.

6. But the hands and the rest are also senses, so long as the soul abides in the body, therefore it is not so that the senses are seven only.—275.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'but' sets aside the Pûrvapakṣa. The hands and so on must also be considered as Prâṇas, though not included in the seven. Because so long as the soul abides in the body, they also assist the soul in the accomplishment of its desires and in experiencing enjoyment, and because they have different functions. Thus in the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (III., 2. 8.), we find that hands, etc., are also called senses.

हस्तौ वै ग्रहः स कर्मणातिग्राहेण गृहीतो हस्ताभ्यामुद्दि कर्म करोति ॥ ८ ॥

The hands are one (graha), and these are seized by work as the Atigraha, for with the hands one works work.

The above text thus enumerates more than seven senses, and so we cannot say that the senses are seven only. In fact, they are eleven, namely, the five senses of perception, the five organs of action and Manas as the eleventh. The word 'Âtmâ' as used in the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III., 9. 4, means the inner organ or the Antahkaraṇa.

There are five objects of perception, namely, sound, touch, form, taste and smell, to perceive these, there are required five senses called the five organs of perception, namely the ear, the skin, the eye, the tongue and the nose. Similarly, there are five actions, namely, speech, seizing, locomotion, excretion and reproduction. So there are required five organs to perform these five kinds of action and which are the hands, the legs, the tongue, the anus and the organ of generation. To unite all these activities, which are diverse, it is necessary that there should be an organ which must exist as a unifying agent, with the memory of the past and the present, together with the anticipation of the future; for without such an organ, the activities of these other ten senses would be unharmonised and discordant. This unifying organ, therefore, is what we call the inner organ or the Manas. This one inner organ has many functions, and sometimes it is spoken of as one, and sometimes as many. The various functions of the mind are enumerated in Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I., 5, 3.

कामः संकल्पो विचिकित्सा श्रद्धाऽश्रद्धा धृतिरधृतिर्हीर्षाभिर्भिरित्येतत्सर्वं मन एव ।

Desire, representation, doubt, faith, want of faith, memory, forgetfulness, shame, reflexion, fear, all this is mind.

Sometimes the mind is spoken of as four-fold as Manas, Buddhi, Ahaṁkāra and Chitta. Manas is the faculty of representation, Buddhi is that of determination, Ahaṁkāra is the egoity, and Chitta is the thinking faculty. In whatever way, we may look upon this inner organ, it is a unit, with a diversity of functions. Thus the senses are eleven.

*Adhikaraṇa III.—The eleven Indriyas are atomic.*

*Doubt* : The author now considers the question of the nature and size of the senses. Are these senses all-pervading or are they atomic ?

*Pūrvapakṣin* : The Pūrvapakṣin says that the senses are all-pervading, because we can hear sounds at a distance and see objects far off.

*Siddhānta* : The Siddhānta view, however, is that the senses are atomic, as shown in the next Sūtra

SŪTRA II., 4. 7.

अणवश्च ॥ २ । ४ । ७ ॥

अणवः Anavaḥ, minute atoms. च Cha, and, indeed, verily.

7. The senses are verily atomic.—276.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Cha' has the force of certainty. It means that the senses are not all-pervading, but atomic. The eleven Prāṇas are indeed atomic.

*Note* : These are the so-called permanent atoms of the Theosophists. A graphic description of these is to be found in Chapter IV of *The Study in Consciousness* by Dr. Annie Besant.

The reason for holding the senses to be atomic is to be supplied from the previous Sūtra, which declares that the soul is atomic, because it goes out of the body and comes back into the body. Scriptural texts (like Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, V., 4. 2) declare that the soul is accompanied by the senses when it goes out; and when the soul takes a new body the senses accompany it too. The question arises, in what form do the senses accompany the soul. The answer to this is, that the senses are permanent atoms, which always accompany the soul, wherever it migrates; whether to regions physical or super-physical. The hearing or seeing objects at a distance is accomplished by these senses or rather permanent atoms, by the vibratory length of their waves. In other words, by the expansion of their qualities. As the Jīva pervades the whole body, though the particular place of its residence is the heart, so the senses are the ministers of the Jīva and surround the Jīva, but pervade the whole body through their qualities. This Sūtra thus refutes the doctrine of the Sāṅkhyas who maintain that the senses are all-pervading.

*Adhikaraṇa IV.—The chief Prāṇa has also an origin.*

In the Mūṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 1. 3, we read :

एतस्माज्जायते प्राणो मनः सर्वेन्द्रियाणि च ।

खं बायुर्ज्योतिरापः पृथिवी विश्वस्य धारिणी ॥

From Him (when entering on creation) is born Prāṇa, mind, and all organs of senses, ether, air, light, water, and the earth, the support of all.

*Doubt* : The above text evidently refers to the chief Prāṇa. The question, therefore, arises : Does the chief Prāṇa come out of Brahman like the Jīva or does it originate from Brahman like the ether and other elements ? If it comes out like the Jīva it would be eternal, otherwise it is a creature and hence transient.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the chief Prāṇa has no origin, because of the Śruti which declares this Prāṇa verily does not rise, nor does it set. To the same effect is also a Smṛti text :

यत् प्राप्सिर्वत् परित्याग उत्पत्तिर्मरणं तथा ।

तस्योत्पत्तिर्मुक्तिश्चैव कथं प्राणस्य युज्यते ॥

Birth and death, entering the body or abandoning it, have only reference to the body. It is body which is born and dies and it has no reference to the chief Prāṇa.

*Note* : The ordinary phrases such as, the Prāṇa has entered, the Prāṇa has gone out, really do not mean that the Prāṇa has an origin or that it is destroyed. They are to be explained in the same way, as the Jīva has entered the body, the Jīva has gone out.

Hence the Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the Prāṇa is eternal like the Jīva, and has no origin.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra declares that even the chief Prāṇa has an origin.

SŪTRA II. 4. 8.

श्रेष्ठश्च ॥ २ । ४ । ८ ॥

श्रेष्ठः Śreṣṭhaḥ, the best, the chief Prāṇa. च Cha, and.

8. The chief Prāṇa has also an origin.—277.

COMMENTARY

The chief Prāṇa originates like Akāśa and the rest, because the above text of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad distinctly uses the word 'Jāyate Prāṇaḥ,' the chief Prāṇa is born. Moreover, having regard to the promissory statement of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad 'He created *all* this,' we must infer that Prāṇa also is created by the Lord, otherwise the general proposition 'He created *all* this' would not be accurate. This being the case, the texts that declare the chief Prāṇa is not created are to be interpreted in a metaphorical way. The chief Prāṇa is called the best, because it is the cause of the maintenance of the body. The going out of the chief breath is followed by the decomposition of the body.

The separation of this Sūtra from the last is in order to carry the Anuvṛtti of the word "chief Prāṇa" into the next Sūtra. The word 'chief Prāṇa' is to be supplied in that Sūtra in order to complete the sense, and not the word 'Aṇavāścha.' The next Sūtra refers to the chief Prāṇa and

not to the Prāṇas in general. Had the present Sūtra and the preceding Sūtra 7 been enunciated as one Sūtra, it would not have been possible to read the Anuvṛtti of the chief Prāṇa alone into the next Sūtra.

*Adhikaraṇa V.—The chief Prāṇa is not air.*

The author now examines the essential nature of the chief Prāṇa.

*Doubt* : Is this chief Prāṇa nothing else but air or is it the vibration of air, one of the activities of air or is it air that has assumed some special condition on account of its having entered the animal body ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the chief Prāṇa is nothing but external air, because the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Śruti (III, 1. 5.) declares :

योऽयं प्राणः स वायुः ॥

That which is the Prāṇa that is verily the air. The full text is given below .

Yājñavalkya said : "By the Udgātrī priest, who is Vāyu (the wind), who is the breath. For the breath is the Udgātrī of the sacrifice, and the breath is the wind, and he is the Udgātrī. This constitutes freedom and perfect freedom."

Or the mere air may not be called Prāṇa, but that particular modification of air which performs the function of respiration in animal bodies is Prāṇa. Thus Prāṇa is either air, pure and simple, or it is that particular motion of air which we find in inhalation and exhalation, for Prāṇa is not applied generally to mere air.

*Siddhānta* : To this Pūrvapakṣa, the next Sūtra supplies the answer.

SŪTRA II., 4. 9.

न वायुक्रिये पृथगुपदेशात् ॥ २ । ४ । ९ ॥

न Na, not, वायु-क्रिये Vāyu-kriye, air or the function of air. पृथक् Prṥhak, separate. उपदेशात् Upadeśat, because of the teaching.

9. The chief Prāṇa is neither air, nor any function of air, because the text enunciates it separately from air.—278.

COMMENTARY

The highest Prāṇa is neither Air nor any motion of it. Because, in the Muṇḍaka text quoted above "from Him there is produced Prāṇa, mind, and all sense organs and Vāyu, etc." shows that Prāṇa and Vāyu are not identical, for they have been separately mentioned. If Vāyu and Prāṇa were identical, then there was no necessity of mentioning these separately.

If Prāṇa was merely a function of Air, still there was no necessity of mentioning a function along with its root, for we do not find any mention made of the functions of fire and other elements, side by side with these elements, as separate things. The text of the Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad, "That which is Prāṇa is verily Vāyu," intimates not that breath is identical with Air, but that breath is air having a special form and that it is not a separate element like ether, fire, etc.

The Sāṅkhyas hold that Prāṇa is the common function of the senses. In the Sāṅkhya Sūtra, II., 31, it is declared :

समान्यकरणवृत्तिः प्राणाद्या वायवः पञ्च ॥ २ । ३१ ॥

The five Vāyus (Prāṇa, Apāna, etc.) are the [modifications in common of the three internal instruments, namely of Buddhi, Ahajñkāra and Manas.

This opinion of the Sāṅkhyas is not correct, because Prāṇa being one, cannot have conflicting functions, like those of the various senses.

### *Adhikaraṇa VI.—The chief Prāṇa is also an instrument of the soul.*

In the Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad it is said that when speech and other senses are asleep, Prāṇa alone remains awake : that Prāṇa alone is untouched by death, Prāṇa is the absorber, it absorbs all the senses like speech, etc. : that Prāṇa is the great protector, it protects all lower Prāṇas as the mother... protects her children.

*Note :* The reference to the Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad appears to be incorrect, it is rather in the Praśna Upaniṣad that we find similar references (Praśna, II., 13 ; III, 3), in fact the whole of the second and third Praśna has reference to this chief Prāṇa.

*Doubt :* Is this chief Prāṇa an independent entity residing in this body like the Jiva or is it merely an instrument of the Jiva helping it ?

*Pārvapakṣa :* Prāṇa is an independent entity dwelling in the body along with the Jiva, because the texts declare his manifold perfections.

*Note :* This Pārvapakṣa is really the view of Sri Mādhva. According to him, Prāṇa is a separate entity and dwells in the body along with the soul. This chief Prāṇa, corresponds with the Christ principle of the Gnostics. All souls dwell in Christ and the Christ dwells in the Lord. Mādhva quotes Vāyu Parāṇa in support of his view :

भूतानिचेष्टामन्त्राश्च मुख्यप्राणादिदे जगत् ।

मुख्यः प्राणः परस्माच्च न परः कारणान्वित इति वायु प्रोक्ते ॥

The elements, human senses, the sacred Scriptures and all this world came forth from the Supreme Prāṇa (Christ), the Supreme Prāṇa came out from the Highest Lord, but the perfect Lord is without a cause.

This trinity of God, Christ and Soul is more in harmony with the occult teachings, than the exoteric expositions of these Sūtras.

*Siddhānta* : The Prāṇa is not an independent entity, but subsidiary to the Jīva, as is shown in the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 10.

चक्षुरादिवत् तत्पह शिष्यादिभ्यः ॥ २ । ४ । १० ॥

चक्षुरादिवत् Chakṣurādivat, like the eye and the rest, तु Tu, but, तत्र-नह Tatsaha, along with them. शिष्यादिभ्यः Śiṣṭyādibhyah, on account of being taught.

10. The chief Prāṇa is also an instrument of the Jīva like the eye and the rest, because it is taught along with these organs in the scriptures.—279.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu' removes the doubt. Prāṇa is also an organ of the Jīva like eye and the rest. Why do we say so? Because, in the section relating to the controversy between the Prāṇa and the senses, the Prāṇa is described as one of the senses of the Jīva. Things having similar attributes are always taught together, as the metres called the Bṛhad-rathantara, etc. (See Prāśna Upaniṣad, II Prāśna; and also the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, V, 1. 1., etc.)

The word 'Âdi,' etc., used in the above indicates that the word 'Prāṇa' is also used in the sense of sense-organs. As we find in the sentence "whatever is verily this chief Prāṇa, that is verily this middle Prāṇa."

The Prāṇa is enumerated along with the senses, in order to indicate that it is not independent.

#### *Adhikaraṇa VII—The chief Prāṇa is the prime minister of the soul.*

If the chief Prāṇa is an instrument of the soul, like the eye and the other organs, there must be some special function of the chief Prāṇa, by which it assists the soul. But we do not find any such function given to this chief Prāṇa, for there are not mentioned twelve senses but only eleven. Had the chief Prāṇa been one of the senses, then it would have been said that the senses are twelve. Therefore, there is no similarity between the senses like the eye, etc., and the chief Prāṇa.

This objection is answered by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 11.

अकरणत्वाच्च न दोषस्तथाहि दर्शयति ॥ २ । ४ । ११ ॥



अकरणात्वाद Akarāṇatvāt, on account of its not having any special function or activity. च Cha, and. न Na, not. दोषः Doṣaḥ, objection, fault. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, because. दर्शयति Darśayati, declares, shows.

11. There is no objection to the chief Prāṇa being a sense, though it has no special activity, for the scriptures declare it to be so.—280.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'and' has the force of *but* here, and is employed to remove the doubt above raised. The word 'Karana' in the Sūtra means *activity*. Though the chief Prāṇa is not useful to the Jīva in any special way, like the senses of sight and hearing, etc., yet that is no serious objection to its being an instrument of the soul, because it is of the greatest help to the soul, by being the support of all the other senses. Not only does it support the senses, but it is the organising life of the body, and hence of the greatest importance to the Jīva. Because we thus find in the Chhândogya Sṛuti, Chapter V., Khanda I., verses 1 to 5 :

यो ह ज्येष्ठश्चन श्रेष्ठश्च वेद ज्येष्ठश्च ह वै श्रेष्ठश्च भवति प्राणो वाव ज्येष्ठश्च श्रेष्ठश्च ॥ १ ॥

He who knows verily the Oldest and the Best becomes himself the Oldest and the Best (among his peers). The chief Prāṇa is indeed the Oldest and the Best.

ये ह वै वशिष्ठं वेद वशिष्ठो ह स्वानां भवति वाग्वाव वशिष्ठः ॥ २ ॥

He who verily knows the Best of the Dwellers, becomes the best of the residents among his own people. (The Prāṇa working through) Agni is indeed the Best of the Dwellers.

यो ह वै प्रतिष्ठां वेद प्रति ह तिष्ठत्यस्मिँश्च लोकेऽमुष्मिँश्च चक्षुर्वाव प्रतिष्ठा ॥ ३ ॥

He who knows the Firm Stay, stays firmly (as he desires, either) in this world or in the next. (The Prāṇa working through) the Surya is indeed the Firm Stay.

यो ह वै सम्पदं वेद सँहास्रैः कामाः पश्यन्ते देवाश्च मानुषाश्च श्रोत्रं वाव सम्पत् ॥ ४ ॥

He who knows the Success, succeeds in (getting all) his desires, both divine and human. The (Prāṇa working through) Indra indeed is the Success.

यो ह वा आश्रयतनं वेदाश्रयतनं ह स्वानां भवति मनो ह वा आश्रयतनम् ॥ ५ ॥

He who verily knows the Refuge, becomes a refuge of his people. (The Prāṇa working through) Rudra is indeed the Refuge.

This shows that the chief Prāṇa is also an instrument of the Jīva. The senses like the eye, ear, etc., are as if officials of the Jīva and help him in his enjoyment and activity, but the chief Prāṇa is his prime minister and assists him in his highest functions, and in the attainment of all his desires.

*Adhikaraṇa VIII.—The chief Prāṇa has five functions.*

We find in the Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad. (I, 5. 3) :

“That which is Vāyu that is the Prāṇa, and this Vāyu is fivefold, Prāṇa, Apāna, Vyāna, Udāna and Samāna.”

*Doubt* : Are these five Prāṇas, Apānas, etc., separate from the chief Prāṇa, or merely modifications of it ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that they are separate from the chief Prāṇa, because they have got separate names and because they have separate functions.

*Siddhānta* : The following Sūtra, however, refutes this view.

SŪTRA II., 3. 1.

पंचवृत्तिर्मनोवद् व्यपदिश्यते ॥ २ । ४ । १२ ॥

पंचवृत्तिः Pañcha-vṛttiḥ, having five functions. मनोवद् Manovat, like the the mind. व्यपदिश्यते Vyapadiśyate, it is designated.

12. The chief Prāṇa is designated as having five functions like the Manas.—281.

## COMMENTARY

The Prāṇa, though one, becomes fivefold, according to the particular organ of the body which it occupies for the time being, and which it vitalises. Its functions become fivefold and diverse, owing to the diversity of the organs through which it works. The chief Prāṇa, therefore, is designated by these five names of Prāṇa, Apāna, etc. These five are consequently the five aspects or functions of the chief Prāṇa, and not separate from it. The difference of nomenclature is owing to the difference of their activities. There is no essential difference in their nature, and the word Prāṇa is a common name for them all. (As one energy of steam by moving different machines, such as a printing press, the fan, the drilling machines, etc., may perform different functions, according to the machine through which it acts, so the chief Prāṇa has different functions according to the different organs through which it works). In fact there is a distinct text of the Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad which says that these five are verily Prāṇas (I, 5. 3) :

The Prāṇa, the Apāna, the Vyāna, the Udāna and the Samāna, all that is breathing is Prāṇa only.

It is just like the functions of the mind mentioned in the same text. The full text is given below : (Br. Up., I, 5. 3) :

श्रीययात्मनेऽकुरुतेतिमनो वाचं प्राणं तान्यात्मनेऽकुरुतान्यत्रमना अभूवन्नादर्शमन्यत्रमना अभूवं नाश्रौषमिति मनसा ह्येव पश्यति मनसा शृणोति कामः संकल्पो विचिकित्सा श्रद्धाऽश्रद्धा धृतिरधृतिर्धीर्भूरित्येतत्सर्वं मन

एव तस्मादपि पृष्ठत उपस्पृष्टो मनसा विज्ञानानि यः कश्च शब्दो वागेव सेवा ह्यन्तमायतौषा हि न प्राणोऽपानो  
व्यान उदानः समानोऽन इत्येतत्सर्वं प्राण एवेतन्मयो वा अयमात्मा वाङ्मयो मनोमयः प्राणमयः ॥

When it is said, that 'he made three for himself,' that means that he made mind, speech and breath for himself. As people say, 'My mind was elsewhere, I did not see; my mind was elsewhere, I did not hear,' it is clear that a man sees with his mind and hears with his mind. Desire, representation, doubt, faith, want of faith, memory, forgetfulness, shame, reflexion, fear, all this is mind. Therefore, even if a man is touched on the back, he knows it through the mind.

Whatever sound there is, that is speech. Speech indeed is intended for an end or object, it is nothing by itself.

The Prāṇa or up-breathing, the Apāna or down-breathing, the Vyāna or back-breathing, the Udāna or out-breathing, the Samāna 'or on-breathing, all that is breathing is breath (Prāṇa) only. Verily that Self consists of it; that Self consists of speech, mind, and breath.

Here though the names and the functions are different, yet desire, purpose, doubt, etc., are all forms of mind and not different from it, but only modifications of it; so Prāṇa, Apāna, etc., are merely modifications of the chief Prāṇa.

The word 'Manovat' may also be explained as "according to the mind having five functions as taught in the Yoga philosophy." As the five functions of the mind are not different from the mind, so the five functions of the Prāṇa are not different from the Prāṇa.

### *Adhikaraṇa IX.—The chief Prāṇa is also atomic.*

*Doubt :* Is the chief Prāṇa all-pervading or is it atomic?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The chief Prāṇa is all-pervading as the following Śruti describes it. (Bṛ. Up., I, 3. 21 and 22).

एष उ एव ब्रह्मणस्पतिर्वाग् वै ब्रह्म तस्या एष पतिस्तस्माद् ब्रह्मणस्पतिः ॥ २१ ॥

एष उ एव साम वाग् वै सामैष सा चामश्चेति तत्साम्नः सामत्वं यदेव समः प्लुविणा समो  
मशकेन समो नागेन सम एभिस्त्रिभिर्लोकैः समोऽनेन सर्वेण तस्माद्देव सामाश्नुते साम्नः सायुज्यं  
सलोकतां जयति य एवमेतत्साम वेद ॥ २२ ॥

21. He (chief Prāṇa) is also Brahmanaspati, for speech is Brahman (Yajur Veda), and he is her lord; therefore, he is Brahmanaspati.

22. He (chief Prāṇa) is also Sāman (the Udgītha), for speech is Sāman (Sāma Veda), and that is both speech (Sa) and breath (Ama). This is why Sāman is called Sāman.

Or because he is equal (Sama) to a grub, equal to a goat, equal to an elephant, equal to these three worlds, nay, equal to this universe, therefore, he is Sāman. He who thus knows this Sāman, obtains union and oneness with Sāman.

This shows that Prāṇa is all-pervading as it is the same in all the three worlds.

*Siddhānta :* The chief Prāṇa is atomic as shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II, 4. 13.

अणुश्च ॥ २ । ४ । १३ ॥

अणुः Anuḥ, atom, atomic. च Cha, and.

13. The chief Prāṇa is also atomic.—282

COMMENTARY

The chief Prāṇa is also atomic, because the text declares that it passes out of the body along with the Jīva. Had it not been atomic, the passing out would be inappropriate regarding it. The Bṛhadāraṇyaka, IV., 4. 2. says that the chief Prāṇa also passes out along with the Jīva.

एकीभवति न पश्यतीत्याहुरेकीभवति न जिघ्रतीत्याहुरेकीभवति न रसयत इत्याहुरेकीभवति न वदती-  
त्याहुरेकीभवति न शृणोतीत्याहुरेकीभवति न मनुत इत्याहुरेकीभवति न सृशनीत्याहुरेकीभवति न विजानाती-  
त्याहुस्तस्य हैतस्य हृदयस्याग्रं प्रयोनते तेन प्रयोनतेन आत्मा निष्कामति चक्षुषो वा भूर्धनो वाऽन्येभ्यो  
वा शरीरदेशेभ्यस्तमुत्क्रामन् प्राणोऽनूत्क्रामति प्राणमनूत्क्रामन् सर्वे प्राणा अनूत्क्रामन्ति स विज्ञानो  
भवति स विज्ञानमेवान्ववक्रामति तं विशाकर्मणी समन्वारभेते पूर्ववशा च ॥ २ ॥

He has become one, they say, he does not see. He has become one, they say, he does not smell. He has become one, they say, he does not taste. He has become one, they say, he does not speak. He has become one, they say, he does not hear. He has become one, they say, he does not think. He has become one, they say, he does not touch. He has become one, they say, he does not know. The point of his heart becomes lighted up, and by that light the Self departs, either through the eye, or through the skull, or through other places of the body. And when he thus departs, life (the chief Prāṇa) departs after him, and when life thus departs all the other vital spirits (Prāṇas) depart after it. He is conscious, and being conscious he follows and departs.

Then both his knowledge and his work take hold of him, and his acquaintance with former things.

The all-embracingness ascribed to chief Prāṇa in the text quoted by the Pūrvaapakṣin must be interpreted to mean only that the life of all living and breathing creatures, depends upon the chief Prāṇa.

### *Adhikaraṇa X.—Brahman as light is the inciter of Prāṇas.*

In the Śruti "when the speech and other senses are asleep, the Prāṇa alone keeps awake," we find the function of the chief Prāṇa. In the text "these senses are seven in which the Prāṇas move about," we find the function of the secondary Prāṇas.

*Doubt* : The question arises : Do the senses along with the Prāṇa perform their respective functions of their own motion, or is there some other Being who moves these Prāṇas to activity ? Are these the Devatās who are the moving spirits of the Prāṇas or does the Jīva move them or is it done by the Supreme Lord ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the Prāṇas move of themselves, because they are endowed with energy of action, or the Devatās may be the movers of Prāṇas. As we find in the text, "Agni becoming speech, entered the mouth, etc." (Āitareya Upaniṣad, II., 4). Or the Soul may be the mover of Prāṇa, because the Prāṇa is subsidiary to the Jīva, and is an instrument with which it experiences pleasure and pain.

*Siddhānta* : The Supreme Brahman is the inciter of Prāṇa and not the Jīva or the Devatās.

SŪTRA II., 4. 14.

ज्योतिराद्यधिष्ठानां तु तदामननात् ॥ २ । ४ । १४ ॥

ज्योतिः Jyotiḥ, fire, the Supreme Brahman called the light. आद्यधिष्ठानम् Ādyadhiṣṭhānam, the chief Ruler. तु Tu, but तत् Tat, that statement of rulership. अमाननात् Āmananāt, on account of being so described.

14. The Light is the prime mover of the Prāṇas, because the text so describes it.—283.

COMMENTARY

The word 'but' is used in order to remove the doubt. The Great Light, namely the Supreme Brahman, is the first ruler or the chief inciter of these Prāṇas. The affix 'Lyaṭ' in the word 'Adhiṣṭhānam' has the force of agency here. Adhiṣṭhānam equal to Adhiṣṭhātā. Why do we say so? Because, in the Antaryāmi Brāhmaṇa of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (III., 7. 16) we find the Supreme Lord as the ruler of the chief Prāṇa as well.

यः प्राणे तिष्ठन् प्रणादन्तरो यं प्राणो न वेद यस्य प्राणः शरीरं यः प्राणमन्तरो यमयत्येष त आत्मान्तर्ग्राम्यमृतः ।

He who dwells in the Prāṇa, and within the Prāṇa, whom the Prāṇa does not know, whose body the Prāṇa is, and who pulls (rules) the Prāṇa within, he is thy Self, the puller (ruler) within, the immortal.

This and similar texts of the same chapter show that the Supreme Ruler is the Brahman, though the secondary rulers are the Devas and the human Jīvas. Prāṇa of itself can have no motion, because it is inert matter.

The Jīva also rules the Prāṇas, in order to get experiences, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II. 4. 15.

प्राणवता शब्दात् ॥ २ । ४ । १५ ॥

प्राणवता Prāṇavatā, by the Jīva, by the soul having or possessing the Prāṇas. शब्दात् Śabdāt, on account of the scriptural text.

15. The soul controls the Prāṇa for its own enjoyment, because there is scriptural text to that effect.—284.

## COMMENTARY

The Soul is called Prāṇavat because the Prāṇas belong to it. The soul rules the Prāṇas and all the senses, in order to accomplish its objects of enjoyment. Why do we say so? Because there is a scriptural text declaring the rulership of the Jīvas over the Prāṇas. Bṛhadāraṇyaka, II, 1. 18, says :

स यत्रैतत्स्वप्नायाचरति ते हास्य लोकास्तदुनेव महाराजो भवत्युनेव महाब्राह्मण उतेवोच्चावचं निगच्छति स यथा महाराजो जानपदान् गृहीत्वा स्वे जनपदे यथाकामं परिवर्त्तते तमेवैष एतत्प्राणान् गृहीत्वा म्वे शरीरे यथाकामं परिवर्त्तते ॥ १८ ॥

But when he moves about in sleep (and dream), then these are his worlds. He is, as it were, a great king; he is, as it were, a great Brāhmaṇa; he rises, as it were, and he falls. And as a great king might keep in his own subjects, and move about, according to his pleasure, within his own domain, thus does that person (who is endowed with intelligence) keep in the various senses (Prāṇas) and move about, according to his pleasure, within his own body (while dreaming).

To sum up: the Devas and the Jīvas both rule the senses, in subordination to the overlordship of the Supreme Brahman. The Devas rule the senses by merely giving them their activities; the Jīvas rule the senses in order to enjoy pleasureable experiences, while the Supreme Lord by His mere will, empowers the Devas and the Jīvas to act as subordinate rulers.

To this rule there is no exception as will be shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 16.

तस्य च नित्यत्वात् ॥ १६ ॥

तस्य Tasya, of this. च Cha. and. नित्यत्वात् Nityatvāt, on account of the permanence or eternity.

16. And on account of the eternity of this (relationship between the Supreme Lord and the Devas and Souls) He is the real ruler.

## COMMENTARY

The Devas rule the body through the mere will of the Supreme Lord, because of the eternity of the relation between the Devas and the Supreme Self who is the real agent in all activities. In other words, the chief agency belongs to him, as we find from the Antaryāmi Brāhmaṇa (Bṛhadāraṇyaka, III, 7).

*Adhikaraṇa XI.—The chief Prāṇa is not an Indriya.*

The author now raises another doubt with regard to this subject.

*Doubt* : Are all the Prāṇas senses or only the lower Prāṇas and not the chief Prāṇa ? In other words, is the chief Prāṇa also an Indriya or a sense organ ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The chief Prāṇa is also an Indriya because it is implied by the term Prāṇa or sense, and because it assists the Jīva. Hence all the Prāṇas are Indriyas.

*Siddhānta* : The chief Prāṇa is not an Indriya as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 17.

तद्द्रव्याणि तद्व्यपदेशादन्यत्रश्रेष्ठान् ॥ २ । ४ । १७ ॥

ने Te, they, namely the Prāṇas. इन्द्रियाणि Indriyāṇi, sense organs. तद्व्यपदेशात् Tāt-vyapadeśat, because designated as such. अन्यत्र Anyatra, elsewhere, except. श्रेष्ठान् Śreṣṭhāt, than the best or the chief Prāṇa.

17. All Prāṇas are sense organs, because of their being so designated, with the exception of the chief Prāṇa.—286.

## COMMENTARY

All these Prāṇas, with the exception of the chief Prāṇa, are certainly sense organs, because in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (II., 3), they are so designated. While in the case of the chief Prāṇa, the mention is separately made from the Indriyas. In fact, the word Indriya or sense organ is applied to the organs like sight, hearing, etc., and never to the chief Prāṇa. The Smṛti also says that the Indriyas are eleven. Had the chief Prāṇa been one of Indriyas then the number of organs would have been twelve and not eleven. (See Bhagavat Gītā, XIII., 5). There is a Śruti text also to the effect that the chief Prāṇa is not an Indriya.

An objection is raised to this view. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I., 5. 21., it is said that all the sense organs are but modifications of Prāṇa and are different forms of it. The chief Prāṇa must also, therefore, be an Indriya, since every Indriya is but a form of it. The text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka is given below :

तानि ज्ञातुं दम्बिरे अयं वै नः श्रेष्ठो यः सञ्चरन्<sup>१</sup>श्चासञ्चरन्<sup>२</sup>श्च न व्यथतेऽथो न रिष्यति  
इन्तास्येव सर्वे रूपमसामेति त एतस्यैव सर्वे रूपमभवन्<sup>३</sup>स्तस्मादेति एतेनाख्यायन्ते प्राथाः ॥

Then the others tried to know him, and said : ‘Verily, he is the best of us, he who, whether moving or not, does not tire and does not perish. Well, let all of us assume his

form.' Thereupon they all assumed his form, and therefore they are called after him 'breaths' (Prāṇas).

How do you reconcile this statement with your view that the chief Prāṇa is not an organ? To this the next Sūtra gives the reply.

SŪTRA II. 4. 18.

भेदश्रुतेः ॥ २ । ४ । १८ ॥

भेद-श्रुतेः Bheda-śruteḥ, because there is difference-denoting text.

18. The chief Prāṇa is not an organ, because there is a scriptural statement of its being different from sense organs.—287.

COMMENTARY

The text of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 1. 3, clearly mentions: "From Him is born Prāṇa, and the Manas and all organs." Thus the Prāṇa is separated from organs and therefore it is not an organ. But Manas is also mentioned separately from organs or Indriyas in the same text, and it also ought not to be called an Indriya. To this we reply that Manas is an Indriya, because it is formally included in the organs in the Bhagavat Gītā, XV., 7, where it is called distinctly the sixth organ. For reference the Muṇḍaka and the Gītā texts are given below:

एतस्माज्जायते प्राणो मनः सर्वेन्द्रियाणि च ।

खं वायुज्योतिरापः पृथिवी विश्वस्य धारिणी ॥

From him (when entering on creation) is born breath (Prāṇa), mind (Manas), and all organs of sense, ether, air, light, water, and the earth, 'the support of all.—(Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, II., 1. 3.)

ममेवांशो जीवलोके जीवभूतः सनातनः ।

मनः षष्ठानीन्द्रियाणि प्रकृतिस्थानि कर्षति ॥ ७ ॥

A portion of Mine own Self, transformed in the world of life into an immortal Spirit, draweth round itself the senses of which the mind is the sixth, veiled in Matter. (Bhāgavat Gītā, XV., 7.)

The Lord also speaks of Himself as Manas among the Indriyas (Bhāgavat Gītā, X., 22.)

वेदानां सामवेदोऽस्मि देवानामस्मि वासवः ।

इन्द्रियाणां मनश्चास्मि भूतानामस्मि चेतना ॥ २२ ॥

Of the Vedas I am the Sāma Veda; I am Vāsava of the Shining Ones; and of the senses I am the mind; I am of living beings the intelligence.

Note: As a general rule Manas is not included in the Indriyas in many passages of the Upaniṣads. Compare, for example, Kaṭha, III., 4. 10; VI., 7; Svetaśvatara, II., 8; Praśna III., 9; Gītā, II., 7 and 40 and 42, and XVIII., 33.

SŪTRA II., 4. 19.

वैलक्षण्याच्च ॥ २ । ४ । १९ ॥

वैलक्षण्याच्च Vailakṣanyācch, on account of difference of characteristics. च Cha, and.



19. The chief Prāṇa is not an organ, because it has not the characteristics of an organ.—288.

COMMENTARY

There is moreover a difference of characteristic between the chief Prāṇa and the senses. In deep sleep we still perceive the activity of the chief Prāṇa, for the breathing goes on, while the senses like hearing, sight, etc., are dormant. The chief Prāṇa supports the body and the senses, while the senses are instruments of knowledge and activity only. Thus there is a difference between the sense organs, and the chief Prāṇa, both in their essential nature and in their activities. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, no doubt, the sense organs are said to be of the form of the chief Prāṇa. The phrase 'they became its form' means that their activity is dependent upon the chief Prāṇa, and not that the sense organs became the chief Prāṇa. It is similar to the statement that the Jīva has become Brahman, which does not mean that the Jīva has really become Brahman, but that the activity of the Jīva is dependent on Brahman.

*Adhikaraṇa XII.—The production of individual forms  
is also from Brahman.*

In the previous Sūtras it has been shown that the creation of the elements and the organs and their collective aspects (Samaṣṭi) and the activity of the Jīvas proceed from the Highest Self. Now, is being determined, the question, 'From whom proceeds the creation of the world in its discrete aspect (Vyāṣṭi), namely, who creates the individual forms?' In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad after having mentioned the creation of fire, water and earth, the Sruti goes on to say (Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI, 3, 2 to 4).

सैयं देवतेक्षत इन्ताहमिमास्तिलो देवता अनेन जीवेनात्मनानुप्रविश्य नामरूपे व्याकरवाणीति ॥ २ ॥

That Being (*i. e.*, that which produced fire, water and earth) thought, let me now enter those three beings (fire, water, earth) with this living Self (Jīvātman), and let me then reveal (develop) names and forms."

तासां त्रिवृतं त्रिवृतमेकैकां करवाणीति सैयं देवतेमास्तिलो देवता अनेनैव जीवेनात्मनानुप्रविश्य नामरूपे व्याकरोत् ॥ ३ ॥

Then that Being having said, "Let me make each of these three tripartite (so that fire, water, and earth should each have itself for its principal ingredient, besides an admixture of the other two) enter into these three beings (Devatā) with this living self only," revealed names and forms.

तासां त्रिवृतं त्रिवृतमेकैकामकरोषथा नु खलु सोम्येमास्तिलो देवतास्त्रिवृतदेकैका भवति तन्मे विजानीहीति ॥ ४ ॥

He made each of these tripartite, and how these three beings became each of them tripartite, that learn from me now, my friend.

*Doubt :* Here arises the doubt : Is this differentiation of name and form the work of the Jiva (however high he may be, such as the Solar Logos), or is it the work of the Supreme Lord ?

*Pūrrapakṣa :* The differentiation of name and form, in other words, the creation of the organised world is the work of the four-faced Brahmā, who is a Jiva and not of the supreme Lord directly. This we say because in the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, the creation of the pure elements of fire, water and earth is from the Lord, but the creation of the mixed elements of fire, water and earth called the triplicities, is from a Jiva. The words of the Śruti are 'Aneṇa Jivena Âtmanâ,' 'Let me now enter those three Devatâs—fire, water, earth—with this Jivâtmâ, and let me then differentiate names and forms.' This shows that the differentiation of names and forms and the creation of compound elements is from a Jiva. The instrumental case in 'Jivena Âtmanâ' (with the Jivâtmâ), has not the implied meaning of association (together with this Jivâtmâ) : for if a case can be taken in its primary sense, it should not be taken in a sense which has to be expressed by means of a preposition. Nor can you object to the instrumental case in the 'Jivena' to be understood in its primary sense, namely, that of the instrument of action. (The literal meaning of the third case is, that which is most suitable to accomplish the end of action, the Jivâtmâ or the four-faced Brahmā in this view would be the most suitable instrument of the Lord to produce the world). No Jiva, however high he may be, can be said to be the most suitable instrument to accomplish the ends of the Lord. He brings about everything by His mere will for His Saṅkalpa is true, and so Brahmā cannot be called His 'Sâdhakâ-tamâ' or the most suitable instrument. Nor can it be said that the Jiva (four-faced Brahmā) finishes his activity by merely entering into the pure elements of fire, water, and earth, while the act of differentiation of names and forms is the work of the Lord : because entering and differentiating must refer to the same agent, and not that the entering should be referred to Brahmā and differentiating to the Lord. The word 'Praviśya' is a participial form and denotes a prior action having the same agent as the subsequent action. The phrase 'Praviśya vyākaraṇāni.'—'by entering I shall differentiate'—must therefore refer to the same person. But if the four-faced Brahmā is the secondary creator and not the Supreme Lord, why is the word 'Vyākaraṇāni' used in the first person for it means, "I shall differentiate." The first person shows that the Supreme Lord is the creator of the organised universe of name and form as well. To this we reply that the first person is also consistent with our view, just like a king who may say, "I shall estimate the strength of the hostile army, by entering

into it through my spy." Here the estimation is really made by the spy, but the use of the first person by the king is not inappropriate. Similarly, Brahman may as well say, "I shall differentiate names and forms, by entering into these three pure elements with this four-faced Brahmā." Nor is this merely a fancy of our own, evolved from our inner consciousness, but we have the authority of the scriptures in our favour.

विरिञ्चो वा इदं विरेचयति विदधाति ब्रह्मा वाव विरिञ्च एतस्माद्वीमे रूपनामनी ।

The four-faced Brahmā is called Viriñcha, because he ordains (Virechayati) or organises the universe. From him proceed all these organised creatures having particular name and form.

There is Smṛti text also which attributes the creation of name and form to Brahmā.

नाम रूपञ्च भूतानां कृत्यानां च प्रपञ्चनम् ।

वेद शब्देभ्य एवादौ देवादीनां चकार सः ॥

He (the four-faced Brahmā) in the beginning made, from the words of the Veda, the names and forms of beings, of the Devas and the rest, and of actions.

Compare also Manu, Chapter I, verse 21 :

सर्वेषां तु सनामानि कर्माणि च पृथक् पृथक् ।

वेद शब्देभ्य एवादौ पृथक् संस्थाश्च निर्ममे ॥

He (the four-face Brahmā) too first assigned to all creatures distinct names, distinct acts, and distinct occupations ; as they had been revealed in the pre-existing Veda.

Therefore, the creation of name and form is not the work of the Supreme Brahman directly, but of the four-faced Brahmā, a Jiva.

*Siddhaṅta* : The creation of the organised forms and of compound elements is also the work of the Supreme Lord, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 20.

संज्ञामूर्तिवत्सिस्तु त्रिवृत् कुर्वत उपदेशात् ॥ २ । ४ । २० ॥

संज्ञा Sañjña, name, मूर्ति Mūrti, form. वत्सिः Klrptiḥ, creation, making differentiation. तु Tu, but. त्रिवृत् Trivṛt, Tripartite, compound. कुर्वतः Kurvataḥ, of the maker. उपदेशाच्च Upadeśāt, on account of the teaching (of scripture).

20. The making of names and forms is the work of the Supreme Brahman, who compounds the pure elements into triplicities, because the scripture teaches it so.—289.

COMMENTARY

The word 'but' removes the objection raised above. The differentiation of name and form belongs to him who mixes the pure elements

into their compounds by the method of tripartition, as shown in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 3, 3 and 4 Khs. The visible elements fire, water and earth are not pure elements. The making of this mixture (what the Theosophists call the Monadic essence) is admittedly the work of the Lord, (or the second life wave of the Theosophists). The creation of organised forms—Nāma, Rûpa—from this Monadic essence or tripartite fire, water and earth, is also the work of the Supreme Lord in his third life wave and not of any Jîva, however high he may be, like the four-faced Brahmā. Why do we say so? Because the text quoted above expressly mentions that the differentiation of name and form is the work of the same agent who makes the mixture of the pure elements, by the method of tripartite.

The method of tripartite is given in the following verse :

त्रीयेकैकं द्विधा कुर्यात् त्र्यर्द्यानि विभजेद्द्विधा ।  
तत्तन्मुख्याद्विमुत्सृज्य योजयेच्च त्रिरूपता ॥

Divide each of the three elements into two equal halves, then divide one of those halves into two equal parts. Then add the smaller parts of the one element into the larger one of the other and thus we get the tripartite elements.

*Note :* Thus divide pure fire, water and earth into halves, then divide each half into half again. Thus we have of fire three divisions—half, one-fourth and one-fourth, and so of water and earth. The compound fire is equal to or is made up of a mixture of half pure fire, one-fourth pure water and one-fourth pure earth. Similarly, the compound water is made up of half pure water, one-fourth pure fire and one-fourth pure earth. The compound earth is in the same way a mixture of half pure earth, one-fourth pure fire and one-fourth pure water.

This Trivṛtkarāṇa is analogous to the 'Pāñchikarāṇa' of the modern Vedāntins, who evolve the five compound elements from the pure elements or five Tānmātrās by a process similar to the above.

It cannot be said that the making of the tripartite mixture is the work of the four-faced Brahmā. Because the manifestation of the four-faced Brahmā takes place then only, when these compound elements have already come into existence. The four-faced one abides within the Brahmā egg, and that egg itself is produced from fire, water and earth, after they had become the compounds. As we find in Manu, I, 9 :

तदयममभवदेमसहस्रांशुसमप्रभम् ।  
तस्मिञ्जज्ञे स्वयं ब्रह्मा सर्वलोकपितामहः ॥

The seed became an egg bright as gold, blazing like a luminary with a thousand beams, and in that egg was born Brahmā himself, great forefather of all the worlds.

Therefore, in the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 3. 2., the differentiation of name and form is the work of the same agency as that

of the compounding of the pure elements, and the succession shown in that text must not be taken to mean that first He created the Nāma-rūpa, and then He made the compounding of elements. Though the text is liable to that interpretation, for it says that Brahman thought "Let me now enter those three beings with this Jivātmā, and let me then develop name and form," and then that being said, 'Let me make each of these three tripartite,' yet the tripartition or compounding of elements takes place first, and then the creation of species (of names and forms). The Cosmic egg cannot be produced from the pure elements of fire, water and earth, but from their compound forms. The simple elements have not the power of producing the Cosmic egg.

Thus in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, II., 5. 32 and 33, we find the following :

यदेतेसंगताभावा भूतेन्द्रियमनोगुणाः ।

यदायतननिर्माणे न शेकुर्ब्रह्मवित्तमम् ॥ ३२ ॥

तदासंहत्य चान्यान्यं भगवच्छक्तिचोदिताः ।

सदसत्त्वमुपादाय चोभयं ससजुर्हृदः ॥ ३३ ॥

Because these pure elements so long as they remained uncombined and consisted of mere elements, senses, mind and attribute, they were not capable, O, best of the knowers of Brahman, to construct the organised body. Then they were combined one with the other impelled by the Divine energy, and the Lord created all this, both the discrete and the universal forms by taking up Pradhāna and her Guṇas—the Being and the Non-being.

*Note :* In the same Smṛti the method of 'Pañchikarapa' is also described. The five elements ether, air, fire, water and earth are divided into halves each, and then each half is divided into four parts. The one-eighth part of each of the four elements is added to the half of the remaining element and thus the gross element is produced.\* For example, the gross ether is made up of half pure ether *plus* one-eighth pure Vāyu, one-eighth pure water, one-eighth pure fire, and one-eighth pure earth. Similarly, the gross Vāyu is equal to half pure Vāyu, *plus* one-eighth pure ether, *plus* one-eighth pure fire, *plus* one-eighth pure water and one-eighth pure earth, and so on with the other elements.

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 5. 1 to 4, we find the following :

अन्नमशितं त्रेधा विधीयते तस्य यः स्थविष्ठो धातुस्तत्पुरीषं भवति यो मध्यमस्तन्मा<sup>१७</sup>सं योऽग्निष्ठः ॥ १ ॥

\*The earth (food) when eaten becomes three-fold : its grossest portion becomes faeces, its middle portion flesh, its subtlest portion mind.

आपः पीतांशेषा विधीयन्ते तासां यः स्थविष्ठो धातुस्तन्मूत्रं भवति यो मध्यमस्तत्स्रोक्षितं योऽग्निष्ठः स प्राणः ॥ २ ॥

Water when drunk becomes three-fold, its grossest portion becomes water, its middle portion blood, its subtlest portion breath.

तेजोऽशितं त्रेधा विधीयते तस्य यः स्थविष्ठो धातुस्तदस्थि भवति यो मध्यमः स मज्जा योऽग्निष्ठः सा वाक् ॥ ३ ॥

Fire (i.e., in oil, butter, etc.) when eaten becomes three-fold : its grossest portion becomes bone, its middle portion marrow, its subtlest portion speech.

चन्नमयं<sup>७</sup> हि सोम्य मन आपोमयः प्राणस्तेजोमयी वागिति... ॥ ४ ॥

For truly, my child, mind comes of earth, breath of water, speech of fire.

Here the three-fold modification of earth, fire and water is not to be confounded with the process of tripartition. It is not the earthy portion of the earth that becomes faeces, the watery portion flesh and the fiery portion mind. The whole compound earth, when eaten, is disposed of in three ways, namely faeces, flesh and mind. Similarly, the whole compound water when drunk is disposed of in three ways, namely, urine, blood and breath. So also the entire compound fire when eaten is disposed of in three ways, namely, bone, marrow and speech.

In the sentence occurring in the Chhândogya, VI., 3. 2, it is mentioned that the Lord entered with the Jīva-self. That text should not be confounded as teaching that the Jīva is the creator of names and forms. On the other hand, the words 'Ātmanā Jīvena' being in the case of apposition mean that the Ātman of the Supreme Lord through His aspect called Jīva, namely through His Jīva-energy produces names and forms. For Brahman has three energies, one of which is the Jīva-energy. This explains also the verse quoted above which ascribes the evolution of name and form to the four-faced Brahmā. In this explanation the first person (in "Let me differentiate") and the agency (conveyed by the form of 'Praviśya') may, without any difficulty, be taken in their primary literal senses. This also shows that the form 'Praviśya' and 'Vyākaraṇāni' have one person as the agent of both actions. Therefore, it follows that the Lord alone is the maker of names and forms. As we find in the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, III., 12. 16 :

वेदाहमेतं पुरुषं महान्तम् । आदित्यवर्णं तमसः परस्तात् ।

तमेव विद्वानमुत इह भवति । नान्यः पन्था विप्रतेऽयनाय ॥

I know this great personage whose colour is refulgent like that of the sun and who is beyond darkness, who having created specific forms and names is ever making use of them. By knowing Him, one becomes immortal, there is no other way to walk upon.

### *Adhikaraṇa XIII.—The vehicles of Soul are all made of earth.*

Now the author considers the question of the bodies of individuals. The body is denoted by the term Mūrti or form. The text of the Bṛhad-āraṇyaka, III., 2. 13, declares that the body is resolved into earth when the Soul leaves it and that this shows that the body is earthy. While

the Kaundīnya Śruti declares that the body consists of water. The original texts are given below :

याज्ञवल्क्येति होवाच यत्रास्य पुरुषस्य मृतस्यार्णि वागप्येति वातं प्राणश्चक्षुरादित्यं मनश्चन्द्रं दिशः  
श्रोत्रं पृथिवीं शरीरमाकाशमात्मौषधीर्लोमानि वनस्पतीन्केशा अप्सु लोहितञ्च रेतश्च निधीयते कायं कदा  
पुरुषो भवति ।

‘Yājñavalkya !’ he said, ‘when speech of this dead person enters into the fire, breath into the air, the eye into the sun, the mind into the moon, the hearing into space, into the earth the body, into the ether the self, into the shrubs the hairs of the body, into the trees the hairs of the head, when the blood and the seed are deposited in the water, where is then that person ?’ (Bṛhadāraṇyaka, III., 2. 13).

अद्भ्योहीदमुत्पठ्यते आपोवाव मांसमस्मि च भवंत्यापः शरीरमापश्चेदं सर्वमिति ।

From water indeed is produced all this ; water is verily flesh as well as bone ; water is verily the body ; water is verily all this. (Kaundīnya Śruti).

While there is a third text which says :

आप्यः सः अग्ने देवयोन्याः ।

He reaches the fire, the source of Devas.

These three texts are conflicting.

*Doubt* : Thus arises the doubt : Is the body made up of fire, or of water, or of earth, or of a combination of all these three ; for we have three different texts describing three sorts of origin of the body ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says that it is indeterminate, because these three Śrutis are irreconcilable.

*Siddhānta* : The body is of earth as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA II., 4. 21

मांसाऽऽदि भौमं यथाशब्दमितरयोश्च ॥ २ । ४ । २१ ॥

मांसादि Māṃsādi, flesh and the rest. भौमम् Bhaumam, of earth, composed of earth. यथा-शब्दम् Yathā-śabdham, as declared by the scripture. इतरयोः Itarayoh, of the other two, namely of fire, and water. च Cha, and.

21. Flesh and the rest are of earthy nature, because of the text to that effect. And so also in the case of the two others.—290.

COMMENTARY

The flesh and the best portion of the body are the products of earth. Similarly, of the other two, namely, of water and fire the products are blood and bone, etc. This we must admit because of the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 5. 1 to 4, quoted above. There is also an express text to the effect that body is of earth. In the Garbha Upaniṣad, we find the following :

ॐ पञ्चात्मकं पञ्चसु वर्तमानं षड्वायं षड्गुणयोगयुक्तम् । तं सप्तधातुं त्रिमलं द्वियोनिं चतुर्विधाहार-  
मयं शरीरम् ॥ भवति पञ्चात्मकमिति कस्मात् पृथिव्यापस्तेजोवायुराकाशमित्यस्मिन् पञ्चात्मके शरीरे का  
पृथिवी का आपः किं तेजः को वायुः किमाकाशमित्यस्मिन्पञ्चात्मके शरीरे तत्र यत्कठिनं सा पृथिवी यद्द्रवं  
ता आपः यदुष्णं तत्तेजः यत्सञ्चरति ख वायुः यत्सुषिरं तदाकाशमित्युच्यते ।

This body consists of five elements, it has five kinds of perceptual activities, it has six sorts of essences in it, it has six musical tones, seven humours, three kinds of excrecences (nails, hairs of the body and hairs of the head), two origins (father and mother) and is maintained by four kinds of food. Why is it called made up of five elements ? Because, earth, water, fire, air and ether go to form it. What portion of the body is earth, what water, what fire, what air and what ether ? The solid portion is earth, the liquid water, the heat fire, the respiratory system is air and the cavities and hollows (such as the frontal cavity) are ether.

Thus all bodies are three-fold, whether they be the bodies of Gods or animals.

If all bodies (elements and elementals) are three-fold, then why is it said, "this is fire, this is water, etc. ?" For the so-called fire is after all not pure fire, but fire *plus* two other elements, nor is water pure water. And why is it said that the bodies of the Devas are made of fire, those of the Apsaras of water and those of the terrestrials of earth. To this the next Sūtra gives the reply.

SŪTRA II., 4. 22.

वैशेष्यात् तद्वास्तद्वादः ॥ २ । ४ । २२ ॥

वैशेष्यात् Vaiśeṣyāt, on account of the distinctive nature, on account of preponderance. तु Tu, but. तद्-वादः Tat-vādaḥ, the designation of that. तद्-वादः Tad-vādaḥ, that designation, namely, their designation of fires, ether, etc.

22. The compound elements are so called because of the preponderance of the pure element in their composition.  
—291.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu' or 'but' is employed in the Sūtra in order to remove the doubt raised in the previous section. Though each compound element is indeed three-fold in its nature, yet it gets its particular designation from the particular element that preponderates in its composition. Thus the compound fire is called fire because of the preponderance of pure fire in it. Similarly, the Devas are called fiery, because their bodies are made of substances in which fire preponderates. The repetition of the word 'Tad-vādaḥ' in the Sūtra is in order to indicate the completion of the Adhyāya.



वर्द्धस्व कल्पाय समं समन्तात् कुरुष्वतापक्षतिमाश्रितानाम् ।

त्वदङ्ग सङ्कीर्णिकराः परास्ता हिंसा लसद्युक्तिकुठारिकाभिः ॥

O, thou. tree of all desires, grow thou, fully and equally on all sides, and give the coolness of thy shade to the persons taking shelter under thy outspreading branches, for the shrubs and undergrowths which were suffocating thy growth have now been cut away by the sharp axe of the cogent reasoning of Śrī Bādarāyaṇa.

Here ends the Fourth Pāda of the Second Adhyāya of Govinda Bhāṣya.

## THIRD ADHYĀYA

### FIRST PĀDA

न विना साधनैर्देवो ज्ञानवैराग्यभक्तिभिः ।

ददाति स्वपदं श्रीमानतस्तानि बुधः श्रयेत् ॥

The Lord God does not manifest His highest state, unless there be the proper Sādhana or practices, consisting of wisdom, dispassion and love. Let, therefore, the wise have these Sādhana.

*Adhikaraṇa I.—The Soul enters into a new body  
accompanied by the permanent atoms.*

In the two previous Adhyāyas, has been determined the essential nature of Brahman, who is the only cause of the world, who is free from all imperfections, who is an ocean of perfect attributes, who is existence, intelligence and bliss, and who is the highest person. It is shown therein, that all men desirous of release, must meditate on Brahman ; for all Vedānta texts establish Him to be the proper object of meditation. The two previous Adhyāyas have proved this by refuting the arguments of the opponents of Vedānta. Now in this Third Adhyāya are being determined those Sādhana or practices, which are the means of attaining the highest Brahman. In the First and Second Pādas of this Adhyāya are being taught two things, namely, a strong yearning or desire to obtain Brahman, and an equally strong disgust towards all objects other than Brahman ; for these two are the principals among all Sādhana, namely, Vairāgya and Prema. In order to teach Vairāgya (disgust), the Sūtras show in the First Pāda the imperfections of all worldly existences ; and this they base on the Pañchāgni Vidyā of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, in which is taught how the soul passes after death from one condition to another. The First Pāda, therefore, teaches the great doctrine of re-incarnation, the going out of the soul from the body, its sojourn into the lower or higher regions, and its coming back on this earth. This is done in order to teach Vairāgya or disgust. In the Second Pāda are described all the glorious attributes of the Supreme Brahman—His Omniscience, Omnipotence, Loveliness, etc.,—in order to attract the soul towards Him, so that He may be the only object of quest.

The Pañchāgni Vidyā is described in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (V., 3 to 10). Commencing with the verse “Śvetaketu Āruneya went to

an assembly of the Pañchâlas. Pravâhaṇa Jaibali said to him : 'Boy, has your father instructed you ?' 'Yes, Sir,' he replied."

The whole of that discourse, contained in eight Khaṇḍas, shows *prima facie* that the soul goes to the next world after death, and again comes back to this world.

*Doubt*: Here arises the doubt : Does the soul, going to the next world, do so by throwing off all its subtle rudiments—the permanent atoms—or does it go there accompanied by the subtle rudiments ?

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that these subtle rudiments or permanent atoms do not accompany the soul, but they being universally spread, are taken up by the soul, from the surrounding atmosphere, when it makes a new body for itself. Therefore, the soul goes on its journey to the higher world, unaccompanied by the subtle rudiments or permanent atoms.

*Siddhānta*: The soul is accompanied on its sojourn, by these permanent atoms, as is shown in the following Sūtra.

*Note*: The whole passage is given below for facility of reference :

#### ADHYĀYA V.—KHAṆḍA III

श्वेतकेतुर्हारीण्यः पञ्चालानां<sup>१</sup> समितिमेयाय तं<sup>२</sup> ह प्रवाहणो जैबलिरुवाच कुमारानु त्वाशिष्यति तेत्यनु  
दि भगव इति ॥ १ ॥

1. Svetaketu Āruṇeya went to an assembly of the Pañchâlas. Pravâhaṇa Jaibali said to him : "Boy, has your father instructed you ?" "Yes, Sir," he replied.

वेत्थ यदि तोऽधि प्रजाः प्रयन्तीति न भगव इति । वेत्थ यथा पुनरावर्त्तन्ता ३ इति न भगव इति । वेत्थ  
पथोर्देवयानस्य पितृयाणस्य च व्यावर्त्तना ३ इति न भगव इति ॥ २ ॥

2. "Do you know to what place men go from here?" "No, Sir," he replied. "Do you know how they return again?" "No, Sir," he replied. "Do you know where the path of the Devas and the path of the Fathers diverge?" "No, Sir," he replied..

वेत्थ यथासौ लोको न समपूर्यता ३ इति न भगव इति । वेत्थ यथा पञ्चम्यामाहुतावापः पुरुषवचसो  
भवन्तीति नैव भगव इति ॥ ३ ॥

3. "Do you know why that world never becomes full?" "No, Sir," he replied. "Do you know why in the fifth libation water is called man?" "No, Sir," he replied.

अथ नु किमनुशिष्टोऽबोचथा यो हीमानि न विद्यान् कथं<sup>४</sup> सोऽनुशिष्टो ब्रवीतेति स हायस्ततः पितुरङ्ग-  
मेयाय तं<sup>५</sup> होवाचाऽनुशिष्य । वाव किञ्च मा भगवानब्रवीदनुत्वाशिषमिति ॥ ४ ॥

4. "Then why did you say (you had been) instructed? How could any body who did not know these things say that he had been instructed?" Then the boy went back sorrowfully to the place of his father and said: "Though you had not instructed me, Sir, you said you had instructed me."

पञ्च मा राजन्यबन्धुः प्रश्नानप्राप्तीन्तेषां नेकवताशकं विवक्तुमिति स होवाच यथा मा त्वं तदेता-  
नवदो ग्रथाहमेषां नेकवचन वेद यथहमिमानवेदिष्यं कथं नावक्ष्यामिति ॥ ५ ॥

5. "That fellow of a Rājanya asked me five questions, and I could not answer one of them." The father said: "As you have told me these questions of his, I do not know any one of these. If I knew these questions, how should I not have told you?"

स ह गौतमो राजोऽदमेयाय तस्मै ह प्राप्तायाहोचकार स ह प्राप्तः सभाग उदेयाय तं होवाच  
मानुषस्य भगवन् गौतम वित्तस्य वरं वृणीथा इति स होवाच तवेव राजन् मानुषं वित्तं यामेव कुमारस्यान्ते  
वाचमभाषथास्तामेव मे ब्रूहीति ॥ ६ ॥

6. Then Gautama went to the king's place, and when he had come to him, the king offered him proper respect. In the morning the king went out on his way to the assembly. The king said to him: "Sir, Gautama, ask a boon of such things as men possess." He replied: "Such things as men possess may remain with you. Tell me the answer to the questions which you addressed to the boy."

स ह कृच्छीवभूव तं ह चिरं वसेत्याशापयाञ्चकार तं होवाच यथा मात्वं गौतमाऽवदो यथेयं  
न प्राक् त्वत्तः पुरा विद्या ब्राह्मणान् गच्छति तस्माद् संवेषु लोकेषु क्षत्रस्येव प्रशासनमभूदिति तस्मै  
होवाच ॥ ७ ॥

7. The king was perplexed and commanded him, saying: "Stay with me some time." Then he said: "As (to what) you have said to me, Gautama, this knowledge did not go to any Brāhmaṇa before you, and therefore, this teaching belonged in all the world to the Kṣātra class alone." Then he began:

#### KHAṆḌA IV.

असौ वाव लोको गौतमाग्निस्तस्यादित्य एव समिद्रश्मयो धूमोऽहरचिश्चन्द्रमा अङ्गारा नक्षत्राणि  
विस्फुलिङ्गाः ॥ १ ॥

1. The altar (on which the sacrifice is supposed to be offered) is that world (heaven), O Gautama; its fuel is the sun itself, the smoke his rays, the light the day, the coals the moon, the sparks the stars.

तस्मिन्नेतस्मिन्नग्नौ देवाः श्रद्धां जुहति तस्या आहुतेः सोमो राजा सम्भवति ॥ २ ॥

2. On that altar the Devas (or Prāṇas represented by Agni, etc.,) offer the Sraddhā libation (consisting of water). From that oblation rises the sparkling Soma.

#### KHAṆḌA V.

पर्जन्यो वाव गौतमाग्निस्तस्य वायुरेव समिदं धूमो विषुद्विरश्निरङ्गारा हादुनयो विस्फुलिङ्गाः ॥ १ ॥

1. The altar is Parjanyā (the God of rain), O Gautama; its fuel is the air itself, the smoke the clouds, the light the lightning, the coals the thunderbolt, the sparks the thundering.

तस्मिन्नेतस्मिन्नग्नौ देवाः सोमं राजानं जुहति तस्या आहुतेर्वर्षं सम्भवति ॥ २ ॥

2. On that altar the Devas offer the sparkling Soma, from that oblation rises rain.

#### KHAṆḌA VI.

पृथिवीवाव गौतमाग्निस्तस्याः संवत्सर एव समिदाकाशो धूमो रात्रिर्विदिशोऽङ्गारा अवान्तरदिशो  
विस्फुलिङ्गाः ॥ १ ॥

1. The altar is the earth, O Gautama; its fuel is the year itself, the smoke the ether, the light the night, the coals the quarters, the sparks the intermediate quarter.

तस्मिन्नेतस्मिन्नग्नौ देवा वषं जुहति तस्या आहुतेरन्नं सम्भवति ॥ २ ॥

2. On that altar the Devas (Prāṇas) offer rain. From that oblation rises food, corn, etc.

## KHAṆḌA VII.

पुरुषो वाव गौतमाग्निस्तस्य वागेव समिम्बायो धूमो जिह्वाऽविश्चक्षुरङ्गाराः श्रोत्रं विस्फुलिङ्गाः ॥ १ ॥

1. The altar is man, O Gautama ; its fuel speech itself, the smoke the breath, the light the tongue, the coals the eye, the sparks the ear.

तस्मिन्नैतस्मिन्नग्नौ देवा अन्नं जुहति तस्या आहुते रेतः सम्भवति ॥ २ ॥

2. On that altar the Devas (Prāṇas) offer food. From oblation rises seed.

## KHAṆḌA VIII.

योषा वाव गौतमाग्निस्तस्या उपस्थ एव समिषदुपमन्त्रयते स धूमो योनिरर्विद्यदन्तः करोति तेऽङ्गारा अभिनन्दा विस्फुलिङ्गाः ॥ १ ॥

1. The altar is woman, O Gautama....

तस्मिन्नैतस्मिन्नग्नौ देवा रेतो जुहति तस्या आहुतेर्गर्भः सम्भवति ॥ २ ॥

2. On that altar the Devas (the Prāṇas) offer seed. From that oblation rises the germ.

## KHAṆḌA IX.—1.

इति तु पञ्चम्यामाहुतावापः पुरुषवचसो भवन्तीति स उल्बावृतो गर्भो दश वा मासानन्तः शयित्वा यावद्वाथ जायते ॥ १ ॥

1. For this reason is water in the fifth oblation called Man. This germ, covered in the womb, having dwelt there ten months, or more or less, is born.

स जातो यावदायुषं जीवति तं प्रेतं दिष्टमितोऽग्नय एव हरन्ति यत एवेतो यतः सम्भूतो भवति ॥ २ ॥

2. When born, he lives whatever the length of his life may be. When he has departed his friends carry him, as appointed, to the fire (of the funeral pile) from whence he came, from whence he sprang.

## KHAṆḌA X.

तद्य इत्थं विदुर्ये चेमेऽग्नये श्रद्धा तप इत्युपासते तेऽर्विषमभिमम्वन्त्यर्विषोऽहरः आपूर्यमाणपक्षमा-  
पूर्यमाणपक्षाणाम् षड्वद्वेति मासाऽस्तान्ते ॥ १ ॥

मासेभ्यः संवत्सरः संवत्सरादादित्यमादित्याच्चन्द्रमसं चन्द्रमसो विद्युतं तत्पुरुषोऽमानवः स एनां ब्रह्म  
गमयत्येष देवयानः पन्था इति ॥ २ ॥

1. Those who know this (even though they still be Grhasthas, householders) and those who in the forest follow faith and austerity (the Vānaprasthas, and the Parivrajakas, those who do not know yet the Higher Brahman) go to light, from light to day, from day to the light half of the Moon, from light half of the Moon to the six months when the Sun goes to the north.

From the six months when the Sun goes to the north to the year, from the year to the Sun, from the Sun to the Moon, from the Moon to the lightning. There is person not human. He leads to the Brahman. This is the path of the Devas.

अथ य इमे ग्राम इष्टापूर्ते दत्तमित्युपासते ते धूममभिसम्भवन्ति धूमाद्रग्निं रात्रेपरपक्षमपरपक्षाणाम्  
षड्वद्वेति मासाऽस्तान्ते संवत्सरमभिप्राप्नुवन्ति ॥ ३ ॥

3. They who living in a village practise (a life of) sacrifice, works of public utility, and alms, they go to the smoke, from smoke to the night, from night to the dark half of the Moon, from the dark half of the Moon to the six months when the Sun goes to the south. But they do not reach the year.

मासेभ्यः पितृलोकं पितृनो ह्यदाकाशमाकाशचन्द्रममेष सोमो राजा तद्वानामन्नं तं देवा भक्षयन्ति ॥ ४ ॥

4. From the months they go to the world of the fathers, from the world of the fathers to the ether, from the ether to the Moon. That is the sparkling Soma. Here they are eaten by the Devas, yes, the Devas eat them.

तस्मिन्वावत्सम्पातमुपित्वाऽथैमेवाश्वानं पुनर्निवर्त्तन्ते यथैतत्तदाशमाकाशायु वायुर्भूत्वा धूमो भवति धूमो भूत्वाञ्च भवति ॥ ५ ॥

5. Having dwelt there, till good works are consumed, they return again that way as they come, to the ether, from the ether to the air. Then the sacrificer, having become air, becomes smoke, having become smoke, he becomes mist.

अञ्चं भूत्वा मेघो भवति मेघो भूत्वा प्रवर्षति त इह व्रीहिषा योषधिवत्सम्पातयन्निन्वभाषा एति जायन्तेऽनो व खल्व दुर्निष्कारं यो यो व्यस्यन्ति यो देवः सिध्यति तदभ्य एव भवति ॥ ६ ॥

6. Having become mist, he becomes a cloud, having become a cloud he rains down. Then he is born as rice and corn, herbs and trees, sesamum and beans. From thence the escape is beset with most difficulties. For, whoever the persons may be that eat the food, and beget offspring, he henceforth becomes like unto them.

तद्य इह रमणीयं चरणा अभ्याशो ह यत्ते रमणीयां योनिमाप्यन् ब्राह्मणयोनिं वा क्षत्रिययोनिं वा वैश्ययोनिं वा य इह कप्यचरणा अभ्याशो ह यत्ते कप्यां योनिमाप्यन् श्वयोनिं वा शूकरयोनिं वा चाण्डालयोनिं वा ॥ ७ ॥

7. Those whose conduct has been good, will quickly attain some good birth, the birth of a Brāhmaṇa, or of a Kṣatriya or of a Vaiśya. But those whose conduct has been evil, will quickly attain an evil birth, the birth of (keeper of a) dog, or (the keeper of a) hog, or a Čhaṇḍāla.

यथैतयोः परोर्न कवेर्यत्र न तानीमानि क्ष्द्राण्यमरुदावर्त्तानि भूतानि भवन्ति तप्यन्व त्रिष्वेतेन तत्तृतीयं स्थानं तेनानो लोको न सम्पूर्यते तत्रैष श्लोकः ॥ ८ ॥

8. On neither of these two ways those small creatures (flies, worms, etc.) are continually returning of whom it may be said, live and die. Theirs is a third place. Therefore, that world never becomes full. Hence let a man take care to himself, and thus it is said in the following Śloka :

स्तेनो हिरण्यभ्य स्र्गं विभृश्च गुरोस्तत्पमावयन् ब्रह्मा चैवे परस्मिन् तत्त्वाः पञ्चमश्चाचरं शनैरिति ॥ ९ ॥

9. A man who steals gold, who drinks spirits, who dishonours his Guru's bed, who kills a Brāhmaṇa, these four fall, and as a fifth he who associates with them.

अथ ह्यय एतानेवं पञ्चाग्नीन वेद न मह तेऽप्याचरन् पाप्मना विप्यते शुद्धः पूतः पयल्लोको भवति य एवं वेद ॥ १० ॥

10. But he who knows the five fires is not defiled by sin, even though he associates with them. He who knows this, is pure, clean, and obtains the world of the blessed, yea, he obtains the world of the blessed.

SŪTRA III., 1. 1.

तदंतरप्रतिपत्तौ रहति संपरिष्वक्तः प्रश्ननिरूपणाभ्याम् ॥ ३ । १ । १ ॥

तत् Tat, that, *i.e.*, a body. अन्तर Antara, different, another. प्रतिपत्तौ Prati-pattau, in obtaining, in going to. रहति Rahhati, goes, departs. सम्परिष्वक्तः Sampariṣvaktah, enveloped (by the subtle elements). प्रश्न Praśna, from question. निरूपणाभ्याम् Nirūpaṇābhyām, and from explanations.

1. In order to obtain another body, the soul goes accompanied by permanent atoms ; as appears from the question and answer in the Chhândogya text.—292.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'that' refers to the word *body* mentioned in Sūtra II., 4. 20, because the Anuvṛtti of the word 'Mūrti' is understood in this Sūtra from that already mentioned. The Jīva goes surrounded by the subtle rudiments, when it goes out of one body in order to obtain another. How do we know this? Because the question and answer in Chapter five of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad shows this. The question there put is: "Do you know to what place men go from here?" And then the answer is given in the Fourth Khaṇḍa, namely, "the altar is that world, O Gautama," etc. The story as given in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is this. The king of the Pāñchālas, a Kṣatriya, called Pravāhaṇa, asked five questions from a Brāhmaṇa boy named Śvetaketu who had come to his court. Those questions related to (i) the regions where the performers of sacrifices go, (ii) the method of return from that region, (iii) the persons who do not attain that world, (iv) and the two paths called the paths of the Devas and the paths of the Pitṛs, and (v) the last question was: "Do you know why in the fifth libation water is called Man?" That boy not being able to answer these questions, returned to his father Gautama, and expressed his sorrow to him. The father also did not know the answer to these five questions, and in order to learn it, he went to Pravāhaṇa. The king received him with proper honour, and expressed his desire to give him riches, but Gautama begged of him the answers to those five questions. The king then answered those questions, commencing with the last one, saying "that world, O Gautama, is the altar, etc." He described this as five fires, the first fire is the Heaven world, the second is Rain, the third is the Earth, the fourth Man, and the fifth Woman. In these five fires, five sorts of libations are poured by the Devas, namely, Śraddhā, Soma, Rain, Food and the Seed respectively. The sacrificial priests in these libations in every case are the Devas. The

Homa is the throwing of the soul which is surrounded by its subtle rudiments into the various worlds, beginning with heaven; in order that it may attain enjoyments of heaven and the rest. The senses of the Jīva which has departed from its body, are called Devas. These Devas sacrifice in the fire of heaven Śraddhā. That Śraddhā becomes transformed into a celestial body called Soma-rāja, and it is through this body that the soul enjoys heavenly felicities. Then the period comes that the Jīva should be thrown down from the heaven-world, then at the end of its enjoyment, the soul in this vehicle called Soma-rāja is thrown into the fire called Parjanya, where it becomes Rain. The body which the soul now gets is called the Rain-body. This Rain-body is thrown into the fire of Earth, namely, it falls on Earth. From this offering arise plants. This plant or food is the third body of the soul. Then the food is eaten by some male which represents the fourth libation and the male represents the Fire. From this Homa of food in the Fire of male arises the semen which is the fourth body of the Soul. This Semen is poured into the Fire of the Female where it gets its fifth body and becomes the embryo. Having mentioned these five oblations, the King says in answer to his fifth question: "For this reason is water in the fifth oblation called Man." The meaning is, that the Soul when offered in the fifth Fire as seed, becomes incarnated, and assumes the human body, which is called the man. The Soul returns to the womb of woman along with all those waters (permanent atoms or senses) with which it went to the heaven-world, and thus it appears that the Soul in its return to the higher world goes enveloped by the subtle rudiments of organs, that is, by the permanent atoms.

But the text in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad speaks of 'water' as going up to heaven and coming back as rain and ultimately becoming man. It shows that water only accompanies the soul, and not any other element. How do you then say that the Soul goes enveloped by *all* the elements? To this objection the next Sūtra gives the reply.

SŪTRA., III., 1. 2.

अयमकत्वात्तुभूयस्त्वात् ॥ ३ । १ । २ ॥

त्रि-आत्मकत्वात् Tri-ātmakatvāt, on account of consisting of three, three-fold.  
 तु Tu, but. भूयस्त्वात् Bhūyastvāt, on account of preponderating.

2. The water which envelops the Soul being three-fold, it denotes all the other elements by implication; and the text specifies water, because it preponderates in the human body.—293.



## COMMENTARY

The word "But" denotes the removal of the doubt above raised ; as the *compound water* has in it all the other elements, because it consists of water, fire and earth. Therefore, when the Soul goes enveloped by this *compound water* it follows that the other elements also go with it. In the embryo of the body, which is made up of the sperm and the germ cells, it is apparent that liquid is the predominant element, though the solids are also there. It is owing to the predominance of the watery elements that the word 'water' is called the great destroyer of heat. In fact on account of this preponderance of water in the constitution of the human body, the water alone is mentioned as going along with the Soul.

## SŪTRA III, 1. 3.

प्राणगतेश्च ॥ ३ । १ । ३ ।

प्राण Prāṇa of the Prāṇas, (the sense organs), गते Gati, on account of the going out, च Cha, and.

3. Since the Soul goes out with the Prāṇas, all the elements must accompany it.—294.

## COMMENTARY

In the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 1. 2), it is mentioned that when the Soul goes out, in order to take another body, the Prāṇas also accompany it.

तमुत्क्रामन्तं प्राणोऽनूत्क्रामति प्राणमनूत्क्रामन्तं स वै प्राणा अनूत्क्रामन्ति स विद्वानो भवति स विज्ञानमेवान्ववक्रामन्ति त विद्यामग्नी मग्नवारगेने पूर्वेप्रज्ञा च ॥ २ ॥

And when he (soul) thus departs, the chief Prāṇa departs after him, and when the Prāṇa thus departs all the other vital spirits (Prāṇas) depart after him. He is conscious, and being conscious he follows and departs.

But the Prāṇas cannot exist without a substrate. During life the Prāṇas exist in the elements ; therefore, after death, if they have to accompany the soul, they must accompany with their substrate, the rudiments of elements. We must, therefore, admit that the rudiments of elements, the permanent atoms, must accompany the Soul, because they are the vehicles of Prāṇas.

## SŪTRA III, 1. 4.

अग्न्यादिगतिश्रुतेरिति चेन्न भाक्तत्वात् ॥ ३ । १ । ४ ॥

अग्न्यादि Agny ādi, Agni and others. गति Gati, about going, entering, श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, on account of the statement of the scriptures. इति Iti, as, thus. चेन्न

Chet, if. च Na, not, no. भक्तत्वात् Bhāktatvāt, on account of the metaphorical nature of, for referring to the partial.

4. If it be said that the scriptural text mentions also the going of the various senses into various elements, like fire, etc., and therefore, the senses do not accompany the Soul, when it goes out of the body ; to this we reply, that the going of the senses to the elements is metaphorical only. —295.

COMMENTARY

In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, we find the following :

यामवल्ब्येति होवाच मुचाम्भ्य परमस्य उवाच तस्मिन् यामवल्ब्येति वागे वाणश्चक्षुर्गदितं मनश्चन्द्रं दिशः  
श्रोत्रं तुल्यीकृतं शरीरमावाशमन्मौषधीर्लोमानि वनस्पतीकेशा अप्यु लोदितं च तेषां निवीक्य जलं  
जगत्प्रवृत्तौ भवतीति ।

Yājñavalkya, he said, when the speech of this dead person enters into the fire, breath into the air, the eye into the sun, the mind into the moon, the hearing into space, into the earth the body, into the ether the self, into the shrubs the hairs of the body, into the trees the hairs of the head, when the blood and the seed are deposited in the water, where is then that person ?

This going of the sense organs like speech, etc., into fire, etc., shows that they do not accompany the soul when it leaves the body. The text which says that the senses accompany the soul must, therefore, be interpreted in a different way. To this objection, the Sūtra replies that it is not so. The merging of the speech in fire, etc., is to be explained in a metaphorical sense, because in its literal sense they are not true. For the hairs of the body do not enter into the herbs, nor do the hair of the head into trees. Manifestly, Lomas and Keśas do not enter into herbs and trees ; and in their case we are forced to explain the statement as figurative only. Why should then the entering of speech into fire, breath into the air, the eye into the sun, the mind into the moon, etc., be taken in its literal sense ? For both being read in the same sentence, must be explained in the same way. Either the whole is metaphorical, or the whole is literally true. But it is not literally true, because the Lomas and the Keśas are never seen to jump out of the human body and enter into herbs and trees. The entering of speech into fire, etc., means that at the time of death, these senses cease to perform their functions, and not that they are absolutely lost to the Soul. The conclusion, therefore, is that the soul does go accompanied by the senses, and the permanent atoms, for the gross accompanies the subtle.

SŪTRA III. 1. 5.

प्रथमेश्वरणादिति चेन्न ता एव ह्युपपत्तेः ॥ ३ । १ । ५ ॥

प्रथमे Prathame, in the first, in the beginning, (in connection with the first oblation in the first fire). अश्रवणात् Aśravaṇāt, on account of not being mentioned, for want of mention. इति Iti, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not, no. ताः एव Tāḥ eva, those very, the same, (the waters). हि Hi, because of. उपपत्तेः Upapattēḥ, on account of agreement, because of fitness.

5. If it be objected that water is not mentioned in the first oblation, and therefore, the soul does not go accompanied by water, we reply, that even in the first oblation, water is verily meant by the word Śraddhā, for that is the most appropriate meaning of this word in that passage.--296.

## COMMENTARY

*Objection* : If water be the oblation in all the five offerings, then, of course, it will be appropriate to say that the soul goes enveloped in water, and that in the fifth oblation water gets the name of man. But that is not the case. In the first fire we do not find that water is mentioned as an oblation, on the other hand, Śraddhā or faith is mentioned there as first oblation ; for the text says : "In that fire the Devas offer Śraddhā." Śraddhā is a well-known name of a mental attitude and means faith or belief, and it never means water. The other four oblations of Soma, Rain, etc., have something of water in them, and they may be explained as water, but Śraddhā, by no stretch of language, can be called water. Therefore, from this text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, we cannot deduce the conclusion that the soul of the dead goes enveloped by water.

*Reply* : To this objection, the Sūtra replies in its second portion, that in the first fire also, "water" is the oblation, because the word Śraddhā there must be interpreted as meaning 'water.' Why should it be so interpreted ? Because of its fitness, in connection with questions and answers. The question is '*Knowest thou why water in the fifth oblation is called man ?*' This shows that all the five oblations are of water. But in the first answer Śraddhā is mentioned as an offering. Consequently, Śraddhā must be taken there to mean *water*, otherwise the question and answer would not agree with each other. If the word Śraddhā there did not mean *water*, then there would be a conflict between the question and the answer. Water is connected with all the five offerings here. If Śraddhā did not mean water, then water would be connected with *four* offerings only. Moreover, the other four offerings—Soma, Rain, Food and Seed—

are described there to be the effects of Śraddhā. It is Śraddhā which becoming more and more dense, modifies itself into these four. Therefore, it must be a substance belonging to the same category as these four, for the cause cannot be different from its effect. And an effect is only a modification of the cause. Therefore, it is reasonable to interpret Śraddhā to mean water here, whose effects are the Soma (or the Devachanic body), Rain (the astral body), Food (the ethereal body), and Seed (the physical body). Hence Śraddhā there must be interpreted as water. Moreover, in the Śruti "Śraddhā indeed is water" (Taittiriya Samhitā, I, 6. 8. 1) this word is expressly used to denote water. It cannot mean here 'belief' or 'faith,' which is a function of the mind, and which no one can take out of the mind and offer as an oblation to fire. Hence it follows that the soul goes surrounded by waters, when it departs from the body.

But another objection is raised by the opponent. The text mentions or may be interpreted to mention that the waters go up and come down, but throughout the whole section there is no mention of the Jīva going surrounded by water. In fact, the word Jīva does not occur at all in that section of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad. It cannot, therefore, be deduced that the Soul goes enveloped by waters. To this objection the next Sūtra gives the reply.

SŪTRA III., 1. 6.

अश्रुतत्वादिति चेन्नेष्टादिकारिणां प्रतीतेः ॥ ३ । १ । ६ ॥

अश्रुतत्वात् *Āśrutatvāt*, on account of this not being stated by the scriptures ; because not proved. इति *Iti*, thus, so. चेत् *Chet*, if. न *na*, not, no. इष्टादिकारिणाम् *Iṣṭādikāriṇām*, in reference to those who perform sacrifices, &c. प्रतीतेः *Pratīteḥ*, on account of being seen in the Śruti, on account of being understood.

6. If it be said, that the word Jīva is not mentioned at all in that section, we reply, it is not so, because the whole section is to be understood as referring to those who perform sacrifices and other good works.—297.

COMMENTARY

The word 'Āśrutatvāt' means because not proved. In that Chhândogya Upaniṣad, the going of the performer of good works to Moon is mentioned. The performers are Souls and not Waters. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (V., 10. 3 and 4) the Pitṛyāna is thus described :

अथ य इमे ग्राम इष्टापूर्ते दत्तमिच्छुः सते ते धूममभितप्तमवन्ति धूमाद्रात्रिं रात्रिपरपक्षमपरपक्षान्वड-  
दक्षिणेति मासाः<sup>७</sup>स्तान्नेते संवत्सरमभिप्राप्नुवन्ति ॥ ३ ॥

3. But they who living in a village practise (a life of) sacrifices, works of public utility and alms, they go to the smoke, from smoke to night, from night to the dark half of the moon, from the dark half of the moon to the six months when the sun goes to the south, but they do not reach the year.

मासेभ्यः पितृभोक्तं पितृभोक्तादा हाशमा हाशचन्द्रमसमेव सोमो राजा तद्देवानामन्नं तं देवा भक्षयन्ति ॥४॥

4. From the months they go to the world of the fathers, from the world of the fathers to the ether, from the ether to the moon. That is the sparkling Soma. Here they are eaten by the Devas, yes, the Devas eat them.

From this we understand, that the performers of sacrifices and so on, having reached the astral plane (Chandraloka), get the name of "Somarāja." This technical name "Somarāja" is applied here to the Soul. That very word we find used in connection with the first offering (Chhândogya Upaniṣad, V., 4. 2).

अस्मिन्नेवस्मिन्नग्नौ देवाः श्रद्धां जुह्वति त-या आहुतेः सोमो राजा संभवति ॥ २ ॥

2. On that altar the Devas (or Prāṇas represented by Agni, etc.) offer the Śraddhā libation (consisting of waters). From that oblation rises Somarāja.

Now, therefore, the same word being employed in both places, we hold that the Soul, in the moon plane, gets a body consisting of Śraddhā, a body called Soma. Though the word Jīva is not expressly used in connection with these oblations, yet *body* being the abode of Jīva, and its nature being to be the abode of Jīva and Jīva only, the word *body* is sometimes used to denote the Soul. In other words, the connotation of the word *body* extends up to the Soul. Hence the "waters" only do not go,\* but the Jīva surrounded by waters goes up.

Now another objection is raised. This celestial body which the Jīva assumes in the heaven-world is called Somarāja, Refulgent nectar. The same text, Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (V., 10. 4), also mentions that this Somarāja, the sparkling nectar, is the drink of the Devas, and that the Devas eat this *body*. Since the Devas eat this Somarāja *body* we cannot say that it means the Soul in his heavenly garb, for no one can eat the Soul. To this objection the next Sūtra gives the reply.

SŪTRA. III. 1. 7.

भाक्तं वानात्मवित्त्वानथा हि दर्शयति ॥ ३ । १ । ७ ॥

भाक्तम् Bhāktam, metaphorical partial. वा Vā, or. अनात्मवित्त्वान् Anātmavit-tvāt, on account of their not knowing the self. तथा Tathā, so. हि Hi, because. दर्शयति Darśayati, (the scripture) shows.

7. The Jīva called Somarāja is said to be the food of the Devas in a figurative sense only, because they do not know the Self, for thus the Śruti declares.—298.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Vā' or "or" has the force here of removing the doubt. The Jīva termed Somaṛāja is said to be the food of the Devas, in a metaphorical sense only, and not literally. It is said to be the food, because it gives pleasurable enjoyment to the Devas. The reason being, such souls are servants of the Devas. They are servants, because they do not know the Self. The Śruti also declares that those who do not know the Self become servants of the Devas. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (I., 4. 10) we find :

ब्रह्म वा इदमग्र आसीत् तदात्मानमेवावेदं ब्रह्मास्मीति तस्मात्तत् सवेममवत् तयो यो देवानां प्रत्यबुध्यत स एव तदभवत्तथर्षीणां तथा मनुष्याणां तद्वैतत्पश्यन् नृषिर्वाग्देवः प्रणिपेदेऽहं मनुर्गन्धर् सूर्यश्चेति तदिदमप्येतर्हि य एवं वेदाहं ब्रह्मास्मीति स इदं सर्वं भवति तस्यह न देवाश्च नाभूत्या ईशने । आत्मा ह्येषां स भवत्यथ योऽन्यां देवतामुपान्तेऽन्यीऽहमस्मीति न स वेद यथा पशुरेव स देवानां यथा ह वै बहवः पशवो मनुष्यं भुञ्ज्युरेवमेकैकः पुन्रवो देवान् मुनवत्येकस्मिन्नेव पशावादीमानेऽप्रियं भवति किमु बहुषु तन्मादिषां तन्न प्रियं तदेतन्मनुष्या विषः ॥ १० ॥

Verily in the beginning this was Brahman, that Brahman knew (its) Self only, saying, 'I am Brahman.' From it all this sprang. Thus, whatever Deva was awakened (so as to know Brahman), he indeed became that Brahman ; and the same with Ṛṣis and men. The Ṛṣi Vāmadeva saw and understood it, singing, 'I was Manu (moon), I was the sun.' Therefore, now also he who thus knows that he is Brahman, becomes all this, and even the Devas cannot prevent it, for he himself is their Self.

Now if a man worships another deity, thinking the deity is one and he another, he does not know. *He is like a beast for the Devas. For verily, as many beasts nourish a man, thus does every man nourish the Devas.* If only one beast is taken away, it is not pleasant ; how much more when many are taken. Therefore, it is not pleasant to the Devas that men should know this.

The sense is this. It is not possible to eat the soul as food ; therefore, the soul becoming the food of the Devas means that it is a source of enjoyment or satisfaction to the Devas ; and the word *food* is used in a figurative sense. In fact we find the use of the word *food* in this sense, in sentences like the following : "The Vaiśyas are the food of the Kings, the cattle are the food for the Vaiśyas," where the word food is evidently used in a metaphorical sense, and means 'the source of enjoyment ; for the King derives the greatest part of his revenue from the Vaiśyas (the great agricultural and mercantile class) ; while the source of the wealth of the Vaiśyas is their cattle.

If the word *food* were to be taken in its literal sense, then all the rules about sacrifices like Jyotiṣṭoma and the rest, would be useless. If the Devas were to eat the souls, that go to the lunar world, why would men then exert themselves to go there, and why would they perform sacrifices like Jyotiṣṭoma and the rest by which they reach that world.

Hence, the conclusion is that the *soul* goes to the other world enveloped by permanent atoms, (in order to *serve* the Devas).

*Adhikaraṇa II—Does the soul come back on earth with a portion of its Karmas or after totally exhausting all its Karmas ?*

*Viśaya* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (V., 10. 5), we find the following text after “But they who live in a village sacrificing, etc.,” which describes the method of return from the heaven-world, of those who go there by the Pitṛyâna path.

तस्मिन्यावत्संपातमुषित्वाऽथैतमेवध्वानं पुनर्निवर्त्तन्ते यथैतमाकाशमाकाशादायुं वायुर्भूत्वा धूमो भवति धूमो-  
भूत्वाऽन्नं भवति ॥ ५ ॥

Having dwelt there, till their (good) works are consumed, they return again that way as they came, to the ether, from the ether to air. Then the sacrificer, having become air, becomes smoke, having become smoke he becomes mist.

अन्नं भूत्वामेषो भवति मेधो भूत्वा प्रवर्षेन तद्वद् व्रीहियवा ओषधिवनस्पतयस्त्रिलमाषा इति जायन्तेऽतौ  
वैलेतु दुर्निष्पतरं यो यो ह्यन्नमन्ति यो रेतः मिञ्चन्ति तद्भूय एव भवति ॥ ६ ॥

Having become mist, he becomes a cloud ; having become a cloud, he rains down. Then he is born as rice and corn, herbs and trees, sesamum and beans. From thence the escape is beset with most difficulties. For whoever the persons may be that eat the food, and beget offspring, he henceforth becomes like unto them.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is the soul returning from heaven accompanied by any remainder of its works or does it descend having exhausted all its Karma ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : It returns having *fully* enjoyed the fruits of its Karmas, and without any remainder. The words ‘Yāvat-sampātam’ in the above text show, that they do not return till *all* their works are consumed. Another text also shows that when the *end* of the Karma is reached, then the soul returns from heaven. That text is of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 6.).

तदेव श्लोको भवति ॥ तदेव सक्तः सह कर्मयैति लिङ्गं मनो यत्न निष्कृतस्य ॥ प्राप्यान्तं कर्मणस्तस्य  
यत्किंचिद् करोत्ययम् तस्माद्धोमात्पुनरैत्यस्मै लोकाय कर्मण इति नु कामश्च मानोऽयामयमानोऽयामो निष्काम  
आप्तकाम आत्मकामो न तस्य गणा उत्कामन्ति न ह्येवमन्वक्षाप्येति ॥

And here there is this verse : “To whatever object a man’s own mind is attached, to that he goes strenuously together with his deed ; and having obtained the *end* (the

last results) of *whatever deed* he does here on earth, he returns again from that world (which is the temporary reward of his deed) to this world of action.

So much for the man who desires. But as to the man who does not desire, who, not desiring, freed from desires, or desires the Self only, his vital spirits do not depart elsewhere,—being Brahman, he goes to Brahman.

Here also the words ‘Antaṁkarmanāḥ’ show that *all* Karmas are exhausted, before the soul returns to earth. Therefore, the descent of the soul is without any remainder. The word ‘Sampāta’ means literally Karma, that which carries one to Svarga Loka, (‘Sampātante anone svar-galokam iti sampātaḥ’). The word Anuśaya means that part of the Karma which remains over and above the part enjoyed in heaven, and which causes experiences in another life, (‘Anuśete kartāram phala-bhogāya’). Hence it follows, that when the fruit of entire Karma has been enjoyed, there is no remainder which can follow the soul, and start a new series of experiences.

*Siddhānta* : The soul, in its descent from heaven, comes with a remainder of its Karmas, namely, that portion of it which is not exhausted in heaven world, and for which the proper place of fruition is the lower world. This is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 8.

कृतान्तयेऽनुशयवान् दृष्टस्मृतिभ्याम् ॥ ३ । २ । २ ॥

कृत Kṛta, of what is done, of the Karma. अन्त्ये Atyaye, at the end, at the exhaustion. अनुशयवान् Anuśayavān, with a remainder of the (Karma). दृष्टस्मृतिभ्याम् Dr̥ṣṭa-smṛtibhyām, from Śruti and Smṛti

8. The soul returns on earth with a remainder of the Karmas, as is proved by the Smṛti and Śruti texts.—299.

COMMENTARY

The fruits of Karmas, like sacrifices and the rest, which were performed with the object of attaining ‘the heaven world, and enjoying happiness there, are *entirely* exhausted in heaven. Then the body of enjoyment, which the soul had assumed in the Chandraloka, (literally, the world of gladness) is burnt up in the fire of grief, caused by the coming approach of the fall to the earth ; and the soul returns with the *remainder* of Karmas other than the good ones. The heaven-carrying Karmas called Sampāta (literally, heaven-soothing energy), are all exhausted in their entirety. But there are many good and bad deeds, besides the Sampāta works, performed by the soul. Those Karmas are the Anuśaya or remainder, with which the soul returns. This we find from the very text of the same Chhândogya Upaniṣad in the next verse (V., 10. 7):



तद य इह रमणीयचरणा अभ्याशो ह यत् ते रमणीयां योनिमापद्येरन् ; ब्राह्मण्योनिं वा वैश्ययोनिं वा । अथ ये इह कपूयचरणा अभ्याशो ह यत् कपूयां योनिमापद्येरन् श्वयोनिं वा शूद्रयोनिं वा चाण्डालयोनिं वा ॥

Those quickly falling souls, whose conduct has been good, will indeed attain some good birth, the birth of a Brāhmaṇa, or Kṣatriya, or a Vaiśya. But those quickly falling souls whose conduct has been evil, will indeed attain an evil birth, the birth (of a keeper) of a dog or of a hog, or a Chāṇḍāla.

The word 'Ramaṇīya-charaṇa' means works which are Ramaṇīya or good, that is to say, the remainder of works which is good. If the remainder of the work is good, it is called 'Ramaṇīya-charaṇa.' The word 'Abhvyāśa' means the quick-comer and is derived from the root 'As' with the affix 'Kvip' preceded by the proposition of 'Abhi.' The word 'Ha' means indeed, 'Yat' means when. The following Smṛti text is also to the same effect :

इह पुनर्भवे ते उभयशेषाभ्यां निविशन्ति

They enter into this world with the remainder of both their good and bad works in order to reincarnate.

Hence it follows that the soul descends with a remainder.

The word 'Yāvat-sampātam' does not mean the exhaustion of all Karmas, but the exhaustion of the heaven-mounting energy, the energy that took the soul to heaven, and which is exhausted in heaven-world by the enjoyment of unalloyed bliss.

In the next Sūtra the author shows the peculiar mode of descent of these souls.

SŪTRA III., 1. 9.

यथेतमनेवं च ॥ ३ । १ । २ ॥

यथा Yathā, as. इतम् Itam, gone, went. अनेवम् Anevam, not thus, by different steps. च Cha, and.

9. The soul descends partly by the same path as it ascended and partly by a different path.—300.

COMMENTARY

The soul, returning from the Chandra-world, with a remainder of its work, does so by the path it went but not wholly in that way, but by a different way also. The ascent takes place by the following stages : smoke, night, etc., as mentioned in the following verses of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, V., 10. 3 and 4.

अथ य इमे ग्राम इष्टापूर्ते दत्तमित्युपासते ते धूममभिसम्भवन्ति धूमाद्रग्निं रात्रेरपरपक्ष्मपरपक्षाथान्वह-  
दक्षिणेति मासस्ताञ्जैरे संवत्सरमभिप्राप्नुवन्ति ॥ ३ ॥

But they who living in a village practise (a life of) sacrifices, works of public utility, and alms, they go to the smoke, from smoke to night, from night to the dark half of the moon, from the dark half of the moon to the six months when the sun goes to south. But they do not reach the year.

मासेभ्यः पितृलोकं पितृलोकादाकाशमाकाशान्द्रमसमेव सोमो राजा तदेवानामन्नं तं देवा भक्षयन्ति ॥ ४ ॥

From the months they go to the world of the fathers, from the world of the fathers to the ether, from the ether to the moon. That is Somrāja. Here they are eaten by the Devas, yes, the Devas eat them.

The method of descent, given in the next verse, shows that it agrees to a certain extent with the way of ascent, namely, so far as smoke and ether are concerned, for these two are common to both the ascending and descending paths. But on the descending line, there is no mention of the night or the dark half of the moon and the rest. On the other hand, there is the additional mention of the cloud, the rain and the rest. This shows that the journey on the descending path, is partly by the same road as the soul ascended, and partly by a different road.

SŪTRA III., 1. 10.

चरणादिति चेत् नोपलक्षणाथेति कार्ष्णाजिनिः ॥ ३ । १ । १० ॥

चरणात् Charaṇāt, through conduct. इति Iti, thus, so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, no, not. तत् Tat, that. उपलक्षणाथं Upalakṣaṇārthā, meant to imply, meant to connote. इति Iti, so, thus. कार्ष्णाजिनिः Kārṣṇājiniḥ, (says, holds, thinks) Kārṣṇājini.

10. If it be objected, that the birth of the re-incarnating soul is determined by its conduct, and not by the remainder of its unexhausted Karmas, we say it is not so, for according to Kārṣṇājini the word 'Charaṇa' or 'conduct' is illustrative of Karmas not exhausted in the heaven-world.—301.

#### COMMENTARY

*Objection :* An objector says, it is not right to say that the soul gets a particular birth on account of the remainder of its unexhausted Karmas, when it falls from heaven. The words 'Ramaṇīya-charaṇa' and 'Kapūya-charaṇa,' generally translated as 'good conduct' and 'bad conduct,' show that the birth is regulated by conduct and character, and not by unexhausted Karmas. The word 'Charaṇa' (conduct) and

'Anuśaya' 'unexhausted Karma or the remainder,' are not synonymous. In fact, we find the word Karma and Charaṇa used in different senses. In Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, the re-birth is said to be regulated by Karma and Charaṇa both, for the words used there are 'Yathākāri' (as one behaves). Therefore, Karma or act (special performance of ritualistic acts) and Āchāra or conduct (observance of the general rules of good conduct) are different things and have different significance and are differently employed in language.

Though the word 'Anuśaya' means the remainder of unexhausted Karmas and 'Charaṇa' means 'conduct,' yet it is not a serious objection to their denoting the same thing. For the text about 'Charaṇa' is illustrative of remainder of Karmas and the word 'Charaṇa' is used there in a larger sense than the ordinary. This is the opinion of the sage Kārṣṇājini. According to him, the word 'Charaṇa' is used in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (V., 10. 7), as connoting by implication Karmas or ritualistic works. Because, it is a well known maxim of the Śāstras, that Karmas or sacrificial works are the causes of everything that we see, including good conduct, etc.

#### SŪTRA III., 1. 11.

अनर्थक्यमिति चेन्न तदपेक्षत्वात् ॥ ३ । १ । ११ ॥

अनर्थक्यम् Anarthakyaṃ, purposelessness, it is purposeless. इति Iti, thus, as. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. तत् Tat, that, (conduct). अपेक्षत्वात् Apekṣatvāt, on account of the dependence, because it depends on that.

11. If Karma be the cause of all objects, then good conduct would be purposeless. It would not be so, we reply, because the right to perform Karmas is dependent upon good conduct.—302.

#### COMMENTARY

An objector says: Character and conduct would not regulate re-birth, if the due performance of sacrificial works be the cause of all that happens to a man. To this, we reply, that the rules enjoining good conduct are not useless, because the right to perform sacrifices is itself dependent upon the possession of good conduct. A person devoid of good conduct is not entitled to perform those works. As says a Smṛti "A person who does not perform his daily prayers, and is always impure, is unfit for all religious works." This being so, religious works are fruitful in the case of that person only who possesses good conduct.

Therefore, by the word conduct is to be understood Karma here. Thus the opinion of Kârṣṇājini is that the word 'Charaṇa' of the text implies Karma.

SŪTRA III., 1. 12.

सुकृतदुष्कृतएवेति तु वादरिः ॥ ३ । १ । ११ ॥

सुकृत. Sukṛta, good or righteous deeds. दुष्कृतेः Duṣkṛte, and bad or unrighteous deeds. एव Eva, only. इति Iti, thus. तु Tu, but. वादरिः Bādariḥ, (says or thinks) Bādari.

12. But Bādari is of opinion that the phrases 'Ramaṇīya-charaṇa' and 'Kapūya-charaṇa' mean good and evil works only.—303.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'but' is employed in the Sūtra in order to set aside the view of Kârṣṇājini mentioned above. Bādari is of opinion that by the word 'Charaṇa' is meant here good and bad deeds. In the phrases like 'Punyaṃ karma âcharati,' the verb Âchâra takes for its object the word Karma. Therefore, the word 'Charaṇa,' means Karma. When it is possible to give to a word its principal meaning, it is not desirable to interpret it in a figurative sense. The word Charaṇam, Anuṣṭhānam, and Karma are synonymous. Good conduct is also a particular kind of Karma only.

*Note :* Every holy work enjoined by the scripture is technically a Karma. Good conduct is also enjoined by scriptures, sometimes, by direct texts and sometimes by implication, and thus it may also be called Karma in the broader sense of the word.

Though Âchâra and Karma in this view are one, yet they are spoken of sometimes as different, on the maxim of "Kuru-Pāṇḍavas." Though the Pāṇḍavas were also Kurus yet in the phrase Kurus and Pāṇḍavas the word Kuru is used in a narrower sense. The force of the word *only* in this Sūtra is to indicate that this is the opinion of the author of the Sūtras. The conclusion is that since by the word Charaṇa is mentioned a particular kind of Karma, therefore, the soul descends with a remainder of its Karmas.

*Adhikarāṇa III.—Do the evil-doers also go to the Chandra-loka ?*

It was mentioned above that those who perform sacrifices and so on, go to the moon-world and descend from it with the remainder of their works. Now is discussed the question, whether the sinners, who do not

perform any holy works, also go to the Moon-world, and what is their method of ascent and descent ? In the Īśāvāsya Upaniṣad, verse 3, it is said :

असुर्या नाम ते लोका अन्धेन तमसावृताः ॥ तँ एते प्रेत्याभिगच्छन्ति ये के चात्महनो जनाः ॥३॥

There are the worlds of the Asuras, covered with blind darkness. These who have destroyed their self go after death to those worlds.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt—Do the sinners go to the Moon-world or do they go to the Yama-loka ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the evil-doers also go to the world of gladness. The author summarises their view in the next Sūtra which is really a Pūrvapakṣa Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 13.

अनिष्टादिकारिणामपि च श्रुतम् ॥ १२ ॥

अनिष्टादिकारिणाम् Anīṣṭādīkārīṇām, of those who do not perform sacrifices. अपि Api, also, च Cha, and, श्रुतम् Śrutam, stated in the Śruti, declared by scripture.

13. The scripture declares that the non-performer of sacrifices and so on, also go to the world of gladness.—304.

COMMENTARY

*Objection* : The scripture declares the ascent to the world of gladness even of those persons who are non-performers of sacrifices and so on, just like those who perform these works. In the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad (I., 2), it is declared that all go to the Chandra-loka.

स होवाच ये वै के चास्माद्धोकात्प्रयन्ति चन्द्रमसमेव ते सर्वे गच्छन्ति ॥

All who depart from this world (or this body) go to the Moon.

The world *all* shows that it is a universal proposition, without any qualifications. Since *all* who die, must go to the world of gladness, it follows that the *sinners* also go there. This being so, the above text of the Īśāvāsya Upaniṣad must be interpreted as a *threat*, in order to make men desist from evil deeds : for there is no such place like the land of the Asuras.

If this be so, then what is the difference between the sinners and the holy men, for both go equally to the land of joy, after their death ? Both have the same fruit. To this we reply, there is a vast difference in their conditions. The sinners in the world of joy, do not experience any happiness (because they have not got the vehicles to enjoy that world), they remain there in a state of swoon.

*Siddhānta* : The sinners do not go to the Moon-world, but to the world of punishment, as is shown by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 14.

संयमनेत्वनु भूयेतरेषामारोहावरोहौ तद्गतिदर्शनात् ॥ ३ । १ । १४ ॥

संयमने Saṁyamane, in or after the punishment (of Yama) in hell. तु but, further. अनुभूय Anubhūya, having experienced. इतरेषाम् Itareṣām, of the others, (i.e., of those that do not perform sacrifices). आरोहावरोहौ Arohāvarohau, ascent and descent (i.e., coming to worldly existence and going to still nether regions). तत्र Tat, of them. गति Gati, (about their) courses. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, owing to or from the Scripture.

14. But of the others (namely, sinners) the going is to the city of reform. Having suffered there, they come down on earth. Such is their ascent and descent. And this is the path described in the Scriptures—305.

COMMENTARY

The word 'but' indicates the setting aside of the Pūrvapakṣa. Of the others who do not perform holy works and the rest, going is to the city of Yama called Saṁyamana. There having suffered the punishment inflicted by Yama, they come back here again—such is the nature of their ascent and descent. How do you know this? Because of the following text of the Kāṭha Upaniṣad, (I., 2. 6) :

“न साम्प्रदायः प्रतिमिति बालम्प्रमाद्यन्तं वित्तमोहेन मूढम् । अयं लोको नास्ति पर इति मानी पुनः-  
पुनर्विशमापयते मे ॥ ६ ॥

The way to the supreme Liberation does not appear to the child deluded by the illusion of wealth and acting carelessly. He who thinks that this world only exists and not the other, falls again and again under my control.

This shows that the souls of sinners go to the world of Yama and are there punished by him.

SŪTRA III. 1. 15.

स्मरन्ति च ॥ १५ ॥

स्मरन्ति Smaranti, they remember, declare in the Smṛtis. च Cha, and.

15. The Smṛtis also declare the same fate of the sinners.  
—306.

COMMENTARY

In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa it is thus mentioned.

तत्र तत्र पतन् आन्तो मूर्च्छितः पुनरुत्थितः । पथापापीयसा नीतस्तरसायमसादनम् ।

They are quickly carried to the abode of Yama, by the path of the sinners, on which they travel with great pains, constantly rising and falling, tired and swooning.

In another verse it is said :

सर्वे चेते वशंयान्ति यमस्य भगवन् ।

All these sinners come under the control of Yama, O Lord.

Sages thus declare that the sinners come under the jurisdiction of Yama.

SŪTRA III., 1. 16.

अपि सप्त ॥ १६ ॥

अपि Api, also, moreover. सप्त Sapta, the seven (the hells)

16. Also according to the Smṛti the Hells are seven.—307.

रौरवोऽथमहाश्चेव बह्वैर्वेतरणी तथा । कुम्भीपाक इतिप्रोक्तान्यनित्यनरकानि तु ॥

तामिस्रश्चान्धतामिस्त्रो द्वौ नित्यौ सम्प्रकीर्त्तितौ । इतिसप्तप्रधानानि बलीयरतूत्तरोत्तरम् ॥

Thus the Bhārata : "The temporary Hells are said to be Raurava, Mahāraurava, Vanhi, Vaitaraṇi and Kumbhipāka ; and the two eternal Hells are called Darkness and the Blind in Darkness. These are the seven chief hells in the ascending order of horribleness. By regularly going through these only, ascent or descent takes place."

Thus seven Hells are declared in the Smṛti to be the place of punishment for the sinners. They go to those places and not to the land of Joy. The force of the word also in the Sūtra is to include all those other Hells mentioned in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa at the end of the fifth Skandha, where twenty hells are described.

If Yama has jurisdiction in Hell to punish all the sinners, does it not contradict the rule that all power belongs to the Lord, and that He punishes and gives rewards ? The answer to this objection is given in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 17.

तत्तापितद्व्यपापादविरोधः ॥ १७ ॥

तत्र Tatra, there (in those hells). अपि Api, also. तद् Tad, of those (the others, the Jīvas in hell) or of Him. व्यापाराद् Vyâpârât, on account of activity, guidance. अविरोधः Avirodhaḥ, no contradiction.

17. There is no contradiction because His activity is present there also.—308.

COMMENTARY

The saying that the Lord is the punisher is not contradicted by the fact that Yama and the rest are the actual inflictors of punishment. They

are guided by the command of the Lord, in the act of punishment. It is a well-known fact in the Purāṇas, that Yama and others punish the sinners, under the command of the Lord.

An objector says : It may be possible for the sinners also to ascend to the world of Joy, after having expiated for their sins by suffering punishment at the hands of Yama. This must be so, because the Kauṣītakī Upaniṣad uses the word *all*, when it says : "All who depart from this world go to the land of Joy." This view is set aside by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 18.

विद्याकर्मणोस्त्वितिप्रकृतत्वात् ॥ ३ । १ । १८ ॥

विद्या Vidyā, of knowledge. कर्मणोः Karmanoh, and of Karma of action. तु Tu, only, but, इति Iti, as, so. प्रकृतत्वात् Prakṛtatvāt, on account of these being the topics.

18. But the sinners never go to the world of Joy, because the topic relating to the two paths in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is confined to men of knowledge and men of work and has no reference to sinners.—309.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'But' sets aside the view propounded by the objector. The word 'Not' is to be read into the Sūtra from the preceding Sūtra (III., 1 11). The sinners never go to the world of Joy, because the two paths Devayāna and Pitryāna are trod by two sorts of men, and by none other. Men of knowledge go by the path of the Devas to the world of the Gods, and men of work go by the path of the Fathers to the land of Joy. The Chhândogya Upaniṣad (V., 10. 1) declares that men of knowledge go by the path of the Devas ; while V., 10. 3 declares that men who perform sacrifices go by the path of the Fathers. Thus the world of Joy which is reached by the path of the Fathers is meant only for those who living in a village practise a life of sacrifices, works of public utility and alms. It is not meant for those who do not perform sacrifices. This being so, the word '*All*' in the Kauṣītakī Upaniṣad (L, 2) must be interpreted in a restricted sense, namely, *all* those persons who perform sacrifices go to the Moon.

If the sinners do not go to the world of Moon, then no new body can be produced in their case ; because, there is no fifth oblation possible in their case, and the fifth oblation is dependent on one's going to the



Moon. Therefore, all must go to the Moon, in order to get new embodiment. This objection is answered by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 19.

न तृतीये तथोपलब्धेः ॥ ३ । १ । १६ ॥

न Na, not, no. तृतीये Tṛtiye, in the third. तथा Tathâ, so, such, thus. उपलब्धेः Upalabdheḥ, it being perceived or seen to be.

19. The fifth oblation is not necessary in the case of those who go to the third place, because it is thus declared in the Scriptures.—310.

COMMENTARY

Those who go to the "third" place, do not depend on the fifth oblation for getting a new body. Why do we say so ? Because it is thus perceived in the Scriptures. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad Pravâhaṇa Jaibali puts this question to Śvetaketu : "Do you know why that world never becomes full ?" In answer to this question he says (Chhândogya, V., 10. 8.): "On neither of these two ways those smaller creatures (flies, worms, etc.) are continually returning of whom it may be said live and die. Theirs is a third place. Therefore, that world never becomes full." Those creatures who do not go either by the path of Devayâna or of Pitṛyâna, are the small creatures, who are classed as insects, mosquitoes, etc. They return by a different path, and their return is very quick. About them it is said "live and die." That is to say, these small creatures are continually being born and are dying. This constitutes the third place. The sinners are called small creatures because they assume the bodies of gnats, insects, etc. Their place is called the "third" place, because it is neither the Brahma-loka, nor the Dyu-loka. Therefore, those who are not entitled to go by the path of the Devas to Brahma-loka, because they do not possess knowledge, nor are entitled to go by the path of the Fathers, because they have not performed sacrificial works, are the pitiable creatures who are born as mosquitoes, gnats, etc. They constitute a third class. Hence the Heaven-world never becomes full, because these sinners never go there. The origination of their bodies is in the third plane, the fifth oblation is not necessary in their case.

SŪTRA III., 1. 20.

स्मर्यतेऽपि च लोके ॥ २० ॥

स्मर्यते Smaryate, is recorded, is said in the Smṛtis. अपि च Api cha, and, as well as, moreover. लोके Loke, in the world,

20. The Smṛtis record that in this world also the fifth oblation is not necessary in their case.—311.

## COMMENTARY

In the Smṛtis there are accounts of some holy persons being born without the fifth oblation. The getting of body by the fifth oblation is the usual course of nature. But holy men like Droṇa, etc., were born without a mother and Dhr̥ṣṭadyumna, etc., without a father. In their case the number of oblations was incomplete. It is possible that an embodiment may take place without passing through the five oblations or stages mentioned in the Chhândogya. In other words, sexual generation is not a universal law of nature, for we see exceptions to it in the cases of lower creatures; and in the cases of some specially meritorious human beings like Droṇa, Dhr̥ṣṭadyumna.

SŪTRA III., 1. 21.

दर्शनाच्च ॥ २१ ॥

दर्शनाच्च Darśanât, on account of direct perception, or being seen. च Cha, and.

21. And it is seen that beings originate independently of sexual union, and the Scriptures so describe it.—312.

## COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI, 3. 1), we find three origins mentioned with regard to all beings :

तेषां खलु एतेषां भूतानां त्रीण्येव बीजानि भवन्त्ययद्वजं जीवजगुद्भिज्जमिति ॥

Of these beings verily there are three sources only (namely, the Fire, the Water and the Earth). All living beings are produced either from an egg, or are viviparous, or are produced by fission.

Here the heat-born and the plants are mentioned as originating without sexual union, and so the fifth oblation is not absolutely necessary to procreate the body. It thus follows that procreation by sexual union is possible in the case of those Jivas only who ascend to the world of Moon, and descend therefrom to take up a human birth. But those whose Karma is not such as to take them to the Moon-world, their re-birth takes place in lower organisms, without the fifth oblation. In their case the re-birth may take place from mere water without the fifth oblation. In the Scriptures we do not find any prohibition to the contrary.

But—says an objector—we do not find any mention in the text quoted by you of beings originating from heat. It only mentions three kinds of

reproduction, namely egg-born live-born, and born by fission. This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 22.

तृतीयशब्दावरोधः संशोकजस्य ॥ ३ । १ । २२ ॥

तृतीय Trtiya, the third. शब्द Śabda, term, or word of sense. अवरोधः Avarodhaḥ, description, including. संशोकजस्य Samśokajasya, of that which springs from heat, on account of the feeling of horror.

22. The heat-born is included in the third word (namely, Udbhijjam of the above text.)—313.

COMMENTARY

In the third word Udbhijjam is included the sweat-born or the heat-born also. The word Udbhijjam literally means born by bursting through; and it applies (to the plants, because they burst through the earth, and to the heat-born also, for they burst through water). Thus the origin of both is similar, because both are born by bursting through. The difference between them consists only in the fact that the plants are permanently rooted to the soil, while the heat-born are moving creatures. It is looking to this characteristic of locomotion or its absence that they are differently classified. But if the method of reproduction be taken as the basis of classification, then the plants and the heat-born may be put in the same category, for both reproduce by fission. Thus the settled conclusion is that those who do not perform sacrifices and so on, do not go to the land of Joy.

*Adhikaraṇa. IV.—The soul on its descent from the Moon-world does not become identified with its temporary abode.*

It has been shown above that those who perform sacrifices and the rest, go to the world of Moon, and having dwelt there till their works are consumed, return to this earth with a remainder of the Karmas (Anuśaya); and accompanied by the permanent atoms (Bhūta sūkṣma). The method of this descent is given there (Chhândogya, V., 10. 5) thus :

Having dwelt there, till their works are consumed, they return again that way as they came, to the ether; from the ether to the air. Then the sacrificer, having become air, becomes smoke; having become smoke, he becomes mist; having become mist, he becomes a cloud; having become a cloud, he rains down. Then he is born as rice and corn, herbs and trees, sesamum and beans. From thence the escape is beset with most difficulties. For whoever the persons may be that eat the food, and beget offspring, he henceforth becomes like unto them.

This passage shows that on its descent, the soul becomes ether, air, etc.

*Doubt* : Does this "becoming ether, etc.," mean becoming absolutely ether, etc., or attaining similarity with it ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that becoming ether, etc., means attaining identity with ether, etc. It does not mean merely getting similarity with it. If it meant similarity, then the passage would require to be explained metaphorically, and by Lakṣaṇā. It is a maxim of interpretation that Lakṣaṇā should be avoided as far as possible. The result is that the soul, in its descent, does absolutely become identical with ether, air, etc.

*Siddhānta* : The soul does not become identically ether, etc., but becomes similar to them only, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 23.

तत्साभाव्यापत्तिरूपत्तेः ॥ ३ । १ । २३ ॥

तत् Tat, with those, the others. साभाव्य Sābhāvya, being similar, similarity, a similar state. आपत्तिः Āpattiḥ, attaining, entering into. उपपत्तेः Upapattēḥ, there being a reason or possibility, it being reasonable or possible.

23. The descending soul enters into similarity of being with ether and so on ; since there is a reason for this.  
—314.

#### COMMENTARY

"Becoming ether, etc.," means getting similarity with these. Why do we say so ? There is a reason for it. The astral body (Samarāja) assumed by the soul in the Chandra-loka was taken for the sake of enjoying the pleasures of that world : that astral body (literally, the body of water) melts away like ice under the rays of the burning sun ; and when the Karma is exhausted, that body is evaporated by the fire of grief, at the prospect of impending fall ; and thus the soul becomes disembodied like ether and then it comes under the control of air, and then it becomes united with smoke and the rest. This is a more reasonable construction to put on the above passage. For it is not possible for souls to become ether, etc., for one abstance cannot become another. And if a soul did really become ether, etc., then there would be no possibility of descent for it.

*Adhikaraṇa V.—The soul does not stay long  
in ether up to rain.*

*Doubt* : Next arises the question : Does the soul in its descent through ether down to rain, stay at each stage for a very long time, or passes through it quickly ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : There being nothing to define the time of its stay, it remains indefinitely long at each stage. This *Pūrvapakṣa* is set aside by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 1. 24.

नातिचिरेण विशेषात् ॥ ३ । १ । २४ ॥

न Na, not. अतिचिरेण Atichireṇa, very long after. विशेषात् Viśeṣāt, on account of special (inference), it being distinctly stated.

24. The soul does not stay very long in its stages through ether up to rain, on account of special statement to that effect.—315

COMMENTARY

The descent of soul through ether and the rest, is accomplished in a very short time, because there is a special inference to that effect. In the sentence following the description of the passing of the soul from ether up to rain, occurs the statement that the soul becomes rice or grain or the like. And the special statement is made that the passing out of that state is beset with great difficulties. The exact words are :

Then he is born as rice and corn, herbs and trees, sesamum and beans. From thence the escape is beset with most difficulties.

The staying in rice and corn, etc., is for a comparatively long period ; from which we infer that the soul's stay in the preceding stages is short. The escape from the condition of rice, corn, etc., being specially stated to be difficult, it follows that the escape from the condition of ether up to rain is not so difficult and hence quick.

*Adhikaraṇa VI.—Human soul is but a co-tenant with  
plants and animals, but does not become so.*

*Viśaya* : After rain, the Śruti declares that the soul is born here as rice and corn, herbs and trees, sesamum and beans.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt—Are these souls descending with a remnant of their Karmas, themselves born as rice, corn, etc., or do they merely cling to those plants, etc.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The souls are born as rice, corn, etc., and do not merely cling to them.

*Siddhānta* : The souls are not born as rice and corn, etc., literally, as is declared in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 25.

अन्याधिष्ठिते पूर्ववदभिलापात् ॥ ३ । १ । २५ ॥

अन्य Anya, by another soul. अधिष्ठिते Adhiṣṭhite, in what is occupied. पूर्ववत् Pūrvavat, like the previous, in the manner already explained. अभिलापात् Abhīlāpāt, on account of the scriptural statements.

25. The souls merely cling to plants, which are animated by other souls, and do not become plants, because the statement here is similar to that in the previous cases of ether and so on.—316.

COMMENTARY

The souls merely cling to the bodies of plants, etc., and do not themselves become these, because these plants, etc., have animating Jīvas of their own. The souls are not born there, for the purpose of retributive enjoyment. Why do we say so ? Because the present statement is just like the previous one about the soul's becoming ether and the rest. As the souls do not actually become ether and the rest, but are merely in contact with them, and are in a state of perfect dormancy, without enjoying pleasure and pain, so they are merely in contact with rice, corn, etc., without experiencing pleasure and pain. They are perfectly inactive in that state, and have no experiencing. Where the text intends to declare that the soul experiences pleasure and pain as a result of its Karmas, it uses a different phraseology, as in verse 7 of the Chhândogya, V., 10 :

तद्वत् रमणीयचरणा अभ्याशोदयते रमणीयां योनिमापधेरन्नाह्वययोनिं वा क्षत्रिययोनिं वैश्ययोनिं वाथ यद्वत् कपूय चरणा अभ्याशोदयते कपूयां योनिमापधेरन् श्वयोनिं वा शूकरयोनिं वा चागडालयोनिं वा ॥ ७ ॥

Those whose conduct has been good, will quickly attain some good birth, the birth of a Brāhmaṇa, or a Kṣatriya, or a Vaiśya. But those whose conduct has been evil, will quickly attain an evil birth, the birth of a (keeper of a) dog, of a (keeper of a) hog, or a Chāṇḍāla.

Therefore, the souls descending from the Moon-world merely cling to rice, corn, etc., and are not literally born as such.

SŪTRA III., 1. 26

अशुद्धमिति चेन्न शब्दात् ॥ २६ ॥

अशुद्धम् Aśuddham, impure, hurtful, unholy. इति Iti, so, thus. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, no. शब्दात् Śabdāt, on the ground of the Scripture, on account of the Word.

26. If it be said that every sacrificial act is unholy, we say it is not so, because the scripture declares it so.—  
317.

## COMMENTARY

*Objection* : An objector says it is wrong to assert that the descending soul merely clings to the bodies of rice, corn, etc., which are themselves animated by other souls, and that they are not born there for the purpose of retributive enjoyment ; for there *are* no Karmas left to be enjoyed in the bodies of plants, etc. Some Karmas are left, whose proper place of retributive enjoyment is the body of plants. All Karmas are of two sorts, namely, the sacrificial Karmas and non-sacrificial Karmas or conduct (Charaṇa). The fruit of sacrificial Karmas is not fully exhausted in the Moon-world. No sacrifice performed with the object of attaining heaven is free from a tinge of impurity. All such sacrifices require the killing of animals and cannot be said to be pure. For every killing is really a sin. The Scriptures declare “Mā himsyāt sarvā bhūtāni,” let him not kill *any* animal. This declares a universal rule. The killing of animals in sacrifices, like “Agniṣomiya” is unholy. Such a sacrifice is thus a mixed Karma. Its holy portion takes the soul to the Heaven-world, and is exhausted there *completely*. Its sinful portion causes the soul to be born as rice, corn, etc. As says Manu in XII., 9 :

शरीरजेः कर्मदोषैर्यातिस्थावरतां नरः । वाचिकैः पक्षिगृगतां मानसैरन्त्यजातिताम् ॥ ७ ॥

The soul is born as a plant owing to the sins committed by the body ; it becomes a bird or a beast for the sins of speech, and an outcaste for the mental sins.

The soul is, therefore, *actually* born as rice, corn, etc., and is not a mere co-tenant with the Jīvas of plants.

*Reply* : The objection thus raised is not valid. The sacrificial acts are not unholy, because the scriptures enjoin it. The Veda declares ‘Agniṣomiyaṃ paśum ālabheta’, “Let him sacrifice an animal sacred to Agni-ṣomau.” Since the Veda enjoins the killing of animals, it cannot be unholy. For the right or wrong, holiness or unholiness of an action, is to be learnt from the Veda alone. Therefore, those sacrifices which enjoin killing of animals must be considered to be holy and cannot be considered unrighteous, because killing of animals in sacrifices is enjoined by the Vedas. Let him not kill any animal is a general proposition, but to this there is the exception that animals may be killed in Yajñas like the Agniṣomiya sacrifice. Hence every killing is not a sin. A general proposition and an exception have different scopes, settled by usage, and so there is no conflict between them. Hence it follows that

the soul on its descent becomes rice, corn, etc., not to expiate for the sins of having killed animals in sacrifices for such killing is no sin; but it becomes rice, etc., in the sense of clinging to those plants and not really becoming plants. The soul is perfectly unconscious in these stages.

What becomes of the soul after its clinging to the plants is next mentioned.

SŪTRA III., 1. 27.

रेतः सिग्योगोऽथ ॥ ३ । १ । २७ ॥

रेतःसिक् Retahsik, the sprinkler of the seed ; one who performs the act of generating. योगः Yogaḥ, conjunction with. अथ Atha, first, or after.

27. Then the soul unites with the being who performs the act of fertilisation.—318.

COMMENTARY

After its passing through the stage of contact with plants, the soul enters the body of a person who performs the act of generation. This is mentioned in the same Upaniṣad (Chhândogya, V., 10. 6). In the same verse which mentions its becoming rice, corn, etc., it is said :

अभ्रभूत्वा मेघोभवति मेघो भूत्वा प्रवर्षति तद्ब्रवीद्वियवा ओषधिवनस्पतयस्तिलमाषा इति जायन्तेऽतो वै खलु दुर्निष्प्रपतरंयोयोद्धन्नमन्ति योरेतः सिञ्चति तद्भू एव भवति ॥ ६ ॥

Having been in the mist, he enters the cloud ; having been in the cloud, he enters the rain (and falls down). Then he is born as rice or barley, herbs or trees, sesamum or beans, etc. From this point there is constant (tantalising) rise and fall. For whoever eats the food and begets offspring (the Jīva) is there in that food and that seed.

The text literally says, for whoever the persons may be that eat the food, and beget offspring, he henceforth becomes like unto them. This does not mean that the soul really takes the form of and becomes indetical with its procreator, for one thing cannot take the form of another thing. If it were to become literally the 'Retas sik,' then there would be no possibility of its getting another body. Therefore, it must be admitted that the soul merely clings to the body of the "Retas sik" and does not become that body. This being so, the soul clings to plants, etc., in the preceding stages of plant life also. For there is no reason why it should be anything else.

SŪTRA III., 1. 28.

योनेः शरीरम् ॥ ३ । १ । २८ ॥

योनेः Yoneḥ, (after entering) the mother. शरीरम् Śarīram, (obtaining) the gross body.



28. The soul next passes from the father into the mother and then obtains the gross body.—319.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Yoneḥ' is in the ablative case in the Sūtra, but it must be construed in the accusative case here, and is governed by the participle "praviśya" understood here. The soul having left the father's body, and having entered the mother's womb, obtains a physical incarnation, in order to experience the consequences of the remaining Karmas. The family into which it is to be born is regulated by the nature of this remainder, as mentioned in Chhândogya, V., 10. 7 :

Of these those whose conduct here has been good will quickly attain some good birth, the birth of a Brāhmaṇa, or a Kṣatriya or a Vaiśya. But those whose conduct here has been evil will quickly attain an evil birth, the birth of a dog, or a hog, or a Chāṇḍāla.

Thus it has been demonstrated that the soul becomes a plant, etc., in the same sense as it becomes ether, etc. The whole object of teaching this law of reincarnation is, that the wise should realise that God alone is the highest bliss, and ought to be the sole object of quest ; and that the soul should get disgusted with this world of sorrow and try to seek the eternal bliss of the Lord.

Here ends the first Pāda of the third Adhyāya.

---

## THIRD ADHYĀYA

### SECOND PĀDA

वित्तिर्विरक्तिश्चकृताञ्जलिः पुरो

यस्याः परानन्दतनोर्वितिष्ठते ।

सिद्धिश्च सेवासमयं प्रतीक्षते

भक्तिः परेशस्य पुनातु सा जगत् ॥

May that love (Bhakti) for the Supreme Lord purify the world. He has the body of Supreme Bliss and in His Presence stand Wisdom and Dispassion with folded hands, obedient to His call ; and Occult powers are ever attendant upon Him, seeking for an opportunity to serve.

In this Pāda is described Bhakti or intense love for God, which consists in a yearning to obtain the object of desire. The object to be attained is Brahman, and in order to strengthen the soul's love towards Him, this Pāda describes the various powers of the Lord, such as His being a creator of the dream-world, His various Avatāras and their unity with Him, His essential form, His Self, His being separate from the worshipper, yet being his inmost Self, and to be obtained by Bhakti alone, His illumining both the worlds, His being all bliss, His manifestation being according to the idea of the person worshipping, His being beyond all, the giver of everything, and various other qualities like these. All these are described in this chapter. When a person desires to cultivate love, he requires to be convinced that the object of love has these qualities. When he is convinced of it, then he begins to love Him, otherwise not.

Therefore, in the beginning, the author describes the creation of the dream-world by the Lord. If any one else than the Lord was the creator of the dream-world, then the all-creatorship of Brahman would not be true ; and so far as dreams were concerned, He would not be the creator, but the Jīva or time would be the creator. If Brahman be a partial creator only, then there cannot be that intense Bhakti towards Him, which the worshipper wants to cultivate. Therefore, in order to show the glory of the Lord, it is described that He is the creator of the dream-world as well.

---

### *Adhikaraṇa I.—God creates the dream-world.*

**Viśaya :** In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 3. 9-12) we have the following :

तस्य वा एतस्य पुरुषस्य द्वे एव स्थाने भवत इहञ्च परलोकस्थानञ्च सन्ध्यं तृतीयं स्वप्नस्थानं तस्मिन्सन्ध्ये स्थाने तिष्ठन्नेते उभे स्थाने पश्यतीदञ्च परलोकस्थानञ्च अथ यथाक्रमोऽयं परलोकस्थाने भवति तमाक्रममाक्रम्योभयान् पाप्मन आनन्दाञ्च पश्यति स यत्र प्रस्वपित्यस्य लोकस्य सर्वावतो मात्रामपादाय स्वयं विहृत्य स्वयं निर्माय स्वेन भाषा स्वेन ज्योतिषा प्रस्वपित्यत्रायं पुरुषः स्वयंज्योति भवति ॥ ९ ॥ न तत्र रथा न रथयोगा न पन्थानो भवन्त्यथ रथान् रथयोगान् पथः सृजते न तत्रानन्दा मुदः प्रमुदो भवन्त्यथानन्दान् मुदः प्रमुदः सृजते न तत्र वेशन्ताः पुष्करिययः स्रवन्त्यो भवन्त्यथ वेशन्ताः पुष्करिययः स्रवन्त्यः सृजते स हि कर्त्ता ॥ १० ॥ तदेतेः श्लोका भवन्ति ॥ स्वप्नेति शारीरमभिप्रहृत्यासुप्तः सुप्तानभिचाकशीति ॥ शुक्रमादाय पुनरेति स्थानं हिरण्यमयः पुरुष एकहस्तः ॥ ११ ॥ प्रायेण रक्षन्नुवर्गं कुलायं बहिष्कुत्रायादमृतश्चरित्वा । स ईयतेऽमृतो यत्र कामं हिरण्यमयः पुरुष एकहस्तः ॥ १२ ॥

And there are two states for that person, the one here in this world, the other in the other world, and as a third an intermediate state, the state of sleep. When in that intermediate state, he sees both these states together, the one here in this world, and the other in the other world. Now whatever his admission to the other world may be, having gained that admission he sees both the evils and the blessings.

And when he falls asleep, then after having taken away with him the material from the whole world, destroying and building it up again, he sleeps (dreams) by his own light. In that state the person is self-illuminated.

There are no real chariots in that state, no horses, no roads, but he himself sends forth (creates) chariots, horses and roads. There are no blessings there, no happiness, no joys, but he himself sends forth (creates) blessings, happiness and joys. There are no tanks there, no lakes, no rivers, but he himself sends forth (creates) tanks, lakes and rivers. He indeed is the maker. On this there are these verses :

"After having subdued by sleep all that belongs to the body, he, not asleep himself, looks down upon the sleeping senses. Having assumed light, he goes again to his place, the golden person, the lonely bird.

"Guarding with the breath (Prāṇa life) the lower nest, the immortal one goes wherever he likes, the golden person, the lonely bird."

**Doubt :** Now arises the doubt whether this dream-creation of chariots, etc., is the work of the human soul or the creation of the Supreme Self ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The dream is the creation of the soul, for the saying of Prajāpati in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII, 7. 1.) shows that the human soul also has the power of creating by mere will-force, and has its Saṅkalpa true, i. e., has the power of realising all its wishes.

**Siddhānta :** The human soul is not the creator of the dream-world, as is shown by the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 1.

सन्ध्ये सृष्टिराह हि ॥ ३ । २ । १ ॥

सन्ध्ये Sandhye, in the intermediate (state or sphere). सृष्टिः Sṛṣṭih, the creation. आह Āha, says (the Scripture). हि Hi, because.

1. Because the Scripture declares that in the dream-state also the creation is by the Lord—320.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Sandhya" means dream, as we find from the above passage, "and as a third an intermediate state, the state of sleep." It is called "Sandhya" or the intermediate state, because it is midway between waking and the deep sleep state ; between the "Jāgrata" and the "Suṣupti." The creation of chariots, etc., is verily by the Lord and not by the human self. Why do we say so ? Because the same text says "Sa-hi kartā," "He indeed is the maker." The sense is this, the Supreme Self creates chariots, etc., in the dream state, which exist so long as the dream lasts, and which are perceived not by all the Jivas, but by the person seeing the dream alone, and which are created as fruition of the minor works of the Jiva. In order to reward the soul for very minor Karmas, the Lord creates the dreams. The Lord possesses mysterious powers, creates by the mere force of His will and so it is possible for Him to create these dream-objects, while the human soul has no such power. In another text also the dream-creation is said to be the work of the Lord : (Kāṭha Up., IV., 4.)

स्वप्नान्तं जागरितान्तञ्चोभौ येनानुपश्यति । महान्तं विभुमात्मानं मत्वा धीरो न शोचति ॥ ४ ॥

The wise, when he knows that that by which he perceives all objects in sleep or in waking is the great Omnipresent Self, grieves no more.

The Jīva has also the power of creating by mere will-force, and is also "Satya-saṅkalpa," but only in the state of Mukti. The Mukta Jīva creates the world there, but that is not a dream-world. The Mukta Jivas, like Masters, have divine creative power, but it has nothing to do with the dream-creation.

## SŪTRA III., 2. 2.

निर्मातारञ्चैके पुत्रादयश्च ॥ ३ । २ । २ ॥

निर्मातारम् Nirmātāram, the maker. च Cha, and एके Eke, some. पुत्रादयः Putrādayaḥ, sons, etc. च Cha, and.

2. Because one class of texts declares the Lord to be the creator of the dream-world as well, as of sons and the rest.—321.

## COMMENTARY

The followers of one Śākhā, namely the Kāṭhakas, state in their text that the Supreme Lord is alone the creator of all Kāmas in the dream-state for the dreamers (Kāṭha Up., V., 8.)

य एष सुषेधु जागर्ति कामं कामं पुरुषो निर्म्ममाणः । तदेव शुक्रं तद्महा तदेवावृतमुच्यते । तस्मिँहोकाः  
श्रिताः सर्वे तदु नात्येति काञ्चन । एतद्वैतत् ॥ ८ ॥

He the Highest Person, who is awake in us while we are asleep, shaping one lovely sight after another. That indeed is the Bright, that is Brahman, that alone is called the Immortal. All words are contained in Him and no one goes beyond Him. This is that.

The term Kāma here denotes such things as sons and the like, which are *objects* of desires, and does not denote mere *desires*. It is used in this sense in the previous passage also, such as, "Ask for all Kāmas according to thy wish." (Kaṭha Up., I., 25). And that the word Kāma there means sons, etc., we infer from Kaṭha, I., 23, where we find these Kāmas described as sons and grandsons, etc. We give these three verses in the original here :

शतायुषः पुत्रपौत्रान् वृणीष्व बहुन पशुन हस्तिहिरण्यमश्वान् । भूमेर्महदायतनं वृणीष्व स्वयञ्च जीव  
शरदो यावदिच्छसि ॥ २३ ॥ एतज्जुल्यं यदि मन्यसे वरं वृणीष्व वित्तं चिरजीविकाञ्च । महाभूमौ नचिके-  
तस्त्वमेषि कामानान्त्वा कामभाजं करोमि ॥ २४ ॥

ये ये कामा दुर्लभा मर्त्यलोके सर्वान् कामान् शङ्कन्तः प्रार्थयस्व । इमा रामाः सरथाः सत्पूया  
नदीदृशा लम्भनीया मनुष्यैः । आभिर्मत्प्रत्ताभिः परिचारयस्व नचिकेतोमरणं मनुप्राप्तीः ॥ २५ ॥

Death said : Choose sons and grandsons, who shall live a hundred years, herds of cattle, elephants, gold, and horses. Choose the wide abode of the earth, and live thyself as many harvests as thou desirest.

If thou canst think of any boon equal to that, choose wealth, and long life. Be king, Nachiketas, on the wide earth. I make thee enjoyer of all desires.

Whatever desires are difficult to attain among mortals, ask for them according to thy wish ;—these fair maidens with their chariots and musical instruments,—such are indeed not to be obtained by men—be waited on by them, whom I give to thee, but do not ask me about dying.

In the Gaupavana Śruti we find the following :

एतस्माद्ध्येव पुत्रो जायते एतस्माद्भ्राते तस्माद्भार्या यदेनं पुरुषमेव स्वप्नेनाभिहन्ति ॥

From this Lord when He overpowers the soul through sleep is born verily the son (seen in dream), from Him the brother, from Him the wife.

In the next Sūtra, the author mentions the material and the means, with which the Lord creates the dream objects.

#### SŪTRA III., 2. 3.

मायामात्रं तु कात्स्न्येनानभिव्यक्तस्वरूपत्वात् ॥ ३ । २ । ३ ॥

मायामात्रम् Mâyāmātram, produced from the will of Him and with impressions (stored in the mind of the soul). तु Tu, but. कात्स्न्येन Kātsnyena, fully. अनभिव्यक्तस्वरूपत्वात् Anabhivyakta-svarūpatvāt, being destitute of tangible forms, occupying space, not being fully manifested.

3. Mâyâ or the will of the Lord is the only means through which He creates dream-objects. (They are not made of objective matter), because they are not perceptible to all persons, but are seen only by the dreamer.—322

## COMMENTARY

The mysterious Mâyâ is the only material with which the dream objects are created. They are not made of the gross elements, nor are they created by Brahmâ, the four-faced. Why do we say so? Because they do not become manifest, as objects of perception, to everyone. Thus it is demonstrated that the dream creation is the work of the Supreme Self.

*Adhikarāṇa II—The dreams are not all false.*

Next arises the question: Are the creations of dream all false or true? The *Pūrrapakṣa* maintains that the dream is altogether unreal, because it is sublated by the waking consciousness. On waking from dream one realises its unreality. This view is set aside by the next Sūtra.

## SŪTRA III., 2. 4.

सूचकश्चहि श्रुतेराचक्षते च तद्विदः ॥ ३ । २ । ४ ॥

सूचकः Sūchakaḥ, indicative, suggestive. च Cha, and. हि Hi, because श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, from Śruti. आचक्षते Āchakṣate, say, affirm. च Cha, and. तद्विदः Tadvidāḥ, those who know that.

4. The dream creation is indicative of good or evil, (hence it is not unreal). The scriptures also teach the dreams to be indicative, and the experts thereof also declare the same.—323

## COMMENTARY

The dream creation is true. The objects seen in a dream are indicative of good or bad luck, or of certain Mantras. The Scriptures teach this. Thus *Obhândogya*, V. 2. 8 and 9 :

निशिज्य क<sup>१</sup>सं चमसं वा पश्चादग्नेः संविशति चर्मणि वा स्वयिडले वा वाचंयमोऽप्रसाहः स यदि क्षियं पश्येत् समृद्धं कर्मेति विचार ॥ ८ ॥ तदेष श्लोको यदा कर्मसु काम्येषु क्षिय<sup>२</sup>स्वप्नेषु पश्यति । समृद्धिं तस्य जानीयात्स्मिन्स्वप्ननिदर्शने तस्मिन्स्वप्ननिदर्शने ॥ ९ ॥

Then having washed the Mantha vessel, which should be either of bell-metal or of wood, let him lie down behind the fire, on a skin or on a bare ground, silently and singly. If in his dreams he sees a woman, let him know this as an omen that his sacrifice has been successful.

On this there is the following verse : "If in Kāmya sacrifices, he sees a woman in his dreams, then let him know this bodes success—this vision shown him in a dream, this vision shown him in a dream."

Similarly, in the Kauśītaki Brāhmaṇa we find the following :

अथ स्वप्ने पुरुषं कृष्णं कृष्णं दन्तं पश्यति स एनं हन्ति ॥

If one sees in a dream, a black person with black teeth, then it bodes that he will kill him.

The word "Tadvid" or expert means those who know how to interpret dreams, such as Bṛhaspati and the rest. They declare that some dreams bode good, others evil. Such as dreaming that one is riding on an elephant bodes good : while if he dreams that he is riding on a donkey, it forebodes evil.

Sometimes one gets in dream Mantras, as we find from the following verse :

यादिष्टवान् यथा स्वप्ने रामरक्षां यथा हरः ।

यथा निमित्तवान् प्रातः प्रबुद्धो पुष्कौशिरः ॥

As the Lord Śiva taught Viśvāmītra (Budha Kauśika) in dream the Mantra called Rāmarakṣā, he exactly wrote it out, in the morning, when he awoke from sleep.

This shows that poems and Stotras can also be obtained in dreams.

Therefore the dream creation is as real as the waking state. Because the dream<sup>1</sup> objects indicate future true objects ; secondly because works of genius like poems, etc., are found in dreams, and remedies for diseases are prescribed therein ; and sometimes the exact object seen in dreams is seen afterwards in waking state. Such as the person who will kill one.

The author now answers the objection based on the fact that because dream consciousness is sublated by the waking consciousness, therefore all dreams are unreal.

SŪTRA III, 2. 5.

परमिध्यानात् तिरोहितं ततोऽभ्य बन्धविपर्ययो ॥ ३ । २ । ५ ॥

पर Para, of the Lord, of the highest. अभिध्यानात् Abhidhyānāt, by the will. त्व Tu, only. तिरोहितम् Tirohitam, is withdrawn or hidden. ततः Tataḥ, from that (Lord). हि Hi, for. अभ्य Asya, of this (Jiva). बन्धविपर्ययो Bandha-viparyayaḥ, bondage and release.

5. The dream consciousness is sublated by the will of the Supreme Lord alone, because from Him proceed the bondage and release of the Soul.—324

COMMENTARY

From the meditation or formative will of the Supreme Lord, proceeds the vanishing of the dream objects, like chariots, etc. The dream is not

unreal, like the illusion of silver in the shell. This is so, because the Supreme Lord is the cause of the bondage and release of the soul, as says the Śruti (Śvetāśvatara., VI., 16) :

स विश्वकृदिश्वविदात्मयोनिर्ज्ञः कालकालो गुणी सर्वविद् यः । प्रवानक्षेत्रज्ञपतिर्गुणेशः संसारमोक्षस्थिति-  
बन्धहेतुः ॥

He makes all, He knows all, the self-caused, the knower, the time of time (destroyer of time), who assumes qualities and knows everything, the master of nature and of man, the Lord of the three qualities, the cause of bondage, the existence and the liberation of the world.

He who can cause the bondage and release of the soul, can easily bring about the dream and its withdrawal for the soul. There is nothing wonderful in it. Therefore, it must be understood, that the manifestation and withdrawal of the dream-world is also from that Lord. The same idea is expressed in the following verse of the Kūrma Purāṇa :

स्वप्नादिवुद्धिकर्त्ता च तिरस्कृर्त्ता स एव च ।  
तद्विच्छया यतो ह्यस्य बन्धमोक्षौ प्रतिष्ठितौ ॥

It is He (the Lord) that makes the soul perceive the dream creation, etc., and He it is who hides them from his view; for on His will, the bondage and release of this soul depend.

Therefore, the dream creation is real and is of the Lord.

### *Adhikaraṇa III—The state of wakefulness is also created by Brahman.*

Now the author describes that the waking consciousness is also caused by the Lord and by no one else. In the Kaṭha Upaniṣad (IV., 4) we read :

स्वप्नान्तं जागरितान्तकृत्वोभौ येनावुपश्यति ।

महान्तं विभुमात्मानं मत्वा धीरो न शोचति ॥ ४ ॥

The wise, when he knows that that by which he perceives the state of the dreamless sleep (Suṣupti), and the dream state is the Great Omnipresent Self, grieves no more.

**Doubt :** Here arises the doubt : Is the waking state of the Jīva caused by the Supreme Lord or not ?

**Pūrva-pakṣa :** The waking consciousness is not caused by the Lord, because we see it dependent on time and the rest.

**Siddhānta :** The waking state is also caused by the Lord, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 6.

देहयोगाद्वा सोऽपि ॥ ३ । २ । ६ ॥

देहयोगाद्वा Deha-yogāt, from the connection with the body, the waking state.  
वा Vā, or. सः Saḥ, (that withdrawing or hiding of the dream). अपि Api, even.



6. The waking consciousness also, which is found in connection with the body, is from the Lord.—325.

COMMENTARY

The waking consciousness, which is experienced by the soul when it is in connection with the body, is also from the Supreme Lord as is mentioned in the above text of the Kāṭha Upaniṣad, and which properly translated runs as follows :

The wise, when he knows that that by which he perceives all objects in sleep or in waking, is the Great Omnipresent Self, grieves no more.

The time and the rest being inert, cannot produce anything. The word “Api” or “also” of the Sūtra indicates that the states of consciousness known as deep sleep (Suṣupti) and swoon, (Mūrchchhâ) are also created by the Lord. For the texts repeatedly declare that to Him belong the all-creative power.

*Adhikaraṇa IV—The state of deep sleep is caused also by God.*

Now is being considered the question, what is the place, abiding in which, the soul experiences deep sleep? The following are the Śruti texts relating to deep sleep (Suṣupti). One declares that deep sleep is felt when the soul is in the Nāḍis, the other, when the soul is in the pericardium, and the third when it is in Brahman. These three texts are given below. In the Chhândogya (VIII., 6. 3.) we find :

तद्यत्रैतत्सुप्तः समस्तः सम्प्रसन्नः स्वप्नं न विजानात्यासु तदा नाडीषु सुप्तो भवति तन्न कञ्चन पाप्मा  
सृशति तेजसा हि तदा सम्पन्नो भवति ॥ ३ ॥

This being so, when this Jiva sleeps, being at perfect rest and all senses withdrawn (experiencing the joy of his essential nature) and dreams no dream, then he enters (into the Lord dwelling in) these vessels and there no evil one can touch him, because he is protected by the light of the Lord.

In the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (II., 1, 19.) we read :

अथ यदा सुषुप्तो भवति यदा न कस्यचन वेदहितानाम नाड्यो दासप्ततिसहस्राणि हृदयात्पुरीततमभि-  
प्रतिष्ठन्ते ताभिः प्रलयस्य पुरीतति शेते स यथा कुमारो वा महाराजो वा महाब्राह्मणो वातिग्रीमानन्दस्य  
गत्वा शयीतेवमेवैव एतच्छेते ॥ १९ ॥

Next when he is in profound sleep, and knows nothing, there are the seventy-two thousand arteries called Hītā; which from the heart spread through the body. Through them he moves forth, and rests in the surrounding body. And as a young man, or a great king or a great Brāhmaṇa, having reached the summit of happiness, might rest, so does he when rest.

In the same (II., 1. 17.) we find :

स होवाचाजातशत्रुयत्रैव पतत्सुप्तोऽभूष एव विज्ञानमयः पुरुषस्तदेवां प्राणानां विज्ञानेन विज्ञानमादाय य-  
एषोऽन्तर्हृदय आकाशस्तस्मिच्छेते तानि यदा गृह्णात्य हैतत्पुरुषः स्वपिति नाम तद्गृहीत एव प्राणो भवति  
गृहीता वाग् गृहीतश्चक्षुर्गृहीतश्च श्रोत्रं गृहीतं मनः ॥ १७ ॥

Ajātaśatru said : When this man was thus asleep, then the intelligent person (Puruṣa), having through the intelligence of the senses (Prāṇas) absorbed within himself all intelligence, lies in the ether, which is in the heart. When he takes in these different kinds of intelligence, then it is said that the man sleeps. Then the breath is kept in, the mind is kept in.

There are many other verses like these. In the above verse the word Ākāśa means Brahman. From the above three texts we find, that the soul enjoys deep sleep when it is in those three places, namely, in the Nāḍis (arteries), in Puritat (pericardium), or in Brahman.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Are these three abiding places of the soul to be taken distributively or collectively ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says they are to be taken distributively. For when words of equal force are employed in a sentence and there is no mutual dependence between them, then the passages should be construed as stating an option. In other words, Suṣupti is experienced when the soul is in any one of those three places.

*Siddhānta* : Suṣupti is experienced by the soul abiding simultaneously in all those three places, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

#### SŪTRA III., 2. 7.

तदभावो न ङीपु तच्छ्रुतेरात्मनि च ॥ ३ । २ । ७ ॥

तद-अभावः Tad-abhāvaḥ, the absence of that (the state of dreams or wakefulness). नाङीपु Nāḍiṣu, in the Nāḍis. तत् Tat, about it. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, from the scriptural statement. आत्मनि Ātmani, in the self, or in the Lord. च Cha, and.

7. The Suṣupti, which is the absence of dream and waking consciousness, takes place in the Nāḍis, in the Self, and in the pericardium collectively, because of the scriptural statement to that effect—326.

#### COMMENTARY

By the word "and" in the Sūtra, pericardium is to be included. "Tad-abhāvaḥ" means the absence of those two, namely, the absence of wakefulness and dream. In other words, "Tad-abhāvaḥ" means the "Suṣupti" or deep sleep. This deep sleep takes place collectively in the Nāḍis, pericardium and the Lord. Why do we say so ? Because in the

scriptures all these places are mentioned as the localities in which the soul enjoys deep sleep. If it was intended that they were to be taken alternatively or optionally, then there would be partial refutation of scriptural text. We find Nāḍis and Prāṇas mentioned collectively in deep sleep. In them the soul resides in deep sleep. In the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad (IV., 19.) we find that Prāṇa also becomes united with the soul in deep sleep.

तं होवाचाजातशत्रुर्धैर्येण एतदालोकं पुरुषोऽशयिष्ठ यत्रैतदभूद्यत एतदगादिता नाम हृदयस्य नाड्यो हृदया-  
त्पुरीततमभिप्रतन्वन्ति यथा सहस्रधा केशो विपाटितस्तावदगव्यः पिङ्गलस्याग्निना तिष्ठन्ते शुक्लस्य पीतस्य  
लोहितस्येति तासु तदाभवति यदा सुप्तः स्वप्नं न कंचन पश्यत्यथास्मिन्प्राण एवैकधा भवति तथैनं वाक्  
सर्वैर्नामभिः सहाप्येति चक्षुः सर्वै रूपैः सहाप्येति श्रोत्रं सर्वैः शब्दैः सहाप्येति मनः सर्वैर्ध्यातैः सहाप्येति स  
यदा प्रविबुध्यते यथाग्नेर्ज्वलतो विस्फुलिङ्गा विप्रतिष्ठेरन्नेवमेवैतस्मादात्मनः प्राणा यथायतनं विप्रतिष्ठन्ते  
प्राणेश्वो देवा देवेश्वो लोकास्तथा चक्षुरः क्षुरध्याने दितः स्याद्विश्वंमरो वा विश्वंभरकुलाय एवमेवैक प्राज्ञ  
आत्मेदं शरीरमनुप्रविष्ट आलोमभ्य या नखेभ्यः ॥ १६ ॥

And Ajataśatru said to him : Where this person here slept, where he was, whence he thus came back, is this : the arteries of the heart called Hitā extend from the heart of the person towards the surrounding body. Small as a hair divided a thousand times, they stand full of a thin fluid of various colours, white, black, yellow, red. In these the person is when sleeping he sees no dream.

Then he becomes one with that Prāṇa alone. Then speech goes to him with all names, the eye with all forms, the ear with all sounds, the mind with all thoughts. And when he awakes, then, as from a burning fire, sparks proceed in all directions, thus from that self the Prāṇas (speech, etc.) proceed, each towards its place, from the Prāṇas, the gods ; from the gods, the worlds. And as a razor might be fitted in a razor-case, or as fire in a fire-place, even thus this conscious self enters the self of the body to the very hairs and the nails.

Nor can we have option on the strength of the maxim quoted by the Pūrvaṇpakṣin, because that maxim applies where two statements are of equal force (Tulyārtha). In the present case, there is no such equality of meaning. They do not serve the same purpose. It is only when several things may serve the same purpose equally, that an option is allowed. The case is here similar to the statement "entering by the door, he sleeps in the palace, on the couch." Here the three things—the door, the palace and the couch—are to be taken jointly and no option can be allowed as regards them, for they do not serve the same purpose. Similarly, the soul enters through the Nāḍis (which are like a door), into the palace called the pericardium, where Brahman is, and sleeps in the bosom of Brahman, which may represent the couch. Thus the Nāḍis, pericardium, and Brahman, subserving different purposes, must be taken collectively, and not separately. Therefore, Brahman alone is the direct place, resting on which, the soul enjoys deep sleep.

The "Puritat" or pericardium is the covering which surrounds the lefts of the heart.

SŪTRA III., 2. 8.

अतः प्रबोधोऽस्मान् ॥ ३ । २ । ८ ॥

अतः Atah, hence. प्रबोधः Prabodhaḥ, waking. अस्मान् Asmāt, from him (the Lord).

-8. Therefore the waking of the soul is from that (Brahman) —327.

## COMMENTARY

Because Brahman alone is the immediate resting place of the soul in deep sleep, the Nāḍis being merely the gateway to him; therefore, in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad it is described that the soul awakens from Brahman in deep sleep. There in VI., 9. 2. and in several Khândas following it, it is repeatedly declared that the soul awakens from Brahman called Sat, "coming out from Sat they do not know that they have come out of the Sat." Had option been allowed, it would have been mentioned that the soul comes out from the Nāḍis, or from the pericardium, or from Brahman. If there were optional places, to which the soul might resort in deep sleep, the scripture would teach us that it awakes sometimes from the Nāḍis, sometimes from the pericardium, and sometimes from the Self. For that reason also, the Self is the place of deep sleep. We give the original passage of the Chhândogya below.

यथा सोम्य मधु मधुकृतो निश्चिष्यन्ति नानालयानां वृक्षाणां<sup>१</sup> रसान् समवहारमेकतां<sup>२</sup> रसं गमयन्ति ॥ १ ॥ ते यथा तत्र न विवेकं लभन्तेऽमुष्याहं वृक्षस्य रसोऽस्म्यमुष्याहं वृक्षस्य रसोऽस्मीत्येवमेव खलु सोम्येमाः सर्वाः प्रजाः सति संपद्य न विदुः सति संपद्यामह इति ॥ २ ॥ त इह व्याघ्रो वा सिंहो वा वृको वा बराहो वा कीटो वा पतङ्गो वा दंशो वा मशको वा यद्यद्भवन्ति तदाभवन्ति ॥ ३ ॥ सं य एषोऽणिमैतदात्म्यमिदं<sup>३</sup> सर्वं तत्सत्यं<sup>४</sup> स आत्माऽतत्त्वमसि रवेतकेतो इति भूय एव मा भगवान्-विज्ञापय-ति ॥ तथा सोम्येति होवाच ॥ ४ ॥

As the bees, my child, make honey by collecting the juice of different trees and bring together and mix them in one place. And is these juices have no discrimination, so that they might say 'I am the juice of that tree,' 'I am the juice of that tree;' in the same manner, my child, all these creatures, when they get mixed in the Sat, do not know that they have got mixed in the Sat.

Whatever these creatures are here, whether a tiger or a lion or a wolf, or a boar, or a worm, or an insect, or a gnat, or a mosquito, that they become again and again.

That highest God is the Essence and Ruler of all, the desired of all, and known through all the subtlest intellect. All this universe is controlled by Him, He pervades it all and is the God. This God is the destroyer of all and full of perfect qualities. Thou, O Śvetaketu, art not that God.

"Please sir, instruct me still more," said the son. "Be it so, my child," replied the father.

The father then goes on to give other illustrations, the burden of which all is to show "Atat tvam asi"—"thou that art not."

*Adhikaraṇa V—The same person comes back to the body on waking.*

In the above it is stated that coming out of the Sat, they do not know that they have come out of the Sat.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Does the same individuality which had gone to sleep in Brahman arise therefrom when awaking or does another individuality arise after sleep ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The same individuality does not arise in awaking from deep sleep. When a cup of water is thrown into a river and another cupful is taken out of it, it cannot be said that the water is identically the same. Similarly, when a person merges in Brahman in deep sleep, it is impossible, that he should, on awaking, come back into the same body.

*Siddhānta* : The same personality awakes in the same body, which it left, when it went into deep sleep, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 9.

स एव तु कर्माजुस्मृतिशब्दविधिभ्यः ॥ ३ । २ । ६ ॥

सः एव Saḥ eva, that very person who went to sleep. तु Tu, but. कर्म Karma, activity, on account of his finishing the action left unfinished. अनुस्मृति Anusmṛti, on account of memory of identity. शब्द Śabda, from the Śruti. विधिभ्यः Vidhibhyah, from the commandments.

9. But the same person arises from sleep, because of his completing the work left unfinished, because of his retaining the memory of his identity, because of the texts of the scriptures, and because of the injunctions of the Sāstras.  
—328.

COMMENTARY

The word "but," "Tu," removes the doubt. The same person who had gone to sleep arises from it and no one else. The reason for it is four-fold. First, he finishes the work which he had commenced before going to sleep. The word "Karma" of the text means ordinary worldly works. Secondly, he has memory, that is recollection, in the shape of

"I am the person who had gone to sleep and who have now awakened." Thirdly, the express text of the Chhândogya quoted above also shows the same. (Chhândogya, VI., 9. 3).

"Whatever these creatures are here, whether a tiger or a lion, or a wolf or a boar, or a worm or an insect, or a gnat or a mosquito, that they become again and again."

This means the creatures like tigers, wolves, etc., come back on awakening into the same body, which they had, before they went to sleep. Fourthly, the scriptural injunctions like those of Bṛhadâraṇyaka, I., 74. 15, declare that the man must worship the Self as his true state. This shows that he must try for release. If everyone who went to sleep got release, then these injunctions about Mokṣa, would be useless.

When a Jīva enters into Brahman, he enters like a jar full of salt water, with covered mouth, plunged into the Ganges. When he awakens from sleep, it is the same jar, taken out of the river with the same water in it. In the same way the Jīva, covered by his desires, goes to sleep and for the time being puts off all sense activities and goes to the resting place, namely, the Supreme Brahman, and again comes out of it, in order to get further experience. He does not become similar to Brahman, like the person who has obtained release. Thus we learn from this four-fold reason, that the same soul which had gone to sleep, awakes again into the same body.

### *Adhikarāṇa VI—The state of swoon.*

Now we shall consider the state of swoon, which is similar to that of deep sleep.

*Doubt* : Does the Jīva fully attain to Brahman in swoon or partially attain to him?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Swoon being a special kind of deep sleep, the soul attains to Brahman fully as in deep sleep. The next Sūtra sets aside this view.

SŪTRA., III., 2. 10.

मुग्धेऽर्द्धसम्पत्तिः परिशेषात् ॥ ३ । २ । १० ॥

मुग्धे Mugdhe, in the swooning person or state. अर्द्धे Arddha, half. सम्पत्तिः Sampattih, combination or attaining Brahman; entering into Brahman. Baladeva's reading is Samprāptih. परिशेषात् Parīśeṣāt, on account of the remaining.

10. In the swooning condition, the Jīva is in half combination with Brahman; because the rule of the remainder shows this.—329.

## COMMENTARY

'When a man is in a swoon, or in a stunned condition, he is in half combination with Brahman, because of the rule of the remainder. In this condition Brahman is not reached in the same way *fully* as in deep sleep, because the soul is conscious of pain. Nor is there total want of attainment to Brahman, like the waking state, because the soul is unconscious of external objects. Thus by the rule of remainder, we conclude that there is half combination. This we find described in the following verses of the Varāha Purāṇa :

द्वयस्यात्पराज्जीवो दूरस्थो जाग्रदेष्यति ।

समीपस्थस्तथा स्वप्ने स्वपित्यस्मिँल्लयं ब्रजन् ॥

अत एव त्रयोऽवस्था मोहस्तु परिशेषतः ।

अहंमयि रिति द्वयो दुःखमात्रं प्रतिस्मृतेः ॥

When [the soul is at a distance from the Supreme Lord in the heart (that is, when it is in the eyes), then it is in waking consciousness, when it is nearer to the Lord (that is, in the throat), then it is in the dream consciousness. But when it has entered into the Lord, it is in deep sleep. Therefore, these are the three states, thus described; but swoon is an intermediate state, in which there is half combination with Brahman, because on recovery, there is remembered the consciousness of pain.

The objector says : The books describe only three states : waking, dreaming, and deep sleep. Where do you get this fourth state called "Mugdha" or swoon ? This is not a new state, but one of the above three.

To this objection we reply, that this is a separate state altogether. It is not the waking state, because external objects are not perceived in this state through the senses. Nor is it the dreaming state, because the person is unconscious. Nor is it the deep sleep state, because there is not that peaceful look of the face and want of movement of the limbs. Therefore, [it is a different state altogether and is to be inferred by the rule of the remainder. Moreover, it is a well-known state, recognized both by the physicians and by the world. Thus the purport of the whole topic is that the Lord God Hari alone must be worshipped and served with devotion, for His glory is such that he is the Maker of everything, even of the conditions of consciousness like waking, dreaming, and the rest.

*Adhikaraṇa, VII—The Lord is one though manifesting  
in various forms.*

In the preceding passages, has been shown the glory of the Lord, as the controller and ordainer of everything. Now will be described His that inconceivable nature, by which He does not abandon His unity

in himself though He appears manifold in many places. Though in the Sūtra, II., 3. 44, it was described that the powers of the Lord are mysterious, yet in those Sūtras, no reconciliation has been made of the paradoxical statements that the Lord though one, appears simultaneously in many forms, which are apparently different from each other. That reconciliation will now be made, by means of the doctrine of inconceivability.

We have the following text showing that the Lord though One manifests as many :

एकोऽपि सन् बहुधा योऽवभाति ।

Though being One, He manifests as many.—(Gopālo Pūrvā Tāpant).

*Doubt* : Are the various forms of the Lord, found in diverse places, mutually different from each other or not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The difference of locality presupposes the difference in the objects occupying that locality ; for substances occupying different places cannot be identical ; for the quality of being in different places separates them from each other. The above text is merely a general statement and does not mean that One Lord exists in different places. Therefore, the fact is that the gods are many, occupying different places and having different jurisdictions. Thus the gods being many, there cannot be that one-pointed devotion to one God, which you have been trying to establish.

*Siddhānta* : The God is one only, and not many as will be shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 11.

न स्थानतोऽपि परस्योभयलिङ्गं सर्वत्र हि ॥ ३ । २ । ११ ॥

न Na not. स्थानतः Sthānataḥ, on account of place. अपि Api, even. परस्य Parasya, of the Highest, the Lord. उभयलिङ्गम् Ubhayalingam, having two-fold characteristics ; not different on account of differences of locality. सर्वत्र Sarvatra, everywhere. हि Hi, because.

11. (The essential nature) of the Supreme Lord, though (differentiated) by space, does not undergo any change of characteristics ; because, (He simultaneously exists), everywhere.  
—330.

COMMENTARY

"Of the Supreme," namely, of the Adorable Lord, there is not two-foldness of characteristics or change of nature, by the mere fact of His being in two different places. Though there is difference of locality there



is, however, no difference in the substance occupying these localities. Because His essential nature, through His inconceivable power, simultaneously manifests itself in every place, as mentioned in the above Śruti : "Eko'pi san bahudhā yo' vabhāti."

The word "Sthānāni" or localities are the centres (Āspada) where the Lord manifests His glory ; where are displayed His various sportive activities (Līlās). These sacred places are called also Saṃvyoma (the Highest Ether or Vacuity).

The devotees of the Lord are also of various kinds (Bhāvas). Such as some regard Him as their Master and themselves as His servants ; others as their Beloved, and themselves His lovers, etc.

In all these various localities (Saṃvyomas), and various devotees, the Lord, though manifesting His different aspects, is essentially the one and the same. He undergoes no change.

SŪTRA III., 2. 12.

न भेदादिति चेन्न प्रत्येकमतद्वचनात् ॥ ३ । २ । १२ ॥

न Na, not. भेदाद् Bhedāt, on account of difference, on account of the statement of difference. इति Iti, as, so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, no प्रत्येकम् Pratyekam, distinct, each (with reference to). अतद् Atad, the absence of that (i. e., difference). वचनात् Vachanāt, on account of the statement.

12. If it be said "This is not valid, because of the statement of difference," we reply, "No. Because (with reference) to every statement (declaring difference), (there is always) a counter-statement (in the scriptures) declaring non-difference.— 331.

COMMENTARY

The statement made in the preceding Sūtra, namely, that the Lord remains One, in all His manifestations, is not reasonable, says the objector. For in reality, these different manifestations are different entities, and cannot be called one. In fact, there is Bheda or difference in the Lord.

This objection is raised in the first part of the Sūtra, and is answered in the subsequent portion. With regard to every one of these manifestations, the texts take the precaution of saying, that the Lord is one.

Thus in the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad. (II, 5. 19), we have the following :

इदं दे तद् यद् दम्पत्यर्थयोऽश्विभ्यामुवाच । तदेतद्विधिः पश्यन्मवाच । रूपं रूपं प्रतिरूपो यद्गुणं तद्वर्णं रूपं प्रतिचक्षणात् । इन्द्रो मायाभिः पुरुषं ईयते, युक्तं अस्य हरयः सततमेतत्वं मे हरयोऽयं मे हस्त च

सहस्राणि बहूनि चानन्तानि च । तदेतद् ब्रह्मापूर्वमनपरमनन्तरब्राह्मम् । अयमात्मा ब्रह्म सर्वानुभूतित्यनु-  
शासनम् ।

Verily, Dadhyach Ātharvana proclaimed this honey to the two Aśvins, and a R̥ṣi, seeing this said (R̥g Veda, VI., 47. 18).

"An image of the Lord is in every one of the forms, (in which a Jīva, or soul is embodied, for every Jīva has the image of the Lord in it). That Image is for the sake of the seeing (and worshipping by that particular Jīva), The Lord (Indra=Almighty Ruler) appears multiform through His Energies (Māyās). Therefore, it is right to say that these hundred and ten forms, called Haris are His. (The Hari or Logos of every system is a ray of Brahman)."

This (Brahman) is verily these Haris (Logoi); this (Brahman) is the Ten (Avatāras, such as the Matsya, etc.) this (Brahman) is the Thousand (Avatāras, such as Viṣṇu, etc.), this the Many (such as Para, etc.), this the Endless (such as Ajita, etc.). This is the Brahman, without cause and without effect; besides whom there is nothing, and outside whom there is nothing. This Ātman is Brahman, omnipresent and omniscient. This is the teaching of the Upaniṣads."

Thus the above text of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad shows that every form of the Lord abiding in different individuals is the supreme Brahman, full and entire, and not a portion of Him, for an Infinity can have no parts.

SŪTRA III., 2. 13.

अपि चैवमेके ॥ ३ । २ । १३ ॥

अपि Api, also. च Cha, and. एवम् Evam, thus. एके Eke, some.

13. And also some teach thus (that the Lord is one though multiform).—332.

COMMENTARY

The words "and also" mean "moreover." Thus in the Māṇḍūkya Upaniṣad (IV., 7), S. B. H., Vol. 1, p. 318, 2nd. ed.

अमात्रोऽनन्तमात्रश्च द्वैतस्योपशमः शिवः ।

अौकारो विदितो येन स मुनिर्नेतरो जनः ॥

He who knows the Omkāra, as partless and yet full of infinity of parts, as the destroyer of all false knowledge, and as blissful, he verily is a sage and no one else."

Thus these Sākhins teach that the Lord is One partless whole, having infinity of parts, each one of which is a whole infinity. The word 'partless' means devoid of differences in itself or in its parts. "Infinity of parts" means having innumerable parts, each one a complete infinity (Svāmśa). It is thus written in the Matsya Purāṇa :

एक एव परो विष्णुः सर्वत्रापि न संशयः ।

देवर्षाद् रूपमेकमेव सर्वत्र बहुभेद्यते ॥

The Supreme Viṣṇu is One only undoubtedly, though existing everywhere. He has one form, though through His Glory, he appears as many, like the Sun.

The sense is this. As a prismatic crystal, though one only, appears to emit different colours, such as red, or blue, etc., to the eyes of the spectators when viewed from different angles; or as an actor on the stage, appears playing different parts in different acts of the Drama, but all the while he is one and the same, though expressing diverse emotions, appropriate to the part he is enacting for the time being; so the Lord Hari never abandons His essential unity of nature, though He appears as many, according to the different nature of the ideas (Bhāva, or mental attitudes) of His devotees meditating upon Him, or according to the different nature of the works He is engaged upon accomplishing.

So also in Viṣṇu Tantra :

मणिर्यथा विभागेन नीलपीतादिभिर्युतः ।

रूपभेदमवाप्नोति ध्यानभेदात् तथाच्युतः ॥

As a prismatic crystal when looked at from different sides appears possessed of blue, yellow, etc., colours, so the Unchangeable Lord gets (in the eyes of His devotees) different forms, according to the different kinds of their meditation.

So also in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

यत् तद् वपुर्भाति विभूषणायुधैर्-

अव्यक्तचिद्व्यक्तमधारयद्धरिः ।

बभूव तेनैव स वामनो वटुः

संपश्यतोर्दिव्यगतिर्यथा नटः ॥

Hari, whose essential nature is unmanifest pure Intelligence, manifested Himself in a form shining with radiant ornaments and holding diverse weapons. And as a divine magician capable of going to heaven, quickly changes his form in the very presence of his spectators, so that the very body of the Lord with four arms, etc., instantaneously assumed the form of the Dwarf (Vāmana), while (His Parents, Aditi and Kaśyapa) were looking on. (In their very sight He changed into the Dwarf-form.)

Thus that One Reality, having Inconceivable Powers, and being the substrate of all contradictory attributes, simultaneously becomes manifold in Its manifestation. This gives rise to the notion of His possessing paradoxical qualities; and this instead of detracting from His greatness, strengthens the love of the devotees towards Him—the Lord of Mysterious Powers. Thus Bhakti towards the Lord increases by such contemplation over His contradictory attributes.

### *Adhikaraṇa VIII—The form of Brahman.*

Now the author establishes the point that the Lord has Ātman for His body. [There is no body of the Lord]. If the body of the Lord were separate from the Self (Ātman) of the Lord, then Ātman being a subordinate member, the devotion towards it would also be of a subordinate

kind and not a primary Bhakti. But this is not the case. For devotion is always felt (or rather experienced, as if it was drawn) towards the primary object. [The attraction or Love which the soul feels for the beautiful form of the Lord is not an attraction towards something secondary but primary. It follows, therefore, that the *form* of the Lord, is the Self of the Lord, is the very Lord itself. It thus differs from other forms. As a rule, the form embodies the soul : but the form of the Lord is the very soul or self of the Lord : otherwise why such an attraction towards it ?]

*Viśaya* : Thus the Śrutis declare :

सच्चिदानन्दरूपाय कृष्णायैकलङ्कारिणे ।

Salutation to that Kṛṣṇa, the destroyer of pain, whose form is being, Intelligence and Bliss.—Gopāl Pūrvā Tāpanī Up., I.

गोविन्दं सच्चिदानन्दविग्रहम् ।

To Govinda whose form is Being, Intelligence and Bliss.—Atharva Sirasa.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Has Brahman any form or not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Brahman has a form : which consists (of the fine matter of the planes of) Being, Intelligence and Bliss. The phrase Sachchidānanda Rūpa is a Bahuvrihi compound, meaning he whose form is Being, Intelligence and Bliss. Therefore, Viṣṇu has a form (Mūrti).

*Siddhānta* : The Lord has no form distinct from His Self as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 14.

अरूपवदेवहि तत्प्रधानत्वात् ॥ ३ । २ । १४ ॥

अरूपवत् Arūpavat, destitute of form. एव Eva, indeed. हि Hi, because. तत् Tat, of that, of that form. प्रधानत्वात् Pradhānatvāt, on account of being the chief (or the supreme) thing and soul.

14. Brahman has no (ordinary) form indeed, because the form itself is the principal (life).—333.

#### COMMENTARY

Brahman has no Rūpa or form, Vighraha or shape. Hence He is called . Arūpavat—formless. The word “indeed” is used in order to refute the argument of the Pūrvapakṣin. Why do we say so ? Because that Form itself is the Chief. [In ordinary cases, form is always *subordinate* to the soul which it embodies. But in the case of Brahman, the form itself is the Âtman : there is no difference between the *form* and the *self* of Brahman. They are identical]. The *form* possesses all the attributes of Brahman, namely; it is all-pervading (Vibhu), it is the knower (Jñātṛya), it is the inner self of all Jīvas, etc. It is both the substance and the attribute.

But it is a well-known fact, says an objector, that by meditating on Brahman, the supreme self and substance, the knowledge and bliss, there ceases to exist. Its opposite, namely, the Prakṛti, which is essentially inert and painful—how is it then possible that with regard to such a Brahman, the author of the Sūtras should predicate a Form? (for all form is a limitation of life, and is inconsistent with the true conception of Brahman, as set forth above). This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 15.

प्रकाशवच्चैवैयर्थ्यात् ॥ ३ । २ । १५ ॥

प्रकाशवत् Prakāśavat, in the same way as in the sun consisting of light. च Cha, and. This word removes the doubt above raised. अवैयर्थ्यात् Avaiyarthya, on account of the want of purposelessness, or of meaninglessness (of the form).

15. And (the conception of a Form with regard to Brahman) is not meaningless, just as (the idea of a form with regard to the Sun which is) pure light.—334.

COMMENTARY

The word 'and' in the Sūtra is employed in order to remove the doubt raised above. The affix 'Vat' in Prakāśavat, has the force of 'Iva' or 'like unto'; and it is added to the word 'Prakāśa' in the locative case. Namely, प्रकाशेरूपे रवौ as in the case of the Sun, whose single form is pure light, there is conceived a form for the sake of meditation; and as such conception with regard to the Sun is not purposeless, for it helps concentration of the mind; similarly, in the case of Brahman, who, though the pure light of knowledge and bliss, is conceived to have a Form, to facilitate meditation on Him. For meditation is impossible without ascribing a form. The word Dhyāna or meditation is always used in connection with some form. As in the sentence, "the wife, parted from her husband, meditates (Dhyāyati) on him (i. e., on his form pictured in her mind)."

Nor must it be said, that this mental picture, formed for the sake of meditation, is an unreality after all and Brahman has no form actually. Because there is evidence of His having a form.

SŪTRA III., 2. 16.

आह च तन्मात्रम् ॥ ३ । २ । १६ ॥

आह Āha, (the Śruti) declares. च Cha, and, however. तन्मात्रम् Tanmātram, only that much, or consisting of the essence of His Self.

16. The Śruti declares, however, that the Form of the Supreme consists of the very essence of His Self.—335.

## COMMENTARY

The force of the word “Mātra” in Tanmātra is to denote exclusiveness. Since the Scriptures declare this Form alone to be the Supreme Self, hence this Form is a Real Entity, (and not an imagined thought-picture created by the mind of the devotee). In the same Atharva Śīras, the Lord is thus described :

सत् पुण्डरीकनयनं मेघाभं वक्षुताम्बरम् ।

द्विभुजं मौनमुद्राढ्यं वनमालिनमीश्वरम् ॥

(Meditate on) the Lord as having eyes like full-blown white lotus, a body of the (blue) colour of clouds, garments of lightning, with two arms, and adorned with the symbol of silence, and having a garland round his neck, which is made up of all the spheres of the heavenly orbs.—(Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī, p. 185 of the Ānandāśrama series).

Note : Vanamālā means a garland made of flowers, fruits and leaves all strung together. In the case of Viṣṇu, the Vanamālā means all the globes strung together :

वनमालामवाद् विष्णुर्भुवनानि चतुर्दश ।

Or it may mean a garland made of flowers of five colours, yellow, white, red, blue and black. In the case of Viṣṇu, it means a garland made of five elements—earth, etc :

पृथ्वी पीता, वारि शुक्लं, रक्तोऽग्निरसितो मरुत् ।

नभो नीलं पञ्चवर्णी वनमाला हरेरिति ॥

In the above, the attributes like “lotus-eyed,” etc., are shown to be the essential qualities of the Lord and the Lord and the Form are identical clearly, for this Form is called the Lord in the above.

So also in the Padma Purāṇa we read :

देहदेहिभिदा चैव नेश्वरे विद्यते क्वचित् ।

In the Lord there is no distinction of Life and Form—(the Form itself is the Life).

In everything else, the form embodies the life, but in the case of the Lord, the Form Itself is the Life manifest. In other words, the Deha (body) is verily the Dehin (the embodied)—the Body of the Lord is verily the Lord Himself.

SŪTRA. III., 2. 17.

दर्शयति चाथोपि स्मर्यते । ३ । २ । १७ ॥

दर्शयति Darśayati, (the Scripture or Śruti) shows. च Cha, and. अथो Atho, fully, completely. अपि Api, also. स्मर्यते Smaryate, the Smṛtis declare.

17. Moreover, (the Scripture) also fully shows (this, and the Tradition also) declares it.—336.

## COMMENTARY

In answer to the question, “How did Gopāla, the Supreme Self, who essentially is above all Prakṛti, descend on this earth (and incarnate Himself in matter),” the Śruti goes on to describe the Form of this Supreme

Self : and shows that the Supreme Self is identical with His Form. The word Gopāla is primarily applied to that Entity who is the Supreme Lord having the most beautiful face, hands, feet, etc., and with a body of the colour of the blue cloud. In the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī, the sages ask Brahmā the following question : "What is the form of the Lord, what is His sacred formula of worship, and what is the method of His worship, tell that to us who are anxious to know." In reply to this question, Brahmā says :

गोपयेयं यन्नामं तरुणं कल्पद्रुमाश्रितम् । तदिह श्लोका भवन्ति—

सप्त पुण्डरीकनयनं मेघाभं वैद्युताम्बरम् ।

दिभुजं मौनमुद्राढ्यं वनमालिनमीश्वरम् ॥

गोपीगोपगवा वीतं सुरद्रुमतलाश्रितम् ।

दिव्यालंकरणोपेतं रत्नपंकजमध्यगम् ॥

कालिन्दीजलकलोलासंगि मारुतसेवितम् ।

चिन्तयंश्चेतसा कृष्णं मुक्तो भवति संसृतेः ॥

Kṛṣṇa is dressed as a Gopa (a cow-herd, or a World-Saviour), has the colour of a cloud, is a youth and stands under the Tree of all Desires. On this subject are the following verses :

He who meditates, with his heart, on Kṛṣṇa as described below is freed from re-births :

He has eyes like full-blown white lotus, a body of the colour of clouds, garments of lightning, with two arms adorned with the symbol of silence (a particular position of fingers), a garland of heavenly orbs, the supreme Lord. He, surrounded by cows, cow-herds, and shepherdesses, under the heavenly Tree, adorned with divine ornaments, is seated on a throne inlaid with lotuses of jewels, and fanned by the cool wind resonant with the music of the waves of the River Kālindī.

*Note* : The cows are celestial orbs, the cowherds (male and female) are the Rulers of these solar and planetary systems. The River Kālindī is the daughter of Time—or rather Time (Kāla) personified.

The Smṛtis also declare that the Self of the Lord and the Form of the Lord are identical. Thus in the Brahma Samhitā it is said :

ईश्वरः परमः कृष्णः सच्चिदानन्दविग्रहः ।

Kṛṣṇa is the Supreme Lord, the Form of Being, Intelligence and Bliss.

By these two Sūtras (16 and 17) the mutual co-extensiveness is declared, *i. e.*, the Form is verily the Life, and the Life is verily the Form, in the case of the Lord. विग्रह एवात्मा आत्मैव विग्रहः, the Form is even the Self and the Self is even the form.

Thus it is established that the Form is the Self. In inconceivable verities known only through the Revolution, there can be no room for argument, and so it must not be doubted how the Form can be the Ātman. It is one of the mysteries of Godhead, revealed by the Śruti and must be believed so.

Therefore, Bhakti or love for the Form of the Lord is not an inferior kind of Bhakti, but the highest Bhakti; for the Form of the Lord is the Lord itself.

Though the Âtman, Being, Knowledge and Bliss, logically excludes the idea of form, yet in matters transcendental, where the Revelation is our sole guide, we must believe that the Âtman has a form, which is identical with itself. That Form verily is to be perceived by the heart alone when it is purified by love: just as the form of the music is perceived by the ear trained to appreciate musical notes. [Every music is supposed to have a form which is perceived through the trained ear.]

If the Lord were formless, then the Śruti texts like विज्ञानघनः "image of intelligence," आनन्दघनः "image of bliss," etc., would become meaningless, for these phrases employ the word "Ghana" which means form. Thus the Form of the Lord is not only all Intelligence and Bliss, it has the other attributes of being the all-pervading and the Inner Self of all. To have any other conception about this form would be wrong and based upon error. As it is said by the Lord to Nârada in the Mokṣa-dharma :

एतन् त्वया न विशेयं रूपवानिति दृश्यते ।

इच्छन् मुहूर्तान् नश्येयम्, ईशोऽहं जगतो गुरुः ॥

माया ह्येषा मया सृष्टा यन् मां परयसि नारद ।

सर्वभूतगुणैर्युक्तं नैवं त्वं ज्ञातुमर्हसि ॥

O Nârada! Do not think so, "I see this Form because it is a form, (and everything that has a form is visible)." For (this Form is not like other forms, because) in a moment on my merely so willing, I can become invisible to thee. For I am the Lord and the Teacher of the world (by being the Inner Guide of all). That which thou seest Me as having all the qualities of all the beings, that is a Mâyâ created by Me. Thou canst not know me thus.

### *Adhikarāṇa IX—The worshipped is different from the worshipper.*

Now the author establishes the difference between worshipper and the worshipped—between the Jiva and Brahman. For if the worshipper were identical with the worshipped, the result of the Advaita notion "I am That"—then there would arise no Bhakti (love), for no one entertains the notion that his own self is the fit object of adoration. [For Bhakti is really worship, and it is a feeling entertained to a being who is superior to one's own self.]

Though the author has repeatedly established the proposition that the Jiva is different from the Lord, yet he again reverts to that



topic, dealing with it from a different aspect, in order to enlighten those misguided souls, who through the false teaching that the Jīva is a reflection of Brahman, are deluded into the idea that they are verily the Supreme Brahman, (and prayers and Pūjās are useless for them).

*Viśaya* : Says a Śruti :

बहवः सूर्यका यद्वत् सूर्यस्य सदृशा जले ।

एवमेवात्मका लोके परात्मसदृशा मताः ॥

As many images of the sun are seen in various vessels of water, so in this world the various selfs are to be considered as the reflection of the Supreme Self.

Says another Śruti, *Brahma Vindu Upaniṣad* :

एक एव हि भूतात्मा भूते भूते व्यवस्थितः ।

एकधा बहुधा चैव दृश्यते जलचन्द्रवत् ॥

The Bhut-ātman is indeed One, existing in every being. It appears as one or as many, like the reflection of the moon in water.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt. It has been demonstrated before that the Supreme Self is an Image of Bliss and Intelligence. Does that Supreme Self become Jīva under certain conditions, or is He always separate from the Jīva ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent urges that the Supreme Self itself becomes the Jīva. For a Jīva is nothing but the reflection of the Supreme in the Nescience. A reflection is identical with the original, for it exists so long as the original source exists, and ceases to exist, when the source exists no longer. Therefore, it has been said : "If a person looks at a mirror in front of him, he sees his own face only therein, but if he turns away his eyes, he sees nothing." Therefore, the Supreme Self, by its conjunction with Avidyā (Nescience), has become Jīva.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside by the next Sūtra. The Jīva is not a reflection of Brahman.

SŪTRA III., 2. 18.

अतएव चोपमा सूर्यकादिवत् । ३ । २ । १८ ॥

अतः एव Atah eva, for this very reason. च Cha, and. (Another reading has. न Na, not). उपमा Upamā, similarity, or absolute identity. सूर्यकादिवत् Sūryakādivat, just as between the sun and its images.

18. Therefore, the simile of the sun and its reflection (holds good with regard to the Jīva and the Supreme Self as showing difference).—337.

COMMENTARY

Because the Jīva is separate from the Supreme Self, therefore, it is spoken of figuratively like the reflection of the sun. This is the meaning

of the Sūtra, when the reading is अतएव चोपमा instead of नोपमा. For in *two* (?) substances which are identically one, there cannot exist the relationship of the reflector and the reflected. For if the reflection were identically the same as its source, then the shadow of the fire would also cause burning, the reflection of a sword would cut substances.

But there is, however, no such identity, for the two are different.

The word 'and' in the Sūtra includes other causes of differences also.

Therefore, it follows that the Jīva is different from the Supreme Self.

### *Adhikaraṇa X—Jīva is not a reflection of God.*

Admitted that the Jīva is different from the Supreme, on account of the above simile, but that very simile, however, shows that the Jīva is a *reflection* at least of the Intelligence. As the reflection of the sun in water is called Sūryaka, so the reflection of the Supreme in the Avidyā, is called Jīva. Where is the harm in it?

This doubt, however, is also set aside by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 19.

अम्बुवद्ग्रहणात् न तथात्त्वम् । ३ । २ । १९ ॥

अम्बुवत् Ambuvat, like in or of water, like the reflection of the sun in water. The affix, Vat, has the force of "like" and the word before it is either in the sixth or in the seventh case. अग्रहणात् Agrahanāt, in the absence of perception. तु Tu, but, has the sense of exclusion. न Na, not. तथात्त्वम् Tathātvam, that state, (i.e., that of equality). The simile does not hold good.

19. The Jīva is not a reflection of the Supreme, like the sun reflected in water, because it is not so perceived.—338.

#### COMMENTARY

The similarity of the sun and water does not hold good here. The sun is, at a *distance* from the water, and so it is possible for its reflection to be in the water. But the Supreme Self is all-pervading, so no object can be at a distance from Him. So the similarity of the sun and water cannot hold good with regard to the Self and the Jīva. The sun is reflected in water, etc., because of its distance from water, etc., but there can be no such distance between the Supreme Self and any object. So "reflection" in this connection is a meaningless term.

Therefore, the Jīva cannot be a reflection of the Supreme Self. The Śruti also says, "He is colourless, reflectionless."—(Prašna Up., IV., 10.)

On the other hand, the Jīva is an intelligent entity like the Supreme Self. As says the Śruti: "He is the Eternal among the eternal, the conscious among the conscious ones."—(Kāṭha Up., V., 13).

This refutes the illustration taken from the space and its reflection. The space has no reflection, the so-called reflection of the sky seen in water is really caused by the rays of the sun, etc., in particular limited portions of the space. It is a wrong notion of the ignorant when they say they see the reflection of space, otherwise one would also see the reflection of the directions, east, west, etc. Nor the sound and its echo are a proper illustration, for echo is not a reflection of sound. Therefore, the Lord has no reflection.

The next Sūtra shows the reconciliation of these Śrutis, mentioning reflection.

SŪTRA III., 2. 20.

वृद्धिर्ह्रासभाक्त्वमन्तर्भावोदुभयसामञ्जस्यदेवम् । ३ । २ । २० ॥

वृद्धि Vṛiddhi, increase, a higher degree. ह्रास Hrāsa, decrease, a lower degree. भाक्त्वम् Bhāktvam, participation, being admitted of the difference. अन्तर्भावः Antarbhāvāt, because of being included in that. The purport of the scriptures end with teaching only so much. उभय Ubhaya, towards both. सामञ्जस्यः Sāmañjasyāt, because of the justness, appropriateness. एवम् Evam, thus.

20. (The comparison is not appropriate in its primary sense, but in its secondary sense) of participating in increase and decrease; because (the purport of the scripture) is fulfilled thereby, and thus both comparisons become appropriate.—339.

#### COMMENTARY

The above comparison of the sun and its reflection does not hold good primarily, but it is a good illustration in a secondary sense. Namely, as showing the increase of the one—the greatness of the one (i.e., the Lord); and the decrease of the other, i.e., the smallness of the other, i.e., the Jīva.

This illustration is valid having regard to the particular nature of these. [The sun is great and so the Supreme Self is great, its reflection is small and so the Jīva is small. Taking the illustration in this light, it holds good]. Why do we say so? Because "Antarbhāvāt"—the sense of the scriptures is fully satisfied by this mode of explanation—everything is contained within it. By explaining it thus, the reconciliation of both takes place: namely, the reconciliation between the illustration

and the object of illustration, the standard of comparison and the subject of comparison.

The sense is this. In the preceding Sūtra, the comparison of the sun and its reflection was set aside as inappropriate in its ordinary sense, but that comparison was taken to be good in its secondary sense, namely, having regard to the attributes found in the sun and its reflection. Looking to the attributes of these two, the illustration holds good. It is to be understood in this way. The sun participates in increase, it is a large luminary, untouched by the limitations of water, etc., in which it is reflected. It is independent, and unvarying. Its reflections, the smaller suns (Sūryakas), participate in decrease (they increase or decrease according to the size of the surface on which the reflection is made). They are limited by the conditions of the reflecting surfaces like water, etc., are not independent and unvarying like the sun, but vary according to the variations of the reflecting surfaces. Thus the Supreme Self is all-pervading, untouched by the attributes of Matter (Prakṛti); and is independent. The Jivas, which are his Aṁśas (parts) are not all-pervading but atomic, are joined with the attributes of Prakṛti (are affected by the material environment in which they exist), and are not independent. Thus the comparison holds good showing the difference of the Jiva from the Lord, the subordination of the former to the latter; and similarity also between them, inasmuch as both are conscious. The illustration is not good, if it is taken in the sense that the Jiva is identical with Brahman, as the reflection is identical with its source. Therefore, the Pāṇḍi Śruti says that the Jiva is a reflection, but without any Upādhi.

मोपाधिरनुपाधिश्च प्रतिबिम्बो द्विविध्यते ।

जीव ईशस्यानुपाधिरिन्द्रचापो यथा रवेः ॥

The reflection is of two sorts, limited by Upādhi and not so limited. The Jiva is a reflection of the Lord, but not in any Upādhi: as the rainbow is a reflection of the Sun but not in any Upādhi (like the water, etc.).

*Note:* The Upādhi-limited reflections are such as those in water, or in a mirror, etc.

SŪTRA III., 2. 21

दर्शनाच्च । ३ । २ । २१ ॥

दर्शनाच्च Darśanât, because it is seen (in the world). च Cha, and.

21. Moreover, it is thus seen (in the world, that comparisons are sometimes taken in their secondary sense).  
—340.

## COMMENTARY

In similes like "Devadatta is a lion," we find that the worldly usage also is in favour of taking this comparisons to be good only so far as relevant. (Devadatta is a lion, is good only so far as the similarity between the courage of both is concerned. It should not be strained further to indicate that Devadatta has got claws like a lion, etc.).

Therefore, the scriptural texts of comparison between the Lord and the Jiva should be explained in this figurative sense, and not literally.

*Adhikaraṇa XI—The Neti Neti text explained.*

An objector says : It is not right to assert that the Jiva is a separate conscious entity like the Supreme Self, but it is merely a reflection of Brahman, and not a substance by itself. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, in chapter II. 3. 1, beginning with it "there are two forms of Brahman, etc., the existence of everything other than Brahman is expressly denied. That text is as follows.

There are two forms of Brahman, the material and the immaterial, the mortal and the immortal, the solid and the fluid, Sat (being) and Tya (that) (*i.e.*, Sat-tya, true.)

Then the Śruti divides all the five elements and their products into two groups—material and immaterial, (gross and fine). It declares all these to be the form of Brahman, and then goes on to declare :

And what is the form of that Person ? Like a saffron-coloured raiment, like yellow wool, like cochineal, like the flame of fire, like the white lotus, like sudden lightning. He who knows this, his glory is like unto sudden lightning.

The Śruti having thus described that Person as having the colour of a saffron raiment, etc., goes on to state :

Now follows the teaching—Neti, Neti ; not so, not so. For there is not any thing else higher than this "Neti—Not so." Then comes the Name, Satyasya Satyam, the True of the True : the senses being the true, and he (the Brahman) the True of them.

The sense of the above is this. The Śruti refers to the whole world as material and immaterial, subtle and gross, and having described it as such, states that the highest good is not to be obtained by a knowledge of this world, and therefore it gives next the teaching—Neti, Neti, not so, not so. The thing taught by Neti, Neti, not so, not so, must be understood to mean Brahman alone. This text denies the existence of all objects, whether they fall under the category of thoughts and things, or matter and mind. [It declares that the only existence is Brahman ; everything else is Neti, Neti, not so, not so]. The Śruti itself declares, what is the meaning of the teaching Neti, Neti—it says there is verily nothing else other than this Brahman. But may not the word "Neti, not so" be taken to deny the

existence of Brahman also, as it denies the existence of the world : may it not teach pure Nihilism ? Not so. For the Śruti teaches that there exists an entity other than all visible worldly objects, higher than all ; the end of all illusions, the pure Being, the Brahman. Therefore, 'not so' teaches that there exists no other object than Brahman ; and consequently there do not exist *separate* entities like your Jivas (souls) ; but that the Jiva is nothing other than the reflection of Brahman in Avidyā. Your statement that there are two Ātmans—lower (the Jiva), and the Higher (the Lord) ; that they are different, because the one is all-pervading, and the other is atomic, etc. ; is incorrect. All this apparent difference can be explained on the analogy of space in a jar and space outside it : the atomicity, etc., of the Jiva are apparent only ; and not sufficient to establish the difference between Jiva and Brahman.

*Siddhānta* : To this Pūrvapakṣa, the next Sūtra gives an answer.

*Note* : For clearness of understanding the whole text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (II. 3. 1 to 6) is given below :

देवावब्रह्मणोरूपे मूर्तैवेवामूर्तं च मर्त्यैचामूर्तं च स्थितं च यच्च सच्च त्वं च ॥ १ ॥ तदेतन्मूर्तं यदन्यद्रायोश्चांतरिक्षाच्चैतन्मर्त्यमेतत्स्थितमेतत्सत्तस्यैतस्यमूर्तस्यैतस्य मर्त्यस्यैतस्य स्थितस्यैतस्य सत एव रसोय एव तपति सतो ह्येव रसः ॥ २ ॥ अथामूर्तं वायुश्चांतरिक्षे चैतदमृतमेतच्चदेतत्तस्य तस्यैतस्यामूर्तस्यैतस्यामृतस्यैतस्य यतएतस्यत्यस्यैवरसो य एव एतस्मिन्मण्डले पुरुषस्तस्य ह्यवरमदृत्यधिदेवतम् ॥ ३ ॥ अथाध्यात्ममिदमेवमूर्तयदन्यत्प्राणाञ्च यश्चायमन्तरात्मन्नाकाश एतन्मर्त्यमेतत्स्थितमेतत्सत्तस्यैतस्य मूर्तस्यैतस्य मर्त्यस्यैतस्य स्थितस्यैतस्य सत एव रसो यच्चचतुः सतो ह्येव रसः ॥ ४ ॥ अथामूर्तं प्राणश्चायमन्तरात्मन्नाकाश एतदमृतमेतच्चदेतत्तस्य तस्यैतस्यामूर्तस्यैतस्यामृतस्यैतस्य यतएतस्यत्यस्यैवरसो योयं दक्षिणं चान्तरिक्षं पुरुषस्तस्य ह्येव रसः ॥ ५ ॥ तस्य हेतस्य पुरुषस्य रूपं यथामहाराजन् वासोयथापाण्ड्वविकं यथेन्द्रगोपो यथाग्न्यर्चिर्यथा पुण्डरीकं यथा सकृद्विद्युत्तत् सकृद्विद्युतेव हवा अस्य श्रीर्भवति य एवं वेदायात आदेशो नेति नेति नद्येनस्मादितिनेत्यन्यत्परमस्त्यथनामधेयः सत्य स्यसत्यमिति प्राणवैसत्यं तेषामेषसत्यम् ॥ ६ ॥ मूर्तामूर्तब्राह्मणम् ॥ ४ ॥ ३ ॥

There are two forms of Brahman, the material and the immaterial, the mortal and the immortal, the solid and the fluid, Sat (being) and Tya (that), (*i.e.*, Sat-tya, true).

Everything except air and sky is material, is mortal, is solid, is definite. The essence of that which is material, which is mortal, which is solid, which is definite is the sun that shines, for he is the essence of Sat (the definite).

But air and sky are immaterial, are immortal, are fluid, are indefinite. The essence of that which is immaterial, which is immortal, which is fluid, which is indefinite is the person in the disk of the sun, for he is the essence of Tyad (the indefinite). So far with regard to the Devas.

Now with regard to the body. Everything except the breath and the ether within the body is material, is mortal, is solid, is definite. The essence of that which is material, which is mortal, which is solid, which is definite is the Eye, for it is the essence of Sat (the definite).

But breath and the ether within the body are immaterial, are immortal, are fluid, are indefinite. The essence of that which is immaterial, which is the person in the right eye, for he is the essence of Tyad (the indefinite).

And what is the appearance of that person ? Like a saffron-coloured raiment, like white wool, like cochineal, like the flame of fire, like the white lotus, like sudden lightning. He who knows this, his glory is like unto sudden lightning.

Next follows the teaching (of Brahman) by No, no ! (Neti, Neti) for there is nothing else higher than this (if one says) ; 'It is not so !' Then comes the name 'the True of the True,' the senses (the Jīvas) being the True, and He (the Brahman) the True of them.

SŪTRA III, 2. 22.

प्रकृतेतावत्त्वं हि प्रतिषेधति ततो ब्रवीति च भूयः ॥ ३ । २ । २२ ॥

प्रकृत Prakṛta, previously stated, the same. एतावत्त्वम् Etāvattvam, so-muchness, or the limitation of power (to the extent spoken of at first). हि Hi, because, प्रतिषेधति Pratīṣedhati, denies. ततः Tataḥ, than, that. ब्रवीति Bravīti, declares. च Cha, and. भूयः Bhūyah, more.

22. (The Śruti, Neti Neti) denies the previously mentioned limitation (only with regard to Brahman), for it declares (Him to be) more than that.—341.

#### COMMENTARY

This Śruti (Neti, Neti) does not teach that Brahman alone exists, and nothing else exists than it : and that It is without any attributes and qualities. It only denies the so-muchness of Brahman, as was described in the preceding verses. It says that the material and immaterial is not the *whole* of Brahman. It is something more than that. It does not deny the existence of those forms mentioned in the previous verses, but it says "do not fall into the error of thinking that Brahman is *so much* only Neti, Neti—it is not so much only, it is not so much only." For after the negation of Neti, Neti (which might have been liable to the nihilistic interpretation of the Advaitins, had there been no further statement), the Śruti goes on to describe in *positive* terms, the further attributes of this Brahman—His name being the True of the true. [This phrase "the True among the true ones"—not only sets aside the nihilistic theory, but the Advaita also—for it asserts the existence of other true ones—real entities, than Brahman. The Jīvas are not unreal shadows but *true* : Brahman being the *True*.]

The sense of the above teaching is this. The Śruti at first enumerates all forms of Brahman, such as the material and the immaterial, etc. But since Brahman is limitless in His Form, it declares Neti, Neti, He is not so much only, He is not so much only. The word Iti (Na+Iti=Neti,

means here "end"—Neti means "this is not the end." The Neti is, therefore, equal to Iti+Na, "end not"—the previously mentioned forms are not the end or limit of Brahman. For He is more than them—His name is True, He is the True of the true. The text itself clearly says so much :

न ह्यतस्माद् इति नेति, अन्यथ परम् ।

अस्मिन्, अथ नामधेयं सत्यस्य सत्यमिति ॥

It is not so that this is the end. There is a Higher Form than this. Its name is 'the True of the true.'

Moreover, it must not be said that higher than these material and immaterial forms is the Form of Brahman called the True, etc., and that is the end. For it is not thus—Neti. The "True of the true" is no doubt higher than all *Mūṛta* and *Amūṛta* forms, but even that is not the limit to the forms of Brahman. These are merely illustrative. The proper thing to say is that His Forms are illimitable and infinite. As an illustration, the text gives one of these Higher Forms and Names, by saying, "His name is the True of the true." The name here declares the form of Brahman. The first Satyam means the *souls*, the *Jivas* ; the Prāṇas always accompany the Jivas ; and so Satya which means Prāṇa, is a name of Jiva. The Sruti, hence, explains the phrase Satyasva Satyam, by प्राण वै सत्यं तेषामपि सत्यम् । "The Prāṇas are the True, and He is the True of them." The word Prāṇa is used for Prāṇin—the life for the living self. The word Rūpa in the above verse (II, 3, 6) means attributes. This text establishes Brahman to be material (Prākṛta), as well as immaterial (Aprākṛta), and possessing infinite number of attributes. It does not deny the existence of every substance other than Brahman (for that is not the purport of this text). All forms whether Mūṛta or Amūṛta, material or immaterial, are Prākṛtic. The forms shown in the illustrations of saffron-coloured raiment, like yellow wool, like cochineal, etc., are to be understood as non-Prākṛtic—not consisting of Prākṛtic matter (Brahman's forms are thus of both Prākṛtic and non-Prākṛtic matter, and yet there are forms above them all—Neti, Neti—for this is not all, this is not all).

The Jivas are called in the above Sruti Prāṇas : and are also designated Satyam, the True. The Jivas are called True, because they do not, like the elements, ether, etc., undergo modifications causing an alteration in their essential nature. In this respect they are similar to Brahman ; and so both the Jivas and Brahman are called True. But Brahman is the True of the True, because the Jivas undergo, in accordance with their Karmas, contractions and expansions of intelligence, but there is no such modification in Brahman.

Therefore, the Jiva is an eternal conscious entity (subject to contraction and expansion of intelligence, according to his deeds). The Supreme Self



is a mine of infinite auspicious qualities, (and liable to no modifications whatever). Thus love (Bhakti) for Brahman becomes still more natural when we contemplate on the greatness of his attributes, and the insignificance of the Jiva.

Nor does this Bṛhadāraṇyaka Śruti deny *form* to Brahman. For if that was what the Śruti intended to teach, then it would not have taught the transcendental forms of Brahman as in II, 3. 6 (he is of the colour of a saffron-coloured raiment, a yellow fine wool, etc.) ; and then deliberately demolish this teaching by saying "Brahman has no form." For no one in his right senses would say at first "Brahman has such and such form" and then say "He has no form—all that I said before is wrong." Moreover, the author of the Sūtra also would have employed different words, had that been teaching of the Śruti. For, then instead of saying Etāvattva—"the Śruti denies so-muchness only"—he would have said "Etad Rūpam Pratiśedhati"—"the Śruti denies this form of Brahman." The wording of the Sūtra, therefore, also shows that the interpretation of the Śruti above given is the right one and consistent throughout, and more reasonable.

### *Adhikaraṇa XII—The Form of the Lord.*

The author now establishes that Brahman is the Inner Self of all. For if He were as easily attainable as the external objects like the jars, pots, etc., there would be no love for Him.

*Viśaya* : In the Śruti already mentioned previously, Brahman is described as having Being, Intelligence and Bliss for His form (Sachchidānand-rūpāya, etc.)

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt: Has the Supreme Self an external form capable of being perceived through the senses, or is it an Inner Form, not to be apprehended by the senses ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The form is an external one, because men, angels and demon, see the form.

*Siddhānta* : The form is not external as is shown in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA III, 2. 23.

तदव्यक्तमाह हि ॥ ३ । २ । २३ ॥

तत् Tat, that. अव्यक्तम् Avyaktam, non-manifest, the Inner. आह Āha. says, (the scripture). हि Hi, for.

23. The form of Brahman is unmanifest, for the scripture declares it so.—342.

## COMMENTARY

The Brahman in His true form is not manifest to the external senses, it is Inner and is to be perceived by the inner sense. For says the Kāṭha Upaniṣad (VI. 9) :

न सन्दृशे तिष्ठति रूपमस्य न चक्षुषा पश्यति कश्चनैनम् ।

His form is not an object of perception to any one, nor by the eye does any one see Him.

So also the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, III., 9. 26 :

अगृह्यो न हि गृह्यते, अशीर्यो न हि शीर्यते ।

He is non-apprehensible by the senses, for He cannot be apprehended ; He is imperishable, for He cannot perish.

So also in the Gītā (VIII., 21) :

अव्यक्तोऽक्षर इत्युक्तमामुः परमां गतिम् ।

He is said to be the unmanifest, and the imperishable. Him they declare to be the Highest goal.

### Adhikaraṇa XIII—Brahman can be seen.

Though Brahman is not an external object, but Pratieta or an Inner Substance, yet He is attainable through wisdom and devotion. The author shows this next. Had He been absolutely invisible—even to those whose hearts were purified—then there could not arise any love (Bhakti) for such a being.

*Viśaya* : It is thus heard in the Kaivalya Upaniṣad (Verse 2) :

श्रद्धाभक्तियुक्तयोगादवैदि ।

Know Him through the Yoga (union) of faith, love and meditation.

From this it appears that a faithful and devoted person can obtain Hari, through meditation.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is the Lord apprehended by the mind—an object of mental perception or is he visible to eyes, etc., also ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Lord is an object of mental perception only, and not of external perception through the eyes, etc. The following text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad clearly shows this, by using the term “only” (IV., 4. 19) :

मनसेवानुद्दृष्टव्यं नेह नानास्ति किञ्चन ॥

He is to be perceived by the mind *only*, there is in Him no diversity.

*Siddhānta* : Brahman is visible to eyes also of the purified devotee, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 11.

अपि संग्रहने प्रत्यक्षानुमानाभ्याम् ॥ ३ । २ । २४ ॥

अपि Api, even though, also ; not so. The word 'Api' sets aside the Pūrvapakṣa. संग्रहने Saṁgrādhane, in conciliation, in an intensely devout worship. प्रत्यक्ष Pratyakṣa, as apparent, as directly perceptible, through Revelation. अनुमानाभ्याम् Anumānābhyām, and from inferences (i.e., through the Smṛti).

24. In devout love, (the Lord even becomes visible to the eyes, etc., of the devotee, as is taught in the) Śruti and the Smṛti.—343.

COMMENTARY

The word 'Api' is used in a deprecativ sense. The above Pūrvapakṣa is not *even* worthy of consideration. In Saṁgrādhana or absorbed devotion, the Lord becomes perceptible even to the eyes, etc., of the devotee. How do you know this? Through Revelation (Pratyakṣa or the Direct statement of the Vedas), and through Inference or the indirect inferential statements of the Smṛtis. Thus the Kāṭha Śruti says (II., 4. 1) :

पराञ्चि खानि व्यनुषृत स्वयम्भूस्तस्मात् पराङ् पश्यति नान्तरात्मन् ।

कश्चिद् धीरः प्रत्यगात्मानमैक्षत् आबृत्तचक्षुरमृतत्वमिच्छन् ।

The self-existent created the senses with outgoing tendencies ; therefore, the man sees external objects and not the Internal Self, but the wise, with the eye averted from external objects and desirous of immortality, *beholds* the Self Within.

So also in Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (III., 1. 8) :

न चक्षुषा गृह्यते नापि वाचा नान्यैर्देवैस्तपसा कर्मणा वा ।

ज्ञानप्रसादेन विशुद्धसत्त्वस्ततस्तु तं पश्यन् निष्कलं ध्यायमानम् ॥

He cannot be apprehended by the senses like the eye, nor by revealed texts, nor by the grace of any other shining one, nor by austerities and work. Through the grace of wisdom, the pure in heart, see Him who is partless, in their meditation.

This also shows that the Lord becomes visible to His wise and loving devotee.

So also in the Gītā (XI., 53 and 54) :

नाहं वेदैर्न तपसा न दानेन न :चेज्यया ।

शक्य एवैविधो द्रष्टुं दृष्टवानसि मां यथा ॥ ५३ ॥

Nor can I be seen as thou hast seen Me, by the Vedas, nor by austerities, nor by alms, nor by offerings.

भक्त्या त्वनन्यया शक्य अहमेवैविधोऽर्जुन ।

ज्ञातुं द्रष्टुं च तत्त्वेन प्रवेष्टुं च परन्तप ॥ ५४ ॥

But by devotion to me alone I may thus be perceived, Arjuna, and known and seen in essence, and entered, O Parantapa.

Thus it is established that the Blessed Hari is perceptible to the senses even, when the soul is full of entire love. The eyes, etc., then

become saturated with His essence and become fit to see Him, and so He is seen through such purified eyes.

This being so, the force of *Eva* in मनमेवानुद्ध्यः "He is to be apprehended by the mind alone" is not that of exclusion of other means of knowing Him, but teaches that the mind also can know Him. [The word *Eva* should be translated by *even* and not by *only*. He can be known by the mind *even*.]

It does not mean that the senses, like the eye, etc., cannot comprehend Him. They also can comprehend Him, under certain circumstances.

SŪTRA III., 2. 25.

प्रकाशादिवच्चावैशेष्यम् ॥ ३ । २ । २५ ॥

[ न Na, not]. प्रकाशादिवत् Prakāśadivat, as in the case of fire, etc. च Cha, and. अवैशेष्यम् Avaiśeṣyam, non-difference, non-distinctions.

25. The Lord is not like fire and the rest, for there are not such distinctions in Him.—344.

COMMENTARY

The word *not* is to be read into this Sūtra from the preceding aphorism, III., 2. 19. As the fire has two states, coarse and fine, and is unmanifest when in the subtle state, and becomes manifest when in the coarse state; such is not the case with the Lord. Because, there are not distinctions of subtle and gross in Him. The Śruti says: अस्थूलमनरावहृष्वमदीर्घम् (Br. Up., III., 8. 8.) "He is neither coarse nor fine, neither short nor long, etc."

So also in the Garuḍa Purāṇa:

स्थूलमृक्षमविशेषोऽव न कश्चित् परमेश्वरः ।

सर्वत्रैव प्रकाशोऽसौ सर्वरूपेष्वत्रो यतः ॥

In the supreme Lord there are no distinctions of subtle and coarse, because that Unborn is manifest verily everywhere in every form.

But there are persons who have full devotion and love towards God, how is it that they have not seen Him? It is not a universal rule, therefore, that any one who loves God must see God.

To this objection, the next Sūtra gives the answer.

SŪTRA III., 2. 26.

प्रकाशश्च कर्मण्यभ्यासात् ॥ ३ । २ । २६ ॥

प्रकाशः Prakāśah, light, manifestation, the shining out. च Cha, and. It removes the doubt mentioned above. कर्मणि Karmanī, in practice (of devotion). अभ्यासात् Abhyāsāt, through constant application.

26. And the Lord becomes manifest, by repeated practice (in meditation).—345.

## COMMENTARY

[In the Karman or act consisting in meditation on Him, in the acts like worshipping Him, etc., by constant repetition in such acts (of meditation and worship), the Lord verily becomes visible.]

It is by *constant repetition* of the acts like meditation and worship that the Lord shines forth. [If some devotees have not seen Him, it is because they have not been constant in their practice of meditation. It is *Abhyāsa* or constant repetition, which produces the state of ecstasy, in which the Lord is seen.] As says the Dhyāna-vindu Upaniṣad 18 (so also Brahma Up.):

स्वदेहं अरणिं कृत्वा प्रणवं चोत्तरारणिम् ।

ध्याननिर्मयनाभ्यासाद् देवं पश्येन् निगूढवत् ॥

Making one's body as the lower fire stick and the syllable Om as the upper stick, and by the practice of constant rubbing them through meditation, let him see the God, hidden in him.

Thus it is Abhyāsa or repetition, that makes the hidden Lord manifest, as the constant rubbing of the sticks brings out the fire. It is by Abhyāsa that one gets the love for the Lord and through such love, he gets ultimately the vision of the Beloved. But no one can see the Lord by mere worship (done for some selfish purpose such as to get heaven, etc.) without love. As says a text (Brahma Vaivarta):

न तमाराधयित्वापि कश्चिद् व्यक्तीकरिष्यति ।

नित्याव्यक्तो यतो देवः परमात्मा सनातनः ॥

No one by worship alone can make Him become manifest: For the God, the Ancient Supreme Self, is ever unmanifest.

This uselessness of worship and prayer refers to selfish prayers and worship, and not to the whole-hearted prayer of love. It is the prayer, devoid of love, which is incapable of producing divine vision.

Says an objector: How can the Lord, who is all-pervading and inside all, become manifest and come out? It is a contradiction in terms. Therefore, the statement that the Lord can become directly visible is valueless, inasmuch as it contradicts the all-pervading inwardness of the Lord.

This objection is answered by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 27.

अतोऽनन्तेन तथाहि लिङ्गम् ॥ ३ । २ । २७ ॥

अतः Atah, hence. अनन्तेन Anantena, through (the grace of) the Lord who is infinite. तथा Tathā, thus (i.e., direct vision). हि Hi, because. लिङ्गम् Liṅgam, the indication or authority (of the scripture).

27. Hence the direct vision is possible through the infinite grace of the Lord; and there is scriptural authority for the same.—346.

COMMENTARY

There are authorities to support both the statements, that the Lord is unmanifest, and becomes manifest to the sight of the devoutly meditating worshipper. Hence though the Lord is unmanifest, infinite and unbounded, yet when he is pleased with His devotee, He manifests His essential Form to him, through His mysterious power of grace.

But how do you say this? Because there is scriptural authority for the same. As says the Âtharvāṇa Śruti:

“That Form of Intelligence and Bliss one mass of Being and Bliss—becomes visible to the devotee through the meditation of love.”

Similarly, in the Nârâyāṇa Adhyâtma:

नित्याव्यक्तोऽपि भगवान्, ईक्षते निश्चितः ।

नाश्नुते परमात्मानं कः पर्येतामिनं प्रभुम् ॥

Though the Lord is ever manifest, yet He becomes visible through His own powers (to the elect). Without the grace of that Supreme Self, who can see Him, the Unbounded, Infinite Lord.

The Lord Himself has said so in the Gîtâ (VII., 24):

अव्यक्तं व्यक्तमापन्नं मन्यन्ते मामबुद्धयः ।

परं भावमजानन्तो ममाव्ययमनुत्तमम् ॥ २४ ॥

Those devoid of reason think of Me, the unmanifest, as having manifestation, knowing not My supreme nature, imperishable, most excellent.

Though the Lord is thus manifest to the eye of love, yet this fact does not detract from the essential invisibility of His Self. For this manifestation to His Lovers is an exercise of His mysterious power of Self. But with regard to persons devoid of love, the Lord never manifests in His essential form, but as a reflection. For says He in the Gîtâ, (VII., 25):

नार्हं प्रकाशः सर्वस्य योगमायासमावृतः ।

मूढोऽयं नाभिजानाति लोको मामजमव्ययम् ॥ २५ ॥

Not am I of all discovered, enveloped in My creation-illusion. This deluded world knoweth Me not, the unborn, the imperishable.

Therefore, though the Lord is essentially all love, mercy and supreme joy, yet to the worldly He *appears* as a Being of all Terrible Power, a God of Vengeance and Wrath.

Thus the term “unmanifest,” when applied to the Lord, means that He is unmanifest to the eyes of those who have no love for Him; [but He suffuses the eyes of His lovers as the fire suffuses through an iron ball, and they see nothing but the Lord].

*Adhikaraṇa XIV—Attributes are the substance of the Lord.*

Now the author establishes that the attributes of the Lord are not different from the essential nature of the Lord. For if the attributes were different from the Lord, then they would become secondary, and the Bhakti for the Lord would also become secondary (for the man loves the Lord for His attributes). But this is not the case. The love for the attributes of the Lord, is a love for the sake of the attributes themselves as something principal and loveable in themselves, and not for something as secondary.

*Viśaya:* We have the texts:

विज्ञानमानन्दं ब्रह्म । The Brahman is intelligence and bliss.

यः सर्वज्ञः सर्वविद् । He who is Omniscient and All-knowing.

आनन्दं ब्रह्मणो विद्वान् Knowing that Brahman as bliss.

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt, is this Brahman who is to be adored and loved, mere intelligence and bliss, or one possessed of intelligence and bliss? (In other words, is He a personal God having the attributes of intelligence and bliss, or is it pure intelligence and bliss?)

*Pūrvapakṣa:* As there are texts of both sorts, some showing Brahman to be personal, others impersonal, it is not possible to determine what is the true nature of Brahman—whether it is pure intelligence and bliss, or whether He is the all-intelligent and the blissful one.

*Siddhānta:* The next Sūtra shows that the Lord is a personal being.

SŪTRA III., 2. 28.

उभयव्यपदेशात्त्वहिकुण्डलवत् ॥ ३ । २ । २८ ॥

उभय Ubhaya, (about being) both. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, on account of the declaration of the scripture. तु Tu, but. अहि Ahi, like the serpent. कुण्डलवत् Kuṇḍalavat, like the coils.

28. But the Lord is both (bliss and blissful, etc.) for the Scripture thus declares Him, as the snake and its coils.—347.

## COMMENTARY

Brahman has intelligence and bliss as His essential nature; He is essentially knowledge and bliss, and these are His attributes also: as the serpent and its coils. The coils constitute the serpent, and are not separate from the serpent, yet they are also attributes of the serpent. How do you know this? Because the above Śrutis describe Him as two-fold. The force of तु 'but' is to indicate that all Śrutis have one purport. The Lord being inconceivable He appears as bliss and blissful, etc. It cannot be said, "as there are both sorts of texts, Brahman is partly blissful, and partly bliss, etc." For there are no Svagata-bheda in Brahman—He is one

essence throughout like a diamond : and is not a unity like that of a tree which has internal differences, like root, leaves, flowers.

SŪTRA III., 2. 29.

प्रकाशश्चयवद्वा तेजस्वान् ॥ ३ । २ । २९ ॥

प्रकाश Prakaśa, like the light. आश्रयवत् Āśrayavat, like the abode of light. वा Vā, or. तेजस्वान् Tejastvāt, on account of His being of a lustrous character, *i.e.*, being essentially all-sentiency and consciousness.

29. Or because Brahman is of a lustrous character, He is designated as the abode of Light.—348.

COMMENTARY

Because Brahman is Tejas or all-sentiency, He is designated also as the abode of light, *i. e.*, the abode of knowledge. As the sun which is essentially light is said also to be the abode of light, so the Lord Hari whose essential nature is knowledge, (Jñāna) is said to be the abode of knowledge also. An object is called lustrous or Tejas, who or which is opposite of ignorance or darkness. It is a term applied to both persons and things.

SŪTRA III., 2. 30.

पूर्ववद्वा ॥ ३ । २ । ३० ॥

पूर्ववत् Pūrvavat, as in the prior time. वा Vā, or.

30. (Brahman is both bliss and blissful, as one indivisible Time is said to be) prior (and posterior).—349.

COMMENTARY

Or to take another illustration. As time is a duration, and has neither priority nor posteriority in it, but is one, and yet is spoken of as prior and posterior, and itself becomes the measure and the measured, so also Brahman is both knowledge and the knower, both blissful and bliss : both the attribute and the thing having an attribute. This illustration from time is meant for subtler intellects, as that of serpent and his coils was for dull-witted. In fact, each succeeding illustration is subtler than the one given in the preceding Sūtra. As it is in the Brahma Purāṇa (Padma according to Mādhva) :

आनन्देन त्वभिन्नेन व्यवहारः प्रकाशवत् ।

पूर्ववद्वा यथा कालः स्वावच्छेदकतां भजेत् ॥

Through Brahman is non-different from bliss (He is bliss and blissful), yet conventionally He is spoken of as separate from bliss (as possessing bliss), just like the light (in the case of the sun, which is both light and the abode of light) ; or like prior and posterior time, where the indivisible Time becomes its own measure.



SŪTRA III, 2. 31.

प्रतिषेधाच्च ॥ ३ । २ । ३१ ॥

प्रतिषेधाच्च Pratiṣedhācch, because of the denouncement or prohibition च Cha, and : has the force of 'only' : exclusion.

31. And because of the prohibition (in the Scriptures, which declare that the Lord and His attributes are not to be considered as different).—350.

COMMENTARY

Thus in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad (II., 4. 11 and 14) :

गन्तव्येदमाप्तव्यं नेह नानास्ति किञ्चन ।

मृत्यो स मृत्युं गच्छति य दह नानेव पश्यति ॥

Even through the purified mind this knowledge is to be obtained, that there is no difference whatsoever here (in the attributes of the Lord). From death to death he goes, who beholds this here with difference.

यथोदकं दुर्गं तृष्टं पर्वतेषु विधावति ।

पद्मे धर्मान्मृशकः पश्यंस्तानेव नुविधावति ॥

As water falling on an inaccessible mountain top runs down, thus seeing the qualities of the Lord as separate from the Lord a man runs down to Darkness.

Nor is there any Svagata-bheda in the Lord, as the following text of the Nārada Pañcharātra shows :

निर्दोषपूर्णगुणविग्रह आत्मतन्त्रो-

निरन्तेनोत्तमक-शरीरगुणैश्च हीनः ।

आनन्दमात्रकरपादमुखोदरादिः

सर्वत्र च स्वगतभेदविवर्जितात्मा ॥

The Lord is an entity having perfect and faultless qualities. He is the Ātman or the Self and free from all the attributes of the body consisting of insentient matter. He too has a body -hands, feet, face, stomach, etc., but all of pure bliss (not of matter). That Ātman is everywhere and always devoid of internal differences also.

Thus these texts prohibit any difference between the quality and the qualified, and consequently the qualities of the Lord (are not accidents, as is generally the case with all qualities, but) are the essential nature of the Lord. Therefore, the qualities like knowledge, etc., are sometimes designated by the term "Lord." As says the Viṣṇu Purāṇa :

ज्ञानशक्तिबलैश्वर्यवीर्यतेजांस्यशेषतः ।

भगवच्छब्दवाच्यानि विना हेयैर्गुणादिभिः ॥

The word Lord denotes infinite knowledge, power, strength, lordliness, energy and lustre, without the admixture of any baser qualities.

Thus these qualities are called Bhagavān or Lord. The *two* (the

Lord and His attributes) are spoken of separately—though they are essentially *one*—just as the water and its waves are spoken of separately as *two*, though it is all *one* water. The difference arises from this Viśeṣa. Therefore, the Lord who is ever joy and bliss, is said to be joyful and blissful and to have a body of all delight. All these qualities of the Lord are eternal, and consequently that *body* of the Lord is also eternal. Though there is no distinction (Viśeṣa strictly so called) here between the quality and the qualified, yet for conventional purposes such a (Viśeṣa) distinction is recognised and spoken of as such. If this conventional (Viśeṣa) distinction be not admitted, then the sentences like the following would also become absurd (for they are really tautologies when logically analysed) : “The being exists,” “the time always exists,” “the space is everywhere.” All these sentences are logical tautologies, but they are of constant use and good as conventions. Nor can it be said that such a usage is erroneous and is based upon delusion. For the phrase “the Be-ness exists” conveys as true an information as the sentence “the jar exists.” For there is no subsequent experience which sublates this knowledge. Nor is the sentence “the Be-ness exists,” is a superimposition or a figurative speech like “Devadatta is a lion.” For we can never say of Be-ness that it does not exist, as we can say of Devadatta that he is not a lion. Nor can it be said that such a usage is a natural one, though there is no concrete content of any substance in these sentences like “the Be-ness exists.” The very fact that such usage is natural shows that in these sentences also there is a Viśeṣa. The existence of such Viśeṣa is suggested by the expressive illustration of the water flowing down a hill. The man who makes a distinction between the Lord and His attributes goes down to darkness, like the water that falls on a mountain top. In that verse there is a prohibition of all difference between the Lord and His attributes which are described there. In the absence of such conventional difference, there cannot be the possibility of the relationship of quality and qualified, merely because there are many qualities. The category called Viśeṣa (the specific attribute) therefore exists, even here, though it is not here separate from the substance, but still has a particular function of its own. Nor is it open to the objection of *regressus in infinitum*, that a Viśeṣa must have a Viśeṣa of its own, and so on. For we have said above, that the Viśeṣa here though not separable from the substance (*i.e.*, the Lord) has a function of its own with regard to that substance. Therefore, the existence of Viśeṣa is proved here also, as it is an invariable concomitant of the substance to which it appertains.

*Note :* The whole discussion about Viśeṣa is necessitated by the fact that there is a theory held by some Nyaiyāyikas that qualities are non-eternal, and are accidental. Some deny also the category called Viśeṣa. The substance alone is eternal and the Viśeṣa is non-eternal. In this view, the Viśeṣa or the quality becomes non-eternal, if it exists at all. The qualities of the Lord also become non-eternal. But in the case of

Brahman the qualities are eternal : therefore, Viśeṣa, which is ordinarily different from the substance, becomes the substance in the case of the Lord. The quality becomes the qualified the Viśeṣa becomes the Dharmin.

### *Adhikaraṇa XV—Bliss of the Lord is the highest.*

Now the author establishes that the bliss of the Lord Hari is the highest. Had that bliss been similar to that of the Jiva, there would arise then no love (Bhakti) for such a Lord.

*Viśaya* : The texts under this Adhikaraṇa are all those which describe the bliss of the Lord.

*Doubt* : Is there any difference between the Brāhmic and the Jaivic bliss or is there not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : There is no difference for the Divine bliss is described in the terms of ordinary worldly bliss, etc., an object denoted by the term “jar,” cannot be different from jar.

*Siddhānta* : The bliss of the Lord is immeasurable, and cannot be stated in terms of worldly bliss, as shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III. 2. 32.

परमं मेतून्मानमम्बन्धभेदव्यपदेशेभ्यः ॥ ३ । २ । ३२ ॥

परम् Param, higher than. अतः Atah, from this (worldly bliss). सेतु Setu, about a bridge (as in Chh. Up, VIII, 1. 1). उन्मान Ummāna, about being beyond measure (as in Br. Up, VI, 1. 23). सम्बन्ध Sambandha, about relation, the proportionate ratio between the two blisses. भेद Bheda, about difference. व्यपदेशेभ्यः Vyapadeśebhyah, from the declarations.

32. (The bliss, etc., of Brahman are) higher than this, as the declarations of “the bridge,” “the immeasurableness,” “the relative ratio” and “the difference” show this.—351.

#### COMMENTARY

The bliss, etc., of Brahman must not be considered like those of the Jivas. It is infinitely higher in kind and quality. Why do we say so ? Because the words used regarding it such as ‘the bridge’ etc., show this. Thus in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VIII, 1. 1, it is said :

अथ य आत्मा स सेतुर्विधृतिरेषा लोकाणामसंभेदाय ।

Now this Self is a bridge, and a support, so that these worlds may be kept separate.

Here the bliss of Brahman is described as a bridge supporting the whole universe.

So also in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II, 1. 1, the bliss of Brahman is said to be infinite (Uṁmāna)

यतो वानो निर्वर्तन्ते अप्राप्य मनसा न्ह, आनन्दं ब्रह्मणो विद्वान न विभेति ब्रह्मवत ।

He who knows this bliss of Brahman from which the speech together with the mind return (unable to fully grasp it and describe it), without comprehending it, is never afraid.

This shows that the bliss of Brahman is immeasurable.

The ratio between the bliss of the Lord and of a human being is that between infinity and one. As says the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 3. 32 :

एषोऽस्य परम आनन्दः ; एतस्यैवानन्दस्य अन्यानि भूतानि मात्रामुपजीवन्ति ॥

This is His highest bliss. All other creatures live on a small portion of that bliss.

This shows the relation between the Divine and human bliss.

The difference between the Divine knowledge and the human knowledge is also shown clearly in the following verse :

अन्यञ् ज्ञानन्तु जीवानां, अन्यञ् ज्ञानं परम्य न ।

नित्यानन्दाव्ययं पूर्णं परं ज्ञानं विधीयते ॥

The knowledge of the Jivas is one thing, the knowledge of the Supreme is another. The knowledge of the Supreme is declared to be eternal, blissful, immutable and perfect.

In the worldly bliss are not to be found these qualities of being a bridge, etc.

The following Sūtra answers the objection that an object designated by the word 'jar' cannot be totally different from a jar.

SŪTRA III, 2. 33.

सामान्यात्तु ॥ ३ । २ । ३३ ॥

सामान्यात् Sāmānyāt, on account of being perceptible, or from resemblance. तु Tu, and, but. This word removes the doubt.

33. But (the word bliss is applied to human joy, merely) on account of generic resemblance (and not because the two blisses are of the similar nature).—352.

COMMENTARY

As even one word 'jar' is applied to all kinds of jars, because all possess the common quality of being a jar ; so the words bliss, etc., are applied to human as well as to divine bliss, etc., merely as a common term, and do

not indicate any further similarity between the two. It is not necessary that the two should be individually similar, though they may belong to the same category. Thus says a text :

परज्ञानमयोऽतदभिर्नामत्रात्यादिभिर्विभुः ।

न योषवान् न युक्तोऽभून् नैव पार्थिव योद्धति ॥

The all-pervading Lord is possessed of supreme knowledge, etc., is ever untainted with the name and species of the qualities of matter : He is never touched by them, or was touched by them, or will ever be touched by them, O king.

The knowledge of the Supreme is thus different from human knowledge.

If Brahman, the substratum of all attributes, is distinct from the whole universe consisting of sentient and insentient objects, then how do you explain the following teaching of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, III, 14. 1, which declares the whole world to be Brahman :

सर्वं खल्विदं ब्रह्म, तज्जवानिति शान्त उपासीत ।

All this is verily Brahman. It is produced from Him, lives in Him and merges in Him. Let one meditate calmly on Him thus.

The next Sūtra answers this doubt.

SŪTRA., III., 2. 34.

बुद्ध्यर्थः पादवत् ॥ ३ । २ । ३४ ॥

बुद्ध्यर्थः Buddhyarthah, to aid the understanding पादवत् Padavat, as in the case of the word "Foot."

34. This teaching is in order to aid the understanding, just like the word "Foot" (in the R̥g Veda, X. 90. 3, where the world is spoken of as the foot of Brahman).—353.

#### COMMENTARY

The whole world is said to be Brahman in order to help the understanding in realising Him, by cognising that every thing is His and is dependent upon Him. As in the R̥g Veda, X. 90. 3, the whole universe is said to be one foot of Brahman while His three other feet are in Heaven. That metaphor is also meant to help the understanding to realise Brahman. When the mind realises that everything belongs to Brahman, 'Sarvam khalvidam Brahman,' and Brahman is in every thing, then its hatred ceases, for then it can hate no one ; and when all hatreds and prejudices, national, racial or otherwise, cease, then the mind becomes fit to be inclined towards the Lord. The texts like these do not teach that one should feel attraction for everything, for then that also would be a distraction of understanding. The sole object of all these texts is to teach that one should hate no one, nor love any one more than God.

*Adhikarāṇa XVI—Brahman is not monotonous.*

Says an objector : Admitted that Brahman has infinite bliss, etc., yet it cannot be an object of devout love, because there is dull monotony in it. The mind seeks variety in its object of love.

The author, therefore, now shows that there is such variety of manifestation also in the object of adoration, the blessed Lord Hari. This variety is necessary in order to meet the wants of the various emotional temperaments, and the various moods of one and the same Bhakta. For if the Lord had not this variety, there would not have existed these various sorts of Bhaktis. These various manifestations of the Lord are each eternal, because the place, etc., where these manifestations (Bhāṇa) are to be found, are also beginningless. The texts like "though one, He shines forth as many," show that though there are varieties of manifestation of the Lord, yet in all those places, etc., where such manifestations are taking place, the Lord is one. It is one Brahman that shines forth in all these places.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Does there occur any decrease or increase—any distinctions—in these manifestations, owing to their being various? Are some manifestations full and complete, and others less full and partial?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : All manifestations are equally full and perfect for the substance manifesting is one, and so all its manifestations must be similar, for all words which are synonyms give rise to the same conception. So there is no difference in these manifestations.

*Siddhānta* : The manifestations are different, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 35.

स्थानविशेषात् प्रकाशादिवत् ॥ ३ । २ । ३५ ॥

स्थानविशेषात् Sthāna-viśeṣāt, from the peculiarity of the place. प्रकाशादिवत् Prakāśādīvat, as in the case of (the sun's) light, etc.

35. There is difference in the manifestations of Brahman on account of the peculiarity of place, etc., where He manifests, as in the case of the light of the sun.—354.

## COMMENTARY

Though the essential form of Brahman is indeed one, yet owing to the differences of the places of manifestation, and the differences of the

natures of the souls (Bhaktas, devotees), there arise differences in the manifestations of Brahman. In some He manifests His Lordliness, in others His Loveliness, in others His Peacefulness, etc., according as the Bhakti relation is that of a master and servant, the lover and the beloved the quiet meditating Yogi and the object of meditation, etc. Thus as the one light of a lamp burning in a temple assumes different manifestations, as it falls on the different parts of it, according as it is a crystalline surface, or a wall embedded with rubies, or painted yellow, etc. Or as one air, passing through various musical instruments, produces different notes, sharp, high, flat, etc., as the instrument is a conch shell, lute, drum, etc., so the one Brahman manifests as many hued, according to the difference of the receptacle.

The sense in this. Where there is the manifestation of the Supreme Lordliness of Brahman, there the Bhakti is moved and guided by Law. [All staid and sober Bhaktas love the Lord, as the slave loves the master: Their God is a God of Power and Glory.] It is like the light of a lamp burning in a temple made of pure white crystal—where the reflected light is pure in its brilliancy and is dazzling in its effect. But where in addition to Lordliness, there is manifestation of the Loveliness of Brahman also, there the Bhakti is moved not by the fear of the law, but by the force of love. There the light is less dazzling but more sweet—it is the light burning in a temple made of rosy rubies.

Thus Bhakti is different according to the emotional nature of the Bhaktas, i.e., the worshipers of the Lord.

SŪTRA III., 2. 36.

उपपत्तेश्च ॥ ३ । २ । ३६ ॥

उपपत्तेः Upapatteh, because of the possibility: of the reasonableness. च Cha, and.

36. And so the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (III., 14. 1.) becomes appropriate.—355.

#### COMMENTARY

According to this explanation, the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad III., 14. 1., also becomes reasonable. It says "as is one's faith (Kratu), so is his reward" which means that according to the nature of one's Bhakti, is the vision of the Lord in the next life.

Thus it is established that one Brahman has different manifestations, according to the differences of the receptacles in which He shines forth.

*Adhikaraṇa XVII—The Lord is the Highest.*

The author now establishes that the Lord is the Highest. For if there exists any other Being higher than the Lord, then there cannot arise Bhakti for such a Lord.

*Viśaya* : In the Śvetaśvatara Upaniṣad we read (III., 8) :

वेदाहमेतं पुरुषं महान्तम्

I know that great Person.

This and the subsequent verses describe the Brahman as the Highest. But then it says in III., 10. ततो यदुत्तरतर तदरूपं, etc., "that which is beyond that (Brahman) is without form, etc." This shows that there is something beyond Brahman and therefore higher than Brahman.

*Doubt* : Is there any object higher than Brahman who is the object of our worship ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : There is something higher than Brahman, as the above text shows.

*Siddhānta* : The following Sūtra refutes this.

SŪTRA III., 2. 37.

तथाऽन्यपत्तिषेधात् ॥ ३ । २ । ३७ ॥

तथा Tathā, similarly, so Brahman is the highest. अन्य Anya, of the other, of the higher. पत्तिषेधात् Pratiṣeḍhāt, owing to the denial or prohibition (to look upon).

37. Thus Brahman alone is the Highest, because there is denial of any other higher being.—356.

## COMMENTARY

Thus Brahman is the Highest of all, because the Scriptures deny the existence of any other higher entity. In the same Śvetaśvatara Upaniṣad we find (III., 9) :

यस्मात् परं नापरमस्ति किञ्चिद्

यस्मान् नाणीयो न ज्यायोस्ति किञ्चित् ।

To whom there is nothing superior, from whom there is nothing different, than whom there is nothing smaller or larger.

Thus this very Upaniṣad refutes the idea of any higher being than Brahman. The full text of the Śvetaśvatara is not open to the interpretation put upon it by the Pūrvapakṣin. The whole verse is given below :

वेदाहमेतं पुरुषं महान्तं, आदित्यवर्णं तमसः परस्तात् ।

तमेव विदित्वाऽतिमृत्युमेति, नान्यः पन्था विद्यतेऽयनाय ॥

I know that Great Person, of sun-like lustre, beyond the darkness. A man who knows Him truly, passes over death ; there is no other path to go.



This teaches that the knowing of this Great Person is the only path to liberation, there is no other path than such knowledge. Having taught this the Śruti goes on to strengthen this position by saying (III, 9) :

This whole universe is filled by this Person, to whom there is nothing superior, from whom there is nothing different, than whom there is nothing smaller or larger, who stands alone, fixed like a tree in the sky.

This verse also shows that the Brahman is the Highest, and that it is impossible for any other being to be equal to or higher than Him.

Then comes the tenth verse (which has been distorted by the Pûrvapakṣin, as teaching that there is something higher than Brahman). To show that the interpretation of the opposite party is wrong, the whole of the verse is given below :

ततो यदुत्तरतरं तदरूपं अनामयं, यत्र तद्विदुरमृतास्ते भवन्त्यथेतरे दुःखमेवापि यन्ति ।

That which is beyond this (world), that is without form and without suffering. They who know Him, become immortal, but others suffer pain indeed.

"That which is beyond this"—does not mean "that which is beyond this Brahman," but "beyond this world." In fact, this verse also teaches the same as the preceding verse—namely, that there is nothing higher than Brahman. The word "Tataḥ"—'than this' should not be taken as applying to Brahman. The whole context is against such interpretation. If the interpretation of the Pûrvapakṣin be taken as correct, then the statements in the preceding verses 8 and 9 would become false, for they say that there is nothing higher than Brahman. Even the Lord Himself has declared in the Gītā (VII, 7) :

मत्तः परतरं नान्यत्किञ्चिदस्ति धनञ्जय ।

मयि सर्वमिदं प्रोतं सुत्रे मखिगणा इव ॥

There is naught whatsoever higher than I, O Dhanañjaya. All this is threaded on Me, as rows of pearls on a string.

Thus there is nothing higher than the Lord.

### *Adhikaraṇa XVIII—The Lord is All-pervading.*

Now in order to show that the object of adoration is always near, the author teaches the all-pervadingness of the Lord. For if the Lord were not ever near, there would be discouragement in the heart, and so there would arise looseness of love (If the Lord were at a great distance, how could the worshipper reach Him and how could he feel any love for such an absent far-off deity ?)

*Viśaya* : The Śrutis declare (Gopāla Pûrva Tâpani) :

एको वशी सर्वगः कृष्ण ईश्वरः, एकोऽपि सन् बहुधा यो विभाति ।

Kṛṣṇa, the adorable, is one, the controller of all, and all-pervading. Though one, He shines forth as many.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is this Hari the object of meditation, something limited, or all-pervading ?

*Pūrvapakṣā* : The Lord is limited. In experience He appears to have a middle size (neither atomic nor all-pervading). Moreover, in worshipping Him, He is looked upon as different from all the world and its modifications. Therefore, the world is excluded from Brahman—and thus it limits Brahman ; for Brahman is not where the world is. Thus for both these reasons, the Lord is a limited entity and is not all-pervading.

*Siddhānta* : The Lord is all-pervading, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 38.

अनेन सर्वगतत्वमायामशब्दादिभ्यः ॥ ३ । २ । ३८ ॥

अनेन Ânena, from him, by the Supreme Person. सर्वगतत्वं Sarvagatatvam, being present everywhere. आयाम Âyâma, about occupying all space, or about extent. शब्दादिभ्यः Śabdâdibhyaḥ, from scriptural statements, etc.

38. (Even in the Middle Form), there is the all-pervadingness of this Supreme Person, because of the scriptural statements, like occupying all space, etc.—357.

#### COMMENTARY

The Supreme Person, even in His Middle Form, is endowed with the quality of all-pervadingness. Not only the atomic and the infinite forms are all-pervading, but this Middle Form—the form worshipped by men, is also all-pervading. Why do we say so ? Because the word Âyâma or occupying all space is used about this Middle Form also. The word “Âdi,” “and the like,” in the Sūtra shows that the Lord possesses also inconceivable powers, etc., by which even in His Middle Form He is all-pervading. Thus the text of the Gopāla Pūrvā Tāpanī quoted above (Sarvagaḥ Kṛṣṇaḥ) shows that the Middle Form Kṛṣṇa is all-pervading also. Similarly, the following text of the Taittiriya Âraṇyaka corroborates the same view :

यच्च किञ्चिज् जगत् सर्वं दृश्यते श्रूयतेऽपि वा ।

अन्तर्बहिश्च तत् सर्वं व्याप्य नारायणः स्थितः ॥

Nārāyaṇa exists pervading all—inside and outside—all whatsoever that is seen or heard in this world.

This also shows the all-pervadingness of the Middle Form, the form Nārāyaṇa. This all-pervadingness of the Middle Form is through the

inconceivable mysterious power of the Lord. He Himself says in the Gītā (IX., 4 and 5) :

मया ततमिदं सर्वं जगदव्यक्तमूर्तिना ।

मत्स्थानि सर्वभूतानि न चाहं तेष्ववस्थितः ॥

By Me all this world is pervaded in My unmanifested aspect ; all beings have root in Me, I am not rooted in them.

न च मत्स्थानि भूतानि पश्य मे योगमैश्वरम् ।

भूतभृन्न च भूतस्थो ममात्मा भूतभावनः ॥

Nor have beings root in Me ; behold My sovereign Yoga ! The support of beings, yet not rooted in beings, My Self their efficient cause.

Nor does the Lord become limited by the existence of other worldly objects. The Lord is not excluded from the space occupied by such objects. For the above text says, "He is inside and outside every thing." Therefore, another illustration speaks of Him "as the butter in the curd, as the oil in the sesamum seed." Therefore, it is proved that Hari is a worthy object of worship, as He is all-pervading. This is further demonstrated in the narrative of Śrī Kṛṣṇa in the Tenth Skandha, where He is bound by a cord which gave Him the name of Dāmodara. In the Bhāgavata (Tenth Skandha) it is thus said by Sūka :

न चान्तर्न बहिर्वस्य न पूर्वं नापि चापरम् ।

पूर्वापरं बहिश्चान्तर्, जगतो यो, जगच्च यः ॥

तं मत्वात्मजमव्यक्तं मर्त्यलिङ्गमधोक्षजम् ।

गोपिकोलुखले दाक्ष्या बबन्ध प्राकृतं यथा ॥

He who has neither inside nor outside, neither front nor back, but who is both inside and outside of the world, in its front and in its back, yea, who is the world itself—Him considering as her son, as a mortal child, Him the unchangeable and Immutable, the cowherdess bound by a cord, as if He was an ordinary infant.

The reason of this has been given by us before under the Sūtra अर्भकौकस्तवाद्, etc.

### *Adhikaraṇa XIX—The Lord is the Giver of all fruits.*

The author now describes that the Lord is the giver of all fruits. Otherwise, if He did not give rewards of actions, or gave inadequate rewards, He would be considered as a niggardly person and no Bhakti would flow towards Him.

*Viśaya :* In the Praśna Upaniṣad, III., 7, we read :

पुण्येण पुण्यं लोकं नयति ।

He leads them to the world of the virtuous who have done virtuous deeds.

*Doubt :* Here arises the doubt—Are the rewards, such as Heaven, etc., the effect of sacrifices alone, or are they given by the Supreme Lord ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : They are results of sacrifices, etc. He who does good acts gets heaven, he who does not do good acts does not get heaven. There is no scope for the Lord here.

*Siddhānta* : The following Sūtra refutes this.

SŪTRA III., 2. 39.

फलमत उपपत्ते. ॥ ३ । २ । ३९ ॥

फलम् Phalam, the fruit. अतः Atah, from him only. उपपत्तेः Upapattēh, because it is possible, reasonable.

39. The fruit is given by Him only, for that is the more reasonable view to hold.—358.

COMMENTARY

Heaven, etc., which are the fruits of sacrifices, etc., are awarded by the Supreme Lord alone, because it is more reasonable to believe that an eternal, omniscient, omnipotent, all-compassionate Being awards such rewards, than that any inert entity like sacrifice, etc., which is transient, gives such reward. The Lord, pleased by the performance of sacrifices, etc., by men gives the reward in proper time, though after a certain lapse of it. But sacrifices themselves are non-intelligent forces, they cease to exist as soon as performed, it is not possible for them to award their fruits. The acts by themselves are non-efficient. It is the moral Ruler who awards rewards and punishments—not arbitrarily, but according to one's deeds.

The author now gives a proof of this in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 40.

श्रुतत्वाच्च ॥ ३ । २ । ४० ॥

श्रुतत्वात् Śrutatvât, because of the declaration of the Śruti. च Cha, also.

40. Because the Śruti also declares that Brahman awards all rewards of action.—359.

COMMENTARY

In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad III., 9. 28, we read :

विज्ञानमानन्दं ब्रह्म रातिर्दातुः परायणं, तिष्ठमानस्य तद्विदः ।

Brahman who is knowledge and bliss, is the principle, both to him who gives gifts and also to him who stands firm and knows.

So also in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad IV., 4. 24 :

स वा एष महानज आत्मा अन्नादो वसुदानो, विदते वसु य एवं वेद ।

This indeed is the great, the unborn Self, the strong, the giver of wealth. He who knows this obtains wealth.

Thus these texts of the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad show that the reward is given by the Lord.

The "giver of gifts" in the above passage, means the Yajamâna, the sacrificer. The word Râtiḥ in the above means the fruit-producing.

The author now states a different opinion as held by some.

SŪTRA III., 2. 41.

धर्मं जैमिनिरतएव ॥ ३ । २ । ४१ ॥

धर्मम् Dharmam, Dharma, the performance of the duty (as the reward-giver) जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini (holds). अतःएव Ataheva, from Him only.

41. According to Jaimini, Dharma (which directly gives the rewards of actions), arises from Him (the Lord).—360.

COMMENTARY

Jaimini holds that Dharma alone comes from Him, the Supreme Lord, and not the fruit. The very Karma (which directly gives the fruit) comes from the Lord. For says a Śruti (Kauṣ. Up., III., 8.) :

एव हेनैनं साधु कर्म कारयति तं यं एभ्यो लोकेभ्य उन्नतिषते ।

He makes him do good works whom He wishes to take to higher worlds.

According to Jaimini, it is not necessary to hold that the fruit of work is directly given by the Lord. For Karma alone has the power of producing such fruit, by the rule of agreement and difference. Where there is good Karma, there is good fruit. Where there is not good Karma, there is no such fruit. It is, therefore, useless to suppose that the Lord awards fruit. The activity of the Lord ceases by producing the proper Karma.

But, says an objector, Karmas are transitory, they are not capable of producing an effect at a distance of time. Nor is it possible that something existent should come out of a non-entity.

To this we reply : It is not so. For though a Karma ceases to exist as soon as done, it leaves behind a force called Apūrva. The Karma ceases to exist only after producing this Apūrva. This Apūrva gives the reward to the doer of an act even after a lapse of time, the fruit being appropriate to the Karma. This is the opinion of Jaimini.

The author gives his own opinion in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 2. 42.

पूर्वं तु बादरायणो हेतुव्यपदेशात् ॥ ३ । २ । ४२ ॥

पूर्वम् Purvam, what is aforesaid, *i. e.*, the Lord is the bestower of rewards. तु Tu, but बादरायणः Bâdarâyaṇaḥ, Bâdrâyaṇa (holds). हेतु Hetu, of the cause. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadesât, on account of designation.

42. But Bādarāyaṇa holds that the aforesaid Brahman is the bestower of rewards, because the reason for it is shown in the scripture. 361.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'but' removes the doubt raised in the preceding Sūtra. The holy Bādarāyaṇa holds that the aforementioned Supreme Lord is the immediate giver of rewards. Why does he hold this view? Because the scripture gives the reason for this. The Praśna Upaniṣad says, (III, 2), "He leads him to the region of the best who does good deeds. He leads him to the region of the sinners who commits evil deeds." This Śruti clearly shows that the bestowing of rewards is the direct act of the Lord and not through the mediation of Dharma. Since Karmas cease to exist as soon as done, they exhaust their force and cannot be instruments in producing any result. Moreover, the very existence of Karma is dependent upon Brahman. For the texts say that Matter, Time, Karma, etc., are dependent upon Brahman. Thus it is proved that Brahman alone sets persons to do good or bad deeds, He is the causative agent in every Karma.

As to the reasoning that Karma, though ceasing to exist, leaves an Apūrva behind, and that such Apūrva produces rewards, that is a lame reasoning. The Apūrva or Adṛṣṭa is as much an insentient object as a clod of earth or a piece of wood, and it has no power to produce any effect. Nor do the scriptures mention any such thing as Apūrva.

But, says an objector: The sacrifices go to propitiate Devas, and these Devas, being so propitiated, give the desired reward. The Supreme need not be dragged in to give the reward of sacrifices, which are done by inferior agents.

To this we reply. It is under the sanction of the Supreme Deva that these inferior Devas give rewards of action. This has been proved in the Antaryāmin Brāhmaṇa where the Supreme Lord is declared to be the Inner Ruler of all Devas. Therefore, the Lord is the bestower of rewards. The blessed Śrī Kṛṣṇa himself has said so in the Gītā (VII, 21-22):

यो यो यां यां तनुं भक्तः श्रद्धयाऽर्चितुमिच्छति ।  
तस्य तस्याचलां श्रद्धां तामेव विदधाम्यहम् ॥ २१ ॥

Any devotee who seeketh to worship with faith any such aspect, I verily bestow the unswerving faith of that man.

स तथा श्रद्धया युक्तस्तस्याराधनमीदृते ।  
लभते च ततः कामान्मयेव विदितानि तान् ॥ २२ ॥

He, endowed with that faith, seeketh the worship of such a one, and from him he obtaineth his desires, I verily decreeing the benefits.

It is, therefore, said that the Lord, propitiated by sacrifices, etc., gives the reward (either as a temporal bliss or liberation). Nor is there any limit to the generosity of the Lord. Propitiated with devotion, He may give Himself even to his devotee, as will be taught later on in III., 4. 1.

Thus in these two Pādas (III., 1 and 2) have been shown the means of attaining Brahman which consist in a deep yearning (literally, thirst) to reach Brahman, and equally strong disgust for anything other than Him : and which mental attitude is acquired by contemplating over the multifarious attributes of the Supreme Self, such as His having the form of Pure Intelligence, His being the Controller of the whole Universe and by realising that he is free from all faults, while this world is full of all faults, in the shape of birth, pain and death.

## THIRD ADHYĀYA

### THIRD PĀDA

परया निरस्य मायां गुणकर्मादीनि यो भजति नित्यम् ।

देवक्षेतन्य तनुर्मेनसि ममासौ परिस्फुरतु कृष्णः ॥

He who, overcoming Māyā by His Parā Sakti, ever devotes His attributes and deeds (to the good of his creation), may that God Kṛṣṇa, whose body is Pure Intelligence, shine forth in my mind.

*Note :* The verse may be applied to Śrī Chaitanya also whose body Kṛṣṇa took for the manifestation of his deeds and qualities.

In this Pāda is treated the methods of meditating on the various attributes of the Lord. The fact here is this. In the Own Form of the Supreme Self, the Highest Person, there exist always manifest many eternally perfect forms, all mysterious and wonderful, as there exist in the crystalline gem many hues and colours. Understanding that the Lord is fulness and perfection, without being limited by these forms and yet fully manifest through every one of these, the man selects any one of these, suitable to his taste, as a special object of his worship and meditation. Every form of the Lord has a certain number of qualities specific to it. The form has other qualities. The man must meditate on the specific form chosen by him, with the attributes taught about that particular form: but all the same the attributes taught about the other forms, and not taught about his chosen form, should also be meditated upon as existing in his special object of worship. Thus he who meditates on Brahman as mind (as is taught in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, Bhṛguvalli) must collate all the attributes of the mind not only from his own particular Vedic Śākhā, but from other Śākhās also where meditation on Brahman in the form of mind is taught. Of course, in meditating on Brahman as mind, he must not bring together attributes not belonging to mind (such as, those of food, though Brahman is taught to be meditated upon as food also). In fact, only those attributes are to be supplied from other Śākhās, which are taught about the particular object of meditation, and not any attributes in general.

Others, however, say thus. One Supreme Brahman manifests as Rāma or Kṛṣṇa, etc., like an actor, appearing at different times and places, under different characters, and shows forth different qualities and performs various acts, appropriate to the occasion; therefore, all attributes taught regarding one manifestation may, without incongruity, be meditated upon with regard to another manifestation. There is nothing impossible



or unharmonious in this : because the entity manifesting is one though he shows forth his different aspects.

It may be objected that some attributes and forms are so self-contradictory that they cannot be the object of simultaneous meditation ; thus sweetness and luxuriousness are incompatible in the meditation on Rāma while they are perfectly harmonious attributes in Kṛṣṇa : while peacefulness and austerity are good attributes to meditate in Nara-Nārāyaṇa, but hardly in others : so also ferocity, power and lordliness go in very well with the meditation on Man-Lion, but not with others : meditation on *all* these attributes (*i. e.*, sweetness, lordliness, luxuriousness, peacefulness, austere-ness, ferocity, etc.) simultaneously, is evidently incongruous. So also there are certain forms which are incongruous.

Thus meditating on the Avatāras of Fish or Boar as playing on lute, or carrying conch, discus, bow and arrow : or meditating on an Avatāra in human form, such as Rāma and Kṛṣṇa, as having horns, tail, mane, tusk, etc., would be an incongruous form-meditation. Of such meditations, it is said in the Mahābhārata :

योऽन्यथासन्तमात्मानमन्यथा प्रतिपद्यते ।

किं तेन न कृतं पापं चौरैणात्मापहारिणा ॥

He who meditates on the Ātman as different from its true form, has committed the greatest sin, for he is a thief who steals the self.

Therefore, both on the basis of reason and of authority, such incongruous meditation should not be done.

To this, it is answered that by collation of qualities is meant the collation of those qualities only which are suitable for a simultaneous meditation and not of incongruous qualities.

Now, meditating on attributes not taught in connection with a particular Upāsana but taught with regard to another, may be of two sorts : either meditating on the essence of those attributes, or merely forming a mental idea of them. The first kind belongs to the class of devotees called Svaniṣṭha. The last belongs to those called Ekāntins. It will be taught in the next Pāda, that there are three sorts of worshippers, Svaniṣṭha, Pariniṣṭhita, and Nirapekṣa. Among these three kinds, the Svaniṣṭhas (who are generally office-bearers in the Cosmic hierarchy, holding posts like those of the four-faced Brahmā, etc.), are universalists—they have equal love for all forms ; and meditate on all forms of the Lord and always collate all the attributes of the Lord found in every form, in their meditation. There is no incongruity in meditating in one form with attributes belonging to all diverse contrary forms. For it is possible to realise all these contradictory attributes in one form, in a succession of time, as

it is possible to see different hues in the prism at different times. The other two kinds of devotees—the Pariniṣṭhita and Nirapekṣas are, however, less liberal – (they may be called sectarians, jealous to maintain the dignity of their particular God). Their love is not universal, but limited—not Sama-prīti, but Viśama-prīti. They meditate only on those attributes which their particular Form of the Adorable manifests, and they see only those attributes and are blind to others. Though they know that the Lord has other forms and other attributes also, but they, being exclusionists, do not meditate over those attributes nor look at those Forms : for they are of no use to them, nor those forms and attributes become manifest to them. This will be made clearer in a subsequent Adhikaraṇa. As regards the verse from the Mahābhārata, it denounces those hard-hearted Advaitins who think the Lord to be mere knowledge without bliss and other attributes. (They deny bliss to Brahman, and hold that joy is an attribute of matter and not of spirit).

But they forget that the whole purport of the scriptures is to teach that Brahman is full of all auspicious qualities, and is not Nirguṇa ; and that by knowing this Saguṇa Brahman, a man becomes free from all fears; and that the scriptures teach that this Saguṇa Brahman should be searched after by the seeker of liberation. In the Dahara Vidyâ (Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VIII., 1. 1-6) the Lord is taught to possess all auspicious qualities, and it is said: "That which is within this lotus, He is to be sought for, He is to be understood." Similarly, in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad II., 4. 1, it is declared that knowing Brahman as bliss a man does not fear anything.

The Advaitins hold that these Guṇas do not really belong to Brahman but are attributed to It as a convention or as a superimposition. But this is a mere fancy of theirs. There can be no superimposition—for it occurs there where a quality really exists in one thing, and is wrongly imagined to exist in another, as the red colour of the lotus is superimposed on the white crystal. But these Guṇas (*e.g.*, omnipotence, omniscience, bliss, etc.) are not found in anybody else; and so they could not be an object of superimposition in Brahman, when they are non-existent outside of Brahman. Nor can these Guṇas be said to be merely conventional: for there is no statement to that effect in the scriptures. They are real concrete attributes of Brahman, and are not to be taken in a metaphorical or allegorical sense.

But, says the objector, the scriptures do use metaphorical language: as in the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, V., 8-1, वाचं वेनुमुपासीत, "Let him meditate on speech as cow." But, because in one passage the scriptures make a metaphorical statement, to hold that all statements about Brahman are metaphorical, is a sign of weakness of intellect. For, if this were so, then the statement "Let him meditate on Âtman" would also become metaphorical;

and meditation of every kind will come to an end. Even the Advaitins admit that some meditations, at least, are not taught metaphorically in the scriptures, but are true literally. Thus in explaining the Sūtras III., 3. 12 and III., 3. 38, even the Advaitins hold that meditation on Brahman as bliss is *actually* taught; Brahman is not to be *imagined* as bliss, for the purposes of meditation, as the speech is *imagined* as cow. But Brahman *is* bliss. Similarly, in explaining III., 3. 38, they say that the Jīva and the Lord must be meditated upon as identical—not *imagined* as identical, but that they *are* identical. Thus according to the Advaitins also, the scriptures do teach in some places, meditation on *real* attributes and not on fictitious qualities. Why should not then the scriptures be construed consistently throughout? Why should some attributes be taken as *real* Guṇas of Brahman, and the others as fictitious superimpositions?

But, says the Advaitin, the scriptures describe Brahman as Nirguṇa: and, therefore, we say that all the so-called Guṇas of Brahman are really crutches for meditation, and do not properly belong to Brahman, who is Nirguṇa. To this we reply, that all such Nirguṇa passages are to be construed as teaching that Brahman has not the Guṇas of Prakṛti (Sattva, Rajas and Tamas)—but He possesses transcendental non-Prākṛtic Guṇa. In the view that the qualities are not separate from the qualified, every thing is reconciled.

The Guṇas to be meditated upon are of two sorts—the Guṇas constituting the spiritual essence of the object of meditation, and the Guṇas appertaining to the *form* of such object. The Guṇas like omnipotence, omniscience, etc., belong to the first kind; the Guṇas like smiling face, etc. are of the second kind. The Guṇas of the first kind may all be collated together in a single meditation. In fact, the full conception of the Lord is possible only in this way, by bringing together all His attributes, scattered in different passages of the scriptures.

---

### *Adhikaraṇa I—The Lord is the Quest.*

*Viśaya*: Now in order to establish that all Guṇas may be comprised in a single act of meditation, the author first proves that the Lord is the object of search in all the Vedas; and that all the Vedas declare Him. All texts about meditation may be considered as Viśaya texts in this connection.

*Doubt* : Is Brahman to be known according to the modes of meditation taught by one's own Śākhā, or according to the modes taught in other Śākhās also ?

*Purvapakṣa* : The Śākhās being different, and their teachings being different, Brahman must be realised according to the practices taught in one's own Śākhā. The omission should not be supplied from other Śākhās.

*Siddhānta* : This view is refuted in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA III., 3. 1.

सर्ववेदान्तप्रत्ययं चोदनाद्यविशेषात् । ३ । ३ । १ ॥

सर्वं Sarva, all. वेद Veda, the Vedas. अन्त Anta, the settled conclusion, the truth. प्रत्ययम् Pratyayam, the knowledge, the object or meaning, realisation. चोदनादि Chodanādi, of the injunction and others. By 'others' is meant reasoning. अविशेषात् Aviśeṣat, on account of the non-speciality, or non-difference, similarity.

1. Brahman is the object of knowledge taught in the truths of all the Vedas, because the injunctions (and reasonings, etc.) are all similar.—362.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Anta' in the Sūtra means firmly established conclusion : and it is used in this sense in the Gītā also (II., 16) :

उभयोरपि दृष्टोऽन्तस्त्वनयोस्तत्त्वदर्शिभिः ।

The truth about both hath been perceived by the seers of the essence of things.

The truth which all the Vedas seek to teach mankind is the knowledge about Brahman. Why do we say so ? Because all the Vedic injunctions and the like, have this in common that they all are directed towards this end. The words "and the like" mean reasoning. Thus the injunction of the Vedas says (Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I., 4. 7) : आत्मेत्येवोपासीत, "Let men worship Him as Ātman." The injunctions like the above, with similar reasonings, prove that the Ātman or the Supreme Self is the object of worship enjoined in the Vedas. As the above injunction is found in the Madhyandina rescension of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, so is it found in the Kāṇva rescension also. All Śākhās are agreed in enjoining the worship of Brahman.

Says an objector : In some places Brahman is described as knowledge and bliss (विज्ञानमानन्दं ब्रह्म, Br. Up., III., 9. 28), in other places he is called omniscient and all-understanding (यः सर्वज्ञः सर्वविद्, Muṇḍ., I., 1. 9). Thus every Śākhā gives a different description and so the object described must be different in each. Therefore, Brahman is not the common object described in all the Śākhās.

This objection is raised and answered in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA. III., 3. 2.

भेदान्नेति चेन्नैकस्यापि । ३ । ३ । २ ॥

भेदात् Bhedāt, owing to the difference ( in the statements about Brahman in the different Śākhās). न Na, not, इति Iti, as, so. चेत् Chet, if. एकस्याम् Eka-syām, in the one and the same (Śākhā). अपि Api, also, even.

2. If it be objected that the descriptions being different, one Brahman is not enjoined by all Śākhās, we reply it is not so. Because in the one and the same Śākhā, the other attributes of Brahman are also mentioned.—363.

COMMENTARY

The objection is not valid. The same Śākhā, which mentions that Brahman is knowledge and bliss, describes him also as omniscient and all-understanding. Thus in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad Brahman is described not only as True, knowledge, and infinity, but He is described as bliss also. In fact, all these words employed in different Śākhās, convey the idea of one Brahman and His various attributes. Thus there is no conflict even between these various Śākhās.

SŪTRA III., 3. 3.

स्वाध्यायस्य तथात्वेन हि समाचारेधिकाराच्च । ३ । ३ । ३ ॥

स्वाध्यायस्य Svādhyāyasya, of the study of the scriptures, *i. e.*, the Vedas. तथात्वेन Tathātvena, on account of being such : being generic in their force. हि Hi, indeed. समाचारे Samāchāre, in all ceremonies, in performing all sacred acts. अधिकारात् Adhikārāt, owing to the eligibility of all to study all and perform all. च Cha, and.

3. The injunction about the study of the Vedas being general, (the *whole* of the Vedas may be studied by all), and because all have the right to perform every ceremony mentioned in the Vedas.—364.

COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya Āraṇyaka, II., 15, there is the injunction स्वाध्यायोऽभ्येतव्यः, "The Vedas should be studied." This injunction is in general terms—it does not say, "study only a particular Śākhā, but study *all* the Vedas." In fact, it enjoins the study *as study* (Tathātvena) and not as belonging to a particular Śākhā. Therefore, the *entire* Veda must be learnt. The Smṛti also ordains that the twice-born should study the entire Veda together with its secret doctrine (Manu). Moreover, every one has a right

to perform all the various rites laid down in the Vedas—he is not confined to his own Śākhā, but has the option to perform the ceremonies laid down in other Śākhās also, if he has the ability to do so. So also says the Smṛti :

सर्ववेदोक्तमङ्गैः कर्म कुर्वीत नित्यशः ।  
 आनन्दो हि फलं यस्माच्छाखाभेदो व्यशक्तिः ॥  
 सर्वकर्मकुतौ यस्मादसक्ताः सर्वजन्तवः ।  
 शाखाभेदं कर्मभेदं व्यास्तस्मादवीकृते ॥

The ceremonies may always be performed according to the methods laid down in all the Vedas : because bliss is the fruit of the performance of these rites, under whatever form they may be done. The rule that the ceremonies should be performed according to the method laid down in one's particular Śākhā is a concession to human weakness, for all have not the power to study the different Śākhās. Vyāsa, seeing that men were incapable of performing all the ceremonies, divided the Vedas into Śākhās, and made obligatory only certain ceremonies according to certain Śākhās.

Therefore, it is established that Brahman may be realised by all the religious practices taught in all the Śākhās of the Vedas, if a man has power to do so. (If he has not such power, let him try to realise Him according to the particular practice laid down in his own Śākhā.)

The author next gives an illustration of indirect reasoning leading to the same conclusion.

ŚĪTRA III, 3. 4.

सववच्च तन्नियमः । ३ । ३ । ४ ॥

समवत् Savavat, as in the case of the seven libations or sacrifices. च Cha, and. तत् Tat, that. नियमः Niyamaḥ, the injunction, the rule.

4. And that rule is (not) like (the injunction about) the Seven Libations.—365.

#### COMMENTARY

The Savas are the seven libations (Homas) beginning with the Saurya and ending with the Śataudana libation. They are restricted to the Ātharvanikas—the keeper of one-fire. The people of other Śākhās who keep *three* fires, are not permitted to perform these Sava libations, since they are connected with those who keep *one* fire. There being *no* such restriction with regard to the worship of Brahman, from this indirect reasoning also we learn, that He may be worshipped according to *all* the methods laid down in any scripture ; by those persons who have studied *all* the Vedas.

*Note :* The Sava-rule is restricted to the Ātharvanikas, and may not be performed by the followers of the other Vedas. Not so, however, the rule about the Brahman-worship : which is universal, and is not the peculiar heritage of any particular Veda-school.

The proper translation of the Sūtra requires a "not" in it ; for the reasoning is indirect here and is better brought out by such an insertion.

Or the Sūtra may be सखिलवच्च instead of सवच्च ॥ If that reading be adopted, then it would mean that as in the absence of any obstacles all water flows down naturally into the sea, so all the texts of the scriptures converge into Brahman and describe Him alone. This rule is dependent upon the power of the individual. If he has mastered all the Vedas, he can worship Him with all the Vedic Mantras. In this view, the Sūtra should be translated thus : "And that injunction is but analogous to the case of water." (Madhva). As is said in the Agni Purāṇa :

यथा नदीनां सखिलं शक्त्या सागरतां व्रजेत् ।  
एवं सर्वाणि वाक्यानि पुंशक्त्या ब्रह्म विन्देत् ॥

Just as the waters of the rivers, if unobstructed, go to the sea, so all the words of the Vedas conduce to the knowledge of Brahman, according to the power of the man.

The author next quotes an express text to prove his position.

SŪTRA III., 3. 5.

दर्शयति च । ३ । ३ । ५ ॥

दर्शयति Darśayati, shows (the scripture). च Cha, and.

5. And the Scripture shows this directly.—366.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Kāṭha\* Upaniṣad I., 2-15, we have :

सर्वे वेदा यत्पदमामनन्ति तपामि सर्वाणि च युद्धदन्ति ।  
यदिच्छन्तो ब्रह्मचर्यं चरन्ति तत्त पदसंग्रहेण ब्रवीम्यमित्येवम् ॥ १५ ॥

Whose form and essential nature all the Vedas declare and in order to attain Whom they prescribe austerities, desiring to know Whom *the great ones* perform Brahmacharya, that Symbol I will briefly tell thee, it is Om.

This text shows that the Blessed Hari is the goal aimed at by all the Vedas. The force of the word 'and' in the Sūtra is to imply : 'If the man has the ability.' Therefore, it follows that all men, who have the ability to do so, should worship Brahman with all the methods taught in all the Śākhās. But those who have no such ability, must worship according to the rules of his own particular Śākhā. Because the Lord is known by *all* and *each* one of these methods.

Though this proposition was established in the Sūtra, 'Tat tu samānvayāt' (I., 1. 4) also, yet it is re-stated here, in connection with the topic of the collation of all the Guṇas of Brahman, as appropriate to the occasion. Such repetition is no fault, but helps to strengthen the argument.

*Adhikaraṇa II—All the attributes of Brahman may be collated.*

The above discussion about the Lord being the goal aimed at by all Vedic teachings, was undertaken as a prelude to the proposition that all the Gūṇas of the Lord scattered in different Śākhās should be collated to form a complete conception of Brahman.

Thus in the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani Upaniṣad the Brahman is described as having the form of a cowherd, blue as Tamāla leaf, dressed in yellow raiment, adorned with the Kaustubha gem, playing on a lute, surrounded by cows, cowherds and cowherdesses, the tutelary deity of Gokula. This is the essential form of Brahman. (See the full extract under Sūtra III., 2. 17).

But in the Rāma Pūrva Tāpani, Brahman is described as Rāma having Sitā on his left, holding a bow in his hand, the killer of Rākṣasas like the ten-headed Rāvana, and the ruler of Ayodhyā, etc., as follows :

प्रकृत्या महितः श्यामः पीतवासज्जटधरः ।

द्विभुजः कुण्डली रत्नमाली धीरोधनुर्धरः ॥

Having Prakṛti (Sitā) as his companion, of green colour like that of Dūrvā, having yellow dress, and matted locks of hair, two arms, adorned with ear-ornaments, and a garland of jewels, wise, and holding a bow in his hand.

Such like is the description of Brahman given in that Upaniṣad.

While a third description of Brahman is given in the Nṛsiṃha Upaniṣad, as having a very dreadful face frightening even to the great Devas like Brahmā, etc., the Lord in the form of a Man-Lion. In the Mantra sacred to Man-Lion, the word 'terrible' (भीष्म) occurs : and the Upaniṣad asks :

Why is he called the Terrible ? and it gives the answer in these words : Since all the worlds are terrified by looking at this form—all the Devas, and all the creatures run away through fear of him, and he is not afraid of any one, he is called the Terrible. (As says the Śruti) : From terror of it the wind blows, from terror the Sun rises, from terror of it Agni and Indra, yea, Death runs as the fifth.

While another text describes Brahman as Trivikrama—the Dwarf encompassing the universe with his three steps. In the R̥g Veda, I., 154. 1, we find :

विष्णोर्नु कं वीर्याणि प्रवोचम् यः पार्थिवानि विममे रजसि ।

यो अस्मभ्यदुत्तरं सधस्थम् विचक्रमाणम् त्रेधोरुगाय ॥

I will proclaim the mighty deeds of Viṣṇu, how he created the earth, the worlds below it, how he fixed fast the vast firmament and the worlds above it (where dwell the Freed ones with Him) and how he encompassed them all with his three glorious strides.

Like the sacrifices which are different, because the Devatās invoked and the offerings made are different, so here also the Upāsanās must be



different, because the qualities are different (and all the above four kinds of meditation cannot refer to one Brahman).

*Doubt* : Therefore, arises the doubt : Should the Guṇas mentioned in one Upāsana (form of meditation) be comprised in the other Upāsana or should it not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The meditation becomes fruitful by dwelling over the attributes read together in one place. The attributes mentioned in another Upāsana should not be dwelt upon, and comprised together, because no higher fruit is gained thereby, and because the attributes being contradictory, would create disharmony in meditation.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra refutes this view.

SŪTRA III., 3. 6.

उपसंहारोऽर्थभिदाद्विधिषेवत्समाने च । ३ । ३ । ६ ॥

*उपसंहारः* Upasamhārah, the combination (of all the qualities). *अर्थभिदात्* Arthābhedāt, owing to the non-difference in the object, i.e., the object of meditation being Brahman alone in every case. *अर्थ* means the characteristics of Brahman. There is no difference in them. *विधि* Vidhi, of the duties enjoined (by the scriptures), injunctions. *षेवत्* Śeṣavat, as in the case of the remainder, the complementary. *समाने* Samāne, in the case of a common meditation on the (excellences) befitting (Brahman), being the same, being common to several Śākhās. *च* Cha, only.

6. Only in the case of *common* meditation, the particulars mentioned in each Śākhā may be combined, since there is no difference in the subject-matter, just as in the case of what is complementary to injunctions.—367.

#### COMMENTARY

The word 'Cha' in the Sūtra has the force of exclusion. Where the meditation is common, namely, where it is of equal character, having for its sole object the pure Brahman, in that Upāsana only, all the qualities mentioned in each place should be combined together in one act of meditation. Why so ? Because Arthābhedāt—because, there is no difference in the characteristics of Brahman, the subject of meditation. His characteristics are everywhere, non-different, that is to say, identically the same. As an illustration, the Sūtra says Vidhiśeṣa-vat : just as in the case of what is complementary to injunction. "The case is analogous to that of the things subordinate to some sacrificial performance as, for example, the Agnihotra. The Agnihotra also is one performance, and therefore, its subordinate members, although they may be mentioned in different texts, have to be combined into one whole."—Dr. Thibaut's Saṅkara.

In the Rāma Uttara Tāpani there is a string of Mantras about Śrī Rāma, where all forms are combined. Thus, one of these Mantras says :

ओं यो वै श्रीरामचन्द्रः स भगवान् ये मत्स्यकूर्माद्यवतारा भूभुवः स्वस्तस्मै वै नमोनमः ॥

Here the forms of the Avatāras of the Fish, the Tortoise, etc., are combined in the meditation of Śrī Rāma.

Similarly, in the meditation on Śrī Kṛṣṇa, there is the combination of other forms like those of Śrī Rāma, etc., in the Mantra of the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani, एकोऽपि सन् बहुधा योऽवभाति । "He who though one, manifests as many."

Similarly, in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, Tenth Skandha, Akṛura addresses Śrī Kṛṣṇa as : नमस्ते गृध्रवर्षीय रावणान्तकराय च, etc., "Salutation to thee, O, best of the race of Raghu (i.e., Rāma), the destroyer of Rāvana." Here Kṛṣṇa is identified with Rāma. So also in other books there are other identifications.

*Note :* This identification is permissible only when the meditation is on pure Brahman,—i.e., when the meditation is universal or Samāna. In such a meditation *all* qualities of Brahman, scattered over in all the sacred scriptures of all the nations of the world should be combined, because the God, the Artha, the Subject-matter, is one, Abheda, without any difference. It is only in समाने च, in the Common Prayer—in the Universal meditation—that this combination should take place. But in the specific or concrete meditation there would be incompatibility in such a combination and it should be avoided. Thus as in the general Agnihotra sacrifice various details mentioned in different Śākhās must be combined, but not so in any *particular* form of Agnihotra peculiar to any Śākhins.

But, says an objector, the Śruti declares that the Âtman *alone* should be meditated upon—Âtmety eva upāsita. (Br. Âr.). The word "alone" shows that one should not meditate on any thing else than the Âtman—the Pure Supreme Self. The combination of meditation on different forms is, therefore, denounced by the Scriptures.

This objection is raised and answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 7.

अन्यथात्वं शब्दादिति चेन्नाविशेषात् । ३ । ३ । ७ ॥

अन्यथात्वं Anyathātvam, the contradictory, the non-combination of Guṇas. शब्दात् Sabdāt, on account of the word of the scriptures. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. अविशेषात् Aviśeṣāt, for want of special authority to support that view.

7. If it be said that the word of the Scripture teaches just the contrary, we say no : because there is no specific text to that effect.—368.

COMMENTARY

If it be objected that from the words of the Scripture, namely, from the text Âtmetyevopāsita, a contrary view is maintained by the Sāstras,

that is to say, there should be no combination of Guṇas, we reply, it is not so. Why? Because there is no *specific* text saying the following qualities should not be combined. The force of Eva (*alone*) is to point out that non-Ātman should not be meditated upon. The Ātman *alone* should be worshipped and not the non-Ātman. It does not say that the qualities of the Ātman should not be meditated upon. If one says 'Rājaiva dr̥ṣṭah'—the king *alone* was seen—it does not mean that the invariable qualities of the king were not seen, such as the royal umbrella, etc., Therefore, it is proved that combination of qualities should take place, in all meditations, according to the ability of the person meditating.

Therefore, it is said, in the Supreme Brahman there exist many forms, all eternally perfect; as there exists many hues in the crystal called *lapis lazuli*. Every one of these special forms is the Perfect Full Brahman. In some He manifests *all* His attributes, in others of these forms He shows forth only a few. But the knower of truth should meditate on any one of these forms, by a mental combination of *all* the Guṇas of the Lord, manifested in other forms, though not manifested in that particular form he is meditating upon.

This combination of all Guṇas in meditation, is proscribed for the Svaniṣṭha devotees of the Lord—who are the worshippers of Brahman in His universal aspect.

(Such a combination would be incompatible to the Ekāntins—the "mono-formists"—if such a word could be coined. These Ekāntins who have specialised their meditation, are emotionally incapable of combining different qualities—no more can a devout Roman Catholic meditating on the Christ on the Cross, turn his thoughts on the Lord playing lute and drawing all hearts towards Him.)

### *Adhikaraṇa III—No combination for Ekāntins.*

As regards the Ekāntins, though they have read many Śākhās of the Vedas, (and know intellectually the different Guṇas of the Lord, as taught in the different Śākhās), yet being more deeply versed in the particular Upaniṣad of their own Śākhā, they meditate exclusively on those Guṇas only which have been revealed in their Upaniṣad, and though they know the Guṇas taught in other books, they do not meditate on them. The author, therefore, teaches an exception to the general rule of combination mentioned above.

*Viśaya* : The text to be construed is that of the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani.

*Doubt* : In the meditation of the Ekāntin, should there be combination of the Guṇas or not?

*Pūrrapakṣa*: There ought to be such combination, because all these qualities are spoken of with respect and veneration: provided that the devotee is capable of it.

*Siddhānta*: The next Sūtra refutes this view.

SŪTRA III, 3. 8.

न वा प्रकरणभेदत्परोवरीयस्त्यादिवत् ॥ ३ । ३ । ८ ॥

न Na, (the combination is) not (to be done). वा Vā, certainly. प्रकरण Prakarāṇa, devotion: literally, Pra =excellent, Karāṇa =work. भेदत् Bhedāt, according to the difference, according to specialisation. परोवरीयस्त्यादिवत् Parovariyastvādivat, as in the case of the attributes of "Higher than the high and better than the best."

8. There should certainly be no combination of the qualities (in the meditation of the Ekāntins), because the Bhakti (of the Ekāntins) is different (from that of the Svaniṣṭha) as in the case of the attribute of the "Higher than the high" (given to the Udgītha as Ākāśa, is not combined in the meditation on the Udgītha as the Golden Person).—369.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Vā in the Sūtra means 'certainly.' Those who are {exclusively devoted to a particular form—who are Ekāntins with regard to that form—do not combine in their meditation the Guṇas mentioned with regard to forms other than their own. Thus the exclusive worshippers of the Kṛṣṇa form, do not combine in their meditation the form sacred to the worshippers of Man-Lion—the flowing mane, the gaping jaw, the terrible teeth, etc. Similarly, the exclusive worshippers of Nṛ-simha, the Man-Lion, do not meditate on the lute, the cane, the sweetness, etc., of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, so dear to the hearts of the Kṛṣṇa-devoted. Why is it so? Prakarāṇa-bhedāt. Because the devotional temperaments differ. The word Prakarāṇa means "the most excellent act—and devotion alone is that excellent act." The devotion of an Ekāntin is of a higher kind than that of a Svaniṣṭha—it is more deep and absorbing. The author shows this by an illustration. "As in the case of Parovariyas." As the Ekāntin worshippers of the Golden Person in the Sun do not combine in the object of their meditation the Guṇas of Parovariyas, etc., which the worshippers of the Udgītha as Ākāśa see in their object of meditation. That which is beyond the beyond and is better than the best is called Parovariyas. It is the name of the Udgītha as Ākāśa. The condition of Parovariyas is Parovariyastvam.

*Note:* In the First Prapāṭhaka of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is taught the meditation on the Udgītha. The word Udgītha is applied there both to the Golden Person and to the Causal Brahman or Ākāśa. In the Udgītha meditation on the Ākāśa is described the Guṇas of Parovarīyas—beyond the beyond and better than the best. But those who meditate on the Udgītha as the Golden Person (and not as the Ākāśa or the Causal Brahman), do not combine in their meditation the Guṇas of Beyond-the-beyond and —Better-than-the-best peculiarly taught regarding the Causal Brahman. Because the worshippers of the Golden Person are exclusively devoted to the attributes mentioned regarding that Person. The Golden Person or the Person of Joy (for Hiraṇmaya means both Joy and Gold) is thus described in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (I., 6. 6 to 7):

“Now that Being who is seen in the Sun, as full of intense joy, with joy as beard, joy as hair, joy altogether to the very tips of his nails. His two eyes are like fresh red lotus, His name is Ut, for He has risen above (Udita) all sins.”

The Ākāśa Udgītha is described in I., 9. 1:

Then Sālāvatyā asked, “What is the goal of Brahman?” The Ākāśa, replied, Pravāhaṇa. For all these beings take their rise from the Ākāśa, and have their setting in the Ākāśa. The Ākāśa is greater than these, the Ākāśa is their great Refuge. He indeed is the Parovarīyas: He the Udgītha, He the Infinite. He who meditates on the Udgītha as the Parovarīyas becomes the beloved of the Parovarīyas.”

Thus the worshippers of the Udgītha as Hiraṇmaya Puruṣa do not meditate on those qualities which the worshippers of the Udgītha as Ākāśa (the All-luminous) contemplate. There is no combination of qualities, though both worship the Udgītha.

But, says an objector, both the Ekāntins and the Svaniṣṭhas—the exclusivists and the universalists—are called “the worshippers of Brahman”—and since they have got a common name, therefore, the Ekāntins also, like the Svaniṣṭhas, must meditate on all the attributes of Brahman, whenever they may be found. Just as the meditation on the Gāyatri is universally prescribed for all those who are Brāhmaṇas and share in having the common designation of Brāhmaṇa.

This objection is raised in the first half of the next Sūtra, and answered in the subsequent portion thereof.

SŪTRA III., 3. 9.

संज्ञातश्चेत्तदुक्तमस्ति तु तदपि ॥ ३ । ३ । ६ ॥

संज्ञातः Samjñātaḥ, from having a common name. चेत् Chet, if. तद् Tad, that. उक्तम् Uktam, said. अस्ति Asti, there is (an instance, in the case of two Udgīthas). तु Tu, indeed. This removes the doubt. तद् Tad, that (namely, difference of treatment, i.e., absence of combination). अपि Api, also.

9. (If it be objected that because both have) a common name, therefore, (the Ekāntins must also combine the

Gūṇas), we reply that the answer to this has already been given (in the preceding Sūtra),—and also there is an instance to that effect.—370.

COMMENTARY

The word *tu* of the Sūtra is used in order to remove the doubt raised above. If it be said that since the Ekāntins and the Svaniṣṭhas have both got a common name of 'Brahma-upāsakas,' therefore, the Ekāntins must also combine all the Gūṇas like the Svaniṣṭhas; to this we reply that the last Sūtra covers this case also. The term Brahma-upāsaka is a general name, while "Ekāntin" is a particular name, and he is a higher form of devotee than the Svaniṣṭha, and so all the rules of Svaniṣṭha cannot apply to the Ekāntin, though he is also Brahma-upāsaka. Therefore, the Ekāntins should not meditate on *all* the Gūṇas, for thereby they will lose their peculiar excellence which differentiates them from the Svaniṣṭha. The soul of the Ekāntin is imbued through and through with the love of one particular form, and is deeply drawn to one Form, and therefore, he (the Ekāntin) is superior to the Svaniṣṭha, who has a general love for *all* forms (and deep love for none). Moreover, even the Svaniṣṭha is not capable of meditating on *all* the attributes of the Lord. For the Śruti (Rg. Veda, I, 151.7) says "विष्णोर्नु कं वीर्याणि प्रवोचम्," "Who can fully describe all the mighty deeds of Viṣṇu." To the same effect is the following Smṛti :

नान्तं गुणानामगुणस्य जग्मुर्व्योमेश्वरा ये भवपादमुख्याः ।

The Great Lords of Yoga, like Siva, Brahma and the rest, did not reach (in their conception) the end of the qualities of that Lord without qualities.

Though two things may have a common name, yet they need not have all properties in common. "An instance of this is found in the the scriptures." For both the Âkāśa worship and the Hiraṇmaya Puruṣa worship have this in common that both are worships of the Udgitha. They have a common Sajñâ or name—Udgitha-upasânâ. Yet in the meditation on the Hiraṇmaya Puruṣa, the quality of the Âkāśa (namely, the quality of Parovariyas—Higher than the High) is not combined. This is a scriptural instance.

Therefore, the conclusion is, let the Svaniṣṭhas meditate by combining all the attributes of Brahman; but let the Ekāntins worship Him with the specific attributes consonant with the form worshipped. This is the summary of the last two Adhikaraṇas.

*Adhikaraṇa IV.—Attributes of the Lord as an Infant and as a Youth may be combined.*

In the previous section it has been said that the attribute of Parovarīyas 'Higher than the high,' applied to the Udgitha contemplated as Ākāśa should not be meditated upon in the Udgitha taken in the aspect of the Golden Person. On the same analogy, the Pūrvapakṣin now says that in meditating on Hari as a youth, the qualities manifested by Him in His infancy should not be meditated upon, as that also breaks the harmonious flow of sentiment.

Now the author begins another topic and shows that the Guṇas of the Lord manifested as an Infant should be combined in the meditation on the Lord as a youth. In the same Upaniṣad (Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani) it is said :

कृष्णाय देवकीनन्दनाय ओं तत् सत् भूर्भुवः स्वस् तस्मै व नमोनमः ।

The word Kṛṣṇa is exclusively applied to the Infant Kṛṣṇa sucking at the breast of Devakī (Yaśodā). This is according to the author of the Nāma Kaumudī. The above Mantra is, therefore, useful for meditation on the Infant Lord.

Similarly, in the Rāma Pūrva Tāpani, we read :

ओं त्रिन्मयेऽस्मिन् महाविष्णौ जाते दासस्थे हरौ ।

रघोः कुलेऽखिलं राति राजते यो महीस्थितः ।

तथा रामस्य रामाख्या भुवि स्यादथ तत्त्वतः ॥

Om. When Hari is born in the family of Raghu, as the son of Daśaratha, He is called on earth Rāma. That Hari whose form is Pure intelligence and who is the Great Viṣṇu, He is called Rāma, because always dwelling on earth (Mahiṣṭhita) He gives (Rāti) to the good all desired objects, and is ever shining (Rājate). In other words, रा= gives, म=on earth (महीस्थितः)

These Upaniṣad texts show that Infancy, etc., also are Guṇas of Brahman. The Smṛtis also are to the same effect, such as the Rāmāyaṇa and Viṣṇu Bhāgavata.

*Doubt* : Are these Guṇas of the Lord, as an Infant, to be meditated upon or not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : These Guṇas of Infancy should not be meditated upon, because the thought-picture formed in meditation would then vary in size, and would be subject to decrease and increase, and as this change would break the uniformity of the thought-picture, it would be against the Śruti, which says that in meditation the flow of thought should be one harmonious whole. (When picturing the Lord as an Infant, the size would be small, when meditating on Him as a youth it would be larger, and thus there would arise incompatibility of thought-forms).

*Siddhānta* : This objection is set aside in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA III., 3. 10.

व्याप्तेश्च समञ्जसम् ॥ ३ । ३ । १० ॥

व्याप्तेः Vyāptēḥ, because (of His being) all-pervading. च Cha, and. Other qualities than all-pervadingness should also be included. समञ्जसम् Samāñjasam, justifiable : compatible.

10. Such meditation is compatible, because of the all-pervadingness of the Lord.—371.

## COMMENTARY

The Lord is all-pervading though He shows forth the qualities of infancy, etc. He is not limited by those attributes, and consequently such meditation is perfectly justifiable. This has been fully treated before in the Sūtra, III., 2. 38, (where it has been shown that through the mysterious power of the Lord, He is all-pervading in His middle form also. The infant-form is therefore, as all-pervading and all-powerful as the youth-form.) In fact, in the case of the Lord, "birth" (which is one of the six modifications) is not a Vikāra or modification at all. For the Lord is birth-less, though He appears to take births in many ways. अजायमानो बहुधा विजायते says the Puruṣa Hymn. "Birth," therefore, when applied to the Lord means "manifestation"—because He is birthless.

The force of the word "and" in the Sūtra is to show that the Lord is all-sweetness also : for says the Śruti :—रमो वै सः "He is verily sweetness"—(Taitt. Up.) The "and," therefore, includes this sweetness aspect of the Lord. In whatever form His Bhaktas wish to taste the sweetness of His Līlā, in that very form He manifests Himself before them, through His mysterious inconceivable power. The devotees of the Lord are innumerable : some the Ever-Free (like Garuḍa, etc.) have been referred to in the well-known verse of the R̥g Veda as *Sūris* :

तद् विष्णोः परमे पदे सदा पश्यन्ति मूर्यः ।

"The *Sūris* *always* see that Highest Foot of Viṣṇu." The other kind of devotees (like the Freed, who were bound once) see other forms of the Lord. The Lord, though one, simultaneously appears in forms of different ages (infant, youth, etc.) to His different kinds of devotees. This is somewhat analogous to the single syllable Da द uttered by Prajāpati, by which he gave three different teachings to three different classes of beings : Devas, men and Asuras. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, V., 2. 1., we read :

The three-fold descendants of Prajāpati, Devas, Men and Asuras, dwelt as students with their father Prajāpati. Having finished their studentship the Devas said, 'Tell us something, Sir.' He told them the syllable Da द. Then he said, 'Did you understand ?' They said : 'We did understand.' You told us 'Damyata,' 'be subdued.' 'Yes,' he said, 'you have understood.'



Then the men said to him, 'Tell us something, Sir.' He told them the same syllable *Da*. Then he said, 'Did you understand?' They said: 'We did understand. You told us 'Datta,' 'give.' 'Yes,' he said, you have understood.

Then the Asuras said to him: 'Tell us something, Sir.' He told them the same syllable *Da*. Then he said: 'Did you understand?' They said: 'We did understand. You told us 'Dayadhvam.' 'Be merciful?' 'Yes,' he said, 'you have understood.'

The divine voice of thunder repeated the same *Da Da Da*, that is, Be subdued, Give, Be merciful. Therefore, let that triad be taught. Subduing, Giving, and Mercy.

Therefore, though appearing an Infant, etc., there is no break in the uniformity of mediation, for the Lord is conceived as One Essence, all-pervading and ever-unchanging, though manifesting different aspects.

### *Adhikaraṇa V.—The deeds of the Lord are eternal.*

Says, an objector: If the deeds (Karma) of the Lord shown forth in His Infancy, etc., were also eternal, then there can be a combination of all such deeds, though mentioned in different Sākhās. But the deeds are not eternal—for the very fact that they are deeds or Karmas necessarily implies that they are transitory. The word Karma or a deed, Kriyā or an act, and Līlā or a sport, are synonymous. The Karmas are known to have a beginning, an end, and having relation with certain individuals. The very essence of a Karma consists in having such relations with others, and as having a beginning and an end, and anything that has a beginning and an end is undoubtedly non-eternal. The Karmas of the Lord, therefore, cannot be eternal.

If it be said that the Karmas are eternal as a current is eternal—one Karma disappears but gives rise to another in the very act of disappearance, and so the Karmic Chain is eternal—this is beside the point. The proposition is that every particular Līlā of the Lord is eternal, and not that one Līlā is succeeded by a similar Līlā and in that sense the Karma is eternal. For in this view of the eternity of the Karma of the Lord, every Līlā would become transient—having a beginning and an end.

If it be said, the Karma is eternal, because it gives rise to the conception that it is the same Karma which was done at a prior time, then that also is incorrect. A particular drama may be played through many a successive night and it may be loosely said "it is the same play as was performed yesterday," but the *plays* (as actions) are different—though they give rise to the same conception. They are not identically same. The word *same* is used here in a loose way, as in the sentence "it is the same medicine which you took yesterday. Eat it." The medicine is not identically the same, but similar only—for the medicine taken yesterday no longer exists as medicine, but is absorbed in the system. There is *difference* between the two as entities.

But it may be said—Let there be no beginning or an end of the Karma. Let it be like the dance of painted pictures, which moving in closed circle, present the same acts over and over again, with the movements of the wheel: and so it may be said there is no break in the continuity of such a Karma, and so it is eternal. For here also, there are beginning and end, though the action is repeated over and over again, and always gives rise to the same sentiment in its observers. Therefore, the play of the Lord is not eternal. This is the objection raised and considered in the present section.

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The deeds performed by the Lord in His Infancy, etc., are the attributes of the Lord, and are eternal. Therefore, these deeds are to be conceived as performed with his attendants. (There must

be other actors in the play, besides the Lord, and so they must also be eternal). The one and the same retinue (the *troupe* of players) must also be conceived to be connected with many acts, prior and posterior in time. The prior act being eternal (according to you) the actor taking part in it must be ever connected with it—his relation with that particular act would be eternal. For that particular act would not be accomplished, without such relationship. That being so, that particular actor would not be able to take part in the subsequent act.

*Note :* Thus one actor Yaśodā suckles the infant Kṛṣṇa. If this act of suckling is an eternal Līlā of the Lord, then Yaśodā must be eternally suckling the child, and would not be free for the subsequent act, where she is found chastising the naughty boy.

If it be admitted that the same actor takes part in the subsequent act, then the prior act becomes transient—for that actor is no longer there. If the first act is eternal, then the actor in the second act cannot be the same person : he must be a different person. But this is both against experience and scripture.

(For example, there are not hundreds of Yaśodās, nor do the scriptures say so.)

Moreover, every act has two parts—the antecedent and the subsequent, and every part has also a beginning and an end. No act can be accomplished otherwise. The experience of a sentiment depends upon this succession of acts. If every act and every part of an act is eternal, there can be no succession, and so the very object of the Līlā is frustrated, for there would arise no variety of sentiments in the observers of an eternally unchanging scene. Therefore, if the Līlās of the Lord give rise to various sentiments, then they are not eternal. For the eternal is that, which like a painted picture, always gives rise to one constant sentiment.

If it be said, that though the play is eternal, its manifestations are different and many, without any break in the continuity, still the beginnings being many, there would arise difference. It would not give rise to the idea—"it is the same as that which was before,"—and without such a conception, there cannot arise any idea of eternity—the play of the Lord, therefore, cannot be eternal.

*Siddhānta :* This objection is answered in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA III., 3. 11.

सर्वभेदादन्यत्रेमे ॥ ३ । ३ । ११ ॥

सर्व Sarva, all. अभेदात् Abhedāt, being non-different. अन्यत्र Anyatra, in another time, in the posterior time. इमे Ime, these.

11. These very actors manifest in another (time and place), for there is no difference in them at all (they are identically the same).—372.

## COMMENTARY

Those very persons—the Lord and his companions (or co-actors)—who were engaged in enacting the previous part—that very Lord Hari, and those very same colleagues, together with those very parts of the act, must be believed to exist in the subsequent time and act. Why? Because all are the same identically. Because there is no difference in the Lord, or His colleagues, or the parts of his acts or His manifestations. *One* Lord appears in many forms as we find from Śrutis and Smṛtis like एकोऽपि सन् बहुधा योऽवभाति; “though one, who shines forth as many” एकानेकस्वरूपाय “salutations to Him who has one and many forms.” The same applies to the retinue of the Lord. In the Bhūmā Vidyā, the Freed Souls who alone form the colleagues and the retinue of the Lord, are said to be possessed of this power of appearing in many forms.

See the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VII, 26. 2 :

The Released soul does not see death nor illness, nor pain. The Released sees everything and obtains everything everywhere. He becomes one, he becomes three, he becomes five, he becomes nine, and it is said he becomes eleven as well, nay, he becomes one hundred and eleven, and one-thousand and twenty.

The Bhāgavata Purāṇa also shows the same in the marriage of Śrī Kṛṣṇa with the thousand princesses.

The same actions, though manifesting at different times, do not lose their identity, by the mere fact of their rising at different times on the horizon of different spectators. “He has cooked twice” means to the hearing of every intelligent person that the *one* act of cooking is done twice: and not that two different acts are done in different ways. “He has uttered the word *cow* twice.”—means the *same* act or word is twice repeated, and always refers to one and the same cow, and not that *two* cows are meant. Thus the Blessed Lord Hari, His colleagues, His places (the various stages where He acts), etc., owing to the multiplicity of manifestations, appear to be different, in this sense that the acts are commenced at a particular time and end at a particular time—but though thus distinguishable, yet such distinction does not detract from the identity of those acts—for in their essential nature those acts are absolutely identical. And since there is an element of time—succession in the mode of manifestation of these eternal acts, that gives rise to a variety of sentiments, and answers the objection that an unchanging eternal act must cause monotony.

Nor is this a dogma unbased on authority. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III., 8-3, it is said :

यद् भूतं च भवन् च भविष्यन् च ।

Who is Past, Present and Future.

So also in the Ātharvāṇa Upaniṣad :

एको देवो नित्यलीलानुरक्तः ।

The One God, engaged in Eternal Play.

So also in the Gītā (IV, 9):

जन्म कमे च मे दिव्यमेव यो वेत्ति तत्त्वतः ।

त्यक्त्वा देहं पुनर्जन्म नैति मामेति सोऽर्जुन ॥

He who thus knoweth My divine birth and action, in its essence, having abandoned the body, cometh not to birth again, but cometh unto Me, O Arjuna.

This also shows that the births and actions of the Lord are divine, that is to say, eternal: and non-Prākṛtic. For if these births and actions were temporal, historical events, their knowledge could not give release.

This realisation that the actions of the Lord are eternal, etc., cannot take place but through His grace; as we find from the following words of the Lord :

यावानहं यथाभावो यद् रूपगुणकर्मकः ।

तथैव तत्त्वविज्ञानमस्तु ते मदनुग्रहात् ॥

Through My grace let there arise in thee True Knowledge regarding my size as it is (*e.g.*, that even the middle size is all-pervading), regarding my real essence (*e.g.*, every part of my body is a transcendental reality), regarding my forms (*e.g.*, the different Avatāras), attributes (like Omniscience, etc.,) and actions (like birth, sport, etc.).

Therefore, it is established that the actions of the Lord are eternal. Moreover, it must be remembered that only those deeds which are performed by the Lord through His Power of Wisdom (Chit-Śakti) coupled with His Essential Form (Svarūpa) are eternal, and not every action of the Lord. (For if every action of the Lord were eternal, then creation, etc., being also His acts, must also be eternal). Hence it follows that actions performed by the Lord through Prakṛti (Matter) and Time, are temporal and non-eternal. Such acts are creation, etc. If it were not so, then creation being eternal, there would be no dissolution and all texts about Pralaya would be nullified.

### *Adhikaraṇa VI—Meditation on all attributes of the Lord.*

Now the author discusses the following point. In the Vedānta texts the attributes of Brahman are described to be as perfect bliss, omniscience, etc.

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt, whether in meditation on Brahman these attributes should be combined, in every act of meditation or not.

*Pūrrapakṣa:* The opponent holds the view that these attributes are not to be combined in meditation. Only those attributes can be combined, which are taught under one topic or head of teaching: because, there is no authority for the combination of those attributes which are read under a different context altogether. Nor is there any such rule, that all attributes of Brahman must be combined together, in a single act of meditation, in however different a context they might have been read. Therefore, all attributes of Brahman are not to be combined.

*Siddhānta:* The right view is that they are to be so combined, as is shown in the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 12.

आनन्दादयः प्रधानस्य ॥ ३ । ३ । १२ ॥

आनन्दादयः Ānandādayaḥ, bliss and others. प्रधानस्य Pradhānasya, of the Principal, *i.e.*, Supreme Self.

12. The attributes like bliss and the rest belonging to the Principal (Brahman), should be combined in meditation.—373.

COMMENTARY

“Of the Principal,” namely, of the Supreme Self to whom belong these attributes. All of them must be combined together in every act of meditation.

All those attributes, like perfection, bliss, omniscience, fulness, compassion and motherly love for those who have taken refuge under Him, etc., which are taught in the sacred Śrutis, as belonging to the Principal, namely to the Supreme Self, who is the substrate of those attributes, must be combined together in every act of meditation; because they serve the purpose of creating a love (thirst) for the Lord.

*Note:* There are certain attributes of Brahman which, mentioned in one Upaniṣad, are not mentioned at all in others. Of course, those attributes in which all the Upaniṣads concur, should be combined, but should the particular attributes mentioned in some, but not in others, be so combined. According to the concordance of the Upaniṣads, the attribute “Ananda” or bliss is, strangely enough, not mentioned at all in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad. Should Brahman be meditated as blissful?

### Adhikaraṇa VII—God as Blissful.

In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, the blessed Viṣṇu is described as Ānandamaya having joy for His head, etc.

*Viṣaya:* In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 5. 1., occurs the following description of the Ānandamaya Puruṣa:

Different from this, which consists of understanding, is the other inner Self, which consists of bliss. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man. Like the human shape of the former is the human shape of the latter. Joy is its head. Satisfaction its right arm. Great satisfaction is its left arm. Bliss is its trunk. Brahman is the seat (the support).

*Doubt* : Are these particular attributes of Brahman ("Joy," "Satisfaction," etc.) to be combined in every meditation on Brahman ?

*Pūrṇapākṣa* : In the last Sūtra it has been taught that attributes like bliss, etc., are to be combined in every act of meditation on Brahman. The particular attributes of Joy, Satisfaction, etc., taught in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, are not different from bliss, therefore, they must be combined in every act of meditation.

*Siddhānta* : This combination should not take place, because of the following Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 3. 13.

प्रियशिम्व्वाद्यप्राप्तिरपचयाऽपचयौ हि भेदः ॥ ३ । ३ । १३ ॥

प्रियशिम्व्वादौ Privaśirastvādī, of such as "joy being its head," etc. अप्राप्तिः Aprāptiḥ, the not being meant, or the non-inclusion. उपचयः Upachaya, greater intensity, or increase. अपचयौ Apachayau, and less intensity, or decrease. हि Hi, for. भेदः Bheda, (that being possible) where there is a difference.

13. The qualities like "Joy being its head," etc., are not to be included (in the general meditation on Brahman), because there are increase and decrease (in the quality mentioned in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad) (which is possible) where there is difference.—374.

#### COMMENTARY

The qualities like "Joy being its head," etc., are not to be combined in every meditation on Brahman. (This meditation taught in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad is meant only for some as will be taught later). Lord Viṣṇu, who is full of bliss (Ānandamaya) and has the shape of a man, has not the form of a bird, as described in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 5. Moreover, we find in that text, words like "satisfaction," "great satisfaction," which show that there are increase and decrease, in the nature of the bliss, attributed to this Ānandamaya bird of the Taittirīya Upaniṣad. Now increase and decrease are possible only where there is a difference in the quality. But the bliss of the Lord is not liable to increase or decrease (there can be no degrees in it, like satisfaction and great satisfaction). There cannot be any change in His bliss. All His attributes are perfect, full, free from Svagata Bheda, and consequently invariable, as has been shown in the Sūtra, III, 2. 28.

Therefore, the particular attributes taught in Taittiriya Upaniṣad (II, 5) are not to be combined in the general meditation on Brahman.

SŪTRA III, 3. 14.

इतरे त्वर्थमामन्यात् ॥ ३ । ३ । १४ ॥

इतरे Itare, the other (qualities mentioned in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad). तु Tu, but. अर्थ Artha, result, object, namely, Release. सामान्यात् Sāmānyât, on account of the equality, or sameness.

14. The other attributes of Brahman (taught in the Taittirîya Upaniṣad) are to be combined, however ; because meditation on them leads to the same result.—375.

COMMENTARY

The other attributes of Brahman, mentioned in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, in that Ânandavalli, are however to be combined. For example, the attributes of all-pervadingness, intelligent joyfulness, world causation, Supreme Lordliness, etc., (described as the attributes of the Ânandamaya Brahman) both before and after the passage describing this Ânandamaya bird (of Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II, V) are to be combined. For example, the all-pervadigness of Brahman is mentioned in the following lines immediately preceding the description of the bird :

Different from this, which consists of understanding, is the other inner Self, which consists of bliss. The former is filled by this. It also has the shape of man.

This shows the all-pervadingness of the Lord. This quality must be combined. Similarly, Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II, 1, shows that the Lord is intelligent and causes the joy of others :

He who knows the Brahman attains the highest (Brahman). On this the following verse is recorded : 'He who knows Brahman, which is (*i. e.*, cause, not effect), which is conscious, which is without end, as hidden in the depth (of the heart), in the highest ether, he enjoys all blessings, at one with the omniscient Brahman.'

The Creatorship of the Lord is mentioned in Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II, 6. (a subsequent passage of the same).

He wished, may I be many, may I grow forth. He brooded over himself (like a man performing penance). After he had thus brooded, he sent forth (*created*) all, whatever there is.

The Supreme Lordliness is shown in Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II, 8 :

From terror of it (Brahman) the wind blows, from terror the sun rises ; from terror of it Agni and Indra, yea Death runs as the fifth.

These attributes of all-pervadingness, creatorship, etc., must be combined, in every meditation of Brahman. Why ? Because Artha-sāmānyât. Because the Artha or the result is common or one. Meditation on Brahman leads to Mokṣa or emancipation. When Brahman is meditated, with the qualities mentioned in the Vedānta texts, such as, possessing strength,

creatorship, and friendliness towards all and being the refuge of all, the saviour of all, etc., then the man obtains the great Artha or object of life, namely, release. Meditating on Brahman, with the above qualities of all-pervadingness, etc., also leads to the same result. Therefore, these qualities, mentioned in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, are to be combined.

What is the object of describing the Ānandamaya Brahman as a bird, in the allegory of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad? In other allegories of the Upaniṣads, some distinct purpose is served by the parable. Thus in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, the soul is figured as a charioteer, body as a chariot, etc. The object of this figurative description is to teach, that the person meditating, must control his body, senses and mind. What is the object of this bird-allegory of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad? In fact, says the objector, we see no such object: and without any purport in view, the Vedas never enter into allegorical descriptions. What is then the purport? The answer to this question is given in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA, III, 3. 15.

आध्यानाय प्रयोजनाभावान् ॥ ३ । ३ । १५ ॥

आध्यानाय Ādhyānāya, for the sake of meditation. प्रयोजन Prayojana, of any (other) purpose. अभावान् Abhāvāt, on account of the absence.

15. There being the absence of any other purpose (in the allegory of the Ānandamaya Bird), it serves the purpose of meditation (for people of dull intellect).—376.

#### COMMENTARY

The allegory of the Bird in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad has no other object than to teach meditation on Brahman, in the form of a bird. The word Ādhyāna means complete contemplation. The sense is this. The second Valli of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad opens with the statement "Brahma-vid āpnoti param," 'he who knows the Brahman attains the highest.' Now Brahman is one, but He subsists in two forms: one his essential form, (the Ānandamaya Kṛṣṇa), and the second His Power or Energy forms (such as, those of Nārāyaṇa, etc.). That Supreme Lord appears five-fold as Nārāyaṇa, Vāsudeva, Saṅkarṣaṇa, Pradyumna, and Aniruddha. This five-fold manifestation is not capable of being easily meditated upon, by people of dull brains. Therefore, for the sake of such persons, one blissful Brahman is figured as a Bird, with joy for its head, satisfaction and great satisfaction for its wings, etc. The allegory, therefore, serves a purpose; namely, it brings Brahman within the easy comprehension of these people of dull understanding, who cannot meditate on an all-pervading, blissful Lord.



When by such concrete meditation, their intellect becomes capable of soaring to the higher heights, then the meditation becomes complete, and the man becomes a Brahman, and the word Vid here means "to meditate," and the Brahman is that person who can *fully meditate* on Brahman. In the previous part of the Taittīriya Upaniṣad are described the various Puruṣas such as Ānāmaya, Prāṇāmaya, Manomaya, Vijñānamaya. These various Puruṣas are all described as birds, with various attributes as their head, wings, etc. The object of the allegory is to give a clear conception of these various principles of man. Thus this physical body is the Ānāmaya man-bird, his head is the head of the bird, his two arms are the wings of the bird, etc. Similarly, the Prāṇāmaya man or the Astral or Breath-man is allegorised as having the various breaths for its various parts. So on, with the Mind-man and the Understanding-man. Lastly, is described the Bliss-man or Brahman, with joy for its head, etc. Therefore, it has been well said that these attributes of "joy for its head," etc., are not to be combined in the general meditation on Brahman. This allegory is only figurative of the pure Brahman, who also appears with five members (namely, as Nārāyaṇa, Vāsudeva, Saṅkarṣaṇa, Pradyumna, and Aniruddha). It may be objected that Brahman is one and has not five members, as mentioned above, for there is no authority for it. To this objection we reply that there are various texts showing that Brahman has different members. Such as षकोऽपि मन् बहुधा योऽवमानि :- (Gopāla Pārva Tāpam).

Though one, he manifests as many.

एकं भन्तं बहुधा दृश्यमानं :- (Brahma Upaniṣad 2)

Being one, who appears as many

So also in the Chaturveda Śikha we have the following

स शिरः, स दक्षिणः पक्षः, स उत्तरः पक्षः, स आत्मा, स पुच्छम ॥

He is the head. He is the right wing, He is the left wing. He is the body, He is the tail.

So also in the Bṛhat Saṁhitā .

शिरो नारायणः पक्षो दक्षिणः सद्य एव च । प्रद्युम्नश्च निरुद्धश्च मन्दोहो वासुदेवकः ॥

नारायणोऽथ मन्दोहो वासुदेवः शिरोऽपि वा । पुच्छं मकरणः प्राक् एक एव तु पञ्चधा ॥

अंगगित्वेन भगवान् क्रीडते पुरुषोत्तमः । ऐश्वर्यान्न विरोधश्च चिन्त्यस्तस्मिन् जनार्दने ॥

अतर्क्ये हि कुतस्त्वन्त्वप्रमेये कुतः प्रमा ॥

Nārāyaṇa is the head. Pradyumna is the right wing. Aniruddha is the left wing. Vāsudeva is the trunk, or Nārāyaṇa is the trunk and Vāsudeva is the head, and Saṅkarṣaṇa is the tail. Thus the one Lord, the Puruṣottama (the Supreme Man) sports in five different forms as a body and its members, as a part and the whole. But every member and every part is *full*, and perfect with all divine attributes, and none of these five members of the Lord is to be considered as higher or lower, as possessing greater or less lordliness, or as being opposed to each other. How can there be reasoning regarding that being who is

above all reasoning how can there be proof of Him who is proof-less, (but the standard of every proof and the basis of all logical reasoning) '.

SŪTRA III, 3. 16.

आत्मशब्दाच्च ॥ ३ । ३ । १६ ।

आत्मशब्दाच्च Ātma śabdācch, from the Śruti containing the word "Ātman." ३ Cha, and

16 And because the word Ātman is applied to this Ānandamaya, (so it cannot be a bird).—377.

COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya Śruti, the Ānandamaya is called Ātman, so Brahman being specifically called an Ātman, it is impossible that an Ātman should have tail and the rest, like a bird. Therefore, it is merely an allegory, that the Brahman is described there as a bird.

Note. A reference to the text of the Taittiriya Upanisad, II, 5 will show that the words are Ātmā Ānandamayāḥ—so clearly an allegory is intended.

But (says an objector), the word Ātman is applied there to the Prāṇamaya and the other bodies also. It is applied equally to the material physical body, to the subtler Prāṇic body, to the Mānasic body and to the Jiva itself, called there the Vijnānamaya. The phrase "Anyo antara ātmā," is repeated with regard to every one of these, in that chapter. Why should then the application of the term Ātman to the Ānandamaya be taken as a reason that the Ānandamaya must be the all-pervading Consciousness (the Vibhu Chetana or the Brahman, when we find that it, *i. e.*, Ātman, is applied to the atomic consciousness (Ānuchetanā) or the Jiva also? How are you so certain that the Ānandamaya is Brahman, merely because a vague term like the word 'Ātman' is applied to it? The next Sūtra answers this objection.

SŪTRA III, 3. 17.

आत्मगृहीतिर्गिरवदुत्तरात् ॥ ३ । ३ । १७ ॥

आत्म Ātma, Ātman, the Supreme Self, गृहीतिः Grhītiḥ is taken to mean, or to comprehend. गिरवत् Itaravat, just as the case in the other texts, उत्तराद् उत्तराद्, as appears from the next sentence.

17. The word Ātman, however, here denotes the Universal Consciousness or Brahman, as it does in the other passages preceding this section, because of context as shown in the subsequent sentence.—378.

COMMENTARY

The word Ātman, when applied to the Ānandamaya, must denote the Supreme Self, the Vibhu Chetanā, the Universal Consciousness, as it

undoubtedly does in the passages like 'Ātmā vā idam eka evāgra āsit' (the Supreme Self was this verily in the beginning). Here the word Ātmā is taken by all to mean the Paramātmā. But why do you say that here also, it must be taken to mean the Supreme Self? Uttarāt. Because in the sentence immediately following, we have such qualities described, which leave no doubt that the Ānandamaya self is the Supreme Self. Thus in the sixth Anuvāka we have :

मोक्षकामयन् बहु स्यां प्रजायेयेति । स इदं सर्वममृजत ॥

He wished, may I be many, may I grow forth... and he created all.

This passage, coming after the Ānandamaya sentence, shows that the Ānandamaya is the Creator of all, and therefore, is Brahman. Had the Ānandamaya self not been the Supreme Self, then this description "the creator of all" would become incongruous. The Creatorship is the specific attribute of God and of no one else. The meditation, therefore, on the Ānandamaya symbolised as a Bird, with Joy for its head, etc., is meditation on Brahman, and so nothing is inharmonious in such meditation.

SŪTRA III, 3. 18.

अन्वयादिति चेत्स्यादवधारणात् ॥ ३ । ३ । १८ ॥

अन्वयात् Anvayāt, on account of connotation, or on account of syntactical connection. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if (it be objected). स्यात् Syāt, there can be (certainty). अवधारणात् Avadhāraṇāt, on account of (the Supreme Self being) understood (throughout): is retained (mentally).

18. (If it be objected that we cannot so infer) because of the syntactical connection: (we reply) it may be (so inferred): because (the idea of the Supreme Self) is understood (throughout the whole of the second chapter of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad).—379.

COMMENTARY

"But," says an objector, "we cannot infer for certainty that the word 'Ātman' applied to the Ānandamaya, must mean the Param-ātman—the universal consciousness: and not the Jiva-ātman—the conditioned consciousness. Because the word Ātman has been applied in the previous Anuvākas to Jaḍam (or Prākṛtic bodies) like the Prāṇamaya, and Manomaya; as well as to the Aṇu-chetanā or the Atomic consciousness, namely, the Jīva, i.e., the Vijñānamaya." To this we reply—Syāt, *namely*, that it may be inferred with certainty that the Supreme Self, the Universal Consciousness, is meant by the word Ātman in the Ānandamaya passages because in the very first Anuvāka. He is referred to in the sentence

तस्माद् वा एतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः etc., "From that Ātman indeed sprang ether." Here the word Ātman distinctly refers to the Param-ātman, and this fact is kept or retained (Avadhārita) in mind throughout, in studying the succeeding Anuvākas. Otherwise, the text teaching meditation on the Ānandamaya would be nullified. The idea of the Paramātmān, taken from the first Anuvāka (from the text 'Etsmād ātmanah'), remains latent in the mind, while passing over the succeeding Anuvākas (Sections) which treat of the Prāṇamaya Ātman, Manomaya Ātman, etc., but finds no halting place till it comes to the Ānandamaya Ātman: because there is taught no higher Ātman than the Ānandamaya. Therefore, on the maxim of showing the star Arundhati the previous Ātmans are rejected, as not being the Paramātmān, and the mind finds its full satisfaction in the Ātman of bliss, after which no other Ātman is enumerated. Thus the opening passage (Etsmād ātmanah) and the concluding passage (Sā idam satyam agra) show that the Ānandamaya Ātman is the Supreme Self.

*Note.* In order to lead up to the Paramatman mentioned in the first section the Taittiriya Upaniṣad at first refers to the "Man of Food" the Annamaya, then to the "Man of Breath" the Prāṇamaya, then to the "Man of Mind" the Manomaya, then to the "Man of Understanding" the Vijñānamaya. Every one of these in succession is taken to be the Supreme Self, but this wrong notion is continually corrected by the saying, "Different from this, is the other, the inner self." But when the Ānandamaya self is reached, there is no such corrective applied: there is no such saying "different from this, the Ānandamaya self, is the other, the Inner Self, the Brahman." The Śruti thus gradually leads up to the Ānandamaya and halts there indicating thereby that this is the Innermost Self, the Paramātmān. Hence the meditation on the Ānandamaya is meditation on Brahman.

The star Arundhati is barely visible to the naked eye: to point it out, therefore, some very big star near it is shown at first as Arundhati, then it is rejected and a smaller star is pointed out as Arundhati, and so on till the actual Arundhati is located. This method of leading from the gross to the more subtle is called the Arundhati Nyāya.

### *Adhikaraṇa VIII—God as Father.*

The author now wishes to show that the attributes of Brahman, like those of being the father, mother, etc., should also be comprised in meditation on Him.

*Viśaya:* Thus says a Śruti:

माता पिता भ्राता निवासः शरणं सुहृद् गतिर्नारायणः ।

Nārāyaṇa is the Mother, the Father, the Brother, Abode, Shelter, Lover and the Path. *cf.* Gītā, IX., 17, 18).

In the Jitanta-stotra, first Chapter, also it is said:

पिता माता सुहृद् बन्धुभ्राता पुत्रस्त्वमेव मे ।

विषा धनञ्जय कामश्च नान्यद् किञ्चित् त्वया विना ॥

Thou alone art my father, mother, lover, friend, brother, and son. Thou art my learning, riches, and desires—I have nothing else but Thee—(Thou art my all in all.)

In the middle and the last chapters of the same, we find :

जन्मप्रभृति दासोऽस्मि शिष्योऽस्मि तनयोऽस्मि ते ।

त्वं च स्वामी गुरुर्माता पिता च मम माधव ॥

From my very birth I am thy slave, I am thy pupil, and thy son, am I. Thou art my Master, thou my Teacher, and my father and mother thou, O Mādhava !

*Doubt* : Now arises the following doubt : Are these various qualities of fatherhood, sonhood, friendliness, masterhood, etc., to be meditated upon in the worship of Brahman or should they not ?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : The Lord must be worshipped as Ātman alone, as says the Śruti : आत्मैवेवोपासीत । He should not be meditated upon as father, etc.

*Siddhānta* : The refutation of this is given below :

SŪTRA III, 3. 19.

कार्याख्यानादपूर्वम् ॥ ३ । ३ । १६ ॥

कार्यं Kārya, of the effect, *i.e.*, the fruit. आख्यानाद् Ākhyānāt, because of the statement. अपूर्वम् Apūrvam, something similar to the Pūrva or the former attributes of Brahman. The force of अ in Apūrvam is that of indicating similarity.

19. The (qualities of fatherhood, etc., being) similar to the preceding ones (of Perfection, etc., are to be comprised in the meditation on Brahman), because of the statement of the result (of such devotion, namely, release).—380.

#### COMMENTARY

The "former" qualities (Pūrva) are such as Perfection, Bliss, etc. The word "Apūrvam," means the qualities *similar* to the Pūrva, *i.e.*, the qualities of fatherhood, etc. These qualities must be meditated upon by those who worship Him in these aspects. Why ? Kāryākhyānāt : Because of the statement of the effect or fruit resulting from such meditation with such devotional sentiments. (That is to say, devotion to the Lord as father, mother, etc., also leads to Release). As says the Śruti (Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad; V., 14) :

भाव्याद्यमनीडाख्यं भावाभावकरं शिवम् । कलासर्गकरं देवं ये विदुस्ते जडुस्तनुम् ॥

Those who know Him who is to be grasped by devotion (Bhāva-grāhyam), who is not the body (nest), who makes existence and non-existence, the auspicious One, who also creates the elements, they have left the body.

(This shows that the Lord is Bhāva-grāhya or attained by devotion, whatever form that devotion may take).

So also says the Lord in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

येषामहं प्रिय आत्मा सुतश्च सखा गुरुः सुहृदो देवमिष्टम् ।

Of those to whom I am dear, the self, the son, the friend, the teacher, the lover, the Destiny and the Desired.

Therefore, the devotee (Bhāvuka, the sentimental), must think the Lord as father, mother, etc., just as he thinks Him to be all full, all bliss, etc.

As regards the Śruti that "Ātman alone is to be meditated upon," that does not prohibit meditation on the Lord as father, mother, etc. This objection has been previously dealt with under Sūtra III, 3, 7.

### *Adhikaraṇa IX—Meditation on a form necessary.*

Now the author takes up the topic that the Lord may be meditated upon as having a form (Vigraha) also.

*Viśaya* : In some Śrutis we find texts like the following describing the Lord as mere Self :

आत्मैक्येवोपासीत --(Bṛhad. Up., I, 4, 7).

He must be worshipped as Ātman alone.

आत्मानमेव लोकमुपासीत --(Bṛhad. Up., I, 4, 15).

Let a man worship the Ātman only as his true state.

But in other Śrutis, the Lord is described as having a form, such as in the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī, quoted before : "Then Brahmā said : Meditate on Brahman, dressed as a cowherd, cloud-coloured, young, standing under the Kulpa tree, and about whom are the following verses : His eyes are like full-blown white lotus, He has the colour of the blue cloud, His raiments are sparkling as lightning, He has two arms, etc."

Then the Upaniṣad, after so reciting His form, concludes thus :

चिन्तयन् चेतसा कृष्णं मुक्तो भवति संसृतेः ।

Thus meditating with concentrated mind on Kṛṣṇa, a man becomes freed from the cycle of births and deaths.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Does the Release result from worshipping the Lord as mere Self (Ātman), only (without any form), or is it the result of worshipping Him as the Self having a Form ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says, the Mukti is obtained by worshipping Him as Ātman alone, and not by adoring Him as having a form. For in such meditation as Ātman, there is a uniform flow of sentiment, (uninterrupted by any distraction or jarring emotion). It is stated that the Mukti or release comes from the meditation consisting of one uniform flow of devotional sentiment (Ekarasa). But in meditating on the Lord as having a shape, there is no oneness of sentiment ;

for the thought dwells sometimes on the eyes, sometimes on the ears, hands, etc., and thus there is no uniformity in such meditation, for a form has always different parts. Therefore, Release is not obtainable by Form-worship.

*Siddhanta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA III, 3. 20.

समान एवं चाभेदात् । ३ । ३ । २० ॥

समान Samānah, same, uniformity of sentiment. एवम् Evam, even. च Cha, though. अभेदात् Abhedât, owing to non-difference.

20. Even though (there arise different perceptions of eyes, etc., in meditation on the Form), yet they are the same, because there is no difference, (the eyes, etc., are all Âtman).—381.

#### COMMENTARY

The force of the word “Cha” is that of “Api.” Even though in Form-meditation there arise different perceptions of eyes, etc., yet the sentiment is the “same,” i.e., is one and uniform. As an image made of gold is gold throughout, and looking at its eyes, hands, etc., does not give rise to different ideas, but one uniform idea, i.e., of gold, so in meditating on the Form, there do not arise different ideas but one idea of the Lord. Why? Abhedât. Because there is no difference : because the eyes, etc., of the form of the Lord are all Âtman (as those of the golden image are all gold). Therefore, Release is obtained only by worshipping the Âtman as having a form or rather as having become a form. If this were not so (if Release were obtainable by mere abstract meditation), then the Śruti texts like “thus meditating on Kṛṣṇa with concentrated mind” (Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani Upaniṣad) would be nullified. The texts like “Brahman is a uniform essence of the True, the knowledge, the infinity, the bliss, etc.,” do not mean that He is an abstraction, but that His Form sheds forth these various attributes (as the one sun sheds various colour). They do not detract from His uniformity and one-ness of essence. Though this point was considered before also in Sūtra III, 2. 14, it is reconsidered here in a different light. The compassionate teacher repeats the same thing over and over again, out of kindness for his pupils, so that they may understand this abstruse and recondite subject.

#### THE THEORY OF ÂVEŚA AVATĀRAS

The author has already taught in the previous aphorisms that in meditating on the Lord, all His attributes, as manifested by His direct

Forms and Avatāras, are to be combined. Now he considers whether the attributes shown by the Lord when He temporarily shines forth through some exalted souls (Jivas), that is to say, through the inspired Men (Āveśa Avatāras) are to be so combined or not.

*Note:* There are two views regarding Āveśa Avatāras. These are exalted Jivas possessed by the Lord, inspired by Him. All qualities of the Lord are not manifested through such beings. One view is that the attributes shown by the Āveśa Avatāras should be combined, the other is that there should be no such combination.

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VII., 1. 1, Nārada approaches Sanat Kumāra and says, "Teach me, O Lord! (Bhagavat)." ... "Therefore, O Lord! (Bhagavat) take me over this ocean of grief."

The beings like the Kumāras are Jivas possessed or overshadowed (Āviṣṭa) by some one of the attributes of the Lord, such as Wisdom, Power, etc. These Jivas are the Āveśas of the Lord; as is clear from the application of the word "Bhagavat" to them. The question arises: Should the devotees of these (Sanat Kumāra, etc.) while meditating on these God-like souls, worship them investing with *all* the attributes of the Lord or not? In answer to this doubt, the author teaches two alternatives. First, he shows the permission to combine, *i.e.*, the injunction side, by which all the attributes of the Lord may be meditated upon as existing in the Great Beings. This is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 21.

सम्बन्धादेवमन्यत्रापि । ३ । ३ । २१ ॥

सम्बन्धाद् Sambandhāt, on account of their being intimately connected. एवम् Evam, thus, the same. अन्यत्र Anyatra, in others (such as the Kumāras). अपि Api, even.

21. Because of their intimate connection with the Lord, in such others also (like the Kumāras, etc.) all the attributes of the Lord may be meditated upon.—382.

COMMENTARY

"Id others," namely, in the Kumāras and the rest, who are always possessed by the Lord, and in whom the God always dwells. In such supremely high Jivas, all the attributes of the Lord may be comprised in meditation. Why? Sambandhāt, because of the intimate relation. Such Jivas are so intimately related with the Lord, that they are hardly distinguishable from Him. The Lord has entered into and possessed them so completely as the fire pervades the white-hot iron.

This is the positive view. The author next gives the negative or the prohibition of such meditation.



SŪTRA III., 3. 22.

न वाविशेषात् ॥ ३ । ३ । २२ ॥

न Na, not. वा Vâ, or, अविशेषात् Aviśeṣât, because of want of difference (between the Kumâras and other Jivas in the matter of Jiva-hood).

22. Or not, because there is no distinguishable feature in them (they are after all Jivas and in no way distinguishable from other Jivas as such).—383.

COMMENTARY

All the entire attributes of the Lord are not to be combined in meditating on such Jivas. Why? Aviśeṣât, because there is no distinction between these Jivas and the other Jivas, so far as the quality of Jiva-hood is concerned; in spite of the fact that the Lord is in them and possesses them. The force of the word "or" is to indicate that since these beings are the beloved of the Lord, they ought to be looked upon with extreme respect, but not worshipped as God.

SŪTRA III., 3. 23.

दर्शयति च ॥ ३ । ३ । २३ ॥

दर्शयति Darśayati, shows (the Śruti). च Cha. and.

23. And the Scripture illustrates this.—384.

COMMENTARY

Such God-possessed Beings, though object of great veneration, are not to be worshipped as God, because the Scripture illustrates it in the passage under discussion. Nârada is himself a God-possessed Soul, as we find it from various accounts given in the Bhâgavata Purâṇa and other books. In spite of his being so great, we find him going to Sanat Kumâra and asking him to be taught about the Supreme Self. Thus this Chhândogya Śruti itself shows that all the attributes of God are not to be combined in meditating on these godly beings, for they are not as perfect as God is.

SŪTRA III., 3. 24.

संभृतिगुण्यप्यपि चातः ॥ ३ । ३ । २४ ॥

संभृति Sambhṛti (the attribute of being the nourisher, the supporter), the collection. द्यु Dyû, the sky, all the space. व्याप्ति Vyâpti, the attribute of pervading, the spreading out. अपि Api, also. च Cha, and. अतः Ataḥ, for the same reason.

24. And for this reason, the attributes of being the collection of all potent energies and of spreading out the

loftiest heavens (which are the specific attributes of God, are not to be combined in meditating on such Beings).—385.

## COMMENTARY

The phrase Saṁbhṛti-dyuvyāpti is a Dvandva compound of these two words, meaning "collection" and "spreading out the heavens." These two attributes are not to be combined in meditating on such Āveśa Avatāras. The reason for this is the same as given in the previous Sūtras, namely, that the Āveśa Avatāras are Jivas after all. The sense is this. In the rescension of the Eṇāyānīyanas, we find the following text in their supplementary portion (Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, II, 4. 7. 10. :

ब्रह्म ज्येष्ठा वीर्यां संभृजानि । ब्रह्मध्रे ज्येष्ठं दिव्यान्ततान् । श्रुतं य ब्रह्म प्रथमोऽजं । तेनाहं नि  
ब्रह्मणा स्पर्धितुं कः ॥

[The reading in the text is from the Atharva Veda, XIX., 22. 21 : where the second line runs as भूतानां ब्रह्म प्रथमोऽजं । Baladeva's reading is ब्रह्म भूतानां प्रथमं तु जं ।]

Heroisms (were) gathered with the Brahman as chief; the Brahman as chief in the beginning stretched the sky; the Brahman was born as first of creatures: therefore, (Tena) who is fit to contend with the Brahman? (Bloomfield).

This verse is found in the Atharva Veda (XIX., 22. 21) and the translation of it, given by Mr. Griffith, is as follows :

"Collected manly powers are topped by Brahma. Brahma at first spread out the loftiest heaven. Brahma was born first of all things existing. Who then is meet to be that Brahma's rival?"

This shows the glory of Brahman, namely, he has all manly powers in him, and he it is who has spread out the loftiest heavens. These attributes are the specific qualities of the Lord, and consequently they are not to be meditated upon as existing in any Jiva, how high soever he may be.

The author now gives another reason in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA. III, 3. 25.

पुरुषविद्यायामिव चेतरेषामनाम्नानात् ॥ ३ । ३ । २५ ॥

पुरुषविद्यायाम् Puruṣa Vidyāyām, in Puruṣa-vidyā. इव Iva, like. Another reading is अपि "also." च Cha, and. चेतरेषाम् Itareṣām, of the others (of the qualities like omnipotence, etc.) अनाम्नानात् Anāmnānāt, not being mentioned.

25. These other (attributes of the Lord are not declared as existing in the Kumāras, etc.) (as they are declared to exist) in (the direct manifestations of Brahman such as) the Man (of the Puruṣa) Sukta, and (in Kṛṣṇa of the Gopāla Tāpani, etc.).—386.

## COMMENTARY

In the narratives of the Kumâras and of others, there is no mention of the attributes of being the material cause of the creation of all things, or of being the ruler and regulator of all, etc., (namely, of those qualities which are the specific attributes of the Lord). Hence in meditating on these God-like Beings, all the attributes of God are not to be thought of as existing in them. The author gives an illustration to show the contrary, *Puruṣa-vidyâyām-iva*. As in the *Puruṣa* hymns of the Vedas. By force of the word "and" the *Gopāla Tâpani*, etc., are also taken. All the above attributes of the Lord are given in these, while they are conspicuous by their absence in the narratives of the Kumâras, etc. The conclusion of all this discussion is as follows : In these God-possessed Beings, there are two aspects—the *Jiva*-aspect and the *God*-aspect just as in a white-hot iron ball.

In a hot iron ball there exist the iron and the fire. Those devotees of the Kumâras, etc., who see in them the Divine aspect only, like those who think on the fire only of the white-hot iron ball, should meditate on such beings with all the attributes of God, because they are looking on the *God*-aspect only, to the exclusion of the *Man*-aspect. But those whose devotion is not so keen and who are conscious of their *man*-aspect, like those who see the iron also in the white-hot ball such devotees of the Kumâras, etc., should not invest their *Iṣṭa* (Beloved) with all the attributes of God. On the other hand, they meditate upon these Beings as friends of God, dearly beloved to him. The Supreme Lord being pleased with their devotion to His beloved ones, accepts such worship, as if it was directly offered to Him. It is not only in the *Chhândogya Upaniṣad* that *Sanat Kumâra* is addressed as *Bhagavat*, but words like *Bhagavat*, etc., have been applied to these exalted beings even in the *Bhâgavata Purâṇa* and other scriptures. These books also have declared their *Jiva* nature as well, by describing them as weak and poor creatures. Those passages must also be reconciled in the same way, namely, their weakness, etc., are all comparative, for compared with Brahman every one is a weak and poor creature.

---

*Adhikaraṇa X—The destructive attributes of God.*

It has been said that Brahman must be meditated upon with the attributes specifically mentioned in the books of one's own *Śākhā* (primarily, and if possible, the attributes mentioned in other *Śākhās* may be combined, according to the ability of the devotees). Yet to this, there

is an exception, for some attributes mentioned in one's own Śākhā may be such, that a person desirous of release, can never benefit by such meditation, and must eschew those attributes from his worship. Thus in the Atharva Veda, there are prayers to God to kill the sorcerer, etc. Those attributes of God should never be meditated upon. Hence the author starts this new Adhikarāṇa.

*Viśaya* : In the Atharva Veda we find the following (Kāṇḍa, VIII, Sūktā 3, verses 4 and 17).

अग्ने त्वत् यत्पुथानस्य भिन्धि हिंसाशनिर्हरसा हन्त्येवम् ।

प्र पर्वाणि जातवेदः शृणोहि क्रव्यान् कविष्णुर्विनिस्त्येनम् ॥

Pierce through the Yātudhāna's skin, O Agni; let the destroying dart with fire consume him.

Reud his joints, Jātavedas! let the eater of raw flesh, seeking flesh, tear and destroy him.

सर्वस्मरीणं पय उग्रियायाम्नस्य माशीद् यत्पुथानो नृपत्तः ।

पीथुमग्ने यमस्मिन् तृप्तात् न प्रत्यन्वन्विम विव्य ममधि ॥१७॥

The cow gives milk each year, O Man-Beholder; let not the Yātudhāna ever taste it.

Agni, if one should glut him with the blessings, Pierce with thy flame his vitals as he meets thee.

*Doubt* : Here Agni or the Lord, is described as piercing through the skin and the vitals of the sorcerer. Is the Lord to be meditated upon as a piercer, etc.?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : The opponent's view is that the Lord should be meditated upon, even as piercer, because it is expected from Him that He should destroy the evil-doers (for one of His attributes is to punish the wicked).

*Siddhānta* : The right view, however, is that the Lord should not be meditated upon in these His fierce Attributes, but only as a compassionate, Merciful Lover of His devotees.

*Note* : The above verses of the Atharva Veda are addressed to Agni. But according to the Tīkā of Baladeva, Agni means Sarvāgrani, the foremost of all, the leader of all. And hence it is a name of God. The word Pratyāñḥam translated as "He meets Thee" is explained by the Tīkā-kāra as Pratikālavarttinam, that is, one who is opposed to another, an enemy. The above verses are addressed to the Lord to destroy one's enemies. A person who wants liberation, the Mumukṣu, the Would-be-free, should not bear grudge against any body, and should be the last person to pray, "O Lord, destroy our enemies," whether such enemies be personal or national.

SŪTRA III., 3. 26.

वेधाद्यर्थभेदान् ॥ ३ । ३ । २६ ॥

वेधादि Vedhādi, "Kill, etc." or pierce, etc. यथे Artha, the result, or the fruit. भेदाद् Bhedāt, being different. न Na, not (understood from the previous Sūtra).

26. The Would-be-free should not meditate on the Lord as a Piercer, etc., because the result of such meditation is different from Release.—387.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Not" is understood in this Sūtra from Sūtra III, 3. 22. The Would-be-free should not meditate on the Lord with such attributes as those of a piercer, etc. Why? Arthabhedāt. Artha means here "the result or fruit." Because, the fruit of such meditation is different; that is to say, the Would-be-free wants release and such meditation is not conducive to it. The sense is that the Would-be-free has risen higher than the ordinary worldly men, and consequently he has no right to indulge in prayers of hatred, like those given above. In other words, he has no Adhikāra to this. Even the Lord has shown this in the Gītā, XIII, 8 :

अमानित्वमदम्भित्वमहिंसा क्षान्तिराजैवम् ।

आचार्योपासनं शौचं स्थैर्यमात्मविनिग्रहः ॥ ८ ॥

Humility, unpretentiousness, harmlessness, forgiveness, rectitude, service of the teacher, purity, steadfastness, self-control (should be cultivated by the Would-be-free).

So also in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

निवृत्तं कर्म सेवेत प्रवृत्तं मत्परस्त्यजेत् ।

The Would-be-free should follow the activities conducive to Nivṛtti (renunciation), (such as daily prayers, Sandhyā, etc.). My devotees should abandon all Pravṛtti Karmas, (such as Kāmya, Jyotiṣoma, etc.).

### *Adhikaraṇa XI.—Meditation is not obligatory on Released Souls.*

*Viśaya :* In the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, I, II., we find the following :

ज्ञात्वा देवं सर्व्वपाशापहानिः क्षीणेः क्लेशैर्जन्ममृत्युप्रहाणि । तस्याऽभिध्यानाच्चृतीयं देहभेदे विश्वैश्वर्य्यं केवलं प्राप्तकामः ॥

When that God is known, all fetters fall off, sufferings are destroyed, and birth and death cease. From being intensely absorbed in Him, one goes on the dissolution of the body to the third region, where exists universal lordship, and which is the Isolate (above Māyā) and where all his desires are satisfied.

From this we learn that the fetters of My-ness, such as, "this is my body," "this is my house," etc., are destroyed when one gets the knowledge of the Lord. And then there ceases the pain due to birth and death (for though the Freed ones may be born and die at their option, they do not suffer the pains of birth and death and so practically births and deaths cease for them). This verse magnifies the glory of the knowledge of God as obtained from the study of scriptures. By such illumination, when the true essential nature of God is known, then by meditating on Him, namely, by

constantly thinking on Him, on the dissolution of the body (when the Līṅga-body even is destroyed), such God-knowing man rises above the Moon-world and the Brahmā-world, and reaches the third Loka, namely, the world of the Lord. What is the nature of that world? It is full of "Universal lordship" that is, all the super-cosmic manifestations of the Lord exist there. It is the world of "Kevalam," or free from Māyā; and by reaching this, one becomes fully satisfied, namely, all his desires are obtained. This description shows that the Lord is obtainable through Scriptural knowledge also.

*Doubt:* Is meditation on the Lord, enjoined by this verse, optional or obligatory, on the person who has already obtained the knowledge of God?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* Meditation is obligatory, because it is the cause of inducing mental concentration, by increasing higher devotion.

*Siddhānta:* The right view, however, is that meditation is optional for the man who has known God, and whose fetters have all fallen off.

SŪTRA III, 3. 27.

हानौ नूःयनशब्दशेषत्वात् कुशाच्छन्दस्तुत्युपगानवत्तदुक्तम् ॥ ३ । ३ । २७ ॥

हानौ Hānau, after the getting rid of (bondage), नू Tu, but, only. उपायन Upāvana, on account of obtaining or getting near to (the Lord). शब्द Śabda, on account of the statements of the word. शेषत्वात् Śeṣatvāt, on account of being supplementary to, on account of being the remainder of. कुश Kuśa, as in the case of Kuśa for taking, the Kuśa grass in one's hands. आच्छन्द Âchchhanda, according to one's desire, according as it is strong or weak. The force of आ is two-fold, to denote strength or weakness. स्तुति Stuti, as in the case of prayer, or praise (Yajus). उपगानवत् Upagānavat, and as in the case of singing (Sāman). तत् Tat, that. उक्तम् Uktam, is explained in the Scriptures.

27. But in the released state, (the free may perform meditation at their option), because they have already attained nearness to the Lord, because the Scriptural texts declare the same, and because all texts are meant to lead the soul to this stage. As the singing and reciting hymns of praise, (Yajus and Sāman) with the sacred grass in his hand, is not obligatory on the student, who has finished his obligatory daily task. And this is declared by Scriptures.—388.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" is employed in the above Sūtra, in order to remove the Pūrvapakṣa. When by the knowledge of God, there takes place the

falling off of the fetters then for such a wise person, who is devoted to the Lord, the act meditating on the Divine attributes as taught in the Scriptures, is an optional self-imposed duty, just like the singing of praises and hymns, with more or less of desire, by taking the Kuśa grass in one's hand.

*Note :* When a student has finished the daily obligatory sacred study, if he finds time, he can make a resolution to repeat the Saṁhitā; and then with the hands in the form of a Brahmāṇjali, with the sacred grass in the middle, he repeats the Veda. This recitation is purely voluntary, and not obligatory. Just like this is the meditation of the person whose delusion of "mind," etc., is destroyed. He may meditate on Truth through texts and reasoning; but it is not obligatory on him.

The released soul is under no obligation to perform philosophical meditation; it is optional to him to do so. In fact, the above verse of the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, by using the word Abhidhyānāt (with prefix Abhi), shows that he has reached the stage of God-immersion (Abhidhyāna) and does not need ordinary Dhyāna. The reason for this is, that the released soul has obtained Upāyana or the vicinity of the Lord and attachment for Him. The word Upāyana means attaining such vicinity. The second reason is Śeṣatvāt—because supplementary. All texts are supplementary to this, or are meant to lead the soul to this stage of God-love. As says a text (Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 21): "Let a wise Brāhmaṇa, after he has discovered Him, practise devotion, let him not seek after many words, for that is mere weariness of the tongue."

In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa it is written :

By works of public utility, by austerity, sacrifices, by alms-giving, by Yoga practices, by concentration, the highest object which men seek is love for Me, and attachment for Me.

Therefore, when once such attachment is acquired, it becomes useless for the devotee to go on further with meditation. His meditation, therefore, is optional.

The sense is this. It is very difficult to find out the truth through philosophical reason and Scriptural texts of obscure and abstruse meaning. Moreover, even reasoning and texts are of various kinds and deal with various subjects and sub-divisions thereof, and consequently the path of knowledge to God, through philosophical reasoning and Scriptural studies, is very difficult. (Because philosophers differ, and so do the interpreters of texts). But to a person whose heart is solely attached to the Lord, and is softened by constant thinking on His blissful nature, all such studies and reasoning produce hardness of heart, for, instead of helping in increasing God love, they jar upon one's feelings of devotion. But after the devotee has come out of his ecstasy, such studies may sometimes be helpful

to him, in reminding him of his attachment and serving as a sort of secondary devotion.

The author next gives both reason and authority for this statement.

*Note:* "Just as the twice-born, after the performance of the daily study enjoined upon them, namely, Brahma-Yajña, recite the Yajus and Sāmans wearing merely at their pleasure the Kuśa Pavitra on their finger, so also meditation, etc., in the highest heaven are performed by the Freed of their own accord. For all the other injunctions are only subservient to the statement referring to final beatitude. As says the Brahma-tarka : Indeed even those that have attained to heavenly bliss perform of their own accord the meditation on Hari, just as the Brāhmaṇas after their regular duty recite the Vedas, observing the rule of wearing Kuśa grass, etc., sitting with their face to the east." Mādhva.

SŪTRA III., 3. 28.

साम्पराये तत्तत्त्वभावात्तथा अन्ये ॥ ३ । ३ । २८ ॥

साम्पराये Sāmparāye, when the love for the Lord (has arisen in the soul). तत्तत्त्व Tartavya, of the bondage, (which is to be got rid of), something to cross over. अभावात् Abhāvāt, owing to the absence. तथा Tathā, so. हि Hi, because. अन्ये Anye, the others: the other Śākhins, the Vājasaneyins.

28. When the love for the Lord (has arisen in the soul), the philosophic meditation is optional, because there is absence of the bondage: thus say some Śākhins.—389.

#### COMMENTARY

The word साम्पराय means the Lord: because all Tattvas meet in Him (साम्परायन्ति तत्त्वानि अस्मिन्). The Love for the Lord is called साम्पराय। It is formed by adding the affix अण् under Pāṇini, IV., 3. 53.

When a person has got this love for God, it is optional for him to meditate on Tattvas or not. It is not obligatory. Why? Tartavyābhāvāt—because, they have nothing further to cross over. For then there exist no fetters which he has to cut off. So also the others, namely, the Vājasaneyins read (Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 21):

तमेव धीरो विज्ञाय प्रज्ञां कुर्वीत ब्राह्मणः । नानुश्यायाद्बह्वृक्षद्वान्वाचो विज्ञापनं हि तदिति ॥२१॥

Let a wise Brāhmaṇa (student of the Vedas), after he has discovered Him (through the scriptures and his Guru), practise Prajñā or devotion to Him. Let him not seek after many words (Vedānta texts), for that is mere weariness of the tongue.

So also the Lord has said in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa:

Jñāna (the Path of scriptural knowledge and philosophy) and Vairāgya (the Path of indifference or asceticism) are, as a general rule, not very beneficial to those devotees (Yogins) who are full of my love, and whose very self am I, who are deeply attached to Me.



*Adhikaraṇa XII—Fear and Love of God both cause salvation.*

It has been mentioned above that the meditation on Brahman is on Him as possessed of attributes. Now the author commences a new topic in order to show that this meditation is of two sorts. Thus in the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī Upaniṣad, Brahman is described in the form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, dressed as a cow-herd, having the colour of a cloud, etc., and accompanied by Prakṛti, etc. This is one form of meditation. Another form is given in other Śrutis as "verily this Brahman is the Self, the ruler of all, the controller of all, the Lord of all, etc."—(Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 22). This shows that, in the first case, devotion in the form of attachment, excited by the knowledge of His sweet attributes, is the cause of attaining Him. In the second case, it is devotion caused by the command of the law, and produced by the knowledge of His Majesty and Lordliness. Thus, there are two sorts of devotion or Bhakti—the devotion of love or Ruchi Bhakti, and the devotion of fear or Vidhi Bhakti. Therefore, the object of meditating being different (in one case, it is a being of all sweetness and love; in the other, a majestic ruler and king), the Bhakti is also of two sorts.

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt, which of these two kinds of Bhakti is the cause of God-attainment?

*Pūrrapakṣa:* As there is nothing to determine which of them leads to salvation, therefore, the seeker of God being in uncertainty, will not engage in any sort of meditation, and have no inclination for either.

*Siddhānta:* There need not be any such uncertainty, as shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 29.

छन्दत उभयाविरोधात् ॥ ३ । ३ । २९ ॥

छन्दतः Chhandataḥ, through the Will of God. उभय Ubhaya, of either. अविरोधात् Avirodhāt, there being no contradiction. | न Na, not|.

29. (There is no such uncertainty, because) through the wish of the Lord (souls follow one or the other of these two paths and reach the Lord thereby), since there is no conflict between these two.—390.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Not" is understood in this Sūtra from III., 3. 22, by the method called frog-leap. (That is, when a word of a previous Sūtra does not affect the Sūtra immediately following it, but some Sūtra after that, it is called frog-leap).

Chhandataḥ means by the wish of the Lord, who has determined both paths of approaching Him, for the devotees of Sat-prasaṅga (the good company), whether it be through the devotion of love or the devotion of fear, for souls are so constituted by Him that some love to dwell on the Majesty of the Lord, while others are absorbed in his sweetness. How is this so? "There is no conflict between these two." Since there are texts to both effects, a devotee is at liberty to follow any set of these texts. The sense is this. There are two eternally perfect paths of meditation on the attributes of the Lord. These paths begin with the highest companions of the Lord, such as the eternally free, and extend down to the lowest mortal, the youngest neophyte. These two paths flow like the stream of Divine origin, the Ganges, from the highest heaven to the world of the mortals. Therefore, all the souls in the universe are at liberty, according to their choice, to take up any one of these two paths, and join the particular discipline of persons treading these paths, and being taught by the teachers of that path the method of meditating on the peculiar attributes of the Lord, he meditates in that way, and the Lord Hari, the lover of all forms of devotion, wishes that these aspirants may get an inclination to follow the path. It is because of the wish of the Lord Hari, that these various Sat-prasaṅgins (aspirants) follow one or the other of these paths, and in this way they reach Him.

*Note:* There are three sorts of devotees, the highest, the middling and the youngest. The first and the last are not *helpers* in the ordinary sense. The first is so absorbed in the contemplation of the Lord, that he is not conscious of anybody else, and the last has not yet acquired the necessary power of helping others. It is only the middle devotee who helps the aspirants.

The masters of compassion are thus defined:

ईश्वरे तदधीनेषु बालिशेषु द्विषत्सु च ।

भ्रमभैत्रीकृपापेक्षा यः करोति स मध्यमः ॥

The second kind of devotee is he who loves the Lord, has friendship for the Bhaktas of the Lord, compassion on the ignorant and indifference towards the enemies of the Lord, and His devotees. (These are the Masters of compassion).

This also shows that there is no partiality in the Lord Hari.

SŪTRA III., 3. 30.

गतेरर्थवत्त्वमुभयथान्यथा हि विरोधः ॥ ३ । ३ । ३० ॥

गते: Gateḥ, of reaching God. अर्थवत्त्वम् Arthavattvam, the quality of leading to the Puruṣārtha. उभयथा Ubhayathā, on the twofold paths. अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise. हि Hi, for. विरोधः Virodhah, contradiction.

30. In both ways the goal is reached, because otherwise there would arise conflict between the texts.—391.

## COMMENTARY

By admitting this, the goal, that is to say, reaching the Lord, becomes pertinent in both ways : That is to say, by the acts of devotion to the Lord, by meditating on His sweet attributes, and by the act of devotion to Him, by contemplating His Majestic attributes, one set reaches the Lord of love, the other reaches the Lord of Majesty. The word "Artha" in the Sūtra means the highest end of man, namely, God, the Supreme Person. "Arthavattvam" means having the attribute of taking to the Lord. If this be not admitted, then there would arise contradiction between the two sets of texts, one enjoying meditation on the sweet aspect of the Lord (the Ruler of Gokula), the other enjoying meditation on the Lord of Majesty (the Ruler of Vaikuṇṭha). The word "Hi" in the Sūtra indicates that both texts are of equal authority.

It cannot be said that both these methods should be combined on account of the Sūtras III., 3. 6 and both methods of devotion must be practised by one and the same person. Though that Sūtra teaches combination of attributes, yet it cannot be applied here, because the Ekāntin devotees are not anxious to see in their object of devotion, other attributes than what they meditate upon, and opposite attributes do not come within the scope of their cognisance. This will be further explained in Sūtra III., 3. 56.

*Adhikaraṇa XIII.—Meditation of love is superior to that of fear.*

*Viśaya :* The author now establishes the superiority of the devotion of Love over that of Law.

*Doubt :* The doubt arises whether Vidhi Bhakti (or the devotion by following the path of law) is higher or the Ruchi Bhakti (or the devotion by following the path of love.)

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The man following the path of law, performs fully all the portions required by the law formally and strictly, hence his devotion is superior to that of the other, who is always in a state of rapture and whose actions are unmethodical.

*Siddhānta :* The next Sūtra shows the superiority of love.

SŪTRA III., 3. 31.

उपपन्नस्तत्त्वार्थोपलब्धेर्लोकवत् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३१ ॥

*उपपन्नः* Upapannaḥ, he has attained prominence. तत् Tat, that (one-ness of attachment). लक्षणं Lakṣaṇa, mark. He whose mark or characteristic is one-pointed attachment to His devotee who has such love. The love of the devotee

evokes such love in the Lord. अर्थ Artha, object. The Puruṣārtha or *summum bonum*, i.e., the Lord. उपलब्धेः Upalabdheḥ, on account of the obtaining. लोकवत् Lokavat, as is the ordinary experience.

31. (The devotee on the path of Ruchi or love) has obtained superiority, because he has obtained (control over) the object-of-human-life, (namely, the Lord, who Himself) possesses this characteristic (of being the Devotee of His devotee, because He appreciates sweetness in others, since He Himself is All-sweet). As we see in the kings of the world also.—392.

## COMMENTARY

The person worshipping Hari by Ruchi Bhakti is Upaṇṇah or one who has obtained superiority or in whom there exists superiority. Why? Tat-lakṣaṇārthopalabdheḥ, because of his having obtained the object possessing that characteristic. The Lord has the characteristic, similar to that of Ruchi Bhakta, namely, he is solely devoted to such a Bhakta. Therefore, he is called Tat-lakṣaṇa, or possessing such a characteristic. He is Artha or the Object or the Goal of the human quest, for he is the Supreme Person possessing all sweetness. Tat-lakṣaṇārtha is a compound meaning "the object that has that characteristic." Upalabdheḥ means "because of obtaining." The Ruchi Bhakta is superior to the Vidhi Bhakta, because his devotion being of the nature of sweetness, is more pleasing to the Lord of Sweetness, and thus such a Bhakta, by the very fact of his self-forgetting devotion, brings the Lord under his control. The author illustrates it by an example, saying "as in the world." As in this world, a person is considered praiseworthy, who by his unwavering attachment and loyalty to a king (who appreciates the devotion and loyalty of his subjects) brings such a king under his control, so a Ruchi Bhakta, by his steady devotion to the Lord, brings the Lord under his control or influence. The Lord does not lose his independence by thus coming under the control of His Bhakta. On the contrary, coming under the control of His lovers is one of the most attractive attributes of the Lord. The sense is this. The Supreme Person is verily a Lover of sweetness, and he manifests his sweetness in these Ruchi Bhaktas, and when these Bhaktas, being attached to Him, offer themselves to Him, He accepts their self-surrender and is purchased by the greatness of their love; and He makes them great so that they may fully experience His sweetness. Without this condescension on the part of the Lord, they could not have experienced the fulness of His love. As has said blessed Śuka :

नायं सुखायो भगवान् देहिनां गोपिकासुतः ।

ज्ञानिरुचात्मभूतानां यथा भक्तिमतामिह ॥

This son of a cow-herd, Lord Kṛṣṇa, is not easy of attainment to the embodied souls, whether they be Jñānis (those who have reached wisdom but yet have the consciousness of their bodies), or whether they are Ātmabhūtas (who have realised their self and are unconscious of their bodies), as He is obtainable here by those who are His Bhaktas of love.

Though His conquest is obtainable more or less, as a general rule, by all kinds of Bhaktas, yet His Bhaktas of love conquer Him thoroughly, and hence it is demonstrated that Ruchi Bhakti is the highest of all kinds of Bhakti.

*Adhikaraṇa XIV.—Any single form of worship may produce Release nor does Release necessarily mean cessation of worldly activities.*

**Viśaya :** The author now commences another topic, in order to show that this worship of the Lord is of two sorts, either having one member (Ekāṅga), or having many members (Anekāṅga). In the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani the sages ask Brahmā, "Who is the highest God? Of whom even death is afraid? By knowing whom every thing else becomes manifested? Through whom does this universe revolve?" In answer to these four questions, Brahmā answers, that Kṛṣṇa is the highest God and devotion to Him is the highest aim of man. He then teaches the sages the Mantra consisting of eighteen syllables, namely, Kṛīm Kṛṣṇāya Govindāya Gopijana-vallabhāya Svāhā.

Having taught this Mantra the Upaniṣad goes on to say :

एतद् यो ज्ञायति रमति भजति सोऽमृतो भवति ।

He who meditates upon this Kṛṣṇa, recites His name, and worships Him with service, becomes an immortal.

**Doubt :** Now arises the doubt. Here three things are mentioned. Dhyāna or meditation, Rāsana or Japa, and Bhajana or service. Does release depend on the performance of all these *conjointly*, or on any one of them *separately* ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that all these three, when performed conjointly, lead to Mokṣa, because after conjoint mention of them, the Upaniṣad says, "The man becomes immortal."

**Siddhānta :** The next Sūtra refutes this view.

**Note :** We give the full passage of this Upaniṣad in order to better understand this Adhikaraṇa.

ॐ । मुनयो ह वै ब्राह्मणमूचुः—“कः परमो देवः ? कुतो मृत्युर्ब्रमेति ? कस्य विज्ञानेनाखिलं भवति ? केनेदं विश्वं संसरति ॥

Om. The sages asked Brahmā, "Who is the highest God ? Of whom is death afraid ? By knowing whom everything else is known ? Through whom does this world emanate ?"

तदु होवाच ब्राह्मणः ।

On being so questioned, Brahmā replied :

श्रीकृष्णो वे परमदेवतम् ।

Srī Kṛṣṇa is verily the Highest God (This is Vāsudeva).

गोविन्दान् मृत्युर्विभेति ।

The Death is afraid of Govinda. (This is Saṅkarṣaṇa-vyāha.)

गोपीजनवल्लभज्ञानेन तज् ज्ञानं भवति ।

By knowing Gopījanavallabha everything else is known. (This is Aniruddha-vyāha.)

स्वाहिदं संसरतीत ।

Through Svāhā this world is created. (This is Pradyumna-vyāha.)

तदु होचुः "कः कृष्णः ? गोविन्दश्च कोऽसाविति ? गोपीजनवल्लभः कः ? का स्वाहि ? तानुवाच ब्राह्मणः पापकर्षणो ; गोभूमिवेदविदितो वेदिता ; गोपीजनाविष्णुकलापेरकः ; तन्नाया चेति । स हतं परं वद । एतद् यो ध्यायति रसति भजति सोऽमृतो भवति सोऽमृतो भवति ॥

The sages asked him, "Who is Kṛṣṇa, who is Govinda, who is Gopījanavallabha, who is Svāhā ?" Brahmā answered them : He who destroys (Karṣaṇa) sin is Kṛṣṇa. He who knows ग् or who is known through गो i.e., cows, earth and Vedas (for "go" means all these three) is Govinda. He who destroys (Vallabha) the ignorance of the Gopījanas is called Gopījanavallabha. His Māyā is Svāhā. All (these four) constitute Brahman. He who meditates on this, recites it silently and serves it, becomes immortal, becomes immortal."

SŪTRA III., 3. 32.

**अनियमः सर्वेषामविरोधात्, शब्दानुमानाभ्याम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३२ ॥**

अनियमः Aniyamaḥ, there is no rule (as to the combination). सर्वेषाम् Sarveṣām, of all. अविरोधात् Avirodhāt, there being nothing against or no conflict. शब्दः Śabda, the word (i.e., the Revealed Scripture or Śruti). अनुमानाभ्याम् Anu-mānābhyām, and inference or Smṛti.

32. There is no rule (for the combination) of all these, as there is no conflict (between this text of the Gopāla Upaniṣad and) other Śruti and Smṛti texts.—393.

#### COMMENTARY

There is no such restrictive rule, that the only means of obtaining Release is the conjoint performance of meditation, prayers (Japa), and Divine services. Any of these singly has the potency to bring about that result. Why ? Because there is no conflict between this text of the Gopāla

Tāpanī and the other Śrutis and Smṛtis. Thus in a later passage of the same Upaniṣad it is declared :

चिन्तयंश्चेतसा कृष्णं मुक्तो भवति संसृतेः । इति ।

तस्य पुनरसनमजनभूमिन्दुसंपातः । कामादि कृष्णायेत्येकं पदं गोविन्दायेति द्वितीयम् । गोपीजनेति तृतीयम् । ब्रह्मभायेति तुरीयम् । स्वाहेति पंचममिति । पञ्चपदीं प्रजगन् पंचाङ्गं द्यावाभूमी सूर्याचन्द्रमसौ सामी । तद्रूपतया ब्रह्म संपद्यते ब्रह्म संपद्यते ॥

Meditating with concentrated heart on Kṛṣṇa, a man is freed from the Cycle of births and deaths. Reciting His Mantra and doing Pūjā to Him, is like the conjunction of the moon with the earth (the Lord is brought down to the heart of His devotees, as the moon is reflected in water). His Mantra consists of five words, namely, (i) Klim-Kṛṣṇāya, (ii) Govindāya, (iii) Gopījana, (iv) Vallabhāya, and (v) Svāhā. Reciting this five-worded Mantra on the five parts of one's body, namely, (i) Heart, (ii) Head, (iii) Sikhā or tuft-lock, (iv) Breast, and (v) Hands with five elements—heaven, earth, the sun, moon and fire—one assuming these forms, attains Brahman, verily he attains Brahman.

Note : The five Mantras thus deduced are :

(i) क्लीं कृष्णाय दिवात्मने हृदयाय नमः ।

Klim-Kṛṣṇāya divātmane hrdayāya namaḥ, (Heart).

(ii) गोविन्दाय भूम्यत्माने शिरसे स्वाहा ।

Govindāya bhūmyātmane śirase svāhā, (Head).

(iii) गोपीजनसूर्यात्मने शिखायै वषट् ।

Gopījana sūryātmane Sikhāyai vaṣat, (Tuft-lock).

(iv) ब्रह्माय चन्द्रमात्मने कवचाय हुम् ।

Vallabhāya chandramasātmane Kavachāya hum, (Breast).

(v) स्वाहा साग्न्यात्मने स्त्राय फट् ।

'Svāhā sāgnyātmane' strāya phaṭ.

This text of Gopāla Tāpanī shows that the meditation on or the recitation of the Mantra can singly confer release. Therefore, the previous text of this Upaniṣad (namely, "Etadyo dhyāyati rasati bhajati so amṛto bhavati") must be interpreted in conformity with the subsequent text of the same. Similarly, there are other Smṛti texts to the same effect. Thus :

कीर्तिनादेव कृष्णस्य मुक्तबन्धः परं ब्रजेत् ।

By merely singing the name of Kṛṣṇa, one gets release and reaches the Highest.

एकोऽपि कृष्णाय कृतः प्रणामो दशाश्वमेधावयुर्यैर्न तुल्यः ।

दशाश्वमेधी पुनरेति जन्म कृष्णप्रणामी न पुनर्भवाय ॥

He who bows down to Kṛṣṇa, even once in salutation, gets the merit equal to the performance of ten Aśvamedha baths ; with, however, this difference, that the performer of Aśvamedha comes back again on earth (on the exhaustion of merit), but the adorer of Kṛṣṇa is never born again (for the result is inexhaustible.)

These Purāṇic texts also show that singing the name of the Lord or service of the Lord by prostration, etc., singly is capable of effecting release. The Gopāla Tāpanī Śruti (Dhyāyati, Rasati, Bhajati) is not opposed to these. Had it meant that these three must be practised jointly for the

sake of Mukti, then it would have contradicted both these Śrūti and Smṛti, which teach how release can be obtained by Bhakti (whether it be of meditation or recitation or service).

The conclusion, therefore, is that the sentence "he becomes immortal," should be joined with everyone of the three verbs. (He who *meditates* on Him becomes immortal, he who *sings* Him becomes immortal, he who *serves* Him becomes immortal). If these three be taken collectively, then Gopāla Tāpani should be interpreted as employing here an *a fortiori* argument. (When the other Śrūti and Smṛti teach that meditation, singing or service can singly lead to Mukti, how *much more* easily and surely must the Mukti be got when these three are combined).

These three are illustrative of other methods of Bhakti; they do not exhaust them. Thus the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, VII, 5. 23, describes *nine* kinds of Bhakti :

श्रवणं कीर्तनं विष्णोः स्मरणं पादसेवनम् ।  
अर्चनं वन्दनं दास्यं सख्यं आत्मनिवेदनम् ॥

Listening to the recitation of the name of Viṣṇu, singing it himself and remembering it always, serving, worshipping and saluting Him; treating Him as one's Master or as a Friend, and self-surrender (are nine kinds of Bhakti).

All these nine kinds are implied by the above three, and every one of them has full efficacy.

"But," says an objector, "Release is the result of *meditation* alone, as taught in the Śrūti. आत्मा वा अरे द्रष्टव्यः etc., (Brh. IV., 5. 6. and II., 4. 5). How do you say that it can be effected by Japa, etc., also?" To this we reply; Japa (silent recitation of prayers), etc., are interlinked with meditation—one is pervaded by the other. Meditation is interwoven with Japa, etc., and Japa etc., is so interwoven with meditation. Both are mutually interdependent. Therefore, there can be no valid objection to what has been established above.

Says an objector : It is not proper to say that on getting the knowledge of Brahman there takes place release. Brahmā, Rudra, Indra and others, who have acquired perfection in the knowledge of Brahman, are seen immersed in cosmic activities—nay, sometimes are found to be acting *contrary* to the Lord Himself.

This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 33.

यावदधिकारमवस्थितिराधिकारिकाणाम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३३ ॥

यावद् अधिकारम् Yāvad-adhikāram, according to the (length of the period of their) office. अवस्थितिः Avasthitiḥ, the remaining in the world. अधिकारिकाणाम् Ādhikārikāṇām, of the office-bearers,



33. The office-holders remain in this world up to the end of the period of their tenure of office.—394.

## COMMENTARY

We do not maintain that all knowers of Brahman, though perfect Masters of such knowledge, must necessarily become Mukta (or get out of the cosmos). But what we say is this. The Release is for him whose Prârabdha Karmas (the so much of the deeds for the total expiation of which a new incarnation is taken) are exhausted, by suffering the fruits thereof, whose Kṛyamâna Karmas (the deeds done in the present incarnation to be atoned for hereafter) do not cling to him (because of Brahma-vidyâ, since he performs them as service to the Lord, because he has attained the knowledge of Brahman), and whose Sañchita Karmas (past deeds other than Prârabdha, which are kept in *store* for expiation in some future incarnation) are destroyed by the fire of Brahma-vidyâ. In other words, he whose past deeds are all destroyed and exhausted by knowledge and suffering, and whose present deeds sit loose upon him, because of theosophic knowledge—such a person gets Mukti and goes away from the world. But office-holders, like Brahmâ and the rest (having a definite place in the Divine hierarchy) are still not Muktas, though their Sañchita Karmas no longer exist, but are destroyed by Vidyâ, and their present Karmas are unclinging for the same reason, but their Prârabdha Karma (in the shape of the strong Will generated in the Past to be co-workers with the Lord) not being exhausted, keep them to their post; and they remain in this world so long as the duration of their office lasts, and does not come to an end. (They are appointed by the Lord in accordance with their Karmas for a certain period, and it is on the expiration of that period that their Karmas are *fully* exhausted.) On the exhaustion of these meritorious Karmas that gave them this office, they get release and enter into the Highest State. It should be understood thus. Devas like Indra and the rest, with a shorter period of tenure of office, go at the end of their respective periods, to Brahmâ's world; for the duration of Brahmâ's office is longer. But when the term of Brahmâ's office comes to an end, and he gets release, then all these lower divinities get release, also *along with him*. (In the interval they remain merged in Brahmâ). The author of the Sûtra will mention this in IV., 3. 10.

As to their standing against the Lord (such as Brahmâ did in stealing the cows of Kṛṣṇa, or Indra in sending torrential rains on Vraja), that is a mock fight only, and is done under the command of the Lord, to further the action of the drama which the Lord plays in each

Avatâra. The so-called opposition to the Lord is no real opposition, for Brahman and others are all *actors*, playing this world-drama, in harmony with the Will of the Lord.

As to their being obsessed by passions, etc., that is also an appearance only. Being firm in their knowledge of Brahman, passions, etc., cannot overcome them (they make a show as if they were so overpowered.)

Therefore, it follows that other knowers of Truth than these office-holders, do get Mukti as soon as they get the Vidyâ. (In the case of these Hierarchies, it is delayed till the end of the period of the office of Brahman.) Thus there is no real injustice done to anybody.

*Quære.*—Do these office-holders really want Mukti? Or do they not find greater satisfaction in being conscious co-workers with the Lord in His World-drama?

*Adhikaraṇa XV—The Akṣara of Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad  
III., 8. 8., is not incapable of meditation.*

*Viśaya:* The author now commences a fresh topic, teaching that the attributes like “neither coarse nor fine,” etc., should also be combined in the meditation on the Brahman. In the previous aphorisms, Brahman was taught to be meditated upon with the attributes appertaining to a Form. Now such attributes are going to be mentioned which cannot belong to any form. In Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad we read (III., 8. 8.):

स होवाचैतद्वै तदक्षरं गार्गी ब्राह्मणं अमिव दन्त्यमश्रुममनगवद्द्वमदीर्घमलोहितमस्नेहमच्छायममृतमोऽवाच-  
नकाक्षरममृतमसृग्मन्मचतुष्टयमश्रोत्रमवागमनोऽनेत्ररूपमप्राणममुष्माणसमनन्तराद्यं न तदक्षरं किंचन न  
तदक्षरं कश्चन ॥ ८ ॥

He said: ‘O Gārgi, the Brāhmanas call this the Akṣara (the imperishable). It is neither coarse nor fine, neither short nor long, neither red (like fire) nor fluid (like water); it is without shadow, without darkness, without air, without ether, without attachment, without taste, without smell, without eyes, without ears, without speech, without mind, without light (vigour), without breath, without a mouth, without measure, having no within and no without, it devours nothing, and no one devours it.’

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt: Should the attributes negating the qualities of coarseness, fineness, shortness, etc., be combined in all meditations on Brahman called here Akṣara or Imperishable? These attributes give rise to conceptions incongruous with the idea of Brahman having a form.

*Pūrvapakṣa:* In the Sūtra III., 3. 20, Brahman has been described as having a form (Vigraha), and meditation is taught on this form of Brahman. But the qualities described in the above passage of Bṛhadâraṇyaka

Upaniṣad are impossible to exist in a Brahman having a form. Therefore, these attributes should not be comprised in the general meditation on Brahman.

*Siddhānta* : The next aphorism controverts this view.

SŪTRA III, 3. 34.

अक्षरधियां त्ववरोधः सामान्यतद्वाभ्यामौपसद्वतदुक्तम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३४ ॥

अक्षर-धियाम् Akṣara-dhiyām, of those (qualities) which inform about the Imperishable Brahman. तु Tu, while, but. अवरोधः Avarodhaḥ, acceptance : comprising, combination. सामान्य Sāmānya, because of the uniformity, the sameness, the equality. तद्वाभ्याम् Tad-bhāvābhyām, and his qualities. औपसद्वत् Aupasadavat, as in the case of Aupasad Mantras. तद् Tad, that. उक्तम् Uktam, has been explained.

34. But these qualities which give information about the Akṣara Brahman, are to be comprised in meditating on Him as a Form, because of the uniformity of His nature as in the case of what belongs to the Upasad. This has been mentioned before.—395.

*Note.* —Dr. Thibaut translates this Sūtra thus : But the conceptions of the Imperishable are to be comprised in all meditations. There being equality of the Brahman to be meditated on, and those conceptions existing in Brahman ; as in the case of what belongs to the Upasad. This has been explained.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" refutes the above Pūrvapakṣa. All these conceptions of "not being coarse, etc.," described in relation to the Akṣara Brahman ought to be comprised in all meditations on Brahman. Why? Because all the Vedic texts refer to Brahman alone : such as the following Śruti (Kaṭha Upaniṣad, I., 2. 15).

Yama said : That Word which all the Vedas record, which all penances proclaim, which men desire when they live as religious students, that Word I tell thee briefly. 'it is Om.'

The essential nature of Brahman, who is the object of meditation taught by all Vedic texts, is uniform and the same throughout. Therefore, all these attributes of non-coarseness, etc., applied to Akṣara Brahman, must be thought of in meditating on him as a form.

The sonse is this. In the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, I. 11., it is said that release is obtained through knowledge :

When that God is known, all fetters fall off, sufferings are destroyed, and birth and death cease. From meditating on Him there arises, on the dissolution of the body, the third state, that of universal lordship ; but he only who is alone, is satisfied.

This knowledge means conception of God not as an ordinary object, but an extraordinary Being, possessing paradoxical attributes. Otherwise, if Brahman is thought of as an ordinary being, then it will lead to many inconsistencies, and the knowledge of Brahman so gained will not be a right conception. Therefore, the *form* of Brahman possesses not only bliss, knowledge, all-pervadingness, etc., but it is qualified by the negative attributes of "not being coarse nor fine," etc., also when the Form is meditated on with all these qualities, such meditation leads to true knowledge, and is not like ordinary knowledge, because the latter cannot lead to Mukti. Such paradoxical knowledge differentiates Brahman from all other beings and objects. Thus it has been demonstrated, that this Vighraha or Form possesses all supernatural attributes, far removed from anything material and debasing.

सर्वे न देवान्मर्त्यनिर्यङ् न स्त्री न पृगदो न पुमान् न जन्तुः ।

नायं गुणः कर्म न सन् न चासन् निष्प्रशेषो जयनादशेषः ॥

He is verily neither an angel (Deva) nor a demon (Asura), neither a mortal man nor an animal. He is neither a female nor a eunuch, nor a male nor a living being. This Brahman is neither attribute, nor action, neither being nor non-being. He is that which remains after all negations. May this endless Being be ever victorious.

Thus the elephant, attacked by the alligator, praised with the above verse the Supreme Brahman, showing him as devoid of coarseness, etc. Though thus prayed to, the story mentions that the Lord Hari appeared in His usual form before the elephant, and gave him release. If the Lord were formless, and if the above attributes of non-grossness, etc., did not belong to His form, then He would not have thus appeared before the elephant, because he (the elephant) had not addressed his prayers to any being with form, but to one formless Entity, who was neither Deva nor Asura, etc. Therefore, the *form* in which the Lord appeared before the elephant, must be the *form* that possessed all the attributes mentioned in the above prayer. Otherwise, there would have arisen only mere knowledge in the mind of the elephant, a mere consciousness of some vague and vast existence, who had come in response to his prayers, and it would not have been a visible perception, but a mere conception. In the above verse, the Prākṛtic Deva-hood, etc., is negated of the Lord. He is not a Deva, etc., having a Prākṛtic body. But He has Deva-hood and Puruṣa-hood of His own, which are His essential nature and which are non-Prākṛtic, because the Lord appears as a Shining One or a Deva and has the form of a Man (Puruṣa).

The Sūtra gives an illustration of the principle that qualities (Secondary Matters) follow the principal matter to which they belong, by

using the phrase "As in the case of what belongs to the Upasad," namely, like the Mantra which belongs to the rite called Upasad.

The meaning is that it is treated like the Mantra, which is a subordinate member in the ceremony called Upasad. The Mantras (Agnir vai hotram, etc.) for the offering of the Puroḍāśa cakes are taught in the Sāma-veda : and are sung with the Sāma-vedic intonation, in a loud voice. But in the Yajur-vedic four-days' rite called the Jāmadagnya, in those Upasads where the Puroḍāśa cakes are to be offered, these Sāma-vedic Mantras are used by the Yajur-vedic priest, the Adhvaryu, whose duty it is there to offer the Puroḍāśa cake. Therefore, these Mantras, when used in a Yajur-vedic rite, are recited in a subdued voice as other Mantras of the Yajur-veda, and not loudly as the Mantras of the Sāma-veda. (The Mantras lose their Sāma-vedic character when used in a Yajur-vedic rite).

"As the Mantra 'Agnir vai hotram vetu,' although given in the Sāma-veda, yet has to be recited in the Yajur-veda style, with a subdued voice, because it stands in a subordinate relation to the Upasad-offerings prescribed for the four-days' sacrifice called Jāmadagnya ; those offerings "are the principal matter to which the subordinate matter, the Mantra, has to conform." This point is explained in the first section, *i.e.*, in the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā Sūtras, III., 3. 9."—Doctor Thibaut's Rāmānuja.

Therefore, the ideas of absence of grossness and so on, though found in a few passages like those of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, must be combined with all the other attributes of the principal, namely, the Akṣara Brahman, in all meditations on Brahman ; because all these ideas invariably follow the idea of Akṣara Brahman.

*Note :* The Sūtra III., 3. 9 of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā is to the following effect :

"The subject of the hymns of the Sāma-veda being sung low at the time of establishing a sacred fire."

"The principal and subordinate statements being opposed (to one another), (the latter submits to the former) because the subordinate statement subserves the principal one. Hence the principal statement (alone has) a connection with the Veda."

The two kinds of statements, principal and subordinate, have already been explained. Their exegetical functions differ. When they conflict, the principal statement prevails, because a subordinate statement has not independent function to perform : it has to contribute to the power and use of the principal statement. Hence the principal statement invariably predominates. The translation of a Vedic text will illustrate and explain these remarks. "He who knows thus establishes fire." This is the principal text prescribing the establishment of the sacred fire. In this connection, other Mantras, prescribing the way in which Sāmas are to be chanted, occur. They are : "(He) who knows this, sings the Varvantiyasāma." "(He) who knows this, sings the Yājñayajñīyasāma." "He who knows this, sings the Vāmadevyasāma." It is already shown that the Mantras of the Yajur-veda are to be sung low, and those of the Sāma to be chanted aloud. But the establishment of the sacred fire is to be regulated by the dicta of the Yajur-veda, and these dicta are, therefore, principal. The Mantras of the Sāma-veda are to be sung as subserving the principal, the establishment of the sacred fire. Though the general rule, that the hymns of the Sāma-veda are to be chanted

aloud is recognised, yet the hymns or Sāmas prescribed in the Yajur-veda, and to be chanted in connection with the establishment of the sacred fire (Agnyādhāna) are to be sung *low*. The gist of the Sūtra is that the principal overrules its subordinate. - Kunte's Saṁdarśanachintanikā.

Says an objector "in the Śrutis (Uhhândogya Upaniṣad, III, 14. 2) Brahman is described as doing all acts (Sarvakarmā), having all scents (Sarvagandha), etc., just as he is described as possessing the qualities of having a form, etc., consequently these attributes of All-agency, All-scenting, etc., should be meditated upon everywhere, in every meditation on Brahman." This, however, is not the case, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 3. 35.

इयदामननात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३५ ॥

इयद् Iyad, so much only. आमननात् Āmananāt, on account of being mentioned in the scriptures (as principal).

35. (The attributes of All-agency and the rest are not to be meditated upon in all meditations of Brahman, but only) so much (of the attributes as have been mentioned before), because their meditation is the principal (the other attributes are secondary and are to be meditated upon in especial cases only).—396.

#### COMMENTARY

"So much only," namely, so much of the qualities, such as possessing a form and the rest, mentioned in the previous Sūtras, must necessarily be conjoined in all meditations on Brahman. Why? Āmananāt. 'Because the Scriptures declare,' that these should be primarily meditated upon. They say, by so much of the collection of attributes, is the meditation completed, therefore, those attributes are necessary to be meditated upon. On the other hand, the attributes like All-agents and the rest, naturally follow as existing in the object of meditation, and so it is not necessary to meditate upon them separately, as existing in Brahman.

*Note :* "Only so much," i.e., only those qualities which have to be included in all meditations on Brahman without which the essential special nature of Brahman cannot be conceived, i.e., bliss, knowledge, and so on, characterised by absence of grossness and the like. Other qualities, such as doing all works and the like, although indeed following their substrate, are explicitly to be meditated on in special meditations only.—Dr. Thibaut's Rāmānuja.

*Adhikaraṇa XVI.—The Vyoma or City of Brahman  
may also be made an object of meditation.*

The author now teaches that the attributes of having divine palaces, etc., in which the Lord dwells, should also be combined in the meditation on Brahman.

*Viśaya :* In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (II, 2, 7), it is said :

यः सर्वज्ञः सर्वविद्यमयैव गहिमा भुवि । दिव्ये ब्रह्मपुरे ह्येष ह्येष व्योम्न्यात्मा प्रतिष्ठितः । मनोमयः प्राणशरीरनेता प्रतिष्ठितोऽङ्गे हृदये सन्निधाय । तद्विज्ञानेन परिपश्यन्ति धीरा आनन्दरूपममृतं यदिभाति ॥ ७ ॥  
भिद्यते हृदयग्रन्थिशिख्यन्ते सर्वसंशयाः । क्षीयन्ते चास्य कर्माणि तस्मिन्दृष्टे परावरे ॥ ८ ॥ हिरण्यमये परे कोशे विरजं ब्रह्म निष्कलम् । तच्छुभ्रं ज्योतिषां ज्योतिस्तद्यदात्मविशो विदुः ॥ ९ ॥ न तत्र सूर्योभाति न चन्द्रतारकं नेमा विद्यतो भान्ति कुतोऽयमग्निः । तमेव भान्तमनुभाति सर्वं तस्य भासा सर्वमिदं विभाति ॥ १० ॥ ब्रह्मैवेदममृतं पुरस्ताद् ब्रह्म पश्चात् ब्रह्म दक्षिणतश्चोत्तरेण । अथश्चोदध्वञ्च प्रसृतं ब्रह्मैवेदं विश्वमिदं वरिष्ठम् ॥ ११ ॥ इति द्वितीयमुपपञ्चे द्वितीयः खण्डः ॥ २ ॥

7. He who is All-wise, and All-knowing, whose greatness is thus manifested in the world, is to be meditated upon as the Ātman, residing in the ether, in the shining CITY OF BRAHMAN.

He is the Controller of the mind, and the Guide of the senses and the body. He abides in the dense body, controlling the heart. He, the Ātman, when manifesting Himself, as Blissful and Immortal, is seen by the wise through the purity of heart.

8. The fetters of the Jīva are cut asunder, the ties of Līṅga-deha and Prakṛti are removed, (the effects of all) his works perish, when He is seen who is Supremely High.

9. The Brahman, free from all passions and parts, resides in the highest golden sheath. That is the pure, that is the highest of lights, it is that which knowers of Ātman know.

10. Him the sun does not illumine nor the moon and the stars. Nor do these lightnings, much less this fire illumine Him. When He illumines all, then they shine after (Him with His light). This whole universe reveals His Light.

11. The Eternally Free is verily this Brahman only. He is in the east and in the west, in the north and the south, in the zenith and the nadir. The Brahman alone is it who pervades all directions. This Brahman alone is the Full (that exists in all time—the Eternity). This Brahman is the best.

*Doubt :* Here arises the doubt about this City of Brahman called the Highest Ether. Is it another name for the glory of the Lord, His Omnipotence and Almightyness, or is it really a city, consisting of wonderful palaces, gateways, courtyards, ramparts and the rest ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The City of Brahman is an allegory, and describes the power and the glory of the Lord (there is no actual city in which the Lord dwells). In other Upaniṣads we find it said that the Lord dwells in His own glory. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VII, 24, 1, in answer to the question of Nārada, "Lord, in what does this Infinite reside ?" Sanat-kumāra answers, "In His own glory." This text shows that the Lord rests in

His own glory. Therefore, the City of Brahman means this glory of Brahman, and that is also the meaning of the word *Sahvyoma* used in the above text. In fact, the word *Vyoma* means the infinite ether which has no end. Moreover, the Lord being all-pervading, cannot have any particular dwelling place and so the above text says : He is in the east, He is in the west, etc. *Brahmapura* is, therefore, an allegory,

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside by the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 36.

अन्तर्गमूतग्रामवत् स्वात्मनः ॥ ३ । ३ । ३६ ॥

अन्तरा *Antarā*, inside, within (that *Brahmapura*). भूत *Bhūta*, elemental, physical. ग्रामवत् *Grāmavāt*, like the city or town. स्वात्मनः *Svātmanah*, to His own, i. e., to His devotees.

36. Within (that city of Brahman, things appear) like (physical objects in) a physical city, to the vision of the elects of the Lord.—397.

#### COMMENTARY

"In the interior," that is, in the City called the Great Ether, every thing looks like a city made of elemental matter, in the sight of His own (devotees) "Of His own," means the devotees who have been elected by the Lord as His own. (These devotees see this *Sahvyoma* as a physical city). As says the Śruti (*Mundaka*, III., 2. 3) :

नायमात्मा प्रवचनेन लभ्यो न मधया न बहुना श्रुतेन ।

यमेवैष वृणुते तेन लभ्यस्तस्यैष आत्मा विवृणुते तनुं स्वाम् ॥

This Self cannot be gained by dissertations devoid of devotion, nor by mere keen intellect, nor by much hearing. It is gained only by him whom the *Ātman* chooses. To him this *Ātman* reveals His form.

(Thus this divine city is reachable only by the elects of the Lord). Though all the objects in that city are pure and simple essence of Brahman, for every thing there is Brahman, being a manifestation of His power, yet they look to His devotees, as if made of material objects, like earth, etc. The word "Vat" or "like," in the word *Bhūtagrāma-vāt*, shows that it looks like a physical city, but is not actually so. Every thing there is Brahman as has already been mentioned before in the *Mundaka Upaniṣad*, II., 2. 11 :

"This verily is Brahman the immortal (who appears there) in the east and in the west, in the north and the south, in the zenith and the nadir. The Brahman alone is it who pervades all directions. This Brahman alone is the Full (that exists in all time, the Eternity). This Brahman is the best."



To His devotees, the Lord, the Supreme Self, who essentially consists of knowledge and bliss, appears variously, as having hands, feet, nails, hair, etc. Similarly, this Brahmapura, though consisting of pure Brahman Itself, appears to His devotees like earth, water, etc., and though it is all of one essence, yet it scintillates with many colours, like the feather of the peacock.

SŪTRA III., 3. 37.

अन्यथा भेदानुपपत्तिरिति चेन्नोपदेशान्तरवत् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३७ ॥

अन्यथा Anyathā, otherwise. If there be no difference. भेद Bheda, of the difference. अनुपपत्तिः Anupapattiḥ, not obtaining. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if, न Na, no. उपदेश-अन्तरवत् Upadeśa-antara-vat, as will be seen from other teachings.

37. If it be objected that without admitting difference (between Brahman and the city of Brahman), there would otherwise be no possibility of predicating difference at all, we say it is not so, because it is like other teachings regarding Brahman.—398.

COMMENTARY

"Otherwise," that is to say, if there was want of difference between Brahman and the objects in the Brahmapura, then there would not arise any difference between the supported and the support, the location and the thing located. This is the objection raised by the opposite party. He says, "If Brahman and the city of Brahman be identical, then there would be no difference between the location and the thing located, and it would be absurd to say the Brahman *LIVES IN* Brahmapura. For it would then mean that Brahman lives in Brahman." This objection is raised in the first half of the Sūtra, which says, if we do not admit difference between Brahman and his residence, then the very possibility of difference would vanish. The objection is answered by saying, "It is not so, because it is reasonable (or unreasonable) like other teachings." As in other texts, it has been declared that there is no difference between the quality and the qualified, in the case of Brahman, yet such difference does appear on account of specific texts, similarly is the case here. Thus the Taittiriya Upaniṣad declares Brahman to be bliss, and it also declares Brahman as *possessing* bliss, by knowing the bliss of Brahman one does not fear. Thus Brahman is both bliss and blissful—the quality and the substrate of quality. Similarly, Brahman is both the tenant and the tenement—the dweller and the residence, for everything is possible in the case of Brahman.

As there is no difference between the Loka (world) and the Lord of the Loka, between the dweller and the residence, it follows that both are the objects of worship equally. This is shown in the next Sūtra.

*Note:* This is true only of Goloka and Vaikuṇṭha and not of lower Lokas. The Lord constitutes His Heaven. Every object there is the Lord, though appearing to the Elects as separate from the Lord. Logically, therefore, every such object may be worshipped, for it is the Lord.

SŪTRA III. 3. 38.

व्यतिहारोविशिषन्ति हीतरवत् ॥ ३ । ३ । ३८ ॥

व्यतिहारः Vyatihārah, mutually changeable. विशिषन्ति Viśiṣanti, they distinguish. हि Hī, because. इतरवत् Itaravat, as the other (utterances).

38. The Śrutis describe the Lord and His World as identical and mutually interchangeable, like other texts, (where the Lord and His body are shown as identical).—399.

COMMENTARY

In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, 11. 15., it is said :

तदेतद् ब्रह्म क्षत्रं विद्मः श्रद्धाग्निर्नैव देवेषु ब्रह्माभवद् ब्राह्मणो मनुष्येषु क्षत्रियेण क्षत्रियो वैश्येन वैश्यः शूद्रेण शूद्रस्तस्मादग्नावेव देवेषु लोकमिच्छन्ते ब्राह्मणं मनुष्येष्वेताभ्यां हि रूपाभ्यां ब्रह्माभवदथ यो ह वा अस्मालोकात्स्वं लोकमदृष्ट्वा प्रैति स एनमविदिनो न मुनक्ति यथा वेदो वाऽननूक्तोऽन्यद्वा कर्माकृतं यदिह वा अप्यनेव विद्महत्पुण्यं कर्म करोति तद्वाभ्यां ततः क्षीयत एवात्मानमेव लोकमुपासीत स य आत्मानमेव लोकमुपास्ते न ह्यस्य कर्म क्षीयते अस्माद्व्येवात्मनो यद्यत्कामयते तत्तत्सृजते ॥ १५ ॥

There are then this Brahman, Kṣatra, Viś, and Śūdra. Among the Devas that Brahman existed as Agni (fire) only, among men as Brāhmaṇa, as Kṣatriya through the (divine) Kṣatriya, as Vaiśya through the (divine) Vaiśya, as Śūdra through the (divine) Śūdra. Therefore, people wish for their future state among the Devas, through Agni (the sacrificial fire) only; and among men through the Brāhmaṇa, for in these two forms did Brahman exist.

Now if a man departs this life without having seen his true future life (in the Self), then that Self, not being known, does not receive and bless him, as if the Veda had not been read, or as if a good work had not been done. Nay, even if one who does not know that (Self) should perform here on earth some great and holy work, it will perish for him in the end. Let a man worship the Ātman only, as the World (Loka or Brahmapura): If a man worships the Ātman as the Lokam (the city of Brahman) his work does not perish for whatever he desires that he gets from that Ātman.

This text clearly shows that the Lord is the Loka. Texts like these describe the Supreme Self as the Loka, and the Loka as the Supreme Self. Thus, it proves that the Loka and the Ātman are interchangeable. The Supreme Self is the heavenly region called Gokula, Vaikuṇṭha, Samvyaoma, Mahimā, etc., and the heavenly region is the Supreme Self. This is like other descriptions of Brahman. As in the Gopāla Tāpani Upaniṣad, the

Lord is described as having eyes like full-grown lotus, etc., as being above Prakṛti, showing that the body is the Lord and the Lord is the body, so here also the Lord is the Heavenly World and the Heavenly World is the Lord; both are equally adorable. So it follows that Hari, whose form is bliss and knowledge, through His inconceivable power, Himself appears as the Heavenly World, with all its various objects, as He Himself is various in His nature, and this He does to His devotees and not to others. Therefore, the Heaven World should be worshipped equally with the Lord.

*Note:* The Heaven of the Lord is visible only to the Elects. Others cannot see it—they can go up to Svarga only.

### *Adhikaraṇa XVII.—Brahman is not attributeless.*

The author now commences the present section in order to strengthen the teaching above given.

*Viśaya:* All the texts that describe peculiar attributes of the Lord are Viśaya texts in this Adhikaraṇa. In the preceding Sūtras it has been taught that the Lord has the qualities of omniscience and the rest, that the great ether is His dwelling place, and that He must be meditated upon as such, possessed of these attributes.

*Doubt:* Admitted that the Lord Hari has all these attributes, yet it does not follow that these are the real attributes of Brahman, but that they are phenomenal and do not constitute His essential nature; because the texts say that Brahman is Nirguṇa or without any qualities. The doubt, therefore, arises, are these qualities of Brahman phenomenal (Mâye) or the essential attributes of Brahman?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* The texts like those of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 19. (By the Mind alone it is to be perceived, there is in it no diversity. He who perceives therein any diversity, goes from death to death) and II., 3. 6. [Next follows the teaching (of Brahman by it is not so, it is not so, for there is nothing else higher than this, if one says): 'It is not so.' Then comes the name 'the True of the True,' the senses being the true, and He, the Brahman, the True of 'them], show that Brahman has no attributes, and that the so-called qualities of Brahman are phenomenal only.

*Siddhānta:* This view is set aside in the next Sūtra, which shows that the attributes of Brahman are not unreal.

SŪTRA III., 3. 49.

सैव हि सत्यादयः ॥ ३ । ३ । ३६ ॥

सा-एव, Sâ-eva, she verily. हि, Hi, because. सत्य-आदयः, Satya-âdayah, Satya (truth) and others.

39. Because she Herself (the Parā Śakti of the Lord) is the Truth and the rest (these attributes are real).—400.

## COMMENTARY

In the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, VI, 8, it is declared that the power of the Lord is *inherent* in Him and is known as Parāśakti, and is different from the Māyāśakti of the Lord,

न तस्य कार्यं करणं च विद्यते न तत्समश्चाभ्यधिकश्च दृश्यते ।

पराम्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रयते स्वाभाविकी ज्ञानबलक्रिया च ॥ ८ ॥

There is no effect and no cause known of Him, no one is seen like unto Him or better : His High Power (Parā Śakti) is revealed as manifold, as inherent, acting as force and knowledge.

This and texts like 'Viṣṇu śaktiḥ parā,' etc., show that the Lord has this High Power, different from Māyā, and that this is an attribute which constitutes the essential nature of Brahman, as heat is the essential quality of Fire. This is called the Parāśakti or the Svarūpaśakti of the Lord. Because this very power becomes modified as truth, omniscience, etc., hence they are not Māyic or phenomenal attributes, but on the other hand, they belong to the essential Self of the Lord. These attributes of truth, omniscience, etc., are modifications of the Parāśakti, and the two reasons for it will be mentioned in the next Sūtra. Therefore, the Śruti says, "there is no diversity here," meaning thereby that all these attributes are modifications of the Parāśakti and Parāśakti Herself. The text "Neti neti," quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin, has already been explained in Sūtra III, 2. 22, and those arguments need not be repeated here.

The word "Ādi," "and the rest," in the Sūtra implies that attributes like purity, 'compassion, forgiveness, etc., as well as omniscience, omnipotence, all-blissfulness, all-beauty, etc., are also to be included.

Therefore, Śrī Parāśara has explained the word Bhagavat as the Supreme Self having the attributes of Isolation, as well as of great glory (Mahāvibhūti). Having mentioned this, he goes on to say that the Lord possesses also the attributes of complete Lordliness, supporting every one and the rest, both collectively and separately.

*Note :* In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, I, 16.27, the Goddess of earth, in addressing Dharma, the king of justice, enumerates certain attributes, such as truthfulness, purity, compassion, forgiveness, generosity, contentment, rectitude, control of mind, control of senses, austerity, impartiality, forbearance, indifference, learning, knowledge, dispassion, government, prowess, energy, strength, memory, independence, dexterity, beauty, patience, softness, magnanimity, humility, good-naturedness, mental clarity, intuition, perfection of senses, physical, ethical and mental enjoyment, depth, steadiness, faith, adorableness, glory, non-selfishness. She says that these and other great attributes must be prayed for by the strivers after greatness, from the Lord, for they all exist in Him.

Since these qualities are inherent in the Lord, therefore, the Ṛṣi Parāśara has defined the word Bhagavat as meaning the Supreme Self, who though pure (isolated from all attributes) yet is possessed of all glorious attributes and powers (see Viṣṇu Purāṇa, VI, 5. 72).

शुद्धे महाविभूत्याख्ये परे ब्रह्मणि शब्द्यते ।

मैत्रेय भगवच्छब्दः सर्वकारणकारणे ॥

(O Maitreya, the word Bhagavat is applied to the Cause of all causes, to the pure Supreme Brahman, possessing Mighty power and Glory.

संभर्तेति तथा भर्ता भकारोऽर्थदयान्वितः ।

नेता गमयिता स्रष्टा गकारार्थस्तथा मुनेः ॥

ऐश्वर्यस्य समग्रस्य वीर्यस्य यशसः त्रियः ।

ज्ञानवैराग्ययोश्चापि षगणां भग इतीगना ॥

वसन्ति यत्र भूतानि भूतात्मन्यखिलात्मनि ।

स च भूतेश्वशेषेषु वकारार्थस्ततोऽव्ययः ॥

—(Viṣṇu Purāṇa, VI., 6. 73-75.)

He is the *supporter* of all, and the *protector* of the universe. This is the two-fold meaning of the syllable “Bha” भ (Bhartā and Sambhartā). The syllable “Ga” ग denotes the saviour (he who brings the pure souls to himself, Gamayitā), the leader (he who causes his devotees to attain purity of Self) and creator (he who unfolds manifold bliss to his devotees). Therefore, the word “Bhaga” means the collection of the six attributes, Aiśvarya (lordliness), Virya (energy), Yaśas (fame), Śrī (fortune), Jñāna (knowledge), and Vairāgya (dispassion.) The syllable “Va” व means that in whom all elements and living beings dwell (Vasanti), the Great Self of all, possessing all energy, and who dwells (Vasati) in all beings, Himself unchangeable and immutable. Thus the word “Bhagava,” consisting of three syllables, means knowledge (omniscience), energy, power (to create the universe), strength (to support the universe), Lordliness (to control all), and the rest.

Therefore, these specific attributes like truthfulness, etc., exist in the Supreme Lord, and are not different from Him and must be meditated upon by the devotees.

### *Adhikaraṇa XVIII—Śrī or Parā Śakti of the Lord may also be Meditated upon.*

Now the author commences a new subject, in order to indicate that the Lord must be meditated upon as having Śrī or Fortune as His constant companion.

*Viśaya* : In the White Yajur-veda, Chapter xxxi, verse 22, we find the following :

श्रीश्चते लक्ष्मीश्च पत्न्यावहोरात्रे पार्श्वे नक्षत्राणि रूपमथिनौ ध्यातम् ॥

Beauty (Śrī) and Fortune (Lakṣmī), are thy wives : each side of thee are Day and Night. The constellations are thy form : the Aśvins are thine open jaws.

Some say that Śrī means here Rāmā Devī, and Lakṣmī means Divine Fortune (Bhāgavati Sampat). Others say Śrī means the Goddess of speech

and Lakṣmī means Rāmā Devī. In the Atharva Śīras (Gopāla Tāpani) also we find the Lord addressed as the husband of Kamalā, in the following verse :

नमः कमलनेत्राय नमः कमलमालिने ।

नमः कमलनाभाय कमलापतये नमः ॥

वर्षापीडाभिरामाय रामायकुण्ठमेधसे ।

रमामानसहंसाय गोविन्दाय नमो नमः ॥

Salutation to thee whose eyes are like lotus, who has garland of lotus, from whose navel grows the lotus, and who is the husband of Lakṣmī. Salutation to Govinda, the beloved of Rāmā, he who is adorned with the crown of peacock feathers, and who possesses unobstructed intelligence.

Similarly in the Rāma Pūrva Tāpani Upaniṣad, the Lord is called Rāmādhāra, the supporter of Rāmā.

नमो वेदादिरूपाय त्र्यंकाय नमो नमः ।

रमाधाराय रामाय श्रीरामायऽऽत्ममूर्तये ॥

Salutation to thee whose original form is the Veda and who is Om-kāra. Salutation to Śrī Rūpa, the Supporter of Rāmā, who is the Delighter, and whose form is his own Self.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Is Śrī a phenomenal Being, made of Prakṛtic matter and therefore, non-eternal, or is she eternal, representing the Parāśakti of the Lord ? In other words, does Śrī represent here the Prakṛti, the non-eternal energy of the Lord, or does she represent here the Higher Energy, called the Parāśakti ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says, Śrī is a non-eternal attribute of the Lord, and she consists of pure Sāttvic Prakṛti, and is the Māyā energy of the Lord. The Supreme Self has not Śrī and Lakṣmī for his wives in the literal sense of the term, for the Upaniṣad texts repeatedly prohibit all such attributes with regard to Him, by the words Neti neti, "He is not so, He is not so." Moreover, to think of the Lord as having a wife constantly near Him, is a degrading idea of Godhood, for it makes Him subject to passions, etc.

*Siddhānta* : The above objection is answered in the next Sūtra, where it is shown that Śrī is the Parāśakti of the Lord.

SŪTRA III., 3. 40.

कामादीतरत्र तत्र चायतनादिभ्यः ॥ ३ । ३ । ४० ॥

कामादि Kāmādi, desires and the rest. इतरत्र Itaratra, in places other than Saṁvīyomaṁ : elsewhere. तत्र Tatra, there. In the Saṁvīyomaṁ. च Cha, and. आयतनादिभ्यः Āyatanādibhyaḥ, the word. आय means all-pervading, तन

means spreading out of bliss and release for the Bhaktas. The word *आदि* means the statement of the unity of the Parāśakti with the Lord applies to Śrī also. The whole word means "because of being All-pervading, All-spreading and the rest."

40. (Śrī is verily the Parāśakti and) there (in the highest Heaven), and elsewhere (in the Prakṛtic world she creates all) objects of desire and the rest (for the Lord), (and this is so) because she is all-pervading, the giver of Mukti and the rest.—40L.

The words "Sā-eva," "she even," are understood in this Sūtra from the last. "She even," namely, the Parāśakti even is she. "In that," namely, in the Supreme Ether, called the Saṁvyoman, which is untouched by Prakṛti, and "in the other," that is, in the world of Prakṛti, whenever the light of the Lord manifests, she is ever ready to create all objects of desire, for her Lord, the Supreme Self (in the shape of various modifications of her own self). Therefore, Śrī is ever attendant upon the Lord, and hence He is called the eternal consort of Śrī. The word "desire" here means a wish for all objects of beauty and erotic sentiment. The words "and the rest" mean all the sentiments subordinate to the sentiment of Kāma: such as the service of the Lord. Therefore, Śrī is verily the Parāśakti. Why? Because she is all-pervading, and she gives release and bliss to the worshippers of the Lord. The word "Āya" means all-pervading; and "Tana" means *spreading out* of bliss and release for the Bhaktas. Because of these two-fold reasons (all-pervading and bliss-spreading), Śrī is just like the Parāśakti and has the attributes of truth, etc. And as the Lord is not different from His attributes, though His attributes in conventional usage are described to be separate from Him, so Śrī is not separate from the Lord, though we talk of Her as if she was separate. By the word "Ādi," "and the rest," is meant unity with the Parāśakti, namely, the statement of the unity of the Parāśakti with the Lord applies to Śrī also. Thus the text of the Śevtāśvatara Upaniṣad, "His Parāśakti is inherent in Him," shows that she is non-different from the Lord. Therefore, Śrī is the Parāśakti and all-pervading. And as the Parāśakti is described as the giver of knowledge and release and whose essential nature is all-compassion, Śrī also possesses all these attributes, and is not different from her. And so it is mentioned in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa:

"Śrī, the eternal, is the mother of the universe and as Viṣṇu is all-pervading, she is also like Him imperishable and undecaying, O Brāhmaṇas!"

In another place it is said:

"O Goddess, thou art the science of the Self which gives release."

If Śrī and Viṣṇu were not identical, and if there existed any difference between them, then these two attributes, namely, all-pervadingness

and giver of salvation, could not have been attributed to Her, because those are the essential attributes of the Lord. And if it be admitted that there are two all-pervading substances and two givers of salvation, then we are landed at Apasiddhānta or a conclusion unwelcome to all parties.

Śrī is identical with the Parāśakti and this is mentioned in the same Viṣṇu Purāṇa :

"He who is called Parameśa, who is pure (without difference), is so called (Parameśa means husband of the Parāśakti) figuratively ; may that Viṣṇu be gracious to us who is the Self (the motive power) of all embodied being."

The word Parameśa is a compound of three words, namely, Parā (Supreme), Mā (Lakṣmī or Śakti) and Īśa (Lord or husband). The whole word means the Lord or husband of the Parāśakti.

The qualities of all-pervadingness and the rest do not belong to Prakṛti and are not possible in the case of the latter, therefore, it is clear that Śrī is different from Prakṛti. The conclusion, therefore, is that Śrī is the Parāśakti indeed, and consequently she is eternal.

If Śrī be the Parāśakti, then Her devotion to the Lord would be impossible, because Parāśakti is identical with the Lord and none can be devoted to His own Self (not even an egotist). This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 3. 41.

आदरादलोपः ॥ ३ । ३ । ४१ ॥

आदरात्. Ādarāt, because (of her) intense love. The word Ādarā of the text must be translated here as love. अलोपः Alopah, non-omission, non-cessation.

41. The devotion of Śrī to the Lord does not cease to exist because of her intense love for Him.—402.

COMMENTARY

Though there is no difference between Śrī and the Parāśakti, which in her turn is identical with the Lord, yet the devotion of Śrī to the Lord does not vanish, because of Her great love for the Supreme Lord, Who is the root of Her existence, and Who is an ocean of wonderful attributes. The branch cannot but love the tree, nor the rays of the moon their lord, the moon. So Śrī cannot but love the Lord Viṣṇu, who is her very existence. Her devotion to the Lord is established by the Śrūtis (of the Yajur-veda) quoted above. That Śruti shows that she is the most devoted



of all wives, and possesses all the attributes of a loving spouse. In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa also the Gopīnīs, addressing the Lord Kṛṣṇa, say :

"He whose service is constantly craved by Śrī, who is ever anxious to obtain the dust of His lotus feet, he whom Tulasī though ever resting on his breast, is ever anxious to serve, etc.

The erotic sentiment is possible only where there is difference between the two, the lover and the object of love. But Śrī being identical with the Lord, such a sentiment is out of question in the case of the Lord, for no one is self-enamoured. Therefore, Kāma cannot exist in the Lord and Sri cannot give rise to that sentiment in Him. This objection is met in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 42.

उपस्थितेऽतस्तद्वचनान् ॥ ३ । ३ । ४२ ॥

उपस्थिते Upasthite, being present, being near. अतः Atah, hence it is proved. तद्वचनान् Tad-vachanāt, from the statements about Him.

42. (The erotic sentiment arises in the Lord), when they are near to each other. Hence this sentiment exists, because there is the statement (to that effect in the Śruti). —403.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Upasthita is a past participle, with the force of condition. It means that though the Śakti and her support (the Lord) are identical, there being no difference between them, yet the Support of Śakti being the best of the males (Puruṣottama) and Śakti being the best among all females, when these two are present (Upasthita) near to each other, the erotic sentiment and the rest arise between them; and thus is fulfilled the saying that the Lord is Self-enjoying, Self-enamoured. Therefore, the existence of that sentiment is possible in the Lord. But have you any authority for this statement? Yes, the text of the Gopāla Uttara Tāpanī :

यो हि वै कामेन कामान् कामयते स कामी भवति । यो ह वै त्वकामेन कामान् ( न ) काययते सोऽकामी भवति इति ।

"He who, through Kāma (lust) desires the objects of desire, he is called Kāmī. He who, without Kāma (but through love), desires (not) the objects of desire, he is called Akāmī.

Note : The reading in the printed text of the Ānandāśrama series, is न कामयते in the second sentence : which, however, does not appear to be appropriate,

This text shows that the Lord has enjoyments of the objects of desire, though not moved thereto by Kāma or sensual desire. The word Akāma means something like Kāma, but not Kāma. The force of the negative particle अ is to indicate similarly, and not absolute negation. Akāma, therefore, is emotion like Kāma, but on a higher level. When lust is transmuted into love, Kāma becomes Akāma. The Lord, therefore, enjoys the objects of desire through Akāma or love, not through Kāma or lust. Such desiring of the object of desire, namely, of Śrī, who is His ownself, and in whom He realises the completion of Himself, is not in conflict with the Lord's being Self-enjoying and full. The intense bliss resulting from contract with Śrī, who is His own Self, must be understood like unto the joy which one feels at looking at his own beauty in a mirror. Therefore, the sense of the above is this.

The Lord is qualified as possessing two Śaktis called Parā and Svarūpa. The highest substance is thus described in the Śrutis. When He manifests Himself in His Svarūpa Śakti or essential nature He is called Puruṣottama or the highest male. But when His aspect of Parāśakti predominates then such manifestation gets the name of Dharma and the rest. This Parāśakti verily manifests in the shape of sweetness, lordliness, compassion, joy and knowledge and is called Dharma or virtue. Śrī in the shape of sound is called the word. Śrī in the shape of earth and other planets is called the abode and when manifesting as giver of gladness, joy, expansion of consciousness, she is called Śrī, Rādhā and the rest, the highest of all women. All these are various manifestations of the Parāśakti of the Lord. Therefore, though there is no difference between the Lord and His Parāśakti or Svarūpa Śakti, yet for purposes of conventional usage they are spoken of as different. And Parāśakti is said to satisfy the emotional desires of the Lord. These manifestations of the Parāśakti, like Dharma and the rest, must not be thought of as temporal and transient, but they exist from beginningless time, though they come into play with the coming of man on the earth. Thus there is no objection from any consideration. Therefore, the followers of the Lord Śrī Kṛṣṇa must meditate upon the highest truth, namely, the Lord as always accompanied by Śrī.

---

## Adhikaraṇa XIX.

In the Gopāla Tāpani it is further stated at the end :

तस्मात् कृष्ण एव परो देवस्तं ध्यायेत् तं रसेत् तं भजेत् तं भजेदिति श्री तत् सद्दिति ॥

Therefore Kṛṣṇa alone is the highest God ; one should meditate on Him, recite His name, adore Him and worship Him.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Is it necessary that the worship of the Lord Hari must be done in the form of the worship of Śrī Kṛṣṇa or may He be worshipped in any other form ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : As the above verse ends the whole Upaniṣad, it is more harmonious to interpret it as laying down a restrictive rule that the worship of Śrī Hari must be always in the form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra, where it will be shown that there is no such restrictive rule.

SŪTRA III. 3. 13.

तन्निर्द्धारणानियमस्तद्दृष्टैः पृथग्व्यतिबन्धः फलम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ४३ ॥

तद् Tad, of Him. निर्द्धारण Nirddhāraṇa, of decision, determining. अनियमः Aniyamaḥ, there is no rule, or restriction. तद् Tad, that. दृष्टैः Dr̥ṣṭaiḥ, through the statements seen. पृथग् Prthag, separate. हि Hi, because. व्यतिबन्धः Apratibandhaḥ, non-obstruction. फलम् Phalam, fruit.

13. There is no restrictive rule, determining the worship of the form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa alone. Because this is seen ; for there is a separate fruit, namely, non-obstruction.—404.

COMMENTARY

There is no such restriction that the Lord God should be worshipped with the attributes of Śrī Kṛṣṇa only, and with no other attributes like those of Śrī Rāma and the rest. The form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa is generally understood to be that of the infant suckling at the breast of Yaśodā. That is no doubt a form of the Lord, who is all-pervading, omniscient and all-bliss. But there are other forms also. Why do we say so ? Because we see so in the Scripture (Gopāla Uttara Tāpani) :

यत्रासौ संस्थितः कृष्णस्त्रिभिः शक्त्या समाहितः ।

रामानिरुद्धप्रद्युम्नैः रुक्मिण्यासहितो विभुः ।

चतुःशब्दो भवेदेको ह्योकारस्यांशकः कृतः ॥ ( ह्योकारः समुदाहृतः )

The Lord Kṛṣṇa resides there surrounded by the three, namely, by Balarāma, Aniruddha, and Pradyumna. And He has His Energy also, Rukmīṇī. The one syllable Om manifests in these above-mentioned four forms. (Vāsudeva= half mātṛā, म् =Aniruddha, उ=Pradyumna, अ=Śaṅkarṣaṇa).

This text shows that Śrī Kṛṣṇa has these forms also, and therefore, Baladeva and the rest are to be worshipped equally as Śrī Kṛṣṇa, for they are not different from Him. But then the word *Eva* or "alone" occurring in the above text (Kṛṣṇa *alone* is the highest God) would become useless! The word *Eva* is not a redundancy, and the Sūtra answers this objection by saying "the result is separate." What is that separate result? The removal of the obstruction which is caused by worshipping any other deity as the Highest. The worship of Kṛṣṇa is the unobstructed means of salvation. The worship of other deities is the indirect means. The word *Eva*, therefore, serves a useful purpose, by removing this obstruction or mediateness, which is the natural consequence of worshipping other deities, without the idea of their being Śrī Kṛṣṇa. Therefore, this being so, a person who has a love for the worship of Baladeva and others, may do so, provided he combines in his meditation *all* the attributes of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, if he is capable of doing so. Such worship is the direct cause of Mukti, but if he is not so capable, then he must worship Śrī Kṛṣṇa alone, and not any other manifestation of Him, like Balarāma, etc.

### Adhikaraṇa XX.

Now the author commences a new topic, in order to teach that the aspirant must possess also the attribute of devotion to his Guru, for one of the attributes of the Lord is that He is reached through the Guru. In the description of various *Vidyās* or methods of *Bhakti*, it is said that *Guru Bhakti* is one of the conditions of success. In the *Śvetaśvatara Upaniṣad*, VI. 23, it is said:

यस्य देवे परमक्तिर्यथा देवे तथा गुरौ । तस्यैव कथिता ह्यर्वाः प्रकाशन्ते महात्मनः । प्रकाशन्ते महात्मन इति ।

If these truths have been told to a high-minded man, who feels the highest devotion for God, AND FOR HIS GURU AS FOR GOD, then they will shine forth, then they will shine forth indeed.

Similarly, in the *Chhândogya Upaniṣad* (VI. 11. 2) it is said :

आचार्यवान् पुरुषो वेद a man who finds the teachers, obtains knowledge.

So also in *Mundaka Upaniṣad* (L., 2. 12.) it is said:

परीक्ष्य लोकान्कर्मचिदान्ब्राह्मणो निर्वन्दनयान्नाभ्यकृतः कृतेन ।

तद्विज्ञानार्थं स गुरुमेवाभिगच्छेत्समित्पाणिः श्रोत्रियं ब्रह्मनिष्ठम् ॥

Let a seeker of Brahman, after he has examined (and thoroughly mastered the forces of the worlds, that are reached by the occult) works, acquire freedom from desires for them. For the uncreated world of Brahman cannot be gained through the created worlds. Therefore, to know this, let him approach with folded hands, the Guru, who is inspired and dwells constantly in the eternal.

*Doubt:* Here arises the doubt: Does the fruit accrue by merely studying the Scriptures with the Guru, or does it result from such knowledge accompanied with the grace of the Guru.

*Pūrvapakṣa:* The fruit results from the mere knowledge from the study of Scriptures. What is the use of the grace of the Guru?

*Siddhānta:* The grace of the Guru is necessary, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 3. 44.

प्रदानवदेव तदुक्तम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ४४ ॥

प्रदानवद Pradānavad, just as the gift of learning given by a teacher, through favour, to his disciple. एव Eva, exactly. तद् Tad, that. उक्तम् Uktam, it is said.

44. It is said that the attainment of Brahman is exactly as much the gift of the Guru, as the attainment of learning Scriptures from him.—405.

#### COMMENTARY

According to the extent of the favour of the Guru in imparting the means of obtaining Brahman, namely, in imparting teaching which is the cause of attaining Brahman, to that extent depends the fruit of such attainment. It is not by mere study that Brahman is reached, but the kindly glance of the Guru is absolutely necessary for that purpose. The word Pra in the Sūtra indicates this grace of the Guru. The Lord Śrī Kṛṣṇa Himself has said so in the Gītā (XIII, 7):

“Humility unpretentiousness, harmlessness, forgiveness, rectitude, SERVICE OF THE TEACHER, purity, steadfastness, self-control.”

Therefore, the attainment of the Brahman is the result of that study which is accompanied by the grace of the Guru.

#### Adhikaraṇa XXI.

*Doubt:* Is one's own exertion stronger or the grace of the Guru?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* Without exertion the grace of the Guru will not be able to accomplish anything, hence, one's own exertion is stronger.

*Siddhānta:* The above view is controverted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 3. 45.

लिङ्गभूयस्त्वान्नि बलीयस्तदपि ॥ ३ । ३ । ४५ ॥

लिङ्ग Liṅga, of indicatory marks. भूयस्त्वाद् Bhūyastvāt, on account of the plurality. तद् Tad, that (proof). हि Hi, because. बलीयः Bāliyaḥ, stronger. तद् Tad, that or this. अपि Api, also.

45. Owing to plurality of indicatory marks, the Grace of Guru is the strongest, but the others also (study, meditation, etc.) should be continued to be performed. -406.

COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad there is the story of a disciple of Gautama, called Satyakāma. Satyakāma was taught Brahmanvidyā by certain Devas, who had assumed the forms of a bull, the fire, a flamingo, and a water-bird. Though he was taught by these Devas, he still prays to his Guru to teach him Brahmanvidyā (Chhân. Up. IV, 9, 1-3) :

Thus he reached the house of his teacher. The teacher said to him : 'Satyakāma !' He replied 'Lord.'

The teacher said : 'Friend thou shinest verily like one who knows Brahman. Now who has taught thee, a man or a Deva ?' He replied 'Beings other than men, have taught me). But, Lord, for my good, you should teach me.'

'Because even I have heard from exalted ones like you, that only such knowledge as is learnt from a regularly accepted Teacher leads to the highest good.' Then he taught him the very same thing, and Satyakāma suffered no harm, (though he had learnt from beings other than a teacher), yea, he suffered no harm.

Similarly, in the story of Upakośala, who was a disciple of this Satyakāma, we find the same fact reiterated. Upakośala was taught by the sacred fires, the mysteries of Brahman, but still he prays to his teacher to explain to him the doctrine of Brahman (Chhândogya, IV, 10 1., the end.) :

TENTH KHANḌA

Upakośala, the son of Kāmalāyana, dwelt as a religious student in the house of Satyakāma Jābāla. He tended his fires for twelve years. But though the teacher allowed the other pupils to depart, he did not allow Upakośala to depart.

Then his wife said to him, 'This student is quite exhausted with austerities, because he has diligently tended your fires. (But you have not taught him), and your fires even though so well tended have not taught him. Now (at least) teach him.' But Satyakāma, however, went away on a journey without having taught Upakośala.

Then Upakośala, from sorrow, took into his head to leave off eating. Then the wife of the teacher said to him, 'Student, eat. Why do you not eat ?' He said, 'There are many desires in this man here, which go in different directions. I am full of sorrows, (and so have no room for food), so I do not take food.'

Thereupon the fires said among themselves, 'This student has become exhausted through austerities in serving us properly. Now let us teach him.' Then they said to him :

'Prāṇa (power) is (lower) Brahman. Ka (Infinite Power and Joy) is (higher) Brahman ; Kha (Infinite Power and wisdom) is (also higher) Brahman.'

He said, 'I understand that Prāṇa is Brahman ; but I do not understand Ka or Kha.'

They said, 'That which is Ka is indeed Kha ; that which is Kha is indeed Ka. They, therefore, taught him that the (lower) Brahman was Prāṇa, and that (the higher) Brahman was the All-luminous (Viṣṇu).

## ELEVENTH KHAṆḌA.

After that the Gārhapatya Fire taught him, "Brahman is Vast, the World-Guide, the Destroyer and the Eternal. As subjective Antaryāmin (He is) the Spirit who is seen in the Solar Logos (by the illumined sage). He is the 'Supreme I am,' He indeed is the 'Supreme I am.'

"He, who knowing this, thus meditates on Him, has his sins destroyed, becomes a dweller of the world of God, obtains life eternal, lives resplendent, and his dependants do not perish, because we guard him in this world and in the other, whosoever knowing this thus, meditates on Him."

## TWELFTH KHAṆḌA

Then the Anvāhārya Fire taught him, "Brahman is the Protector of all, the Guide, the Supreme Ruler, the Joy Eternal. (As Self He is) the Spirit who is seen (by the illumined sage) in the Lunar Logos. He is verily the 'Supreme I am.' He indeed is the 'Supreme I am.'

"He who knowing Him thus, meditates on Him, has his sins destroyed, becomes a dweller of the world of God, obtains life eternal, lives resplendent, and his dependants do not perish, because we guard him in this world and in the other, whoever knowing Him thus meditates on Him."

## THIRTEENTH KHAṆḌA

Then the Ahavaniya Fire taught him, "Brahman is All-powerful, All-pervading, the Luminous, the Sentieny. (As Self, He is) the Spirit who is seen (by the illumined sage) in the Deva of lightning. He is the 'I am.' He indeed is the 'I am.'

"He who knowing him thus, meditates on Him, has his sins destroyed, becomes a dweller of the world of God, obtains life eternal, lives resplendent. His dependants do not perish, because we guard him in this world, and in the other, whosoever knowing Him thus, meditates on Him."

## FOURTEENTH KHAṆḌA

Then they said, "Friend Upakośala, (thus have we taught thee theoretically) the two doctrines about God, namely, that God is the 'I' (the inner ruler of all souls) and that God is the 'Ātman' (the All-pervading cosmic agent). But thy teacher alone will tell thee the (practical) mode (of realising this teaching.)" In time his teacher came back, and said to him, "Upakośala!"

He answered, "Lord." The teacher said, "Friend, thy countenance looks bright as that of a person inspired. Now who has taught thee (a Deva or any lower entity)?" Upakośala said: "What (lower entity) can dare teach me, Sir? Men and Asuras hide themselves before thee. The (presiding Devas of) these (fires) verily taught me. They were (refulgent) like these, but unlike these (as they had hands, feet, etc.)" Upakośala spoke about the Fires before his teacher. The teacher said, "What, my friend, have these Fires told you?"

Upakośala answered, "This (repeating all that the Fires had told him)." The teacher said, "My friend, they have taught thee the knowledge about the World-supporters, but I shall tell thee (the goal, the path and the method of meditation). As water does not cling to a lotus leaf, so no sinful act clings to one who knows Him thus." He said, "Lord, tell me." He said then to him.

## FIFTEENTH KHAṆḌA

He said: This person who is seen in the eye is the Self (called Vāmana.) This is the Immortal, the Fearless. This is Brahman. Nothing clings to this. Because (such a

Person resides in the eye), therefore, if any one drops melted butter or water on it, it runs away on both sides (and does not cling to the eye).

The wise call Him the *Samyadvāma* (the Most Beautiful) because all objects of beauty enter into Him. All beautiful objects enter into Him who knows Him thus.

He verily is called *Vāmaṇi* (the Giver of beauty), because He alone gives beauty to all. He who knows Him thus gives beauty to all (being inferior to himself).

He is also *Bhāmaṇi* (the Resplendent), for He shines in all worlds. He who knows this thus, shines in all worlds.

Now when such persons die, whether (their relations) perform their death ceremonies or not, they go to the plane of the Ray, from the Ray-plane to the Day-plane, from the Day-plane to the Bright-fortnightly plane, from the Bright-fortnightly plane to the Northern six-monthly plane, from the Six-monthly plane to the Annual plane, from the Annual plane to the Solar plane, from the Solar plane to the Lunar plane, from the Lunar plane to the plane of *Sarasvatī*, (from that they reach to the plane of the chief *Vāyu*) who is her Lord and beloved of God.

He leads them to Brahman. This is the path guarded by the *Devas*, the path that leads to Brahman. Those who proceed on that path, do not return to this round of humanity, yea, they do not return.

These texts show that there are many authorities to prove that the grace of the Guru is the strongest element, in bringing about *Mukti*. "But if this be so why should a man exert at all? The grace of the Guru is all-sufficient." One should, however, not fall into this mistake. For the texts also say that a man should have supreme devotion to God, (*Yasya deve parābhaktiḥ*) and that he should study and meditate (*Śrotavyaḥ, mantavyaḥ*) and the rest. All these are necessary for attaining perfection. Hence says a *Smṛiti* text :

गुरुप्रसादो बलवान् न तस्माद् बलवत्तरम् ।

तथापि श्रवणादिश्च कर्तव्यो मोक्षसिद्धये ॥

The grace of the Guru is the strongest. There is nothing stronger than that. Still study, meditation and the rest must also be performed in order to accomplish that (Release).

### Adhikaraṇa XXII.

It has been established that the fruit is obtained by worshipping the Lord as qualified with attributes accompanied with the grace of the teacher. Now the author reconciles those texts which are in apparent conflict with the statement above made. In the *Gopāla Tāpani* the sages asked *Brahmā*, the lotus-born, about that being who is the object of adoration to all, from whom death is even afraid, etc. In reply to their question *Brahmā* teaches that *Śrī Kṛṣṇa* possesses all those attributes and that the method of reaching Him is devotion to Him, which *Brahmā* teaches to the sages. In the *Uttar Gopāla Tāpani* he further says :

तन्मादेवपरो रजस इति सोऽहमित्यवधार्य गोपालोऽहमिति भावयेत् ।

स मोक्षमश्नुते स ब्रह्मत्वमधिगच्छति स ब्रह्मविद्भवति स मोक्षमिति ॥



Since this is so, let him meditate on Him who is beyond Rajas with the idea "I am he." "I am Gopāla." He obtains Mokṣa, he gets the state of Brahman, he becomes a knower of Brahma.

*Doubt* : Here meditation with non-difference is apparently taught by the phrase "I am He." Therefore, arises the doubt : Is this meditation "I am He" based upon the teaching that the supreme Self and the individual Self are identical in essence, or is it only a particular kind of meditation, a particular manifestation of devotion taught above and in which state the Bhakta identifies himself with the object of his devotion ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent holds the view that the first alternative is the right one, for the words of the Upaniṣad naturally lend themselves to that view, and that Mokṣa is caused by meditating on the Great truth, that the individual Self is identical with the supreme Self.

*Siddhānta* : The view is set aside by the next Sūtra, where it will be shown that So'ham is a form of Bhakti only, and is not to be taken literally.

SŪTRA III., 3. 46.

पूर्वविकल्प प्रकरणात्स्यात्क्रियामानसवत् ॥ ३ ॥ ३ । ४६ ॥

पूर्व Pūrvā, of the former (*i. e.*, devotion.) विकल्पः Vikalpah. an optional form. प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇāt, on account of the subject-matter. स्यात् Syāt, there may be. क्रिया Kriyā, the acts of offering in Pūjā. मानसवत् Mānasavat, like the act of meditation.

46. This 'So'ham' meditation is a form of the former (*i. e.*, it is a kind of Bhakti), because of the context, just like the mental forms of meditation and the physical acts (offerings in Pūjā and the rest, are but modes of Bhakti).—407.

#### COMMENTARY

This mental idea "I am He" is an *optional* form, and nothing more than that, of the "*former*," namely, of Bhakti. Why do we say so ? Because of the context. The opening sentences of the Gopāla Tāpanī, after describing meditation and Japa of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, thus defines Bhakti or Bhajana :

Bhajana or worship means Bhakti or devotion to the Lord. It consists in having no desire, or rather in renouncing all desires of enjoying the fruits of good work, either in this world or in the next ; and in fixing the mind in That (Śrī Kṛṣṇa). This is indeed true Naiṣkarmaya or Sannyāsa.

This Bhakti being mentioned in the previous portion of the Upaniṣad, and being also mentioned in the concluding portion of it also (Sachchidanand-aikarase bhaktiyoge tiṣṭhati) the middle portion 'So'ham' cannot

but refer to this Bhakti. Hence this text must be interpreted in consonance with the opening and the concluding portions of the whole Upaniṣad ; and when so interpreted, it is found to be a peculiar mode of Bhakti, and not a different statement altogether, teaching the identity of the human soul with God. The Sūtrakāra illustrates this by an example, "Kriyā-mānasa-vat." It is like acts of services and Pūjās, and mental meditation. As these acts of Pūjā and meditation are but modes of Bhakti, so also the cry of the devotee "I am He," is also a particular mode of that very Bhakti previously taught. This mental condition "I am He" arises from the intensity of love as well as from the extremity of fear. (As the Gopinis from the intensity of love cried out, "I am Kṛṣṇa") Or as a man attacked by a lion, from the extremity of his fear says, "I am the lion." The sense, therefore, is this. In the Pūrva Tāpani the question asked is, "Kaḥ paramodevaḥ, etc." Who is the highest God, etc ? The sages asked Brahmā about the nature of that transcendental substance, who possessed the attribute of being the object of adoration to all, who destroys the cycle of birth and death for His devotee, who is the refuge of all and the cause of all. Brahmā being thus asked, replies by saying Śrī Kṛṣṇa is the highest God, who possesses all these attributes, which the sages have enquired after ; and then he further teaches that he who meditates on Śrī Kṛṣṇa, recites His Mantra and worships him, becomes immortal, and by such Bhakti the man loses the fear of the world. On being so taught, the sages again asked Brahmā what is the form in which Śrī Kṛṣṇa should be meditated, what is the particular Mantra which should be recited, and what was the mode of worshipping Him ? Here the question evidently relates to an object of devotion and the method of that devotion. Being thus questioned Brahmā teaches the form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa which the devotee must meditate upon in the verses beginning with "The cow-herd of the colour of cloud standing under the Kalpa tree, etc." Having thus described His form and essential nature together with His companions (the cow-herd, the cow-mates and the cow) Brahmā next describes the Mantra that one must constantly recite in his Japa and then he says that the worship of Kṛṣṇa consists in devotion to Him, by which a man discards the fruit of all works to be enjoyed here or in the next world, and which consists in renunciation of all such fruits ; and such fixing of the mind on the Lord is true Sannyāsa. In other words, Brahmā teaches three things to the sages in answer to their three questions. (i) The form which must be meditated upon, (ii) the Mantra which must be recited in the Japa and (iii) the most important of all, he gives the definition of Bhajana, as Bhakti in these memorable words :

भक्तिरस्य भजनं तदिहामुत्रोपाधिनैराशये ।

नैवामुष्मिन्मनः कल्पनमेतदेव च नैष्कर्म्यम् ॥

Bhajana or worship means Bhakti or devotion to the Lord. It consists in having no desire or rather in renouncing all desire of enjoying the fruits of good work, either in this world or in the next. And in fixing the mind in That (Śrī Kṛṣṇa). This is indeed true Naiṣkarmya or Sannyāsa.

This defines Bhakti and describes its nature. After thus defining the nature of Bhakti, the Upaniṣad teaches the silent recitation of the Mantra with the syllable Om prefixed to it, and states that the result of such Japa is Mukti, in the shape of attaining Kṛṣṇa.

अर्चोकारेणान्तरितं यो जपति गोविन्दस्य पञ्चपदमनुं तम् ।

तस्यैवासौ दर्शयेदान्तरूपं तस्मान्मुमुक्षुरभ्यसेन्नित्यं शान्त्यै ॥

He who recites this Mantra, consisting of five words, prefixed with the syllable Om, is shown by the Lord His own form ; therefore let the person desiring Mukti recite it always.

*Note:* With the syllable Om, the Mantra would become Om Kṛṣṇāya, Om Govindāya, Om Gopījanavallabhāya Om Svāhā Om.

Having thus shown the result of this Japa, the Upaniṣad goes on to say :

तमेकं गोविन्दं सच्चिदानन्दविग्रहं पञ्च-

पदं वृन्दावने सुरभूरुहतलासीनं सततं

समरुद्राणोऽहं परमयास्तुत्या तोषयामि ।

"I worship with the highest praise that one Govinda, whose form is existence, knowledge and bliss ; whose Mantra consists of five words ; who is seated under the heavenly tree in Brṇḍāvana, along with the Maruts."

Having thus shown that a man by meditating on Kṛṣṇa gets knowledge and happiness, the first part of Gopāla Tāpanī ends with the statement "Therefore, Kṛṣṇa is the highest God, let one meditate upon Him, let one recite His Mantra, let one love Him, yea, love Him Om tat sat."

Thus an analysis of the whole of Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī Upaniṣad shows that it begins with declaring that Kṛṣṇa is the highest God, and ends with that declaration. The whole thesis of this Upaniṣad is to teach the greatness of Kṛṣṇa, and His worship, as the only means of getting Mukti.

It does not show that the Jivas who have to worship Kṛṣṇa are identical with Him. An analysis of the second part (i.e., of) Gopāla Uttara Tāpanī (in which occurs the phrase "*I am He*"), would lead any reasonable man to the same conclusion as above, in spite of this stumbling block of So'ham Asmi, *I am He*. We now proceed to analyse this Upaniṣad.

Once the cow-maids of Brṇḍāvana asked Śrī Kṛṣṇa, Who was the fittest person whom they should feed with alms ? Kṛṣṇa replied that Duvṛśas was such a person, who lived on the other side of the Yamunā. They asked Him, "How are we to cross it ?" Kṛṣṇa said, "You will walk over it by saying to it, "Kṛṣṇa is a celibate." The cow-maids

did so, and crossing the river, went to the hermitage of Durvāsas, and presented all the delicious dainties that they had brought for him. And the sage did full justice to the viands. Being highly pleased, he blessed them, and then they asked him "How are we to return?" He said, "Walk over the waters of the river saying that *Durvāsas is a fasting sage*." The cow-maids preplexed, making Rādhā their spokesman, enquired from him the meaning of these dark sayings—how Kṛṣṇa was a celibate, and how Durvāsas was a fasting sage. Then Durvāsas explained to them the mystery of the Great Self of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, beginning with the following words: "This verily is Śrī Kṛṣṇa, about whom you have asked, who is the cause of the subtle and the gross body, etc." He taught them, that Śrī Kṛṣṇa was the cause of all, that His nature was to willingly submit to those who loved Him with sincere and disinterested affection; and that He is the eternal beloved of such souls. Then the cow-maids asked him about the birth, deeds, the Mantra and the various places of manifestation of Śrī Kṛṣṇa. And the sage tells them these, commencing with the following words:

In the beginning was God Nārāyaṇa alone, in Whom these worlds are interwoven. From the lotus of his heart arose Brahmā, the Creator of the world. Brahmā asked Him who is the highest and best of all Avatāras with whom all the worlds and the Devas are satisfied, by remembering whom they cross the cycle of births and deaths, and how is this Avatāra, the Brahman?

To him replied the God Nārāyaṇa. "As there are seven cities on the summit of the Meru hill where dwell those who have performed good deeds, with the desire of getting reward; so there are seven other cities above these where dwell those who perform works without any desire of reward. Among them the best is the city of Gopāla, the manifested Brahman. This city is Madhurā."

Then Nārāyaṇa describes this sacred Madhurā, surrounded by various groves and gardens, forests and bowers and protected by the Chakra of the Lord. And then he says, "Śrī Kṛṣṇa dwells in this city, accompanied by His three powers, and four glories (Balarāma, Aniruddha, Pradyumna, and Rukmiṇi) who represent the four letters of the syllable Aum. Then He adds:

तस्मादेव परोरजस इति सोऽहमि-

त्यवधार्य गोपालोऽहमिति भावयेत् ।

Since He is so, salutation to Him, who is above Rajas. Let a man thinking that "I am He," meditate 'I am Gopāla.'

This teaches a form of meditation—the meditation of unity between the worshipper and the worshipped, and shows that such prayer of union is also a cause of Mukti. This teaching "So'ham, Gopālo'ham" does not declare the absolute identity of the individual soul with the Supreme Self, but that a more reasonable interpretation of this text is that it teaches a particular kind of devotion, similar to those taught in the preceding

portions of this Upaniṣad. As in the state of ecstasy, a man weeps, rolls about, becomes catalytic, etc., so also there comes a stage in devotion, when the saint cries out "I am He," "I am Brahman." All these expressions are occurrences of God-intoxicated souls, and are not to be taken in their literal sense. Expressions like these, found in other Upaniṣads, like the Taittirīya and the rest, declaring non-difference, must be understood in this sense, namely, as expressions of persons saturated with Brahman and possessed by Him. This is possible only where there is difference, and not where there is absolute identity. This has been explained before also.

The author now gives another reason for holding that statements like "I am He," are merely expressions of particular mental modes of the devotees, and they should be so understood; and that they do not teach the absolute identity of the human soul with the supreme Lord.

SŪTRA III, 3. 47.

अतिदेशाच्च ॥ ३ । ३ । ४७ ॥

अतिदेशात् Atideśāt, on account of comparison. च Cha, and.

47. And on account of comparison (made in the Gopāla Uttara Tāpanī between the Lord and His Bhaktas, as that of a father and his sons, the human soul is not identical with the Supreme Self).—408.

COMMENTARY

In the same Upaniṣad (Gopāla Uttara Tāpanī) the Lord addressing Brahmā, says :

यथा त्वं सह पुत्रैस्तु यथा रुद्रो गणैः सह ।

यथा त्रियाऽभियुक्तोऽहं तथा भक्तो मम प्रियः ॥

As thou art surrounded by Thy sons (Nārada and the rest, and art happy in their company), as Rudra is surrounded by his hosts, as I am constantly accompanied by Śrī, so verily My Bhaktas are dear to me.

This verse may also be translated thus :

As Thou with Thy sons art dear to Me, as Rudra 'with His hosts is a constant object of My solicitude, as Śrī is ever impartible from Me, so is My devotee dear to Me.

This shows that as the lotus-born Brahma and the rest are accompanied by their sons, etc., so the Lord is always accompanied by His Bhaktas and He loves them very dearly. The word "and" implies that the next verse also should be considered in this connection.

कूटस्थस्य स्वरूपं च किरीटं प्रवदन्ति माम् ।

अक्षरोत्तं प्रस्फुरत्तत्कुण्डलं युगलं स्मृतम् ॥

ध्यायेन्मम प्रियो नित्यं स मोक्षमधिगच्छति ।

स मुक्तो भवति तस्मै च आत्मानं ददामीति ॥

"Let My beloved meditate constantly on the esoteric meaning of My form as described above, such as My crown is Kūṭastha, etc. Thus he attains release, becomes free and I give myself to Him." Thus this Upaniṣad shows that the devotee is the eternally beloved of the Lord and that as he has entirely given himself to Him, the Lord has also given Himself to him. Now this eternal loving and reciprocal gift is impossible if the devotee were identical with the Lord. Therefore, expressions like "I am He," "I am Gopāla," (*Āmīhaḥ*), "I am the true," indicate that they are different modes of Bhakti. Thus should be explained the "So'ham" expressions found in other Upaniṣads like Rāma Tāpani, etc.

Thus it has been established that release is to be obtained from the worship of the Lord accompanied by the Grace of the Guru. There can be no objection to this proposition.

### *Adhikaraṇa XXIII—Vidyā of meditation preceded by the study of Scriptures.*

The author now tries to show more clearly that the release is to be obtained by such Vidyā. There are expressions like "Knowing Him verily one goes beyond death," "There is no other path to walk upon"—(*Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad*, III. 8). Similarly, in *Purūṣa Sūkta*, "knowing Him verily one becomes immortal here." Such expressions show that it is by knowledge that one gets immortality.

**Doubt :** Here arises the doubt : What is the direct cause of Mukti? Is it the performance of the ritualistic acts which lead to Mukti? Or is it the performance of such acts accompanied by Vidyā as defined above? Or does it depend on Vidyā alone, independently of Karma or ritualistic acts?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that Mukti depends upon the due performance of the ritualistic Karmas, and he refers to the six aphorisms commencing with III., 4. 2-7. On the strength of these aphorisms, he maintains that Vidyā is secondary or rather it stands to Karma in a supplementary relation. The Pūrvapakṣin further says, if Karmas alone are not the cause of Mukti, then Karmas *plus* Vidyā lead to Mukti, and that none of them singly has the power of giving release. Thus he takes his stand on the first two alternatives. In support of his proposition that the combination of Vidyā and Karma is the cause of Mukti, he refers to the following Śloka :

उभयभ्यामेव पक्षाभ्यां यथा खे पक्षिणो गतिः ।  
तथैव कर्मज्ञानाभ्यां मुक्तौ भवति मानवः ॥

As the birds move in the sky with the help of both their wings, so a man becomes Mukta by the conjoint help of Karma and Jñāna.

The Pūrvapakṣin further says that Mukti may depend upon Vidyā alone, because of the text above quoted. For all these reasons he affirms that the true cause of Mukti is indeterminate. It may be Vidyā, it may be Karma or it may be a combination of both.

*Siddhānta*: The following Sūtra refutes this view :

SŪTRA III., 3. 48.

विद्यैव तु तन्निर्धारणात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ४८ ॥

विद्या Vidyā, the devotion accompanied by knowledge. एव Eva, indeed. तु Tu, verily, undoubtedly. तत् Tat, about. निर्धारणात् Nirdhāraṇāt, being asserted.

48. Vidyā alone is verily the cause of Mukti, because Scripture mentions it exclusively.—409.

#### COMMENTARY

The word Tu is used in the Sūtra in order to remove the doubt above raised. The Vidyā alone is the cause of salvation and neither Karma nor the combination of Karma and Vidyā. Why do we say so? Because of the assertion in the Scriptures (Śvet. Up. III., 8): तमेव विदित्वा तिमृत्युमेति, By knowing Him alone one gets Mukti.

In the above, the particle Eva "alone" indicates that the Vidyā and Vidyā only leads to Mukti. By the word Vidyā is meant here devotion preceded by knowledge. The word Vidyā of the above text, therefore, means "by being devoted to Him, having fully known His essence." That this is the true meaning of the root Vid, to know, when used in the Scriptures, we find from other passages also. Thus the well-known passage of Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, 'Vijñāya prajñam kurvita' 'after knowing, let him practise wisdom,' where the word wisdom means the same thing as Vidyā, and the sentence means after knowing Him 'let one practise devotion.' The Smṛti also uses the word Vidyā in both these senses of knowledge and devotion. Thus in the sentence, 'Vidyā kuṭhārena sitena dhiraḥ' 'the wise one with the sharpened axe of Vidyā.' Here the word Vidyā evidently means knowledge. Similarly, in the Gītā IX. 2, the word Vidyā is used in the sense of devotion. ('Rāja vidyā,' 'rāja guhyam,' etc.)

In fact, the word Vidyā, when used as a general term, denotes both knowledge and devotion, but when used in a restricted sense, it means devotion only. It is like the words Kaurava and Mīmāṃsaka. When used in a generic sense, Kaurava includes the sons of Dhṛtarāṣṭra and of Pāṇdu but when used in a restricted sense, it means only the first class and not the Pāṇdavas. Similarly, a Mīmāṃsaka in a general way means one who knows the Mīmāṃsā, whether it be the Pūrvaṇimāṃsā of Jaimini, or the Uttara Mīmāṃsā of Bādarāyaṇa. In this generic sense a Vedāntin knowing the Vedānta Sūtra is also a Mīmāṃsaka; but in the restricted sense, the followers of Jaimini, who study the Karma Mīmāṃsā are only called Mīmāṃsaka and not the Vedāntins who study the Brahma Mīmāṃsā.

This Mokṣa, moreover, is brought about by the direct perception of the Lord as an external object, namely, by the perception of the Lord in the same way as one sees an object which is exterior to himself. So long as this external visual perception does not take place, there is no salvation. Therefore, the author says in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA III, 3. 49.

दर्शनाच्च ॥ ३ । ३ । ४९ ॥

दर्शनात् Darśanāt, it being seen in the Scriptures. च Cha, and.

49. And this Mukti takes place by seeing the Lord.—410.

COMMENTARY

In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad II, 2. 8, we read as follows :

मिथ्ये हृदयग्रन्थिश्लिषन्ते सर्वमशयाः ।

स्वीयन्ते चास्य कर्माणि तस्मिन्दृष्टे परावरे ॥ ८ ॥

The fetters of the Jīva are cut asunder, the ties of Liṅgadeha and Prakṛti are removed, (the effects of all) his works perish, when He is seen who is Supremely High ; (or when the Supremely High looks at the Jīva).

This clearly shows that Mukti is the result of the direct vision of the Lord. The word "seeing" is not used here in a figurative sense, but means seeing the Lord like any other object of perception.

If this be so, then it contradicts those Scriptural teachings which declare that release is from Karma ; or those teachings which assert that Mukti is obtained from the conjunction of knowledge and action, Jñāna and Karma. This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 3. 50.

श्रुत्यादिवलीयन्त्वाच्च न बाधः ॥ ३ । ३ । ५० ॥

श्रुति-आदि Śruti-ādi, of the Vedas and others. वलीयन्त्वात् Ballyastvāt, on



account of the stronger force. च, Cha, and. न, Na, there is no. बाधः, Bādhaḥ, refutation.

50. The texts quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin are not competent to set aside the texts which declare that Mukti is by Vidyā alone, because the direct texts of the Śruti together with those passages which are indicatory or which give some reason, are more powerful than the texts of the Pūrvapakṣin. -411.

#### COMMENTARY

By the two texts quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin, it is not possible to set aside the operation of the texts which declare that it is by Vidyā alone that Mukti is obtained. (The two texts of the Pūrvapakṣin are given in Sūtra III., 3. 48). Why do we say so? Because the texts of the Vedas are stronger in force than the Smṛti texts quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin. Such weaker text cannot set aside the stronger texts of the Śruti. The Śruti uses the exclusive particle Eva, ('I am eva viditva') to indicate that it is by Vidyā or Vidyā *alone* that Mukti is obtained. This strong text of the Śruti overpowers the weaker texts. This text is the strongest by reason of the word 'Eva' in it. The word 'Adi' in the Sūtra indicates that reason and characteristic marks are also in favour of Vidyā being the cause of Mukti. The Scriptures give characteristic marks or suggestions indicating that Vidyā alone is efficacious. Thus the following text :

इन्द्रोऽश्वमेधाच्छतमिष्ट्वापि राजा ब्रह्माण्मीड्यं समुवाचोपसन्नः । न कर्मभिर्न धनैर्नापि चान्यैः ॥

The king Indra though He had offered one hundred Aśvamedha sacrifices, yet he was not satisfied with himself and approaching the adorable Brahmā, said to Him : 'Neither by sacrificial works nor by riches, nor by any other means like these can one see the highest joy, therefore, tell Thou unto me the great truth.'

(This shows by suggestion that Vidyā alone is efficacious and not Karma). Another text says, 'Nasty akṛtaḥ kṛtena,' the eternal is never to be obtained by the transient means. This gives the reason why Vidyā alone is efficacious. Mukti is an Akṛtaḥ or non-manufactured or eternal thing. And, therefore, Karmas which are Kṛtas or products cannot give Mukti.

As regards the six Sūtras III., 4. 2-7, quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin, they do not represent the view of Bādarāyaṇa but of Jaimini; and the Sūtrakāra himself refutes the opinion of Jaimini in his subsequent Sūtras beginning with III., 4. 8-14.

The word 'Cha' in the Sūtra indicates that all those passages which express that Vidyā destroys all Karmas must also be included here. The text quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin, namely, "Tam vidyākarmaṇi" 'by Vidyā and Karma conjointly Mukti is obtained' is explained by the Sūtra-kāra in III., 1. 11.

Therefore, it is proved that Vidyā alone is the cause of Mukti.

### Adhikaraṇa XXIV.

Now the author shows that Mukti is to be obtained with the auxiliary help of holy men. In the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I., 11. 2, it is said :

अतिथिदेवो भव

Let the guest be a God to Thee.

*Doubt :* Is the worship of the holy men a cause of getting Mukti or not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa :* The opponent's view is : What is the use of worshipping the holy men when Mukti is to be obtained by the Grace of the Guru added to the worship of God ? The good men or Sat are not means of Mukti

*Siddhānta :* This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 51.

अनुबन्धादिभ्यः ॥ ३ । ३ । ४१ ॥

अनुबन्ध आदिभ्यः Anubandha-ādibhyaḥ, from the corresponding injunction (to worship the great souls) and from others.

51. From the express injunctions (for worshipping the great souls it follows that that also in an auxiliary to Mukti).—412.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Anubandha" means the injunction about the worship of the Great Ones. That is to say, worshipping them as if they were Devas. By such worship also they become gracious and Mukti is obtained. If the worship of the Holy Ones was not an auxiliary to Mukti, then the Śruti would not have said, 'Worship the guest as a God,' 'Atithi bhava.' The word 'guest' here means the Holy and the Great Ones. In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa also we find the same teaching given by Jada-Bhata to Rahūgaṇa (V., 12. 12):

रहूगणैतत् तपसा न याति न चेज्यया निवेपणाद् गृहाद् वा ।

न ह्यन्दासो नैव जलाग्निर्भूविना महत् पादराजोऽभिषेकम् ।

This attainment of Mukti cannot be had without the service of the Great Ones (lit., without anointing one's self with the dust of the feet of the holy ones), for this knowledge is not to be obtained by austerity, O Rāhūgaṇa! Nor by sacrificial offerings, nor by gift of food or houses, nor by the study of the Vedas, nor by the worship of water, fire or the Sun.

The Lord has Himself said so to Uddhava in the same (XI., 12. 1-2) :

न रोधयति मां योगो य सांख्यं धर्म एव च ।

न स्वाध्यायस्तपस्त्यागो नेष्टापूर्तं न दक्षिणा ॥

व्रतानि यज्ञश्छन्दांसि तीर्थानि नियमा यमाः ।

यथावरुन्धे सतसङ्गः सर्वमङ्गापहो हि माम् ॥

I am not constrained so much by the practices of Yoga or the study of Sāṅkhya, or by the recitation of the Vedas, or by the performance of penances or by renunciation, or by acts of sacrifices, charity and public utility, or by alms, or by fasts or worship of Devas, or recitation of secret Mantras, or by visiting sacred pilgrimages, or by the rules of restraint and religious observances ; so much as I am constrained by the company of the Good which destroys all other evil companionship.

Here the Lord, even after revealing His own mystery to Uddhava, ends by saying that the company of the Good (Satsaṅga) is the highest means of constraining God, namely, of reaching Him easily. Therefore, Satsaṅga is one of the secrets of Sādhana or practice by which a man may reach God.

The word 'Ādi,' 'and the rest,' means that going to sacred pilgrimages and not abusing worshippers of gods other than Hari, are also to be included, in the meaning of the word Satsaṅga, as we find from the following Smṛtis :

शुश्रूषोः श्रद्धानस्य वासुदेवकथारुचिः ।

स्यात् महत्सेवया विप्राः पुण्यतीर्थनिषेवणात् ॥ (Bhāgavata Purāṇa)

हरिरेवमदाराध्यः सर्वदेवेश्वरेश्वरः ।

इतरे ब्रह्मरूपाणां नावश्या वदन्त ॥ (Padma)

A person who serves (the Masters) and has faith gets a taste for the narrations of the life-history of Vāsudeva. This taste is acquired, O Brāhmaṇas ! by serving the Great, by visiting sacred places of pilgrimages.

Hari should be worshipped alone as the Highest God, Supreme over all Devas and Rulers of Devas. Nor must such a one look with contempt upon gods like Brahmā and Rudra, etc.

Note : See *Nārada Bhakti Sūtra*, S. B. H., Vol. VII. p. 18, 19.

The Pūrva-pakṣin says, it is through the grace of God that one gets a Guru and the companionship of the Good ; therefore, why not say that the grace of God alone is the cause of Mukti. Even the good luck (Adṛṣṭa) is also caused by the Lord, and cannot be said to be the cause of getting the Lord. In fact, all human motives and inclinations are caused by the Lord, as has been proved in the previous Sūtra II., 3. 39. Therefore, to imagine that the grace of the Guru and of the good men is also a cause

of Mukti is a redundancy, for when the grace of God is obtained, there is no necessity of any other person.

To this objection we reply, it is perfectly right that God Himself is the cause of the grace shown by the Guru and the Great Ones still these persons must also be considered as causes, though mediate ones. This has been explained in Sūtra II, 3. 40 and the rest. The fact is that the Lord Hari, who is a slave to His devotees, confers His power of granting grace to such persons; therefore, such persons (the Guru and the Great Ones) may be considered as independent agents in showing grace to others. When a man has the good fortune of obtaining the grace of these Holy Ones, then the Lord also shows grace on such a person. Thus all texts are harmonised and conflict removed.

*Note:* The following Sūtras of Nārada show the same:

But love of God is possible on the abandonment of all sensible objects and of every attachment to them.—35.

(That arises also) from its cultivation without remiss, or from unflinching adoration of God.—36.

(That springs also) from listening to and singing of the virtues and attributes of the Great God in society.—37.

But that is obtained, principally and surely, by the grace of the Great Ones, or, in other words, from the touch of divine compassion.—38.

Companionship of the Great is, again, difficult of attainment. It is hardly possible to assign how and when men may be taken into the society of the Great. But once obtained, association with the Great Ones is infallible in its operation.—39.

And companionship of the Great is gained by the grace of God alone.—40.

Because there is no distinction between Him and His man.—41.

### Adhikaraṇa XXV.

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt with regard to the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad III, 14. 1.

अथ खलु कुतमयः पुरुषः, यथा कतुरस्मिन्ल्लोके पुरुषो भवति, तथेनः प्रेत्य भवति सकृत् कुर्वीत ।

Because a man is a creature of faith, as is his faith in this life, so will be his condition in the next after death. So let him generate full faith (in the Lord).

This worship of Brahman is of different modes, according as it is pure worship of Brahman, or is accompanied with meditation on the Guru and the Great Ones. The question is, do these different modes of meditation lead to the same fruit or are their results different? It is the cause of the different perception of Brahman in Mukti, by the devotees who had come through different paths?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* The Pūrvapakṣin says, there is no difference in the perception of Brahman, by the devotees, in Mukti. Though they had come

by different paths, their perception of Brahman is uniform, just like the perception of travellers coming to the same city, through different directions. Though they come by different roads, they see the same city. They do not see different cities, merely because they had come through different roads. That their conception is uniform, is proved by the Śruti also. We have in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (III., 1. 3.) that on attaining Mukti all the Jivas get similarity.

When the Jiva sees the golden coloured Creator and Lord, as the Person from whom Brahmā comes out, then the wise, shaking off virtue and vice and becoming free from Avidyā, attains the highest similarity.

Therefore, you cannot say that Mukti is different for different people, according to the paths on which they have come up.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra, which shows that the vision of the Lord, obtained by the devotees in Mukti, differs according to the paths on which they have come up.

SŪTRA III., 3. 52.

प्रज्ञान्तरपृथक्त्ववद्दृष्टिश्च तदुक्तम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ५२ ॥

प्रज्ञा Prajñā, cognition, perception. अन्तर Antara, the other, the different. पृथक्त्ववत् Prthaktvavat, according to the variety of, or the difference in. दृष्टिः Dṛṣṭiḥ, the direct seeing of Him, by the devotees. च Cha, and. तद् Tad, that. उक्तम् Uktam, is stated.

52. Like the difference between the two sorts of knowledge mentioned in Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 21, there is difference in the perception of the Lord, by the different devotees, in the state of Mukti. And this has been expressly mentioned in the Chhândogya texts.—413.

COMMENTARY

In the sentence 'Vijñāya prajñām kūrṇita' (after knowing Him let him practise wisdom.—Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 21), we find two sorts of knowledge, one called Vijñāna or knowledge and the other is called Prajñā or wisdom. The first is intellectual knowledge obtained from the study of the words of the Scriptures. But the other called Prajñā or wisdom means devotion. This differs from the first, for the one is a mere intellectual conception, the other is an intuitional realisation. As there is this difference between the intellect and the intuition, so there are different kinds of intuitions also,—beatific vision obtained by the worshippers of the Lord is not same for all. Visions differ, according to the attitude of the worshipping souls. This has been asserted in the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad mentioned above ; namely, there is a difference in the state of Mukti,

according to the Kratu or faith of the devotee. Thus it follows that the vision of the Lord differs according to the nature of meditation on Him. And that, after such vision, there comes final Mukti. The similarity spoken of in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad consists in this, that all have the vision of the *same* Lord, though He appears in different aspects to different devotees. In other words, all see the Lord called Nirañjana, free from all veils of Mâyā, but that does not mean that Lord does not appear in different aspects, to the different devotees.

*Objection* : Admitted that this is so, your argument is still faulty. You say that without Vidyā or devotion, there is no vision of the Lord ; and without such vision, there is no final emancipation. Both these propositions are untenable, because during the time of the manifestation of the Lord on earth, as an Avatāra, He is seen by persons who have no devotion ; and even after such seeing, all who see Him do not get Mukti. All who saw Kṛṣṇa or Rāma did not get Mukti. This objection is next answered.

SŪTRA III., 3. 53.

न मामन्यादप्युपलब्धेर्मृत्युवन्नहि लोकापत्तिः ॥ ३ । ३ । ५३ ॥

न Na, there is not (the power of liberating). सामान्यात् Sāmānyāt, due to similarity. अपि Api, even. उपलब्धेः Upalabdheḥ, of the seeing, or perception. मृत्युवत् Mṛtyuvat, just as in the case of every kind of death. न Na, not. हि Hi, because. लोका-आपत्तिः Loka-āpattiḥ, the reaching to the other worlds.

53. As death, common to all, (does not mean Mukti) but only attainment of any particular region of enjoyment so Mukti is not attained by an ordinary or common vision of the Lord obtained by every being (when the Lord incarnates on earth as an Avatāra).—414.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "also" has the force of exclusion. That vision which is obtained in a general way, namely, which is common to all, at the time when the Lord descends on the earth and assumes a physical form, is not the cause of Mukti. As death, which is common to all, is not the cause of Mukti, though to the Jīvanmukta, death means Mukti. But is there no good result even in this ordinary seeing of the Lord, when He comes as an Avatāra ? Do those persons who see the Avatāra get Mukti at all ? Yes, they do. It is not Mukti, but attainment of higher Lord in of heavenly joy. Thus as the Vidyādhara Sudarśana saw the Lord in a general way and got heaven, or just as the king Nṛga, the Lord of heaven

by such seeing. If you say that getting heaven is Mukti, then the Sūtra replies "Na hi," not so. Getting of higher spheres is not Mukti. The Smṛti is also to the same effect. In the Nārāyaṇa Tantra, we also find the following :

सामान्यदर्शनात् लोकामुक्तिर्योग्यात्मदर्शनात् ।

From the ordinary perception of some one form, different celestial regions are reached but final release comes from the perception to which he is especially entitled ; and there is no doubt as to this, that the soul attains Mukti (release) on obtaining the perception of Brahman, for which he is eligible.

The sense is this, the vision is of two sorts—the vision of the Lord as enveloped in Mâyā, and vision free from such Mâyā. The first sort of vision arises when there is great merit of Puṇyam. Through such vision a man reaches heavenly regions : but the second sort of vision, which is obtained only through theosophic knowledge or Brahma-Vidyā, the subtle body called the Liṅgadeha is destroyed, the man becomes the beloved of the Lord, has His vision and sees Him as consisting of intelligence and bliss, free from all Mâyā. It is this vision, so produced, which causes the final Mukti. Thus every thing is reconciled.

It is said, that even the enemies of the Lord, killed by the Lord, get Mukti at the very moment of their death, when they are just killed by Him. How is this ? Such persons get final Mukti, because their Liṅgadeha even is destroyed, by the mysterious touch of the sacred weapons of the Lord, as they strike at Him. When the Liṅgadeha is once destroyed thus, at the very moment of death, his attitude of mind instantly changes from hostility to Him to love for Him, and he at his last moment sees the Lord, as the object of greatest endearment and love, and because he sees Him so, he gets Mukti. (The Mukti is not obtained, because he is killed by the Lord, but because his Liṅgadeha even is destroyed, and he sees the Lord in His true glory, with unclouded vision, full of love). If this were not so, it would contradict many texts (declaring that love of God and not hatred of him leads to Mukti).

### Adhikaraṇa—XXVI.

This section is commenced, in order to strengthen the view, that Mukti is obtained by the vision of the Lord, through devotion. In the Muṇḍaka and Kaṭha Upaniṣads we find (Muṇḍ. III., 2. 3. Kaṭha, II., 23) :

नयमात्मा प्रवचनेन लभ्यो न मेधया न बहुना श्रुतेन ।

यमेवैष श्रुते तेन लभ्यस्तस्यैष आत्मा विश्रुते तदुं स्वाम् ॥

This Self cannot be gained by dissertations (devoid of devotion), nor by (mere keen) intellect, nor by much hearing. It is gained only by him whom the Self chooses. To him this Self reveals His form.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Does the beatific vision depend upon the choosing of the Lord, or is it the effect of devotion joined with dispassion and knowledge ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains that it depends merely upon the choosing of the Lord, as the above text shows. This is set aside in the next Sūtra :

SŪTRA III. 3. 54.

परेण च शब्दस्य ताद्विध्यं भूयस्त्वात्त्वनुबन्धः ॥ ३ । ३ । ५४ ॥

*परेण* Pareṇa, by the statements immediately following. *च* Cha, and. *शब्दस्य* Śabdasya, of the word. *ताद्विध्यम्* Tādvīdhyam, being in reference to it, having the same import, namely, denoting the attainableness of the Lord through Bhakti. *भूयस्त्वात्* Bhūyastvāt, due to pre-eminence. *तु* Tu, also. *अनुबन्धः* Anubandhaḥ, the corresponding injunctions : the exclusive mention.

54. When read with the verse immediately following, the words here also denote the same. The exclusive mention of choice is because of its pre-eminence.—415.

(The words expressing that the Lord can be seen only by him whom He chooses, when read with the verse) immediately following it, (mean one and the same thing, namely, He is obtained by Bhakti preceded by knowledge). The choice is given pre-eminence, because it is the last in the chain of causation, and is the predominating factor.

#### COMMENTARY

The words of the above texts, though apparently meaning that the Lord is to be obtained only by him whom the Lord chooses, yet really mean to teach that He is obtained through devotion, and this is shown by the next verse immediately following it, and by other texts also. The above verse, therefore, does not mean that the vision of the Lord depends upon the arbitrary choice of the Lord. In the immediately following verse it is said :

नायमात्मा बलहीनेन लभ्यो न च प्रमादात्तपसो वाप्यलिङ्गात् । एतेरुपायेर्यतते यस्तु विद्वांस्तस्यैव आत्मा  
विशते ब्रह्मधाम ।

This Self is not to be gained by one who is destitute of power, nor by the heedless, nor by one who performs penances not countenanced by scriptures. But the wise, who strives after Him by those means (by 'śravaṇa, manana,' etc., coupled with Bhakti, while praying always for grace) obtains Him and then for him (these become helpful). To Him this Supreme Self manifests in the home of Brahman (reveals Himself through Vāya).

This shows that the methods or Upāyas of seeing Brahman are power, heedlessness, etc., mentioned here. Bala or power here means Bhakti or devotion. As is said in another verse : "They control me by



devotion as faithful wives control their husbands." Similarly, in the Gītā, (VIII, 22):

पुरुषः स परः पार्थ भक्त्या लभ्यस्त्वनन्यया ।  
यस्यान्तःस्थानि भूतानि येन सर्वमिदं ततम् ॥

He, the highest Spirit, O Pārtha, may be reached by unswerving devotion to Him alone, in whom all beings abide, by whom all This is pervaded.

Similarly, in Kaṭha Upaniṣad, II., 23 and 24 :

नायमात्मा प्रवचनेन लभ्यो न मेधया न बहुना श्रुतेन ।  
यमेवैष ब्रूते तेन लभ्यतम्येष आत्मा विब्रूते तनूँ स्वाम् ॥

The Ātmā is not to be obtained by many explanations, nor by the intellect, nor by much learning. He whom alone this Ātmā elects, by him is He obtained : for him this Ātmā reveals His own nature.

नाविरतो दुश्चरितान्नाशान्तो न समाहितः ।

नाशान्तमानसो वापि प्रज्ञानेनैनाप्नुयात् ॥ २४ ॥

He who has ceased from evil deeds and is controlled (in senses), concentrated (in intellect) and controlled (in mind) obtains this Ātmā through the knowledge (of Brahman).

Note : This shows that 'śama, dama, samādhāna, etc., are also means of knowing the Lord : for His grace would naturally fall on such a person.

This second verse of the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, immediately following the first, qualifies it, and shows that practices of devotion are not useless. It lays down a graduated series of practices for obtaining Brahman, or rather for obtaining His choice. They are (i) cessation from evil deeds, (ii) control of the senses, (iii) concentration of thought, (iv) control of mind. Thus the verse about choice, which occurs both in the Muṇḍaka and the Kaṭha Upaniṣads, must be read with the immediately succeeding verses in each of these Upaniṣads ; and when so read, it will appear, that the choice of the Lord is not an arbitrary and capricious thing, but a well regulated selection of Jivas, having regard to their devotion, etc. Therefore, the choice here means selection made by the Lord, owing to the devotion of the elected, for thus can the two verses of this Upaniṣad be harmonised. Moreover, the first verse means that the Lord is to be obtained by election *alone*, no one can get Him whom He does not elect. And He does not elect any one who does not love Him, but only those who are His beloved, and who love Him in return. Those are the beloved of the Lord, who have devotion to the Lord, and not those who have no such devotion. Thus ultimately devotion is the cause of Lord's election. The Lord Himself has said so in the Gītā, VII., 17 :

तेषां ज्ञानी नित्ययुक्त एकभक्तिर्विशिष्यते ॥

प्रियो हि ज्ञानिनोऽस्त्ययमहं स च मम प्रियः ॥

Of these, the wise constantly harmonised, worshipping the One, is the best ; I am supremely dear to the wise, and he dear to Me.

So also in the Kaivalya Upaniṣad, verse 2, Brahmā says to Āśvalāyana: 'Śraddhā-bhakti dhyāna-yogād avehi,' "try to know Him by the combined practice of meditation, devotion and faith."

The texts like these show that the knowledge of Brahman is obtainable by Bhakti. If this were not so, and if only those could know Him whom Brahman chose to reveal Himself, then the Lord would be open to the charge of partiality and favouritism.

If this is so, why does the text say, "the Lord reveals Himself to those only whom He chooses so to reveal?" The answer to this is given in the last words of the Sūtra, 'bhūyastvāt tvanubandhaḥ.' The exclusive mention of choice is to indicate its greatness. The choice is the immediate cause of Divine vision. It is the last in the link of causes that lead to Divine vision, and it is the greatest of such causes, and therefore, it is mentioned as the exclusive cause of the Divine vision. The gradation of causes is as follows: first comes keeping the company of the righteous and good men, and serving them. By such company and service, there dawns the knowledge of the essential nature of one's own Self and of the Divine or Supreme Self. Then comes Vairāgyam or a total disgust for every thing of this world, and of the next; with a yearning to reach the Lord. This is Bhakti. When the Bhakti becomes strong, the man becomes the beloved of the Lord, and because of such dearness to Him, he is chosen by Him. Then comes the direct vision of the Lord. Thus choice comes as the last in this chain of causations, and hence the Śruti says, "He only sees the Lord, whom the Lord chooses to see."

### *Adhikaraṇa XXVII.*

It has been determined before that the devotees, who worship the Lord with the attitude of a servant or a friend, from the very beginning of their worship, meditate on Him in the highest ether and see Him there. But there are some who do not see the Lord in this aspect, but whose attitude is one of quietness, and who worship the Lord not in the supreme ether, but in the various parts of their body, such as stomach, etc. Thus in the Aitareya Upaniṣad, it is said that the Śārkarākṣas worship Brahman in the stomach, that the Āruṇayas worship Brahman in the heart, etc. Here these words, stomach, heart, etc., give rise to doubt.

**Doubt :** Is Hari to be worshipped in the stomach, heart, etc., or not?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says : Brahman is not material, and so should not be worshipped as stomach, heart, etc. He does not manifest His glory in these transitory objects, but He exists in the non-material highest ether, which is itself eternal, and in which the Lord is eternally manifested.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 55.

एक आत्मनः शरीरे भावात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ५५ ॥

एके Eke, some. आत्मनः Ātmanah, (the worship of and the meditation on) the Lord. शरीरे Śarīre, in the body, or in the heart, or in the Brahmanic hole. भावात् Bhāvāt, because He is (there).

55. Some Śākhins hold that the Ātman (Viṣṇu) should be meditated upon as various members of the body, because He exists there also.—416.

#### COMMENTARY

Some Śākhās hold the view that the worship of Viṣṇu, the Supreme Self, should be done in the body, namely, in the stomach, heart and top of the head, etc. Why ? Because the Lord exists in these places also. They say, that if a thing is to be obtained near at hand, why one should search for it in a distant place ; if honey is to be found in house-tree, why should one go to the hills in search of it ? They mean to say, when the Lord is so worshipped in stomach, etc., He being pleased with His devotees, must necessarily give them the highest region or Mukti. In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa (X., 87.18) also it is said :

The Śārkarākṣas worship the Lord as stomach, following the paths of the Ṛṣis. The Āruṇayas worship Him as the ether of the heart, as the easiest road of reaching Him. But higher than these two, O endless One ! is Thy abode in the head ? Those who worship Thee in the head, rising thereto by Suṣumnā from the heart, they never fall into the jaws of death again : (for head is the Vaikuṇṭha).

Thus in the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, II., 4. 1 :

उदरं ब्रह्मेति शार्कराक्ष्या उपासते, हृदयं ब्रह्मेत्यारुणयो ब्रह्माह्वे ता ३ इ, इति । ऊर्ध्वं त्वेबोदसर्पत् तच्छिब्रोऽश्रयत् यच्छिब्रोऽश्रयत् यच्छिब्रोऽभवत् तच्छिब्रसः शिरस्त्वम् ।

The Śārkarākṣas worship the stomach as Brahman, the Āruṇayas meditate on the head as Brahman, etc.

## Adhikarāṇa XXVIII.

In the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, III., 11. 1, it has been said "as is the faith of a man in this life, so will be his condition in the next." And in the succeeding verses of the same Khanda, it has been taught that Brahman should be meditated upon as possessing the attributes of Lordliness and as well as those of Beauty and Sweetness. It has also been shown above, that there is no conflict in these two forms of meditation, the Lord as Majestic and the Lord as All-beautiful. The Jivas follow one or other of these modes of meditation, according to the will of the Lord, and the training obtained by them in the company of the Good and Holy men belonging to that particular order of devotion. By any one of these two methods the Lord is reached, as has been shown in the Sūtra III., 3. 29.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Does the man reach that particular aspect of the Lord, possessing those particular qualities, which he has been meditating upon or does he reach the Lord as possessing *every* quality, over and above, that so meditated upon ? In other words, will the devotee of the Lord, the Beautiful, see the Lord in Mukti as Beautiful alone, or as Majestic also and *vice-versa* ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The object of meditation being one, the devotee, when he reaches that object, will see It in the fulness of all Its qualities, and not only possessing those qualities which he had meditated upon. It is something analogous to meditating on the Lord with a *few* qualities or with a combination of *all* qualities.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 56.

व्यतिरेकस्तद्भावभावित्वाच्च तूपलब्धिवत् ॥ ३ । ३ । ५६ ॥

*व्यतिरेकः* Vyatirekaḥ, difference. तद् Tad, of the meditation. भाव Bhāva, of the qualities. भावित्वाद् Bhāvitvāt, because of the existence. न Na, not. तु Tu, surely. उपलब्धिवत् Upalabdhivat, as in the case of knowledge.

56. There is not the perception of the Lord having other attributes than those with which He was meditated upon in life. It is like the realisation of the Lord, according to the nature of one's conception or knowledge.—417.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu' is employed in order to remove the doubt. The Sūtra declares that in release there is not perception of qualities other

than those meditated upon, because the devotee having meditated with certain qualities as belonging to the Lord, the Lord appears to him as possessing those qualities only. For in Heaven, one sees the Lord as having those qualities only, with which he had invested Him in His meditation. It is like knowledge. When a person meditates with a particular kind of knowledge, in obtaining that object he obtains it with that particular knowledge. Namely, in the state of Mukti, his conception of the Lord is realised in the particular form of knowledge with which he had conceived Him on earth. Though the knowers of the Lord are fully conscious, that the object of their devotion has attributes other than those with which they meditate, but as they do not wish to see their Lord with those attributes, so when they reach the Lord in Mukti, they see Him only as they had meditated upon Him, and not otherwise, because they had not so meditated upon. And thus the above Śruti of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is justified, for as is the faith of the man in this life, so will be his realisation in the text, otherwise this text would become invalid.

In the next Sūtra, the author shows by an illustration that people have different kinds of faith, and reach the Lord in his different aspects, because the Lord so wills it. The illustration is taken from that of the Yajamāna and his officiating R̥tviks or priests.

SŪTRA III., 3. 57.

अंगववद्वास्तु न शाखासु हि प्रतिवेदम् ॥ ३ । ३ । ५७ ॥

अंग Aṅga, parts. अववद्वाः Avabaddhaḥ, appointed to, connected with. तु Tu, but. न Na, not. शाखासु Śākhāsu, in all the Śākhās or branches. हि Hi, because. प्रतिवेदम् Prativedam, according to the Veda.

57. But they are appointed (or restricted to) particular parts, and not to all branches of a sacrifice, because of the Veda.—418.

*Note :* Like the priests to whom separate functions have been allotted by naming them to certain posts, so Jīvas follow one or the other path of devotion, because it has been so determined by the Lord. And as the priests when holding a particular office cannot perform any other function but what is appropriate to them, and cannot perform the other parts, because the Vedas are definitely prescribed for each priest, so the Bhaktas do not follow the paths other than their own in their devotion to the Lord.

#### COMMENTARY

The Yajamāna, when performing a sacrifice, chooses several priests to perform it. Every one of these priests knows *all* the parts which constitute the full sacrifice. But the Yajamāna allots to each priest, the particular part which he must perform in sacrifice. Thus he binds them

down, as it were, by giving them particular names, such as : "I select *you* to do the part of the *Adhvaryu* priest, I choose *you* to take the seat of the *Hotar* priest, I ask *you* to do the duty of the *Udgātār* priest in this sacrifice. And so on." According to the particular office assigned by the Master to each of these priests, they are restricted to that particular office. Thus, one elected to the office of the *Hotar*, though equally dexterous in performing the duties of other offices also, is yet confined to the work of the *Hotar* alone, and has no right to do the work of any other priest. That being so, he cannot perform all the other acts, taught in the various *Sākhās*, because the parts are regulated according to each *Veda*. Thus the *Hotar* performs his part with the verses of the *R̥g Veda*, the *Adhvaryu* with the sentences of the *Yajur Veda*, the *Udgātār* with *Sāma Veda*, and the *Brahmā* with the *Atharva Veda*. Here the particular office which any priest has to fill, is determined by the will of the Master alone. No priest has a right to say that he will do all the work, or any other work than that to which the Master appoints him. According to the nature of the office filled by the priest, is the nature of the fee also (*Dakṣiṇā*) received by him. Similarly, it is the will of the Lord which determines the particular mode, in which particular *Jivas* must worship Him, whether they worship Him as Lord the Beautiful, or Lord the Majestic.

The author gives another illustration showing how *Uddhava* and the rest worshipped the Lord with mixed sentiments of love and fear, worshipped Him both as Majestic and Beautiful. And though this mixed sentiment is not so pleasing to the author, yet he tries to explain it.

SŪTRA III., 3. 58.

मन्त्रादिवद्वाऽविरोधः ॥ ३ । ३ । ५८ ॥

मन्त्र-आदिवत् *Mantra-ādivat*, as in the case of Vedic verses and others. वा *Vā*, or. अविरोधः *Avirodhaḥ*, there is no contradiction.

58 Or there is no conflict, as in the case of certain *Mantras* and the rest.—419.

#### COMMENTARY

The Lord willed that men like *Uddhava* and the rest should have this mixed form of devotion, in order to evolve their *Bhakti* on both these lines. It is like the *Mantras* of the *Vedas*. As sometimes one and the same *Mantra* is employed in *many* ceremonial acts, and as other *Mantras* are employed in *two* acts, while there are others which are confined to *one* act only, according to the directions given in the ritual, so some men are employed to worship the Lord in *one* way only, others in *several*

ways. The word "Âdi," "and the rest," is employed in the Sūtra in order to include time and action. Just as one and the same time is the cause of producing in one tree, leaves and flowers ; in another it is the cause of the tree shedding all its leaves ; in one person it produces youth, in another infancy and so on : so there is no contradiction, if the Lord inspires different sentiments, in different people, at one and the same time. Therefore, with whatever attributes, and with whatever essential form, the Lord is meditated upon, with that attribute and form, He appears to the sight of His devotee in release. Thus it is demonstrated, that the Lord does not appear in Mukti, with attributes more than those meditated upon by the devotees.

### Adhikaraṇa XXIX.

Now we shall discuss the following texts of the Gopāla Tāpanī :

'Eko'pi san bahudhâ yo'vabhāti.' Though one he who appears as many.

'Ekam santam bahudhâ dṛśyamānam.' Being one who is seen as many. 'Atha kasmâd uchyate Brahma.' Why is he called Brahma ?

Like the Vaidurya gem (*lapis lazuli*) there exist many forms in the Lord. Though possessing all these, He is still one, though called by many names. Similarly, though the Lord has many qualities and has manifold modes of manifestation yet His essential attribute and form is one.

**Doubt :** Now arises the doubt : Should this *manifoldness*, taught in the Śruti, and depending upon the manifoldness of His attribute and of His essential forms, be an object of meditation or not ? The question arises, should a person meditate on the manifoldness (Bahutva) of the Lord or not ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** This Bahutva or manifoldness should not be meditated upon in every devotional exercise, that is to say, that the attribute of the Lord as appearing manifold (His Bahutva attribute) should not be meditated upon in every Upâsanâ, because there is conflict in such meditation, as has been explained in Sūtra III., 3. 12. Attributes like bliss, etc., may be well combined in all meditations on the Lord, but the attribute of multiety is incongruous with the idea of unity. When meditating on the Lord as *one*, it is impossible to think of Him as *many*. Unity and plurality cannot co-exist in the same substance. The Lord should not, therefore, be meditated upon with the attribute of plurality.

**Siddhānta :** This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 59.

भूमः ऋतुवज्ज्यायस्त्वम् तथा हि दर्शयति ॥ ३ । ३ । ५६ ॥

भूमः Bhūmnaḥ, of the plentiful : the multiety ; manifoldness ; infinity. ऋतुवज् Kratuvat, as in the case of sacrifice. ज्यायस्त्वम् Jyāyastvam, pre-eminence. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, because. दर्शयति Darśayati, the scriptures show.

59. The universality (Bhūmā) of the Lord must be meditated upon in every Upāsana, because of its pre-eminence, like the Kratu sacrifice. The text also shows this. —420.

## COMMENTARY

Plurality or manifoldness of conditions, being the highest among all the attributes of the Lord, and like the sacrifice, it being always and everywhere co-existent with God, it must be thought upon in all meditations upon Him. As the Kratu like the Jyotiṣṭoma sacrifice, is a *sacrifice* even in the beginning when the sacrificer undertakes it and is initiated into it, and remains a sacrifice when the sacrificer has finished it by taking his final bath, and as this conception of Kratu is the most important ingredient in every sacrifice and is present in every one of them. Similarly, in all the attributes of the Lord appertaining to His essential nature, this quality of Bahutva or much-ness is inherent and every attribute of the Lord has it. It must be meditated upon in every worship of the Lord. In other words, every attribute of the Lord is infinitely great and manifold, thus Bahutva or manifoldness runs through every attribute of the Lord ; thus as Kratu-ness runs through every sacrifice, beginning from its very inception called Dikṣā and ending with the final bath called Avabhṛtha. This is illustrated by the text of the scriptures also. The Śruti shows in the well-known Bhūmā passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad that every attribute of the Lord has this quality of Bhūmā in it ; for Bhūmā or much-ness is an invariable concomitant of every attribute belonging to the Lord. See Chhând. Up., VII., 23. 1 :

यो वै भूमा तद् सुखं नारूपे सुखमस्ति भूमेव सुखम् ॥

“That which is Bhūmā that is happiness. There is no happiness in the finite, etc.” The text further teaches that Bhūmā must be meditated upon everywhere, for without such meditation, the eternity of Karma could not be established.



*Adhikaraṇa XXX.*

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Is meditation on these many forms of one nature or of different nature ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The object of meditation being the same in its essential nature, all meditations must be of one kind.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 60.

नानाशब्दादिभेदात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ६० ॥

नाना Nānā, of different sorts. शब्दादि Śabda-ādi, of the terms and others. भेदात् Bhedāt, due to the variety.

60. The meditation is separate and diverse for each form of the Lord, because of the difference of the words and the rest.—421.

## COMMENTARY

In these forms the meditation is indeed of various kinds. In other words, it is different for every form. Why do we say so ? Because there is a difference of words, etc. Thus the meditation on Nṛsiṃha is different from meditation on Śrī Kṛṣṇa, because the words Nṛsiṃha and Kṛṣṇa are different, because the Mantras of Kṛṣṇa and Nṛsiṃha are different, because these forms are also different, and their ritual of worship is also different. So also we find in the Smṛti :

कृतं त्रेता द्वापरञ्च कलिरित्येषु केशवः ।

नाना वर्णमिधाकारो नानैवविधिनेज्यते ॥

Keśava is worshipped in different modes, with different rituals, in the Kṛta, Tretā Dvāpara and Kali ages. He assumes different colours, according to the Yuga, and has different forms and names.

Therefore, the ritual is not the same in meditating on the different forms of the Lord. The Pūjās are different.

*Adhikaraṇa XXXI.*

It has been said above that meditations are of different sorts, according to the nature of forms meditated upon, such as whether it is the form of Nṛsiṃha, etc.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt, whether the worshipper of a particular form, should combine with his worship the meditation on other forms also, or is such combination optional to him.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : There is no reason why meditation on all these forms should be optional. They must be combined.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra sets aside this view.

SŪTRA III., 3. 61.

विकल्पोऽविशिष्टफलत्वात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ६१ ॥

विकल्पः Vikalpah, there is an opinion, *i.e.*, restriction to one particular form, which once chosen must be stuck to. अविशिष्ट Avīṣiṣṭa, not special, similar, the same. फलत्वात् Phalatvât, because the fruit is.

61. There is option (to choose one form and stick to it), because there is no greater excellence of fruit obtained by meditating on all.—422.

## COMMENTARY

There is option in their meditation and Pūjâ. There is no such latitude allowed that one should worship Nṛsiṃha for some time, Râmachandra for a few days after that, and Kṛṣṇa then. One must make his option and stick to that particular form of Upâsanâ and Pūjâ, which has been taught to him by his Guru, and which belongs to the order of Good Men with whom he is brought up. For Guru and the Good Company are the environments in which the soul is placed by the Lord, and he cannot change the particular mode taught to him. Why? Because the fruit of all meditations is the same, namely, all worships lead to the realisation of Mokṣa. If perfection is obtained through one form of Pūjâ, what is the necessity of constantly changing the forms of Pūjâ? Though in a previous Sūtra it has already been mentioned that one must follow one mode of worship, yet the same statement is made here again, in order to show that the Ekântin Bhakta is the highest, and thus there is no tautology here.

## Adhikarāṇa XXXII.

It has been mentioned just now, that necessary Pūjâs, as those of Nṛsiṃha and the rest, the fruit of which is Mokṣa or release, must be performed by the man, during the whole period of his life, for such is the duty of Ekântins. These Nitya pūjâs must not be changed, but should remain uniform throughout one's whole life. But there are Kâmya pūjâs or worships made with the object of gaining some particular fruit, such as fame, victory, fortune, etc., and such modes of Upâsanâ of Brahman are taught in the Upaniṣads like the Bṛhadaranyaka, etc. In the case of such Kâmya pūjâs there arises the following doubt.

**Doubt :** Should the meditation on Brahman vary with the particular desire to be gained, or must one pray to his tutelary Deity (Iṣṭa) alone for the acquisition of any particular object?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The meditation must be of one particular form in order to obtain all desires : and the form must not change. Because as there is no distinction in the various Nitya meditations on Brahman, all lead to Mukti, there being no necessity of changing from one to another, so the worship of one form can confer all desires also. There is no option to change.

*Siddhānta* : With regard to Kāmya pūjās, there is no such strict rule and more latitude is allowed.

SŪTRA III., 3. 62.

काम्यास्तु यथाकामं समुच्चीयेन्न वा पूर्वहेत्वभावात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ६२ ॥

काम्याः Kāmyāḥ, aiming at objects of desire. तु Tu, but. यथाकामम् Yathā-kāmam, according to one's liking. समुच्चीयेन्न Samuchchayeran, may cumulate. न Na, not. वा Vā, or. पूर्व Pūrvā, the former. हेतु Hetu, reason अभावात् Abhāvāt, on account of the absence of.

62. But in the case of Kāmya devotion, one may, according to his wish, worship any other deity for the fulfilment of that particular desire, or he may worship even his Iṣṭa deity for getting it. Because there is absence here of the reason which existed in the case of the first. —423.

COMMENTARY

In Kāmya meditations, where the object to be gained is not the realisation of Brahman but the attainment of fruits, like fame, etc., one is at liberty to worship any form, or one form, from which he can gain his object. That is to say, a worshipper of Nṛsiṃha may worship other forms of the Lord in order to obtain some particular fruit, like fame, etc., or may worship the Nṛsiṃha form itself, even for the purposes of getting Kāmya fruits. Why ? Because the reason of the last aphorism does not hold good here. As the fruits to be obtained are different here, different forms may be worshipped in order to gain those fruits. So long as there exists a desire to get the particular fruit, all those meditations and Pūjās must be performed which are calculated to give that fruit more expeditiously. But if a man has no such desire, he need not perform any other worship, but that of his particular Pūjā. The sense of the whole is this. A person striving after release, a *Mumukṣu*, must always stick to the worship and meditation of one particular form, but if he is ever in need of getting some lower object, even then also he must ask his God for that object. He must never worship any lower deities

in order to get any lower object, for Hari can give every object to His worshipper. As says the Smṛti :

अकामः सर्वकामो वा मोक्षकाम उदारधीः ।  
तीव्रेण भक्तियोगेन यजेत पुरुषं परम् ॥

The wise, broad-minded aspirant after release, must always worship the Highest Person alone, with the intense Yoga of Bhakti, whether he desires nothing or desires everything.

Thus has been explained the meditation on the various forms of the Lord, with various Mantras consisting of ten syllables, etc. All Kāmya pūjās may be performed either optionally or collectively.

*Note :* See Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī for the various Mantras deduced from the 18-syllabled Mantra, Kṛm Kṛṣṇāya Gopījanavallabhāya Svāhā. The 10-syllabled Mantra is Gopījanavallabhāya Svāhā. This is the favourite Mantra which Indra recites. The 16-syllabled Mantra is Om namaḥ Kṛṣṇāya Devakīputrāya huṃ phaḥ svāhā, etc.

### Adhikaraṇa XXXIII.

In the previous part there has been explained meditation on the spiritual attributes of the Lord. Now is commenced the topic teaching meditation on the various members of the body of the Lord. In the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī Upaniṣad towards the end, Brahmā says :

“I propitiate with highest praise that one Govinda whose form is existence, intelligence and bliss, whose Mantra consists of five words, who is seated always under the Kalpa tree in Brndāvana and is surrounded by forty-nine Maruts.” (Then follow twelve verses of praise) reciting the various attributes, mostly bodily, of the Lord.

नमो विश्वरूपाय विश्वस्थित्यन्तहेतवे ।

विश्वेश्वराय विश्वाय गोविन्दाय नमो नमः ॥ १ ॥

नमो विज्ञानरूपाय परमानन्दरूपिणे ।

कृष्णाय गोपीनाथाय गोविन्दाय नमो नमः ॥ २ ॥

नमो कमलनेत्राय नमः कमलमालिने ।

नमः कमलनाभाय कमलापतये नमः ॥ ३ ॥

बर्हिपीडाभिरामाय रामायाकुण्ठमेषने ।

रमामानसहंसाय गोविन्दाय नमो नमः ॥ ४ ॥

कंसवंशविनाशाय केशिचागूरुघातिने ।

वृषभध्वजवन्धाय पार्थसारथये नमः ॥ ५ ॥

वेणुवादनशीलाय गोपालायाहिमर्दिने ।

कालिन्दीकूललोलाय लोलकुण्डलधारिणे ॥ ६ ॥

बह्वीनयनाम्भोजमालिने नृत्यशालिने ।

नमः प्रणतपालाय श्रीकृष्णाय नमो नमः ॥ ७ ॥

नमः पापप्रणाशाय गोवर्धनधराय च ।

पूतनाजीवितान्ताय तृणावर्तासुहारिणे ॥ ८ ॥

निष्कलाय विमोहाय शुद्धायाशुद्धवैरिणे ।

अद्वितीयाय महते श्रीकृष्णाय नमो नमः ॥ ९ ॥

प्रसीद परमानन्द प्रसीद परमेश्वर ।

आधिष्ठ्याधिसुजगेन दष्टम् मामुद्धर प्रभो ॥ १० ॥

श्रीकृष्ण रुक्मिणीकान्त गोपीजनमनोहर !

संसारसागरे मग्नं मामुद्धर जगद्गुरो ॥ ११ ॥

केशव क्लेशहरण नारायण जनार्दन ।

गोविन्द परमानन्द मां समुद्धर माधव ॥ १२ ॥

1. All hail to Him whose form is the universe, and who is the cause of the sustenance and dissolution of the universe : who is the Lord of the universe and who is the universe, hail, hail to Govinda !

2. All hail to Him whose form is Intelligence, and consists of the highest Bliss ! Hail to Kṛṣṇa, the Lord of the Gopis, hail, hail to Govinda !

3. All hail to Him whose eyes are like lotus, who has a garland of lotus ; hail to Him from whose navel grows the world-lotus, hail to the Lord of the Lotus-born (Kamalā) !

4. All hail to Him who is adorned with the diadem of peacock feathers, to Rāma of the unobstructed Intelligence : hail to the Heart's delight of Rāmā (Sṛī), hail, hail to Govinda !

5. All hail to the Destroyer of the brood of Kaiṁsa, to the Slayer of Keśin and Chāṇūra ; hail to the Adored one of the Bull-bannered Śiva : hail to the Charioteer of Pārtha (Arjuna.)

6. All hail to the Player on the flute, to the Cow-herd, the Bruiser of the head of the snake, to the Sporter on the banks of the Kāṁdī Yamuna, hail to the Wearer of the dancing ear-rings !

7. All hail to the Beloved of the cow-maids (of Bṛndāvana), the master-Dancer : hail to the Protector of His devotees, hail, hail to Lord Kṛṣṇa !

8. All hail to the Destroyer of sin, to the Uplifter of the Govardhana, to the Ender of the life of Pītānā, to the Killer of Trṇāvarta !

9. All hail to the Partless, to the Delusion-less, to the Pure, the Enemy of the impure ; to the Secondless, to the Great, hail, hail to Lord Kṛṣṇa !

10. Be gracious, O Supreme Bliss ! be gracious, O Supreme Lord ! Save me, O Master me, bitten by the serpent of Desire and Disease.

11. O Sṛī Kṛṣṇa ! O Beloved of Rukmīṇī ! O Stealer of the hearts of the cow-maids ! O World Teacher ! save me from being drowned in the ocean of Samsāra (world).

12. O Keśava ! O Remover of pain ! O Nārāyaṇa ! O Janārdana ! O Govinda ! O Supreme Bliss ! O Mādhava ! save me.

In the above verses, the various members of the body of the Lord are described as having certain attributes ; such as His eyes are like lotus with a compassionate gaze in them, the mouth is smiling and sounding a flute, His head is adorned with a crown of peacock feathers, His

movements are slow and dignified, His intelligence is uninterrupted, and He is an expert in singing and dancing.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Are these attributes of smiling face, compassionate gaze, etc., to be separately meditated upon or not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : They should not be meditated upon separately because there is no higher reward in such meditation, and because the highest end of man (namely, Mukti) is obtained by meditating on the universal attributes of the Lord, such as His omniscience, omnipotence and the rest; and so the charms of His personal appearance, costume, gestures, movements, etc., need not be meditated upon.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 63.

अङ्गेषु यथाश्रयभावः ॥ ३ । ३ । ६३ ॥

अङ्गेषु Aṅgeṣu, in the limbs of the Lord. यथाश्रय Yathāśraya, according to the fitness of the place, or the limb. भावः Bhāvaḥ, the assuming of the mood, the meditation on the aspects.

63. Meditation appropriate to each member of the body should also be performed.—424.

COMMENTARY

In the various members, such as the mouth, the eyes, etc., the qualities and gestures appropriate to them, must be thought of or meditated upon. The particular member, described as having a particular quality, must always be meditated upon with that quality. In forming the mental image of the Lord, the face must be thought of as smiling and speaking sweet words; the eyes as having a compassionate and benevolent gaze, and so on.

SŪTRA III., 3. 64.

शिष्टैश्च ॥ ३ । ३ । ६४ ॥

शिष्टैः Śiṣṭaiḥ, by those who are taught. च Cha, and.

• 64. And because Brahmā taught such meditation to His disciples in the Gopāla Tāpanî Upaniṣad.—425.

COMMENTARY

At the end of His verses of praise in the Gopāla Pūrvā Tāpanî, Brahmā says, "With these verses I praise and worship the Lord" :

अथ हैवं स्तुतिभिराराधयामि । ते यूयं तथा पञ्चपदे जपन्तः ध्यायन्तः संसृतिं तरिष्यथ इति स होवाच हैरययः ।

I propitiate even now Kṛṣṇa, with these verses. You also follow my advice, and as I always recite the five-worded Mantra, so you also reciting that five-worded Mantra and meditating on Śrī Kṛṣṇa, will verily cross over this ocean of worldly existence, the cycle of births and deaths.

Thus said Brahmā to the sages.

Thus Brahmā Himself teaches the sages to meditate on the attributes of the various members of the Lord's body. Therefore, the personal charms of the Lord must also be meditated upon.

*Objection* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, I., 6. 7., only the compassionate gaze of the Lord is described, no other members are specified therein :

तस्य यथा कप्यासं पुंडरीकमेवमक्षिणी तस्योदिति नाम स एष सर्व्वेभ्यः पाप्मभ्य उदित उदेति इ वे सर्व्वेभ्यः पाप्मभ्यो य एवं वेद ॥ ७ ॥

His two eyes are like fresh lotus. His (mystic) name is Ut उत for he has risen (Udita) above all sins. He also, who knows this, rises verily above all sins.

This description of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is defective, because it mentions only the eyes of the Lord, and is silent upon other parts. The objection so raised is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 3. 65.

समाहारात् ॥ ३ । ३ । ६५ ॥

समाहारात् Samâhârât, on account of expressing collectively ; all-comprehensive.

65. (There is no discrepance in the statement of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad) because the description there (is collective and) all-comprehensive, (meant to include other members also).  
—426.

COMMENTARY

The word Na, "not" is to be drawn into this Sūtra from III., 3. 67., namely, from the third Sūtra from this. It is to be read not only in this Sūtra, but in the next also. Since the description of other members of the body of the Lord must be supposed to have been described in a single description of the eyes in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, there is no defectiveness in that Upaniṣad. The compassionate gaze mentioned in this Chhândogya Upaniṣad is illustrative of all the other attributes, such as sweet speaking, etc. A kindly look is an all-comprehensive attribute, including the rest.

In the next Sūtra, the Pûrvapakṣin raises an objection to the effect, why should a particular member be thought of with a particular attribute, and why not every member be imagined as having every attribute ? The next Sūtra, therefore, is a Pûrvapakṣa Sūtra, and will be refuted later on.

SŪTRA III., 3. 66.

गुणसाधारण्यश्रुतेश्च ॥ ३ । ३ । ६६ ॥

गुण Guṇa, of the qualities. साधारण्य Sādhāraṇya, about the common-ness. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, from the statement of the Vedas. च Cha, and. It includes the combination of all Guṇas.

66. (Every member of the Lord's body must be meditated upon as possessing the attribute of the other member), because of the text which says that there is a common-ness of attributes, (with regard to the members of the Lord's body).—427.

COMMENTARY

The texts like "everywhere THAT hath hands and feet, etc."—(Gītā, XIII., 14.) show that every member of the body of the Lord can discharge the function of every other member. So every member may be meditated upon with the attribute of any other member. (Such as His eyes may be meditated upon as grasping the whole world, and His hands as seeing the whole universe). The Smṛti texts, like the following, also declare that every member of the body of the Lord has the power of discharging all the functions of all the senses:

अङ्गानि यस्य सकलेन्द्रियवृत्तिमन्ति ।  
पश्यन्ति यान्ति क्लृप्तयन्ति तथा जगन्ति ॥

Whose every member of the body possesses the function of all the senses, such as seeing, drinking, hearing, moving, holding, etc.

Therefore, there is no restrictive rule that any particular member of the Lord's body should be meditated upon with any particular attribute. The word "Cha" indicates that all Guṇas may also be so included.

*Siddhānta* : The objection raised in this Sūtra is answered in the next.

SŪTRA III., 3. 67.

न वा तत्सहभावाश्रुतेः ॥ ३ । ३ । ६७ ॥

न Na, not. वा Vā, rather, surely, only. तत् Tat, their. सहभाव Sahabhāva, being together. अश्रुतेः Aśruteḥ, there being no declaration of this Śruti.

67. It is not so. (A particular member should be meditated upon with its own peculiar attribute), because there is no text declaring that it may be meditated upon with (the attributes belonging to the other members).—428.



## COMMENTARY

The force of Vâ in the Sûtra is to indicate exclusion. The universality of attributes must not be meditated upon in any particular member. Why? Because there is not any text describing attributes other than those appropriate to those particular members. Therefore, qualities belonging to other members not being described with regard to any particular member, must not be meditated upon when meditating on that particular member. The text like "every part of His body is a hand, every part a foot and eye and ear, etc." only declare the omnipotence of the Lord, and that all the powers of the Lord exist in every portion of His body. It is not meant to teach incongruous *meditation*.

SŪTRA III., 3. 68.

दर्शनाच्च ॥ ३ । ३ । ६८ ॥

दर्शनात् Darśanât, because it is so seen in the world. च Cha, and.

68. And because it is so seen (and it is more natural meditating in this way).—429.

## COMMENTARY

It is more natural to think that the eyes see, ears hear, hands grasp, and so on. (It is not natural to conceive that the eyes are hearing, the ears are seeing and the feet are talking. Though in the case of the Lord all these things are possible, yet there need not be any unnatural meditation, even in the case of the Lord).

---

### THIRD ADHYĀYA.

#### FOURTH PĀDA.

##### *Adhikaraṇa I.*

श्रद्धावेश्मन्यास्तृते सच्छ्रमायैर्

वैराग्योद्यदित्तिमिहासनाढ्ये ।

धर्मप्राकारञ्चिते सर्वदात्री

प्रेषा विष्णोर्भाति विद्येश्वरीयम् ॥

In the temple of faith, carpeted with good conduct and good thoughts, adorned with the throne of knowledge, produced by Vairāgya, surrounded by the rampart of religion, behold there shines this Divine Goddess called Vidyā, the best beloved of Viṣṇu and the giver of all desires.

In the previous Pāda, Vidyā and her concomitants appertaining to Brahman and denoted by the words like meditation and worship, have been described. In the present chapter it will be shown, that Vidyā is independent of Karman; and that the latter is subordinate to her, and that the followers of Vidyā are of three kinds and so on. According to the difference of determination (Kratu), the seekers of Vidyā are of three sorts. The first kind is called Sanīṣṭha, namely, those who discharge with faith, the duties of their stage of life (Āśrama) and class (Varṇa), with the desire of seeing the varieties of different worlds (such as those belonging to Indra and other higher Devas). The second class is called Parinīṣṭhitas. They also perform, with equal devotion and faith, the duties of their Varṇa and Āśrama; not with the object of going to the different worlds in order to see the wonderful working of the Lord therein, but merely for the sake of the society in which they live, and to uphold its traditions, and to maintain its continuity. Both these classes of devotees belong to the order of householders. The third class are called Nirapekṣas or Sannyāsis. Their minds have been purified by truth, austerity, prayers, etc., performed in their past life; and hence in the present life, they do not belong to any order (Āśrama). Such are those who are totally indifferent to worldly life. Thus devotees of Vidyā are classified into these three divisions.

The author first establishes the independence of Vidyā from Karman or formal religion.

*Viṣaya* : We find in the Upaniṣads texts like the following :

तरति शोकमात्मवित् ( Chh. Up., VII., 1. 3 ).

ब्रह्मविदामोति परम् ( Taitt. Up., II., 1. 1 ).

The knower of Ātman crosses over all griefs.

The knower of Brahman obtains the highest.

So also in the Kāṭha Upaniṣad, II., 16 :

एतद्व्येवाक्षरं ज्ञात्वा यो यदिच्छति तस्य तत् ।

Knowing this Akṣara verily one obtains whatever he desires.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Is Vidyā the cause of release alone ? Or of heavenly worlds also ?

*Pūrvaśloka* : The wise, free from all desires, do not wish for heaven-worlds, and consequently Vidyā is the cause of release alone.

*Siddhānta* : In the next Sūtra it will be shown that through Vidyā one can get Svarga also, if he so desires.

SŪTRA III., 4. 1.

पुरुषार्थोऽतः शब्दादिति च बादरायणः ॥ ३ । ४ । १ ॥

पुरुष-अर्थः Puruṣa-arthaḥ, the object of man's attainment, a man's benefit, i.e., knowledge of God. अतः Atah, from this, from this Vidyā. शब्दात् Śabdāt, because the Scriptures state so. इति Iti, so. बादरायणः Bādarāyaṇaḥ, Bādarāyana holds.

1. Bādarāyana holds the view that from this Vidyā, a man obtains all the objects of his desire, because there are words to that effect in the Scriptures.—430.

COMMENTARY

All the objects of man's desire, namely, Dharma (religious merit), Artha (worldly prosperity), Kāma (enjoyment), Mokṣa (release), are obtained from this Vidyā alone. This is the view of Bādarāyana. Why ? Śabdāt. Because of the word. Because of the texts like those quoted above, which show that through Vidyā ('Yo yad icchhati tasya tat') whatever one desires that he gets. The Lord Hari, being pleased with the devotion (Vidyā) of His Bhaktas, gives even his ownself to his devotees. Like Kardama or others, though having desire for other fruits, the Lord gives them that fruit, on account of Vidyā alone, which serves the same purpose as if it was a formal religious Karma.

Here Jaimini comes forward with his following objections.

*Adhikaraṇa II.*

SŪTRA III., 4. 2.

शेषत्वात्पुरुषार्थवार्थवादो यथान्येष्विति जैमिनिः ॥ ३ । ४ । २ ॥

शेषत्वात् Śeṣatvāt, because of the remaining of the Karma, i.e., the performance of the duties. पुरुष Puruṣa, about a man, अर्थवादः Arthavādaḥ, an arthavāda. यथा Yathā, as. अन्येषु Anyeṣu, in the case of others. इति Iti, so. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini holds.

2. On account of Vidyā standing in the supplementary relation to Karma, the statements as to the fruits of Vidyā are glorificatory only, regarding the person performing Karma. They are like other glorificatory passages. This is the opinion of Jaimini.--431.

COMMENTARY

The Jīva himself enters on the performance of Karmas in the shape of worshipping the Lord, as taught by the Lord, after he has understood the essential nature of Viṣṇu, the object of worship; and of His individual self, the worshipper. Through these works he becomes purified of all sins, and obtains the fruits in the shape of Svarga or Mokṣa, the enjoyment of heavenly pleasures or the attainment of release, through the unseen principle called Adṛṣṭa. Vidyā being, therefore, subordinate to Karma, standing to it in the relation of a complement, the fruits mentioned regarding the results of Vidyā in the Scriptures are to be considered as mere descriptive passages, glorifying Karma and showing its relation to Puruṣa. Such texts, therefore, which teach special results of Vidyā, are mere Arthavādas, like other Arthavādas relating to the substance (Dravya), or to the purification of the substance (Saṁskāra) or to subordinate acts themselves (Karma). These Arthavādas or glorificatory passages are not to be taken in their literal sense. Jaimini in his Sūtras thus propounds this doctrine :

“Dravya-saṁskāra-karmaṣu parārthatvāt phalaśrutir arthavādaḥ syāt.” IV., 3. 1.

Because materials, the operations performed upon them, and subordinate acts subserve other acts, the description of a fruit in connection with any of them is a mere Arthavāda or glorification.

*Note:* In performing a sacrifice materials are used, their purpose being described. The sacrificial materials are operated upon, and the purpose or the fruit of this is described. Subordinate acts are performed in the course of a sacrifice—a main act; and their fruit is also described. The descriptions of such fruits are mere re-statements; because the materials, the way in which they are operated upon, and subordinate acts subserve the main act.

Thus, the following are Arthavādas relating to sacrificial materials. “He whose sacrificial ladle is made of the wood of *Acacia catechu* takes for his offerings the juice of metres. His offerings are juicy. He, whose sacrificial ladle (Juhu) is made of the wood of *Buta Frondosa*, never hears bad tidings. He, whose sacrificial ladle (Upabhr̥t) is made of the wood of *Ficus Religiosa*, secures fruit by means of knowledge. He, whose sacrificial vessel for clarified butter is made of the wood of *Vaikāṅkata*—his offerings are stable then he obtains children. These are the forms of a sacrificial ladle (Śruṣa). He, who has a ladle of this form, obtains cattle of this kind, and his children are not born ugly. —*Taittirīya Saṁhita*, III., 5. 6. 7. 3.

The following extracts show the glorifications of Saṁskāra.

"He covers the eye of his enemies by means of that collyrium which he puts in his eyes" (*Ibid.*, VI, 1. 1. 5). "He cleans his teeth. He gets his beard and head shaved. He gets his nails pared. The hair on the head and the beard, being dead skin, are unfit for sacrifice. Then removing this dead skin unfit for sacrifice and being qualified to perform it, he begins it. He bathes" (*Ibid.*, VI, 1. 1. 2). The following extract shows glorification of Karma :—"When he makes the offerings called Prayâja and Anuyâja, he makes a coat of mail for sacrifice. He makes this coat for the sacrificer to overcome his enemies."—(*Ibid.*, II, 6. 1. 5).

Thus a person performing throughout his whole life the duties of a householder, such as sacrifices and the rest, and who is endowed with the moral virtues of the control of conduct or thought, etc., is mentioned in the scriptures as attaining Brahman, in the texts like the following :

आचार्यकुलाद्वैतमधीत्य यथाविधानं गुरोः कर्मातिशेषेणाभिसमावृत्य कुटुम्बे शुचौ देशे स्वाध्यायमधीयानो धार्मिकान्विदधदात्मनि सर्वेन्द्रियाणि सम्प्रतिष्ठाप्याहिं० सन्तसत्त्वंभूतान्यन्यत्र तीर्थेभ्यः स खल्वेवं वर्तयन्वा-  
वदायुषं ब्रह्मलोकमभिसम्पद्यते न च पुनरावर्तते न च पुनरावर्तते ॥ १ ॥

One should learn the Veda in the family of his teachers and making presents to his Gurn, according to law, and doing his works fully, one should return home and enter into household life. In a sacred spot he should recite the holy scriptures, and perform good deeds concentrating all his senses on the Supreme Self, he should not injure any living creature except in sacrifices. He verily thus passing his life attains on death the world of Brahman and never returns therefrom, never returns therefrom—(Chhand. Up., VIII., 15. 1).

So also in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, III., 8. 9, we find : (See III., 4. 35 below) :

वर्णाश्रमाचारवता पुरुषेण परः पुमान् ।

विष्णुराराध्यते पन्था नान्यत् तत् तोषकारणम् ॥

Viṣṇu, the highest Person, should be worshipped by a man who is devoted to the duties of his castes and stage of life. There is no other way which can cause his satisfaction.

These passages show that Karma or Pūjā of the Lord is a lifelong duty, and should never be renounced. Karma being thus the main duty of humanity, all passages describing the fruits of Vidyā must be understood as glorificatory only in the sense that Vidyā only fits a man to perform these works better and hence it is subordinate to Karma. There are other passages like those quoted above showing the pre-eminence of Karma. No doubt, there are texts teaching the renunciation of Karma, but they must be explained as applying to the blind and the cripple and such like persons, who are not entitled by law to perform Pūjās and sacrifices. For such persons renunciation is the best means of reaching heaven.

The next Sūtra gives another reason for holding that the knowledge of the Self is a subordinate member of Karma or Pūjā.

SŪTRA III., 4. 3.

आचारदर्शनात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ३ ॥

आचारदर्शनात् Āchāra-darśanāt, such conduct being seen.

3. Because the practice of the best of the wise men shows that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma.—4:32.

COMMENTARY

The following texts show that great men like Janaka and the rest, used to perform sacrifices, though they had acquired Ātma Vidyā. For example, Janaka is described in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III., 1. 1, as performing a sacrifice :

ॐ ॥ जनको वेदेहो बहुदक्षिणेन यज्ञनेत्रे तत्र ह कुरुपञ्चालानां ब्राह्मणा अभिषमेना बभूवुस्तस्य ह जनकस्य वेदेहस्य विजिज्ञासा बभूव कः स्विदेशां ब्राह्मणानामनूचानतम इति स ह गवां<sup>१७</sup> सहस्रमवरोध दश दश पादा एकैकस्यः शृङ्गयोराबद्धा बभूवुः ॥

Janaka Vaideha (the king of the Videhas) sacrificed with a sacrifice at which many presents were offered to the priests of (the Aśvamedha). Brāhmaṇas of the Kurus and the Pāñchālas had come thither, and Janaka Vaideha wished to know, which of those Brāhmaṇas was the best read. So he enclosed a thousand cows and ten Pādas (of gold) were fastened to each pair of horns.

Similarly, in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, we find Aśvapati, the king of the Kekayas, performing sacrifices, though he was a master of Brahma Vidyā and taught Brāhmaṇas who had gone to him to learn the Brahma Vidyā. (Chhând. Up., V., 11. 5).

तेभ्यो ह प्रप्तेभ्यः पृथग्दर्हाणि कारयांचकार स ह प्रातः संजिहान उवाच न मे स्तेनो जनपदे न कद्र्यो न मयपो नानाहिताग्निर्नाविद्वान् स्वेरी स्वेरिणी कुतो यद्वयमाणा वै भगवन्तोऽहमस्मि यावदेकैकस्मा श्रुतिवजे धनं दास्यामि तावद्भगवद्भ्यो दास्यामि वसन्तु मे भगवन्त इति ॥ ५ ॥

When they arrived, the King caused proper honours to be paid to each of them separately. In the morning, after leaving his bed, he said to them: (What makes you come here? Are you troubled by bad men? But there are no such people in this land). In my Kingdom there is no thief, no miser, no drunkard, no irreligious, no illiterate person, no adulterer, much less an adulteress. (But if you have come to get wealth, then stay, for) I am going to perform a sacrifice, Sirs; and I shall give you, Sirs, as much wealth as I give to each R̥tvij priest. So stay here please.

This shows that the best among the learned and wise men of old used to perform Karma, inspite of their possessing the knowledge of the Self. Had mere knowledge been sufficient for acquiring the final end of man, namely, Release, they would not have exerted themselves uselessly

in the performance of Karma. They would have acted on the maxim, "when honey is to be found in the tree of one's own court-yard, why should one go in search of it to difficult places like mountains?"

SŪTRA III., 4. 4.

तच्छ्रुतेः ॥ ३ । ४ । ४ ॥

तत् Tat, about that. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, there being a direct scriptural statement.

4. Because of the scriptural statement that Vidyā is a subordinate member of Karma.—433.

COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, there is a direct statement to the effect that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma (I., 1. 8) :

तेनोभौ कुरुतो यश्चैतदेवं वेद यश्च न वेद नाना तु विद्या चाविद्या च यदेव विद्यया करोति श्रद्धयोपनिषदा तदेव वीर्यवत्तरं भवतीति खल्वेतन्मैवाक्षरस्योपव्याख्यानं भवति ॥

By the command of that Full and Supremely High Lord called Om, perform ye both His worship, whether ye understand Him thus or ye do not.

But the knowledge and ignorance are different (and opposed to each other). The man who worships the Lord, with knowledge, faith and propriety (to the utmost of his capacity) verily, his worship alone is conducive to endless reward, (not so the worship of the ignorant, whose reward is limited). This is the full explanation of this Ever-present Imperishable Om.

In the above the word Vidyayā (with Vidyā) shows that Vidyā is only a subordinate member of Karma, because it is used in the instrumental case, and an instrumental case always denotes something secondary, just as the words Śraddhayā and Upaniṣadā.

SŪTRA III., 4. 5.

समन्वारम्भणात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ५ ॥

सम्-अनु-आरम्भणात् Sam-anu-ārambhanāt, on account of their taking hold together or being together.

5. Because the Upaniṣad also declares that both Vidyā and Karma take hold of the man after death, and carry him to heavenly regions ; therefore, Vidyā is not independent of Karma.—434.

COMMENTARY

In the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 2, we find that when a man dies, his Vidyā and his Karma take hold of him and carry him forward :

प्राणमनूत्कामन्तः सर्वे प्राणा अनूत्कामन्ति स विज्ञानो भवति स विज्ञानमेवान्ववक्रामति तं विद्याकर्मणा समन्वारमेते पृथ्वं प्रज्ञा च ॥

And when he thus departs, life (the chief Prāṇa) departs after him, and when life thus departs, all the other vital spirits (Prāṇas) depart after it. He is conscious, and being conscious he follows and departs.

Then both his knowledge and his work take hold of him, and his acquaintance with former things

This shows that Vidyā and Karma both co-operate in producing the results, and, therefore, Vidyā is subordinate to Karma.

SŪTRA III., 4. 6.

तद्वतो विधानात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ६ ॥

तद्वतः Tad-vataḥ, of such a one. विधानात् Vidhānāt, there being an injunction.

6. Because there is the command that a person having Vidyā must be appointed to perform Karma, therefore, Vidyā is subordinate to Karma.—435.

COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya Saṁhitā we find :

ब्रह्मिष्ठो ब्रह्मा दर्शयौर्णमास्योस्तं वृणुते ।

He chooses as His Brahmā priest, to perform the full moon and new moon ceremonies, one who knows Brahman.

This shows that performance of the sacrifices requires Brahma Jñāna. Otherwise the Śruti would not have insisted upon the condition that the Brahmā priest must be a Brahmajña. Therefore, the knowledge of Brahman is subordinate to Karma, for such knowledge only entitles a man to become a priest.

SŪTRA III., 4. 7.

नियमाच्च ॥ ३ । ४ । ७ ॥

नियमात् Niyamāt, there being a rule. च Cha, and.

7. Because there is the restrictive rule, that Karma should be performed throughout one's whole life, therefore, Vidyā is subordinate to Karma.—436.

COMMENTARY

In the Isāvāsya Upaniṣad, verse 2, we find :

कुर्वन्नेवेह कर्माणि जिजीविषेच्छतः समाः ।

एवं त्वयि नान्यथेतोऽस्ति न कर्म लिप्यते नरे ॥ २ ॥

Performing works even here, let a man live his allotted hundred years ; thus is it right for thee, not otherwise than this ; Karma will not bind that man.



This rule lays down an injunction of life-long performance of Karma with regard even to that man, who has obtained the knowledge of Ātman.

Some hold that conflicting texts,—(some insisting upon the performance of Karmas, others enjoining their abandonment) —can be reconciled by the view that the performance of Karma is optional for one who has got knowledge of the Self. But this view also is set aside by the above Śruti. The texts, therefore, which teach the abandonment of Karma, have for their scope those persons, who from some bodily defect or other cause, such as blindness, lameness, etc., are not entitled to perform Karma. In fact, abandonment of Karma is strongly denounced in the scriptures. Thus in the Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa we have :

“He who stops sacrifices to the gods by not maintaining the sacred fires, verily becomes a killer of his children. Therefore, Karma must always be performed even by the wise.”

Thus Vidyā being complementary to Karma, is not independent in its action in producing the fruit. In other words, Vidyā alone cannot produce Release.

In the preceding six Sūtras, Jaimini has advanced his reason for maintaining that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma. All these Sūtras form the Pūrvapakṣa. The author now advances his reasons for differing from Jaimini.

### Adhikarṇa III.

SŪTRA III., 4. 8.

अधिकोपदेशात्तु बादरायणस्यैवं तद्दर्शनात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ८ ।

अधिक Adhika, more, different. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, owing to the teaching about. तु Tu, but. बादरायणस्य Bādarāyaṇasya, of Bādarāyaṇa. एवम् Evam, thus. तद् Tad, about that. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of the Śāstric text.

8. Vidyā is greater than Karma, for such is the teaching of Bādarāyaṇa, and because such is to be seen in the scriptures.—437.

#### COMMENTARY

The word “Tu” (but) sets aside the Pūrvapakṣa. It must be understood that Vidyā is greater than Karma, because all Karmas are performed in order to acquire Vidyā; and Vidyā is the principal, and Karma is subordinate to it. Why? Because such is the teaching of Bādarāyaṇa.

Nor is his teaching without authority, because we see scriptural texts as authority for the same. For example, in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 22, we read :

तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणा विविदिषन्ति यजेत दानेन तपसाऽनाशकेनैव विदित्वा मुनिर्भवति एतमेव प्रव्रजिनो लोकमिच्छन्तः प्रव्रजन्ति एतद् स्म ॥

Bṛāhmaṇas seek to know him by the study of the Veda, by sacrifice, by gifts, by penance, by fasting, and he who knows him, becomes a Muni. Wishing for that world (of Brahman) only, mendicants leave their homes.

The above texts show that Vidyā is the result of Karma ; and they enjoin Karma not for its own sake, but because Karmas lead to Vidyā. When once the Vidyā arises by the strenuous performance of Karmas, then these Karmas themselves are abandoned, because no longer necessary, after the Vidyā has been obtained ; and because it is a well-known fact that the end is greater than the means. When once the end is accomplished, the means become no longer necessary.

It has been said that excellent men possessing Brahma-Vidyā have been seen performing Karmas, men like King Janaka and Aśvapati, and that, therefore, Vidyā is complementary to Karma. This argument is next being refuted in the following Sūtra.

ŚŪTRA III., 4. 9.

तुल्यं तु दर्शनम् ॥ ३ । ४ । ९ ॥

तुल्यम् Tulyam, the same, similar, equal. तु Tu, but, or entirely. दर्शनम् Darśanam, the Śāstric texts.

9. But there is equal authority against the view that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma in the lives of other eminent men.—438.

COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" is used in order to remove the idea that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma. There is equal authority in the scriptures for the proposition that Vidyā is not subordinate to Karma. Thus there are scriptural passages, such as "Knowing this the Ṛṣis descended from Kavaṣa said : "For what purpose should we study the Vedas, for what purpose should we sacrifice?" Knowing this indeed the Ancient ones did not offer the Agnihotra," and "when Bṛāhmaṇas know that Self and have risen above the desire for sons, wealth, and worlds, they wander about as mendicants." (Bṛ. Up., III. 5).

Thus the sages called Kāvaṣeyās did not care for Karmas, nor did

Yājñavalkya, who abandoning all Karmas, went to the forest. Thus we find examples of eminent men devoted to Vidyā, renouncing all ceremonial Karmas. Therefore, scriptural texts are not all one-sided in favour of Karmas, but there are texts to the contrary also. The examples of persons like Janaka and others show, that these men followed Karma, either for the sake of purifying their self or as an example to mankind, and that the social order may be preserved.

The author next answers the objection raised in the Sūtra 4.

SŪTRA III., 4. 10.

असार्वत्रिकी ॥ ३ । ४ । १० ॥

असार्वत्रिकी Asārvatriki, (the Vedic text) is not applicable to all (the Vidyās).

10. The scriptural declaration, Chhândogya Upaniṣad, I., 1. 8, is not of universal application, as supposed by the opponent.  
— 439.

COMMENTARY

The above texts of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (I., 1. 8), is non-comprehensive. It does not refer to all knowledge, but to the Vidyā connected with the subject-matter of the text. The subject-matter there is the Udgitha-vidyā and the text says that if this Udgitha-vidyā is recited by a person with knowledge, then it is more fruitful than if it was recited without such Vidyā. Therefore, Vidyā is not an auxiliary to work in every instance.

The author next answers the objection raised in III., 4. 5.

SŪTRA III., 4. 11.

विभागः शतवत् ॥ ३ । ४ । ११ ॥

विभागः Vibhāgaḥ, there is a division (of the fruits of Vidyā and Karma). शतवत् Śatavat, just as in the case of a hundred (coins).

11. The distribution of Vidyā and Karma is to be made in the above passage of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 2), like the distribution of a hundred coins.—440.

COMMENTARY

The fruits of Vidyā and of Karma are different and the above passage of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, must be taken in a distributive sense. Vidyā produces one fruit, while Karma produces another fruit. This is like the

distribution of a hundred coins. A man by selling a cow and a goat obtains hundred coins. It does not mean that both sold for equal amounts of 50 coins each, but we must distribute the hundred coins according to the natural value of these animals; namely, that the cow fetched 90 coins, and the goat 10 coins. Therefore, when the Scripture says that both Vidyā and Karma take hold of the man; it means that both produce their results according to their innate qualities: but the fruits of both are not equal.

The author next answers the objection raised in Sūtra III., 4. 6.

SŪTRA III., 4. 12.

अध्ययनमात्रवतः ॥ ३ । ४ । १२ ॥

अध्ययन-मात्र-वतः Adhyayana-mātra-vataḥ, of him who has merely studied the Vedas.

12. The word Brahmiṣṭha, "devoted to Brahman," as used in the passage quoted by the Pūrvapakṣin, does not mean one who has realised Brahman, but one who has merely read the Brahman (the Veda).—441.

#### COMMENTARY

When the Taittiriya Śruti says that a Brahmiṣṭha is to be chosen as a priest to fill the office of Brahmā, it does not mean that the one who knows Brahman must be chosen for that office, but it means that one who has read the Vedas and studied them well, must be selected for the office of Brahmā. In other words, it says that Brahmā's office must be held by a *learned* Brāhmaṇa and not merely by one who is *dexterous* in doing the ritual or chanting the hymns. That text, therefore, is not in favour of the proposition that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma. In fact, the word "Brahmiṣṭha" in the above passage, is to be translated as "one who is well-versed in Brahman," where the word Brahman means the "Vedas," and not the highest Self. Because a person who has realised Brahman, the Supreme Self, is described repeatedly in the scriptures as being above all Karmas (Naiṣkarmya). Therefore, one who has mastered the Vedas; namely, knows the words of the Vedas exactly as they are and who constantly recites them without any selfish object, not wishing to gain money or wealth by such learning, is called a Brahmiṣṭha. The force of the affix "Iṣṭha" in Brahmiṣṭha, has this significance here.

Others explain the above passage as merely glorifying Karma. Karmas are so important they say that for its due performance one must be a knower of Brahma. According to this explanation, it is merely a glorificatory passage, and must not be taken in its literal sense.

It has been said above that a person who has merely read the Vedas is entitled to perform Karmas, and not one who has got the knowledge of the Supreme. A man who has no knowledge of the Vedas cannot possibly perform Karmas; and studying the Vedas does not mean to commit them to memory by rote, but to understand its purport also. The Upaniṣads are part of the Vedas; a man who has read the Vedas, must be supposed to have read the Upaniṣads also. And by reading we mean the intelligent understanding of the text. The man who has read the Upaniṣads in this way, must necessarily have realised the Ātman, for the study of the Upaniṣads produces the knowledge of the Self. Taus Vidyā becomes subordinate to Karma.

This objection may be answered thus. Merely mastering the meaning of the words, merely becoming a Śabda-jñānin, does not make a person a knower of Brahman. A man may know the meaning of all the Upaniṣad texts, but he would not become thereby a Brahman, a knower of Brahman. He alone is called a Brahman who has experienced the Brahman, felt the Eternal. The mere utterance of the words, "the honey is sweet," "the honey is sweet," will not give a man a taste of the sweetness of honey, but a man must actually taste it in order to know how sweet is honey. If the mere recitation of the words "the honey is sweet" were enough, then no man would taste honey, and every one would get the exhilaration of spirits by merely such utterance. But we do not see any such results. Therefore, the mere intellectual knowledge produced by the words of the Upaniṣads, is not Brahman-knowledge, and such a person is not a Brahman. Therefore, when Nārada goes to Sanatkumāra and asks him to be taught Brahman-Vidyā, he is asked to recite all that he already knows, in these words. "Tell me first what thou knowest already, then come to Me and I shall tell thee what is beyond that. Then Nārada answers, "I know, Sir, the R̥gveda, the Yajurveda, the Sāmaveda, and the Atharvaveda, the fourth, the Itihāsa-purāṇa, which is a fifth book among the Vedas; the science of ancestors, the science of numbers, the science of Devatās, the science of treasure-finding, the undivided original Veda and its twenty-four branches, the superhuman Deva-sciences, the science of Brahman, the science of ghosts, the science of politics, the science of stars, the science of serpents and Deva-officials (Gandharvas); all this I know, O venerable Sir."

Therefore, Upāsanā is different from verbal knowledge. Mukti, the highest end of man, is obtained by Vidyā, which means knowledge, direct and intuitive, resulting from devotion. And this we find in the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka (Mahānārāyaṇa Upaniṣad, X., 6., Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, III, 2. 6).

वेदान्तविज्ञानसुनिश्चितार्थः संन्यासयोगाद्यतयः शुद्धसत्त्वाः ।

ते ब्रह्मलोकेषु परान्तकाले परामृतात् परिमुच्यन्ति सर्वे ॥ ६ ॥

Having well ascertained the true object, through the knowledge obtained from the study of the Veda, and having purified their nature by renunciation of fruits of action and due performance of duties, the pious dwell in the worlds of Brahmā. And when the period of Brahmā's life approaches to its close, they abandon those Lokas (like Mahar, etc., and crossing the Tattva-sphere, at the end of Brahmā's life) throw away the bondage of Prakṛti and attain all the Highest Mukti.

The verbal knowledge, on the contrary, is, like Vairāgya or indifference, a handmaid of Vidyā or enlightened devotion. As we find in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

तन् ब्रूद्धाना मुनयो ज्ञानवैराग्ययुक्तया ।

पश्यन्त्यात्मनि चात्मानं भक्त्या श्रुतगृहीतया ॥

The sages having firm faith in the Lord and being endowed with wisdom and dispassion. see the Self in the Self. through the devotion arising from studies of the sacred scriptures.

Says an objector : devotion or Bhakti has the form of activity produced by body, speech or mind. With regard to mental activity, namely, meditation, it is possible to have experiences, or intuitive perception. In other words, Dhyāna may be said to be an immediate cognition or Anubhava. But how can the activity of the body and speech, such as Pūjā or the silent repetition of the sacred Mantras be called an Anubhava, or experiencing of truth. To this objection, we reply, that Bhakti or devotion has the form of consciousness of a collection of the essence of the light-giving energy of the Lord (Hlādinī Śakti or gladdening power). In other words, Bhakti means consciousness of intense joy. As it has been said in the Gopāla Tāpanī :

सच्चिदानन्दैकरसे भक्तियोगे तिष्ठति ।

Bhakti consists in the union through love, with the Lord, who is one mass of existence, intelligence and bliss.

If it were not so, it could not be the cause of bringing the Lord under the control of His devotees. This being so, the activities of the bodily functions of the devotee, who is united in identity with the Lord, is a cause of intense joy, just like the hair and figure of the Lord causes joy. Every bodily activity of the devotee, His Pūjā and Archanā, etc., becomes a source of intense joy, and hence these also become Anubhava or immediate experience or perception of the Lord. Thus it follows that it is not only in meditation alone, that spiritual Anubhava takes place, but Bhakti being Anubhava, pure and simple, arises from Pūjā and silent repetition of Mantras also, for they also give rise to intense joy.

*Note :* As the body of the Lord, whose essence consists of pure bliss and intelligence, is all joy, throughout ; His nails, His feet, His hair, etc., are made up all of joy, so every activity of the Bhakta, his dancing, his singing, his Pūjā, his Japa, is all an Anubhava or immediate perception of the Lord ; because the Śruti declares it so. There is no scope for

reasoning here, we cannot say how physical activity can become Anubhava. But the fact is, that it is so, in the case of the Bhakta, and the maxim to be applied is that contained in II., 1. 27 of the Vedānta Sūtras. In matters of Śruti or direct statements of the scriptures, there is no room for reason. Because these are matters which are transcendental and inconceivable.

The author next refutes the Sūtra III., 4. 7.

SŪTRA III., 4. 13.

नाविशेषात् ॥ ३ । ४ । १३ ॥

न Na, not so. अविशेषात् Avišeṣāt, on account of non-specification.

13. There is no specification that a man should perform Karma throughout his whole life, even though he has got enlightenment through Anubhava.—442.

COMMENTARY

The Śruti of the Īśāvāśya does not lay down any such restrictive rule that even the illumined sage must perform Karma throughout his life. Why so? Avišeṣāt. Because there is no specification. The verse 2 of the Īśāvāśya is very general. It does not particularly specify that even an illumined sage must perform Karma. All that it says is "Let one perform Karmas throughout his life." There is nothing to show to what class of people that particular rule is addressed. On the contrary, there are express texts of the Śrutis, which show that immortality is not to be obtained by Karma, but by knowledge alone. Such as the following (Mahānārāyaṇa Upaniṣad of the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, X., 5):

न कर्मणा न प्रजया धनेन त्यागेनैके अमृतत्वमानयुः ।

Not by Karmas (sacrifices) nor by children, nor by wealth can one obtain immortality. It is by renunciation alone that some great-souled beings have obtained immortality.

Thus we have two Śrutis, Īśāvāśya says, "Perform Karmas throughout your life"; the Taittirīyaka says, "Karma does not lead to immortality." Their apparent conflict is to be reconciled by giving them different scopes. One is addressed to the Saniṣṭha devotees, the other to the Nirapekṣa devotees. Now the author gives the real meaning of the Īśāvāśya verse.

SŪTRA III., 4. 14.

स्तुतयेऽनुमतिर्वा ॥ ३ । ४ । १४ ॥

स्तुतये Stutaye, for the purpose of glorification or praise. अनुमतिः, Anumatih, permission. वा Vā, or, indeed.

14. Or the permission to do work throughout one's life, is for the sake of glorifying Vidyā.—443.

COMMENTARY

The force of "Vā" is to denote exclusion, namely, it means "only." The permission given by Īśāvāśya to perform Karmas throughout one's

life has the object of glorifying Vidyā. The context of the Upaniṣad shows this. Vidyā has such a great power, that if a man were to perform Karmas *always throughout his life*, he would not be tainted by them, because his Vidyā counteracts the evil effects of Karma. Thus instead of enjoining Karma throughout one's life, it merely praises Vidyā. Even the second line of that verse also shows the same. It says "thus working, Karma will not bind"; which shows that Karma always has a binding effect. But Vidyā nullifies that effect. Thus it follows that the theory of Jaimini that Vidyā is subordinate to Karma, has no legs to stand upon, and has been refuted.

### Adhikaraṇa IV.

Having established in the previous aphorisms the independence of Vidyā from Karma, the author now describes further the supreme greatness of Vidyā itself. In the Vājasaneyaka Śruti it is thus declared (Bṛih. Up., IV., 4. 23) :

तदेतदृचाभ्युक्तम् । एष नित्यो महिमा ब्राह्मणस्य न वर्धते कर्मणा नो कनीयान् । तस्यैव स्यात्पदवित्तं विदित्वा न लिप्यते कर्मणा पापकेनेति ॥

This has been told by a verse (Rk), "This eternal greatness of the illumined devotee of Brahman does not grow larger by work, nor does it grow smaller. Let a man try to find (know) its trace, for having found (known) it he is not sullied by any evil deed."

**Doubt:** Such being the glory of Vidyā that one having it neither grows great by the performance of Karmas, nor is lessened by its non-performance, there arises the doubt, must such a person act as he likes, or must he conform still to the conventionalities of ordinary life ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** If he acts as he likes, and abandons the performance of the duties enjoined on all men, it is possible that there may be some sin arising from such abandonment ; and so it is not desirable that a Brahman should be a Yatheṣṭāchārin, or one acting as he likes.

**Siddhānta :** The next Sūtra refutes this view, and shows that a Brahman may become a Yatheṣṭāchārin, for he has risen above all social and religious bondage.

SŪTRA III., 4. 15.

कामकारेण वैके ॥ ३ । ४ । १५ ॥

कामकारेण Kāmakāreṇa, with the action according to one's desire. वा Vā, or. एके Eke, some declare or hold.

15. Some hold that a Brahman may act as he desires.—444.



## COMMENTARY

According to one text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad rescension, a Brahman is not touched by the good fruits of the good acts, or the evil consequences of a bad act. He may perform Karma, if he likes, only with the object of giving the rewards of such Karmas to the world in which he lives, for he does not require any Karma for himself. This is how they explain the text "So great is the glory of this Brahma-devoted sage," etc. Therefore, a Brahman may act as he likes, for no sin can taint him. The word Brāhmaṇa used in the above text means "one who has realised Brahman." It follows, therefore, that if a Brahman performs a Karma, ordained by Śāstra, he does not get the reward of that Karma, and if he omits to do any such Karma, he does not get the sin of omission of such Karmas. In fact, he has cut off all relation between him and Karma. So that, the effects of Karma do not touch him. Like the lotus leaf in water, he is not wetted by Karma. And in the burning fire of his Vidyā, all evil effects of the non-performance of Karma are reduced to ashes instantaneously, as a handful of grass thrown into fire. Therefore, this power of acting as he likes, is the great glory of Vidyā. This sense is further enlarged in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 16.

उपमर्दञ्च ॥ ३ । ४ । १६ ॥

उपमर्दम् Upamardam, destruction. च Cha, and.

16. And there is destruction (of all Karmas through Vidyā), (therefore, Vidyā is pre-eminent).—445.

## COMMENTARY

The following texts of the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad and of the Gītā show that Vidyā is not only not subordinate to Karma, but the destroyer of it.

भिद्यते हृदयग्रन्थिश्छिद्यन्ते सर्वशयाः ।

क्षीयन्ते चास्य कर्माणि तस्मिन्दृष्टे परावरे ॥ ८ ॥

The fetter of the heart is broken, all doubts are solved, all his works (and their effects) perish, when He has been beheld who is high and low (cause and effect).—(II., 8).

यथेषांसि समिद्धोऽग्निर्भस्मसात्कुरुतेऽर्जुन ।

ज्ञानाग्निः सर्वकर्माणि भस्मसात्कुरुते तथा ॥ ३७ ॥

As the burning fire reduces fuel to ashes, O Arjuna, so doth the fire of wisdom reduce all actions to ashes.—(Gītā, IV., 37.)

These texts show that Vidyā destroys all Karmas ; therefore, the majesty of Vidyā is pre-eminent. When she can destroy the effects of the half-enjoyed Prārabdha Karmas even, then where is the wonder that after

acquisition of Vidyā, a man may renounce all Karmas ordained by the scriptures, and yet incur no guilt ?

How do you say, (objects the Pūrvapakṣin), that Vidyā destroys Prârabdha Karmas even, for all authors of Śāstras are agreed in the view, that Prârabdha Karmas are destroyed only by suffering, and there is no other method of their destruction admitted by the theologians.

To this we reply, that though the Vidyā has the power of burning to ashes *all* Karmas, yet the illumined sage, who has harmonised his will with that of the Supreme Lord, allows Prârabdha Karmas to continue to produce their effects, in order to carry on the will of the Lord, and to spread His glory in this world. The sage allows the Vidyā to singe the Prârabdha Karmas, but not to reduce them to ashes. Prârabdha Karmas of such a sage are like a half-burnt cloth, which retains its texture, and looks like a cloth ; but which at the slightest touch, falls into pieces. The wise sage is dressed in such a Prârabdha Karma, and carries on the activities generated by such Karma. This is what is meant by the phrase that the Prârabdha Karma is destroyed only by enjoyment. The author of the Sūtra will himself explain this further in IV., 1. 15.

SŪTRA III., 4. 17.

उद्ध्वरेतःसु च शब्दे हि ॥ ३ । ४ । १७ ॥

उद्ध्वरेतःसु Ūrdhva-retahsu, of those who observe perpetual celibacy. च Cha, and. शब्दे Śabde, in the Upaniṣad text. हि Hi, because.

17. In the case of the celibates, the scripture itself describes their freedom from all Karmas, when they get Vidyā. Therefore, Vidyā is superior to Karma,—446.

COMMENTARY

In the case of those particular kind of Pariniṣṭhita devotees, who observe the vow of perpetual celibacy, and who are possessed of mighty Vidyā, the scriptures mention that they are above the bondage of Karma, and may perform actions or renounce them at their will. That also shows that we must admit that Vidyā is independent of Karma. The scriptural text referred to in this Sūtra is the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III., 5. 1.

अथ हैनं कहोलः कौपीतकेयः पप्रच्छ याज्ञवल्क्येति होवाच यदेव साक्षादपरोक्षाद्ब्रह्म य आत्मा सर्वान्तरस्तं मे व्याचक्ष्वेत्येष त आत्मा सर्वान्तरः कतमो याज्ञवल्क्य सर्वान्तरो योऽशनायापिपासे शोकं मोहं जरां मृत्युमत्येत्येतं वै तमात्मानं विदित्वा ब्राह्मणाः पुत्रैषणायाश्च वित्तैषणायाश्च लोकैषणायाश्च ध्युत्थायाऽथ भिक्षाचर्यं चरन्ति आ ह्येव पुत्रैषणा सा वित्तैषणा या वित्तैषणा सा लोकैषणोभे ह्येते षण्ये एव भवतस्तस्माद् ब्राह्मणः

पाणिङ्गल्यं निर्विद्य बाल्येन तिष्ठसेद्बाल्यञ्च पाणिङ्गल्यञ्च निर्विद्याथ मुनिर्मौनञ्च मौनञ्च निर्विद्याऽथ ब्राह्मणः  
स ब्राह्मणः केन स्याद्येन स्यात्तेनेदृश एवातोऽन्यदात्तं ततोह कहोलः कौषीतकेय उपरराम ॥ १ ॥ पञ्चमं  
ब्राह्मणम् ॥ ५ ॥

Then Kahola Kauṣītakeya said, "Yājñavalkya," "tell me the Brahman which is visible, yet invisible, the Self (Ātman) who is within all!"

Yājñavalkya replied: "This, thy Self who is within all." "Which Self, O Yājñavalkya, is within all?"

Yājñavalkya replied, "He who overcomes hunger and thirst, sorrow, passion, old age, and death. When Brāhmaṇas know that Self, and have risen above the desire for sons, wealth, and (new) worlds, they wander about as mendicants. For a desire for sons is desire for wealth, a desire for wealth is desire for worlds. Both these are indeed desires.

"Let a Brāhmaṇa renounce learning, and become as a child, and after renouncing learning and a childlike mind, let him become a quietist; and when he has made an end of quietism and non-quietism, he shall become a Brāhmaṇa, a Brāhmaṇa indeed.

"By whatever means he has become a Brāhmaṇa he is such indeed. Everything else is of evil." After that Kahola Kauṣītakeya held his peace.

This shows that crossing the stage of learning and childlike simplicity, a knower of Brahman goes above all Karmas, and remains, as he likes. Similarly, in the Gītā, III., 25 :

सक्तः कर्मयविदांसो यथा कुर्वन्ति भारत ।

कुर्याद्विदांसस्तथाऽसक्तश्चिकीर्षुर्लोकसङ्ग्रहम् ॥ २५ ॥

As the ignorant act from attachment to action, O Bhārata, so should the wise act without attachment, desiring the welfare of the world.

This Gītā text applies to the householder who occupies a position of authority and responsibility in his community, and to whom men look forward as their ideal. Such a Pariniṣṭhita devotee, even after acquiring Vidyā, ought not to renounce Karma, for his example would mislead society. It is only Yatis, or Ūrdhvaretas, or the perpetual celibates, who on getting Vidyā may safely renounce all Karmas; for they, not being in the society, their example is not likely to mislead the ignorant members of the society. Thus such is the glory of Vidyā that even when one acts as he likes, no sin touches him. The author next shows a different explanation of the above text, given by Jaimini.

SŪTRA III. 4. 18.

परामर्शं जैमिनीरचोदनाचापवदति हि ॥ ३ । ४ । १८ ॥

परामर्शं Parāmarśam, (the Śruti has) a favourable reference to (Karma). जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini holds. अचोदना Achodanā, absence of injunction. च Cha, and. अपवदति Apavadati, forbids. हि He, because.

18. Jaimini holds that the scripture not only enjoins Karma to the wise, but reproaches those who renounce Karmas, and does not

expressly prohibit Karmas (therefore, the text about Kāmachâra refers to injunctive Karmas only).—447.

## COMMENTARY

The meaning of the text quoted in III, 4. 15, is that the wise sage has full liberty of doing as he likes those Karmas only which have been ordained as a rule. (The sage is not at liberty to do Karmas which have been *prohibited*). He has option to do in any way he likes the enjoined Karmas. It does not mean that enjoined Karmas may be *omitted* altogether. Thus one of the enjoined Karmas is morning prayer or Sandhyâ. The ordinary men must perform Sandhyâ strictly, at the proper time, but an illumined sage may perform it at any time he likes. This is the meaning of Kāmachâra

Because the scripture itself shows that even the wise sage must perform Karmas, and it denounces those who have abandoned Karmas, therefore, there is no express text enjoining the renunciation of Karmas. The reason is this. Because the scriptures have reference to the wise with regard to Karma, and because it reproaches those who renounce Karmas, therefore, it follows that the true spirit of the scripture is not to teach the renunciation of Karmas nor we can infer the existence of any such rule "let the wise renounce Karmas." The sense is this. The second verse of the Îśāvâsya Upaniṣad which declares that a man must perform Karmas is an authority which enjoins Karmas even to the wise. Similarly, the Śruti of the Taittiriya which declares that "a man who renounces Karmas loses his progeny" is an authority reproaching those who have abandoned Karmas. Reading these texts together, it is not possible to infer that there should be any text enjoining the abandonment of Karmas. Because, enjoining and prohibiting the same act simultaneously, is a contradiction not contemplated by the scriptures. Nor can you say that there will be no scope for texts which declare the renunciation of Karmas. In our view, those texts will find their scope in the case of cripples, blind men, etc., who through physical or mental infirmity are incapable of performing Karmas. Therefore, the wise sage must undertake the performance of the Śrauta and Smârta Karmas, the various ceremonial worships taught in the Vedas and Smṛtis, and in this case latitude is given to him to perform them anyhow. This is the meaning of the text Kenasyât, Yenasyât of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad quoted above. That text does not mean that a wise sage can renounce Karmas or perform them at his option. This is the opinion of Jaimini.

Thus according to the opinion of Jaimini, the above text of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad is an authority enjoining the performance of Karmas

and observing the rule of good conduct for all men. The author now shows that in his opinion the above text gives permission to do as one likes. He gives this meaning in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III, 4. 19.

अनुष्ठेयं बादरायणः साम्यश्रुतेः ॥ ३ । ४ । १९ ॥

अनुष्ठेयम् Anuṣṭheyam, (Karma) should be practised. बादरायणः Bādarāyaṇaḥ, Bādarāyaṇa holds. साम्य Sāmya, of equality. श्रुते Śruteḥ, account of scriptural statement.

19. (According to) Bādarāyaṇa (the obligatory duties only) may be performed somehow or other, because there is equality according to authority (between the God-intoxicated devotees, who partially perform Karmas, and ordinary men who fully perform Karmas).—448.

#### COMMENTARY

According to Bādarāyaṇa, it is only those Karmas which are obligatory that a wise man may perform according to his option; that is, he should perform some part of it and omit other parts. Why do we say so? Because there is statement of equality. The text “Kenasyāt yenasyāt tenedriṣaḥ” shows that the illumined sage performing works in any way, somehow, is equal to him who performs them fully. The above Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad text clearly shows that there is an equality between a sage performing actions partially and between any other person performing them fully. How can a partial performer of obligatory Karmas be equal to the full performer of them? According to the opinion of Jaimini, this statement of equality is merely glorificatory, for unless a man perform Karmas fully, he cannot be said to be equal to one who scrupulously performs them all. If he leaves any one of those Karmas unperformed, he cannot be said equal to him who performs them fully. Jaimini explains this equality by saying that both are equal inasmuch as both perform the obligatory Karmas, though one performs it partially and the other fully. The full performance of Karmas is ordained for Svaniṣṭha devotee, such a wise man must perform all Karmas. The text reproaching the renouncement of Karmas applies to those men who have not reached illumination, but have renounced Karmas too early. Thus both texts are reconciled. And so for a truly illumined sage, belonging to the order of Pariniṣṭhita the performance of Karmas need not be entire. The law is fulfilled by him by the partial performance even of the obligatory Karmas.

Nor can it be said that the texts teaching the renunciation of Karmas are confined to physically incapable persons, because there are no such restrictive statements in those texts. Those verses declare that release is not to be obtained by Karmas or by offsprings, etc., but by the abandonment of all Karmas alone. This general statement cannot be restricted in the way that Jaimini would have it.

SŪTRA III., 4. 20.

विधिर्वा धारणवत् ॥ ३ । ४ । २० ॥

विधिः Vidhiḥ, and injunction. वा Vā, or. धारणवत् Dhāraṇavat, as is the case of taking (the Vedas) with, or as in the case of carrying, etc.

20. Or the above text may be an injunction like the text about the study of the Vedas.—449.

COMMENTARY

The above text “Kena syāt yena syāt” may be construed as an injunction regarding the illumined sage, just like those injunctions which declare that a Brāhmaṇa child must be initiated at the age of eight so that he may be able to study the Vedas. In this view the above text is an injunction teaching that a sage belonging to the order of Pariniṣṭhita should perform all Karmas according to his will, but persons other than Pariniṣṭhitas should not do so, as says the Bhāgavata Purāṇa:

शौचमाचमनं स्नानं न तु चोदनयाचरेत् ।

अन्यांश्च नियमान् ज्ञानी यथाहं लीलयेत्स्वरः ॥

The wise do not perform the purificatory acts, the sipping of water, the bathing and other acts required by the law according to injunctions of the Scriptures. They perform it according to their will; as I, the Lord of the universe, perform all acts according to my will, as a mere sport.

This view is objected to in the next Sūtra in the first part, and then that objection is answered.

SŪTRA III., 4. 21.

स्तुतिमात्रमुपादानादिति चेन्नापूर्वत्वान् ॥ ३ । ४ । २१ ॥

स्तुतिमात्रम् Stuti-mātram, praise merely. उपादानात् Upādānāt, on account of reference. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not so. अपूर्वत्वात् Apūrvatvāt, on account of the newness.

21. If it be said that (texts such as the one about the performance of Karmas according to one's will are) mere glorifications on account of their reference to the performance of Karmas; we deny that, because the texts lay down a new

injunction (for the performance of Karmas according to one's will).—450.

## COMMENTARY

An objector says, the above text is not an injunction but a mere glorification of the illumined sage. As a person may tell one whom he loves, "Do as thou likest," and by so saying shows merely his regard and love for that person, so when the Lord "A says, wise man may do as he likes," it is not an injunction to the wise man to go and break all the laws of God and social conventions, but it only shows that the Lord has so much confidence in those persons that He tells them to do as they like, knowing full well that they will never do anything against His will. The statement, therefore, that a wise man may do as he likes, is a mere glorification. More so, because there are express texts to the effect that a wise man must also perform Karmas.

To this objection, we reply that the above text is not an Arthavāda but a Vidhi or injunction with regard to the God-intoxicated sage to do as he likes. It teaches something new not already taught before, and is, therefore, an Apūrva Vidhi and not a Stuti.

*Note:* The argument of the objector may be thus put. The sentence "Let a Jñānin do as he likes" is a glorification only, and not an injunction. Because the Jñānin also is required to perform Karmas by the injunction contained in the verse 'Kurvan eva,' etc., of the *Isāvasya*. To this objection the reply given is that there is no other text declaring the performance of Karmas according to one's will for the Jñānin. Therefore, when the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad* says, "A Jñānin may perform Karmas as he likes" it must be construed as an Apūrvavidhi. All the Vidhis are of three kinds, namely, Apūrva Vidhi, Niyama Vidhi and *Parisaṅkhyā* Vidhi as defined in the following verse:

विधित्यन्तमप्राप्तौ, नियमः पादिके सति ।

तत्र चान्यत्र च प्राप्तौ परिसंख्येति गीयते ॥

"An Apūrva Vidhi is one which makes an original statement not to be known by any other means. A Niyama Vidhi or a restrictive rule enjoins the performance of one of the two alternatives. A *Parisaṅkhyā* enumerates cases to which certain rule applies." For example, "let him worship daily with the *Sandhyā* worship" or "let a person desirous of acquiring heaven, perform the sacrifice called *Jyotiṣṭoma*." These are Apūrva Vidhis, because a man would not have found the necessity of performing *Sandhyā* or *Jyotiṣṭoma*, merely by his reasoning or his natural inclination, but for the teaching of the scriptures. By no other means he would have known that the *Jyotiṣṭoma* is a means of procuring heaven. Therefore, these are Apūrva Vidhis. That which ordains or restricts a man to one of the two alternatives is a Niyama Vidhi. Such as, "a person must approach his wife in the season." This restricts a man to a particular time. A man, by natural inclination, would approach his wife; but if through want of it, he neglects his wife, this rule enjoins him not to do so. Similarly, "let him cleanse the rice of its husk by *pounding* it," is a Niyama Vidhi. For the husks may be removed by process other than *pounding*; but the rule confines one to *pounding*. Similarly, "Five-toed animals may be eaten" is a *Parisaṅkhyā* Vidhi. It does not lay down any injunction as to the eating of five-toed animals, but if one wants to eat such animals, he is confined to such of them as are mentioned in *Manu*. V., 17 and 18.

न भक्षयेदेकचरानज्ञानांश्च मृगद्विजान् ।

भक्षयेष्वपि समुद्दिष्टान्सर्वान्यञ्च नखांस्तथा ॥ १७ ॥

श्वाविधशल्यकं गोधां खड्गं कूर्मशशांस्तथा ।

भक्ष्यान्पंचनखेष्वामुरनुष्टुप्शैकतोदतः ॥ १८ ॥

Let him not eat solitary or unknown beasts and birds, though they may fall under (the categories of) eatable (creatures), nor any five-toed (animals).

The porcupine, the hedgehog, the iguana, the rhinoceros, the tortoise, and the hare, they declare to be eatable ; likewise those (domestic animals) that have teeth in one jaw only, excepting camels.

Thus all five-toed animals, like monkey, etc., are prohibited foods ; but an exception is made in favour of six. The *Parisankhyā* is a *permissive* rule, rather than an injunction.

SŪTRA III., 4. 22.

भावशब्दाच्च ॥ ३ । ४ । २२ ॥

भाव Bhāva, devotion, love, absorption. शब्दात् Śabdāt, on account of words. च Cha, and.

22. And because of the text (of Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad III., 1. 4) declaring that there is absorption in the Lord.—451.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, III., 1. 4, we have the following :

प्राणो द्वेष यः सर्वभूतैर्विभाति विजानन् विद्वान् भवते नातिवादी । आत्मक्रीड आत्मरतिः क्रियावानेष ब्रह्मविदां वरिष्ठः ॥ ४ ॥

For the Lord shines forth in all beings and senses, knowing this the wise ceases from useless controversy. He contemplates on the Lord, enjoys the bliss of His company, (and when out of trance) is active in performing works of the Lord—such a Jivan-mukta is also the teacher of those who are seekers of the knowledge of Brahman.

In the above text we find words denoting Bhāva, such as Atma-kriḍā, Âtma-rati, etc. The word Bhāva means intense love, and words Rati and Prema are its synonyms. The sense is this, the Pariniṣṭhita God-absorbed devotee, has not the time to perform Karmas, because of his contemplation of the Lord. Therefore, such a person may perform Karmas only partially, and somehow or other, for the sake of society, and not because it is necessary for him to perform it. This also shows that Brahma-vidyā is independent of Karma.

In the next Sūtra the author himself raises the doubt whether the stories related in the Upaniṣads about God-absorbed persons and other seekers of Brahman are not mere Pāriplavas or episodes to be recited at stated intervals during the year occupied by the Aśvamedha sacrifice. Having raised the doubt in the first part of the Sūtra, he answers it in the latter half.



SŪTRA III., 4. 23.

पारिप्लवार्था इति चेन्न विशेषितत्वात् ॥ ३ । ४ । २३ ॥

पारिप्लवार्थाः Pāriplavārthāḥ, for the purpose of filling up the time ; pas-times. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not so. विशेषितत्वात् Viśeṣitatvāt, on account of their being specified.

23. If it be said that the stories told in the Upaniṣads are for the purpose of Pāriplava, we reply this is not so, because the Pāriplava stories are certain specified ones.—452.

## COMMENTARY

In the Upaniṣads like the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and the rest we find stories like the following : “Yājñavalkya had two wives, Maitreyī and Kātyāyanī” (Bṛ. Up., IV., 5. 1) “Bṛgu, the son of Varuṇa, approached his father Varuṇa and said, ‘teach me, sir, Brahma-vidyā’.”—(Taittiriya Upaniṣad, III., 1). “Pratardana, forsooth, the son of Divodāsa came to the beloved abode of Indra.”—(Kauṣika Upaniṣad, III., 1). “There lived once upon a time Janāśruti Pauṛāyana who was a pious giver, giving much and keeping open house.”—(Chhândogya Upaniṣad, IV., 1. 1). These and similar stories are related in the Upaniṣads with regard to Brahma-vidyā. The doubt arises, are these stories told in the Upaniṣads for the purpose of Pāriplava, to fill up the time occupied in the performance of Aśvamedha ceremony or are they meant to establish the glory of Brahma-vidyā ? The Pūrvapakṣin says, they are Pāriplava stories, because all stories are enjoined for the sake of Pāriplava, and in storytelling, the literary skill is the chief point kept in view ; the story-tellers attach more importance to the words of the stories and a minor importance to the teaching contained in those stories (in other words, the stories are meant to amuse and not to instruct). Therefore, the Brahma-vidyā taught in these stories, are merely Arthavādas, like other Mantras which stand in a complementary relation to sacrificial performances. These stories are, therefore, of no importance in themselves, except as complementary to Karmas. Therefore, when their intrinsic importance is thus totally set aside, consequently the Brahma-vidyā taught in such stories becomes much less important.

To the above objection, raised by the Pūrvapakṣin, the author of the Sūtra says : “It is not so, because (Viśeṣitatvāt) certain stories only are specified in the Scriptures as Pāriplava and the Upaniṣad stories are not among them.” The Scriptures specify certain definite stories as Pāriplavas : the Brahma-vidyā stories are not included in them. Thus under the heading “He is to recite the Pāriplava,” the Scripture mentions “the stories like those of Manu, the son of Vivasvat, the king.” The

Scripture says: "On the first day the story of Manu, Vivasvat's son, should be recited; and on the second day, the story of Indra, the son of Vivasvat the king, should be recited; and on the third day the story of Yama, Vivasvat's son the king, should be recited," and so on (see Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XIII. 4. 3. 3). Thus the particular stories which are to be recited in the Pāriplava are specified in the Scriptures. Every story found in the Brāhmaṇas is not Pāriplava. Had every story been a Pāriplava story, the Scripture would not have specified that on the first day the story of Manu should be recited; on the second day the story of Indra; and on the third day, that of Yama. Since all tales were alike, the injunction about these particular tales would be useless. Therefore, when the Scripture says ('Sarvāṇy ākhyānāni pāriplavo saṁsanti') "all stories are recited in the Pāriplavas," the word "all" does not mean *every* story in general, but only *all* those stories which are mentioned in the Chapter of Pāriplava. Therefore, the stories mentioned in the Vedānta portion of the Brāhmaṇas are not Pāriplava stories.

SŪTRA III., 4. 24.

तथाचैकवाक्यतोपबन्धात् ॥ ३ । ४ । २४ ॥

tathā Tathā, similarly. च Cha, and. एकवाक्यता Ekavākyatā, unity of construction or of statements, or that of sense. उपबन्धात् Upabandhāt, because of the connection.

24. Therefore this being so (the Vedānta stories teach Brahma-vidyā); because of their coherent connection (with the statements about the Self, and the Vidyās).—453.

#### COMMENTARY

Since the stories of the Vedānta are not for the purposes of the Pāriplava, it is, therefore, proper to construe them as corroborating the Brahma-vidyā, in the immediate connection with which they are recited. Their object is to make it clear to our understanding in a concrete form, the Vidyās taught in other portions of the Upaniṣads, in the abstract. Why do we say so? 'Ekavākyatopabandhāt.' Because of their syntactical connection with the Vidyās taught in the succeeding passages. Thus in the story beginning with "Yājñavalkya had two wives, etc.," we find immediately following, in that very section, the Vidyā taught about the Âtman in these words (Bṛhad. Up., IV., 4. 22): "The Âtman is verily to be seen, to be heard of, to be meditated upon." Since these stories are immediately preceded or succeeded by instructions about Brahman, we infer that they are meant to glorify the Vidyā and are not Pāriplava stories. Just as the story about "He wept" standing in proximity to Karma is

rightly interpreted as glorifying the injunctions about sacrificial performance in relation to which such stories are related. As those stories, glorifying Karmas, are not Pāriplava stories, so also the Upaniṣad stories are not Pāriplava stories but, on the other hand, standing in proximity to injunctions about Vidyā, they must be interpreted as glorification of the Vidyā; because the rule of construction is the same here. The sense is this. The Vidyā is verily an independent means of producing (or causing the fulfilment or attainment of) the highest end of man, namely, of producing or bringing about the final release. And because it is so great, therefore, great souls like Yājñavalkya and the rest have devoted themselves, with great effort and might, to its cultivation. The stories are told in order to facilitate the understanding of these abstruse subjects, and they are eminently fitted to subserve that purpose. In fact, the Scripture itself says : "He who serves his master understands the Vidyā." The stories, therefore, serve the purpose of teaching reverence for the master. Thus also the Vidyā is independent of all Karmas.

SŪTRA III., 4. 25.

अतएव चामीन्धनाग्निपेक्षा ॥ ३ । ४ । २५ ॥

अतएव Ataheva, for this reason. च Cha. and. अग्नि Agni, fire. इन्धनादि Indhanādi, kindling and performing sacrifices, etc. अग्निपेक्षा Anapekṣā, no need.

25. And, therefore, there is no need for the lighting of the sacred fire and so on, for the sage who knows Brahman.—454.

#### COMMENTARY

For this reason, namely, because it has been established that Vidyā is independent, therefore, she does not stand in need of the lighting of the sacrificial fire and other ceremonial works, in order to manifest her fruits. The theory, therefore, that knowledge and work must be *combined* in order to produce Mukti, is hereby set aside. Vidyā alone is sufficient for that purpose.

#### Adhikaraṇa V.

Having thus described the power and glory of Vidyā, the author now begins to specify the marks which are the characteristics of the person who is entitled to get this Vidyā. Unless a person possesses these qualifications, he cannot benefit by the study of the Vidyās. Thus the Brhad-āraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 22, declares : "Him Brāhmaṇas seek to know, by the

study of the Vedas, by sacrifice, by gifts, by penance, by fasting." This passage lays down some of the necessary qualifications. In IV., 4. 23 of the same, the following additional qualifications are laid down :

"He, therefore, that knows it, after having become quite subdued, satisfied, patient, and collected, sees Self in the Self, sees all as Self. Evil does not overcome him, he overcomes all evil. Evil does not burn him, he burns all evil. Free from evil, free from spots, free from doubt, he becomes a (true) Brāhmaṇa : this is the Brahma-world, O King"—thus spoke Yājñavalkya.

We give the original of these two Brhadāraṇyaka texts below :

तमेतं वेदानुवचनेन ब्राह्मणं विविदिषन्ति यज्ञेन दानेन तपसाऽनाशकेनमेव विदित्वा मुनिर्भवति ॥  
तस्मादेवंविच्छान्तो दान्त उपरतस्तिष्ठुः समाहितो भूत्वाऽत्मन्येवात्मानं पश्यति सर्वमात्मानं पश्यति नेन  
पाप्मा तरति सर्वम् ।

Now the first text shows that sacrifice (Yajña), gifts (Dāna), penance (Tapaḥ), and fasting are necessary qualifications together with the study of the Vedas. The second passage shows that Śama (control of thought), Dama (control of conduct), Uparati (tolerance), Titikṣā (endurance) and Samādhāna are the necessary qualifications, and are the subordinate members of the Vidyā.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Are both these sets of qualifications necessary for the origination of Vidyā, or only one of them or none ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin says that none of these qualifications is absolutely essential for the attainment of Vidyā. Getting the right Guru is the only necessary thing. As says the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI., 14. 2). 'Āchāryavān puruṣo veda,' 'He knows Brahman who has found a teacher.' This and similar texts prove that the finding of the teacher is the chief essential in acquiring Vidyā.

*Siddhantā* : This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 26.

सर्वापेक्षा च यज्ञादिश्रुतिरश्वन् ॥ ३ । ४ । २६ ॥

सर्वं Sarva, of all. अपेक्षा Apekṣā, there is need. च Cha, and. यज्ञादि Yajñādi, for sacrifices and others. श्रुतिः Srutiḥ, there is the Vedic statement. अश्ववत् Aśvavat, as in the case of the horse.

26. All these qualifications are necessary, because the Śruti mentions sacrifices, etc., as necessary qualifications. They are like the horse (which is necessary to accomplish a journey ; though on finishing it, he is no longer necessary).—455.

## COMMENTARY

Though Vidyā is independent of all works in the manifestation of her fruits, yet for her origination she is dependent on all these works, such as sacrifices, gifts, etc. Why? Because the two texts of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad given above show expressly that for the origination of Vidyā these qualifications are absolutely necessary. The author gives an illustration of this. As in order to accomplish a journey, a horse is necessary, but on its accomplishment it is no longer required, so for the origination of Vidyā these works are necessary, but after she has once originated, they are no longer necessary.

If Vidyā can be originated by sacrifices, gifts, penance and fasting, what is the necessity of other qualifications like Sama (control of thought) Dama (control of conduct), etc.? To this the author replies in the next Sūtra.

## SŪTRA III, 4. 27.

शमदमाद्युपेतस्तु स्यात्तथापि तु तद्विधेस्तर्दगतया तेषामवश्यानुष्ठेयत्वात् ॥ ३ । ४ । २७ ॥

शम Śama, calmness, peace. दम Dama, control, or subjection of the senses. आदि Âdi, etc., and others. उपेतः Upetaḥ, possessed of. तु Tu, verily, certainly. स्यात् Syāt, he should be. तथा-अपि Tatha-apī, still, all the same. तु Tu, but, also. तद् Tad, of them (Śama, Dama, etc.). विधेः Vidheḥ, because of the injunction. तद् Tad, of that (knowledge). अङ्गतया Aṅgatayā, on account of their being a part. तेषाम् Teṣām, of them, (Śama, Dama, etc.). अवश्य Avaśya, necessarily. अनुष्ठेयत्वात् Antuṣṭheyatvāt, because they must be practised.

27. But the control of thought and of conduct and the rest must be acquired (though Vidyā may originate by sacrifice, etc., also), because there are express injunctions for these, stating that they are auxiliaries of Vidyā, and must on that account necessarily be accomplished.—456.

## COMMENTARY

The two "Tu's" mean "verily" and "but," respectively; and are employed to remove the doubt above raised. Though it is true that sacrifice, gift, penance, and fasting purify the heart of man, and fit him to acquire Vidyā, still the seeker of Vidyā must acquire also the moral qualifications of Śama (the control of thought), Dama (the control of conduct), etc. Why? Because these also are enjoined as auxiliaries of Vidyā. The above text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad expressly enjoins the

acquirement of these moral qualifications also. And since they are so enjoined, they must necessarily be accomplished. The result is that both sets of qualifications, the physical, like the sacrifice, gift, penance and fasting, and moral, like the Śama (the control of thought), Dama (the control of conduct), etc., must be acquired and performed. The first set is Bahiraṅga or external, the second set is Antaraṅga or internal, qualification. The word Ādi (and the rest) mentioned in the Sūtra indicates that qualifications like these of truthfulness, silent repetition of the Mantras, etc., mentioned in the Jijñāsā Adhikarāṇa (I., 1. 1) as quoted from Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad and Manu Smṛti at page 7, must also be included among the necessary qualifications. Thus the aspirant after the Brahma-vidyā, must possess all these qualifications of truthfulness, generosity, asceticism, celibacy, indifference to worldly objects, fasting, control of thought, control of conduct, tolerance, endurance, faith, equilibrium, compassion, etc.

### Adhikarāṇa VI.

The author now teaches that though an illumined sage has full liberty of action, yet he must not commit sins or do prohibited acts. Thus there is a following Śruti :

यदि ह वा अप्येवंविन निखिलं भक्षणाय एवमेव स भवति ।

If a knower of Brahman eats any food cooked by anybody he remains as pure as he was before, his lustre is not diminished.

*Note* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, V., 2. 1, it is also said : "To him who knows this, there is nothing which is not food"; and in the Bhṛgadarāṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 1, 14, it is said : "By him nothing is eaten that is not food, nothing is received that is not food."

\* *Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Are these texts an injunction, ordering the illumined sage to eat all food, or are they merely permissive ; allowing him to eat such food, if he likes ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : This is an original statement regarding the eating of all kinds of food, a statement not to be inferred by any other proof ; hence it is an injunction, ordering the sage to eat all kinds of food. It is an Apūrvā Vidhi and is auxiliary to Vidyā like Śama, Dama, etc.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 28.

सर्वानुमतिश्च प्राणायये तद्दर्शनात् ॥ ३ । ४ । २८ ॥

सर्वे Sarva, of all. अन्न Anna, food. अनुमतिः Anumatih, permission for. च Cha, and, indeed. प्राण Prāṇa, of life. अत्यये Atyaye, at the time, (where

there is risk) of departure or loss. तद् Tad, that. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, being stated in the Śāstras.

28. The permission to eat all kinds of food, is given only under the circumstances of danger to life, because the Scripture gives only such examples.—457.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "and" has the force of "only" here. The texts like those given above are permissive only. They allow the wise man to eat food, cooked by anybody, when there is danger to his life, from not getting the lawful food. Why do we say so? Because the examples given in the Scriptures show that it is in cases of extreme necessity only that the rule of lawful and unlawful food is set aside. Thus in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (I, 10. 1-3) we find the following (*see* page 49 also) :

When (the crops in the land of) the Kurus were destroyed by hailstones, Uṣasti Châkrâyaṇa lived a-begging with his young wife at Ibhya-grâma. Seeing the Lord of Ibhya eating beans, he begged some from him.

(The master of elephants) said to Uṣasti : "I have no more except these, which are placed before me for eating." Uṣasti said : "Give me then some of these." He gave him some of those, and said : "Here is some water to drink, in this bag." Uṣasti said : "I shall drink impure water, if I drank what has already been drunk by another." The master of elephants said : "Are not these beans also impure, as I am eating of them?"

Uṣasti replied : "No, (these beans should not be considered unclean) because without eating them I cannot live; while the drinking of (your) water (is not an absolute necessity and) depends on my pleasure (for it can be obtained everywhere)." Uṣasti having eaten himself, brought the remainder to his wife. But she had already eaten before, therefore, she took them and put them away.

From seeing how Châkrâyaṇa conducted himself in those hard times, we infer that it is permissive to every one to take the food, which is otherwise unlawful, in times of distress, when life cannot be otherwise maintained. Châkrâyaṇa took the leavings of the food of the elephant-driver, because he could not have maintained himself without such food; but he refused to take the water already drunk by the elephant-driver, because there was no water-famine, and water could have been obtained easily. The story further shows that the next morning he ate the same food which was now doubly unlawful, for it was not only the Uchchhiṣṭa food of the elephant-driver, but it was the Uchchhiṣṭa of Châkrâyaṇa himself. The sage Châkrâyaṇa eating thus the leavings of the food, was still so sacred and holy that he was the head officiating priest in the great sacrifice which the king of that country was performing.

The other passages of the Upaniṣad relating to food should be explained in the same way.

SŪTRA III., 4. 29.

अवाधाच्च ॥ ३ । ४ । २९ ॥

अवाधात् Abādhāt, there being no harm, or on account of non-sublation.  
च Cha, and.

29. And because the heart of the sage is always pure, there is no obstruction to his knowledge by taking such food.—458.

COMMENTARY

Unlawful food, as a general rule, clogs the understanding and obstructs the clear working of the intellect. But in the case of the sage, whose heart is always pure, and intellect, keen, the taking of such food does not obstruct the working of his brain, and his knowledge remains as pure as ever.

SŪTRA III., 4. 30.

अपि स्मर्यते ॥ ३ । ४ । ३० ॥

अपि Api, also, स्मर्यते Smaryate, it is seen in the Smṛtis.

30. The Smṛti also teaches the same (that in times of distress unlawful food may be eaten).—459.

COMMENTARY

Manu, in X, 101 and the subsequent verses gives such permission with illustrations

जीवितालययमापन्नो योऽन्नमन्ति यतस्ततः ।

आकाशमिव पङ्केन न स पापेन लिप्यते ॥ २०४ ॥

अजीर्णतः सतं हन्तुमुपासर्पद्बुभुक्षितः ।

न चालिप्यत पापेन क्षुत्प्रतीकारमाचरन् ॥ २०५ ॥

श्वामांसमिच्छन्नातोऽतं धर्माधर्मविचक्षणः ।

प्राणानां परिरक्षार्थं वामदेवो न लिप्तवान् ॥ २०६ ॥

भरद्वाजः क्षुधार्तिस्तु सपुत्रं विजने वने ।

वह्नीर्गाः प्रतिजग्राह वृधोस्तद्वशो महातपाः ॥ २०७ ॥

क्षुधार्तिश्चात्तुमभ्यागाद्विश्वामित्रश्चाजाधनीम् ।

चण्डालहस्तादादाय धर्माधर्मविचक्षणः ॥ २०८ ॥

He who, when in danger of losing his life, accepts food from any person whatsoever, is no more tainted by sin than the sky by mud.

Ajigarta, who suffered hunger, approached in order to slay (his own) son, and was not tainted by sin, since he (only) sought a remedy against famishing.

Vāmadeva, who well knew right and wrong, did not sully himself when tormented (by hunger), he desired to eat the flesh of a dog in order to save his life.

Bharadvāja, a performer of great austerities, accepted many cows from the carpenter Br̥dhu, when he was starving together with his sons in a lonely forest.



Viśvāmītra, who well knew what is right or wrong, approached, when he was tormented by hunger, (to eat) the haunch of a dog, receiving it from the hands of a Chanḍāla.

Thus the Manu Smṛti permits all men, whether learned or ignorant, spiritual or worldly, to take the food cooked by all men, without regard to their lawfulness or unlawfulness, *in times of distress only* and not always. Therefore, when the Upaniṣad says that the sage may eat all kinds of food, it must be interpreted as meaning that he may eat all kinds of food in times of distress only. The text of the Upaniṣad should not be construed as an injunction in favour of eating unlawful food. It is no part of the Sādhana or spiritual practice, that the sage should go out of his way and eat all sorts of food.

*Note*—This is in answer to those who say that a Brahman being a lover of humanity should take food cooked by all men, and should not observe the Śāstric injunctions against taking such food. A Brahman can no doubt counteract evil effects of such food, but why should he waste his energy on it? He may no doubt drink wine, eat meat, take all sorts of drugs, and not be the worse for it, but he does so at his own risk. He breaks the law unnecessarily.

SŪTRA III., 4. 31.

शब्दश्चातोऽकामचारे ॥ ३ । ४ । ३१ ॥

शब्दः Śabdah, there is a scriptural statement, च Cha, and. अतः Atah, hence. अकामचारः Akāmachāre, as to non-proceeding according to liking.

31. Therefore, the Scripture teaches that a sage should not act according to his will in matters of food, disregarding the Śāstric injunctions. There is a text to that effect.—460.

COMMENTARY

Since permission to take all kinds of food is given only in times of distress, it follows that in ordinary times, the wise man should not act in opposition to the scriptural injunctions. There is a scriptural text or passage to that effect also. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VII., 26. 2, we have the following :

आहारशुद्धो सत्त्वशुद्धिः सत्त्वशुद्धौ ध्रुवा स्मृतिः स्मृतिलम्भे सर्वग्रन्थीनां विप्रमोक्षः ॥

Clean food leads to clarity of intellect. The clearness of brain conduces to firm meditation. When meditation is firm there is vision of the Divine and all ties are unloosened completely.

This text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is a clear prohibition of libertinism in matters of food. Therefore, the permission to take all kinds of food being confined to times of distress only, it follows that in ordinary times one must observe the Śāstric injunctions.

## Adhikarāṇa VII.

In the opening section of this Pāda, it has been shown that the seekers of Vidyā (Divine wisdom) are of three sorts, Svaniṣṭha, Pariniṣṭhita and Nirapekṣa. Now the author tries to answer the question, how far these devotees must observe the rules of caste and orders and whether they can observe them or not, after they have attained the Divine knowledge. He first examines a case of the Svaniṣṭha devotee. In the Kauśārava Śruti we have the following :

पश्यन्नपीममात्मानम् कुर्यात् कर्मविचारयन् ।

यदात्मनः सुनियतमानन्दोत्कर्षमाप्नुयात् ॥

Even after the sage has obtained the vision of this Ātman, he must perform Karmas (ceremonial works), without raising any doubt, because he will get thereby increase of bliss of the Self, in a well-regulated order.

*Doubt* : There arises the following doubt with regard to this Śruti : Should the Svaniṣṭha devotee, who has obtained Divine knowledge, perform ceremonial works or not ?

*Nirvapakṣa* : The object of all ritualistic Karmas is to obtain Vidyā or Divine knowledge; and when that is obtained, where is then the necessity of performing Karmas again ? It is a general rule that when the result is obtained, the previous acts are discontinued (when the food is cooked, the fire is no longer kept burning). Therefore, when Vidyā is gained, the Karmas should not be performed any longer.

*Siddhānta* : The works of the Āśramas must be performed even after the attainment of Vidyā, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 32.

विहितत्वादाश्रमकर्मापि ॥ ३ । ४ । ३२ ॥

विहितत्वात् Vihitatvāt, they being enjoined. आश्रम Āśrama, of the Āśramas or the stages. कर्म Karma, the duties. अपि Api, also.

32. The works peculiar to one's stage in life must be performed also, because they have been so enjoined.—461.

## COMMENTARY

The force of the word "also" is to indicate that not only the Āśrama Karmas should be performed, but also the Varṇa Karmas, or duties peculiar to one's caste, must also be performed by the perfected sage. It, therefore, follows that both kinds of duties must be performed. Why ? In order to increase the Divine knowledge. Because the scripture enjoins that even after the acquisition of Vidyā, the Karmas must be performed to increase that Vidyā.

Now this injunction for performing Karmas even after the origination of Vidyā, shows that Jñāna and Karma, knowledge and work, must be always combined, and that Vidyā is the combined result of both; and that release is obtained, not by Vidyā alone, but by the combination of Vidyā and Karma. This doubt is removed in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 33.

सहकारित्वेन च ॥ ३ / ४ / ३३ ॥

सहकारित्वेन Sahakāritvena, on account of co-operativeness. च Cha, and.

33. The Karmas are to be performed, not as leading to release, but as co-operative towards Vidyā.—462.

COMMENTARY

The Svanīṣṭha devotee performs Karma after the origination of Vidyā, not because Karmas are causes of Mukti, but because they are handmaids of Vidyā, and are co-operative towards Vidyā. Because we find in the Upaniṣads that it is after the origination of Vidyā that the Karmas are re-ordained. For example, the Upaniṣad says (Tam eva viditvā) "having *known* that" (they get Mukti). So it is after knowledge that Mukti comes. Thus, what the scripture teaches is this. The Svanīṣṭha Adhikāri first performs the special duties of his caste and order with the sole object of gaining the higher Self. He does not perform these religious duties with any lower motive. After performing works in this spirit, with the Supreme Self as his goal, he gets Vidyā or Divine knowledge. When the Vidyā is thus originated by the due performance of these Karmas, he still goes on performing them in order to increase that Vidyā. The Karmas performed after the origination of Vidyā are not opposed to Vidyā, and the Vidyā has no tendency to destroy such Karmas, because there is no such conflict between Vidyā and Karma. The Karmas generally lead to Svarga. When the devotee performs Karmas, even after the origination of Vidyā, he does so in order to experience the varieties of Svargic delights. Though the result of Vidyā is release, and that of Karma is Svarga, there is, however, no such conflict between these two, so that the performance of Karma after Vidyā should efface the effect. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I., 4. 15, we have the following text declaring that the Karma (or religious worship) done by a man who knows Brahman, produces imperishable result :

अथ यो ह वा अस्माहोकात्स्वं लोकमदृष्ट्वा प्रैति स एनमविदितो न मुनक्ति यथा वेदो वाननूक्तोऽन्यद्वा कर्माकृतं यदिह वा अप्यनेवंविद् महत्पुण्यं कर्म करोति तद्वास्यां ततः क्षीयत एवात्मानमेव

लोकमुपासीत स य आत्मानमेव लोकमुपास्ते न हास्य कर्म क्षीयते अस्माद्धवेवात्मनो यत्कामयते  
तत्तत्सृजते ॥ १५ ॥

Now if a man departs this life without having seen his true future life (in the Self) then that Self, not being known, does not receive and bless him, as if the Veda had not been read, or as if a good work had not been done. Nay, even if one who does not know that (Self) would perform here on earth some great holy work, it will perish for him in the end. Let a man worship the Self only as his true state. If a man worships the Self only as his true state, his work does not perish, for whatever he desires that he gets from that Self.

Thus this text of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad expressly states that the Karma of that man who has obtained Divine knowledge is never exhausted. Nor can it be said that these Karmas are like Kāmya Karmas, performed by the ordinary worldly men in order to gain heaven. They differ from the Kāmya Karmas in this, that the wise Svanīṣṭha does not perform them with the motive of going to Svarga, but they are all performed as an offering to the Lord, and his going to Svarga and experiencing its varieties is also to serve the Lord and study the works of the Lord, as found in heaven. The Svanīṣṭha sage reaches Brahman, and it is only as an incident that he sees Svarga and other things. As a man going to a village may touch the grass on the roadside casually and incidentally, so the Svanīṣṭha devotee, while lightly touching the joys of heaven, continually progresses towards Brahman his goal; and Vidyā, with her handmaid the Karma, causes the experiences of heaven and the rest, and by her own power she carries the devotee to the highest abode of Brahman. This is the sense of the Scripture where it says *Tam vidyā*, etc. The determination of the Svanīṣṭha also to experience the varieties of Svarga must be understood in this light.

Moreover, the seeker of Brahman may not have any desire of going to Svarga at all; but Vidyā carries even such a person to Svarga, in order to test whether he is really fit for divine knowledge, whether he has got the true Vairāgya or not. In such a case, Vidyā herself carries a man to Svarga. The Nirapekṣa devotee performs no Karmas, and naturally he ought not to go to Svarga; but even he is carried there by Vidyā alone, in order to see whether he is a true Nirapekṣa or not; and whether he is fascinated by the delights of the heaven world or not. Therefore, the Scripture says, "the sage verily sees everything." This power of Vidyā does not contradict the statement that Vidyā leads to Mokṣa.

" Note.—The Svanīṣṭha has no real Kāmanā or worldly desire. He is Mumukṣu or yearning after liberation. He prays to his Lord in this way: "Let the Supreme Self, propitiated with my Niṣkāma Karmas (works performed without any selfish desire), give to

me through His grace, the (Vidyā) knowledge of His Self. And may that Vidyā lead me to the Supreme Self, showing me in the way, the heaven and its delights." Thus Vidyā is really the giver of heaven to Svanīṣṭha devotees. The heaven not being the goal of the Svanīṣṭha, but merely an incident of his journey towards God, the Karmas done by the Svanīṣṭhas cannot be said to be Kāmya Karmas.

The Devas examine the neophyte. Vidyā tells them, "O Devas! examine whether this devotee is a true Nirapekṣa or not." Thus it is at the command of Vidyā, that the Devas place all sorts of temptations in the path of the devotees in order to test the strength of their devotion and Vairāgya.

Vidyā certainly, by herself, neither gives heaven nor examines the devotees; because these are things below her, and unworthy of her greatness. Vidyā, the supreme lady, whose essence consists of pure existence, intelligence, and bliss, does not demean herself by giving to her devotees heaven, etc. She brings about that effect through the medium of her servant, the Karma; and thus the Svanīṣṭha devotees enjoy the pleasure of the Svargic regions. But there is a great difference between the Svarga of the Svanīṣṭha devotees, and that of the ordinary good man. The Svarga of the Svanīṣṭha is unperishing. He never falls from it into re-incarnation. Hence it is said 'Na tasya karma kṣiyate'—his work never perishes or gets exhausted. The Svarga is merely a halting stage towards the home of the Lord. But in the case of ordinary good men, the merit gets exhausted by enjoying the pleasures of Svarga and they come back on earth after a certain period.

In the case of the Nirapekṣas, Vidyā herself sometimes gives them Svarga in order to proclaim to all the denizens of heaven, the unselfish love of that devotee, and thus is fulfilled the saying—'Sarvam ha paśyah paśyati'—the wise sees everything (including heaven also).

The Karmas performed by the devotees of the Svanīṣṭha class, after the origination of Vidyā, together with the Prārabdha Karmas of such persons, performed before such origination, carries them to Svarga. It is these Karmas, which in their case produce Svarga. Thus two things co-operate in the case of the Svanīṣṭha in producing Svarga:—namely, the Puṇyam of the Karmas performed after the origination of Vidyā, and the Prārabdham or the stored Karmas of the time before such origination. Leaving these two sorts of Karmas untouched, Vidyā burns up every other Karma of the Svanīṣṭha devotee. In the case of the Parinīṣṭha devotee, however, Vidyā burns up the Sañchita Karmas only, but does not destroy their Prārabdha Karmas. In their case, she *loosens* the effect of the Kriyamāna Karmas. In the case of the Nirapekṣa devotees, Vidyā *burns up totally* all Sañchita Karmas, except the Prārabdha.

Thus Vidyā is independent in producing her results, Karma is merely her handmaid and co-operator.

## Adhikaraṇa VIII.

Now we shall examine the Pariniṣṭhita devotee, just as we did in the case of the Svaniṣṭha devotee. In the Upanisad (Mundaka, III., 1. 4), we have the following :

आत्मक्रीड आत्मरतिः क्रियावान् ।

The devotee is one who *revels in the Self*, he *delights in the Self*, and having performed his works (truthfulness, penance, meditation, etc.) he rests, firmly established in Brahman, the best of those who know Brahman.

This shows that the Pariniṣṭhita must perform the duty of his caste and order (Varṇa and Âśrama) for the sake of the society; because the text says he is Kriyāvān, and he must also perform the duties of devotion to the Lord (Bhagavad Dharma), because the same text says that he must *revel in the Self*, and *delight in the Self*; and this he must do out of love for God. Thus he has two functions. One, the observance of the rules of caste and order for the sake of the society in which he is born, and secondly, to perform the duties of Upāsana, out of the love which he bears towards the Lord.

**Doubt :** Here arises the doubt : Must the Pariniṣṭhita devotee perform these twofold duties, simultaneously ? or successively ? or must he renounce the first, and confine himself to the second set only ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The simultaneous performance being impossible, and the abandonment of the prescribed duties being also sinful, it follows that there is no certain and definite rule as to the performance of these duties.

**Siddhānta :** The sound conclusion, however, is that the Pariniṣṭhita must always discharge the duties of love, the Bhāgavata Dharmas—and do somehow or other, the Varṇa and Âśrama Dharmas, during his spare moments. He may even omit them altogether if he finds no time. This is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 34.

मर्यादापि तत्र बोधयलिङ्गात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ३४ ॥

सर्वथा Sarvathā, under any circumstances. अपि Api, indeed. तत्र Tatra, in their case. वा Vā, or. उभयलिङ्गात् Ubhaya-liṅgāt, on account of twofold inferential signs.

34. The Pariniṣṭhita devotee must always perform the duties of the Bhāgavata Dharma, (even to the exclusion of his caste and order Dharma), because there are twofold indications, (namely, that of Revelation and of Tradition to that effect).—463.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Api" in the Sūtra has the force of "indeed," "even." The words "Sarvathâ api" are equal to "Sarvathâ eva," meaning, "Even not regarding the general duties of one's Āśrama and Varna." The Pariniṣṭhita has the primary duty of performing the Bhāgavata Dharma. That he can never omit. The Dharma of his Āśrama may be performed in the interval of leisure moments. Because that is secondary with him. Why do we say so? The Sūtra answers it by saying, because there are twofold indications. The Śruti or Revelation says (Mundaka, II., 2. 5):

यस्मिन् योः पृथिवी चान्तरिक्षमोतं मनः सह प्रणेश्च सर्वैः ।  
तमेवैकं ज्ञानथ आत्मानमन्या वाचो विमुच्यामृतम्येष सेतुः ॥

In Him the heaven, the earth, and the sky are woven, the mind also with all the senses. Know Him alone as the Self, and leave off other words. He is the bridge of the Immortal.

This shows that according to the Śruti, the highest duty of man is to know God and leave off all other book-learning and ritualistic religion. The Smṛti also says the same. Thus Gītā, IX., 13 and 14.

महात्मानस्तु मां पार्थ दैवीं प्रकृतिमाश्रिताः ।  
अजं त्यनन्यमनसो ज्ञात्वा भूतादिमव्ययम् ॥ १२ ॥

Verily the Mahātmās, O Pārtha, partaking of My divine nature, worship with unwavering mind, having known Me, the imperishable source of beings.

मनतं कीर्तयन्तो मां यतन्तश्च दृढव्रताः ।  
नमस्यन्तश्च मां भक्त्या नित्ययुक्ता उपासते ॥ १४ ॥

Always magnifying Me, strenuous, firm in vows, prostrating themselves before Me, they worship Me with devotion, ever harmonised.

These two verses of the Gītā describe the nature of the Bhāgavata Dharma, which consists in always singing the praises of the Lord, striving after doing His will, etc. If after discharging these duties, the devotee finds time, he may perform his regular Sandhyā, etc.

The author in the next Sūtra gives additional reason in support of this view.

SŪTRA III., 4. 35.

अनभिभवञ्च दर्शयति ॥ ३ । ४ । ३५ ॥

अनभिभवम् Anabhibhavam, not to be overpowered. च Cha. and. दर्शयति Darśayati, the Śāstras declare.

35. And the scripture shows (that a Pariniṣṭhita devotee) is not overpowered (by the faults of not performing the acts of his Āśrama, when immersed in the meditation of the Lord).—464.

## COMMENTARY

In the Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 23. it is thus said :

नैनं पाप्मा नरति सर्वं पाप्मानं नरति नैनं पाप्मा नरति सर्वं पाप्मानं नरति विषयो विरजो विचिकित्सो  
ब्राह्मणो भवत्येष ब्रह्मलोकः सद्भावेन प्राप्तिरिति ह्येवात्र याज्ञवल्क्यः ॥

Evil does not overcome him, he overcomes all evil. Evil does not burn him, he burns all evil. Free from evil, free from spots, free from doubt, he becomes a (true) Brāhmaṇa : this is the Brahma-world, O King, thou hast attained it, thus spoke Yājñavalkya.

This text of Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad declares that a Pariniṣṭhita devotee is not overpowered by the evils caused by the non-performance of the duties appropriate to one's own Āśrama, if such omission is due to being absorbed in the hearing the praises of the Lord, etc. Therefore, it follows, that the worship of the Lord, hearing His praises, singing Hymns to His honour, etc., have preference over ritualistic Pūjās.

In the previous portion under Sūtra III., 4. 2, the Pūrvapakṣin, Jaimini, raised an objection to the effect that one should never abandon Karmas, and he quoted the Viṣṇu Purāṇa to the effect that Viṣṇu was the highest person and that the best method of propitiating Him was by the due discharge of the duties of one's own Āśrama. That verse is repeated here.

वर्णश्रमान्धारवता पुरुषेण परः पुमान् ।

विष्णुरारध्यते पन्था नान्यथ ततोपकारकम् ॥

Viṣṇu, the Highest Person, should be worshipped by a man who is devoted to the duties of his caste and order. There is no other way which can cause His satisfaction.

That verse does not mean that the Lord Viṣṇu requires a man to perform the duties of one's own Āśrama to the exclusion of worshipping Him. On the contrary, it means, that a person leading a household life and following the rules of good conduct laid down for his caste and Āśrama, must worship also the Lord, because such *worship* is the cause of satisfaction of the Lord. It does not mean that *Karma* is the cause of satisfaction, but *worship*. The emphasis in that verse is not on the words "the man devoted to the duties of his caste and Āśrama," but on the word "Ārādhyate" ("should be worshipped").

That this is the proper meaning of that verse, we find from a preceding passage of the same Purāṇa. In II., 13, verses 7-11, we find the following description of the God-immersed King Bharata :

शलग्रामे महाभागो भगवन्-न्यस्त-मानसः ।

स उवास चिरं कालं मैत्रेय पृथिवीपतिः ॥ ७ ॥

अहिंसादिष्वशेषेषु गुणेषु गुणिनां वरः ।

अवाप परमां काष्ठां मनसश्चापि संयमे ॥ ८ ॥



यज्ञेशाच्युत गोविन्द माधवानन्त केशव ।  
 कृष्ण विष्णो हृषीकेशेत्याह राजा स केवलम् ॥ ६ ॥  
 नान्यज् जगद् मेत्रेय किञ्चित् स्वप्नान्तरेऽपि च ।  
 तत् परं तदर्थञ्च विना नान्यदचिन्तयत् ॥ १० ॥  
 ममित्-पुष्प-कुशादानं चक्रे देवक्रियाकृते ।  
 नान्यानि चक्रे कर्माणि निःसङ्गो योगतापसः ॥ ११ ॥

7. O Maitreya ! that mighty King, with mind fixed on the Lord, dwelt for a long time in Sālagrāma.

8. That best of all the virtuous men obtained great excellence in virtues like those of harmlessness and the rest, and in controlling his mind.

9. He always used to recite the names of the Lord, such as O Yajñeśa (Lord of sacrifice) ! O Achyuta (immutable) ! O Govinda ! O Mādhava ! O Ananta (endless) ! O Keśava ! O Kṛṣṇa ! O Viṣṇu ! O Hṛṣkeśa !

10. O Maitreya ! He did not utter even in his sleep, any name but that of the Lord. He did not think on anything but on the Lord, and the attributes of the Lord, and the meaning of His names.

11. That Yogi and ascetic King, free from attachment, did not perform any ritualistic Karmas except bringing fuel (for sacrifice), plucking flowers and Kuśa, for offering to the Lord.

These verses of the Viṣṇu Purāṇa show that the King Bharata was so absorbed in the worship of the Lord that he did not perform any ritualistic Karmas. Consequently, when in the same Purāṇa we find a statement in III., 8. 9, that Viṣṇu is worshipped best by that man who discharges the duties of his caste and order, we must construe that verse in consonance with the preceding verses of the same Purāṇa. Thus it is established that a Pariniṣṭhita need not perform the duties of his Āśrama and Varna, if he cannot find time for them owing to his being employed in the worship of the Lord. For the Lord Himself says that if His Bhaktas omit to perform ritualistic Karmas they incur no guilt. In the Padma and the Ādi Purāṇas it is thus said :

मत्कर्मकुर्वतां पुंसां क्रियालोपो भवेद् यदि ।  
 तेषां कर्माणि कुर्वन्ति तिस्रः कोट्यो महर्षयः ॥  
 स्मरन्ति मम नामानि ये त्यक्त्वा कमे चाखिलम् ।  
 तेषां कर्माणि कुर्वन्ति ऋषयो भगवत्-पराः ॥

If men devoted to me and doing my work, omit to do the ritualistic work, that omission is rectified by the three hundred millions of great Ṛṣis.

Those who renouncing all other Karmas, constantly recite My name, their ritualistic work is done by great Ṛṣis devoted to the Lord.

*Adhikarāṇa IX—The Nirapekṣa devotee.*

Having thus shown the effect of Vidyā with regard to the devotees who lead a household life, and having also shown that they may, after the rise of Vidyā, perform Karmas at their option, the author now shows the same two facts with regard to those devotees who are not householders, who are not in any Āśrama, and who are called the Nirapekṣa. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad we find the account of a great female sage called Gārgī Vāchaknavi who was a knower of Brahman, but who was not a householder, for she was an unmarried lady. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad we find (III., 8. 1) Gārgī asking the following question from Yājñavalkya :

अथ ह वाचकव्युवाच ब्राह्मणा भगवन्तो हन्ताहमिमं द्वौ प्रश्नौ प्रक्ष्यामि नो चेन्मे वक्ष्यति न वै जानु  
युष्माकमिमं कश्चिद्ब्रह्मोद्यं जेतेति वृच्छ गार्गीति ॥ १ ॥

Then Vāchaknavi said : 'Venerable Brāhmaṇas, I shall ask him two questions. If he will answer them, none of you, I think, will defeat him in any argument concerning Brahman.' Yājñavalkya said : 'Ask, O Gārgī.'

*Doubt* : Now Gārgī was a person who was in no Āśrama, and still we find her examining Yājñavalkya. The question then arises, can Vidyā be acquired without following any particular Āśrama ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Vidyā cannot be acquired without following any particular Āśrama, because the due discharge of the duties prescribed for a particular Āśrama, is the cause of the origination of Vidyā ; and if a person has no Āśrama, he cannot discharge any duties, and how can Vidyā arise in such a person ?

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra answers this doubt.

SŪTRA III., 4. 36.

अन्तरा चापि तु तद्दृष्टैः ॥ ३ । ४ । ३६ ॥

अन्तरा Antarā, without (doing the duties of the Āśramas), standing outside. च Cha, indeed, verily. अपि Api, also. तु Tu, but. तद् Tad, that. दृष्टैः Dr̥ṣṭāiḥ, from seeing (the Śāstric statements about it). Because it is so seen.

36. (The Vidyā originates) verily even in those who stand outside (of all Āśramas) because it is so seen.—456.

## COMMENTARY

The word 'Tu' is employed in order to refute the Pūrvapakṣa that Karma is necessary for the origination of Vidyā. The force of the word 'Cha' is to indicate certainty. Antarās (who stand outside) are those persons who do not belong to any order or Āśrama, and consequently do

not perform the duties of any Āśrama : but who, owing to the performance of such duties in their previous incarnation, are born in this life with discrimination and dispassion, and whose mind has been purified by truth, austerity, prayers, etc., (performed in their past lives). In such persons Vidyā has its origination, even when they do not perform any karmas in their present life. Why ? Because we see so in the scriptures. Gārgi Vāchaknavi is a standing example of one not belonging to any order, and yet a Brahmin. The sense is this. If a person has duly discharged the duties of his Āśrama in his previous incarnation, but owing to some reason or other, the origination of Vidyā did not arise in him in that life and he dies before such origination, then in his next incarnation, his mind being already purified by the due discharge of the Āśrama duties in the past life, he is born ripe for Vidyā, and in the present life, by the mere coming in contact with holy men, he bursts forth into a full Jñānin possessed of all the attributes of discrimination and dispassion, and Vidyā manifests in him with all her glory. The spark of the holy sage is enough to lighten up such a soul into a conflagration of wisdom and love. Therefore, such a person does not perform, or rather stands in no need of performing, any Āśrama Dharmas. All that he requires is *Satsaṅga* (the company of the Good) in order to recall to his mind all that he had acquired in the past lives.

In the next Sūtra, the author shows that the Vidyā originates in those whose faults have been washed away by the mighty force of Satsaṅga. Satsaṅga has independent power of destroying all faults and originating Vidyā.

SŪTRA III, 4. 37.

अपि स्मर्यते ॥ ३ । ४ । ३७ ॥

अपि Api, also. स्मर्यते Smaryate, it is mentioned in the Smṛtis.

37. The Smṛtis also declares the same.—466.

COMMENTARY

In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa (II, 2. 37) we find the following :

पिबन्ति ये भगवत आत्मनः सतां, कषामृतं श्रवणपुंटेयु सम्भृतम् ।

पुनन्ति ते विषयदूषिताशयं व्रजन्ति तच्चरणसरोरुहान्तिकम् ॥

Those who hear the life-giving words from the mouths of good men, who are as if the Self of the Lord, and who fill the cups of their ears with the nectar of those words, they purify the hearts tainted with evil, and ultimately they reach the lotus feet of the Lord.

This shows that the words of the good men have the power of purifying the soul and carrying it to the feet of the Master.

Similarly, in the Bhāṣya Parāṇa (V., 12. 12), we have the following :

रहगणेतु तपसा न याति, न चेज्यया निर्वपनाद् गृहाद् वा ।  
न छन्दसा नैव जनाग्निर्मुखैः, विना महत् पादरजोऽभिषेकम् ॥

O Rahagaṇa' this state is not to be obtained through austerity, nor through Pijās, nor through feeding the poor or housing the homeless, nor through the study of the Vedas, nor by the worship of the Devas of water, fire or the sun, but through the anointing of the body with the dust of the feet of the Holy Ones, the Mahātmās.

This also shows that the dust of the feet of the Mahātmās, the service of the Holy Ones, is the unfailing means of acquiring Vidyā, and that the company of the good has greater effect than one's own exertion. The word 'Api' also indicates that moral qualifications like truthfulness and the rest are also necessary. Stronger than all ritualistic works, are the moral qualities of truthfulness, prayer, service of the Masters, celibacy, etc., as mentioned under (I., I. I., page 7).

The Nirapekṣas, who have the good fortune of getting the company of the Holy Ones, easily acquire Vidyā, because on them there is the special grace of the supreme Lord. The next Sūtra mentions this fact

SŪTRA III., I. 38.

विशेषानुग्रहश्च ॥ ३८ ॥ ३८ ॥

विशेष Viśeṣa, special. अनुग्रहः Anugrahaḥ, favour. ३ Cha. and.

38. And on such Nirapekṣas there is the special grace of the Lord, and they easily acquire Vidyā. - 467.

COMMENTARY

In the Gītā, X., 9, we have the following :

मच्चित्ता मदनप्राणा बोधयन्तः परस्परम् ।  
कथयन्तश्च मां नित्यं तुष्यन्ति च रमन्ति च ॥ ९ ॥

Mindful of Me, their life hidden in Me, illumining each other, ever conversing about Me, they are content and joyful.

तेषां सततयुक्तानां भक्तानां प्रीतिपूर्वकम् ।  
ददामि बुद्धियोगं ते येन मामुपयान्ति ते ॥ १० ॥

'To these, ever in union with Me, worshipping Me in love, I give the Yoga of discrimination by which they come unto Me.

This shows that Nirapekṣas are the special objects of His grace.

But how do you say that these verses of the Gītā apply to the Nirapekṣas, and not to devotees of every description? The words "Satatayuktānām" in the above, which literally mean "those who are in constant union with the Lord," "those who are in constant meditation on the Lord," indicate that these verses apply to these God-absorbed souls, and not to ordinary men. \*

*Adhikarana X*

In the preceding aphorisms it has been shown that householders like Yājñavalkya and the rest, and non-householders like Gārgī and others, had acquired Vidyā.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Who is higher among these two classes--whether the householders or the non-householders ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent's view is that the householders are the better of the two : because not only do they discharge all the duties laid down in the Scriptures for the householders, but over and above that, they find time for the worship of the Lord, and are devoted to Brahman. The Scripture also shows that their condition is higher than that of the non-householders, for in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad. IV., 1. 9, it is said :

तस्मिन्नुक्त्युत नीलमाहुः पिङ्गलं हरिं लोहितं च । एष पन्था ब्रह्मणा हानुवितस्तेनैति ब्रह्मविष्णुशक्रतेजसश्च ।

On that path they say that there is white, or blue, or yellow, or green, or red ; that path was found by Brahman, and on it goes whoever knows Brahman, and who has done good, and obtained splendour.

The word *Punya-kṛt* (who has done good) means who has duly discharged the duties of his order and is a good householder. Such men, the Śruti says, reach Brahman very quickly.

*Siddhānta* : This view of the Pūrvapakṣin is set aside in the next Sūtra, which declares that the Nirapekṣa devotee is higher than the householder.

SŪTRA III., 4. 39.

अतस्त्वितरत्न. ज्यायो लिङ्गाच्च ॥ ३ । ४ । ३९ ॥

अतः (Atah), from this (from the Āśramadharma condition). तु (Tu), undoubtedly. इतरत् Itarat, the other (the non-Āśrama condition). ज्यायः Jyāyah, superior, better, greater (means to acquire knowledge). लिङ्गात् Liṅgāt from indications, signs, inference. च Cha, indeed.

39. The other (namely, the Nirapekṣa) is undoubtedly superior to this (namely, the householder), as there is a mark for the same.—468.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" is employed in order to remove the doubt. The word "Cha" is used in the sense of exclusion. "From this," namely, from the condition of the householder ; "the other," namely, "the condition of the non-householder" is a "superior" or a better means of acquiring the Vidyā ; (because the facilities are greater in the latter condition). Why? Liṅgāt—because of the mark," because of the scriptural

indication. In the above passage of the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, we find that Gārgī, who is a non-householder, is greater than Yājñavalkya, a householder, and she settles the disputes of the Brāhmaṇas by examining Yājñavalkya. This is the indication of the Scripture.

The sense is this. The scriptures enjoin various Āśramas or orders of life, in order to contract the current of the outward-going natural propensities (propensities inherited by every man, from his human and animal ancestors). In other words, there are beginningless propensities with which every man is born, and the scriptural injunctions, the legal obligations and duties are meant to contract, slowly and gradually, these animal propensities. The Scriptures, when they lay down these rules, do not mean thereby that the Āśramas are good in themselves, but that they are good only inasmuch as they help to contract this current. But they in their turn become positive obstacles at a certain stage. Those whose out-going current has become checked, by having passed through the discipline of the Āśramas in their previous lives and who are born in their present lives with no out-going current, but with their hearts turned to God alone, do not stand in need of the discipline of the Āśramas; and for such souls, the law is useless. Thus it follows, that the condition of a Nirāśramī or a non-householder is superior. Therefore, in the Jābāla Upaniṣad, it has been said :

अथ हैनं जनको वेदेदो याज्ञवल्क्यमुत्समेत्योवाच भगवन् संन्यासं ब्रवीहीति ॥ स होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः ॥  
ब्रह्मवर्त्यं परिसमाप्य गृही भवेत् ॥ गृही भूत्वा वनी भवेत् ॥ वनी भूत्वा प्रव्रजेत् ॥ यदि वेतरथा ब्रह्मचर्यदिब  
प्रव्रजेद् गृहादनादा ॥ अथ पुनरब्रवी वा व्रती वा स्नातको वास्नातको वा उत्तन्नाग्निको वा यदहरेव  
विरजेत्तदहरेव प्रव्रजेत् ॥

Then Janaka, the king of the Videhas, approaching Yājñavalkya, said, "Lord, teach me Sannyāsa." To him replied Yājñavalkya, "Having completed his studentship, he is to become a householder; having been a householder, he is to become a dweller in the forest; having been a dweller in the forest, he is to wander forth : or else he may wander forth from the student's state; or from the house; or from the forest. May he have taken vows upon himself or not, may he be a Snātaka or not, may he be one whose fire has gone out or one who has no fire, etc., the moment that he gets dispassion, let him at that very moment wander forth as a Sannyāsi."

This text lays down, in its due order, first the three Āśramas, namely, that of the student (Brahmacharya), that of the householder (Grhastha), and that of the hermit (Vānaprastha). It enjoins Sannyāsa for any one of these stages, but as an exception to this general rule, and for persons who are born as Sannyāsīs, like Samvartaka and the rest, who are solely devoted to Brahman, it enjoins Sannyāsa at once without passing through the various grades. In other words, the taking of Sannyāsa depends upon the evolution of the soul; and for a fully evolved soul, the Āśramas are not at all necessary.

As regards the text "Let not a twice-born remain for a single day without being in the household order or in some Âśrama," and texts similar to this, they are meant for ordinary men, and not for the evolved souls.

*Note :* The other passages are like these : "A murderer of the gods is he who removes the fire. After having brought to the teacher his proper reward do not cut off the line of children (Taitt. Up., I., 11. 1). "To him who is without a son the world does not belong ; all beasts even know that."

*Objection :* Let it be admitted for argument's sake that the Nirapekṣa, belonging to no Âśrama, is superior to the other two who belong to an Âśrama. But there is this danger in these non-Âśramas (Nirapekṣas), that in course of time they may fall down from their high position, and enter into family life : and thus lose their condition of Nirapekṣatva. That being so, when such Nirapekṣas, once having renounced the household life, according to the rules laid down in the Śāstras, when they again take it up, they become blameworthy, according to that very Śāstra ; and their condition becomes lower than that of the other. If such Nirapekṣas, who before were not in the household order, and who properly renounced that order, come to get faith in the household order, because the life of the householders is praised in Scriptures as being Vaidic life, if out of these considerations they accept the conditions of a household life, then in their case it would not be possible to keep up that one-pointed immersion in the Lord, because the household duties would be a hindrance thereto and thus the superiority of the Nirapekṣas would be lost. The Nirapekṣas, therefore, cannot be said to be absolutely superior to the other, because in the case of the Svanīṣṭhas and the rest there is no such danger of fall, but, on the contrary, they by the due discharge of the obligatory duties of their Âśrama, get their hearts purified and rise higher and higher in the path of righteousness and have an unbroken line of love stretching from their heart to the feet of their Lord, a line which constantly grows smaller and smaller till they are drawn to the very feet of their master. For this reason also Nirapekṣas cannot be said to be superior to the others for their condition is that of most dangerous, unstable equilibrium.

The objection above raised is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 40.

तद्भूतस्य तु नातद्भावो जैमिनेऽपि नियमात्तद्भावविभ्यः ॥ ३ । ४ । ४० ॥

*तद्भूतस्य* Tad-bhūtasya, of one who has become That, who has realised Brahman through desirelessness or Nirapekṣatā. *तु* Tu, but. *न* Na, not ; or it is

not. अतद्भावः Atadbhāvaḥ, the absence of that condition : the falling away from concentrated devotion to him. जैमिनेः Jaimineḥ, of Jaimini. अपि Api, even. नियम Niyama (Niyamât) because of the rule (that their senses do not go to other objects), by restraining (the senses by the intense desire for Brahman). अतद्-रूप Atad-rûpa (Atadrûpât) because of the destruction of the desire for other than Brahman, by not desiring anything else than Brahman (Rûpa, desire). अभावेभ्यः Abhāvebhyaḥ, and because of the absence of that, and from the absence of any other (Āśramadharmā).

40. But of him who has become that (that is, who has become a Nirapekṣa devotee) there is no becoming not that (there is no falling from that state) according to Jaimini also. For three reasons : (i) Because of the rule that their senses are *restrained* to thirst of God only ; (ii) Because of the destruction of *desires* for any objects *other than God* ; and (iii) Because of the *absence* of household life in the case of persons like Gārgî and the rest.—469.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" is used in the above Sūtra to remove the doubt. Of that person who has become that, namely, who has realized Brahman through the meditation of a Nirapekṣa, there is not falling away from that state, namely, such a Nirapekṣa never is in danger and actually never does lose his concentrated devotion to the Lord. There is no fear of such a person being attracted to household life again. For Jaimini also holds the same opinion on this point as I, Bādarāyaṇa, do. On this point there is no difference of opinion between us two. Because of the rule that the senses of such persons are devoted towards Brahman and do not go to anything else than Brahman. And because all desires other than that of Brahman are destroyed in them, such as we find in the case of Gārgî and the rest who always were God-devoted and never accepted the household life.

In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa (VII, 15. 35) we also find the same :

कामादिभिरनाविद्धं प्रशान्तास्त्रिभुक्तिं यत् ।

चित्तं ब्रह्मसुखस्पृष्टं नेवोत्तिष्ठेत् कश्चित् ॥

That heart which is once touched by the love of Brahman (and has once enjoyed that bliss) never can leave that Brahman and be pierced by lusts and desires, for it is always calm and all such desires have become finally quiet in them.

Though Jaimini lays stress on Karmakāṇḍa, yet he also is forced, by the strength of those texts which describe the Nirapekṣa devotee, to admit that such a devotee never falls into the world again. He admits



that such a person need not perform Karma, because he has already performed it in his past life and is born a perfect being.

The next Sūtra shows that the Nirapekṣa devotee is superior to the Svaṇiṣṭha devotees. The Svaṇiṣṭha devotee is in danger of falling, not so a Nirapekṣa. The texts like "the Seer sees everything," etc., show that Vidyā can lead the Nirapekṣa to Svarga and other higher regions, and there such Nirapekṣas may enjoy the delights of Indra's Heaven, etc. Is there no danger of their losing their love for Brahman in the midst of such delights? The next Sūtra answers that.

SŪTRA III. 4. 41.

न चाधिकारिकमपि पतनानुमनान्तदयोगात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ४१ ॥

n Na, not. च Cha, and : only. अधिकारिकम् Ādhikārikam, the rulership, the position of the status of Indra, etc., the authority such as that of Indra, etc. अपि Api, also: It includes the worldly pleasures also. पतन Patana, of fall. अनुमानात् Anumānāt, from the inference. तद्-अयोगात् Tad-ayogāt, by not thinking of that : by not desiring that.

41. The Nirapekṣa devotee does not desire even the cosmic offices ; because there is fear of fall in it ; and because they have no wish for those posts.—470.

COMMENTARY

The word "and" in the Sūtra has the force of "only." The word "also" means the inclusion of the worldly happiness also. The word Ādhikārikam means the office of world-rulers like Indra and the rest. The Nirapekṣa devotees do not desire even such high offices. Why? Because there is danger of fall from such offices ; as we find stated in the Gītā (VIII, 16):

आम्रह्मभुवनल्लोकाः पुनरावर्तिनोऽर्जुन ।

मामुपेत्य तु कौन्तेय पुनर्जन्म न विषते ॥ १६ ॥

All the worlds, below the world of Brahmā, come and go, O Arjuna ; but he who cometh unto Me, O Kaunteya, knoweth birth no more.

The reason of their not falling from the heaven-world is that they had even in the beginning of their entering in the heaven-world no strong desire for enjoying that world.

The Purāṇic authority the reader can find out for himself.

Note : Such, for example, as we find in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, XI, 14. 14 :

न पारमेष्ठ्यं न महेन्द्रधिष्यदम्

न मार्वाभौमं न रसाधिपत्यम् ।

न धोगसिद्धीरपुनर्मवं वा

मय्यर्पितास्मेच्छति मद्भिनाऽन्धम् ॥

He who has resigned himself to Me does not wish to get anything other than Myself. not even the Supreme rule of a Brahmā or the pomp and glory of an Indra or the status of the sole monarch of the whole world, or the rulership of the ocean or the spiritual powers of an Occultist, nay, not even the Mukti consisting in non-rebirth. The only Mukti that he wants is the eternal freedom to serve the Lord of Eternity.

Thus though through the glory of Vidyā a Bhakta may get these heavenly enjoyments, yet since these enjoyments comes to him unsolicited, they do not cause any cessation in the one-pointed current of His love towards the Lord. Therefore, there is no danger of fall in the case of such a devotee. The next Sūtra shows that he is superior to the Pariniṣṭhita also.

SŪTRA III., 4. 42.

उपपूर्वकमपि त्वेके भावमशनवत्तदुक्तम् ॥ ३ । ४ । ४२ ॥

उपपूर्वकम् Upapūrvakam, that which begins with "Upa," i.e., "Upāsanam," worship. अपि Api, also, only. Has the force of exclusion. तु Tu, but, undoubtedly. Sets aside the opposite view. एके Eke, some : namely, the Âtharvāṇikas. भावम् Bhāvam, devotion, faith. अशनवत् Aśanavat, just as food. तद् Tad, that. उक्तम् Uktam, is explained.

42. Some Śākhins declare that Upāsanā alone is the object of desire for the Nirāpekṣas, and this faith of theirs is like food to them, as has been declared in the Śrutis.—471.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Api" has the force of exclusion here, the word "Tu" removes the contrary thought of the opposite view, the word "Eke" refers to the Âtharvāṇikas. The Nirāpekṣa devotees wish only to worship alone and nothing else, and their faith is the only enjoyment which they crave, as the starving man craves for food. This is mentioned in the Gopāla Uttara Tāpani in the verse. "Bhaktirasya bhajanam, etc., sachchidāṇḍaikaikarase bhakti yoge tiṣṭhati, etc." These verses show that love of the Lord or Bhakti is the only enjoyment which these devotees seek; this is the only Rasa which they crave.

Some Bhāgavatas say that it means that a devotee of the Lord may be in any place (in heaven or in hell, on earth or in the nether world). He, by worshipping the Lord Hari there, gets all the enjoyments that he desires, according to his capacities, to the brimful; because the Śruti says so—"Aśnute sarvān kāmān, etc."—he enjoys all objects of desire, etc. As the Lord enjoys all the objects, encompassed within the three worlds, by His three feet, so do His Bhaktas also.

The appropriate Purāṇic texts must be found out by the reader.

Note : The following text of a Purāṇa is to the above effect.

एकान्तिनो यस्य न कंचनार्थं  
वाञ्छन्ति ये वै भगवत्प्रपन्नाः ।  
अत्यद्भुतं तच्चरितं सुमंगलं  
गायन्त आनन्दसमुद्रमग्नाः ॥

His Ekāntin devotees do not desire anything other than Him, for they are solely resigned to the Lord. They are immersed in the ocean of bliss, singing constantly the auspicious and the extremely wonderful deeds and glory of the Lord.

The next Sūtra shows by giving another reason that the Mukti called Sālokya and Sāmīpya is achieved by the Nirapekṣas, without any effort on their part.

SŪTRA III., 4. 43.

बहिस्तुभयथास्मृतेराचाराच्च ॥ ३ । ४ । ४३ ॥

बहिः Bahiḥ, outside. तु Tu, but indeed. उभयथा Ubhaya thā, both ways, in either case. स्मृतेः Smṛteḥ, on account of the statement of the Smṛti. आचाराच्च Āchārāt, because of custom or conduct. च Cha, and.

43. The Nirapekṣas are indeed outside the world, for two-fold reasons given by the Smṛtis and the conduct of the Lord.—472.

COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" has the force of exclusion. The Nirapekṣas, though living in the midst of the five-fold distractions of the world of sense, yet are, as a matter of fact, outside its entanglements. Why do we say so ? Because of the two-fold reasons, namely, the Lord being attached to His devotees and the devotees being attached to the Lord. As says the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

विसृजति हृदयं न यस्य सान्नात ।  
हरिर्वशाभिहितोऽप्यधौघनाशः ।  
प्रणयरसनया धृताङ्घ्रिवदभ्यः  
स भवति भागवतः प्रथानः ॥

Hari, the Supreme Lord, never leaves the heart of His devotees because He is attracted to it as if by an unconquerable force as the bee to the flower ; and though He is destroyer of all sins, He is bound with the chains of love to His devotees. Similarly, He is the best of the Bhāgavatas who is bound to the lotus feet of the Lord, by a similar chain of love.

This verse shows that he is the best of the devotees who has bound the lotus feet of the Lord with the rope of His love, and whose heart is like a flower in full bloom attracting constantly the Lord to live in it. This

verse further shows, that as a precious stone gets its glory enhanced by being inlaid in a golden setting, or as a master gets his glory enhanced by being surrounded by faithful servants; so is the mutual relation of the Lord and His devotees. Such is the teaching of the Smṛtis and the practice of the good men.

So also the Lord has said in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, XI., 14 16 :

निरपेक्षं मुनिं शान्तं निर्वैरं समदर्शनम् ।

अनुव्रजाम्यहं नित्यं पूयेयेत्यङ्घ्रिरेखुभिः ॥

I constantly follow My devotee who is a Nirapekṣa, a meditative saint, peaceful, hated by none and hated by none, who treats all equally, sanctifying with the dust of My feet the places that he treads upon.

These two-fold reasons show that the union of the Lord with His devotees is both internal and external, that the Lord is in the heart of the devotees, as well as constantly follows the footsteps of His lovers.

These verses also show that the cause of wordly bondage consists in turning one's face away from the Lord and Mukti is the constant state of having the Lord before one's eyes both in his heart and outside of it.

### *Adhikaraṇa XI.—God is the purveyor of the Nirapekṣa Bhaktas.*

In the preceding Sūtras it has been mentioned that the Nirapekṣas are superior to other devotees, because they are constantly devoted to Hari and have no desire for the joys of heaven, even though that heaven may be the highest heaven of Brahmā. Now the author describes that these Nirapekṣas have not only no desire for heavenly joys, but that they have no anxieties for their wordly wants, etc.

In the Taittiriya Âraṇyaka, (III., 14. 1), we find the Lord described as the purveyor of His devotees.

भर्ता सन् त्रियमाणो विभर्ति । एको देवो बहुधा निविष्टः ॥

Being the supporter (of all) He specially supports His devotees who worship Him with love. He, the one God, exists in manifold forms.

**Doubt :** Here arises the doubt: Are the wordly wants of the Nirapekṣa devotees supplied by the self-exertion of the devotees themselves or by the Lord Himself?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The opponent maintains the view that the devotees must supply their wordly wants by self exertion, because they love their Lord so much that they do not wish to put Him to the trouble of exerting to supply their wants.

**Siddhānta :** The next Sūtra shows that the Lord Himself supplies the wants of His Nirapekṣa devotees.

SŪTRA III., 4. 44.

स्वामिनः फलश्रुतेरित्यात्रेयः ॥ ३ । ४ । ४४ ॥

स्वामिनः Svāminah, from the Lord. फल Phala, about the fruit. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, because of hearing. इति Iti, so. आत्रेयः Ātreyaḥ, Ātreya holds.

44. From the Lord come all supplies of the wants of the Nirapekṣa devotees, because of the Śruti texts about fruit quoted above. This is the opinion of Dattātreya.—473.

## COMMENTARY

The bodily and worldly wants of the Nirapekṣas are fulfilled by the Supreme Lord Himself. Why do we say so? Because of the Śruti texts—"Bhartāsan bhriyamāno bibharti"—being the supporter of all, He supports His devotees who worship Him with love. Because the text calls him Bhartā or supplier, Dattātreya is of opinion that the Lord supplies all wants. We find this in the Gītā also (IX., 22) :

अनन्याश्चिन्तयन्तो मां ये जनाः पर्युपासते ।

तेषां नित्याभियुक्तानां योगक्षेमं वहाम्यहम् ॥ २२ ॥

I purvey all objects of worldly livelihood and their preservation for those Bhaktas of Mine who are always thinking of Me and who worship Me alone, thinking of no other.

So also in the Padma Purāṇa, it is said :

दर्शनध्यानसंस्पर्शैर्मत्सकूर्मविद्वज्जमा ।

स्वान्यपत्यानि पुष्पान्ति तथाहमपि पद्मज ॥

O lotus-born Brahma, I maintain my children (devotees) as the birds, tortoises and fish nourish their young ones, by looking after them, by thinking of them and by touching them, respectively.

*Note* : The fishes nourish their young by looking after them. The tortoises do so by thinking on their young ones and the birds actually feed their young ones by physical contact. The Lord nourishes His devotees by all these threefold processes.

To say that the devotees do not wish to put their Lord to the trouble of supplying their trivial worldly wants is a wrong conception of the relation between the Lord and His devotees. The devotees never entertain any such notion as "May the Lord Hari nourish us by supplying our worldly wants." So they cannot be said to put the Lord to trouble. Moreover, the Lord being Satyasaṅkalpa, true-willed one, His very thought supplies all the wants of His devotees ; and so it is no exertion to Him to supply the wants of His devotees. The fruit described in the Śrutis consists in getting all one's wants supplied by merely worshipping the Lord, without praying Him to supply such wants (without asking Him, "Give us this day our daily bread"). In fact, the Śruti says "Bhriyamāna," by being worshipped, He supplies. It does not say

"by being prayed to He supplies," for the maxim is "Worship the Lord and ask for nothing, and you will have everything."

The author in the next Sūtra shows by an illustration the invariable nature of the Lord's providence and purveyership in regard to these Nirapekṣa devotees.

SŪTRA III., 4. 45.

आर्त्विज्यमित्यौडुलोमिस्तस्मै हि परिकीर्यते ॥ ३ । ४ । ४५ ॥

आर्त्विज्यम् Ārtvijyam, the priest's work. इति Iti, just like. औडुलोमिः Auḍulomiḥ, Auḍulomi thinks. तस्मै Tasmai, for that. हि Hi, because. परिकीर्यते Parikīryate, he is employed. He is purchased.

45. According to Auḍulomi, the Lord sells himself to His devotees like the sacrificial priest to his Yajamānas. —474.

COMMENTARY

The word "Iti" in the Sūtra has the meaning of "like." The supporting of His Nirapekṣa devotees by the Lord, is like the supporting of his Yajamānas by the sacrificial priest called Ṛtvij. Because the Lord is purchased by those Bhaktas, in order that He may supply all their worldly wants. As says the Viṣṇu Dharma :

तुलसीदलमात्रेण जलस्य चुलुकेन च ।

विक्रीणीते स्वमात्मानं भक्तभ्यो भक्तवत्सलः ॥

The Lover of His devotees sells His very self to those Bhaktas of His in exchange of a mere Tulasī leaf or a handful of water.

The sacrificial priests are as if purchased or engaged by the Yajamāna to perform all his sacrifices in their detail in lieu of the fee which he gives them. Auḍulomi being a believer in impersonal God, his Bhakti is a sort of barter, and is wanting in that higher element of Bhakti which consists in doing all acts in order to please the Lord and not from a spirit of exchange. But the Nirapekṣas are higher than Auḍulomi Bhaktas because they do not cherish even the desire that the Lord should supply their worldly wants.

SŪTRA III., 4. 46.

श्रुतेश्च ॥ ३ । ४ । ४६ ॥

श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, because of the Vedic statement. च Cha, and.

46. And from the Vedic text also the same is learnt. —475.

## COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad it is taught that the prayers of the sacrificial priests are potent enough to procure all the desires of the Yajamāna who engages the priest. Thus in Chhândogya Upaniṣad, 1., 7. 9, it is said :

अथानेनैव ये चैतस्मादर्वाञ्चो लोकास्तान्<sup>११</sup>श्वाप्नोति मनुष्यकामा<sup>१२</sup>श्च तस्मादु हैवंविदुद्राता ब्रूयात् ॥ ८ ॥  
 कं ते काममायानीत्येष ह्येव कामगानस्येष्टे य एवं विद्वान् साम गायति साम गायति ॥ ९ ॥

Now through this alone (*i.e.*, through the grace of the Lord dwelling in the eye) he obtains all the lower worlds and the desires of human beings. Therefore, the Udgātri who knows this should say (to his Yajamāna), "To accomplish what particular desire of yours, shall I sing out." For he, who knowing this, sings out the Sāman, is able to accomplish the desires (of his Yajamāna) through his song, yea, through his song.

This text of the Upaniṣad clearly shows that the fruit of the work performed by the priest accrues to the client and not to him.

Thus it has been demonstrated that the Lord supplies the wants of His Nirapekṣa devotees, because he is purchased by them, in the same way as the priest supplies all the wants of his Yajamānas by his prayers.

*Adhikaraṇa XVII.*

The author now shows the duties of these Bhaktas after their having acquired the Vidyā. In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 23), it is said :

तस्मादेवंविच्छान्तोदान्त उपरतस्तिष्ठुः समाहितो भूत्वाऽत्मन्येवात्मानं पश्यति सर्वमात्मानं पश्यति नने पाप्मा तरति सर्वं पाप्मानं तरति पाप्मा तपति नैनं सर्वं पाप्मानं तपति विषापो विरजो विचिकित्सो ब्राह्मणो भवत्येष ब्रह्मलोकः सम्राज्येनं प्रापितोऽसीति होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः सोऽहं भगवते विदेहान् ददामि मां चापि सह दास्यायेति ॥ २३ ॥  
 आत्मनस्तु कामाय सर्वं प्रियं भवत्यात्मा वा अरे द्रष्टव्यः श्रोतव्यो मन्तव्यो निदिध्यासितव्यो मेत्रेय्यात्मनो वा अरे दर्शनेन अवशेन मत्या विज्ञानेनेदं<sup>१३</sup> सर्वं विदितम् ॥ ५ ॥

He, therefore, that knows it, after having become quite subdued, satisfied, patient and collected, sees Self in the Self, sees all as Self. Evil does not overcome him, he overcomes all evil. Evil does not burn him, he burns all evil. Free from evil, free from spots, free from doubt he becomes a (true) Brāhmaṇa ; this is the Brahma-world, O King ; thou hast attained it,—thus spoke Yājñavalkya : I give you, venerable Sir, the entire country of the Videhas, together with myself, for serving you, (said Janaka Vaideha). In the same Upaniṣad (II., 4. 5), it is said : "Verily, the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be perceived, to be marked, O Maitreyi. When we see, hear, perceive, and know the Self, then all this is known."

*Doubt* : Here the attributes beginning with Śama and ending with Dhyāna have been mentioned as the qualifications which the seeker of Brahman must build into his life (namely, the qualifications of Śama, Dama, Uparati, Titikṣā, Samādhāna, Śravaṇa, Darśana, Manana and Dhyāna). Must all these qualifications and the actions denoted by them be performed by the Nirapekṣa devotees or must they simply meditate on the essential nature, qualities and actions of the Lord ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : In answer to this doubt the opponent maintains that though Vidyā might have originated, yet it does not become stable without the above attributes of Śama, Dama, etc. Therefore, these must be performed.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra answers this.

SŪTRA III., 1. 47.

सहकार्यन्तरविधिः पक्षेण तृतीयं तद्वतोविध्यादिवत् ॥ ३ । ४ । ४७ ॥

सहकारी Sahakāri, auxiliary. अन्तर Antara, the other. विधिः Vidhiḥ, the injunction about. पक्षेण Pakṣeṇa, in one sense. तृतीयम् Tṛtiyam, the third, i.e., the mental. तद्वतः Tadvataḥ, of him who has that. विधि-आदिवत् Vidhi-ādivat, just as in the case of injunction, etc.

47. For the Nirapekṣa devotee who desires only the grace of the Lord, the mental meditation or Dhyāna is the third injunction as an alternative to Śravaṇa and Manana which are enjoined as helps to the acquisition of Vidyā with regard to the other kind of devotees. It is an injunction similar to the injunction of Sandhyā, etc.—476.

#### COMMENTARY

The attributes of Śama, Dama, etc., were shown in the Sūtra III., 4. 26 (p. 639) as being necessary in the origination of Vidyā along with the attributes of sacrifice, alms, etc. In the present Adhikarāṇa these qualifications are looked upon from another aspect, namely, not as a Sahakāri cause in originating Vidyā but as necessary even after the origination of Vidyā. The Upaniṣad text is in the form of a Vidhi or command, and, therefore, these acts of Śama, Dama, etc., must be performed. They are Vidhis or injunctions, with regard to those devotees, who are leading a household life, namely, the Svanīṣṭha and the Parinīṣṭhita, because the text above quoted makes an original statement (Apūrvā) with regard to these Sāśrama devotees. But with regard to Nirapekṣa devotees the above texts are no Vidhis, because with regard to these Nirāśrama devotees, these qualifications are naturally found in them, and so there is no use of their being ordained with regard to them. Therefore, the Nirapekṣa devotees need not waste their time after Śama, Dama, etc., which are their natural qualities but they must constantly remember the form of the Lord, His essential attributes and deeds. Therefore, the Sūtra says : Tṛtiyam tadvataḥ. This is a third alternative to the two alternatives already mentioned before. To the Nirapekṣa devotee, who has the desire simply to get the grace of the Lord (and has no other desires), these Śama, Dama,



etc., form a third method. He must perform these mentally, because the Śruti says he is to be reached by mind alone. Or the word third method may mean the mental meditation as contrasted with Śravaṇa or hearing, which is a bodily act; and Manana or the recitation of Mantras, which is a vocal act. Compared with these bodily and vocal acts, this mental Dhyāna is the third. In order to show, that this mental Dhyāna is also necessary, the author gives an illustration by saying Vidhi ādivat "just as in the case of the injunctions and the rest." As a Śāśrama devotee must necessarily perform his Sandhyā prayers, etc., for the performance of Sandhyā, etc., is a compulsory duty (Vidhi) on him, so with regard to the non-householder, the Nirapekṣa devotee, the performance of Śama, Dama, etc., is not a necessary duty. On the other hand, the Nirapekṣa devotee, in whom Vidyā has originated, has the duty of constantly meditating on the form and qualities of the Lord.

*Note :* As the Sandhyā Upāsana is the duty of the householder devotee, so the Dhyāna on the Lord is a duty, or rather may be considered as a duty, enjoined on the non-householder devotee.

This does not mean that the non-householder devotee is prohibited from performing Japa (silent prayers) and Archanā (or worship of the Lord) with flowers, incense, etc. Because the word Dhyāna includes Japa, Archanā, etc. Or Dhyāna is specifically enjoined on the Nirapekṣa devotee, because Dhyāna must be the predominant note of His worship, while Japa, etc., should occupy a secondary position. Thus has been described the three kinds of seekers of knowledge (Vidyā); and the particular form of Pūjā, meditation, etc., fitted for them.

### Adhikaraṇa XIII.

It has been taught before, how the acquisition of Vidyā takes place in the case of the three kinds of devotees called the Svaniṣṭha, etc. Now are described the methods of making this Vidyā a stable quality of the mind.

*Viśaya :* In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad at the end (VIII, 15. 1) we find the following :

तदेतद्ब्रह्मा प्रजापतय उवाच प्रजापतिर्मनवे मनुः प्रजाभ्य आचार्य्यकुलादिदमधीत्य यथाविधानं गुरोः कर्म्मतिशेषेणाभिसमावृत्य कुटुम्बे शुचौ देशे स्वाध्यायमधीयानो धार्मिकान्निवदधात्मनि सन्वेन्द्रियाणि सम्प्रतिष्ठाप्याहि<sup>१</sup> सनत्सर्व्वभूतान्यन्यत्र तीर्थेभ्यः स खल्वेवं वर्तयन्त्यावदायुषं ब्रह्मलोकमिसम्पद्यते न च पुनरावर्तते न च पुनरावर्तते ॥ १ ॥

Verily this doctrine Viṣṇu taught to the four-faced Brahmā. Brahmā taught to Svayambhūva Manu, Manu to his people. One should learn the Veda in the family of his teachers, making presents to his Gura according to law and doing his works fully,

one should return home and enter into household life. In a sacred spot, he should recite the holy scriptures, and perform good deeds, concentrating all his senses on the Supreme Self. He should not injure any living creature except in sacrifices. He, verily, thus passing his life, attains on death the world of Brahman and never returns therefrom, never returns therefrom.

Here the Upaniṣad concludes by describing the householder condition as the highest.

*Doubt* : Since the Upaniṣad winds up with the householder, it appears that persons other than householders cannot get Vidyā. The doubt is : Does Vidyā originate in Âśramas other than that of a householder ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Since the Upaniṣad ends with the householder, it follows that Vidyā does not originate in any other stage of life. No doubt there are certain passages in the Upaniṣad which praise renunciation. They are merely Arthavādas or glorificatory passages and must not be interpreted as ordaining Sannyāsa. They mean that the Brahman is such a great object that one must renounce everything for His sake. The Upaniṣads teach, however, that Brahman is acquired only by the householder who follows strictly the rules of the Upaniṣads. This is the proper interpretation of the concluding passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad. If the Upaniṣad did not mean to teach this, then why should it conclude in glorifying the householder ?

*Siddhānta* : This objection raised by the Pūrvapakṣin is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 48.

कृत्वाभावान्न गृहिणोपसंहारः ॥ ३ । ४ । ४८ ॥

कृत्वा Kṛtsna, of all (duties). भावान् Bhāvāt, owing to the existence. उ Tu, but, indeed. गृहिणा Gṛhiṇā, by a householder. उपसंहारः Upasambhārah, the conclusion, the goal, salvation.

48. The Chhândogya Upaniṣad concludes with the householder's stage, because of the fact that this stage includes all the others.—477.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" is used in order to remove the doubt. The object of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad in concluding by describing the Gṛhastha Âśrama is not to teach that the Gṛhastha alone attain Mukti, by the due discharge of the duties of their Âśrama ; but it means to inculcate that the Gṛhastha Âśrama includes all other Âśramas, and the duties prescribed for the Gṛhasthas include the duties prescribed for other Âśramas also. The Scriptures teach several duties as incumbent on the householders, and which are to be performed with great effort and exertion. They have

to perform the duties (Dharmas) of other Âśramas also, according to their power, such for example, non-injury, (harmlessness, control of senses, etc). Though these latter are the specific Dharmas of a Sannyâsi, yet a householder is also required to perform them, according to his *power*. Since the Grhastha Âśrama includes the Dharmas of all the other Âśramas ; therefore, the Upaniṣad properly winds up with the household order. So also we find in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa : "All who eat the food of begging, whether they be Sannyâsins or Brahmachârins, all of these are established in the Grhastha Âśrama, therefore, the stage of the householder is the best of all."

*Note :* Manu also praises the Grhastha order (VI., 89, 90) :

"And in accordance with the precepts of the Veda and of the Smṛti, the house-keeper is declared to be superior to all of them ; for he supports the other three."

"As all rivers, both great and small, find a resting-place in the ocean, even so, men of all orders find protection with householders."

Because the Upaniṣads mention other Âśramas also (and because they teach that those who perform properly the duties of their Âśramas get Mukti), it follows that when a particular Upaniṣad winds up with the household order, it must be understood to mean that the household order contains Dharmas of all other orders and hence it has been mentioned in the epilogue. This fact is mentioned in the next Sûtra.

SŪTRA III., 1. 49.

मौनवदितरेषामप्युपदेशात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ४६ ॥

मौनवत् Maumavat, just as silence. इतरेषाम् Itareṣām, of others. अपि Api, also. उपदेशात् Upadeśât, because they are taught, or enjoined.

49. In the Upaniṣad other Âśramas have also been taught as leading to Mukti, just like (the condition of a Maunî who keeps) the vow of silence.—478.

COMMENTARY

The last passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad follows the passage in which the Mauna has been taught. In Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (VIII., 5. 1-2) we find all the three orders described as leading to Mukti :

"Now, that which the wise call Yajña (sacrifice, the characteristic mark of household order) is verily the Divine Wisdom : through Divine Wisdom the knower obtains the Lord. Similarly, that which the wise call Iṣṭam is also the Divine Wisdom. For having desired the Self, he obtains the Self.

"Now what the wise call Sattrâyaṇa is also Divine Wisdom, for through Divine Wisdom alone, he obtains from the True, the salvation of his self. Similarly, what the wise call (Mauna) the vow of silence is really Divine Wisdom, for through Divine Wisdom alone, one after knowing the Lord, becomes absorbed in meditation and becomes silent."

*Note :* These two verses show that Yajña, Sattrâyaṇa and Mauna are all equally means of salvation.

This fact is referred to in a preceding passage also of the same Upaniṣad (Chh. Up., II., 23. 1) :

“There are three branches of (the tree called) Dharma. Sacrifice, study and charity constitute one branch. Austerity is another, and to dwell as a Brahmachārin in the house of one's preceptor, always mortifying the body while so dwelling, is the third. All these are blessed and obtain the worlds of the blessed. But the God-absorbed alone obtains immortality (Release).”

Similarly in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (IV., 4. 22. See page 621 (*ante*.) we find :

“Brāhmanas seek to know him by the study of the Veda, by sacrifice, gifts, by penance, by fasting, and he who knows him, becomes a Muni. Wishing for that world (of Brahman) only, mendicants leave their homes.”

The above texts show that the Upaniṣads teach that the highest end of man (namely, Release) can be realised in any of the four Āśramas, if the man discharges rightly the duties of his Āśrama. The Chhândogya Upaniṣad, therefore, when it winds up with the Gṛhastha Āśrama, refers to this particular Āśrama because it includes all the others.

*Objection* : The Sūtra uses the word Itareṣāṃ in the plural number, while it ought to have used the word Itarayoh in the dual number : because *two* other Āśramas are only left and not more than two.

This objection is answered by the fact that as these *two* Āśramas contain many sub-divisions, so they are spoken of in the plural.

*Note* : Thus the Brahmachārī Āśrama has four sub-divisions, called Sāvitra, Brāhma, Prājāpatya and Bhṛad. The Vānaprasthas have also four sub-divisions, *viz.*, Phenapa, Uḍambara, Vaikhānasa, and Vāḷakhilya. The Sannyāsa has also four sub-divisions, *viz.*, Kuṭichaka, Bahūdaka, Hauṣa and Niṣkriya.

The Chhândogya and other Upaniṣads mention the Brahmacharya and the Vānaprastha Āśramas also, in the same way as they mention the Sannyāsa (Mauna) and the Gṛhastha Āśramas. A man can attain Mukti in any one of these four Āśramas. He may be a Naiṣṭhika Brahmachārī who never marries. Or he may be a Svaniṣṭha Gṛhastha or he may be a Vānaprastha or a Sannyāsin, and get Mukti. Mukti is not the special privilege of any particular Āśrama.

Thus in the Jābāla Upaniṣad the four Āśramas are ordained (and it is expressly taught therein that Mukti is attainable in any one of those stages).

स होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः ॥ ब्रह्मचर्यं परिसमाप्य गृही भवेत् ॥ गृहीभूत्वा वनी भवेत् ॥ वनी भूत्वा प्रज्जेत् ॥ यदि वेतरथा ब्रह्मचर्यादेव प्रज्जेद्गृहादनाद्वा ॥ अथ पुनरावनी वा व्रतीवा स्नातको वास्नातको वा उत्सन्नाग्निको वा यदहरेव विरजेत्तदहरेव ॥

Let a person after finishing studentship (Brahmacharya) become a householder ; after finishing the householder stage let him become a hermit or forest-dweller, and after finishing the hermit's stage, let him wander forth (become a Sannyāsin). Or he may

become a wanderer after finishing studentship (Brahmacharya) or after the householder's life or after the forest-life (if he has excess of Vairāgya). Or again whether he has taken a degree or not taken a degree, whether he is an unmarried graduate, or a solitary widower graduate, whether his household sacred fire has been extinguished, or he has never lit any sacred fire, the day he gets the world-weariness, let him on that very day wander forth renouncing the world.

This shows that *all* men of *all* Āśramas are entitled to enter the Sannyāsa Āśrama. In a latter passage of the same Jābāla Upaniṣad, the Nirapekṣas are also described in the sentence beginning with "Tatra paramahansa-nām," etc., as given below :

तदेके तत्र परमहंसानामसंवर्त्तकारुणीश्वेतकेतुर्दुर्वासश्चमुनिदाघजडभरतदत्तात्रेयरैवतकप्रभृतयोऽव्यक्तलिङ्गा  
अव्यक्ताचारा अमुन्मत्ता उन्मत्तवदाचरन्तस्त्रिदण्डं कमण्डलु शिष्यं पात्रं जलपवित्रं शिखां यज्ञोपवीतं च  
इत्येतत्सर्वं भूःस्वाहेत्यष्टु परित्यज्यात्मानमन्विच्छेत् ॥ यथा जातरूपधरो निर्यन्थो निष्परिग्रहस्तत्तन्मन्त्रमार्गे  
सम्यक्सम्पन्नः शुद्धमानसः प्राणसन्धारणार्थं यथोक्तकाले विमुक्तो भैक्षमाचरन्नुदरपात्रेण लाभालाभयोः समो  
भूत्वा शून्यागारदेवगृहवृक्षकूटवल्मीकवृक्षमूलकुलालशालाग्निकोत्रगृहनदीपुलिनगिरिकुहरकन्दरकोटरनिर्जरस्थशिङ्गेषु  
तेष्वनिकेतवास्थप्रयत्नो निर्ममः नाम परमहंसो शुक्लानपरायणोऽध्यात्मनिष्ठोऽशुभकर्मनिर्मूलनपरः सन्न्यासेन  
देहत्यागं करोति स परमहंसो नामेति ॥ ६ ॥

Among the Paramahansas are Samvartaka (Prajapati), Āruṇi, Svetaketu, Durvāsa, R̥bhu, Nidāgha, Jaḍabharata, Dattātreya, Raivataka and others who had no external marks of caste or Āśrama, who had no particular mode of conduct or discipline, whose conduct was opposed to caste rules, and who though not insane, acted as if they were insane. Let a man, therefore, uttering the words Bhūḥ Svāhā, throw into the water his staff, the Kamaṇḍalu, his vessels, his water-strainer, his sling for carrying the load, his sacred tuft of hair and his sacred thread. Having thrown all these caste-marks, let him go out in search of His Self. Wearing the form in which he was born (namely, perfectly nude), above all pairs of opposite (such as heat and cold, etc.), renouncing all books, studies, renouncing acceptance of alms, having obtained full knowledge of the true Brahman, pure in heart, begging alms only to maintain his life, only on fixed hours of the day in the vessel of his stomach (that is, keeping the food into no vessel but putting it into his stomach), constantly thinking "I am God," free from gain and loss, dwelling in empty temples or huts or an anthill or under a tree or where the cooking earthen vessels are thrown, or where the sacred fire is kept, on the bank of a river or in a mountain, forest or cave or in the hollow of a tree, or near a waterfall or on an open plateau. Without any house, or fixed residence, without any effort to collect anything, without the idea of proprietorship about anything, always meditating on the pure Brahman with his gaze turned inward, constantly trying to destroy past evil Karmas, he ends his life in Sannyāsa,—such a man is called Paramahansa.

Therefore, the Chhândogya Upaniṣad very rightly concludes with the household order, because in that Āśrama the duties to be performed are many: and it has been well said : "The day he gets the world-weariness, on that very day let him wander forth."

The above passage clearly shows that the moment one gets the world-weariness, he should renounce the world. The condition precedent

for entering into the order of the Sauntyāsins is such world-weariness. The argument based upon the last Mantra of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad where it winds up with the household order, namely, that the condition precedent to entering the Sannyâ a Āśrama is the passing through the household Āśrama, therefore, falls to the ground.

The reason why a man enters into the household life is because he has unexhausted worldly propensities : the reason why he renounces the world is because such proclivities no longer exist in him and the world weariness takes their place. This is the only criterion to judge whether a person is ready to take Sannyâ a or not. Thus this also is established that, when a man is endowed with the qualifications of Sama (mind-control), Dama (sense-control), Uparati (tolerance), etc., whether he be in any Āśrama or in no Āśrama, Knowledge ( Vidyâ ) is sure to originate in him.

### Adhikaraṇa XIV.

The author now teaches that Vidyâ or Divine Wisdom is a mystery, and should be kept secret. In the Śvetâśvatara it is written :

वेदान्ते परमं गुह्यं परावृत्य प्रचोदितम् । नाप्रशान्ताय दातव्यं नापुत्राय शिष्याय वा पुनः ॥ २२ ॥

This highest mystery in the Vedānta, delivered in a former age, should not be given to one whose passions have not been subdued, nor to one who has not a son, or who has not a pupil.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Should this Vidyâ be imparted to every one or to a select few only ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Masters of Wisdom are also Masters of Compassion. To impart knowledge to the fit and withhold it from the unfit, to discriminate who is fit and who is unfit, goes against their compassionate nature which loves all ; and consequently, the Vidyâ must be revealed to all indiscriminately.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 50.

अनाविष्कुर्वन्नवयान् ॥ ३ । ४ । ५० ॥

अनाविष्कुर्वन् Anaviṣkurvan, not making it manifest. अन्वयान् Anvayāt, because of the connection,

50. Let the Master teach the disciple not to reveal the doctrine, for such is the ancient usage.—479.

## COMMENTARY

Let him instruct the pupil not to reveal the teaching. Why? Anvayāt ; Because in the above text of the Śvetāśvatara, the instruction is expressly to that effect. So also says the Lotus-eyed Lord Kṛṣṇa in the Gītā (XVIII, 67) :

इदं ते नातपस्काय नाभक्ताय कदाचन ।

न चाशुश्रूषे वाच्यं न च मां योऽभ्यस्यति ॥ ६७ ॥

Never is this to be spoken by thee to anyone who is without asceticism, nor without devotion, nor to one who desireth not to listen, nor yet to him who speaketh evil of Me.

The teaching becomes fruitful when given to the worthy, and bears no fruit, when it falls on unworthy soil. For the Śruti says (Śvet, VI, 23) :

यस्य देवो परा भक्तिर्यथा देवे तथा गुरौ ।

तस्यैते कथिता ह्यर्थाः प्रकाशन्ते महात्मनः । प्रकाशन्ते महात्मन इति ॥२३॥

If these truths have been told to a high-minded man, who feels the highest devotion for God, and for his Guru as for God, then they will shine forth,—then they will shine forth indeed.

So also in the story of the two pupils of Prajāpati, given in the Chhāṇḍogya Upaniṣad, we find the same thing. The Asura king, Virochana, and the Deva king, Indra, both heard a voice proclaiming. (Chh. Up., VIII, 7. 1) :

य आत्माऽपहृतात्मा विरजो विमृत्सुर्विशोकोऽविजित्सोऽपिपासः सत्यकामः सत्यङ्कल्पः सोऽन्वेष्टव्यः सविज्ञासितव्यः स सर्वांश्च लोकानामिति सर्वांश्च कामान्यस्तमात्मानमनुविष विजानातीति ह प्रजापतिरुवाच ॥ १ ॥

Prajāpati proclaimed : "The Ātman, who is free from sins, free from old age, free from death, free from grief, free from hunger, free from thirst, he whose desires are true, whose will is true, he ought to be searched out, he ought to be understood. He who has known that Ātman indirectly and has also realised Him, attains all worlds and all desires."

Both went to Prajāpati to learn the meaning of this parable. Both were taught equally in the same words. But Virochana, deduced from those words, through his perverse intellect the doctrine of materialism, and Indra the doctrine of life eternal. Virochana failed to get the realisation of the truth. Therefore, Vidyā must be taught to the fit only and not to the unworthy. The fit are those who are devoted to the Lord as revealed and established in the world-scriptures, and who are endowed with faith.

*Adhikaraṇa XV.—The time of the Origination of Vidyā.*

Now the author discusses the question what is the proper time when Vidyā becomes ripe and originates in man.

*Viṣaya* : The stories of Nachiketas, Jābāla, etc., as well as of Vāmadeva are the topics which constitute the subject of discussion here.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Does the Vidyā, as the result of the above-mentioned practices, arise in this very life or in the next life ?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : When those practices are rightly performed, Vidyā originates in this very life, because a man undertakes any great object with the desire "let me accomplish this in this very life." The enthusiasm is liable to flag, if one were told that his efforts will bear fruit in the next life.

*Sādhānta* : It is not an invariable rule, that Vidyā originates in one life, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA III., 4. 51.

ऐहिकमग्रस्तुततिबन्धे तद्दर्शनात् ॥ ३ । ४ । ५१ ॥

ऐहिकम् Aihikam, the present life or birth (in which we obtain knowledge). अग्रस्तुत Aprastutā, not being present. प्रतिबन्धे Pratibandhe, obstruction. तद् Tad, that. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, being declared by the scriptures.

51. Vidyā originates in this very life, provided there are no obstructions at hand ; as this is seen (in the case of some). —480.

COMMENTARY

When there is no obstruction to the rise of Vidyā then she originates in this very life ; but when there is any such obstruction then she manifests in the next life.

Why do we say so ? Because we find it so described in the case of Nachiketas, who got Vidyā in one life, while there are others who did not get it but in the next life. As in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, VI., 18 :

मृत्युपोक्तां नचिकेतोऽथ लब्ध्वा विद्यामेतां योगविधिं च कृत्स्नम् ।

ब्रह्मपाप्तो विरजोऽभूद्विमृत्युरन्योऽप्येवं विदध्यात्ममेव ॥ १८ ॥

Nachiketas having then obtained all this knowledge and practice imparted by Yama, attained Brahman, became free from Rajas and beyond death ; another who thus knows the Spirit certainly becomes so.

The above and the texts like these indicate that Vidyā can originate in one life also.

But there are texts which show that she originates sometimes in the next life. As thus Vāmadeva got Vidyā while he was in the womb of



his mother. (See Br. Up., I., 4. 10). The fruition is not always in the same life in which the effort is commenced. If the obstruction is small and the energy put into the practice for the acquisition of Vidyā is great, then Vidyā is acquired in that very life. The effort is sufficiently strong to overcome the weak resistance, as we see in the case of Nachiketas and the King of the Sauvīras called Rāhūgaṇa. But if the obstruction is strong, then though Vidyā originates owing to the performance of sacrifice, charity, austerity, thought-control, etc., she remains latent, covered up by the obstructions (as the chicken inside the shell), and she awaits the next birth, for the breaking of the shell and for her coming out in all her glory. It is thus said in the Gītā (VI., 37 and forward up to 45) :

अयतिः श्रद्धयोपेतो योगाच्चलितमानसः ।

अप्राप्य योगसंसिद्धिं कां गतिं कृष्ण गच्छति ॥ ३७ ॥

कच्चिन्नोभयविभ्रष्टश्छिन्नाभ्रमिव नश्यति ।

अप्रतिष्ठो महाबाहो विमूढो ब्रह्मणः पथि ॥ ३८ ॥

पतन्मे संशयं कृष्ण केतुमहैस्यशेषतः ।

त्वदन्यः संशयस्यास्य केता न ह्युपपद्यते ॥ ३९ ॥

श्रीभगवानुवाच ।

पार्थ नेवेह नामुत्र विनाशस्तस्य विद्यते ।

नहि कल्याणकृतकश्चिद्गुर्गतिं तात गच्छति ॥ ४० ॥

प्राप्य पुण्यकृतौल्लोकानुषित्वा शाश्वतीः समाः ।

शुचीनां श्रीमतां गेहे योगभ्रष्टोऽभिजायते ॥ ४१ ॥

अथवा योगिनामेव कुले भवति धीमताम् ।

एतद्धि दुर्लभतरं लोके जन्म यदीदृशम् ॥ ४२ ॥

तत्र तं बुद्धिसंयोगं लभते पौत्रेदेहिकम् ।

यतते च ततो भूयः संसिद्धौ कुरुनन्दन ॥ ४३ ॥

पूर्वाम्यासेन तेनैव द्वियते ह्यवशोऽपि सः ।

जिज्ञासुरपि योगस्य शब्दब्रह्मातिवर्तते ॥ ४४ ॥

प्रयत्नाद्यतमानस्तु योगी संशुद्धकिल्बिषः ।

अनेकजन्मसंसिद्धस्ततो याति परां गतिम् ॥ ४५ ॥

He who is unsubdued but who possesseth faith, with the mind wandering away from Yoga, failing to attain perfection in Yoga, what path doth he tread, O Kṛṣṇa ?

Fallen from both, is he not destroyed like a rent cloud unsteadfast, O mighty-armed, deluded in the path of the Eternal ?

Deign, O Kṛṣṇa, to completely dispel this doubt of mine ; for there is none to be found save Thyself able to destroy this doubt.

Śrī Kṛṣṇa said :

O son of Prthā, neither in this world, nor in the life to come, is there destruction for him ; never doth any who worketh righteousness, O beloved, tread the path of woe.

Having attained to the worlds of the pure-doing, and having dwelt there for immemorial years, he who fell from Yoga is re-born in a pure and blessed house.

Or he may even be born into a family of wise Yogis, but such a birth as that is most difficult to obtain in this world.

There he recovereth the characteristics belonging to this former body, and with these he again laboureth for perfection, O joy of the Kurus.

By that former practice he is irresistibly swept away. Only wishing to know Yoga, even the seeker after Yoga goeth beyond the Brāhmic world.

But the Yogi, labouring with assiduity, purified from sin, fully perfected through manifold births, he reacheth the supreme goal.

The above texts of the Gītā clearly show that Vidyā sometimes does originate in the next life.

Nor is it an invariable rule, as is asserted by the Pūrvapakṣin, that no man will undertake a thing the fruition of which will not take place in one and the same life. There are men (wiser and more modest) who say "let me do the effort and leave the success to come, either in this life or in the next." Thus it is proved that success in the acquisition of Vidyā and her manifestation depends primarily on the removal of the obstructions, whether this takes place in this life or in the next.

### Adhikaraṇa XVI.

The acquisition of Vidyā invariably leads to release. Now the author shows that when Vidyā is acquired, Mokṣa invariably and necessarily follows such acquisition. In the Upaniṣads (Br. Up., IV., 4. 17, and Śvet. Up., III., 8) we find it clearly mentioned that the knowledge of God is immortality.

यस्मिन्पञ्च पञ्चजना आकाशश्च प्रतिष्ठितः ॥

तमेव मन्य आत्मानं विद्वान्ब्रह्म मृतोऽमृतम् ॥ १७ ॥

वेदाहमेतं पुरुषं गहान्तमादित्यवर्णं तमसः परस्तात् । तमेव विदित्वा तिमृत्युमेति नान्यः पन्था विद्यतेऽयनाय ॥ ८ ॥

He in whom the five beings and the ether rest, him alone I believe to be the Self, —I who know, believe him to be Brahman; I who am immortal, believe him to be immortal. (Br., Up., IV., 4. 17).

I know that great person (Puruṣa) of sunlike lustre beyond the darkness. A man who knows him truly, passes over death; there is no other path to go. (Śvet. Up., III., 8).

**Doubt:** Here arises the doubt: Does the Mokṣa take place on the falling off of the body in which the Vidyā was acquired, or does it take place in the next life?

**Pūrvapakṣa:** Vidyā being the cause of Mukti, there is no reason, why the man, who has got Vidyā, shou'd take another birth to get Mukti. For a cause is invariably followed by the effect.

**Siddhānta:** This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

एवं मुक्तिरनियमस्तदवस्थान्तरावधृतेः ॥ ३ । ४ । ५२ ॥

SŪTRA III, 4. 52.

एवम् Evam, thus. मुक्ति Mukti, of salvation. फल Phala, about the time of obtaining the fruit. अनियमः Aniyamaḥ, there is no rule. तद् Tad, of that (*i.e.*, salvation). अवस्था Avasthā, the condition. अवधृतेः Avadhṛteḥ, being determined. तद् Tad, of that (*i.e.*, of salvation). अवस्था Avasthā, condition. अवधृतेः Avadhṛteḥ, being determined.

52. Similar is the case with the Mukti. There is no invariable rule of the time of its fruition, because it depends upon well ascertained conditions, because it depends upon well ascertained conditions.—481.

#### COMMENTARY

As in the case of the time for the origination of Vidyā, there was no invariable rule, whether it should originate in one life or in the next, though the man had acquired all the necessary qualifications for its origination, and as its manifestation is delayed owing to obstructions which require to be removed and which are removed in the next life ; so also is the case that a man may have acquired Vidyā, yet Mokṣa which is the characteristic fruit of Vidyā is delayed till the next life, because the Prārabdha Karmas require to be worked out. Of course, if there are no Prārabdha Karmas which require to be worked out, then the Mukti takes place in that very life. But if there are Prārabdha Karmas which are not exhausted in one life, then the man must take another birth in order to get Mukti ; for Mukti can never be partial. Why do we say so ? 'Tad avasthā avadhṛteḥ,' because the condition of Mukti is a definite condition, fully ascertained in the Śāstras. Thus in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (VI, 14. 2) it is laid down that a man who finds the teacher obtains the knowledge ; but there is delay in his getting Mukti so long as his Prārabdha Karmas are not exhausted.

एवमेवेहाचार्यवान् पुरुषो वेद तस्य तावदेव चिरं यावन्न विमोक्षेऽथ सम्पत्स्य इति ॥ २ ॥

In the same way does a man who finds the Teacher, obtain the knowledge. For him there is delay only so long as his Prārabdha Karmas are not exhausted. Then he reaches the perfect.

This text of the Chhândogya shows as a well-determined rule of Mukti that the man who has got Vidyā, obtains Mukti, not immediately, but on the exhaustion of his Prārabdha Karmas. A similar rule is laid down in the Smṛiti called the Nārāyaṇa Adhyātma :

"The man who has acquired Vidyā gets immortality, there is no doubt in it ; he goes to Mukti at once ; when his Prārabdha Karmas are exhausted ; but if his Karmas are not

exhausted then he has to take many births, and on the exhaustion of such Karmas he goes to that world of Hari."

No doubt it is a rule that Vidyā exhausts all Karmas, yet the force of the Prārabdha Karmas is not exhausted but remains active, because the Lord has so willed it. This has been mentioned before also. This will be further treated of in the latter part of this book. The repetition is to indicate the end of the Adhyāya.

जनयित्वा वैराग्यं गुणैर्निश्चनति मे दयन् भक्तान् ।

यस्तैर्बद्धोऽपि गुणैर्नुज्यते सोऽस्तु मे हरिः प्रेयान् ॥

May that Hari who produces dispassion (in the hearts of His worshippers towards all transitory objects of the world) but who binds with the ropes of His auspicious qualities (of compassion, friendliness, beauty, love, etc.), his devotees (to his feet), and makes them take pleasure in such bondage; and who in his turn, though bound by the ropes of love by His devotees, still takes pleasure in such bondage, may that Hari be my beloved.

Here ends the Fourth Pāda of the Third Adhyāya of the Vedānta Śūtras with the commentary of Baladeva called the Govinda Bhāṣya.

---

## FOURTH ADHYĀYA.

### FIRST PĀDA.

दत्त्वा विद्यौषधं भक्तान् निवृत्तान् करोति यः ।  
दृक्स्थं भक्तु श्रीमान् प्रीत्यात्मा स हरिः स्वयम् ॥

He who giving the medicine of Vidyā to His devotees, makes them free from disease may that Self of Joy, Hari Himself, come within the scope of my vision.

This Adhyāya deals with a discussion as to the fruits of Vidyā or Divine Wisdom. Though in some of the Sūtras in the beginning, the subject dealt with is Sādhana or means of knowledge or practice, yet as the main topic is that of the Results of Vidyā, it is called the Phala Adhyāya.

*Viśaya* : In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (IV, 5. 6) it is said :

आत्मा वा अरे द्रष्टव्यः श्रोतव्यो मन्तव्यो निदिग्गसितव्यो मैत्रेयात्मनि खल्वरे दृष्टे श्रुते मते विज्ञात इत्येवं विदितम् ॥ ६ ॥

Verily, the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be constantly thought over, to be meditated upon, O Maitreyi ! When the Self has been seen, heard, thought over, and meditated upon, then all this is known.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Should the practices called here Śravaṇa (hearing), Manana (thinking), etc., be performed once only, or must they be repeated ?

*Fârrapakṣa* : The opponent says They must be performed once only. For as the sacrifices, called Agniṣṭoma, etc., performed *once* only, lead to heaven (Svarga), etc., so the performance of Śravaṇa, Manana, etc., *once* only gives the vision of the Self. Therefore, these spiritual exercises need not be repeated.

*Siddhānta* : The right view, however, is given in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV. 1. 1.

आवृत्तिसकृदुपदेशात् ॥ ४ । १ । १ ॥

आवृत्तिः Āvṛttiḥ, repetition. असकृत् Asakṛt, not once, many times, repeatedly. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, the instructions being given.

1. (The Sādhana called Śravaṇa, Manana and the rest require) repetition, because the Scripture itself repeats the instruction more than once.—482.

## COMMENTARY

The practices known as "hearing, meditating," etc., require repetition in order to produce any fruit. Why? Because the Scripture by constant repetition of the same teaching, suggests that these practices should be repeated also. Thus in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VI., 8. 7, and the following, the teacher repeats *nine* times the saying, "that is the essence and ruler of all, the desired of all, and known only through the subtlest intellect."

स य एवोऽणिमैतदात्म्यमिदं सर्वं तत्सत्यं स आत्मा तत्त्वमसि श्वेतकेतो इति भूय एव मा भगवान्  
विज्ञापयत्विति तथा सोम्येति होवाच ॥ ३ ॥

Here Śvetaketu is taught the mystery about Brahman *nine* times before he understands it.

The maxim of the Ritualistic Philosophy is that the dignity of the Scripture is sufficiently vindicated if its commands are carried out *once* only. (Scriptures say "Perform pilgrimage." The man fulfils the law if he makes pilgrimage once only). Why should then Śravaṇa, Manana, etc., be repeated? Does not this contradict the above maxim? No, the maxim applies to those acts only whose fruits are invisible and manifest in the next world: and not to acts whose fruits are to be seen in this very life. Direct intuition of the Self is a visible result to be gained in this very life. The fruit is visible or at least may become visible. Such acts must be repeated, because they subserve a seen purpose. It is like the act of beating the rice, which must be repeated till the rice grains become free from their husks. When the Scripture speaking about the rice for the sacrifice says, "the rice should be beaten;" the sacrificer understands that the injunction means "the rice should be beaten, over and over again, till it is free from husk;" for no sacrifice can be performed with the rice with its husk on. So when the Scripture says: "The Self must be seen through hearing, thinking and reflecting," it means the repetition of these mental processes, so long as the Self is not seen.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 2.

लिङ्गात् ॥ ४ । १ । २ ॥

लिङ्गाद् Liṅgāt, because of the indicatory signs.

2. And there is an indicatory mark (which shows the necessity) of such repetition.—483.

## COMMENTARY

In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, III., 2 we find that Bhṛgu goes several times to his father Varuṇa and asks him again and again, to be taught the nature of Brahman.

Bhṛgu Vāruṇa went to his father Varuṇa, saying Sir, teach me Brahman. He told him this, *i.e.*, Food, breath, the eye, the ear, mind, speech. Then he said again to him : That from whence these beings are born, that by which when born, they live, that into which they enter at their death, try to know that. That is Brahman.

This injunction about repetition, is meant for those only who have done some such sin that a single performance of the act is not sufficient to give them the Divine Vision.

*Note* : This sin is called Nāma-aparādha. Those who are such sinners, and the majority of mankind falls in that category, require to repeat the Sādhana before they can see God.

### Adhikaraṇa II.

Now the author raises another discussion regarding the same subject.

*Doubt* : Must this worship of God be done by thinking upon Him as the Lord of all Majesty or as the Inner Self of the Worshipper ? Meditation on the Lord as Īśvara is to think Him as Almighty, the All-ordainer, the Terrible, the Unconquerable, etc., while meditation on Him as the Self means to think of Him as all love, as the Highest Man, etc.

*Pīrrapakṣa* : The Lord must be meditated upon as the Īśvara. For the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, (IV., 7) says :

समाने वृत्ते पुरुषो निमग्नोऽनीशया शोचति मुह्यमानः ।

जुष्टं यदा पश्यत्यन्यमीशमस्य महिमानमिति वीतशोकः ॥

“On the same tree man sits grieving, immersed, bewildered, by his own impotence (an-īśa). But when he sees the other Lord (īśa) contented, and knows his glory, then his grief passes away.”

*Siddhānta* : The Lord must be worshipped as the Self, as shown in the following Sūtra :

SŪTRA IV., 1. 3.

आत्मेति तूपगच्छन्ति ग्राहयन्ति च ॥ ४ । १ । ३ ॥

आत्मा Ātmā, Ātmā, the Supreme Soul, the Lord. इति Iti, as. तु Tu, but, indeed. उपगच्छन्ति Upagachchhanti, acknowledge. ग्राहयन्ति Grāhoyanti, make, apprehend. च Cha, and.

3. But the Masters contemplate on Brahman as the Self and teach it so to their pupils.—484.

#### COMMENTARY

The word “Tu” has the force of “only.” That God is to be worshipped as the Self. The knowers of Truth realise the Cause as the Self : as says the Sruti (Br. Up., IV., 4. 22) : “Knowing this, the people of old did not wish for offspring ; they said we, who have this Self and this world of Brahman.”

Not only this, they teach this form of worship to their pupils also. As in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (I., 44. 7) : "Let men worship Him as Self, for in the Self all these are one."

The word "Self" (Ātman) here means the Entity who is all-pervading, whose essential nature is knowledge and bliss and who has the shape of Man. (The God Hari always appears in a human shape before His devotees).

Others say that the God is called Self or Ātman, because all beings get their existence or I-ness from Him, because He has made them to participate in His substance. He must be contemplated as one's own "Self" or "I" in the sense that all the functions of one's ego get their life and energy from God; and thus God is the very Self of one's "I."

Those are mistaken who say that the Jiva must meditate upon himself as identical with Brahman : for when the Jiva is free from Avidyā, it is Brahman pure and simple. The Scriptures do not mean to teach any such identity, as we have already demonstrated in commenting upon Sūtra II., 1. 22, page 251. The contemplation on the Lord as Self has, therefore, a different sense altogether from proving the identity of the creature with the creator.

### Adhikaraṇa III.

In the Chhândogya and the other Upaniṣads (Chh., III., 18. 1) it is said : Let one meditate on the Brahman as mind.

मनो ब्रह्मेत्युपासीतेत्यध्यात्ममन्त्राधिदेवतमाकाशो ब्रह्मेत्युभयमादिष्टं भवत्यध्यात्मं चाधिदेवतं च ॥ १ ॥

Let one meditate on the Brahman as (dwelling in the Mind and called) Mind; this is microcosmic meditation. Next the macrocosmic : (let one meditate on) Brahman as (dwelling in Ākāśa and called) Ākāśa, the All-illuminating. By this latter both meditations have been taught, the microcosmic and the macrocosmic (because the Ākāśa includes the Manas).

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : "Should one contemplate on Manas and the rest as Ātman as one contemplates of Īśvara as Ātman?"

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The sentence "Mind is Brahman" shows the identity of Mind with Brahman. Consequently Mind must be contemplated as Self :

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 4.

न प्रतीके न हि ॥ ४ । १ । ४ ॥

न Na, not. प्रतीके Pratike, in the symbols such as the mind, etc. न Na, not, हि Hi, because.



4. Brahman is not to be contemplated as Self in the symbols like Manas, etc., for the symbol is not God.—485.

## COMMENTARY

In symbols like mind, ether, etc., one should not put the idea of Self because a symbol can never become God. It is always the seat of God and not God. As in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa we find :

खं वायुमग्निं सलिलं महीञ्च ज्योतीषि सत्त्वानि दिशो द्रुमादीन् ।

सरित् समुद्राश्च हरेः शरीरं यत् किञ्च भूतं प्रणमेदनन्यः ।

The ether, air, fire, water, and the earth as well as the celestial lights, creatures, directions, trees, rivers, and seas, all these are the body of the Lord Hari. In fact, all that exists is his body. Let him, therefore, bow down to Him alone as existing in these.

Why does the Śruti then say meditate "Brahman is Mind," meditate "Brahman is Ākāśa ?" In these passages the nominative case must be construed in the locative. The sentence must be interpreted as "meditate Brahman is *in* the Mind," meditate "Brahman is *in* the Ākāśa."

## Adhikaraṇa IV.

In the preceding Sūtras the author prohibits contemplating the symbols as Self and has enjoined that Īśvara or the Lord Hari may be contemplated as Self. Now he discusses the question about Īśvara and Brahman.

*Doubt* : Should the Lord Hari be contemplated as Brahman ? The texts which show the identity of Īśvara with Brahman are the subject-matter of discussion in this connection. Such as Ayam Vai Harayaḥ, etc.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Lord (Īśvara) should not be contemplated upon as Brahman because in preceding texts it has been said : "He should be meditated upon as Self only and not as Brahman."

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 5.

ब्रह्मदृष्टिर्ब्रह्मत्कर्षात् ॥ ४ । १ । ५ ॥

*ब्रह्मदृष्टिः* : Brahma-dṛṣṭiḥ, the view of Brahman *उत्कर्षात्* Utkarṣāt, on account of superiority.

5. The Lord (Īśvara) should be meditated upon as Brahman, because such meditation is the most exalted.—486.

## COMMENTARY

Just as the Īśvara is contemplated upon as the Self, so must He be always meditated upon as Brahman. (The three terms Ātman, Īśvara and

Brahman are identical). Why should this be so? Utkarṣāt. Because of the exalted state, because the Lord being the store-house of endless auspicious attributes. Such a contemplation is perfectly justified with regard to Him, and is an exalted sort of meditation. The Śruti (also Br. Up., II., 5. 19) says the same:

रूपं रूपं प्रतिरूपो बभूव तदस्य रूपं प्रतिचक्षणाय इन्द्रो मायाभिः पुरुरूप ईयते युक्ता ह्यस्य हरयः  
शता दर्शयन् वै हरयोऽयं वै दश च सहस्राणि बहूनि चानन्तानि च तदेतद्ब्रह्मापूर्वमनपरमनन्तरमबाध्यमय-  
मात्मा ब्रह्म सर्वानुभूयित्यनुशासनम् ॥ १६ ॥

He (the Lord) became like unto every form, and this is meant to reveal the (true) form of Him (the Ātman). Indra (the Lord) appears multi-form through the Māyās (appearances) for his horses (senses) are yoked, hundreds and ten. This (Ātman) is the horses, this (Ātman) is the ten, and the thousands, many and endless. This is the Brahman, without cause and without effect, without anything inside or outside this Self is Brahman, Omnipresent and Omniscient. This is the teaching (of the Upaniṣad).

This text shows that the Lord is to be meditated upon as Ātman as well as Brahman.

The same fact is reiterated in other places also, such as "Atha kasmāt uchyate Brahma," etc.

### Adhikaraṇa V.

In the R̥g Veda (X., 90), Puruṣa Sūkta we have the following:

चन्द्रमा मनसो जातश्चक्षुषः सूर्योऽजायत ।

ओवाद् वायुश्च प्राणश्च मुखादग्निर्जायत ॥

From His mind was produced the Moon, from His eyes was born the Sun: from His ears, the Air and Breath, and from His mouth was produced the Fire.

Here the eyes, etc., of the Lord are conceived as causes generating the Sun, Air, etc.

*Doubt*: Should one contemplate on the eyes, etc., of the Lord as the cause of Sun, etc., or should one not?

*Pūrvapakṣa*: Such contemplation should not be made, because His eyes, etc., are very soft and tender as lotus: and the contemplation on them as generators of sun, etc., is against this; and would give rise to the notion of their being very harsh and rough.

*Siddhānta*: This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 6.

आदित्यादिमतयश्चाङ्ग उपपत्तेः ॥ ४ । १ । ६ ॥

आदित्य-आदि Āditya-ādi, about the sun and the others. मतयः Matayaḥ ideas. च Cha, and. अङ्गे Aṅge, in the parts, or limbs, उपपत्तेः Upapattē, that being proved, or that being reasonable.

6. The ideas of sun and the rest (originating from his eyes,

etc.,) should be made with regard to the limbs of the Lord, because of its reasonableness.—487.

## COMMENTARY

The word “Cha” in the Sūtra is employed in order to set aside the Pūrvapakṣa. The contemplation on the eyes, etc., of the Lord as the generator of the sun, etc., is a valid contemplation, and such notion does not detract from the mildness of the Lord. Why do we say so? Because it is reasonable. Such a contemplation exalts the glory of the Lord. The Lord is magnified when we think of His eyes, etc., as the producers of the sun, etc. Though they are exceedingly mild and soft, yet they are the generators of such strong and hard objects as the sun, etc.: this must be believed, because the Revelation says so, and because it is a transcendental mystery.

*Adhikaraṇa VI*

In the Śvetāśvatara we read as follows (II., 8):

विरुद्धं स्थाप्य समं शरीरं हृदीन्द्रियाणि मनसा संनिबध्य । ब्रह्मोदुपेन प्रतरेत विद्वान्छोतांसि सर्वाणि  
भयावहानि ॥ ८ ॥

Let a wise man hold his body with its three erect parts (chest, neck and head) even, and turn his senses with the mind towards the heart, he will then in the boat of Brahman cross all the torrents which cause fear.

*Doubt:* This description of the posture is enjoined by the Revelation. The question arises: Is this posture compulsory in every Japa or recitation or is it optional?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* The recitation of Om is a mental process. No particular bodily postures are absolutely necessary for the due carrying on of any mental process. Therefore, the Āsana (posture) taught in the above Śruti is not compulsory.

*Siddhānta:* This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 6.

आसीनः सम्भवात् ॥ ४ । १ । ७ ॥

आसीनः Āsinaḥ, sitting. सम्भवात् Sambhavât, on account of possibility.

7. (Let him recite the name of the Lord Hari) in a sitting posture, (for prayer is) possible in that posture only.—488.

## COMMENTARY

The Lord Hari should be meditated upon by the devotee, in a sitting posture. Why? Because meditation is possible only when one is *sitting*.

It is not possible when one is lying down at full length, or is standing or is walking. Meditation is possible only when one is quietly *seated*.

Moreover, in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, I. 3, we read :

ते ध्यानयोगानुगता अपश्यन्देवात्मशक्तिं स्वैयुषेर्निगूढाम् । यः कारणानि निखिलानि तानि कालात्म-  
युक्तान्यधितिष्ठत्येकः ॥ ३ ॥

The sages, devoted to meditation and concentration, have seen the power belonging to God Himself, hidden in its own qualities (Gūḍa). He, being one, superintends all those causes, time, self, and the rest.

This declares that those who yearn to know God should perform meditation (Dhyāna). Now Dhyāna can be performed only by him who is in a sitting posture and not in any other state. The next Sūtra makes it still more clear.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 8.

ध्यानाच्च ॥ ४ । १ । ८ ॥

ध्यानाच्च Dhyānācch, because of the concentrated meditation. च Cha, and.

8. And because meditation is also possible in a sitting posture only.—489.

COMMENTARY

Dhyāna or meditation is thinking on one subject continuously, without the inrush of ideas incongruous with the subject of thought. Such meditation is possible in a sitting posture only, and not while lying down or standing, etc. Therefore, a sitting posture should be adopted both for prayers as well as for meditation.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 9.

अचलत्वञ्चापेक्ष्य ॥ ४ । १ । ९ ॥

अचलत्वम् Achalatvam, motionlessness, steadiness. च Cha, and, indeed. अपेक्ष्य Apekṣya, referring to.

9. And because the Śruti has reference to motionlessness as a condition of Dhyāna.—490.

COMMENTARY

The word 'Cha' in the Sūtra has the force of indeed only. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, the root Dhyāya is employed in the sense of motionlessness. This shows that Dhyāna has the essential quality of motionlessness. Thus in Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VII., 6. 1, we have the verb Dhyāyati used in the sense of motionlessness.

ध्यानं वाच चित्ताद्भूयो ध्यायतीव पृथिवी ध्यायतीवान्तरिक्षं ध्यायतीव द्यौर्ध्यायन्तीवापो ध्यायन्तीव  
पर्वता ध्यायन्तीव देवमनुष्यास्तस्माद्य इह मनुष्याणां महत्तां प्राप्नुवन्ति ध्यानापादाः ॥ इति ते भवन्त्यथ

येऽल्पाः कलहिनः पिशुना उपवादिनस्तेऽथ ये प्रभवो ध्यानापादाँशा इवैव ते भवन्ति ध्यानमुपास्वेति ॥१॥

Dhyāna is better than 'chitta. The earth is in meditation, as it were, and thus also the sky, the intermediate region, the Heaven, the Water, the Mountains and Divine Men. Therefore, those who among men have obtained greatness here, on earth, seem to have obtained a portion of Dhyāna. While small and vulgar people are always quarrelling, backbiting and abusing each other, great men seem to have obtained a portion of the gift of Dhyāna. Meditate on Brahman in Dhyāna.

From this indicatory mark also, we learn that meditation should be done in a sitting posture. In secular language also we use the word Dhyāyati in the same sense, as in the sentence Dhyāyati Kāntam Proṣitarāmaṇi, the wife thinks deeply or sitting in reverie thinking over her husband gone on a distant journey.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 10.

स्मरन्ति च ॥ ४ । १ । १० ॥

स्मरन्ति Smaronti, it is mentioned in the Smṛtis. च Cha, and.

10. And the Smṛtis also teach the same (that meditation must be performed in a sitting posture).—491.

COMMENTARY

Thus in the Gītā, VI., 11. 13. we have the following :

शुचौ देशे प्रतिष्ठाप्य स्थिरमासनमात्मनः ।

नात्युच्छ्रितं नातिनीचं चेनाजिनकुशोत्तरम ॥

In a pure place, established on a fixed seat of his own, neither very much raised nor very low, made of a cloth, a black antelope skin, and Kuṣa grass, one over the other.

तत्रैकाग्रं मनः कृत्वा यतचित्तेन्द्रियक्रियः ।

उपविश्यासने युञ्ज्याद्योगमात्मविशुद्धये ॥ १२ ॥

There, having made the mind one-pointed, with thought and the functions of the senses subdued, steady on his seat, he should practise Yoga for the purification of the self.

समं कायशिरोम्रीवं धारयन्नचलं स्थिरः ।

सम्प्रेक्ष्य नासिकाग्रं स्वं दिशश्चानवलोकयन् ॥ १३ ॥

Holding the body, head, and neck erect, immoveably steady, looking fixedly at the point of the nose, with unseeing gaze.

The above verses of the Gītā also teach that the persons meditating should practise the motionlessness of their bodily limbs and sense-organs. Such a motionlessness cannot take place without the sitting posture. Therefore, the meditation must be performed in a sitting posture. And the above verses specifically mention this posture by using the words Upaviśya Āsane, sitting on a seat, etc.

### Adhikarāṇa VII.

With regard to the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 5. 6 and other texts to the same effect) which declare that "the Self is to be seen, to be heard, to be constantly thought over and to be meditated upon," which have already been mentioned before, here arises another point for discussion.

*Doubt* : In this form of meditation and prayer, is there any condition of direction, locality and time or is there no such condition ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : In all Vaidic ritual and Upāsanā we find particular direction, etc., mentioned. Such as the Sandhyā should be performed facing east, just before the sunrise on the bank of a river, etc. Since Vaidic rituals lay down these conditions of prayers, and the Vedāntic meditation and prayers being in no way different from the Vaidic Sandhyā, the conditions of direction, time and locality must apply to it also.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 11.

यत्रैकाग्रता तत्राविशेषात् ॥ ४ । १ । ११ ॥

यत्र Yatra, where. एकाग्रता Ekāgratā, the concentration of mind. तत्र Tatra, there. अविशेषात् Aviśeṣāt, is not being specially mentioned.

11. Whenever there takes place one-pointedness of the mind, there let the meditation be performed ; because there are no such conditions laid down with regard to this meditation, as there are laid down with regard to the Vaidic Sandhyā.—492.

#### COMMENTARY

In whatever direction, place or time there takes place the concentration of the mind, then and there let the man meditate on the Lord Hari, for there is no restrictive rule regarding it. Why ? Aviśeṣāt, because no specific condition is laid down with regard to such meditation, contrary to what is laid down with regard to Sandhyā. In the Varāha Purāṇa also we find :

तमेव देशं सेवेत तं कालं तामवस्थितिम् ।

तानेव भोगान् सेवेत मनो यत्र प्रसीदति ॥

नहि देशादिभिः कश्चिद् विशेषः समुदीरितः ।

मनः प्रसादनार्थं हि देशकालादिचिन्तनम् ॥

That place, time and condition one must resort to which are favourable for mental concentration. He should resort to that place only, seize that hour only, place himself in that condition only, see those comforts only, which are favourable to securing serenity of mind. For by the time, place, etc., there is no peculiarity said to be wrought in meditation. but all enquiry about time, place, etc., is meant for making the mind serene.

Says an objector : But the Upaniṣads themselves record such specific rules. How can you say that there are no such rules ? For example, the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, II., 10. lays down the following rules :

समं शुचौ शर्करावह्निवालुकाविबर्जिते शब्दजलाश्रयादिभिः । मनोऽनुकूले न तु चक्षुषीङ्गे गुह्यानिवासा-  
श्रयणे प्रयोजयेत् ॥ १० ॥

Let him perform his exercises in a place, level, pure, free from pebbles, fire, and dust, delightful by its sounds, its water and bowers, not painful to the eye, and full of shelters and caves.

The Scriptures, moreover, say that sacred places of pilgrimages are causes of release.

True. Places are of great help in concentration, provided there be no distracting elements there : but those very sacred places of pilgrimages become obstructions to meditation, if there are distractions there. Hence the best test of the place is that which the mind finds favourable : and hence the Śruti says "Mano'nukūle," where the mind feels favourable.

### Ādhikaraṇa VIII.

In the Praśna Upaniṣad, V., 1, we have the following :

स यो हैतद् भगवन् मनुष्येषु प्रायणान्तर्मोकारमधिष्यातीत

Next Śaṅkya Satyakāma asked him :

O Master, what world does he conquer by such (meditation) who amongst men unceasingly meditates on Ōṃkāra, up to his death.

So also in the Nṛsiṃha Tāpani Upaniṣad (II., 1) we have :

यं सर्वे देवा नमन्ति मुमुक्षवो ब्रह्मवादिनश्च

Whom all the Devas bow down to and all the Would-be-Free and the Free (Brahman-established).

In another passage (Tatt. Up., III., 10-5) :

एतत् साम गायन्नास्ते ।

They sit down, and sing this Sāma.

So also तद्विष्णो परमं पदं सदा पश्यन्ति सूरयः—(Rg Veda)

The Wise ones always see that highest abode of Viṣṇu.

Here we find a mention of the worship made to the Lord Hari, not only up to one's attaining Mukti, but even after getting freedom.

**Doubt :** Must the worship of the Lord be done only up to Mukti, or continued even after getting Freedom ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The opponent says that since the object of all prayers and worship is to get freedom, there is no necessity of continuing the worship of the Lord, after one has obtained freedom.

**Siddhānta :** This view is rebutted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 12.

अप्रायणात्तत्रापि हि दृष्टम् ॥ ४ । १ । १२ ॥

अप्रायणात् *Āprāyaṇāt*, till the salvation (*Mokṣa*). तत्र *Tatra*, there, in salvation अपि *Api*, even. हि *Hi*, because. दृष्टम् *Drṣṭam*, is seen in the Śruti.

12. (The worship of the Lord should be done) up to the time of getting salvation and also thereafter : because it is so seen in the Revelation.—493.

## COMMENTARY

The worship of the Lord should be done up to *Prāyaṇa* or *Mukti* and "thereafter also," *i.e.* after getting *Mokṣa* also. Why? Because it is so *seen* in the Śrutis. The Śruti texts have already been quoted above.

*Note* : Thus the *Nṛsiṃha Tāpani* text given above says : "The *Mumukṣus* (seekers of *Mokṣa*) and the *Brahma-vādins* (who are established already in *Brahman*, namely, who have become free) worship the Lord." The वृ has the senses of "being established." Thus the Free as well as the Would-be-Free both worship the Lord.

In addition to the texts already quoted, we have the following text of the *Sauparṇa Śruti* :

सर्वदेनमुपासीत यावद्विमुक्ति । मुक्ता अपि ज्ञेयमुपासते ।

Let one worship Him always till he gets freedom. Verily the Free ones also worship Him.

This shows that the Lord must be worshipped both before getting Freedom and after getting it.

As regards the objection, that the *Muktas* need not worship, because there is no injunction to that effect, and because there is no fruit in such worship, we say : true. There is no injunction to the effect, "Let the Freed Souls also worship the Lord." Yet, such souls are irresistibly drawn to worship the Lord, because He is so beautiful and attractive. The force of His beauty compels adoration. Just as a person suffering from biliousness is cured by eating sugar ; but he continues eating sugar even after such cure, not because he has any disease, but because the sugar is sweet, so is the case with the *Muktas*.

Thus it is demonstrated that the worshipping the Lord is an everlasting act of the souls both free and bound.



### Adhikarana IX.

Having thus discussed in the preceding sections, the various means of acquiring Divine Wisdom (Vidyā), the author now enters into a discussion as to the fruits of knowledge

*Viśaya* : In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, IV., 14. 3, we have the following :

यथा पुष्करपलाश आपी न श्लिष्यन्त एवमेवंविदि पापं कर्म न श्लिष्यत इति ब्रवीतु मे भगवानिति तस्मै होवाच ॥

As water does not cling to a lotus leaf, so no sinful act clings to one who knows Him thus. He said : "Sir, tell me." He said then to him.

So also in the same (V., 24. 3) it is said :

तद्यथेपीकातूलमग्नीं प्रोतं प्रद्वयेतैव<sup>१७</sup> इत्यस्य सर्वे पाप्मानः प्रद्वयन्ते य एतदेवं विद्वानग्निहोत्रं जुहोति ॥३॥

As the tuft of the Iṣikā reed entering into the fire is quickly reduced to ashes, thus indeed are burnt all his sins, who knowing the Lord, thus offers an Agnihotra.

*Doubt* : Now arises the doubt : Must the consequences of the two kinds of evil deeds, namely, those called the Sañchita (the stored up) and the Kṛyamāna (the deeds in the course of doing) be exhausted by suffering their results, or do these two become destroyed and non-adhering respectively, through the majesty of the Divine Wisdom ?

*Note* : The Kṛyamānas become loosened, i.e., their effects do not cling to the man : the man passes through these Karmas as the lotus leaf through water unentangled by them.

The Sañchita Karmas are burnt up. Such has been said to be the power of Vidyā.

*Pūrvopakṣa* : Neither the Kṛyamāna Karmas are loosened, nor the Sañchita Karmas burnt up by Vidyā. The law of causation is inexorable : as says the well-known verse :

नामुक्तं क्षीयते कर्म कल्पकोटिशतैरपि ।

अवश्यमेव भोक्तव्यं कृतं कर्म शुभाशुभम् ॥

The Karma is never exhausted or weakened in its force even after a lapse of hundreds of millions of eons. It is exhausted only when its consequences are suffered. Verily one must suffer the consequences of his acts, whether they be good or bad.

Therefore, these two kinds of Karmas (Kṛyamāna and the Sañchita) are to be exhausted by suffering only.

This being the law, the texts that say that the Divine Wisdom destroys all Karmas, must be understood to glorify the wise and should not be taken to be literally true. They are Arthavādas or glorificatory passages.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra refutes this view.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 13.

तदधिगमउत्तरपूर्वाद्ययोरश्लेषविनाशौ तद्व्यपदेशात् ॥ ४ । १ । १३ ॥

तद् Tad, of him. अधिगमे Adhigame, knowledge being attained. उत्तर Uttara, of the latter, i.e., of what is being done. पूर्व Pūrva, of the former,

*i.e.*, of what is stored up अघयोः Aghayok, of the sins. अश्लेष Aśleṣa, non-clinging. विनाशो Vināśau, and destruction. तद् Tad, that. व्यपदेशात् Vyapadeśāt, being declared.

13. On obtaining that (Vidyā) there take place the *non-clinging* of the works done in the present life, and *destruction* of the works stored up which were done in the past life. Because this is so declared (in the Upaniṣads).—494.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Tad Adhigame" means the attainment of that, namely, of Brahman which here means Brahma Vidyā. When this Brahma Vidyā is attained, then there result two-fold effects: All sins which are committed in the present life lose their power of clinging to the man; while all sins which were committed in the past life and which constitute the Sañchita Karmas are totally destroyed. Why? Because it is so declared in the Scriptures. The two texts declaring these have already been quoted above. They clearly show that no sins done in the present life cling to the man, because he is like a lotus leaf in water, while all his past sins are burnt up like Iṣikā reed. We cannot explain away or restrict the plain meaning of Śruti texts like these. As regards the verses which say that no Karma is destroyed, but by producing its effects, that holds good in the case of ordinary men who have not obtained Brahma Vidyā, and who are in ignorance.

## Adhikaraṇa X.

In the Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 22) it is said:

उद्दे वेते न तरत इत्यतः पापमकरवमित्यतः कल्याणमकरवतित्युभे उद्देवेष एते तरति नेनं कृताकृते तपतः ॥

Him (who knows), these two do not overcome, whether he says that for some reason he has done evil, or for some reason he has done good, he overcomes both, and neither what he has done, nor what he has omitted to do, burns (affects) him.

*Doubt:* Here arises the doubt: The above text mentions that good and bad deeds are both crossed over. The question arises, does the same law hold good with regard to the virtuous deeds as it does with regard to the evil deeds of sin. In other words: Are the Sañchita good deeds totally burnt up like reeds, and the good deeds done in the present life cease to cling to the man? Just as it was the case with regard to past and present sins,

**Pûrvapakṣa :** The Pûrvapakṣin maintains that the good deeds (whether Kṛyamāna or Sañchita) are not destroyed on the origination of Vidyâ, because they being works done in accordance with the scriptural commands, do not conflict with the Divine Wisdom or Vidyâ, and therefore, they co-exist with the Vidyâ and are to be exhausted by enjoying their rewards in higher worlds. Therefore, it is not a correct saying that as soon as Vidyâ originates the man gets Mukti. For, if he has unexhausted good works, he must pass through heaven worlds, etc.

**Siddhânta :** This view is set aside in the next Sûtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 14.

इतरस्याप्येवमश्लेष पाते तु ॥ ४ । १ । १४ ॥

इतरस्य Itarasya, of the other, i.e., of good deeds. अपि Api, also. एवम् Evam, thus. अश्लेषः Aśleṣaḥ, non-clinging (and destruction). पाते Pâte, after the destruction, fall, or death. तु Tu, but, indeed.

14. The same is the case with the other (namely, the good deeds); the stored-up good deeds are destroyed and the good deeds done in the present life do not cling to the man. He verily gets Mukti on the falling off of his Prârabdha Karmas.—495.

#### COMMENTARY

With regard to the other, namely, the good works whether they be Sañchita or stored-up, or whether they be Kṛyamāna being done in the present life, the rule is the same as with regard to sinful works. Vidyâ produces her two-fold effects with regard to good works also. She burns up the store of good works and does not allow the good deeds done in the present life to cling to the man. No doubt, good deeds are works done in conformity with the law of the Vedas; but it cannot be said that, therefore, they are not in conflict with Vidyâ. They are opposed to Vidyâ, in this much that their result is to produce heavenly joy and Svargic bliss; while the fruit of Vidyâ is release; and as Svarga and Mukti can not co-exist together; therefore, Punya, though Vaidic, is opposed to Vidyâ. And as a matter of fact, the so-called Puṇyam is after all not so pure as people think it to be. In the Scriptures, the Puṇyam accruing from Vaidic works is considered as sin after all. In the eye of a Vedântin, all good works are Pâpam. In fact, in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII, 4. 1) the term Pâpam is applied to good deeds (Sukṛtam) in the same way as it is applied to evil deeds (Duṣkṛtam). Both Sukṛta and Duṣkṛta are evils, which are left behind when the man gets Mukti.

अथ य आत्मा स सेतुर्विष्टितिरेषां लोकानामसंभेदाय नैतच्छेत्तुमहोरात्रे तरतो न जरा न मृत्युर्न शोको न दुःखं न दुःकृतं सर्वे पाप्मानोऽतो निवर्तन्तः सप्तपाप्मा ध्वं ब्रह्मलोकः ॥ १ ॥

This Self is a Bridge (refuge) and a support, so that these worlds (may be kept in their proper places and) may not clash with each other. Night and day do not pass that Bridge, nor old age, nor death, nor grief, nor the good deeds, nor the evil deeds (of men). All evils turn back from Him, because He is free from all evils. He is Brahman, the Great Refuge.

Consequently in the Gītā (IV., 37) it is stated that *all actions*, whether good or bad, are destroyed when knowledge is obtained. The word Sarvakarmāṇi used there is a generic term and includes good deeds also.

अथैवापि समिद्धोऽग्निर्भस्मसात्कुरुतेऽजुन ।

जानाग्निः सर्वकर्मणि भस्मसात्कुरुते तथा ॥ ३७ ॥

As the burning fire reduces fuel to ashes, O Arjuna, so doth the fire of wisdom reduce all actions to ashes.

Therefore, it has been established that the two kinds of Punyam also, like the two kinds of sins, are respectively destroyed, and made unclinging. The Sūtrakāra further adds 'Pāte tu.' The word "Tu" has the force of verily. Verily on the destruction of the Prārabdha Karmas, the man gets Mukti. Therefore, the saying that on the origination of Vidyā a man gets Mukti is not a void statement.

### Adhikaraṇa XI.

When through Vidyā or Divine Wisdom there are destroyed both sorts of Sañchita Karmas, namely, the good as well as the bad Karmas; then at that very moment, it must reasonably follow that the body of the man should fall off from him, because the body is the effect of such Karmas; and when the Karmas are destroyed, the body naturally falls off. If this be so, then anyone who gets the Divine knowledge, must immediately pass out of this world, and so the teaching of the Divine knowledge by the knowers of Brahman becomes an impossibility. The present Adhikaraṇa is commenced in order to remove this doubt.

The stored-up good and evil deeds are of two sorts, one which has commenced its fruition in this world, and the other which has not commenced to produce its effects.

**Doubt :** Are both these kinds of Sañchita Karmas, namely, the Ârabdha-phala and the Ânârabdha-phala destroyed by Vidyâ, or only the Ânârabdha-phala Karmas are destroyed?

**Pûrvapakṣa :** In the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 22) already quoted above, it is said that *both* these are destroyed. There is no exception

mentioned there in favour of the Karmas whose effect has already commenced ; and as the action of Vidyā is everywhere uniform (like the action of fire on every kind of dry grass), therefore, both sorts of Sañchita Karmas, mature as well immature, are destroyed by Vidyā.

*Siddhānta*: This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 15.

अनारब्धकार्ये एव तु पूर्वे तदवधेः ॥ ४ । १ । १५ ॥

अनारब्ध-कार्ये Anārabdha-kārye, the effects of which have not yet begun. एव Eva, only. तु Tu, but. पूर्वे Pūrve, in the case of the former or stored good deeds and sins. तद् Tad, that. अवधेः Avadheḥ, being the duration of time.

15. But only the immature Karmas of the former lives, namely, those Karmas whose effect has not yet begun, are destroyed by knowledge ; because that is the limit of the life of the Jñānin ; (namely) the limit of the life of the wise is the period over which his former Karmas which have begun to produce their effects extend.—496.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" in the Sūtra is used in order to remove the doubt raised by the Pūrvapakṣa. The word "Pūrve" or "former works" mean accumulated good and evil works of the time prior to the present life. The word Anārabdha-kārye" means those works whose fruit has not commenced to originate. Only this latter kind of Sañchita work is destroyed and not that kind of Sañchita work whose effects have already begun to manifest. Why so? "Tad avadheḥ", because that is the limit. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI., 14. 4) it has been said that the man lives on even after the acquiring of the knowledge, if his Prārabdha Karmas are not exhausted. The Śruti says: "For him there is delay only as long as he is not delivered from the body." In the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, in the address of the Śrutis to the Lord, we find the following (X., 87. 40) :

त्वदवगमी न वेत्ति भवदुःखशुभाशुभयोर्

गुणविगुणान्वयास्तर्हि देहभृताञ्च गिरः ।

He who has realised Thee, does not perceive that good and bad effects are produced by Thee, on account of the virtue and vice generated by the man in his past, because he is not conscious of the commands and prohibitions of Scripture regarding good and bad deed affecting all embodied beings. (Because thou wilt it so).

This shows that it is the will of the Lord, that the man who has obtained the Divine Wisdom should go on living in this body, so long as his Prārabdha Karmas are not exhausted.

Note : But the great difference in his life before the origination of Vidyā and in his life after the origination of such Vidyā consists in this ; that before such origination, he feels the good and bad effect of his Karmas, but after the origination of such Vidyā, his centre of consciousness being fixed in the Lord, he is so much absorbed in the Lord, that he never perceives the effects of these Karmas.

To summarise. Vidyā is verily supremely powerful. She destroys effectually, without leaving any remainder, *all* Karmas just as a well-lit fire reduces to ashes all sorts of fuel. Though this we learn from the books and must believe it also, yet we see on the other hand, that divinely illumined sages, full masters of Divine Wisdom, are living on this earth and their bodies do not fall down as soon as they get Divine Wisdom. We further see that they teach others and are not inactive, consequently, we must admit that it is the will of the Lord that such men should continue to live, in order to spread his knowledge and the knowledge of Theosophy (Brahma-vidyā) among mankind. This does not detract from the glory of Vidyā (Divine Wisdom). The Vidyā has the power of burning up *all* Karmas including the Prārabdha, but she does not do so, because her power with regard to the Prārabdha is countermanded by the will of the Lord, just as the power of the fire to burn everything, may be suspended by the stronger power of Mantras and jewels. Thus there is no harm if Vidyā, under the command of the Lord, does not burn up the Prārabdha Karmas.

Some raise another objection. They say Vidyā cannot originate but through the body which is the result of the Prārabdha Karmas. Their argument is : The origination of knowledge cannot take place without dependence on an aggregate of works whose effects have already begun to operate, and when this dependence has once been entered into, we must, as in the case of the potter's wheel, wait until the motion of that which once has begun to move, comes to an end, there being nothing to obstruct it in the interim. As when the force which moves the wheel is exhausted, the wheel stops moving of itself, so also when the fruit is fully manifested, the Karmas that produce the fruit are destroyed and not before that.

To this objection we reply that this is not so. Knowledge is the most powerful of all forces. She destroys all Karmas from their very root. She can destroy even the energy that moves the potter's wheel, namely, the Prārabdha Karmas that makes this body to live ; but she does not do so through the will of the Lord. Nothing can resist her irresistible course, ~~but~~ the will of the Lord. As a potter's wheel in motion may be ~~instantly~~ put to rest, by placing upon it a heavier stone than the wheel with its momentum, and the wheel would cease to move, so Vidyā is like that heavy stone, which can stop the motion of the wheel of Prārabdha Karma even. That she does not do so, is in deference to the will of the Lord, and not because she has not the power. Therefore, the statement that Divine knowledge (Vidyā) can destroy all Karmas is absolutely correct.

### *Adhikarāṇa XII.*

The statement that the past good deeds of a Wise One are destroyed by Vidyā, logically leads to the conclusion that the effects of all the obligatory duties (Nitya Karmas) are also destroyed, just as the effects

of Kāmya Karmas (religious rites performed for the sake of getting some desired object). This deduction is not, however, correct; and the present section is commenced to establish this fact. The proposition of the Bṛhad-āraṇyaka (IV., 4. 22)--"both the good and evil works are destroyed"--leads to a fresh doubt.

*Doubt:* Does the Vidyā destroy the effects of Nitya Karmas like fire sacrifice, etc., in the same way as she destroys the effects of Kāmya Karmas?

*Pūrvapakṣa:* She destroys the Nitya Karmas also, because it is the attribute inherent in Vidyā to destroy *all* Karmas; for the essential power of a substance can never be lost.

*Siddhānta:* This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 16.

अग्निहोत्रादि तु तत्कार्यायैव तद्दर्शनात् ॥ ४ । १ । १६ ॥

अग्निहोत्र-आदि Agnihotra-ādi, the daily fire-offering to fire, etc. तु Tu, but, indeed. तत् Tat, in the form of that (*i.e.*, knowledge). कार्याय Kāryāya, to the effect of getting the fruit. एव Eva, even. तत् Tat, That. दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of being seen.

16. But the daily fire sacrifice and the rest, produce Vidyā as their effect; because it is so seen.—497.

COMMENTARY

The word "Tu" is employed in the Sūtra to remove the doubt. The daily fire sacrifice and the rest, performed prior to the origination of Vidyā, produce their fruit in the shape of Vidyā herself. Why? "Because it is so seen." Namely, the Scripture states that the Vidyā is produced by these Nitya Karmas. Such as, Bṛhadāraṇyaka (iv., 4. 22) तमेतं वेदानु-बन्धनेन etc. "Him they known through the study of the Vedas, through sacrifices, alms, austerities," etc. The right meaning, therefore, of the Sūtra iv., 1. 14, is that Vidyā destroys all past good works, done prior to her origination, provided such works are not *Nitya Karmas* or obligatory works. The scriptures do not contemplate the destruction of the *Nitya* works, for Vidyā herself is their fruit. The word "destruction" is not employed in connection with the scorching up of the paddy grains, etc., when a house is burnt and which thus become incapable of being sown. When a house is burnt down, the seed-grains kept in it may be scorched and incapable of any fruit, but we do not say that the grains are *destroyed*. So that Nitya Karmas cannot be said to be destroyed.

No doubt, there are some Nitya Karmas, which are quasi-Kāmya: that is to say, which produce not only Vidyā, but lead the performer

to Svarga, etc., also. Thus the Bṛhadāraṇyaka text कर्मणा पितृलोकः "by the performance of Nitya works, one goes to the region of the Pitṛs," shows that the Nitya Karmas have the heaven-producing power also. This heaven-leading power of the Nitya Karmas is, however, destroyed, as soon as the Vidyā originates.

### Adhikaraṇa XIII.

[The vicarious atonement]

It has been shown above that the Prārabdha good and bad Karmas of the illumined sage remain in their force, through the mere will of the Lord, who wishes that such illumined sages should remain on earth, in order to teach mankind, by spreading knowledge and instruction. Though this is a general rule, yet there is an exception to it in the case of some Nirapekṣa devotees who, as soon as they get Vidyā, enter into Mukti; because their Prārabdha good and bad deeds are *immediately* destroyed, without causing them to experience their fruit. (This is an exception, and the Lord in their case does not wish that they should remain behind on earth to teach mankind).

*Viśaya* : In the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad (I, 4.) in describing the passage of the soul it is written :

तं पञ्चशतान्यप्सरसां प्रतिधावन्ति शनं मालाहस्ताः शतमाञ्जनहस्ताः शतं चूर्णहस्ताः शतं वासोहस्ताः शनं कणाहस्तास्तं ब्रह्मालंकारेणालं कुर्वन्ति स ब्रह्मालंकारेणालंकृतो ब्रह्म विद्वान् ब्रह्मेवाभिप्रेति स आगच्छत्यारं हृदं तन्मनसात्येति तमुत्वा संप्रतिविदो मज्जन्ति स आगच्छति मुहूर्तान्येष्टिहांस्तेऽस्मादपदवन्ति स आगच्छति विराजं नदीं तां मनसेवात्येति तत्सुकृतदुष्कृते ध्रुवने तस्य प्रिया जातयः सुकृतमुपयन्त्यप्रिया दुष्कृतम् ॥ ४ ॥

Him approach five hundred celestial damsels, one hundred carrying scented powders like saffron, turmeric, etc., in their hands, one hundred carrying dresses in their hands, one hundred carrying fruits, one hundred carrying various ornaments, and a hundred carrying garlands. They adorn him with ornaments befitting Brahmā himself. The soul thus adorned with Brahmā-ornaments and knowing Brahman, sees everywhere Brahman. He approaches the lake called, Āra, which he crosses with the boat of Mind. (But those who do not know Brahman cannot cross this lake and are drowned in it, like the voyagers in the sea when their ship is wrecked). The knower of Brahman then approaches the Hours called the sacrificial destroying. They run away from him, as soon as he reaches them. Then he comes to the river called Virajā and crosses it by mind alone. He shakes off his good and evil deeds. His beloved relatives obtain the good, his unbeloved relatives the evil he has done.

Similarly the Śātyāyanins read :

तस्य पुत्रा दायमुपयन्ति, सुहृदः साधुकृत्यां, द्विषन्तः पापकृत्याम् ॥

His sons obtain inheritance, his friends the good, his enemies the evil he has done.



*Doubt* : The above shows that the good and evil deeds, which constitute the Prârabdha of the Brahman, are also destroyed, without experiencing their fruit. But the question arises : Is it possible that the Prârabdha Karmas may be destroyed in the case of *any* person ?

*Pûrvapakṣa* : The Pûrvapakṣin maintains that the Prârabdha Karmas are *never* destroyed, in the case of *any* person, unless the man suffers their consequences. They are destroyed, only by the man undergoing the suffering for the evil he has done, and enjoying the fruits of the good deeds, he has performed. Vidyâ cannot destroy Prârabdha.

*Siddhânta* : This view is set aside in the next Sûtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 17.

अतोऽन्यापि हेकेषामुभयोः ॥ ४ । १ । १७ ॥

अनः Atah, than this (declaration of the Śruti), than this (text which declares that the Prârabdha remains active through the Will of the Lord). अन्य Anya, (the declaration of the Śruti) other than that, namely, the Śrutis like the "lotus leaf in water," "burning of Īṣikâ reeds." हि Hi, because. एकेषाम् Ekeṣām, (in the branch) of some : in some Śākhās. उभयोः Ubhayoh, of both (the good and the evil deed that is commenced), the Prârabdha of good and evil.

17. (In the case of some Nirapekṣa devotees, there takes place a non-clinging) of both (sorts of Prârabdhas, whether good or evil), because in some (Śākhās, like those of the Kauṣitakins and Śātyāyanins), there is also a declaration other than (that of the Chhândogya, VI., 14. 2).—498.

#### COMMENTARY

In the case of some Nirapekṣas, however, who are extremely ardent lovers of God and are solely devoted to Brahman, there takes place the separation of both kinds of Prârabdha Karmas, namely, the Prârabdha of good and the Prârabdha of evil deeds ; and they have not to suffer the consequences of their Prârabdha. In other words, in the case of some Nirapekṣas, the Prârabdha is shaken off without their undergoing the enjoyment of that Prârabdha. The reason for this is that the declaration "the Prârabdha remains active in the case of the Jñānin, because it is the wish of the Lord that it should so remain" is modified by the counter declaration, as we find it in certain Śākhās, such as those of the Kauṣitakins and the Śātyāyanins. Thus the two Śrutis "His beloved relatives obtain the good, his unbeloved relatives the evil he has done," and "His sons obtain inheritance, his friends the good, his enemies the evil that he has done"—show that the Prârabdha is detached in the case of some. The sense is this, there are certain Śruti texts which declare that Karmas are destroyed

either by knowledge or by suffering. While the texts above given show, that the Karma is not destroyed by knowledge, but that it goes to the friends or foes of the knower of Brahman. The conflict of Śrutis, therefore, must be reconciled by giving them different scopes. This Śruti regarding the Karmas going to friend or foe, does not relate to Kāmya Karmas. Because in the Sūtras (IV., 1. 13 and IV., 1. 14) it has been shown that all Karmas except the Prārabdha, all good and evil deeds are destroyed by knowledge, while in the case of evil deeds there is no element of Kamyatva. [No one enunciates such a desire (Kāma). "Let me do such and such evil deed, with the desire of suffering such and such hell-fire." Evil deeds, therefore, can never be said to be Kāmya].

*Note :* The conflict of Śrutis arises thus : Two texts declare that the knower of Brahman performs works without the work clinging to him like a lotus leaf in water (Chh., Up., IV., 14. 3) and all stored up works are destroyed as the fire burns up Īśikā reeds (Chh., V., 24. 3). These two texts of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad declare that Karma is destroyed by knowledge; while the text "there is delay for him so long as he does not die," (Chh. Up., VI., 14. 2), shows that Karma is destroyed by suffering. These three texts, two showing that Karma is destroyed by *knowledge*, and the third showing that it is destroyed by *suffering* only, must be reconciled with this fourth text which declares *vicarious* sufferings and enjoyments. How the Karmas of one man can be suffered or enjoyed by another man? How can the good or evil deeds of a Jñānin be suffered or enjoyed by his friends and foes? This is the problem propounded for solution.

This special Adhikarāṇa teaches that the Lord bestows the good results of the good Prārabdha deeds of the Jñānin on the friends of such Jñānin, and puts the evil results of the evil Prārabdha deeds on the enemies of such Jñānin, and bring such Jñānin *at once* towards Him, because he is impatient to see the Lord, the supremely beloved; and he is not able to suffer the pangs of separation from Him any longer.

Thus the rule made by the Lord that the Prārabdha Karmas are destroyed only by enjoyment is not broken, for the Prārabdha Karmas of the Jñānin are enjoyed by his friends and foes. This vicarious enjoyment thus upholds the justice of the Lord and the unchanging nature of His laws.

But, says an objector, good and evil deeds are formless, and are not like physical ornaments, etc., that they may be given away to anybody, it is not, therefore, proper to say that a friend gets the good deeds, and the enemy gets the bad deeds. Moreover, it is open to another objection, namely, why should another man enjoy the fruit of deeds not done by him? To this objection, we reply, that the Lord is omnipotent, and has full power to do against the law. Therefore, in the case of some extremely yearning souls, there takes place detachment from Prārabdha Karmas, and such Karmas are attracted by other persons: and exhaust their force on them.

In the next Sūtra, the doubt how the Prârabdha Karmas of the Nirapekṣa devotees can go to another person is answered.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 18.

यदेव विद्ययेतिहि ॥ ४ । १ । १८ ॥

यद-एव Yad-eva, whatever. विद्यया Vidyayā, by knowledge. इति Iti, so. हि Hi, because.

18. The text "whatever he does with knowledge" intimates that the Prârabdha Karmas may go to another.—499.

COMMENTARY

The text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad "Yadeva vidyayā" (I, 1. 10) shows that works done with Vidyā are very potent, even when such Vidyā is not the highest Brahma Vidyā, but is only knowledge related to Jiva (human soul). Since the power of Vidyā, whether of Brahman or of Human soul, is divine in her nature, and irresistible in her energy, it follows that, through the grace of this Vidyā, even the Prârabdha Karmas may be destroyed, without undergoing their suffering, through the command of the Lord. Nothing is too wonderful in the case of Vidyā.

What does then follow from this? The conclusion is mentioned in the last Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 19.

भोगेन वितरे क्षपयित्वाऽथ सम्पद्यते ॥ ४ । १ । १९ ॥

भोगेन Bhogena, with the enjoyments (all heavenly joys). तु Tu, but. इतरे Itare, the other two (the gross and the subtle bodies). क्षपयित्वा Kṣapayitvā, giving up. अथ Atha, then. सम्पद्यते Sampadyate, obtains, joins.

19. Having given up (the gross and subtle bodies), he joins in the enjoyment (of all divine bliss along with the Lord).—500.

COMMENTARY

The Nirapekṣa devotee having obtained Vidyā, transcends the other two, Itare, namely, he throws off the other two bodies called the Sthûla (gross) and Sūkṣma (subtle). He gets the body of the companions of the Lord, namely, the divine body called the Pârṣada-vapuḥ. Having obtained this body, he gets the power of enjoying, along with the Lord, all the bliss which the Lord enjoys. Then is realised in him literally and truly, the meaning of the Śruti (Tait. Up., II., 1. 1.), "He enjoys all blessing, at one with the omniscient Brahman." This is the highest stage reached by the soul.

## FOURTH ADHYĀYA

### SECOND PĀDA

मन्त्राद् यस्य पराभूताः पराभूतादयो ग्रहाः ।

नश्यन्ति स्वलसत् वृष्णः स कृष्णः शरणं मम ॥

May that Kṛṣṇa, the Lover of His devotees, be my refuge, by reciting whose sacred name are vanquished and totally destroyed the mighty obsessing elements of the senses and vitality.

### *Adhikaraṇa I.*

In the present Pāda, the author discusses the method of the soul's leaving the body, at the time of death, in the case of a Jñānin; as a preliminary to his describing the Devayāna path in the next chapter. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI., 8. 6) we have the following :

अस्य सोम्य पुरुषस्य प्रयतो बाङ्मनसि संपद्यते मनः प्राण्ये प्राणस्तेजसि तेजः परस्यां देवतायां स य पवोऽहिमा ॥ ६ ॥

When the soul of the person goes forth, the Speech is merged in Mind, the Mind in Breath, the Breath in Fire, Fire in the Highest God.

*Doubt* : A doubt arises here : Whether the above passage means to teach that only the function of Speech is merged in mind, or whether the Speech itself, together with its function, is merged in the mind ?

*Pûrwapakṣa* : The Purvapakṣin maintains that the function of Speech only is merged in the mind, because there is not found the nature of Speech in mind, and because the Speech and the other senses function under the control of mind.

*Siddhânta* : This view is set aside in the next Sûtra.

SÛTRA IV., 2. 1.

वङ्मनसिदर्शनाच्छब्दाच्च ॥ ४ । २ । १ ॥

वाक् Vāk, Speech, मनसि Manasi, in the mind. दर्शनात् Darśanât, because of the Śāstric declaration. शब्दात् Śabdât because of the word of the Vedas. च Cha, and.

1. Speech (itself together with its function is merged) in the mind, because it is so seen, and because there is a Scriptural statement.—501.

### COMMENTARY

The speech enters the mind organically as well as functionally. Why ? When the Speech ceases, the activity of mind is seen.

*Note* : When the external Speech is stopped, there goes on the mental Speech. This proves that not only the organ of Speech, but its function also are present in mind.

This is a natural fact of psychology. Moreover, it is a matter of observation that while the function of speech comes to an end, the mind still continues to act.

Moreover, there is the express statement of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, "Vān manasi sampadyate," the speech merges in the mind. This also shows that the speech, organically and functionally, enters the mind. Any other explanation would be against the spirit of the above text. The sense is this, that there is no proof by which we can find the Speech in the mind existing merely functionally; we have no proof that the function only merges in mind and not the organ of speech.

An objector says : But mind does not possess the nature of speech, and so we cannot say that Speech itself has merged in the mind, but all that we can say is that only the function of speech has entered the mind. It is something like fire and water. The nature of water is not that of fire, but we see that fire does enter water *functionally*, though not organically. For water can become heated by fire, by the merging of the function of the fire in water, though the fire itself does not enter the water. To this objection we reply : It is not so. The speech only combines with mind (in a mechanical mixture like that of milk and water), and does not become Laya in mind (as water is said to become Laya in air, when its constituent parts, oxygen and hydrogen, become separated and enter into air. It is like the water entering into air, in the form of vapour and not that of Laya in air, in the form of separated gases). The sense is this, that though the mind and speech are intrinsically different (as water and air), yet there is the opinion of these two at the time of death, like the vapour entering into the air.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 2.

अतः एव सर्वाण्यनु ॥ ४ । २ । २ ॥

अतः Atah, एव Eva, for this very reason. सर्वाणि Sarvāṇi, all (the senses). अनु Anu, after.

2. And for this very reason, all (the other sense-organs) merge in the mind, after (the merging of speech).—502.

#### COMMENTARY

In the above text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, there is mention of the merger of only speech in the mind. Lest one should fall into the error of thinking that other sense-organs like hearing, etc., do not merge in mind, the present Sūtra declares that they also merge in mind, and not in anything else : but subsequent to the merging of speech.

It is to be understood that since the speech unites with the mind only, and not with fire (though there are some texts to that effect also such as Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad III., 2. 13) it follows that all the other sense-organs unite also in the mind. But all do not simultaneously enter

into the mind, they follow *after* the entrance of speech. As we find in the *Praśna Upaniṣad* (III., 9) :

तेजो ह वाय उदानस्तस्मादुपशान्ततेजः ॥ पुनर्भवमिन्द्रियैर्मनसि संपद्यमानिः ॥ ६ ॥ यच्चित्तस्तेनैव प्राणमायाति ॥

The Cosmic Fire verily is Uḍāna. (It helps the Uḍāna in man), therefore, when a person becomes exhausted of energy, he goes to another birth, with his sense-faculties merged in the mind.

Similarly, in the same *Upaniṣad* (IV., 2) we find :

तस्मै स होवाच ॥ यथा गार्ग्य मरीचयोऽर्कस्यास्तं गच्छतः सर्वा एतस्मिन्तेजोमगदन् एक्यीभवन्ति ॥ नाः पुनःपुनरुदयतः प्रचरन्त्येवं ह वै तस्मै परे देवे मनस्येक्यीभवति ॥

He said to him, "As, O Gārgya! all the rays of the sun when going to set, become one in that orb of light, and on his rising again they again spread out in all directions, so verily these all Devas become one in that High Divinity, the mind."

These two texts clearly show that all the sense-organs enter into the mind and not into anything else.

### Adhikarāṇa II.

Now the author considers the same text of the *Chhândogya Upaniṣad*. (VI., 6. 1) which says that the *Manas* enters the *Prāṇa* (the Mind enters the Breath).

*Doubt* : After the sense-organs have entered the Mind, at the time of death, does the Mind go to the *Prāṇa* or to the Moon ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent says the mind enters the Moon, for the *Bṛhadâraṇyaka* text (III., 2. 13, already given at page 429 *ante*), shows that Mind enters the Moon.

*Siddhânta* : This view is controverted in the next *Sūtra*.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 3.

तन्मनः प्राणउत्तरात् ॥ ४ । २ । ३ ॥

तद् Tad, that. मनः *Manah*, mind. प्राणे *Prāṇe*, in the *Prāṇa*, breath. उत्तरात् *Uttarāt*, from the subsequent clause.

3. That mind (in which all the sense-organs have entered, merges) in Breath (*Prāṇa*) because of the subsequent clause (of the *Chh. Up.*, VI., 6. 1).—503.

#### COMMENTARY

The word "that" means that in which all the sense-organs have entered. The mind, along with all the sense-organs, enters into the *Prāṇa*. Why? Because the *Chhândogya* text (VI., 6. 1.) says "*Manah prāṇe*" (the mind enters the Breath). And this sentence immediately follows the clause "the speech merges in the mind."

But, says an objector : How do you then explain the text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (III., 2. 13), which says that the mind of the person dying enters the Moon ? If the mind enters the Breath, then this text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (see p. 429) will find no scope. To this we reply that the venerable author of the Sūtras, Lord Bādarāyaṇa himself has reconciled this apparent conflict, in his Sūtra, III., 1. 4 :

If it be said that the scriptural text mentions also the going of the various senses into various elements, like fire, etc., and therefore, the senses do not accompany the Soul, when it goes out of the body, to this we reply, that the going of the senses to the elements is *metaphorical* only.

Therefore, when the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad says that the mind enters the Moon, it is to be taken in a metaphorical sense.

### Adhikaraṇa III.

Now the author considers the statement of the same passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI., 6. 1). "Prâṇas tejasi" (the breath enters the fire).

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Whether this Prâṇa in which has entered mind with all the sense-organs, merges into Tejas (cosmic fire), or does this Prâṇa merge into the Jīva (individual soul) ?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that Prâṇa merges in Tejas, because the text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is definite on that point. Where there is a definite statement, it is wrong to assume anything else.

*Siddhānta* : This view is controverted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 4.

सोऽध्यक्षे तदुपगमादिभ्यः ॥ ४ । २ । ४ ॥

मः Sah, that (Prâṇa, life, or breath). अध्यक्षे Adhyakṣe, in the president, the Jīva, the individual soul. तद्-उपगम-आदिभ्यः Tad-upagama-ādibhyaḥ, because of the statements about the going of the life to the individual soul, with all the senses.

4. He (Prâṇa) enters the ruler (the individual Soul) ; because of the statements as to his coming to the soul, (found in Br. Up., IV., 3. 38).—504.

COMMENTARY

That Prâṇa merges into the Adhyakṣa or the presiding deity of the body and the senses, namely, the human soul itself. Why do we say so ? Because of the following statement of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 3. 38).

तद्यथा राजानं प्रयियासन्तमुद्राः प्रत्येनसः सूत्रग्रामययोऽभिसमायन्त्येवमेवेममात्मानमन्तकाले सर्वे प्राणा अभिसमायन्ति यत्नेतद्दर्शोच्छवासी भवति ॥ ३८ ॥

And as bodyguards, warriors, charioteers, and commanders of armies gather round a king who intends to go out on a march, thus do all the Prāṇas gather round the Soul, at the time of death (and march along with it), when a man is thus going to expire.

This shows that the Prāṇa, along with all the sense-organs, goes to the Jīva.

Nor is there any conflict in this view with the statement of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI, 6. 1) that the Prāṇa merges in Tejas. Prāṇa, after having joined with the Jīva, goes into the Tejas and thus that statement also becomes valid. It is just like saying "the river Yamunâ goes into the Sea," meaning thereby that the Yamunâ, uniting with the Ganges, goes into the sea.

### Adhikarāṇa IV.

Now is to be considered the statement of the entrance into the Tejas by the Soul.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt: Does the individual Soul, joined by the Prāṇa, take up its abode in the Tejas or in the collective elements?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that the Prāṇa, having entered into the individual soul, merges into the Tejas, because of the definite statement "Prāṇas tejasi," "the Jīva enters in Tejas." The word Prāṇa here should be explained as meaning the Jīva in which the Prāṇa has entered.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 5.

भूतेषु तच्छ्रुतेः ॥ ४ । २ । ५ ॥

भूतेषु, Bhūteṣu, in the elements. तद् Tad, about that. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, there being a Vedic statement.

5. (The individual Soul, with Prāṇa, merges into) the elements, because there is a scriptural statement to that effect.—505.

### COMMENTARY

The individual soul enters into the five elements and not merely in the Tejas. Because in the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad the Jīva is described as entering into all the elements, Ether, Air, Tejas, Water, etc., (Br. Up., IV., 4. 5).

स वा अयमात्मा ब्रह्म विज्ञानमयो मनोमयः प्राणमयश्चक्षुर्मयः श्रोत्रमयः पृथिवीमय आपोमयो वायुमय आकाशमयस्तेजोमयोऽतेजोमयः काममयोऽकाममयः क्रोधमयोऽक्रोधमयो धर्ममयोऽधर्ममयः सर्वमयस्तद्वदेतदिदम्मयोऽदोमय इति यथाकारी यथाचारी तथा भवति साधुकारी साधुर्भवति पापकारी पापो भवति पुण्यः पुण्येन



कर्मणा भवति पापः पापेन ॥ अथो खल्वद्वाहुः काममय एवायं पुरुष इति स यथाकामो भवति तत्कुरुभवति यत्कुरुभवति तत्कर्म कुरुते यत्कर्म कुरुते तदभिसम्पद्यते ॥ ५ ॥

That Self is indeed Brahman, consisting of knowledge, mind, life, sight, hearing, earth, water, wind, ether, light and no light, desire and no desire, anger and no anger, right or wrong, and all things. Now as a man is like this or like that, according as he acts and according as he behaves, so will he be : A man of good acts will become good, a man of bad acts, bad. He becomes pure by pure deeds, bad by bad deeds.

And here they say that a person consists of desires, and as is his desire, so is his will; and as is his will, so is his deed; and whatever deed he does, that he will reap.

The above Śruti clearly declares that the Jīva is not only Tejomaya (consisting of light), but Ākāśamaya, Vāyumaya, etc. In fact, it consists of all elements.

Moreover, the next Sūtra strengthens this argument.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 6.

नैकस्मिन्दर्शयतोहि ॥ ४ । २ । ६ ॥

न, Na, not. एकस्मिन्, Ekasmin, in one. दर्शयतः, Darśayataḥ, they both (the question and the answer) show. हि, Hi, because.

6. The individual soul does not enter in one element only, because the question and the answer both declare it to the contrary.—506.

COMMENTARY

It should not be considered that the Jīva is merged in the single element of Tejas only. Because the contrary is mentioned in the question and answer between Śvetaketu and Pravāhana in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (Adhyāya V. Khandas 3-10, see pages 422-425 *ante*). This fact has been established by the author of the Sūtras in his previous Sūtra, III., 1. 1 (page 426). Similarly, the merging of the Prāṇa into various elements, like Tejas and the rest, is not directly, but in conjunction with the individual soul, and this is the fact established by the previous Sūtras.

### Adhikaraṇa V.

Now another question arises with regard to the above text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI., 8. 6) which was the subject of consideration in the preceding six Sūtras.

**Doubt :** The doubt that arises here is the following : Does the soul of the wise, as well as that of the person who does not know Brahman, follow this particular method of going out of the body, or is it confined only to the soul of the man who does not know Brahman ?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the ignorant only go out by the method previously described, for the wise do not follow this

method of departure, as is shown in the following Śruti of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 7).

यदा सर्वे प्रमुच्यन्ते कामा येऽस्य हृदि श्रिताः ॥ अथ मर्त्योऽमृतो भवत्यन्न ब्रह्म समश्नुत इति ॥

When all those worldly desires that cling to the Antaḥkaraṇa are entirely given up (and spiritual desires spring up) then the mortal becomes immortal, then he enjoys *here* Brahman.

[This verse describes the state attained through the *special* grace of God. It looks very much like a state of physical immortality or Jīvan-mukti].

The word *Atra* in the above verse shows, that the wise man enjoys the immortality *here*, in this very life : and does not require to go out of the body, in order to enjoy the bliss of Mukti.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 7.

समाना चासृत्युपक्रमादमृतत्वं चानुपोष्य ॥ ४ । २ । ७ ॥

समाना Samānā, common. च Cha, indeed. आसृति Asṛti, proceeding further, up to the way. उपक्रमात् Upakramāt, before beginning. अमृतत्वम् Amṛtatvam, immortality. च Cha, and. अनुपोष्य Anupoṣya, without burning, without dissolution.

7. Indeed common (to him who knows and him who does not know) (is the departure) up to the beginning of the way ; and the immortality (of Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV., 4. 7) is (a metaphorical one) without having burned (the connection with the body).—507.

#### COMMENTARY

Of the two “Cha’s” to be found in the above Sūtra the first has the force of indeed. He who does not know and he who knows, have both this in common, that their method of going out is the same, upto the point from which the path commences. In other words, up to the soul’s entering into the arteries through which it has to go out. Of course, there is difference at the time of entering and onward, when they have once entered these arteries. He who does not know (Ajñā) has to enter one of the hundred arteries that proceed from the heart downwards. But he who knows (Vijñā) goes out by that artery which is one hundred and first and which rises from the heart and pierces the crown of the head. Thus the Chhândogya Upaniṣad declares (VIII., 6. 6) :

शतं चेका च हृदयस्य नाड्यस्तालां मूर्धानमभिनिःसृतेत् । तयोर्ध्वमायन्नमृतत्वमेति विश्वङ्ङन्या उत्क्रमणे भवन्त्युत्क्रमणे भवन्ति ॥ ६ ॥

There are a hundred and one vessels of the heart, and the chief of them (proceeding from the heart) pierces through the head. By that one going upwards,

he obtains deathlessness. The others are for the purpose of carrying the soul to diverse other Lokas.

[It is only when the soul passes out of the Brahma Naḍi that there is Release].

It is about this passage of the soul through the coronal artery that the mention is made also in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 4. 2).

तस्य हेतस्य हृदयस्याग्रं प्रबोतते तेन प्रबोतेनैव आत्मा निष्कामति चक्षुष्टो वा मूर्ध्नो वाऽन्येभ्यो वा शरीरदेशेभ्यः ॥

The point of his heart becomes lighted up, and by that light the Self departs, either through the eye, or through the skull or through other places of the body.

This going out through the skull, mentioned in the above passage, contemplates the case of the one who knows (Vijña), while he who does not know (Ajña) goes out through other passages, such as eyes, ears, etc. As regards the Bṛhadāraṇyaka text (IV., 4. 7) declaring that he who knows gets the immortality even *here*: that applies to the wise man (Vijña) who has still connection with the body, and whose such connection has not been burnt up and dissolved. The immortality referred to in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka (IV., 4. 7) denotes, therefore, the destruction of earlier sins and the non-clinging of later acts, which come to him who knows the Lord.

The above is further explained in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 8.

तदापीतेः संसारव्यपदेशान् ॥ ४ । २ । ८ ॥

तद् Tad, that (immortality). आपीतेः Āpiteḥ, till he has acquired direct knowledge or union with Brahman. संसार Samsāra, as Samsāra. व्यपदेशान् Vyapadeśāt, the state being named.

8. That (immortality mentioned in Bṛhadāraṇyaka IV., 4. 7., refers to this sinlessness of the saint) because the Scripture teaches that the condition of the Samsāra lasts (up to the time of the realisation of Brahman).—508.

COMMENTARY

The "immortality" mentioned above refers to this condition of sinlessness, belonging to him who knows (Vijña), but whose connection with the body has not yet been dissolved. Why do we say so? Because up to attaining Brahman, the texts describe Samsāra state. Up to the time of the realisation of Brahman, the man is in Samsāra, the characteristic of which is connection with the body. The realisation or direct vision of Brahman takes place only when the man reaches, through Devayāna path, the highest heaven of Brahman called the Samvyoma. And this never takes place before the dissolution of the soul's connection with the body.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 9.

सूक्ष्मप्रमाणतश्च तथोपलब्धेः ॥ ४ । २ । ९ ॥

सूक्ष्म Sūkṣma, of the subtle body. प्रमाणतः Pramāṇataḥ, from the authority or the means of knowledge. च Cha, and. तथा Tathā, thus. उपलब्धेः Upalabdhēḥ, it being observed.

9. And the subtle body still persists, because of an authority of the Scripture, and because the existence of the body is actually observed even in the higher planes.—509.

COMMENTARY

The connection with a body (whether gross or subtle) is not dissolved, so long as the Vidvān (the man who knows) exists in this world (whether the world be physical or any higher and subtler plane). That which constitutes his subtle body still persists and goes with the man, after his throwing off his physical body. Why? Because there is an authority to that effect in the scriptures. In the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad (I, 3) there is a colloquy with the Moon and others held by the departed soul of the Vidvān. From this conversation we infer that some sort of body must persist, at that stage, to enable the soul to hold conversation with the Moon and others. For it is a matter of observation, that no conversation can be held without a body. Therefore, when the Bṛhadāraṇyaka (IV., 4. 7) states that he becomes immortal even *here*, it means that sort of immortality which every sinless man enjoys, even without the dissolution of his connection with a body.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 10.

नोपमर्देनतः ॥ ४ । २ । १० ॥

न Na, not. उपमर्देन Upamardena, in the way of destruction of bondage. अतः Atah, because of this reason.

10. Hence the text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad should not be taken to teach the destruction of the connection of the physical body.—510.

COMMENTARY

It thus appears that the text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka (IV., 4. 7) cannot teach that sort of immortality which consists in the destruction of connections with a body. It teaches immortality of mental peace, enjoyed by all good men.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 11

तस्यैवोपपत्तेरुष्मा ॥ ४ । २ । ११ ॥

तस्य Tasya, of that very (subtle body). एव Eva, verily. च Cha, and. उपपत्तेः Upapatteḥ, it being possible. ऊष्मा Ūṣmā, the heat.

11. And to that very subtle body belongs the warmth (which is perceived on touch), because that is reasonable. —511.

## COMMENTARY

The warmth which is observed on touching the gross body, before the man dies, belongs really to the subtle body, and is an attribute of the subtle body, and not of the gross body. Why? Because it is reasonable. So long as the subtle body is in the physical body, we perceive that the latter is hot, but when there takes place the separation of the subtle from the gross, we do not perceive this warmth in the gross body. Therefore, the presence or the absence of the warmth of the gross body, depends on its connection or disconnection with the subtle body. Therefore, it is reasonable to hold that the warmth belongs to the subtle body, and not to the gross body. The word Cha, in the Sūtra, indicates that this is an additional reason for holding that the Vidvān also goes out of the body, at the time of death. Because in the case of the Vidvān also, we find that at the time of death, his body becomes cold, indicating that he also goes out of the body, accompanied by the subtle body.

In the next Sūtra the author himself raises a doubt and then answer it.

## SŪTRA IV., 2. 12.

प्रतिषेधादिति चेन्न शरीरात् ॥ ४ । २ । १२ ॥

प्रतिषेधात् Pratiṣedhāt, on account of the denial. इति Iti, so. चेन्न Chet, if, न Na, not. शरीरात् Śārīrāt, because departure from the embodied soul (is prohibited).

12. If it be said that he who knows does not go out of the body, on account of the prohibition, then we reply, that it is not so; because the prohibition refers to the going out of the Prāṇas from the embodied soul.—512.

## COMMENTARY

It is objected that the Vidvān does not go out of the body, because there is a prohibition to that effect in Brhādāraṇyaka (IV., 4. 6):

अथाकामयमानो योऽकामो निष्काम आसकाम आत्मकामो न तस्य प्राणा उत्क्रामन्ति ब्रह्मैव सन् प्रक्षाप्येति ।

But as to the man who does not desire, who, not desiring, free from desires, is satisfied in his desires, or desires the Self only, his vital spirits do not depart elsewhere, being like Brahman, he goes to Brahman.

The above verse shows, by using the word Tasya Prāṇaḥ, that the life-breath of him, who knows, does not go out. To this objection we reply that

the above sentence does not say, "Na tasya Prāṇa dehāt utkrāṃanti," (his life-breaths do not go out of the body (Dehāt), but it really means, "Na tasya Prāṇa śārīrāt utkrāṃanti" (his life-breaths do not go out from the soul). (Śārīrāt means soul, or that which has a body). Therefore, the prohibition is to the going out from the soul, and not from the body. For, as a matter of fact, it is observed, that the life-breaths of the Vidvān even go out of the body.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 13.

स्पष्टोद्येकेषाम् ॥ ४ । २ । १३ ॥

स्पष्टः Spāṣṭhaḥ, clear. हि Hi, because. एकेषाम् Ekeṣāṃ, of some (Sākhās).

13. And because it is clear according to some recensions.  
—513.

#### COMMENTARY

There is no scope for controversy in this matter. Because "Na tasya Prāṇa utkrāṃanti" is the reading in the Kāṇva recension of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad ; but in another recension, namely, those of the Mādhyandinas, the reading is "Na tasmāt Prāṇa utkrāṃanti," "*from him* the life-breaths do not go out." The word Tasmāt, meaning "*from him*," is a very clear term, and leaves no room for doubt that the prohibition applies to the going out of the Prāṇa from the soul. The Bṛhadāraṇyaka text means that the Prāṇas of the wise man never leave the soul. It does not mean that they never leave the *body*. The next sentence Atraiva samavalīyante" means "these Prāṇas merge indeed in that." The word Atra, "*in that*," means in Brahman, the object of attainment.

**Objection :** In the previous section of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka in the dialogue between Ārtabhāga and Yājñavalkya, there is also a statement that the Prāṇas do not pass out of the *body*. The objector says : How do you explain that statement ? We give the passage here below (Br., Up., III. 2, 10 and 11) :

याज्ञवल्क्येति होवाच यदिदं सर्वं मृत्योरन्नं का स्वित्सा देवता यस्या मृत्युरन्नमित्यग्निर्नै मृत्युः सोऽपामन्नमप पुनर्मृत्युं जयति ॥ १० ॥ याज्ञवल्क्येति होवाच यन्नाऽयं पुरुषो भ्रियत उदस्मात्प्राणाः कामन्त्याहो ३ नेति नेति होवाच याज्ञवल्क्योऽत्रैव समवनीयन्ते स उच्छ्ववत्याध्मायत्याध्मातो मृतः शेते ॥ ११ ॥

"Yājñavalkya," he said, "everything is the food of death. What then is the deity to whom death is food ?"

"Fire (Agni) is death, and that is the food of water. Death is conquered again by water."

"Yājñavalkya," he said, "when such a person (a sage) dies, do the vital breaths (Prāṇas)

move out of him or not?" "No," replied Yājñavalkya, "they are gathered up in him, he swells, he is inflated, and thus inflated, the dead lies at rest."

The above is the Kāṇva reading. The sense of the question is this. Ārtabhāga asked Yājñavalkya, "When this God-knowing man dies, then do his life-breaths (Prāṇas) go out from this (Asmāt), namely, from this body." In other words, does he go out along with the Prāṇas from the coronal artery, from the crown of the head, or does he remain in the body so long as it does not fall off and then goes away?" To this question, Yājñavalkya replies, that the Prāṇas of such a sage remain in the body, so long as the body does not fall off. Such a sage remains in the body, and the body swells up, being inflated with the external air. Thus inflated, the dead man lies at rest. Thus experiencing the Prārabdha fruit in the shape of the swollen, inflated body, the sage leaves such body to his sons and kinsmen and gets Mukti at once. This is the difficult text propounded for solution to those who maintain the view that the Prāṇas of the sage always leave the body.

The reply to this is that the above text mentions a very exceptional case, the case of those ardent, impatient, lovers of God. Such persons do not pass through the above process of death, the Lord Hari himself stands near them at the time of death, and freeing them from the body, takes them at once with him to his home. The Prāṇas, of course, in such a case do not follow the soul. They remain behind in the body.

The followers of Advaitam explain the above text in the following way: This non-departure of the Prāṇa from the body refers to the case of those who worship the unqualified Brahman.

But that explanation is wrong. Because there are no such words in the above text to indicate that it applies to those who meditate on unqualified Brahman. Secondly, we have already demonstrated that unqualified Brahman is a fiction.

The whole argument of the Advaitins is thus given by Saṅkarācāryya in his commentary (IV., 2. 3):

"The assertion that also the soul of him who knows Brahman departs from the body, because the denial states the soul (not the body) to be the point of departure, cannot be upheld. For, we observe that in the sacred text of some there is a clear denial of a departure, the starting-point of which is the body. The text meant, at first, records the question asked by Ārtabhāga; When this man dies, do the vital spirits depart from him or not?" then embraces the alternative of non-departure, in the words, 'No,' replied Yājñavalkya; thereupon anticipating the objection that a man cannot be dead as long as his vital spirits have not departed, teaches the resolution of the Prāṇas in the body "in that very same place they are merged; and finally, in confirmation thereof, remarks, "he swells, he is inflated, inflated the dead man lies." This last clause states that swelling, etc., affect the subject under discussion, *viz.*, that from which the departure takes place (the Tasmāt of the former clause) which subject is, in this last clause, referred to by means of the word, 'He.' Now swelling and so on can belong to the body only, not to the embodied soul. And owing to its equality thereto also the passages 'from him the vital spirits do not depart; in that very same place they are resolved' have to be taken as denying a departure starting from the body, although the chief subject of the passage is the embodied soul. This may be done by the embodied soul and the body being viewed as non-different. In this way we have to explain the passage if read with the fifth case."

SŪTRA IV., 2. 14.

स्मर्यते च ॥ ४ । २ । १४ ॥

स्मर्यते Smaryate, it is mentioned in the Smṛtis. च Cha, and.

14. Smṛti also declares the same.—514.

COMMENTARY

In a Smṛti (Yājñavalkya Smṛti, III., 167) there is a declaration that the soul of the Vidvān departs by means of the coronal artery through the head.

ऊर्ध्वमेकः स्थितस्तेषां यो भित्त्वा सूर्यमण्डलम् ।

ब्रह्मलोकमतिक्रम्य तेन याति परां गतिम् ॥

Of those, one is situated above, which pierces the disc of the sun and passes beyond the world of Brahman, by way of that, the soul reaches the highest goal.

Thus the Śruti and Smṛti establish the proposition that the wise also depart from the body, accompanied by the Prāṇas.

### Adhikaraṇa VI.

It has been mentioned above that the individual soul accompanied by the Prāṇa and the group of sense-organs merges into the subtle elements like heat and the rest at the time of departure. It has further been established that this is the method of departure even of him who knows. Now a new doubt is raised.

*Doubt*: The Prāṇas like the speech and the rest together with their vehicles, the subtle elements, belonging to the wise sage, merge in their respective causes like fire, etc., or in the Supreme Self.

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the organs of the Prāṇas merge in their respective causes and not in the Supreme Self because of the text, "Yatrāśya puruṣasya" shows that the Prāṇas and the senses merge in their causes. We give the passage below (Br. Up., III., 2. 13.) :

याज्ञवल्क्येति होवाच यत्रास्य पुरुषस्य मृतस्यार्गिन वागप्येति वातं प्राणश्चक्षुरादित्यं मनश्चन्द्रं दिशः श्रोत्रं पृथिवीं शरीरमाकाशमात्मौषधीर्लोमानि वनस्पतीन्केशा अप्यु लोहितं च रेतश्च निधीयते कायं तदा पुरुषो भवतीत्याहुर सोम्य इस्तमार्तभागावामेवेतस्य वेदिष्यावो न नावेतत् स जन इति तौ होत्क्रम्य मन्त्र-याचक्राते तौ ह यदूचतुः कर्म हैव तदूचतुर्थ यत्प्रशशंसतुः कर्म हैव तत्प्रशशंसतुः पुण्यो वै पुण्येन कर्मणा भवति पापः पापेनेति ततो ह जारत्कारव आर्तभाग उपरराम ॥ १३ ॥

"Yājñavalkya," he said, "when the speech of this dead person enters into the fire, breath into the air, the eye into the sun, he mind into the moon, the hearing into space, into the earth the body, into the ether the self, into the shrubs the hairs of the body, into



the trees the hairs of the head, when the blood and the seed are deposited in the water, where is then that person ?" Yājñavalkya said, "Take my hand, my friend."

"We two alone shall know of this ; let this question of ours not be (discussed) in public." Then these two went out and argued, and what they said was Karman (work), what they praised was Karman," *viz.*, that a man becomes good by good work, and bad by bad work. After that Jaratkarava Ārtabhāga held his peace.

The above shows distinctly that the senses resolve into their causes, the elements.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 15.

तानि परे तथाद्याह ॥ ४ । २ । १५ ॥

तानि Tāni, those (the Tejas, and the speech, etc., denoted by them). परे Pare, in the highest Brahman. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, because. आह Āha, says.

15. These (fire and the rest together with the senses) merge in the highest : because the Śruti declares it to be so.—515.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VI, 8. 6) is said "Tejah parasyām devetayām," the Tejas in the highest divinity. The word Tejas here includes all the sense-organs, like speech and the rest, together with the Prāṇas. These merge in Brahman who is the Ātman of all. Because he is the material cause of everything. Why do we say so? Because the above Chhândogya text "Tejah parasyām," is a very distinct declaration that the Tejas and the Prāṇas with the senses and their vehicles merge in the highest.

As regard the Brhadāraṇyaka text (III., 2. 13) it is to be explained in a metaphorical sense, as has already been mentioned by the author in Sūtra III., 1. 40, page 429. For, as a matter of fact, no one ever sees the hairs of the body entering into the shrubs or the hairs of the head entering into the trees. The whole of the above Brhadāraṇyaka passage is a figurative statement.

#### Adhikaraṇa VII.

Now the author raises another doubt regarding the same topic.

*Doubt* : There has been mentioned before that the Prāṇa and other life-elements of the sage merge in the Supreme Self. Is that merging, a combination by juxtaposition, as in the preceding instances of the merging of speech in mind, etc ; or is it a merging by unity of nature, as in the case of the rivers flowing into the sea (Mund., III., 2. 8). In other

words, do these permanent atoms retain their specific characters when they merge in the Supreme Self or do they become resolved into a homogeneous mass, with the Root of Matter, which constitutes the Achit-Śakti of Brahman.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that these permanent atoms retain their specific characters, even when they are merged in Brahman : and that for two reasons, first, because this is in harmony with the preceding cases of merging. When the permanent atoms of speech, sight, hearing, etc., enter Manas, they do not lose their specific nature ; similarly, when the mental atom, in company with the five other atoms of speech, etc., merges in Prāṇa, it retains its separate nature, why should then Prāṇa and the rest when they enter into the Supreme Self, or rather into that aspect of Brahman which is the Achit-Śakti) lose their identities ? Secondly, there is no specific statement in the Śruti that they lose their identity. Therefore, it is a merging by way of *combination* and not identity.

*Siddhānta* : This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 16.

अविभागो वचनात् ॥ ४ । २ । १६ ॥

अविभागः Avibhāgaḥ, there is no division or separation. वचनात् Vachanāt, on account of the statement.

16. (The merging of the permanent atoms of Prāṇa and the rest is by way of identity, for) there is no separation, as is stated by an authoritative text.—516.

COMMENTARY

The merging of the Prāṇa and the rest in the Supreme Self, or rather in that aspect of Him which is Achit-Śakti called Tamas—the Great Darkness, the Root of Matter—is by way of *non-separation*, that is to say, by way of identity. (The Prāṇa and the permanent atoms are *resolved* into this Root-Matter, losing their specific molecular nature). How do we know this ? Vachanāt—because of a text. In the Praśna Upaniṣad, (VI., 5), we have the following :

स यथेमा नद्यः स्यन्दमानाः समुद्रायणाः समुद्रं प्राप्यास्तं गच्छन्ति भिद्येते तासां नामरूपे समुद्र इत्येवं प्रोच्यते । एवमेवास्य परिदग्धुरिमाः षोडशबलाः पुरुषायणाः पुरुषं प्राप्यास्तं गच्छन्ति भिद्येते तासां नामरूपे पुरुष इत्येवं प्रोच्यते स पक्षो अकलोऽमृतो भवति तदेष श्लोकः ॥ ५ ॥

As these rapid ocean-going rivers, on reaching the ocean, go to rest, lose their name and form, and are said "they are in the ocean;" so indeed of the Great Beholder, these sixteen Puruṣa-going Principles, on reaching the Puruṣa, go to rest, losing their name and form, and men say, "They are in the bosom of the Lord,"—He then becomes above all Principles, and the immortal. About it is this verse.

The above verse shows that the sixteen Kalās or portions of the *body* of the soul merge in the Supreme Self, called here the Puruṣa or the person. [The sixteen Kalās (permanent parts) are the eleven sense-organs and the five Tanmātras: or the eleven sense-organs and the five Prāṇas]. It further mentions that they lose their name and form. When these permanent atoms (called sixteen Kalās) are thus merged in the Root-Matter aspect of Brahman, then the Jīva becomes Akalā or partless, permanent-atomless, then he becomes immortal. So long as these atoms (Kalās) retain their name and form, their distinctive nature, the man does not gain immortality.

The sense is this. The subtle body of the sage when he leaves the dense body, though no longer having the power to ensnare the sage in its meshes, yet follows him in his journey towards heaven, for, it is burnt up by Vidyā, like the burnt up piece of coal, which retains the form of coal but is a mass of ashes. But when the sage goes beyond the cosmic Egg, then this semblance of the subtle body, which was following him so long, also falls away from him at the last moment, when the eighth covering of the Egg, the covering of the Pure Prakṛti (or the Root-Matter) is pierced by the soul. Here the subtle body drops down and is resolved into the matter of the Pure Prakṛti. This is the meaning of the symbol that the soul bathes in the river called Virajā or Rajas-less. After this bath, the soul leaving behind the subtle body in the river Virajā, (like the Pilgrim in the famous allegory of Bunyan leaving his burden) proceeds in all its pristine purity, in the Body called Brāhma-Vapuḥ—the Body-Divine created by the mere Will of the Lord, and away from all taints of Prakṛti, unites with Brahman, and enjoys the Bliss of Heaven.

### *Adhikaraṇa VIII.*

Now the author commences a new topic, in order to show the difference in the methods of going out of body, in the case of the sage and of one who does not know. He had promised to show this difference in a preceding Sūtra, and he now goes to fulfill that promise. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 6. 6) as well as in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad (VII., 6) there was mention of a hundred and one arteries by which the soul goes out. The wise go out by the hundred and first artery (the Suṣumnā).

*Doubt:* Now arises the doubt; Is it right to make this restrictive

rule that the wise alone go out by the hundred and first artery, while the ignorant leave the body, by any one of the remaining hundred arteries ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that there can be no such restrictive rule. Because, in the first place, the arteries are very minute ; secondly, they are very numerous ; and thirdly, they are very difficult of distinction by the soul of the dying. Therefore, whether the man be a sage or an ordinary ignorant person, at the time of death his soul cannot distinguish the proper artery by which it should go out. In fact, the words of the verse "Tayorddhvam āyan amṛtatvam eti" show that by going upwards by *anyone* of these arteries, the man gets immortality. Therefore, it is not necessary that the man should go out by the hundred and first artery only, but that he may go out by anyone of these arteries ; provided that he goes *upwards*, and not horizontally or downwards.

*Siddhānta* : This view is refuted by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 17.

तदोकोऽग्रज्वलनं तत्प्रकाशितद्वारोविद्यासामर्थ्यात्तच्छेषगत्यनुस्मृतिं हार्दानीं गृहीतः योगाच्च

शताधिकया ॥ ४ । २ । १७ ॥

तत् Tat, of that, of the soul in which have entered the permanent atoms of speech and the rest. ओकः Okah, abode, the heart. अग्र-ज्वलनं Agra-jvalanam, lighting up of the point, the upper portion of the heart becomes illumined. तत् Tat, by Him, by the Lord dwelling in the heart. प्रकाशितं Prakāśita, illumined, shown. द्वारः Dvārah, the door, the root from which the hundred and first artery has its origin. विद्या-सामर्थ्यात् Vidyā-sāmarthyāt, by the power of its knowledge. तत् Tat, that, that knowledge. शेष Śeṣa, remainder, the element. गति Gati, path, the way, the carrying by the Devas called Ātivāhika on the various stages of that path. अनुस्मृतिं योगात् Anusmṛti-yogāt, because of the application of remembrance. च Cha, and. हार्दं Hārda, (the Lord) who abides in the Heart. अनुगृहीतः Anugṛhītaḥ, being favoured by, being assisted by. शताधिकया Śatādhikayā, by the one hundred and first artery.

17. Then there takes place a lighting up of the point of His abode, and by the door so illumined by Him, the soul departs through the hundred and first artery, by virtue of the power of his wisdom and by the application of the memory of the path which results from such wisdom, and through the favour of the Lord in the heart.—517.

#### COMMENTARY

The wise goes out by the artery called Suṣumnā, which is the hundred and first artery. Nor does this artery remain undistinguishable by

him. Because as soon as the soul, at the time of departing from the body, has withdrawn into itself all the permanent atoms, beginning with speech up to Prāṇa, there takes place a sudden lighting up of the whole region of the heart, and the soul can at once see the Suṣumnā artery, by which it has to go out. It does so primarily, through the favour of the Lord of the heart, and secondarily, by the power of the Vidyā, that it had acquired, and by virtue of the memory of the path, by which it has to travel, knowing from his Vidyā (knowledge), that the path of Devayāna is one, on which there are various Devas, who carry the soul from stage to stage. This memory of the teaching, which was theoretical up to that time, comes to his help at that critical moment. Nor is the word knowledge or "Vidyā" of this Sūtra, the dry theoretical knowledge, it is knowledge coupled with devotion. A result or Śeṣa of this Vidyā is the memory of the Âtivāhika Devas, who help the soul, to accomplish this journey. It is through the help of these three, namely, through the favour of the Lord Hari dwelling in the heart, through the might of Vidyā (devotional knowledge) and through the memory of the Âtivāhika Devas, that the soul of the wise experiences no difficulty in selecting the proper artery of the heart by which to go out, specially when the whole heart is glowing with the light of the Lord.

*Note:* This lighting up of the point of the heart takes place in the case of *all* souls, whether they be wise or ignorant, but the wise alone can select the Suṣumnā artery and not the ignorant.

When the wise soul is thus helped by the Lord of the heart and by his devotion and the memory, then in that glowing light, the Lord points out to the soul, as it were, the hundred and first artery, by which it should go out. Thus the soul comes to know that artery, and goes out by it. This is the path by which the wise go out.

### Adhikaraṇa IX.

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII, 6. 5) we have the following :

अथ यत्रैतद्स्माच्छरीरादुत्क्रामत्यथैतेरेव रश्मिभिरूर्ध्वमाकृते स ओमिति वा होदामीयते स यावत्क्षिप्येन्मनस्तावदादित्यं गच्छत्येतद्वै खलु लोकद्वारं विदुषां प्रपदनं निरोधोऽविदुषाम् ॥ ५ ॥

तदेव श्लोकः शतञ्चैका च हृदयस्य नाड्यस्तासां मूर्धानमभिनिःसृतेका तयोर्ध्वमायकमृतत्वमेति विद्वद्ब्रह्मणा उत्क्रमणे भवन्त्युत्क्रमणे भवन्ति ॥ ६ ॥

But when he departs from this body, then he departs upwards by *those very rays* : or he goes out while meditating on Om. And while his mind is failing, he is going to the sun. For the sun is the door of the world. Those who know, walk in ; those who

do not know, are shut out. "There is this verse: There are a hundred and one arteries of the heart; one of them penetrates the crown of the head, moving upwards by it a man reaches the immortal; the others serve for departing in different directions, yea, in different directions.

The above verses show that the soul coming out by the coronal artery, follows the rays of the sun and thus reaches the disc of the sun. The words in the original are "Etair eva raśmibhir"—*by these very rays*.

*Doubt*: Now arises the doubt: That a man dying in the daytime can follow the rays of the sun and go to the solar disc. The question is, does the soul of the wise man, who dies in the night, also follow the rays, when there are no rays to follow?

*Pūrvapakṣa*: The Pūrvapakṣin maintains, that there being no rays of the sun at the nighttime; only that wise man who dies in the daytime, can follow the rays and not otherwise. The wise, therefore, must die at a time, when the sun is shining.

*Siddhānta*: This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 18.

रश्म्यनुसारी ॥ ४ । २ । १८ ॥

रश्मि Raśmi, the rays. अनुसारी Anusāri, following.

18. The wise follows the rays of the sun (whether he dies in day or in night).—518.

COMMENTARY

Whether the wise dies by day or by night at whatever time he dies, he follows the rays of the sun and goes on those rays to the solar disc. This we say because the Scripture nowhere says that only by dying during the daytime, the soul can follow the rays of the sun and not otherwise.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 19.

निशिनेति चेन्न सम्बन्धस्य यावद्देहावित्वादर्शयति च ॥ ४ । २ । १९ ॥

निशि Nīśi, at night. न Na, not. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if. सम्बन्धस्य Sambandhasya, of the relation. यावद् Yāvad, as long as. देह Deha, the body exists. भावित्वा Bhāvitvāt, because of the existence. दर्शयति Darśayati, the Śāstras show. च Cha, and.

19. If it be objected that one dying in the night cannot follow the rays of the sun, we reply it is not so. Because the connection between the rays and the body persists as long as the body lasts. Scripture also declares this.—519.

## COMMENTARY

If it be objected that a person dying at night cannot follow the rays of the sun, because there is an absence of such rays then, we reply it is not so. Why? Because the connection of the solar rays with the human body is a permanent one, so long as the soul remains in the body. The days and nights may revolve, but this connection of the human rays (Aura) with the solar rays, continues; and it is not a fact that the connection is cut off during the night. Therefore, at whatever time a man dies, the rays being there, the soul can go by it to the solar disc. The proof of this connection of the rays of the sun with those of the body is furnished by the fact that bodily heat is perceived both in the winter and in the summer, both in the night and in the day. If the connection were cut off, then owing to the coldness of the winter, there should be no heat in the body. But the bodily heat is perceived not only in summer nights but also in the wintry nights. Nor is this a mere inferential proposition, based upon reasoning alone, but there is scriptural authority for it also. Therefore, the Sūtra says "Darśayati cha," "and scripture also declares this." In the Chhândogyu Upaniṣad (VII., 6. 2.) we find it stated in the following:

तथा महापथ आतत उभौ ग्रामौ गच्छतीमञ्चामुच्चैवमेवेता आदित्यस्य रश्म्य उभौ लोको गच्छ-  
न्तीमञ्चा मुञ्चामुष्माददित्यात्प्रतायन्ते ता आसु नाडीषु सप्ता आभ्यो नाडीभ्यः प्रतायन्ते तेऽमुष्मिन्नादित्ये  
सप्ताः ॥ २ ॥

As a very long highway goes to two places, to one at the beginning, and to another at the end, so do the rays of the sun go to both worlds, to this one and to the other. They start from the sun and enter into those arteries; they start, from those arteries and enter into the sun.

There is another Śruti also to the same effect:

संसृष्टा वा एते रश्मयश्च नाड्यश्च; नैवा विभागो यावदिदं शरीरं; अत एतेः पश्यत्येतैश्चक्रमते एतेः  
प्रवर्तते ।

These rays and the arteries are verily connected together, and they are never separated so long as this body is alive. Therefore, through these he sees, through these he goes out, through these he enters into different undertakings.

Therefore, it is an established rule, that the wise follow the rays of the sun, whether they die by night or by day.

---

### Adhikaraṇa X.

Now is discussed a new topic.

**Doubt :** Does the man who knows, get the fruit of Vidyā if he happens to die during the southern progress of the sun or does he not?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** The opponent maintains the view that the northern progress is the path leading to Brahmaloka, described in both the Śruti

and the Smṛti. Moreover, we see instances of persons like Bhīṣma and others, who waited for the northern progress of the sun for leaving their bodies. Therefore, the sage who dies during the southern progress of the sun does not get to the Brahma-world.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 20.

अतश्चायनेऽपि दक्षिणे ॥ ४ । २ । २० ॥

अतः Atah, for this very reason. च Cha, and. अपि Api, also. अयने Ayaṇe, in the (southern) progress of the sun. दक्षिणे Dakṣiṇe, in the southern.

20. For the same reason the sage dying during the southern progress of the sun also gets to Brahma-world.—520.

COMMENTARY

“For the same reason” namely, there being absence of partial fruition of Vidyā and the exhaustion of obstructive acts by her. Vidyā cannot have partial fruit. It must produce its entire result. Moreover, it has the power of removing the effect of all obstructive works. For these two reasons also, the sage dying during the southern progress of the sun gets verily the fruit of Vidyā and the Pūrvapakṣa is consequently not valid. Moreover, it will be mentioned further on that the words “northern progress of the sun” do not mean any time, but denote the name of the Âtivāhika Devas, whose function it is to conduct the soul forward. As regards the case of Bhīṣma, who put off his death until the beginning of the northern progress, it was because he had got the boon from his father of dying at will, and so he did not die during the southern progress of the sun. Or it may be explained on the ground that Bhīṣma wanted to promote pious faith and practice and so put off his death until the northern progress of the sun. Therefore, his case is not to the point.

Says an objector : But the Gītā is against you. It clearly says (VIII., 23-27) that if a man wants to get Mukti, he must regulate the time of his death, so that he may die during the northern progress of the sun. .

यत्र काले त्वनाश्रुतिमाश्रुतिं चैव योगिनः ।

प्रयाता यान्ति तं कालं वक्ष्यामि भरतर्षभ ॥ २३ ॥

That time wherein going forth Yogis return not, and also that wherein going forth they return, that time shall I declare to thee, O Prince of the Bhāratas.

अग्निर्ज्योतिरहः शुक्लः वयमासा उत्तरायणम् ।

तत्र प्रयाता गच्छन्ति ब्रह्म ब्रह्मविदो जनाः ॥ २४ ॥



Fire, light, daytime, the bright fortnight, the six months of the northern path—then, going forth, the men who know the *Eternal* go to the *Eternal*.

धूमो रात्रिस्तथा कृष्णः षडमासा दक्षिणायनम् ।

तत्र चान्द्रमसं ज्योतिर्योगी प्राप्य निवर्तते ॥ २५ ॥

Smoke, nighttime the dark fortnight also, the six months of the southern path—then the Yogī, obtaining the moonlight, returneth.

शुक्लकृष्णे गती द्वेते जगतः शाश्वते मते ।

एकया यात्यनावृत्तिमन्ययाऽऽवर्तते पुनः ॥ २६ ॥

Light and darkness, these are thought to be the worlds everlasting paths ; by the one he goeth who returneth not, by the other he who returneth again.

नैते सृती पार्थ जानन्योगी मुञ्चति कश्चन ।

तस्मात्सर्वेषु कालेषु योगयुक्तो भवार्जुन ॥ २७ ॥

Knowing these paths, O Pārtha, the Yogī is nowise perplexed. Therefore, in all times be firm in Yoga, O Arjuna.

Here the topic has the subject of time as its commencement, and time being the principal topic which the Lord propounds to teach, we infer that the words day, fortnight, month, etc., are time-denoting words and are not the names of Devas and that dying during that time leads to Mukti. The above passage further shows that dying during the night or during the southern progress of the sun does not lead to Mukti. This doubt is removed by the author in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 2. 21.

योगिनः प्रतिस्मर्यते स्मार्ते चैते ॥ ४ । २ । २१ ॥

योगिनः Yoginah, those devoted to the Brahman. प्रति Prati, about स्मर्यते Smaryate, is remembered. स्मार्ते Smārte, the two that are worth remembering, (dual case). च Cha, and. एते Ete, these.

21. The above text mentions with regard to the Yogins, that these two paths ought to be remembered, (it does not say that a Yogī must die in the one path and not in the other).—521.

#### COMMENTARY

The above passage of the Gītā only proclaims this fact to Yogins, who are persons devoted to Brahman, that they must remember that the path of the moon is inferior to the path of the Light. It further tells them that these two paths are worthy of remembrance. It says "knowing these paths, O Pārtha, the Yogī is no wise perplexed." The above passage, therefore, does not state an injunction for the sage to select special time of death. Moreover, it is wrong to say that the topic begins with the mention of time, and that since the opening sentence refers to time, therefore, these

words must be taken as meaning time. As a matter of fact, the passage opens with the word "fire," and "fire" and "smoke" cannot be called time-names. It is impossible, therefore, to take these words as meaning time. Consequently "fire," "smoke," etc., mean here the Âtivāhika Devas called "fire," "smoke," etc. That they are Âtivāhika Devas is mentioned by Bādarāyaṇa himself in his Sūtra, IV., 3. 4.

As to the following statement :

दिवा च शुक्लपक्षे उत्तरायणे च ।

मुमुक्षुतां प्रशस्तानि विपरीतन्तु गर्हितम् ॥

The daytime, the bright fortnight, and the northern progress of the sun are stated to be the approved times for a man to die, while the times contrary to these are not approved.

This refers to the case of those who have not got wisdom. For an ignorant man the daytime, etc., is the best. But he who has got Vidyā may verily leave his body at any time, during any season, and surely he will reach the Lord Hari.

---

## FOURTH ADHYĀYA

### THIRD PĀDA.

यः स्वप्राप्तिपथं देवः सेवनाभासतोऽदिशत् ।

प्राप्यं च स्वपदं प्रेयान् ममासौ श्यामसुन्दरः ॥

May that Lord Kṛṣṇa be the object of my love who is satisfied easily even with the show of devotion, and thus satisfied, shows the soul the path to His abode and the goal it must reach.

### *Adhikaraṇa I.*

In this Pāda are going to be determined the Path which leads to the world of Brahman, and the Goal which is Brahman itself. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV., 15) we have the following :

य एषोऽक्षिणि पुरुषो दृश्यत एष आत्मेति होवाचेतदमृतमभयमेतद्ब्रह्मेति तथैष्यस्मिन्सर्पिवैदिकं वा सिञ्चन्ति वर्त्मनी एव गच्छति ॥ १ ॥ एतं संयद्दाम इत्याचक्षत एतं हि सर्वाणि वामान्यभिसंयन्ति सर्वायानं वामान्यभिसंयन्ति य एवं वेद ॥ २ ॥ एष उ एव वामनीरेष हि सर्वाणि वामानि नयति सर्वाणि वामानि नयति य एवं वेद ॥ ३ ॥ एष उ एव भामनीरेष हि सर्वेषु लोकेषु भाति सर्वेषु लोकेषु भाति य एवं वेद ॥ ४ ॥ अथ यदु चैवास्मिच्छब्दं कुर्वन्ति यदि च नार्चिषमेवाभिसंभवन्त्यर्चिषोऽहरः आपूर्यमाणपक्ष्मापूर्यमाणपक्षाणान्बहुदङ्केति मासास्तान्मासेभ्यः संवत्सरं संवत्सरादादित्यमादित्याच्चन्द्रमसं चन्द्रमसो विधुतं तत्पुरुषोऽमानवः ॥ ५ ॥ स एनान्महान् गमयत्येष देवपथो ब्रह्मपथ एतेन प्रतिपद्यमाना इमं मानवमावर्तं नावर्तन्ते नावर्तन्ते ॥ ६ ॥ इति पञ्चदशः खण्डः ॥ १५ ॥

He said : This person who is seen in the eye is the Self (called Vāmana). This is the Immortal, the Fearless. This is Brahman. Nothing clings to this. Because (such a person resides in the eye) therefore, if any one drops melted butter or water on it, it runs away on both sides (and does not cling to the eye).

The wise call Him the Samyadvāma (the Most Beautiful), because all objects of beauty enter into Him. All beautiful objects enter into him who knows Him thus.

He verily is called Vāmani (the Giver of beauty) because He alone gives beauty to all. He who knows Him thus gives beauty to all beings inferior to himself.

He is also Bhāmani (the Resplendent) for He shines in all worlds. He who knows this thus, shines in all worlds.

Now when such persons die, whether (their relations) perform their death ceremonies or not, they go to the plane of the Ray, from the Ray-plane to the Day-plane, from the Day-plane to the Bright-fortnightly plane, from the Bright-fortnightly plane to the Northern six-monthly plane, from the Northern six-monthly plane to the Annual plane, then to the sun; from the Solar plane to the Lunar plane, from the Lunar plane to the plane of Lightning. There a Not-human Person approaches them. He leads them to Brahman. This is the path guarded by the Devas, the path that leads to Brahman. Those who proceed on that path, do not return to this round of humanity, yea, they do not return.

This shows that "Archis" is the first stage on the path. But we have a different account in the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, (I., 3) where Agni is mentioned as the first stage :

स एतं देवयानं पन्थानमापवाग्निर्लोकमागच्छति स वायुलोकं स वह्णलोकं स आदित्यलोकं स इन्द्रलोकं स प्रजापतिलोकं स ब्रह्मलोकं ॥

He (at the time of death), having reach the path of the gods, comes to the world of Agni, to the world of Vāyu, to the world of Varuṇa, to the world of Indra, to the world of Prajāpati, to the world of Brahman.

Then there is a third passage in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, (V., 10) which shows that Vāyu is the first stage on the Devayāna path :

यदा वे पुरुषोऽन्माहोकात्प्रैति स वायुमागच्छति तस्मै स तप्त विजिहीते यथा रथचक्रस्य खं तेन स ऊर्ध्वं आक्रमते स आदित्यमागच्छति तस्मै स तत्र विजिहीते यथा लम्बरस्य खं तेन स ऊर्ध्वं आक्रमते स चन्द्रमसमागच्छति तस्मै स तत्र विजिहीते यथा दुन्दुभेः खं तेन स ऊर्ध्वं आक्रमते स लोकमागच्छत्यशोकमहिम् तस्मिन्वसति शाश्वतीः समाः ॥ १ ॥ इति दशमं ब्राह्मणम् ॥ १० ॥

When the person goes away from this world he comes to the wind. Then the wind makes room for him like the hole of a carriage wheel, and through it he mounts higher. He comes to the sun. Then the sun makes room for him, like the hole of a Lambara, and through it he mounts higher. He comes to the moon. Then the moon makes room for him, like the hole of a drum, and through it he mounts higher, and arrives at the world where there is no sorrow. There he dwells for eternal years.

While the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, (II., 11) mentions the sun as the first stage on the path :

तपःश्रद्धेये ह्युपवसन्त्यरण्ये शान्ता विद्वांसो भेक्षचर्यां चरन्तः ॥ सूर्यद्वारेण ते विरजाः प्रयान्ति यन्नामृतः स पुरुषो ब्रह्मयात्मा ॥ ११ ॥

But those who practise meditation and contemplation, in a retired place, tranquil, wise and living on alms, reach through the help of the sun, being free from Rajas, that immortal Person whose essence is unchanging.

And there are other accounts also in other scriptures.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Is the road to Brahma-world one, or are they many (one of which being the road beginning with Archis as mentioned in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad)?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that since the roads describe different nature, and because every one says this is the only road, therefore, the roads must be different.

*Siddhānta* : The next Sūtra disposes of this view.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 1.

अर्चिरादिन तत्प्रथितेः ॥ ४ । ३ । १ ॥

अर्चिः-आदिना Archiḥ-ādinā, by the path of the rays, etc. . . Tat, that, प्रथिते Prathiteḥ, being well-known.

1. The first stage on the Devayāna path is Archis, because that is well-known.—522.

COMMENTARY

Every sage goes to the world of Brahman by the path in which Archis is the first. Why do we say so? Because it is well known. In other passages of the Upaniṣad, also, whenever Devayāna is described, it commences with Archis. Thus in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, (V., 10. 1) we find Archis mentioned as the first stage of the path.

तद्य इत्थं विदुर्यं चेमेऽरण्ये अथा तप इत्युपासते तेऽर्चिषमभिसंभवन्त्यर्चिषोऽहरहृ आपूर्यमाणपक्षमापूर्यमाणपक्षाभ्यान्वदुदङ्गेति माता<sup>१</sup>स्तान् ॥ १ ॥ मासेभ्यः संवत्सर<sup>२</sup> संवत्सरादादित्यमादित्याच्चन्द्रमसं चन्द्रमसो विष्णुतं तत्पुरुषो मानवः स एनान्न्रह्म गमयत्येव देवयानः ॥

Those who know this thus, and those who perform works of faith and hardship (altruistically) in some secluded pleasant place go (after death) to Archis from Archis to day, from day to the light half of the moon, from the light half of the moon to the six months when the sun goes to the north, from the six months when the sun goes to the north to the year, from the year to the sun, from the sun to the moon, from the moon to the lightning. There is the person, the servant of God (Manu), he leads them to Brahman. This is the path of the Devas.

The above passage occurs in the Vidyā of the five fires of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad. It, therefore, shows that even the worshippers of other Vidyās also go by the path beginning with Archis. In the Brahmātarka also we find the same :

द्राघेव मार्गो प्रथितावर्चिरादिविपश्चिताम् ।

धूमादिः कर्मिणाञ्चैव सर्वदेवविनिर्णयाम् ॥

There are only two paths well established and well-known ; that which commences with Light for the passage of the wise and that which commences with smoke for the passage of those who perform (sacrificial) acts.

This being so whenever a different path is mentioned, there also we must supply the deficiency from other texts, in the same way as we did in the case of the attributes of the Lord, for though the subject-matter may be different, the Vidyā is one. Therefore, all texts must be construed as commencing with Archirādi, otherwise there would be split in the sentence.

### Adhikaraṇa II.

Now the Author, in order to show that the stages of Vāyu, etc., mentioned in other texts, are to be combined with Archis, begins a new Sūtra. In the Kauṣītaki passage given above, we have it stated that

"he comes to the world of Agni, to the world of Vāyu, etc." The whole passage is repeated below (Kau. Up., I., 3.) :

He (at the time of death) having reached the path of the gods, comes to the world of Agni, to the world of Vāyu, to the world of Varuṇa, to the world of Indra, to the world of Prajāpati, to the world of Brahman.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Should the stages of Vāyu and the rest mentioned above, be inserted in the Archirādi path, or should they not?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent holds the view that they should not be so inserted, because they are read in a certain order, and because no option is allowed to make any such addition.

*Siddhānta* : This view is controverted in the next Sūtra.

*Note* : The three texts, one from the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, one from the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad and the third from the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad, began the description of the path with three different words, "Archis," "Agni" and "Vāyu." In order to harmonise them, it is shown that the path really commences with Archis : and Agni and Sūrya are but different modes of Archis, while Vāyu also comes in on the path, but at a later stage. To understand the discussion, we may anticipate matters and say that there are twelve (or according to another calculation) thirteen stages on the path. After the soul has entered the coronal artery it successively passes (or rather is conducted by the Devas of) the following stages :

1. Archis, the Deva of light.
2. Dinam, the Deva of day.
3. Śuklapakṣam, the Deva of the Bright-fortnight.
4. U'ttārāyaṇam, the Deva of the northern progress of the sun.
5. Samvatsaram, the Deva of the year.
6. Devalokam, the world of the Devas : (the same as Vāyuloka, according to some).
7. Vāyu, the world of Vāyu.
8. Ādityam, the world of the sun.
9. Chandram, the world of the moon.
10. Vidyut, the world of lightning.
11. Varuṇam, the world of water.
12. Indram, the world of Indra.
13. Prajāpati, the world of Prajāpati or of the four-faced Brahmā.

No single passage of the Upaniṣad gives all these thirteen stages ; but they are arrived at by collating different passages scattered in various Upaniṣads. This is what the author of the Sūtras has done.

SŪTRA IV, 3. 2.

वायुमब्दादविशेषविशेषाभ्याम् ॥ ४ । ३ । २ ॥

वायुम् Vāyum, the Vāyu, or the wind. अब्दाद् Abdâd, before entering into the great Sun. (Abda, a year, hence the Sun and Great Sun, the Lord). अविशेष

Aviśeṣa, owing to non-specification. विशेषाभ्याम् Viśeṣābhyām, and owing to specification.

2. The stage of Vāyu comes after the Year, because there are non-specification and specification.—523.

#### COMMENTARY

In the path beginning with Archis, the stage of Vāyu is to be inserted after the Samvatsaram, and before the Âditya. Why? Because there is no specification in the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, it is merely said, "He comes to the world of Agni, he comes to the world of Vāyu." There is no specification *where* this Vāyu-world comes in. The Śruti merely says, "He comes to this world, he comes to that world," without mentioning any "order of succession." But the passage of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (V., 10) gives specific succession. It shows that the world of Vāyu comes *before* the world of the sun, for it says, "When a person goes away from this world, he comes to Vāyu. The Vāyu makes room for him like the hole of a carriage wheel and through it he mounts higher, he comes to the sun." Thus while the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad gives *no* specification where the Vāyuloka comes in, and the Bṛhadâraṇyaka gives the specification that it comes in *before* the sun, so combining the non-specification of the one, with the specification of the other, we place Vāyuloka *before* the world of the sun. This being so, the passage in the Bṛhadâraṇyaka which says that from the months he goes to the Devaloka and from the Devaloka he goes to the Âdityaloka should be interpreted in accordance with the above. The Devaloka there must be interpreted as meaning the world of Vāyu. The text of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad is to be found in VI., 2. 15 :

ते य एवमेतद्दिदुर्गं चामी अरण्ये श्रद्धां सत्यमुपासते तेऽचिरभिसंभवन्त्यर्चिषोऽहरन् आर्प्यमाणपक्ष-  
मापूर्यमाणपक्षाभ्यान्वयमासानुदङ्गदित्य एति मासेभ्यो देवलोकं देवलोकं दादित्यमादित्याद्देष्टुं तान्वैष्टुतान्पुरुषो मानस  
एत्य ब्रह्मलोकान् गमयति तेषु ब्रह्मलोकेषु पराः परावतो वसन्ति तेषां न पुनरावृत्तिः ॥ १५ ॥

Those who thus know this (even Grhasthas), and those who in the forest worship faith and the True (Brahman Hiranyagarbha), go to light (Archis), from light to day, from day to the increasing half, from the increasing half to the six months when the sun goes to the north, from those six months to the world of the Devas (Devaloka), from the world of the Devas to the sun, from the sun to the place of lightning. When they have thus reached the place of lightning, a spirit comes near them, and leads them to the worlds of the Brahman. In these worlds of Brahman they dwell exalted for ages. There is no returning for them.

The Devaloka mentioned in the above passage of the Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad should be understood as meaning the Vāyuloka. Because we have a text saying : "That which is Vāyu is indeed the home of the Devas." Therefore Vāyu being the home of the Devas, is Devaloka.

But others say that Devaloka itself is a stage on the path and it comes after the Samvatsara and before the Vāyuloka. This Devaloka is not to be inserted between the six months and the year, because the Uttarāyaṇa naturally leads to the year, and their connection is well-known. Therefore, the Devaloka and the Vāyuloka are both to be inserted *after* the Samvatsaram and *before* the Âditya.

### Adhikaraṇa III.

Now the author discusses the following verse of the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad (I., 3) already given before :

"He comes to the world of Varuṇa, to the world of Indra, to the world of Prajāpati."

*Doubt* : Whether the Varuṇaloka mentioned in the above, is to be inserted in the Devayāna path beginning with Archis and if it is a stage in this Archirādi path, where does it come in ? Is it to be inserted in this series ? If so, where ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that Varuṇaloka is not to be inserted as a stage on the Archirādi path, because there is nothing in the text to indicate where this is to be inserted.

*Siddhānta* : The right view, however, is that the world of Varuṇa is to be inserted after the world of Lightning, because Lightning and water are intimately connected. And this is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 3.

तडितोऽधिवरुणः सम्बन्धात् ॥ ४ । ३ । ३ ॥

तडितः Taḍitaḥ, of the lightning. अधि Adhi, above. वरुणः Varuṇaḥ, Varuṇa. सम्बन्धात् Sambandhāt, this being the relation.

3. The world of Varuṇa is above that of Lightning, because of the intimate connection between them.—524.

#### COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV., 15. 5) already quoted before, it was said that from the plane of moon, he goes to the plane of lightning. It is after this plane of lightning mentioned there, that the plane of Varuṇa is to be inserted. Why so ? Because lightning is connected with water, as we see that after lightning, it generally rains. There is a Śruti also to the effect that when the quick lightnings play in the bosom of clouds, accompanied by the deep sound of thunder, then the waters fall and people say, "It lightens, it thunders, it will rain."

The connection of Varuṇa, the king of waters, with lightnings is a well-known connection.



Above the world of Varuṇa are to be placed the worlds of Indra and Prajāpati, because there is no other place where to insert them, and because the text of the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad has read them in that order.

Thus on the Archirādi path, beginning with Archis and ending with Prajāpati, there are twelve stages if Devaloka be considered the same as Vāyuloka, or thirteen stages, if it be considered a separate Loka. This is the well-known Devayāna path.

#### Adhikaraṇa IV.

Having discussed the various names "Archis" and the rest, the author now takes up the question as to what are really these "Archis, etc."

*Doubt* : Are they landmarks on the path, or are they persons standing on the path and watching it, or are they conductors of the wise sage to the heavenly world ?

*Pūrrapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that the light (Archis), etc., are landmarks, because the text shows that they are landmarks. As in worldly life, a path is described to a man by certain landmarks, such as "in going to such and such a city, you will first come across a river, then a hill, then a village where a large number of cows are kept." etc., so the descriptions in the Upaniṣads are mere landmarks, showing what are the various things which the soul comes across, on its way heavenwards. Or the word "light" and the rest may mean certain individuals, bearing those names, because the text gives the names expressly.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 4.

आतिवाहिकास्तस्मिन्नात् ॥ ४ । ३ । ४ ॥

**आतिवाहिकाः** Ātivāhikāḥ, conductors, Āti=best, √vah=carry. तत् Tat, that. लिङ्गात् Liṅgāt, being indicated.

4. The words Archis and the rest are the names of the Ātivāhika Devas or conductors of the soul, because of the indicatory mark in the text.—525.

#### COMMENTARY

This Archis and the rest are divinities, appointed by the Supreme person, to conduct the soul along the stages of the path. They are neither landmarks, nor individuals. Why ? Because of the indications

contained in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad itself. That they are conductors, leading the soul, we find from that passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad where after describing lightning, it says, "There is a person not human, he leads them to Brahman." Here the last person called the Amānava Puruṣa is expressly stated as the person who leads or conducts the soul to Brahman. He, therefore, is expressly an Âtīvāhika or a *conducting* divinity. Therefore, the others mentioned in the same series with him are also to be understood to be Âtīvāhikas or conductors: each one of them conducting the soul a stage forward. Thus there are thirteen Âtīvāhika Deva or conducting divinities.

The next Sūtra further strengthens the view that these are neither landmarks nor individuals, but conductors only.

*Note:* The last person is called "not human," implying thereby that the beings mentioned before are "human." Are they the different grades of human Invisible helpers of the modern Theosophists?

SŪTRA IV., 3. 5.

उभय व्यामोहात्तत्सिद्धेः ॥ ४ । ३ । ५ ॥

उभय Ubhaya: in both. व्यामोहात् Vyāmohāt, owing to the confused, untenable. तत् Tat, that. सिद्धेः Siddhēḥ, being established.

5. That they are conductors is established on the ground of both other alternatives being (untenable, since) confused.—526.

COMMENTARY

Those who die in the night-time cannot have connection with the day, etc., and consequently they cannot have connection with light or Archis, etc. Therefore, Archis and the rest cannot be the landmarks, more so as they are not fixed. Moreover, light and the rest being unintelligent objects and incapable of being guides, cannot be individuals. Since both these views are open to objections, it follows that the third view, namely, that they are conducting divinities, is the right view, as established by the Scriptures.

*Note:* A man dying in the night-time cannot have connection with the day, so if "day" be a landmark, then to such a man it is no landmark. Similarly, if a man dies in the day-time of the new-moon day, he can have no connection with the moon, because there is no moon visible then. To such a man the "moon" cannot be a landmark. Moreover, landmarks are permanent immovable things, while these are constantly changing, so they cannot be landmarks. Nor can they be persons, because they are unintelligent objects. Therefore, they must be taken in the sense of conducting divinities.

### Adhikaraṇa V.

*Doubt:* The question next to be answered is : Whether the Amānava Puruṣa, the Not-human Being appointed by the Supreme Person, comes down to the plane of Archis, to carry the soul of the devotees upwards, or does he come down only up to the plane of Vidyut (Lightning)?

*Pūrrapakṣa:* The opponent holds the view, that since there are instances of the messengers of the Lord coming down even up to the physical plane, to carry the souls of persons like Ajāmila, and the rest, to heaven, it is natural to suppose that the non-human conductor comes down, as a rule, up to the plane of Archis. In fact, this messenger of the Lord welcomes the soul at the very entrance, as soon as it goes out of the physical and steps into the non-physical.

*Siddhānta:* This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 6.

वेद्युतेनै ततस्तच्छुते ॥ ४ । ३ । ६ ॥

वेद्युतेन Vaidyutena, by that (non-human person) who has reached the lightning. एव Eva, indeed. ततः Tataḥ, then, after one has reached the Lightning. तत् Tat, for that. शुते: Śruteḥ, because of the Vedic text.

6. (When the soul has reached "Lightning") then (it is carried to Brahman) by the (Amānava Puruṣa) who comes down to "Lightning" (to receive it). Because such is the Śruti.—527.

#### COMMENTARY

"Then" namely, after the soul has reached Lightning, the sage is carried to Brahman by "Vaidyuta," namely, by the messenger of the Lord who has come down to the Lightning. Why do we say so? Because of the Śruti text in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV., 15. 5), it is expressly said that the souls go from the moon to the lightning: and then a not-human person takes them to Brahman. No doubt, between the plane of lightning and Brahman there are three planes of Varuṇa, Indra and Prajāpati. But these three *help* this Amānava Puruṣa, who comes down to Lightning, and thus they also take part, though in a subordinate way, in carrying the soul.

*Note:* When the soul reaches the plane of Lightning, the messenger of the Lord comes down to conduct the soul. Varuṇa, Indra and Prajāpati also help such messenger.

This is the general method. There are exceptions to it, as we find in the case of Ajāmila, when the messengers of the Lord came down to *earth* even, to receive the soul of that dead sinner. But that is not the rule.

## Adhikaraṇa VI.

Having thus described the *road*, the author now intends to describe the *goal* to which the road leads.

*Viśaya* : The Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV., 15. 5) says, "This not-human person carries them to Brahman." On this text, the author first gives the opinion of the sage Bâdari.

*Doubt* : Does this not-human person lead the souls to the Supreme Brahman ? Or to the effected Brahman, *i.e.*, the four-faced Brahmâ.

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that the word "Brahman" principally denotes the Supreme Brahman, and not the effected Brahman. The Scripture also says that the sage who comes by the Suṣumnâ artery, gets immortality. Therefore, the word Brahman used in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV., 15. 5) must mean the Supreme Brahman, and no inferior Being.

*Siddhânta* : This view, however, is not the opinion of the sage Bâdari, as is shown in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 7.

कार्यं बादरिस्य गत्युपपत्तेः ॥ ४ । ३ । ७ ॥

कार्यम् Kâryam, the effect. बादरिः Bâdariḥ, Bâdari holds. यस्य Asya, of this (effect). गति Gati, of going. उपपत्तेः Upapattēḥ, being possible.

7. According to the sage Bâdari, the Amânava Puruṣa leads the souls to the effected Brahman; because such Brahman alone can possibly be the goal.—528.

COMMENTARY

The sage Bâdari opines that the Amânava Puruṣa carries the souls only to the four-faced Brahmâ, the Kârya Brahman, the effected Brahman. Why? Because this Kârya Brahman, being a personal and limited entity, can become very well the goal of a path. The Supreme Brahman being *everywhere*, in every place, cannot be said to be the *goal* of anybody.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 8.

विशेषितत्वाच्च ॥ ४ । ३ । ८ ॥

विशेषितत्वाच्च Viśeṣitatvâcch, being specified. च Cha, and.

8. And because there is a specification as regards the Brahman (showing that Brahmâ) is the goal.—529.

COMMENTARY

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 14. 1), it is expressly mentioned that the soul comes to the home of Prajâpati, the specific mention of the word

Veśma (hall or home) as well as the name Prajāpati shows that the effected Brahman (the four-faced Brahmā) is the goal, to which the souls are carried by the not-human messengers of the Lord.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 9.

सामीप्यात् तदव्यपदेशः ॥ ४ । ३ । ९ ॥

सामीप्यात् Sāmiṇyāt, because of the nearness. तु Tu, but. तद् Tad, that. व्यपदेशः Vyapadeśah, designation.

9. But that designation of Mukti is given when a man reaches the Brahma-world, because that is a form of Sāmiṇya Mukti.—530.

COMMENTARY

In the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (VI., 2. 15), we have :

तान्वैश्वान्तपुरो गानस एव ब्रह्मलोकान् गमयति तेषु ब्रह्मलोकेषु पराः परावतो वसन्ति तेषां न पुनरावृत्तिः ॥ १५ ॥

When they have thus reached the place of lightning, a spirit comes near them, and leads them to the worlds of the (conditioned) Brahman. In these worlds of Brahman they dwell exalted for ages. There is no returning for them.

The non-return mentioned here is not absolute Mukti, but release at the time when the four-faced himself gets Mukti. The wise sage goes to the four-faced Brahmā and remains in his world till the latter gets Mukti. And thus there is no return, for he enters into the Supreme Brahman when Brahmā enters in him. When is that time of the entering of the Brahmā into the Supreme? The next Sūtra gives an answer to this.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 10.

कार्यात्यये तदध्यक्षेण सहातः परमभिधानात् ॥ ४ । ३ । १० ॥

कार्ये Kārya, of the effect (i.e., the universe). अत्यये Atyaye, at the end. तद् Tad, of that. अध्यक्षेण Adhyakṣeṇa, with the ruler president (i.e., the four-faced Brahmā). सह Saha, with. अतः Ataḥ, from this. परम् Param, the Highest (i.e., Brahman). अभिधानात् Abhidhānāt, on account of scriptural declaration.

10. When the effected world passes away, together with its ruler, the souls go from the four-faced Brahmā to the Supreme, because the Scripture uses the word Supreme.—531.

COMMENTARY

When this effected world, beginning with the physical plane up to the world of four-faced Brahmā, and called the cosmic egg, passes away : then the souls, which were dwelling in the world of Brahmā, go along

with Brahmā, to Him who is beyond the four-faced, namely, to the Supreme Brahman. The reason of this going along with the four-faced is that there is a scriptural declaration to that effect. In the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (III, 1. 1) it is said that "the knower of Brahman attains the highest," and it is further said therein that such "a knower enjoys all blessings at one *with the* omniscient Brahman (Saha Brahmaṇā)." The word Brahman of this Taittiriya Upaniṣad, (II, 1) means the four-faced Brahmā, and it further shows that the liberated spirits get final Mukti, *along with* the four-faced Brahmā (Saha Brahmaṇā).

SŪTRA IV., 3. 11.

स्मृतेश्च ॥ ४ । ३ । ११ ॥

स्मृतेः Smṛteḥ, on account of the statement of the Smṛti. च Cha, and.

11. From the Smṛti also (the same mode of release is learned).—532.

COMMENTARY

Thus the following text of a Smṛti also shows the same :

ब्रह्मणा सहते सर्वे संप्रप्ते प्रतिसचरे ।

परस्यान्ते कृतात्मानः प्रविशन्ति परं पदम् ॥

All these (souls who had reached the Satya Loka by being the Saniṣṭha devotees of the Lord), enter, on the expiry of Brahmā, when the period of great dissolution comes near, along with Brahmā, into the Highest Abode of the Supreme—all those devotees whose minds are fixed on the Lord.

Thus the Siddhānta teaching of the sage Bādari is that all Saniṣṭha devotees are conducted by the Devas called Archis and the rest, to the abode of the four-faced Brahmā, namely, to the Satyaloka, the plane of Hiranyagarbha. The author next gives the opinion of Jaimini.

### Adhikaraṇa VII.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 12.

परं जैमिनिर्मुख्यत्वात् ॥ ४ । ३ । १२ ॥

परम् Param, the Highest. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini holds. मुख्यत्वात् Mukhyatvāt, on account of the primariness of meaning.

12. The sage Jaimini opines (that the Not-human Person leads the souls) (of those only who meditate on the Supreme Brahman) to the Supreme, because the word "Brahman" primarily means the Supreme Brahman.—533.

## COMMENTARY

The sage Jaimini holds the view that the messenger of the Lord leads the souls up to the Supreme Brahman and not only up to the region of Hiraṇyagarbha. Why? Because the neuter word "Brahman" has the primary designation of "Supreme Brahman," and not Brahmā (which is masculine).

Nor is this an unanswerable objection that the Supreme Brahman being all-pervading cannot be the goal of any movement. Reaching the Supreme Brahman really means that the devotees become denuded of all conditioning adjuncts and realise Him. The Lord Himself has declared such a state to be the meaning of the phrase "reaching the Supreme." Though the Lord is all-pervading yet it is His wish that His devotees must come to Him through the Path of Archis, etc., to His abode called the Great Void. This is a glory of the Lord.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 13.

दर्शनाच्च ॥ ४ । ३ । १३ ॥

दर्शनात् Darśanāt, because of the statement of the Śāstras च Cha, and.

13. And it is so seen in the Scriptures also.—534.

## COMMENTARY

In the Dahara Vidyā of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad it is stated (VIII., 12. 3) :

अथ य एन संप्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात् समुत्थाय

This serene being having risen from the body, having reached the highest light, manifests itself in its own shape.

This also declares that the soul passing through the coronal artery, reaches the Highest Brahman. The goal there also is the Supreme, because all the attributes of immortality, etc., are ascribed to Him. The goal in the Dahara Vidyā journey is not doubtful at all. It is the Supreme Brahman. It is made clearer still by the statement that the *goer* (the soul) "manifests itself in its own shape, having reached the highest light." These statements would not be appropriate if the goal were the effected Brahman, *i.e.*, the four-faced Brahmā. Moreover, the Prakaraṇa or the chapter dealing with the journey of the soul is not of effected Brahman but of the Supreme Brahman. The journey of the soul occurs in a context dealing with the Highest Brahman. The soul's journey is mentioned in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad also. There also the object reached is the Highest Brahman, because of the phrases "like he reaches immortality." "it is beyond all Dharmas and Adharmas."

Further, the next Sūtra gives an additional reason. . .

SŪTRA IV., 3. 14.

न च कार्ये प्रतिपत्त्यभिपन्धिः ॥ ४ । ४ । १३ ॥

न Na, not. च Cha, and. कार्ये Kārye, in the effected Brahman : (Brahmā). प्रतिपत्ति Pratipatti, of knowledge, aim. अभिपन्धिः Abhisandhiḥ, desire.

14. And the sage does not intentionally desire to reach the effected Brahman (and not the Highest).—535.

COMMENTARY

No sage puts it as the aim of his devotion to go to the lower plane of Brahman, when he knows that he can go to the higher. The Brahman's world is not the Puruṣārtha, the goal of humanity. That goal is the Highest Brahman, and that whatever is the aim, that he reaches, on the maxim of Yathā Kratuḥ (Chhândogya Upaniṣad, III., 14).

The Siddhânta view of Jaimini, therefore, is that the Amānava Puruṣa leads the worshippers of the Lord to the Lord Himself—Him who is the Highest Person.

Now the author gives his own opinion.

### Adhikaraṇa VIII.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 15.

अप्रतीकालम्बनान्नयतीति बादरायण उभयथा च दोषान्तर्गतश्च ॥ ४ । ३ । १५ ॥

अ A, those who do not. प्रतीक Pratīka, upon symbols. आलम्बनान् Ālambanān, (those who) depend. All the three taken together mean those who do not depend upon symbols. नयति Nayati, leads. इति Iti, so. बादरायणः Bâdarâyanaḥ, Bâdarâyana holds. उभयथा Ubhayathâ, both ways. च Cha, and. दोषान् Doṣāt, there being defects. तत् Tat, about that. क्रतुः Kratuḥ, thought (i.e., he whose thought is about that). According to the maxim called Tat-kratuḥ च Cha, and.

15. The not-human person leads (to the Supreme Lord) the souls of all those who are the worshippers of the Supreme without any symbol. This is the opinion of Bâdarâyana, because there is defect in both the other views and because the maxim of Tat-kratuḥ (as is one's thought so is his goal) requires it to be so.—536.

COMMENTARY

The worshippers of Name and the rest are called the Pratīka-ālambanās or those who depend upon a symbol. Devotees other than the Pratīka-ālambanās,



such as the Saniṣṭha, Pariniṣṭhitas and the Nirapekṣas are worshippers of non-symbolic Brahman and are called Apratika ālambana. The Amānava Puruṣa leads these worshippers of Brahman without any symbol, to the Supreme Lord. This is the opinion of Bādarāyaṇa, the author of these Sūtras. He does not accept the view either of Jaimini or of Bādari, namely, (i) that this not-human being leads the souls of those only who worship the Supreme, or (ii) who worship the effected Brahman. Because in both these views there arises conflict with the text. In the first view, namely, that of Bādari, the conflict arises with the words Paramjyotis (Chhândogya Upaniṣad, VIII. 12. 3). That passage declares "that arising from this body it approaches the *highest light*." Now if the Muktas reach only the effected Brahman (the four-faced Brahmâ), then it could not be said that they had reached the *highest light*. In the second view, namely, that of Jaimini who holds that the worshippers of Supreme *only*, are carried by the divinities, last of which is the not-human person, the conflict would be with that text of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (V., 10) which declares that the worshippers of the five-fires also go by the Archirâdi path. Now those who meditate on Pañchâgni Vidyâ are not meditating on the Supreme. But the text says that they also go by the path of light.

*Note :* The two passages of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 12. 3) and (V., 10), are given below for facility of reference :

Thus does that serene being, arising from this body, appear in its own form, as soon as it has approached the *highest light*.

Those who know this (even though they still be Gṛhasthas, householders) and those who in the forest follow faith and austerities (the Vānaprasthas, and of the Parivrājakas who do not yet know the Highest Brahman), go to light (Archis), from light to day, from day to the light half of the moon, from the light half of the moon to the six months when the sun goes to the north, from the six months to the year, then to the sun, from the sun to the moon, from the moon to the lightning. There is a person not-human. He leads them to Brahman (Brahmâ).

To avoid these two-fold contradictions Bādarāyaṇa takes the middle course, and says that all worshippers of Brahman without any symbol, go by the path of light.

His second reason is based upon the famous maxim contained in the Chhândogya, III., 14. "*According to what his thought is in this world, so will he be when he has departed this life*" This is called Tatkratuḥ maxim. A man who thinks of the Supreme, and meditates on the Supreme must go to the Supreme after death. But the worshippers of Name and the rest, as described in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VII. 1.3) and the remaining Khanda, namely, those who meditate on Name as Brahman, on Speech as Brahman, on Mind as Brahman, etc., do not go by the Archirâdi path to the Supreme, because they do not meditate on the Supreme, but on names, speech, etc.

etc. The element of thought (Kratuh) which determines the goal of after-life is absent in them. On the other hand, they worship name, etc., namely, science of words, etc., and so reach perfection in words, etc. Their reward is described in the same Upaniṣad (Chhândogya, VII, 1. 5).

He who meditates on the name as Brahman, is, as it were, lord and master as far as the name reaches.

And so on with the other worshippers.

The case of those who meditate on the Pañchâgni (five fires) is however different. They go by the Archirâdi path to Satyaloka, because their meditation is primarily connected with the Self, and not with any symbol. The fires there are not symbols of anything, but the Self of the worshipping devotee. Though the worshippers of Pañchâgni have not realised the Supreme Brahman, and cannot at once, therefore, reach the Supreme Brahman on their death, they still go to Satyaloka, and in that Loka they are taught the true doctrine of Brahman, and by such knowledge they reach Brahman. In Sūtra, I, 3. 26, lord Bâdarâyana has declared his opinion, that even the denizens of the higher worlds are entitled to meditate on Brahman, and do so meditate. If the worshippers of the five fires did not ultimately reach the Supreme Brahman, then the statement that "they never return" would not be correct with regard to them.

### Adhikarāṇa IX.

Now the author teaches that as regards certain Nirapekṣas the Lord Himself comes to take them to His abode and does not leave that task to any of His messengers.

*Viṣaya* : In the Gopāla Pūrva Tâpani we have the following :

एतद् विष्णोः परमं पदं ये नित्योद्युक्ताः संयजन्ते न कामात् ।

तेषामसौ गोपरूपः प्रयत्नान् प्रकाशयेदात्मपदं तदैव ॥

ओंकारेणान्तरितं यो जपति गोविन्दम्य पंचपदं मनुं तम् ।

तस्यैवासौ दर्शयेदात्मरूपं तस्मान् मुमुक्षुरभ्यसेन् नित्यशान्त्यै ॥

1. They who constantly harmonised and without headlessness fully worship the Supreme state of Viṣṇu, not with the desire of getting rewards, to them that Cow-herd-shaped One verily then carefully reveals his own state.

2. He who repeats silently this five-syllabled prayer of Govinda with the word Om preceding it, him verily that Lord Himself shows His own Form, therefore, let the seeker of freedom always recite this Mantra in order to get eternal peace.

*Doubt* : Are the Nirapekṣa worshippers of the Lord carried also by the Âtivâhika divinities to the Lord, or are they carried by the Lord Himself ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that the Lord

Himself carries no one. The Scriptures mention only two paths, the path of the Devas and the path of the Pitṛs. All knowers of Brahman have to go by the path of light, and are to be carried by the divinities of that path. The Scripture also declares that the Lord is the causal agent in everything, for He never directly does anything. His agents work out His will.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 3. 16.

विशेषञ्च दर्शयति ॥ ४ । ३ । १६ ॥

विशेषम् Viśeṣam, difference. च Cha, and. दर्शयति Darśayati, the Scripture declares.

16. And the Scripture itself shows the special case with regard to some Nirapekṣas.—537.

COMMENTARY

The general rule is no doubt that the conducting divinities carry all the knowers of Brahman to Brahman. But with regard to those Nirapekṣa devotees who are extremely ardent, and much suffering in their yearning, in their case the Lord Himself comes to fetch them to Himself; because He Himself feels impatient to bring such souls at once to Him. This is a special case only. The Scripture also shows this. The two verses of the Gopāla Tāpani quoted above are an authority for this proposition.

In the Gītā also (XII., 6. and 7) we find that the Lord Himself comes to carry His ardent devotees to Himself.

ये तु सर्वाणि कर्माणि मयि संन्यस्य मत्पराः ।

अनन्येनैव योगेन मां ध्यायन्त उपासते ॥ ६ ॥

Those verily who, renouncing all actions in Me and intent on Me, worship meditating on Me, with whole-hearted Yoga.

तेषामहं समुद्धर्ता मृत्युसंसारसागरात् ।

भवामि न चिरात्पार्थ मय्यावेशितचेतसाम् ॥ ७ ॥

These I speedily lift up from the ocean of death and existence. O Pārtha, their minds being fixed on Me.

The word "Cha" "and" used in the Sūtra means by implication that as soon as such devotees die and shake off the final body or Liṅga Deha, the Lord gives them the celestial or Aprākṛtic body at once. These devotees get rid of their Liṅga Deha along with their physical body, at the time of death. Other devotees have to remain in their Liṅga Deha for some time after death.

Nor is it correct to say that there are only two paths and no third, and that all the knowers of Brahman must pass over the road of Archirādi,

to the abode of the Lord. For in the Varāha Purāṇa we have the following :

नयामि परमं स्थानं अर्चिरादिगतिं विना ।

गरुडस्कन्धमारोप्य यथेच्छमनिवारितः ॥

I bring him seated on the shoulder of Garuḍa without hindrance and according to my own will, to my Supreme abode, by a path other than that of Archirādi.

Therefore, what the author has said is perfectly correct. The above passage is to be found at the end of the Varāha Purāṇa.

---

## FOURTH ADHYĀYA

### FOURTH PĀDA

अकेतवे भक्तिमवेऽनुरज्यन् स्वमेवयः सेवकसात् करोति ।

ततोऽतिमोदं मुदितः स देवः सदा त्रिदानन्दानुर्धिनीतु ॥

Let that God, whose body consists of intelligence and bliss, give us always contentment. He who is always pleased with the guileless love of his devotees, and in return who offers Himself as the servant of his devotees, and being thus gratified by their devotion, gratifies all their desires.

### *Adhikaraṇa 1.—The form of the Souls in Mukti*

In this chapter is determined the enjoyment of lordliness and the rest which the freed souls experience, as well as the nature of such souls. In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is heard the following (VIII., 12. 3) :

एवमेवैष संप्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसंपद्य स्वेन रूपेणाभिनिष्पद्यते स उत्तमः पुरुषः स तत्र पर्येति जज्ञःक्रीडन्रममाणः स्त्रीभिर्वा यानैर्वा ज्ञातिभिर्वा नोपजनं स्मरन्निदं शरीरं स यथा प्रयोग्य आचरणे युक्त एवमेवायमस्मिच्छरीरे प्राणो युक्तः ॥ ३ ॥

He through whose grace this released soul, arising from his last body, and having approached the Highest Light, is restored to his own form is the Highest Person. The Mukta moves about there laughing, playing, and rejoicing, with women, with carriages, with other Muktas of his own period or of the past Kalpas. (So great is his ecstasy) that he does not remember even the person standing near him, nor even his own body. And as a charioteer is appointed by his master to drive the carriage, just so is the Prâṇa appointed to drive this chariot of the body.

*Doubt*: Here arises the doubt : Does the soul, in getting Mukti, get a shape and body which is a result accomplished, and which is to be brought about then as, for example, the body of a Deva; or that it only manifests its own natural character? In other words, what is the meaning of the phrase "Svona rūpeṇa abhiniṣpadyate," "appears in his true form?" Does this "appearance in true form" mean getting a *new body*, like that of the messengers of Viṣṇu, or manifesting its own nature?

*Pûrvapakṣa*: The opponent maintains the view that the soul assumes a new body, to be brought about then. Because the meaning of the word 'Abhiniṣpatti' is *accomplishment*, so the body is one which the soul accomplishes or makes. If it were otherwise, then the above word would have no meaning at all; and the scriptural texts relating to release would declare what was of no advantage to man. If the word "Abhiniṣpatti" meant "manifestation of one's own natural character," then since this natural character already exists in man, it cannot be said to be something

*accomplished*, and it can be of no advantage to man. Therefore, the phrase "manifests itself in its own form" means that he assumes a *new body*, to be brought about then.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 1.

समाद्याविर्भावः स्वेनशब्दात् ॥ ४ । ४ । १ ॥

सम्पद्य Sampadya, of the person who has reached Brahman. आविर्भावः Āvirbhāvaḥ, manifestation. स्वेन Svena, "by one's own." शब्दात् Śabdāt, inferred from the word.

1. The phrase "accomplishing one's own form," means manifestation in one's real form, because the word Svena, "in its own," indicates that.—538.

#### COMMENTARY

When the soul approaches the Highest Light, through the force of its devotion, accompanied by knowledge and dispassion, then there is release for it from the chain of Karma, and there is manifestation in it of the eight-fold superior qualities, which from latency come into manifestation then. It is then said that there has taken place the manifestation of its natural character. This particular condition, characterised by the rise of one's natural condition to the surface is called Svarūpa abhiniṣpatti. Why? Because the word Svena in the above text requires this explanation. This word is an adjective qualifying the word Rūpa in the above. If the soul assumed a new body, then this word would have no force. Because, even without that, it would be clear that the new body *belonged* to the soul. The other meaning of Svena would be "belonging to it" and Rūpena would mean "in a form belonging to it." This would be purely a useless expression, for the body, which the soul takes, must *ipso facto* belong to it. Moreover, the word Niṣpatti does not always mean accomplishment, but manifestation also. As in the phrase "Idam ekam suniṣpannam."

To the objection that the soul's own true nature is something eternally accomplished, and hence the manifestation of that nature cannot be the end of man (Puruṣārtha), we reply—true, it is the eternal nature of the soul that manifests in Mukti. And yet such manifestation cannot be said to be useless, because the very object and end of all human exertion is to bring about this manifestation. Consequently all such efforts are not useless, because they subserve the purpose of bringing about this manifestation. The School of Patañjali holds the view that the mere cessation of pain which arises through the super-imposition of Prakṛti, constitutes the well-being of the soul which has approached the Highest Light, and that

Niṣpatti is nothing more than this condition of the Self-luminous, pure intelligence. This, however, is not the Vedānta view. The "release" of the Vevānta is not a state of negation, not a state in which there is merely an absence of all sufferings caused by Prakṛti, but it is a positive state of enjoyment of bliss, as we find in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (II, 7) : "For having tasted a flavour of the Supreme, he experiences bliss." This shows that in the state of Mukti there is experiencing of intense bliss and not merely a cessation of pain.

But, how do we know that approaching the Highest Light is Mukti ? To this question the next Sūtra gives a reply :

*Note :* To understand the argument fully it is necessary to know the context of the whole passage of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad in which the above text of "approaching the Highest Light" occurs. One must read the whole of the history of the teaching given by Prajâpati to Indra and Virochana as we find in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 7 to 12). It is in these Khandas from 7 to 12 that Prajâpati teaches the nature of the soul in the waking state as well in the dreaming and dreamless sleep. When, however, Indra is not satisfied with these partial truths, Prajâpati finally promises—"I shall explain him further to you, and *nothing more than this.*" In fulfilment of this promise, he teaches the condition of the soul in Mukti.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 2.

मुक्तः प्रतिज्ञानात् ॥ ४ । ४ । २ ॥

मुक्तः Muktaḥ, the liberated one. प्रतिज्ञानात् Pratijñānāt, on account of the promise.

2. Manifestation in its own form mentioned in Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 12. 3) is the condition of the Mukta, because that is what Prajâpati has promised to teach in the opening part of the Upaniṣad.—539.

#### COMMENTARY

It is verily the Mukta who manifests itself in its own form. Why ? Because of the promise. In the opening sentence (VIII., 7. 1.) Brahmā describes the condition of the Mukta Jiva thus :

"The Self which is free from sin, free from old age, free from death and grief, from hunger and thirst, which desires nothing but what is ought to desire, and imagines nothing but what it ought to imagine, that it is which we must search out, that it is which we must try to understand. He who has searched out that Self and understands it, obtains all worlds and all desires."

This shows the condition of the Mukta Jiva, and Prajâpati promises to teach Indra this Mukta condition, by saying, "I shall explain the true Self further to you." This promise is given several times. It is first given when Indra, dissatisfied with the waking Self, comes back to

Prajāpati, again to be taught, and Prajāpati says (VIII, 9. 3), "I shall explain it further to you. Live with me another thirty-two years." Then he explains to him the Self in dream, and when Indra is not satisfied with that, he teaches him the Self in dreamless sleep; and when Indra is not satisfied with that even, Prajāpati at last describes to him the true Self, free from all the three conditions of waking, etc., and teaches the condition of the Self in the state of Mukti in these terms:

"Maghavat, this body is mortal and always held by death. It is the abode of that Self which is immortal and without body. When in the body (by thinking this body is I and I am this body) the Self is held by pleasure and pain. So long as he is in the body, he cannot get free from pleasure and pain. But when he is free of the body (when he knows himself different from the body), then neither pleasure nor pain touches him.

"The wind is without body, the cloud, lightning, and thunder are without body, without hands, feet, etc. Now as these arising from this heavenly ether (space), appear in their own form, as soon as they have approached the Highest Light.

"Thus does that serene being, arising from this body, appear in its own form, as soon as it approaches the Highest Light. He (in that state) is the highest person (Uttama Puruṣa). He moves about there laughing (or eating), playing, and (rejoicing in his mind), be it with women, carriages, or relatives, never minding that body into which he was born."

This final teaching of Prajāpati is in accordance with his final promise given in (VIII, 11. 3), where he says, "I shall explain the true Self further to you and *nothing more than this*." Thus, because of this promise, the teaching about "the Self appearing in its own form" must relate to the condition of the Muktas. Therefore, Mukti is indeed the manifestation of one's own form, which consists in remaining in one's own natural condition, free from the body, etc., which are produced through the effect of Karmas. This bodiless condition, free from pleasure and pain, is Mukti.

This condition is described in the text as coming subsequent to the approaching of the soul the Highest Light. After the Highest Light is reached, there appears this manifestation.

*Doubt* : But on this point a further doubt is raised : What is this Highest Light? Is it the solar orb, for light generally means the sun, or is it the Supreme Brahman?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that the Highest Light refers here to the solar orb. Because in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad it is said that it is after reaching the sun that one gets Mukti. The present passage also says that it is after reaching the Highest Light that one manifests his own nature. Therefore, the Highest Light of the Chhândogya passage is the solar orb mentioned by the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad. I. 11. And it is the same solar orb which comes as the Âdityaloka in the Archirâdi path already mentioned before.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.



SŪTRA IV., 4. 3.

आत्मा प्रकरणात् ॥ ४ । ४ । ३ ॥

आत्मा Ātmā, soul. प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇāt, on account of the subject-matter.

3. The Ātman is that "Highest Light;" because of the context.—540.

## COMMENTARY

That "Highest Light" mentioned in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad is indeed the Ātman (the Supreme Self), and not the Solar sphere, because the topic under discussion, where that passage occurs, refers to the Supreme. Though the word Jyotiḥ is a common term, meaning both the sun and Brahman, yet this word here, on account of the topic under discussion, denotes the Supreme Self. As in the sentence "Devo jânâti me manaḥ," the word Deva is used in the sense of "You." The sentence means "you know my mind."

The word Ātman, in this Sutra, refers to an All-pervading substance whose essential form is knowledge and bliss. The word Ātman is derived from the root  $\sqrt{\text{at}}$  meaning "to go continuously, to obtain and to illumine." Thus Ātman means that which illumines; secondly, that which is reached by the free souls; thirdly, that which is all-pervading. So it applies both to the human soul as well as to the Supreme Lord. It has several meanings, like the word "Upaniṣad." And this entity Ātman must be admitted to be a person. Because the description of it, given in the passage under discussion, is that of a person, it is called there "Uttama Puruṣa," the Supreme. (See Chh. Up., VIII., 12. 2).

Therefore, the Highest Light, which the freed soul attains to, is this this Uttama Puruṣa, the Supreme Person, the Lord Hari; and is not the solar sphere.

*Adhikaraṇa II.—The soul of the Mukta is united  
with the Lord*

On this very subject, another doubt is raised.

**Doubt:** Does the freed soul, on reaching this Highest Light, which resides in the town called Samvyoma, the great void, dwell in the same plane with the Great Light, or dwell in union with it? In other words, does it remain, in the state of Mukti, *separate* from the Lord, though in

the same sphere in which the Lord dwells, or is it *united* with the Lord ? Or to use the technical phrase of the books of theology and theosophy, is the Mukti Sālokya (residence in the same heaven with the Deity), or Sāyujya (intimate union with the Deity), (absorption into the Deity) ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains the view that the Mukti is a Sālokya one. As when a person enters the city of a king, he remains in the same place where the king lives, but is not absorbed in the king ; so the freed soul, when it enters the city of the Lord, does not get absorbed into the Lord, but remains separate from Him, though in the same locality with Him.

*Siddhānta* : This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 1. 4.

अविभागेन दृष्टत्वात् ॥ ४ । ४ । ४ ॥

अविभागेन Avibhāgena, by non-division, by union. दृष्टत्वात् Dr̥ṣṭatvāt, being seen in the Scriptures.

4. The freed soul exists in a state of non-separation from the Lord, because of a Scriptural text.—541.

COMMENTARY

When the soul has reached the Highest Light, it remains in a state of non-division from that Light, in a state of absorption in that Light. Why ? Because it is so seen in the Scripture. In the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (III., 2. 8), we have the following statement :

“As the flowing rivers disappear in the sea, losing their name and their form, thus a wise man, freed from name and form, goes to the Divine Person, who is greater than the great.”

The word Sāyujya means intimate union, as we find it used in the following passage of the Mahānārāyaṇa Upaniṣad (XXV., 1) :

य एवं विद्वानुदगयने प्रसीयते देवानामेव महिमानं गत्वादित्यस्य सायुज्यं गच्छत्यथ यो दक्षिणे प्रसीयते पितृणामेव महिमानं गत्वा चन्द्रमसः सायुज्यं सलोकतामाप्नोत्येतौ वै सूर्याचन्द्रमसोर्महिमानौ ब्राह्मणो विद्वानभिजयति तस्माद्ब्राह्मणो महिमानमाप्नोति तस्माद्ब्राह्मणो महिमानम् ॥ ८० ॥

The wise one, who knowing it thus, dies during the northern progress of the sun, attaining to the glory of the gods (*i. e.*, going by the Archiradi Devayāna path) gets Sāyujya with the sun. But he who dies during the southern progress of the sun, attaining indeed the glory of the Pitṛs (going by the Pitṛyāna path), obtains the Sāyujya with the moon, in the world of the moon. The wise knower of Brahman conquers these two paths, that of the Sun and the Moon, and because of this (conquest), he obtains the glory of Brahman, yea, the glory of Brahman.

But if Sāyujya be the only form of Mukti, what becomes then of the other three forms, for the Scriptures describe *four* kinds of Mukti, i. e., Sālokya, (residence in the same sphere with the Deity), Sārṣṭi, (possessing the same power, station or rank as the Deity), Sāmīpya (proximity to the Deity), and Sāyujya? To this we reply, that the other three kinds of Mukti are but *modes* of Sāyujya. The Sāyujya Mukti includes all those.

If Sāyujya be the *constant* state of union with the Lord, then, how is it that soul feels the sentiment of separation from the Lord, in the state called Viraha? The soul which is in constant union with the Lord, is incapable of feeling this sentiment of Viraha. But the books describe, that in the highest heaven even, this sentiment is felt; and the Mukta souls appear, now and then, as if lamenting their separation from the Lord. To this we reply, that even while feeling this sentiment, which though painful is yet pleasant, the freed souls *feel* their union with the Lord internally, for the Lord is never absent from their hearts; and because they are in the *world* of the Lord called Mahimā, and the *world* of the Lord has been shown to be identical with the Lord. Therefore, the Mukta Jivas, dwelling in Vaikuṇṭha, are in three-fold union with the Lord, namely, they are in the *world* of the Lord, which is the Lord Himself; secondly, the Lord is in them, so they can never be unconscious of the presence of the Lord; and thirdly, they are in union with an external form of Lord. It is this separation from the external form of the Lord, that gives rise to the sentiment of Viraha, in the heaven world.

The illustration of the rivers entering the sea, cannot be utilised in maintaining the doctrine of absolute identity with the Lord. The Mukta Jivas, though in intimate union with the Lord, are not identical with the Lord. Though we say, in ordinary parlance, when one water enters another water, that it has become *one*, yet we know all the while, that the *two* waters are different internally. If they were not so, then there would be no *increase* in the bulk of water.

*Note* : When a cup of water is put into a reservoir of water, the water which was in the cup does not *cease to exist*, does not become *identical* with the other water, because it *adds* so much water to the reservoir, and increases its bulk by that quantity. Thus in the Kāṭha Upaniṣad (IV., 15) it is said :

“As pure water poured into pure water becomes like that, O Gautama, so the Atmā of the Muni, who knows, becomes like that (without Brahman).”

Similarly, in the Skanda Pūraṇa also it is said that the union of water with water does not mean absolute identity, but intimate connection.

*Adhikaraṇa III.—The attributes of the Mukta Soul.*

Now the author is going to determine what are the blessings which the freed soul enjoys. But before doing that, it is necessary to determine the divine attributes, such as true resolve, (the instantaneous fulfilment of every wish that the soul entertains), and qualities like the same; and the soul's getting a body of celestial texture. For these are the causes that bring about the enjoyment of blessings. Therefore, the author begins with the determination of the attributes, which the soul shows forth.

*Doubt* : When the soul reaches the Highest Light, does it manifest itself with certain group of attributes, or is it merely pure intelligence? Or is it both pure intelligence, *plus* other attributes; because there is no necessary contradiction between them?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : As a Pūrvapakṣa, the author gives first the opinion of the sage Jaimini.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 5.

ब्राह्मेण जैमिनिरूपन्यासादिभ्यः ॥ ४ । ४ । ५ ॥

ब्राह्मेण Brāhmaṇa, by what is accomplished by Brahman: the gift of Brahman. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini (holds). उपन्यास-आदिभ्यः Upanyāsa-adibhyah, by suggestion, etc., by reference and the rest.

5. According to Jaimini, the freed soul manifests with all the attributes given by Brahman, because of the reference and the rest, (as contained in other passages of the Upaniṣad).—542.

## COMMENTARY

The word "Brāhma" of the Sūtra means, accomplished or completed by the Brahman. [It is a word formed by the affix अण् An, under Pāṇini (IV., 2. 68).] The Mukta appears with the divinely given attributes, mentioned in the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 7. 1) beginning with "who is free from sins," and ending with "whose will is true." These are the eight Guṇas or qualities, which he then possesses. Namely, (i) he is free from sins, (ii) free from old age, (iii) free from death, (iv) free from grief, (v) free from hunger, (vi) free from thirst, (vii) he has desires which are instantly realised, and (viii), a will which accomplishes its resolution spontaneously.

Why do we say so? Because of the reference and the rest. In the above passage of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 7. 1) Prājapati suggests that freed souls also come to possess the eight attributes of Ātman, which

he has proclaimed so widely : and which reaches the ears of the Devas in heaven, and the Asuras in the nether world.

The words "and the rest" आदि of the Sūtra indicate that the soul not only possesses these eight attributes, but that it acts in the way mentioned in the same Upaniṣad.

"The Mukta moves about there laughing, playing and rejoicing, with women, with carriages, with other Muktas of his own period or of the past Kalpas. (So great is his ecstasy) that he does not remember even the person standing near him, nor even his own body."

Therefore, Jaimini is of opinion that the Mukta soul manifests these eight-fold attributes and acts as mentioned in this Upaniṣad. In support of his view there is a Smṛti passage also :

यथा न ह्रियते ज्योत्स्ना

Yathā na hriyate jyotsnā, etc. (?).

As a Pūrvapakṣa, the author next gives the opinion of Auḍulomi, who holds the opinion that the Mukta soul possesses only *one* attribute, namely, that of pure intelligence.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 6.

चित्तिन्मात्रेण तदात्मक त्वादित्यौडुलोमिः ॥ ४ । ४ । ६ ॥

चित्ति Chiti, in Intelligence, in Brahman. तन्मात्रेण Tanmātreṇa, with solely that nature (of intelligence). तद् Tad, that (intelligence). आत्मकत्वात् Ātmakatvāt, being the essence. इति Iti, so. औडुलोमिः Auḍulomiḥ, Auḍulomi thinks.

6. The Mukta Jīva, when it has entered into the All-intelligence, manifests merely as that (intelligence) ; because (of the statement that it is) essentially that alone. Thus opines Auḍulomi.—543.

COMMENTARY

The Mukta, whose nescience has been burnt away by meditation on Brahman, when it enters into Brahman, whose essence is intelligence, manifests as intelligence only. Why ? Because there is a statement that intelligence is its essential and only form. In the Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 5. 13) we have the following :

स यथा सैन्धवघनोऽनन्तरोऽबाह्यः कृत्स्नो रसघन एवैव वा अरेऽयमात्माऽनन्तरोऽबाह्यः कृत्स्नः प्रज्ञानघन एवेतेभ्यो भूतेभ्यः समुत्थाय तान्येवानुविनश्यति न प्रेत्य संज्ञाऽस्तीत्यरे ब्रवीमिति होवाच याज्ञवल्क्यः ॥ १३ ॥

As a mass of salt has neither inside nor outside, but is altogether a mass of taste, thus indeed has that Self neither inside nor outside, but is altogether a mass of knowledge, and having risen out from these elements, vanishes again in them. When he has departed, there is no more knowledge (name), I say, O Maitreyi, thus spoke Yājñavalkya.

This passage shows that intelligence only constitutes the true being of the soul. Thus we know that the essential nature of the Jīva is intelligence, pure and simple, unqualified by any attributes. According to Auḍulomi, therefore, the Chhândogya text attributing sinlessness and the rest to the soul is to be interpreted as not meaning to predicate of it further *positive* qualities, but only to exclude all those qualities which depend on Avidyā or nescience, such as change, pleasure, pain and so on.

After thus giving the opinion of Jaimini and of Auḍulomi, the author gives next his own opinion.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 7.

एवमप्युपन्यासात्पूर्वभावादविरोधं बादरायणः ॥ ४ । ४ । ७ ॥

एवम् Evam, thus. अपि Api, even : though the soul be mere intelligence. उपन्यासात् Upanyāsāt, because of the suggestion, reference : authority of the words of Prajāpati. पूर्व Pūrva, of the former (*i.e.*, Jaimini). भावात् Bhāvāt, on account of the existence (of the statement). अविरोधम् Avirodham, non-contradiction. बादरायणः Bādarāyaṇaḥ, Bādarāyaṇa, (thinks).

7. Even (though the soul be) thus (pure intelligence), yet on account of the authority (of the words of Prajāpati), there is no contradiction in the existence of the former (eight qualities also in it). Thus thinks Bādarāyaṇa.—544.

COMMENTARY

Though the essential nature of the soul be pure intelligence, as proved by Auḍulomi, yet there is no contradiction, if the eight qualities also exist in it. This is the opinion of the Lord Bādarāyaṇa. Why ? Because of the authority. The statement made by Prajāpati is an authority for holding that the former opinion held by Jaimini is right ; since those qualities also exist in the soul. The settled conclusion, therefore, is that since the Śrūtis give unqualified both these statements,—the Bṛhadāraṇyaka mentioning that the soul is pure intelligence, and the Chhândogya that it has the eight qualities—and since both these statements are of equal authority, the nature of the freed soul consists of both these sets of qualities. Bādarāyaṇa approves the view that the soul is “even a mass of intelligence”—that is, unqualified intelligence only. For though it be unqualified (Nirguṇa) intelligence only, yet there is no contradiction, when it is said to possess the eight qualities also. The word *eva* “only” used in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (प्रज्ञानघन एव), “a mass of intelligence only”—does not prevent the soul possessing other

attributes also. For the above passage of Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad purports to exclude all and every kind of irrationality (Jadātva) from the soul and to teach that the self is self-luminous. Though the Jīva be thus self-luminous, pure intelligence, there is no contradiction if it possesses the eight qualities, known from another equally authoritative text. Thus though a solid salt-crystal be a mass of mere taste, and nothing but taste, yet it has a form, hardness, etc., also, and these qualities do not contradict its being a mass of taste.

Therefore, it follows, that in Mukti, the Jīva manifests as pure intelligence, endowed by the Lord with the eight qualities.

### *Adhikaraṇa V.—The Mukta is a Satya-saṅkalpa*

Now the author discusses the question of the Mukta being a Satya-saṅkalpa, one whose will spontaneously becomes resolved into the accomplished act.

*Viśaya* : In the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VIII, 12.3) it is stated : “He moves about there, laughing, playing, rejoicing, be it with women, or chariots, or relatives.”

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Does the soul’s meeting with the relatives and the rest presuppose an effort on its part, or does it come about by its mere willing ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The opponent maintains the view that there is effort on the part of the soul. For in this world, even such great persons as kings, etc., who are said to be Satya-saṅkalpas (those whose wishes are never frustrated but ever accomplished), have to exert in order to have their wishes realised. Therefore, the Muktas meet with their relatives by willing, accompanied by some effort to get the will realised.

*Siddhānta* : This opinion is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 8.

संकल्पादेव तच्छ्रुतेः ॥ ४ । ४ । ८ ॥

संकल्पाद्, Saṅkalpād, by the will. एव Eva, indeed. तत् Tat, about it. श्रुतेः Śruteḥ, there being a scriptural statement.

8. (The Muktas meet their relatives and the rest) by their mere will ; because of the text of the Śruti.—545.

## COMMENTARY

The Mukta meets his relatives and the rest by his mere will. Why ? Because the Revelation says so. For in the same Chhandogya Upaniṣad in a previous passage (VIII., 2. 1) the Scripture says :

स यदि पितृलोककामो भवति संकल्पादेवाम्य पितरः समुत्तिष्ठन्ति तेन पितृलोकेन सम्पन्नो महीयते ॥ १ ॥

Thus he who desires the world of the fathers, by his mere will, the fathers come to receive him, and having obtained the world of the fathers, he is happy.

Thus this previous passage shows that the meeting with relatives, etc., takes place by *mere* will, and by no other effort. If any other effort was also necessary, then the particle “Eva,” “mere,” would become useless. Though there was similarly the word “Eva” in the description of the soul as “mere mass of intelligence” (प्रज्ञानघन एव), yet there we added the eight qualities, because of the complementary text of the Prajāpati’s declaration. But there is no such complementary passage with regard to Satya-saṅkalpa, which would require us to hold that some other attributes must be added here also ; and that the will does not accomplish itself, but requires something else.

But this kind of Mukti, in which one’s own expansion of power is the predominant element, is not liked by those who are the true servants of the Lord, and have tasted the sweets of service. They look down upon this sort of Mukti. This explains also those texts which deprecate such Mukti.

*Adhikaraṇa VI.—The Mukta is under the control  
of no one, but the Lord.*

Now, though the Mukta is one whose wish is ever true (Satya-saṅkalpa), yet he is dependent on the Lord and on the Lord alone. The author shows this fact in the next Sūtra.

**Doubt :** Is the Mukta under the governance of anyone other than the Supreme Person or not?

**Pūrvapakṣa :** He is under the governance of Beings other than the Supreme Person. Just as the man who goes to the palace of a king comes under the control of the officials of the king, so also the Mukta who has entered the home of the Lord, comes under the jurisdiction of the companions of the Lord.

**Siddhānta :** This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.



SŪTRA IV., 4. 9.

अतएव चानन्याधिपतिः ॥ ४ । ४ । ९ ॥

अतः Atah, for this reason. एव Eva, indeed. च Cha, and. अनन्यअधिपतिः, Ananya-adhipatiḥ, having no other master (except God).

9. And for this reason, indeed, he has no other Master.—546.

## COMMENTARY

“For this reason,” namely, because of the manifestation in the Freed Soul, of the attributes of True-Resolve, etc., through the grace of the Supreme Person, the Mukta has no master over him. That is to say, he has no ruler over him except the Supreme Person Himself. He shines forth and sports about, dependent on the Supreme alone. Were he under the control of any other person, then his case would not differ from one being in the bondage of the Samsāra, though that bondage may be of a different sort. Though the True-Resolve possessed by the Mukta Jīva is the essential nature of the Soul, yet it has become manifest owing to his meditation on the Supreme Person. Hence He, out of compassion, constantly gives joy to His protege—joy which is endless and infinite. That the Lord gives joy to the Freed will be shown further on under Sūtra IV., 4. 20. and the rest. The Mukta also is equally happy in getting the privilege of eternally serving the Lord of eternal bliss and Protector of His proteges. The Jīva being a portion (Amśa) of the Lord, his agency and enjoyment all depend upon the Lord. This has already been shown previously.

The Sūtra is explained in another way also by some. “For this reason,” namely, because he becomes a Satya-saṅkalpa, one whose wishes spontaneously realise themselves, the Mukta “has no other master,” is not under the law, rises above all commands and prohibitions of Śāstras. Were he still under the rule of the law, his trueness of resolve would become obstructed thereby. [No one who is under the law, can be said to have a *Free-Will* or Satya-Saṅkalpa].

*Adhikaraṇa VII.*

Now the author shows that the Mukta gets a new Divine body.

*Doubt* : There arises the following doubt : Has the Mukta who has approached the Highest Light got any body, or has he not ? Or has he a body whenever he desires to have one ? Or can he not get any body ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : On this point, the author first gives the opinion of Bādari.

## SŪTRA IV., 4. 10.

अभावे बादरिराह एवम् ॥ ४ । ४ । १० ॥

अभावे Abhāve, as regards the absence. बादरिः Bādariḥ, Bādari. आह Āha, says. हि Hi, because (of the Chhândogya, VIII., 12. 1). एवम् Evam, thus.

10. Bādari (opines that the Mukta Jīva) has no body, because thus the Scripture declares.—547.

## COMMENTARY

Bādari holds that there is an absence of body with regard to the freed. The body is always the outcome of one's good or bad or mixed Karmas. It is Aद्रष्टा-made. In the state of Release, all Karmas being destroyed, there exists no Aद्रष्टा, so there is no possibility of the origination of a body. Why? Because the Scripture declares thus : because the text of the Chhândogya, VIII., 12. 1, says so.

मषवन्मर्त्यं वा इदं शरीरमात्तं मृत्युना तदस्यामृतस्याशरीरस्यात्मनोऽधिष्ठानमात्तं वै सशरीरः प्रियाप्रियाभ्यां न वै सशरीरस्य सतः प्रियाप्रिययोरपहतिरित्यशरीरं वाव सन्तं न प्रियाप्रिये स्मृतः ॥ १ ॥ अशरीरो वायुरञ्जं विद्युस्तनयित्नुशरीराययेतानि तद्यथेतान्यमुष्मादाकाशात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसंपद्य स्वेन स्वेन रूपेणाभिनिष्पद्यन्ते ॥ २ ॥ एवमेवैष संप्रसादोऽस्माच्छरीरात्समुत्थाय परं ज्योतिरुपसंपद्यस्वेन रूपेणाभिनिष्पद्यते स उत्तमः पुरुषः स तत्र पठेति जज्ञेक्रीडन्ममाणः स्त्रीभिर्वा यानैर्वा शान्तिभिर्वा नोपजनं स्मरन्निदं शरीरं स यथा प्रयोग्य आचरणे युक्त एवमेवायमस्मिच्छरीरं प्राणो युक्तः ॥ ३ ॥

Maghavat, this body is mortal and always held by death. It is the abode of that Self which is immortal and without body. When in the body the Self is held by pleasure and pain. So long as he is in the body, he cannot get free from pleasure and pain. But when he is free of the body, then neither pleasure nor pain touches him.

The wind is without body ; the cloud, lightning and thunder are without body. Now as these, arising from this heavenly ether (space), appear in their own form, as soon as they have approached the Highest Light.

Thus does that serene being, arising from this body, appear in its own form as soon as it has approached the Highest Light. He is the highest person (Uttama Puruṣa). He moves about there laughing (or eating), playing and rejoicing (in his mind), be it with women, carriages, or relatives, never minding that body into which he was born.

The above passage in the first verse shows that wherever there is a body, there must be pain. It, therefore, says further on "when the soul goes out of the body," etc., then it is above all pain, etc. Thus the Chhândogya Upaniṣad clearly says that the soul in the state of Mukti is bodiless.

The Bhāgavata Purāṇa also says :

देहेन्द्रियासुहीनानां वैकुण्ठपुरवासिनाम् ।

The dwellers of the city of Vaikunṭha, devoid of life-breaths, sense-organs and body.

This is the opinion of the sage Bādari. The author next quotes the opinion of Jaimini.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 11.

आह हेवं जैमिनिर्विकल्पामननात् ॥ ४ । ४ । ११ ॥

आह Âha, says. हि Hi, because. एवम् Evam, thus. जैमिनिः Jaiminiḥ, Jaimini. विकल्पः Vikalpa, option. आमननात् Âmananât, by thinking about, mentioning.

11. Jaimini holds that, because the Scripture declares thus, therefore, the Mukta has a body, as there is the passage declaring the optional possession of many bodies.—548.

COMMENTARY

Jaimini holds the view that the Mukta has a body. Why? Because of the declaration of option in the Scripture. In the Chhandogya Upaniṣad, VII., 26. 2, where the Bhûmâ Vidyâ is described, there is the following:

तदेव श्लोको न पश्यो मृत्युं पश्यति न रोगं नोत दुःखता<sup>१</sup> सर्व<sup>२</sup> इ पश्यः पश्यति सर्वमवाप्नोति सर्वश इति म एकधा भवति त्रिधा भवति पञ्चधा सप्तधा नवधा चैव पुनश्चैकादश स्मृतः शतं च दश चैवश्च सहस्राणि च वि<sup>३</sup>ंशति ॥ २ ॥

There is this verse, 'The Released does not see death, nor illness, nor pain. The Released sees everything and obtains everything everywhere.'

He is one, he becomes three, he becomes five, he becomes seven, he becomes nine, then again he is called the eleventh, and hundred and ten and one thousand and twenty.'

The above shows that the soul can assume various bodies simultaneously, and as the soul is atomic in its essential form, its becoming many can be only by its assuming diverse bodies.

Nor can it be said that the above description of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad is not a fact, but an Arthavâda. Because the description comes under the topic of Release, and is a bare statement of truth, not a figurative expression. This being so, the statement of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 12. 1) regarding the soul being bodiless, in the state of Mukti, means that it has no body dependent upon Adṛṣṭa or Karmas. That the soul has a body, not of Prākṛtic matter but of celestial essence, is proved by the Smṛti text also: "Vasanti yatro puruṣâḥ sarve Vaikuṇṭha mûrtayaḥ," "where dwell released souls, all having celestial bodies (Vaikuṇṭha Mûrti)."

Now the author gives his own opinion in contradistinction to that of Bâdari and Jaimini.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 12.

द्वादशाहवदुभयविधं बादरायणोऽनः ॥ ४ । ४ । १२ ॥

द्वादश Dvâdaśa, twelve. अहवत् Âhavat, like days; just as the twelve days sacrifice. उभयविधम् Ubhyavidham, of both kinds. बादरायणः Bâdarâyaṇaḥ, Bâdarâyaṇa (thinks). अतः Ataḥ, for this very reason.

12. For this reason, Bâdarâyaṇa holds that Muktas are of both

kinds (they are both bodiless and have bodies), just as the twelve days' sacrifice (is both an Ahîna and a Sattra).—539.

## COMMENTARY

"For this reason," because the Mukta is one whose wish becomes spontaneously realised; therefore, the lord Bâdarâyaṇa opines that the Mukta has both these natures; because the Scripture describes him in both these ways. In other words, he maintains that the Mukta is both bodiless as well as has a body. It is like the twelve days' sacrifice which becomes a Sattra on the wish of the Yajamâna, when it is looked upon as a sacrifice having many Yajamânas, and becomes an Ahîna when it is looked upon as having a single Yajamâna. As this Dvâdaśâha ceremony becomes a Sattra, or an Ahîna, on the mere will of the Yajamâna (whether he joins others with him or not), so these Mukta souls have a body or have not a body, on their mere will. The real truth is this that the Muktas, through the force of Brahma-vidyâ, have torn off all corporal vestures, and have become Satya-saṅkalpas or beings whose mere will is action. Of these Muktas, there is a class who wish to have a body and they assume a body by the force of their mere will. And with regard to these is the verse of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VII, 26. 2) "he becomes one, he becomes three, he becomes five," etc. But those who have no desire to assume a body, do not get a body, and with regard to them the verse, VIII, 12. 1. of the Chhandogya Upaniṣad becomes appropriate, and it is said that he is without a body.

Those Muktas, who through their celestial bodies (the Brâhmîc bodies) always wish to carry out the will of the Supreme Brahman, manifest in their acts the Chit Śakti of the Lord, and with that Śakti they work simultaneously in different places. The Muktas always possess this Chit Śakti, and always follow the will of the Lord.

In the Brhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (II, 4. 14) it is said:

यत्र हि द्वैतमिव भवति तदितर इतरं जिघ्रति तदितर इतरं पश्यति तदितर इतरं शृणोति तदितर इतरमभिवदति तदितर इतरं मनुते तदितर इतरं विजानाति यत्र वा अस्य सर्वगतमैवाभूत्तत्केन कं जिघ्रेत्तत्केन कं पश्येत्तत्केन कं शृणुयात्तत्केन कमभिवदेत्तत्केन कं मन्वीत तत्र केन कं विजानीयात् ॥ १४ ॥

For when there is as it were duality, then one sees the other, one smells the other, one hears the other, one salutes the other, one perceives the other, one knows the other, but when the Self only becomes all this for the Mukta, how should he smell another, how should he see another, how should he hear another, how should he salute another, how should he perceive another, how should he know another?

The above verse shows that when, in the state of Mukti, the Supreme Self has become the direct worker through the Mukta Jîva, when

Hari pervades the Mukta Jīva, with His form of bliss, intelligence\* and all-pervadingness, and when He has become, as it were, all the sense-organs of the Mukta Jīva, his eyes, ears, etc., then how should such a Mukta Jīva see another, and with what he should see another, etc.? Verily through the energy of Hari Himself, he sees Hari, through the sense-organs which themselves are Hari. Thus the Mukta sees Hari with the organs which are Hari and the life-energy which is Hari. Hence the Śruti says, "When the Self only has become all this for the Mukta, how should he smell another, how should he see another, how should he hear another," etc.

This idea is more explicitly expressed in the Śruti of the Madh-  
yandināyanas which is to the following effect.

स वा एष ब्रह्मनिष्ठ इदं शरीरमर्त्यमसिद्ध्य ब्रह्माभिसम्पद्य ब्रह्मणा पश्यति ब्रह्मणा शृणोति ब्रह्मणैवेदं सर्वमनुभवति ।

That Brahmaniṣṭha putting off this mortal body, and having reached Brahman, sees through Brahman, hears through Brahman, yea, perceives everything through Brahman.

The Smṛti also says the same: "where dwell these spirits all of them having celestial bodies."

This Saṅkalpa or will, which blooms out in the Mukta, is to be cultivated from the very time of his earliest practice, and must be understood to be the same will, which he was cultivating during his period of Sādhana. Because the Śruti says, "Yathā kratuḥ," "as a man wills in this life, so he gets in the next." In fact, the Mukta even before he gets the state of Mukti, has been constantly willing "May I walk through the feet of Viṣṇu, or rather I am walking through the feet of Viṣṇu, I am seeing through the eyes of Viṣṇu," etc. Since this had been his aspiration, even before Mukti, it becomes realised in the state of Mukti.

### *Adhikaraṇa VIII—The Mukta enjoys objects and is not quiescent*

In the preceding Sūtras have been described the attributes which the Mukta possesses, in order to enjoy heavenly blessings, and his getting a divine body through which he enjoys them. That there are enjoyments to be experienced in Mukti, we find established by texts like the following of the Taittirīya Upaniṣad (II., 1. 1.):

सोऽश्नुते सर्वान् कामान् सह ब्रह्मणा ।

He enjoys all objects of desire along with Brahman.

Now the author mentions that this enjoyment may be problematic and hence arises the following doubt.

*Doubt* : Is it possible that a Mukta may have enjoyments or is it not possible ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains, that since the Mukta is devoid of body and sense-organs, it is not possible for him to enjoy any object. If it be said that being a Yogin, he has the creative power of making a body for himself in order to enjoy objects, to this we reply, that being full of divine ecstasy and bliss, he will have no hankering for sensations, and will not create a body to enjoy external objects. The Mukta, therefore, does not enjoy objects of desire.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 13.

तन्वभावेसन्ध्यवदुपपत्तेः ॥ ४ । ४ । १३ ॥

तनु Tanu, of the body. अभावे Abhāve, in the absence. सन्ध्यवद् Sandhyavad, just as in a dream, Sandhya means dream. उपपत्तेः Upapatteḥ, it being possible.

13. Even in the absence of a body, the Mukta enjoys objects as in the state of dream ; because of the reasonableness of such enjoyments.—550.

COMMENTARY

The enjoyment is not impossible, even in the absence of a (self-created) body. As in the condition of dream (where the objects of enjoyment and the subtle bodies through which those objects are enjoyed are created by the Lord Himself), so in the state of Mukti ; (though the Mukta may not desire any such enjoyment, the Lord out of His fullness bestows such enjoyments on him). Therefore, as in a dream, where there is no body, but still enjoyment, so in the state of Mukti, there is enjoyment even without the body.

Of course, when the Mukta creates a body, then his enjoyment is more full and intense, as is mentioned in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 14.

भावे जाग्रद्वत् ॥ ४ । ४ । १४ ॥

भावे Bhāve, in the existence of (the body). जाग्रद्वत् Jāgradvat, just as in the waking state.

14. When there is a body (then the enjoyment is more intense) as in the waking state.—551.

COMMENTARY

When there is a body, then the enjoyment is, of course, as full as in the waking state. As to the objection of the Pūrvapakṣin, that the objects

of enjoyment have no attraction for the Mukta, it is perfectly correct. But as these objects, like sentiments arising on the experiencing of a work of true art, are looked upon by the Mukta as *gifts* of God, his *Prasāda*, he does not discard them, but on the contrary accepts them eagerly. Hence the objection is not valid. As the Lord Hari Himself is ever full and self-satisfied, yet *enjoys* the offerings made to Him by His devotees, in order to satisfy the wish of His devotees; and the *desire* for enjoyment of the Lord is but a response to the wish of His devotees; so there arises a desire in the Mukta even, to enjoy the objects of desire as the sacred gift of the Lord, as His *Prasāda*; and this is indeed not an ordinary desire but Bhakti. And it should be so understood.

### *Adhikaraṇa IX.—The Mukta is Omniscient.*

The author now shows that the Mukta is omniscient.

*Viśaya* : In the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VII., 26. 2, see Sūtra IV., 4. II. 1). we have the following :

“The released soul does not see death, nor illness, nor pain. The released sees everything and obtains everything, everywhere.”

This shows that the released has knowledge of every object.

*Doubt* : Is it possible that the released should possess such omniscience or is it not?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : The Pūrvapakṣin maintains that the released soul has no omniscience, because the Scripture says that it is embraced by the Prājña Self. Thus, Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 3. 21) :

तदा अस्यैतदतिच्छन्दा अपहतपाप्माऽभयं रूपं तद्यथा गियया खिया संपरिष्वक्तो न बाह्यं किंचन वेद नान्तरमेवमेवायं पुरुषः पश्चेनात्मना संपरिष्वक्तो न बाह्यं किंचन वेद नान्तरं तदा अस्यैतदाप्तकाम-मात्मकाममकामं रूपं शोकान्तरम् ॥ २१ ॥

This indeed is his (true) form, free from desires, free from evil, free from fear. Now as a man, when embraced by a beloved wife, knows nothing that is without, nothing that is within, thus this person, when embraced by the intelligent (Prājña) Self, knows nothing that is without, nothing that is within. This indeed is his (true) form in which his wishes are fulfilled, in which the Self (only) is his wish, in which no wish is felt, free from any sorrow.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 15.

प्रदीपवदावेशस्तथाहि दर्शयति ॥ ४ । ४ । १५ ॥

प्रदीपवद् Pradīpavat, just as in the case of a lamp. आवेशः Āveśaḥ, entering. तथा Tathā, thus. हि Hi, because. दर्शयति Darśayati, declares (the Scripture).

15. The pervasion (of the soul of the Mukta in every object, and his thus knowing every object), is like that of a lamp ; because the Scripture declares it to be so.—552.

## COMMENTARY

As a lamp, though remaining in one place, enters into many places through its rays, so the Mukta enters into many objects through the spreading out of its Prajña (the Aura of consciousness). To this effect is the Śruti of the Śvetâśvatara Upaniṣad (IV., 18).

यदात्मस्तत्र दिवा न रात्रिर्न सन्न चासच्छिव एव केवलः । तदक्षरं तत्सवितुर्वरेण्यं प्रज्ञा च तस्मात्प्रसूता पुराणी ॥ १८ ॥

When the light has risen, there is no day, no night, neither existence nor non-existence, Śiva the blessed alone is there. That is the eternal, the adorable light of Savitṛ, and the ancient wisdom of the Jīva (Prajña) proceeded from That (Lord Hari).

The above shows that “tasmât,” “from Him,” from the Lord Hari, the ancient wisdom of the Jīva, so long under obscurity, spreads forth then.

Says an objector : It is not reasonable to hold that the Jīva becomes omniscient in the state of Mukti. The Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad (IV., 3. 21 *ante*) says the Jīva is then in the embrace of the Lord and is unconscious of every discrete knowledge. The next Sūtra gives a reply to this objection, and explains that verse.

## SŪTRA IV., 4. 16.

स्वाप्ययसम्पत्त्योरन्यतरापेक्ष्यमाविष्कृतं हि ॥ ४ । ४ । १६ ॥

स्वाप्यय Svāpyaya, deep sleep. सम्पत्त्योः Sampattyoh, and union : the death-swoon. The moment just before the departure of soul from the body is called Sampatti. अन्यतर Anyatara, either, any one of the two. अपेक्ष्यम् Apekṣyam, to be referred, having regard to. आविष्कृतम् Âviṣkṛtam, manifest, declared. हि Hi, because.

16. (That verse of the Br. Up., IV., 3. 21) refers to either the state of deep sleep or to the state of death-swoon (it does not refer to the condition of the Mukta) ; because the Scripture has made it clear.—553.

## COMMENTARY

The above Bṛhadâraṇyaka Upaniṣad text is not enough to prohibit the possession of discrete consciousness by the Mukta, because it has reference either to the condition of deep sleep or of death-swoon. In the Chhândogya



Upaniṣad (VI, 8. 1) the word Svapīti is thus explained : "Svam apto bhavati tasmād enam Svapīti ity āchakṣate : svam hy apīto bhavati :—" "He has reached the Self (Sva), therefore, they say Svapīti (he sleeps), because he has gone to his self (Sva)." Further in the same section (VI, 8. 6) it says "when the man departs, speech merges in the mind, the mind in breath, etc." Thus the Scripture describes the states of deep sleep and death (Sampatti) as states of unconsciousness. On the other hand, it reveals the state of Mukti as that of all-knowledge. In the same Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., II. 1.) Indra addressing Prajâpati thus deprecates the condition of deep sleep :—"In truth he thus does not know himself that he is I, nor does he know anything exists. He is gone, as if to utter annihilation. I see no good in this. Thus showing the utter unconsciousness of the Jiva in deep sleep, the same Śruti, in the speech of Prajâpati, describes the state of Mukti, unlike that of deep sleep, as a state of most vivid consciousness, in these words (VIII., 12. 5.) :—"He, the Self, seeing these pleasures through his divine eye, i. e., the mind, rejoices. The Devas who are in the world of Brahman meditate on that. Therefore, all worlds belong to them and all desires."

Thus the Chhândogya Upaniṣad clearly draws a distinction between the deep sleep and death which is that of unconsciousness, and the state of Mukti which is a state of exalted consciousness. The word 'annihilation' used in the above means 'non-perception of any object.'

Thus it is proved that the released soul is Omniscient.

#### *Adhikaraṇa X.—But the Mukta cannot create a world.*

In the Chhândogya Upaniṣad we have the following (VIII., 1. 6.) :

तद्य इहात्मानमनुविद्य ब्रजन्त्येताँश्च सत्यान् कामाँस्तेषाँ सर्वेषु लोकेष्वकामचारो भवत्यथ य इहात्मानमनुविद्य ब्रजन्त्येताँश्च सत्यान् कामाँस्तेषाँ सर्वेषु लोकेषु कामचारो भवति ॥ ६ ॥

Those who depart from hence without having discovered the Self and those true desires, for them there is no freedom in all the worlds. But those who depart from hence, after having discovered the Self and those true desires, for them there is freedom in all the worlds.

As an example of Kâmacharya or freedom in all the worlds, the same Upaniṣad mentions (VIII., 2. 1, etc.) :

स यदि पितृलोककामो भवति संकल्पादेवास्य पितरः समुत्तिष्ठन्ति तेन पितृलोकेन संपन्नो महीयते ॥१॥  
अथ यदि मातृलोककामो भवति संकल्पादेवास्य मातरः समुत्तिष्ठन्ति तेन मातृलोकेन संपन्नो महीयते ॥२॥

Thus he who desires the world of the fathers, by his mere will the fathers come to receive him, and having obtained the world of the fathers, he is happy.

And he who desires the world of the mothers, by his mere will the mothers come to receive him, and having obtained the world of the mothers, he is happy.

*Doubt* : Here arises the doubt : Does the released soul become the world-creator or not ?

*Pūrvapakṣa* : Since the Mukta has reached the highest equality with the Lord (Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, III, 1. 3), and since the Scriptures mention that the Mukta has the power of realising all his thoughts (Satya-saṅkalpa), he must have the power also of creating the universe.

*Siddhānta* : This view is set aside in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 17.

जगद्व्यापारवर्ज्यं प्रकरणादसन्नित्वात् ॥ ४ । ४ । १७ ॥

जगद् Jagad, world. व्यापार Vyâpâra, energy, creation. वर्ज्यम् Varjyam, without, excepted. प्रकरणात् Prakaraṇât, from the subject-matter. असन्नित्वात्, Asannihitatvât, on account of non-proximity.

17. (The Mukta has all powers) with the exception of creating the universe ; because the context and the non-proximity (debar any other view).—554.

COMMENTARY

The Mukta no doubt creates the Pitṛloka and Matrloka, etc., as we learn from the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 2. 1, etc.) ; but his creation has this limitation, that it is a local creation only, different from the creation of the Supreme Brahman, who creates the *whole* universe, consisting of spirit and matter, sustains it and dissolves it back into Himself. This power belongs to Brahman alone and to no Mukta Jiva, as we find from the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (III., 1. 1.)

भृगुर्वै वारुणिः ॥ वरुणं पितरमुपससार ॥ अधीहि भगवो ब्रह्मेति ॥ तस्मा एतत्प्रोवाच ॥ अन्नं प्राणं चक्षुः । श्रोत्रं मनो वाचमिति ॥ तच्छ्रोत्रं होवाच ॥ यतो वा इमानि भूतानि जायन्ते ॥ येन जातानि जीवन्ति ॥ यत्प्रयन्त्यभिसंविशन्ति ॥ तद्विजिज्ञासस्व ॥ तद्ब्रह्मेति ॥

Bṛghu Varuṇi went to his father Varun, saying : “Sir, teach me Brahman.” He told him this, *viz.*, Food, breath, the eye, the ear, mind, speech.

Then he said again to him : “That from whence these beings are born, that by which when born they live, that into which they enter at their death, try to know that. That is Brahman.”

With the exception of Jagatvypâra, the released soul has every other power. How do we know this ? From the leading subject-matter and from non-proximity. The leading subject-matter in the above passage of the Taittiriya Upaniṣad, is Supreme Brahman. The son asks his father to teach him Brahman, and the father defines Brahman as “that from whence these beings are born, etc.” The topic there is of Brahman and not the released soul. Nor can the released soul, by any method of attraction and

imitation, got this power of world creation. In fact, that Upaniṣad in II., 6. 1. expressly says :

असन्नेव स भवति ॥ असद्ब्रह्मेति वेद चेत् ॥ अस्ति ब्रह्मेति चेद्वेद ॥ सन्तमेनं ततो विदुरिति ॥

He who knows Brahman as non-existing, becomes himself non-existing. He who knows the Brahman as existing, him we know himself as existing.

Moreover, the Mukta being not the subject-matter under discussion in the immediate proximity of the Taittirīya verse, he cannot be said to acquire this power of world-creation by any means. If it were otherwise, then the author of the Sūtra would not have defined Brahman as he does in I., 1. 2. as the Creator of the universe, for all definitions presuppose some special individual attributes.

Moreover, if every Mukta became a God, with the god-like power of creation, then there would be many gods in this universe, and instead of this being a cosmos, it would be a chaos. Therefore, the Mukta is not equal to God, and has not the power of world-creation.

Says an objector : But Taittirīya Upaniṣad and Chhândogya Upaniṣad both declare that a released soul becomes the object of adoration to the Devas even, and since they teach that he possesses such lordliness, it is natural to suppose that he has the power of world-creation. Thus Taittirīya Upaniṣad 1., 5. 3, says : "Sarve asmai deva balim āvahanti," "all Devas bring offerings to him." So also the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, 7., 25. 2, says : "Sa svarād bhabati tasya sarveṣu lokeṣu kāmachāro bhavati," "He becomes a self-ruler, he moves in all the worlds according to his wishes."

This objection is raised in the first half of the next Sūtra, and answered therein in the next half.

#### SŪTRA IV., 4. 18.

प्रत्यक्षोपदेशानेति चेन्नाधिकारिकमण्डलस्योक्तेः ॥ ४ । ४ । १८ ॥

प्रत्यक्ष Pratyakṣa, direct. उपदेशात् Upadeśāt, on account of (direct) teaching. न Na, not. इति Iti, so. चेत् Chet, if. न Na, not. आधिकारिक Ādhikārika, those entrusted with the special function, a world-ruler, office-bearer, like Brahmā, etc. मण्डलस्य Maṇḍalasya, spheres (i.e., of those abiding in the spheres, of those entrusted with the special functions). उक्तेः Ukteḥ, on account of the statements.

18. If it be objected that this is not so, because there is direct Scriptural teaching (to the effect that a Mukta becomes a world-creator), we reply, it is not so : because those texts declare (that the Mukta enjoys pleasures) in the spheres of world-rulers.—555.

## COMMENTARY

If an objector say, "the Śruti itself directly teaches that the Mukta can create a world; and so it is not proper to deny to him the power of world-creation," we reply to him thus, "The texts are wrongly interpreted by you. They refer to the power of every Mukta, to go to the spheres of cosmic rulers like Brahmā and the rest: and there enjoy all the pleasures of those spheres, through the kind permission of the Supreme Ruler." Thus the Muktas, like the Kumâras, Nârada and the rest, have unobstructed power of movement in every sphere, and this is what is meant by the word "Kâmachâra," "freedom of movement." The rulers of those spheres, moreover, honour such august visitors with all reverential offerings; and this is what is meant by the phrase "sarve devâ balim asmai âvahanti"—all Devas bring offerings to him. Those two texts are not an authority for holding that a Mukta can be a world-creator. They merely show that a Mukta participates, through the most merciful kindness of the Lord, in all enjoyments to be found in those phenomenal spheres which declare His glory.

Says an objector : If a Mukta enjoys all the pleasures to be found in the various worlds of phenomena, then he is no higher than an ordinary world-current-driven soul (Samsârî Jiva), for all phenomenal pleasures have an end. The next Sūtra answers the objection.

## SŪTRA IV., 4. 19.

विकारावर्ति च तथा हि स्थितिमाह ॥ ४ । ४ । १६ ॥

विकार Vikara, in the worldly life; the changing. अवर्ति Avarti, not existing: Vikâra avarti=Brahman, that in which change does not exist. च Cha, and. तथा Tathâ, of that kind. हि Hi, because. स्थितिम् Sthitim, abiding, position. आह Âha, says.

19. (The Mukta ever abides in) That who is changeless, because the Śruti also has declared such abiding.—556.

## COMMENTARY

"The changing" is this world of phenomena; for it is the six-fold modification, which every being in this world undergoes. That which does not exist in the changing is called Vikâra-avarti. It is the changeless Brahman and the abode of Brahman, which also possesses all the attributes of Brahman. The Mukta dwells in all spheres, fully knowing all the laws that govern those spheres, and all the attributes and nature of the Lord, who has created those spheres. Through the might of his Vidyâ, he

knows both the nature and the attributes of the Lord, free from the two-fold covering. Thus the dwelling of the Mukta in these spheres, differs from the dwelling of the Samsārī Jīvas in them. "The Śruti also has declared such abiding." Thus the Kāṭha Upaniṣad, V. 1., declares:

पुरमेकादशद्वारमजन्म्यावकचेतसः ॥ अनुष्ठाय न शोचति विमुक्तश्च विमुच्यत एतदे तत् ॥ १ ॥

There is a town with eleven gates belonging to the unborn Brahman, whose thoughts are never crooked. He who meditates on Him (in the lotus of the heart) grieves no more, and being liberated (from Avidyā which covers the essential nature of Brahman) becomes free (from the Māyā which veils the attributes of the Lord). This is that.

The above verse shows that the sage becomes free from the two-fold veils and being then free, he comes face to face with the Lord, and ever remains enjoying the highest end of man.

This covering or veil is really no covering on the face of the Lord: it is like the clouds covering the sun. As a matter of fact, the clouds do not cover the sun, but it is from the point of view of the observer on earth that the clouds *appear* to cover the sun. Similarly, these two coverings of the Lord (the Svarūpa Āvarikā and the Guṇa Āvarikā) are not real coverings, existing in Brahman, but veils existing between the Jīva and Brahman, and existing in the vision of the Jīva alone and not in Brahman.

This we find clearly stated in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

बिलज्जमानया यस्य स्थातुमीक्षापथेऽमुया विमोहिता विस्वन्ते गमाहमितिदुर्ध्रियः ॥

The men of perverse intellect deluded by this Māyā of the Lord, which stands shamelessly within the scope of their vision (putting a veil on it) mistakenly assert this is "mine," this is "I."

For as the cloud cannot really cover the sun, so this shameless Māyā cannot cover the Lord, but only throws a glamour on the vision of the befooled man.

Says an objector: Since the highest end of man is to realise the essential nature of the soul, as intelligence and bliss, and as possessing the attributes of true resolve (Satya-Saṅkalpa) and the rest, where is the necessity of making further efforts to know God? To know the Self is enough.

This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 20.

दर्शयतश्चैवं प्रत्यक्षानुमाने ॥ ४ । ४ । २० ॥

दर्शयतः Darśayataḥ, they both show. च Cha, and. एवम् Evam, thus. प्रत्यक्ष Pratyakṣa, direct knowledge: Śruti. अनुमाने Anumāne, and inference: Smṛti.

## 20. The Revelation and Tradition also show it thus.—557.

## COMMENTARY

Though the Mukta Jiva is as described above (namely, is intelligence, bliss, will power, etc.), yet in its own nature it is not endowed with *infinite* bliss (or infinite knowledge, etc.): because it is atomic in size. (It is by its falling into the infinite ocean) of Brahman, that it acquires measureless bliss. This is shown both by the Revelation as well as by Tradition. Thus the Taittiriya Upaniṣad 11., 7, “Rasam hy ova ayam labdhvā ānandī bhavati”: “indeed by getting this Flavour, he becomes blessed.” So also in the Gītā, XIV., 27:

ब्रह्मणो हि प्रतिष्ठाऽहममृतस्याव्ययस्य च ।

शाश्वतस्य च धर्मस्य सुखस्यैकान्तिकस्य च ॥ २७ ॥

For I am the abode of the ETERNAL, and of the indestructible nectar of immortality, of immemorial righteousness, and of unending bliss.

The word ‘Cha’ in the Sūtra indicates that we may also apply the analogical reasoning here. As a poor man becomes rich when he takes refuge with a rich person and becomes his favourite, so the Jiva essentially atomic, becomes infinite through the infinity of the Lord.

But, says an objector: Does not the following text show that the Released gets the highest similarity with God? And if the Released is *similar* to God, it is by virtue of his own self that he becomes god-like, what is the necessity of a God then? The following verse of the Mundaka Upaniṣad, III., 1. 3, shows this similarity :

यदा पश्यः पश्यते रुक्मवर्णं कर्तारमीशं पुरुषं ब्रह्मयोनिम् ॥ तदा विद्वान्पुण्यपापे विधूय निरञ्जनः परमं साम्यमुपैति ॥ ३ ॥

When the seer sees the brilliant maker and Lord of the world as the Person in whom Brahman has his source, then he becomes wise, and shaking off good and evil, he reaches the *highest similarity*, free from passions.

**Objection:** No doubt, the soul is spoken of as *atomic*, but that is merely a figure of speech, in order to facilitate the understanding of it. The Buddhi is atomic and its attribute is wrongly ascribed to the Jiva who is really Vibhu or all-pervading.

This objection is answered in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 21.

भोगमात्रसाम्यलिङ्गाच्च च ॥ ४ । ४ । २१ ॥

भोग Bhoga, enjoyment. मात्र Mātra, only. साम्य Sāmya, equality. लिङ्गात् Liṅgāt, on account of indication. च Cha, only. न Na, not. This word is to be read into the aphorism by drawing it from IV., 4. 18.

21. The similarity of the Jīva with Brahman is in the matter of enjoyment only : because of the indication of the Śrūti.—558.

## COMMENTARY

The word Cha “and” has the force of only here. The word ‘not’ is to be read into the Sūtra, from Sūtra IV., 4. 18 : and though its Anuvṛtti was not current in the two Sūtras immediately following it, it is current in it by the maxim of “frog-jump.” The Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II., 1. 1. “He reaches all objects of desires together with (Saha) the all-knowing Brahman,” indicates that the Mukta is equal to God in matters of enjoyment only : because from the indicatory hint given there, the sense of the passage is not that the Mukta is essentially and absolutely equal to the Lord.

In a previous Sūtra (II, 3. 19, p. 355) it has been proved that the soul is really and not metaphorically atomic, and so this objection that the soul is all-pervading has already been answered.

In that Sūtra, the essential form of the soul is determined, in the present Sūtra, the author of the treatise shows that the Jīva and Brahman have equality only in the matter of enjoyment, but they are different in their essential nature—the one is atomic, the other is all-pervading, etc. This inequality, moreover, is real and not fictitious.

*Adhikaraṇa XI.—The Mukta is eternally free and never returns.*

Now the author commences the topic that the Mukta is everywhere in the proximity of Brahman.

*Viśaya*: All the texts describing the attainment of the world of the Lord by the free, are Viśaya texts here.

*Doubt*: There arises this doubt: Is this Mukti, which consists in reaching the Lord, permanent or temporal?

*Pūrṇapakṣa*: Since this release consists in reaching a particular world or Loka, and there is no distinction between Lokas, so far as their phenomenal nature is concerned, whether it be Svarga-Loka or Vaikuṇṭha-Loka ; and from every Loka there is a possibility of fall ; so the Mukti is not eternal.

*Siddhānta* : This view is refuted in the next Sūtra.

SŪTRA IV., 4. 22.

अनावृत्तिः शब्दादनावृत्तिः शब्दात् ॥ ४ । ४ । २२ ॥

अनावृत्तिः Anāvṛttiḥ, no return. शब्दात् Śabdāt, on account of the Scriptural statement. अनावृत्तिः Anāvṛttiḥ, no return. शब्दात् Śabdāt, on account of the Scriptural statement.

22. There is no return (to Saṃsāra for the Mukta) because of the word of God ; yea, there is no return, because of the word of God.—559.

## COMMENTARY

He who has reached the world of the Lord, by devotion to Him, accompanied by a knowledge of His qualities, never comes back from it to Saṃsāra. Why ? Because of the Word. Because there is this scriptural statement in the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (IV. 15. 6) :

स एनान्ब्रह्म गमयत्येव देवपथो ब्रह्मपथ एतेन प्रतिपद्यमाना इमं मानवमावर्तं नावर्तन्ते नावर्तन्ते ॥६॥

He leads them to Brahman. This is the path of the Devas, the path that leads to Brahman. Those who proceed on that path do not return to the life of man, yea, they do not return.

To the same effect is the following verse of the Chhândogya Upaniṣad (VIII., 15. 1) :

स खल्वेवं वर्तयन्त्यावदायुयं ब्रह्मलोकमभिसंपद्यते न च पुनरावर्तते न च पुनरावर्तते न च पुनरावर्तते ॥६॥

He verily thus passing his life, attains on death, the world of Brahman, and never returns therefrom ; yea, never returns therefrom.

To the same point is the following Smṛti text :

मामुपेत्य पुनर्जन्म दुःखालयमशाश्वताम् ।

नाप्नुवन्ति महात्मानः संसिद्धिं परमां गताः ॥ १५ ॥

Having come to Me, these Mahātmās come not again to birth, the place of pain, non-eternal ; they have gone to the highest bliss.

आब्रह्मभुवनाहोकाः पुनरावर्तिनोऽर्जुन ।

मामुपेत्य तु कौन्तेय पुनर्जन्म न विद्यते ॥ १६ ॥

The worlds, beginning with the world of Brahmā, they come and go, O Arjuna, but he who cometh unto me, O Kaunteya, he knoweth birth no more. (Gitā, XVIII, 15, 16).

Nor indeed can it be feared that the Supreme Lord, the blessed Hari, will ever wish to throw down from His world, His servant, the Mukta, or that the Mukta would ever wish to leave his Beloved. For has not the Lord said in the Gitā (VII., 17) : “I am supremely dear to the wise and he is dear to me.”? Or does not the Bhāgavata Purāṇa also say, “Sādhavo hṛdayam mahyam sādhuṇām hṛdayam tu aham.” “I am the heart of the Sādhus, and the Sādhus are verily my heart.” Thus there is excess of reciprocal love between the two, leaving no room for any



such doubts, unworthy both of the Lord and His Devotee. Also in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, we have the following :

ये दारागारपुत्रात्तान् प्राणान् वित्तमिमं परम् ।  
 हित्वा मां शरणं याताः कथं तांस्यक्तुमुत्सहे ॥  
 धौतात्मा पुरुषः कृष्णपादमूलं न मुञ्चति ।  
 मुक्तसर्वपरिहृशः पान्थः स्वशरणं यथा ॥

Those who leaving aside wives, sons, houses, lives and riches sought shelter in me, how can I allow myself to desert them ?

A clean-souled man never leaves the feet of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, just as a traveller who has reached his home after undergoing all sorts of trouble, does not leave it.

Thus, on the one hand, the Lord has the strong determination not to leave his devotees and, on the other hand, his devotees have an equally strong love for Him, which does not allow them to leave Him.

To sum up, the Lord never abandons His own extremely beloved children, who are a fragment of his own essence, after having brought them to His home, and after having washed away their ignorance, which had caused them to turn their face from the Lord. More so, when it is remembered that the promises of the Lord are ever true, that His resolutions are never frustrated, that He is an ocean of protecting kindness for all those who take shelter under Him, and that He is the Lord of all. Such a being will never renounce his devotees, who have abandoned everything.

The Jiva also, on the other hand, whose quest was ever happiness, and who had constantly been deluded by a show of it in the shape of wives, children, etc., and who had passed innumerable lives in the pursuit of these false pleasures, will not leave that infinity of true joy and wisdom, the best friend and master, the most merciful, when he has found Him through the grace of the good teacher and through the arising of his good fortune. The soul, when it has once found its origin, never has any desire left for things other than the Lord and follows Him alone and never wishes to be away from Him. This is not a question for logical arguments, it is a matter learnt through the Scriptures alone and must be so believed, whose sole authorities are the Scriptures.

The repetition of the Sūtra indicates that the book has come to an end.

समुद्भूत्य यो दुःखपङ्कात् स्वभक्तान्  
 नयत्यच्युतश्चित्सुखे धाम्नि नित्ये ।  
 प्रियान् गृहरागात् तिलाई विमोक्तुं  
 न चेच्छत्यसावेव सुहेनिषेव्यः ॥

---

---

# APPENDIX

---

---



## APPENDIX I.

### THE ORIGIN OF BHAKTI DOCTRINE

---

The doctrine of Bhakti has given rise to many theories with regard to its origin. Several European authors are of opinion that this doctrine is borrowed by the Indians from Christianity. There is nothing improbable intrinsically in this theory. Christian colonists were in India long before the rise of Madhvâchârya and Râmânuja. The following quotation from Mr. Kennedy's notes in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for April 1907, shows how Christianity could have affected Hinduism :

"On the North-West Frontier we find an entirely different state of things. Bactria was the home of all persecuted sects. To it fled the Manicheans, the Mazdakites, the Christians, whenever the whim of the monarch or the pressure of the Magi or the relations with home prompted Sassanian kings to persecute their subjects. Christianity was planted at a very early period in Bactria and flourished there greatly. Bardaisan, the great Syrian Gnostic, who died in 223 A. D., expressly mentions the Christian communities of Bactria and Persia. 'John, the Persian, Bishop of the Church of Persian and Great India,' attended the Nicene Council in 325 A. D. The Bishop of Herat was present at a Council held by the Katholikos in 424 A. D. Christianity spread among the White Huns in the fifth century, and they had a Bishop of their own by the middle of the sixth. Some 60 years later Chosroes II transported a vast number of Christian captives taken in the Roman wars to Seistan. In the seventh century Merv became the seat of Metropolitan Archbishop, and not only Nestorians but Jacobites had their own bishops throughout all those regions. India was surrounded on the North-West Frontier by a ring of Christian communities, many of them allied in blood to the barbarous tribes from Central Asia which were then invading India, and ready to adopt the first tolerable religion presented to them."

Mathura, the home of Krishna's worship, was peopled by the Gurjars in the fifth century, and it is said that these Gurjars brought the Ruchi Bhakti doctrine of Christianity into India, from Bactria. The whole of this is very ably summarised by Mr. Kennedy in his paper on the "Child Krishna, Christianity, and the Gurjars" in the October No. of the *J. R. A. S.* for 1907. The following quotation from it will show his point of view : .

"We are now in a position to make certain inference. (1) The earliest settlements of the Gurjars were in the extreme north-west of the Panjab, their physique, their traditions and the present distribution of the clan point to this conclusion, and it is no less certain that the Southern Gurjars came from the North, probably by way of Rajputana. (2) The Gurjars suddenly appear in the middle of the sixth century as a great and powerful clan, dispersed over a wide area, and founding important states. The Greek historians, the Mahabharata, and other sources have made us well acquainted with the tribes of the North-Western Panjab. The sudden appearance among them of a people so great and powerful as the Gurjars can only be explained on the hypothesis of a foreign migration. These Gurjars, who worshipped neither Siva nor Buddha, cannot have been of India

origin, and their sun-worship, their waggons, and to some extent their polyandry, all point to Central Asia. (3) As the two most important Gurjar states date from the first half of the sixth century, the Gurjars must have entered India somewhat earlier; in other words, they must have come with the Hunas. In common with the Hunas they worshipped the sun, the kings who warred against the Hunas were the enemies of the Gurjars; and the princes of Gurjardesa were feudatories of the Shahi kings of Gandhara, who were of Turki, if not of Hunic, origin. There is a close connection between the Gurjars and the Hunas.

"If then, the Scythian nomads of Braj were Gurjaras, as the evidence would suggest, it is easy to see how they might have acquired some tincture of Christianity, either from their neighbours in Central Asia or from their connection with Christians among the Hunas. The Christian stories of the Nativity passed readily into the mediæval Buddhism of Central Asia, they are popular among Hindus of the present day, who know nothing else of Christianity and reminiscences of the Christmas festival still linger among some of the Berber tribes of North Africa. It is no idle fancy, therefore, to suppose that the Northern nomads who roamed through the woods of Braj, brought with them a child-god, a Christian legend, and Christmas festival; and in a city of lax Buddhists and eager Hindus this germ sufficed for the birth of a new if hybrid divinity. The priests who accompanied the nomads would readily invent or lend themselves to the invention, of a cult which promised them speedy advancement to the full-blown rank of Brahman. For although the mass of the Gurjars, as of the White Huns, was barbarian, yet there is plenty of evidence to show that among the upper classes there was a knowledge of letters and considerable civilisation. The new god was a god of divine childhood and of love. In Buddhism the idea of love has ranged from universal benevolence towards men and animals down through every stage of the scale to the grossest licentiousness; and Mathura was not free from such exhibitions, as its sculptures testify. Probably the nomads who brought the new god to Mathura knew little of Christianity except the stories of the infancy. They brought them to a Buddhist city where they would find a ready acceptance. But by the beginning of the sixth century the Buddhism of Mathura was on the wane, and Hinduism was in the ascendant. The name of the new god sounded in the ears of Hindus like that of the elder Krishna, whom the popular epic had exalted to the highest rank: the new god, like the elder Krishna, was an incarnation of the Most High; and so the youthful Krishna was born who was destined, in the course of centuries, to surpass all his older rivals in the ardour of his devotees and the multitude of his worshippers."

This view of Mr. Kennedy is controverted by Mr. Keith in *J. R. A. S.* for January 1908. He there shows that Kṛṣṇa is already a divinity and worshipped as such in the days of Mahābhāṣya, which was composed some two centuries B. C. That book refers to the killing of Kāṃsa by Kṛṣṇa and thus the story of the childhood of Kṛṣṇa is older than Christian Nativity. I make the following quotation from that article:

"As evidence for the early date of the identification of Krishna and Visnu, it is useless to quote the Epic as long as doubts of a serious character exist as to its date. But we have the evidence of Patanjali, which though not conclusive, deserves fuller consideration than it has received from Mr. Kennedy. In discussing Panini, iv. 2. 98, Patanjali distinctly says that Vasudeva is a Samjna of the Bhagvant, and Weber himself admits that, on the analogy of Sivabhagavata, while the passage does not prove that Krishna is identical with Vjanu, it does show that he was already far more than a Ksatriya and was a higher divine creature. But, later on, Weber with his usual candour, makes admission. In discussing

the evidence afforded by the Mahabhasya for the early existence of the drama he notices the fact that the two legends mentioned as the subjects of representation are the Balibandha and the Kamsavadha, and he points out that, as the first of these subjects is undoubtedly taken from the legend of Visnu, it is probably necessary to assume that already Visnu and Krisna stood in a close relationship. There seems indeed, no ground whatever to deny that they were already identified and that this was the case is indicated by the fact that the Mahabhasya tells us that in the Kamsavadha the Granthikas divided themselves into two parties, the one followers of Kansa, the other followers of Krisna, and that the former were Kalamukhah and the latter Raktamukhah. Weber was naturally puzzled to find that Krisna's friends were red in colour, but the whole thing explains itself when we regard the contest as one of the many old nature rituals where two parties join in mimic strife, the one striving to rescue, the other to capture the sun. Such a ritual, in all probability, was the source of the drama in Greece, and traces of it are to be found in England. The supporters of Krisna, as identified with the sun, Visnu, naturally wear the red colour of the luminary as an act of sympathetic magic."

While the controversy about the origin of the Bhakti religion is in this state, it is not possible to come to any definite conclusion, one way or the other. But there are some facts which emerge out of this controversy, which appear to be beyond the scope of legitimate doubt, and which may be taken as well proved. One of them is that there were several persons bearing the name of Kṛṣṇa in Indian tradition, and their histories have become coalesced into one by a process well known to students of history. This Kṛṣṇa of the Mahābhārata war, the statesman and philosopher, seems to be a different person from the child of Yaśodā, the Darling of Gokula. It is not only the European scholars who have come to this conclusion, but Śrī Madhvāchārya, the founder of the Dvaita School of Vedānta, has come to a somewhat similar conclusion. In his commentary on the Chhândogya Upaniṣad, he states that there were two Kṛṣṇas, both curiously having a mother called Devakī. I quote the following from his commentary (See Sacred Books of the Hindus, Chhândogya Upaniṣad, page 242).

"There was an Avatāra of the Lord called Mahidāsa, just as an Avatāra was called Kṛṣṇa. Now curiously enough, both these names occur in this Upaniṣad. Mahidāsa in this chapter, and Kṛṣṇa Devakī-putra in the next chapter. These, however, do not refer to the Avatāras, but to different persons."

"The Mahidāsa of this chapter is a different person and so also is the Kṛṣṇa of the next chapter. The Mahidāsa here is an Aitareya, and Kṛṣṇa Devakīputra is not the Avatāra Śrī Kṛṣṇa. Similarly, the Kapila mentioned in this Upaniṣad is different from the Avatāra of that name."

"Says an objector: But this is rather arbitrary. Had there been merely similarity of names, you might have said they were different persons, from the Avatāra of those names. But the similarity extends further than this, Mahidāsa, the Avatāra, was the son Itara, and so the Mahidāsa here is also called the son of Itara, for Aitareya means he whose mother is Itara. Similarly, the Avatāra Kṛṣṇa was the son of Devakī, and the Kṛṣṇa of the Upaniṣad here is also called the son of Devakī. Similarly, Kapila, the Avatāra had a disciple called Asuri, and the Kapila of the Upaniṣad has also a disciple called Asuri. These coincidences are, to say the least, very curious." To this the commentator replies :

"These three persons had performed high and strict penance in ancient times, and had obtained a boon from Brahmā, the Paramesthin, to this effect, that two of them should get the names of the Avatāras, in their next lives, and the names of their mothers should also be the same as the names of the mothers of Viṣṇu. While Kapila asked the boon that his disciples and disciples of his disciples should have the same names as the disciples, etc., of the Avatāra Kapila. They further asked that their names should be immortalised by being recorded in the Vedas. Brahma, the Grand Sire of all creatures, granted this boon to them. Therefore, it is that these three well-known Risis bear not only the names of divine incarnations, but the names of their mothers and disciples, etc., are also similar." In the Kalika Purana also we find the same account of this curious coincidence:

"Mahidasa, the son of Itara, mentioned in the Bhavricha Upanisad, is the Lord Viṣṇu Himself directly: while there was another Mahidasa, son of Itara, who was a sage. Similarly, Kṛṣṇa called Vasudeva is the Supreme Spirit Himself; while there was another person called Kṛṣṇa Devaki-putra mentioned in the Upanisad. Kapila called Vasudeva is the Lord Narayan Himself, while Kapila is the name of a sage also, and whose pupils were also called Asuri, etc. The sage Mahidasa lived for 116 years by learning the secret doctrine taught in the Upanisad; the sage Kṛṣṇa Devaki-putra was the disciple of Ghora Angiras, the sage Kapila was the founder of the perverse doctrine (atheistic Sankhya). These three obtained boon from Brahmā the Paramesthin, and thus came to possess names similar to those of the Avatāras, and became famous by realising their desires and enjoyed happiness." Thus in the Kalika.

It is clear, therefore, that the worship of the child Kṛṣṇa is a new phase, grafted on the ancient Kṛṣṇa cult and brought from outside: either from the Christians of the North-Western Provinces (Bactria) or from the Nestorian monks who had settled in the Western coast of India, and near whose monastery of St. Thome, Rāmānuj was born, and received his education.

The worship of the infant Kṛṣṇa is considered pre-eminently the worship of the Supreme Lord. All other Avatāras are considered as *partial*, while the child Kṛṣṇa, sucking at the breast of mother Yaśodā is considered to be the perfect Avatāra. Thus Baladeva at page 387 says:

"It is only in the Lord Kṛṣṇa, the infant sucking at the breast of mother Yaśoda, that we find the perfect manifestation of all the six attributes which constitute the Godhead, such for example, supreme love for all humanity or an object of supreme love for all humanity, the maker of the supremely sweet heavenly music which turns the head of even the wisest Gods like Brahma and the rest, the possessor of the most ravishing and beautiful form which enchants all who behold it, and immeasurable compassion and the rest."

But the traces of Christian influence are not so marked in the system of Rāmānuja as in that of Madhva. Madhva boldly arrogates to himself the character of being the incarnation of Prāṇa (the Christ principle of Christianity). Prāṇa is the first begotten of God (Prathamah Prāṇa), he is the son of God (Hareh sutah), he is the great Mediator and Saviour of all Jīvas. No one has seen the father, but through the son no one sees Hari but through Prāṇa.

All these cannot be explained by the theory of chance and coincidences. To all fair-minded persons the conclusion would be clear, that the teachings of Christ had some influence, though very faint, at least, on the development of Madhva system; and its branch the Chaitanyaism which latter was certainly acted upon by Islam.

Nor need this conclusion jar upon the religious susceptibilities of our countrymen. For truth is no respecter of persons, and if the search for truth leads one to unsought for conclusions, it should be welcomed rather than hated. In the realm of truth, there should be no patriotic bias or caste prejudice. Nations of the world have borrowed many truths from India, and India need not be ashamed, if she in her turn has borrowed some truths from other nations. There is no discredit in borrowing;—the vital questions is what has India done with such borrowing? A spiritual nation alone can borrow spiritual truths: nations in a state of barbaric ignorance are incapable of borrowing or assimilating such truths. It is, therefore, the glory of India that she has so assimilated the Christian truths that they have entered into the very fabric of her constitution, and moulded the character of her saints. The Christ said, "If thine eye offends thee, pluck it out," and the Indian saint Vilvamangala carries this teaching into practice, by voluntarily making himself blind, because he had looked with amorous gaze on a woman. The Christ said, "If thou art smitten on thy right cheek, turn thy left cheek." And a Hindu saint actually does so. The teachings of the Christ, therefore, have produced their best fruits in India; and the Indians are, therefore, often better Christians, than many a so-called Christian of the West. The following five points quoted by Dr. Grierson brings out this fact most clearly:

(i) A saint teaches that initiation means "born again." The person who is taught misunderstands him and takes the words literally.

(ii) Another saint, when smitten on one cheek, turns the other.

(iii) Another looks after a woman to lust after her, considers that his eye offends him, and blinds himself.

(iv) Another considers that his right hand offends him, so he cuts it off and casts it from him.

(v) The incarnate God is referred to as having on one occasion washed the feet of His servants. This is specially interesting, for the Mahabharat legend is that He washed the feet of Brahmanas. The author distorts the old legend by changing Brahmanas to saints or disciples.

I have set forth above the views of Dr. Grierson and Mr. Kennedy in some detail, but the arguments adduced by these learned persons have been dealt with by the translator of the *Bhaktiratnāvalī* in this series, and I need not repeat his arguments here, in order to show that the Bhakti doctrine was not borrowed from Christianity, but was as old as the worship of the Vāsudeva in India. Bhakti, no doubt, is an indigenous



growth of India, and has been placed above all doubts by the discovery of the inscription on the flagstaff of Garuda dedicated to Vāsudeva, which bears the date of the second century before Christ. But it may fairly be urged, on behalf of the opposite view, that the worship of the Child-God is something new in Hinduism, and requires to be explained. It is this Infant, that is considered as the fullest Avatāra : and unless passages are produced from the ancient Indian literature to show the worship of the *child* Kṛṣṇa, the position of Mr. Kennedy appears for the present unanswered. No doubt, Mr. Keith in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for January, 1908, page 169, has tried to meet the argument of Mr. Kennedy but the rejoinder of Mr. Kennedy in the April issue of the *Journal* is worth perusing.

The child worship or the worship of God as Gopāla is not universal throughout India, and is confined to certain parts of it only, and there is nothing impossible in the view advocated by Mr. Kennedy, that this form of Bhakti called Ruchi Bhakti is not the ancient Indian Bhakti taught in the Gītā and Upaniṣads, but is a later accretion.

Nor is this without analogy in modern Hinduism. No one can doubt for a moment that the word Nārāyaṇa is a very ancient term for God in Sanskrit literature and the worship of Nārāyaṇa is certainly anterior to the coming of Islam in India. But I doubt whether there is any intelligent Hindu scholar who would deny that the worship of Satya Nārāyaṇa and the Kathā or legend related regarding Him are not influenced by Mahomedanism : and that the whole of the Satya Nārāyaṇa's worship is not taken or adapted from Islam. Similarly, the word "Brahman" is very old in Hindu literature, but no one doubts for a moment that the modern form of the worship of Brahman, as seen in the sect of Keshab Chandra Sen, is taken from the Christian liturgy with appropriate modifications. No wonder, therefore, that the ancient Aryan worship of Vāsudeva was modified into the modern Gopāla worship by contact with the early Christians.

Let me not be, however, misunderstood on this point. I do not hold that it has been established conclusively that Gopāla worship has been borrowed from Christianity, but I maintain that the reasons in favour of such borrowing are stronger than those against it. This conclusion does not touch the larger issue as to the origin of Bhakti—for Bhakti or loving devotion is not a thing that can be borrowed by one nation from another. Bhakti is as much natural to man as Jñāna or Karma. They are God-given qualities. But though Bhakti is natural to man, its particular aspect as Gopāla worship may well have been taken from some outside source. In fact, the statues of Yaśodā holding Kṛṣṇa in her lap resemble so very much with the Madonna holding the Infant Jesus that one is struck with the strange coincidence. It is the glory of Hinduism that it has assimilated

---

the religions of various people and made them its own; and it need not be a matter for wonder if Hinduism has been influenced by the Avatâra of Bethlehem.

S. C. B. .



## APPENDIX II.

---

The teachings given by Śrī Chaitanya have been summarised in the small pamphlet called *Prameya-Ratnāvalī* by Baladeva Vidyābhūṣaṇa. This school admits five principles or Tattavas, namely, (i) Īśvara or God (ii) Jiva or Soul, (iii) Prakṛti or Matter, (iv) Kāla or Time, and (v) Karma or Action.

It teaches also nine Prameyas or propositions established by proper proofs. They are :

- (i) God is the highest substance.
- (ii) He is known through all the Revelations.
- (iii) The world is real.
- (iv) The differences are real.
- (v) The souls are real.
- (vi) There are various grades of souls.
- (vii) Release is the attainment of God.
- (viii) Its cause is the worship of God.
- (ix) Proofs are three,—perception, inference and authority.

We give a translation of this short treatise here, hoping that it will give a better idea of the doctrines of this school than any summary.

---

### PRAMEYA-RATNĀVALĪ By BALADEVA VIDYĀBHŪṢAṆA

#### INTRODUCTORY

---

Śrī Baladeva Vidyābhūṣaṇa, after composing his commentary on *Brahma Sūtras*, under the direct inspiration of the lord Govinda, styled it *Govinda Bhāṣya*. Thereupon he composed this short treatise, and in order to its successful termination, he recites the following verse of auspiciousness :

#### PARA I.

जयति श्रीगोविन्दो गोपीनाथः स मदनगोपालः ।

वक्ष्यामि यस्य कृपया प्रमेयरत्नावली सूक्ष्मा ॥

. Let Śrī Govinda, the Lord of Gopīs, the Protector of the universe, the Giver of joy to His devotees, be ever victorious. Through his grace I shall describe briefly the various categories or Prameyas.—1.

*Note :* This verse has a double meaning, Govinda, Gopīnātha, and Madanagopāla are three deities whose temples are famous in Brndāvana. The next verse also is a prayer to the same effect.

## PARA II

भक्त्याभासेनापि तोषं दधाने । धर्माध्यक्षे विश्वनिस्तारि नास्मि ॥

नित्यानन्दाद्वैतचेतन्यरूपे । तत्त्वे तस्मिन् नित्यमास्तां रतिर्नः ॥२॥

2. Let our hearts be ever inclined towards that (Triune) Lord, whose essential form is intelligence (Chaitanya), eternal bliss (Nityānanda) and peerlessness (Advaita). He is satisfied with the Jīvas, if they show the slightest semblance of love towards Him. He is the Lord and Establisher of Justice, and the mere utterance of His name saves all souls in this universe.—2.

*Note :* This verse also has a double meaning. It recites the three great Avatāras of the Kali Age, who were contemporaries, namely, **Chaitanya**, the Avatāra of Kṛṣṇa, **Nityananda**, the incarnation of Sankarṣaṇa, and **Advaita**, the Avatāra of Śiva. In the next verse the author salutes the original founder of this sect, namely, **Anandatīrtha**, better known as **Madhvacharya**.

## PARA III.

आनन्दतीर्थनामा सुखमयधामा यतिर्जीयात् ।

संसारार्णवतरणिं यमिह जनाः कीर्तयन्ति बुधाः ॥ ३ ॥

3. Let that ascetic be ever victorious, whose name is Ānandatīrtha, who is the abode of joy, who is the ship to cross the ocean of transmigratory existence, and whom the wise ever praise in this world.—3.

*Note :* In the next verse the author shows the necessity of remembering the succession of teachers, through whom the particular doctrine comes into the world.

## PARA IV.

भवति विचिन्त्या विदुषा निरवकरा गुरुपरम्परा नित्यम् ।

एकान्तित्वं सिध्यति ययोदयति येन हरितोषः ॥ ४ ॥

4. The free-from-all-faults should constantly meditate on the faultless succession of teachers, because by such meditation is obtained the one-pointedness of devotion, and there arises the grace of the Lord Hari on the man.—4.

*Note :* About this are the following verses of Padma Purāṇa.

## PARA V.

यदुक्तं पद्मपुराणे ।

सम्प्रदायविहीना ये मन्त्रास्ते विफला मताः ।

अतः कलौ भविष्यन्ति चत्वारः सम्प्रदायिनः ॥

श्रीब्रह्मरुद्रसनका वैष्णवाः क्षितिपावनाः ।

चत्वारस्ते कलौ भाव्या ह्युत्कले पुरुषोत्तमात् ॥५॥

As is said in the Padma Purāṇa :

5. The Mantras which are without any Sampradāya (which do not belong to any schools), are considered fruitless. Hence in the Kali Age there will arise four founders of schools, namely, Śrī, Brahma, Rudra

and Sanaka. All these are Vaiṣṇavas, sanctifying the earth, and will arise from the Supreme Person in Utkala, in the Kali Age.—5.

*Note :* These were the four founders of the four schools of Vaiṣṇavism. The Viṣṇu Mantras, found in the works of any of these four, have the power of conferring salvation : but not so, if found anywhere else. The ancient law is that every pupil must have Guru, who belongs in direct apostolic succession, to any of these four. Therefore, a Viṣṇu Mantra, not belonging to any Sampradāya cannot produce any effect, though recited for a long time. The next verse names the four human representatives, through whom the above-mentioned four divinities established their sects.

## PARA VI.

रामानुजं श्रीः स्वीचक्रे मध्वाचार्यं चतुर्मुखः ।

श्रीविष्णुस्वामिनं रुद्रो निम्बादित्यं चतुः सनः ॥ ६ ॥

6. Śrī inspired (made her own) Rāmānuja, the four-faced Brahmā inspired Madhvāchārya, Rudra inspired Viṣṇu Swāmī, and the four Kumāras, Sanaka and the rest, inspired Nimbāditya.—6.

## PARA VII.

तत्र स्वगुरुपरम्परा यथा ।

The author next mentions the line of his own Gurus in the following verses :

श्रीकृष्णब्रह्मदेवर्षिबादरायणसंज्ञकान् ।

श्रीमध्वश्रीपद्मनाभश्रीमन्नृहरिमाधवान् ॥

अक्षोभ्यजयतीर्थश्रीज्ञानसिन्धुदयानिधीन् ।

श्रीविद्यानिधिराजेन्द्रजयधर्मान् क्रमाद्वयम् ॥

पुण्योत्तमब्रह्मण्यव्यासतीर्थोश्च सस्तुमः ।

ततो लक्ष्मीपतिं श्रीमन्माधवेन्द्रञ्च भक्तितः ॥

तच्चक्षिष्यान् श्रीश्वराद्वैतनित्यानन्दान् जगद्गुरून् ।

देवमीश्वरशिष्यं श्रीचैतन्यञ्च भजामहे ।

श्रीकृष्णप्रेमदानेन येन निस्तारितं जगत् ॥ ७ ॥ इति ॥

7. The first Guru is Lord Śrī Kṛṣṇa, whose disciple was Brahmā, whose disciple was the divine sage Nārada, and whose disciple was Bādarāyaṇa, whose disciple was

Madhva, whose disciple was Padmanābha, whose disciple was Nṛhari, whose disciple was Mādhava, whose disciple was Akṣobhya, whose disciple was Jayatīrtha, whose disciple was Jñānasindhu, whose disciple was Dayānidhi, whose disciple was Vidyānidhi, whose disciple was Rājendra, whose disciple was Jayadharmā, whose disciple was Puruṣottama, whose disciple was Brahmanya, whose disciple was Vyāsatīrtha. We pray to these all in succession. The disciple of Vyāsatīrtha was Lakṣmīpati, whose disciple was Mādhavendra, who had three disciples; namely, Īśvarāchārya, Advaitāchārya and Nityānanda, all these are world-teachers. We bow to all these. We bow also, with adoration, to Lord Chaitanya, the refulgent, who was the disciple of Īśvarāchārya, and who saved the world, by showering on it the love of Lord Kṛṣṇa.—7.

*Note :* Though there is great gap of thousands of years between Bādarāyaṇa and Madhva, yet the latter is said to be the disciple of the former. The tradition says that once Madhvāchārya and Śaṅkarāchārya were disputing as to the truth of the various doctrines, surrounded by thousands of learned men, at the Maṇikarṇikā Ghat, Benares. So absorbed were they in their disputations that they went on arguing, for days and nights together, without taking food and rest. Then all saw in heaven Vyāsa himself as blue as the sky, proclaiming that Madhva's exposition was in accordance with his doctrine and not that of Śaṅkara.

Chaitanya is thus the disciple of Īśvarāchārya who was the disciple of Mādhavendra. This leaves no doubt that the Chaitanya Sampradāya of Bengal is a lineal descendant of the famous school of Madhva.

#### PARA VIII.

अथ प्रमेयाण्युद्दिश्यन्ते ।

श्री मध्वः प्राह विष्णुं परतममखिलाम्नायवेद्यञ्च विश्वं  
सत्यं भेदञ्च जीवान् हरिचरणजुषस्तारतम्यञ्च तेषाम् ॥  
मोक्षं विष्ण्वंघ्रिलाभं तदमलभजनं तस्य हेतुं प्रमाणम्  
प्रत्यक्षादित्रयञ्चेत्युपदिशति हरिः ॥ ८ ॥

8. Now are described the categories. Śrī Madhva has said that Lord Viṣṇu is the highest substance, and is to be known through all the revelations, that the universe is

real and so also are real the differences that exist therein ; that the Jîvas are all servants of the Lord and are real, and so also are real the differences that exist between them. That salvation (Mokṣa) consists in obtaining the feet of Viṣṇu ; that the cause of getting this release is worshipping Him with purity of heart, without desiring fruit, and that the proofs are three—perception, inference and sacred testimony. Thus teaches Hari, Lord Kṛṣṇa Chaitanya.—8.

*Notes :* The above verse recites the well-known nine categories or truths of this sect, They may be thus shown :

- (i) God is the highest substance.
- (ii) He is known through the Revelations.
- (iii) The world is real.
- (iv) The differences are real.
- (v) The souls are real.
- (vi) There are various grades of souls.
- (vii) Release is the attainment of God.
- (viii) Its cause is the worship of God.
- (ix) Proofs are three,—perception, inference and authority.

#### FIRST PRAMEYA

##### PARA IX.

#### *The Supremacy of Viṣṇu.*

तत्र श्रीविष्णोः परमत्वम् । यथाश्रीगोपालोपनिषदि ।

Thus in the Gopāla Purva Tâpani Upaniṣad we have the following as to the supremacy of Viṣṇu :

तस्मात् कृष्ण एव परोदेवस्तं ध्यायेत् तं रसेत् तं भजेत् तं यजेत् ।

इति ।

Therefore, Kṛṣṇa is indeed the highest God ; let one meditate upon Him, let one recite His name constantly, let one serve Him constantly and adore Him always.

श्वेताश्वतरोपनिषदि च :

Similarly, in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad (I, II) we have the following :

ज्ञात्वा देवं सर्वपाशापहानिःक्षीणैः क्लेशैर्जन्ममृत्युप्रहाणिः । तस्याऽभिध्यानात्तृतीयं देहभेदे विश्वैश्वर्यं केवल आसकामः ॥ इति ॥



When that God is known, all fetters fall off, sufferings are destroyed and births and deaths cease. From meditating on Him there arises, on the dissolution of the (Lînga) body, the third state, that of universal lordship and isolation from (all trace of matter) and he becomes fully satisfied.

*Note :* The third state arises when the Moon-world and the Brahmâ-world are transcended, and the man becomes free from his subtle body and reaches the world of Viṣṇu.

In the next verse of the same Upaniṣad it is said :

एतज्ज्ञेयं नित्यमेवात्मसंस्थं नातःपरं वेदितव्यं हि किञ्चित् ॥ इति च ॥

This which rests eternally within the self should be known and beyond this not anything has to be known.

श्रीगीतासु च ।

So also in the Gîtâ (VII., 7) we have the following :

मत्तः परतरं नान्यत्किञ्चिदस्ति धनंजय ।

( मयि सर्वमिदं प्रोतं सूत्रे मणिगणा इव ) इति ॥

There is naught whatsoever higher than I, O Dhanañjaya. All this is threaded on Me, as rows of pearls on a string.—9.

PARA X.

हेतुत्वाद् विभुचैतन्यानन्दत्वादिगुणाश्रयात् ।

नित्यलक्ष्म्यादिगुणैश्च कृष्णः परतमो मतः ॥ १० ॥

10. Since He is the primordial cause, since He is the abode of all attributes like all-pervadingness, intelligence, bliss, and the rest ; and since He possesses eternally energies like Lakṣmî and the rest, therefore, Kṛṣṇa is considered the Highest God.—10.

PARA XI.

तत्र सर्वहेतुत्वं, यथाहुः श्वेताश्वतराः ।

On this subject of His being the Universal cause, the Svetāśvataras (V., 4-5) say :

(सर्वा दिश ऊर्ध्वमधश्च तिर्यक् प्रकाशयन् भ्राजते यद्वनड्वान् )  
 एवं स देवो भगवान् वरेण्यो योनिस्वभावानधितिष्ठत्येकः ॥ ४ ॥ यच्च स्वभावं  
 पचति विश्वयोनिः पाच्यांश्च सर्वान् परिणामयेद्यः । (सर्वमेतद्विश्वमधिति-  
 ष्टत्येको गुणांश्च सर्वान् विनियोजयेद्यः) ॥ ५ ॥

As the car of the sun shines, lighting up all quarters above, below, and across, thus does that God, who is one (Highest of all) and hence adorable, rule over all that has the nature of being the cause (of the world, such as Pradhāna, Mahat and the rest).

He being one, rules over all and everything so that the universal germ (Prakṛti) ripens its nature (becomes modified into Mahat, etc.), diversifies all natures that can be ripened, and determines all qualities.

विभुचैतन्यानन्दत्वं, यथा काठके ।

As regards His all-pervadingness, intelligence and bliss, in the Kāṭha Upaniṣad (II., 21) we have the following :

अशरीरं शरीरेष्वनवस्थेष्ववस्थितम् ।

महान्तं विभुमात्मानं मत्वा धीरो न शोचति ॥ इति ॥

(The wise who knows the Self, as bodiless within the bodies, as unchanging among changing things), as great and OMNIPRESENT, does never grieve.

*Note :* The above verse, however, mentions the omnipresence of God, it does not mention His intelligence and blissful nature. The word Ātman, however, is used in the above verse, and etymologically it means the goal of the wise. Since the wise reach the intelligent and blissful God, hence those attributes also are included in this verse. This is shown in the next verse.

द्विजादिसुररूपत्वम त्वशब्देन बोध्यते ।

अनेन मुक्तगम्यत्वं व्युत्पत्तेरिति तद्विदः ॥

By the word ĀTMAN is understood the intelligence and blissfulness of God, because the wise say that Ātman is derived from Ata, 'to

obtain' ; and it means He who is obtained by the Muktas (and it is well-known that the Muktas reach bliss and intelligence).

*Note* : There is an express text also declaring God to be intelligence and bliss.

वाजसनेयिनश्चाहुः ।

In the Bṛhadaranyaka Upaniṣad (III. 9. 28) the Vājasaneyins read the following :

विज्ञानमानन्दं ब्रह्म रातिर्दातुः परायणं तिष्ठमानस्य तद्विद इति ॥ २८ ॥

Brahman, who is knowledge and bliss, He is the principal, both to him who gives gifts, and also to him who stands firm, and knows.

श्रीगोपालोपनिषदि च ।

So also in the Gopāla Pūrva Tāpani Upaniṣad we find God described as intelligence and bliss in express terms :

तमेकं गोविन्दं सच्चिदानन्दविग्रहम् । इति ।

That one Govinda whose form is existence, knowledge and bliss.

*Note* : But how can then a being, who is pure intelligence and bliss, have a form ? This question is answered in the next verse.

#### PARA XII.

मूर्त्तत्वं प्रतिपत्तव्यं चित्सुखस्यैव रागवत् ।

विज्ञानघनशब्दादि कीर्त्तनाच् चापि तस्य तत् ।

देहदेहिभिदा नास्तीत्येतेनैवोपदर्शितम् ॥

12. The Lord, though intelligence and bliss, must be supposed to have a form also ; just as music has a form perceptible only to the trained ears of a musician. Moreover, the word 'Ghana,' as Vijñānaghana, Ānandaghana, is applied to the Lord, which also shows that He has a body. But there is this difference between Him and other embodied beings, that in His case, His very body is spirit, and there is no distinction of the body and the embodied with regard to Him.

*Note :* In the case of the Lord, intelligence is not only the attribute of the Lord but it constitutes His very body and hence He is called Vijñānaghana, intelligence solidified, intelligence incarnate, Ānandaghana, bliss solidified. But how can an entity which has a body be all-pervading ? This is answered in the next paragraph. In the printed Bengali edition of the Prameya Ratnāvalī, the quotation is said to be from the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad. It is, however, a mistake ; the passage occurs in the Svetāśvatara Upaniṣad.

## PARA XII.

मूर्तस्यैव विभुत्वं यथा मुण्डके ।

In the Śvetāśvatara (III. 9) we have the following statement showing that the all-pervadingness is an attribute of the form of God.

वृक्ष इव स्तब्धो दिवि तिष्ठत्येकस्तेनेदं पूर्णं पुरुषेण सर्वम् ॥

That one exists in heaven and stands there upright as a tree ; by that Person all this is pervaded.

*Note :* That one Lord Hari exists in heaven, bowed to by all but bending to none, like a straight tree that knows no bowing. Here the word “person” coupled in with the expression “dwelling in heaven” shows that the Lord has a form. The next sentence “by this all is pervaded” shows that the Lord, though having a form, is still all-pervading.

द्युस्थोऽपि निखिलव्यापीत्याख्यानान् मूर्तिमान् विभुः ।

युगपद् ध्यातृवृन्देषु साक्षात्काराच्च च तादृशः ॥

Though dwelling in heaven, the expression “He pervades all” shows that the Lord is both all-pervading, as well as having a form, simultaneously. Because of this it is possible for Him to appear simultaneously to all, who meditate on Him, in whatever region of the universe they may be, and who all see Him in one and the same form.

*Note :* The next quotation from the Bhāgavata Purāṇa also indicates that the very embodied form of Śrī Kṛṣṇa is all-pervading, though it appeared like an ordinary human form to His mother and others.

## PARA XIV.

श्री दशमे च ।

In the tenth Skandha of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa we have the following :

न चान्तर्न बहिर्यस्य न पूर्वं नापि चापरम् ।

पूर्वापरं बहिश्चान्तर्जगतो यो जगच्च यः ॥

तं मत्वात्मजमव्यक्तं मर्त्यलिङ्गमधोक्षजम् ।

गोपिकोलूखले दाम्ना बबन्ध प्राकृतं यथा ॥ इति ॥

He who has neither inside nor outside, neither front nor back, but who is simultaneously both inside and outside of the world, in its front and in its back, yea, who is the world itself ; Him considering as her son, as a mortal child, Him the unchangeable and Immutable, the cowherdess (Yasodā) bound by a cord, as if He was an ordinary infant.

श्री गीतासु च ॥

In the Gītā also (IX, verses 4 & 5) we have the following :

मया ततमिदं सर्वं जगदव्यक्तमूर्तिना ।  
 मत्स्थानि सर्वभूतानि न चाहं तेष्ववस्थितः ॥  
 न च मत्स्थानि भूतानि पश्य मे योगमैश्वरम् ।  
 भूतभृन्न च भूतस्थो ममात्मा भूतभावनः ॥

By Me all this world is pervaded in My unmanifested aspect, all beings have root in Me, I am not rooted in them.

Nor have beings their root in Me, behold, My sovereign Yoga. The support of beings, yet not rooted in beings, My Self their efficient cause.

The word Yoga in the above verse means the energy (Śakti) of the Lord, as is explained in the following :

अनन्त्या शक्तिरस्तीशे योगशब्देन योच्यते ।  
 विरोधभञ्जिका सा स्यादिति तत्त्वविदां मतम् ॥

There is an infinite energy (Śakti) in the Lord, to which the term Yoga is applied and in the opinion of the knowers of truth, "Yoga" means here this power of the Lord which reconciles all contradictions, and makes impossibles possible.

*Note:* With My subjective form dwelling in the inmost recesses of all, I pervade this universe ; all beings have root in Me, because I support them all. I am not rooted in them, because they do not support me. Nor do I support these beings, as the water is supported in a jar ; but they are supported by Me, as the moon in the sky, by the mere force of My will. And hence I say nor have these beings root in Me. This is possible through my sovereign Yoga, through My limitless energy or Śakti.

The word Yoga here is derived from 'Yujyate durgatesu Kāryesu anena,' That by which one can perform the most impossible feats.

## PARA XV.

*Note :* In para 10 it was said that Sri Kṛṣṇa is the highest, because He possesses intelligence, bliss and the rest. The author now explains what is meant by the phrase "and the rest" (Ādi) in Ānandatvādi. It includes Omniscience, Blissfulness, Masterfulness, Friendliness, Teachership, Saviourhood, and Beauty.

आदिना सर्वज्ञत्वम् । यथा मुण्डकं ॥

By the phrase "and the rest" is meant omniscience, as we find in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (I., 1. 9) :

यः सर्वज्ञः सर्ववित् । इति ।

He who is all-knowing and all-acquiring.

The phrase "and the rest" also means the blissfulness as we find in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad (II., 4. 1).

आनन्दित्वं च तैत्तिरीये ।

It also includes blissfulness, as in the Taittirīya Upaniṣad :

आनन्दं ब्रह्मणो विद्वान् न बिभेति कुतश्चन ॥ इति ॥

Knowing the bliss of Brahman, he is never afraid.

प्रभुत्वमुहूत्वा ज्ञानदत्वमोचकत्वानि च, श्वेताश्वतर श्रुतौ ॥

It also includes masterhood, friendliness, teachership and saviourhood, as we find in the Śvetāśvatara texts (III., 17, IV., 18 and VI., 16).

सर्वस्य प्रभुमीशानं सर्वस्य शरणं सुहृत् ॥ इति ॥

The Master of all, the Ruler of all, the refuge (of all), and the friend (of all).—(Śvet., III., 17).

प्रज्ञा च तस्मात् प्रसृता पुराणी ॥ इति ॥

(Thus worshipped by the Jīvas) there flows forth from Him the ancient primordial wisdom (which is the essential attribute of Jīvas, but which is beclouded so long as the Jīvas do not turn their face towards the Lord).—(Śvet., IV., 18).

संसारबन्धस्थितिमोक्षहेतुः ॥ इति च ॥

He is the cause of the bondage; the existence and the liberation of the world.

माधुर्यञ्च श्रीगोपालोपनिषदि ।

This phrase "and the rest" includes also sweetness and beautifulness, as we find in the Gopāla Upaniṣad :

सत् पुराडरीकनयनं मेघाभं वैद्युताम्बरम् ।

द्विभुजं मौनमुद्राढ्यं वनमालिनमीश्वरम् ॥ इति ॥

("Meditate on) the Lord as having eyes like full-blown white lotus, a body of the (blue) colour of clouds, garments of lightning, with two arms, and adorned with the symbol of silence, and having a garland round his neck, which is made up of all the spheres of the heavenly orbs."

—(Gopāla Pūrvā Tāpani, p. 185 of the Anandāśrama series).

#### PARA XVI.

*Note:* In the preceding sections it has been said that the Lord has the attributes of all-pervadingness, intelligence, bliss, omniscience, blissfulness, masterfulness, friendliness, teachership, saviourhood and beautifulness. Now arises the question: Are these attributes of the Lord Hari separate from him or not? They cannot be separate from him for the Śruti says (Kaṭha Up., IV., 14) "He who sees the quality of the Lord as separate from the Lord runs down quickly to darkness." Nor can they be non-separate from the Lord, because the Lord is said to be Nirguṇa or without attribute. This point is raised and answered in the following verse:

न भिन्ना धर्मिणो धर्मा भेदभानं विशेषतः ॥

यस्मात् कालः सर्वदास्तीत्यादिधीर्विदुषामपि ॥

The attributes are not separate from the substance possessing these attributes. Though there is no difference between the quality and the thing qualified, yet owing to a peculiar condition (Viśeṣa) there is an appearance of difference. Just as Time, though one, is spoken of as having many parts, and even the wise use phrases like "the Time always exists."

*Note:* The discussion on this point in the Vedānta Sūtra (III., 2. 31) makes this clear.

The two (the Lord and His attributes) are spoken of separately—though they are essentially one—just as the water and its waves are spoken of separately as two, though it is all one water. The difference arises from this Viśeṣa. Therefore, the Lord who is ever joy and bliss, is said to be joyful and blissful and to have a body of all delight. All these qualities of the Lord are eternal, and consequently that body of the Lord is also eternal. Though there is no distinction (Viśeṣa strictly so called) here between the quality and the qualified, yet for conventional purposes such a (Viśeṣa) distinction is recognised and spoken of as such. If this conventional (Viśeṣa) distinction be not admitted, then the sentences like the following would also become absurd (for they are really tautologies when logically analysed): "The being exists," "the time always exists," "the space is everywhere." All these sentences are logical tautologies, but they are of constant use and good as conventions. Nor can it be said that such a usage is erroneous and is based upon delusion. For the phrase "the Be-ness exists" conveys as true an information as the sentence "the jar exists." For there is no subsequent experience which sublates this knowledge. Nor is the sentence "the Be-ness exists,"

is a superimposition or a figurative speech like "Devadatta is a lion." For we can never say of Be-ness that it does not exist, as we can say of "Devadatta" that he is not a lion. Nor can it be said that such a usage is a natural one, though there is no concrete content of any substance in these sentences like "the Be-ness exists." The very fact that such usage is natural shows that in these sentences also there is a Viśeṣa. The existence of such Viśeṣa is suggested by the illustration of the water following down a hill. The man who makes a distinction between the Lord and His attributes goes down to darkness, like the water that falls on a mountain top. In that verse there is a prohibition of all difference between the Lord and His attributes which are described there. In the absence of such conventional difference, there cannot be the possibility of the relationship of quality and qualified, merely because there are many qualities. The category called Viśeṣa (the specific attribute) therefore exists, even here, though it is not here separate from the substance, but still has a particular function of its own. Nor is it open to the objection of *regressus in infinitum* that a Viśeṣa must have a Viśeṣa of its own, and so on. For we have said above, that the Viśeṣa here though not separable from the substance (*i.e.*, the Lord) has a function of its own with regard to that substance. Therefore, the existence of Viśeṣa is proved here also, as it is an invariable concomitant of the substance to which it appertains.

PARA XVII.

एवमुक्तं नारदपञ्चरात्रे ।

निर्दोषपूर्णागुणविग्रह आत्मतन्त्रो-

निश्चेतनात्मक-शरीरगुणैश्चहीनः ।

आनन्दमात्रकरपादमुखोदरादिः

सर्वत्र च स्वगतभेदविवर्जितात्मा ॥ इति ॥

Thus it is said in the Nārada Pañcharātra :

The Lord is an entity having perfect and faultless qualities. He is the Ātman, the Self and free from all the attributes of the body consisting of insentient matter. He too has a body, hands, face, stomach, etc., but all of pure bliss (not of matter). The Ātman is everywhere and always devoid of internal differences also. .

PARA XVIII.

अथ नित्य लक्ष्मीकृत्वम् । यथा विष्णुपुराणे ।

नित्यैव सा जगन्माता विष्णोः श्रीरनपायिनी ।

यथा सर्वगतो विष्णुस्तथैवेयं विजोत्तम ॥



Now is shown the eternal union of the Lord with Lakṣmī (See verse 10). In Viṣṇu Purāṇa (I., 8. 15) it is thus said :

That mother of the world, Śrī, is the eternal energy of Viṣṇu and is indissolubly united with the Lord. As Viṣṇu is all-pervading, so is she also, O ! best of the twice-born.

विष्णोः स्युः शक्त्यस्तिस्रस्तासु या कीर्तिता परा ।

सैव श्रीस्तदभिन्नेति प्राह शिष्यान् प्रभुर्महान् ॥

There are three energies (Śakti) of Viṣṇu, among them that which is praised as the highest is verily Śrī, and she is not different from the Lord. Thus taught the Great Teacher Mahāprabhu (Chaitanya) to his disciples.

*Note :* According to one view Lakṣmī is a Nitya Mukta Jīva or a soul belonging to the class of the eternally free. In that view, she cannot be said to be identical with Viṣṇu. But according to the teaching of Lord Gaurāṅga, Śrī is identical with Viṣṇu and never separate from Him. And as an authority, reference is made to the above verse of the Viṣṇu Purāṇa. As regards the statement that Lakṣmī is separate from Viṣṇu, that applies to the case of certain eternally free Jīvas, overshadowed by the spirit of Lakṣmī, and thus those Jīvas are called also Lakṣmī. But it is a secondary use of the word Lakṣmī. Primarily she is the highest aspect of the Lord Viṣṇu himself, the great mother of the world, and not any Jīva.

But what is the authority that Viṣṇu has three energies ? The next verse answers that :

तत्र त्रिशक्तिर्विष्णुः, यथा श्वेताश्वरोपनिषदि ।

परास्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रूयते स्वाभाविकी ज्ञानबलक्रिया च ॥

As regards Viṣṇu possessing three Śaktis or energies we have the following statement in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad (VI., 8) :

His high power is revealed as manifold and innate, the power of intelligence (Jñāna-Śakti), the power of strength (Bala-Śakti) and the power of action (Kriyā-Śakti).

*Note :* Jñāna-Śakti is called also Samvit or consciousness. The Bala-Śakti is called also Sandhinī, that which brings about union of atoms. The Kriyā-Śakti is called also Hlādinī or the delight-giving power. All these powers are Svābhāvikī or innate in the Lord, as the power of burning is innate in fire.

प्रधानक्षेत्रज्ञपतिर्गुणेशः । इति च ।

He is the Lord of matter (Pradhāna) and of spirits, (Kṣetrajña) and He is the ruler of all Guṇas.

*Note :* In the Viṣṇu Purāṇa it is mentioned that the highest energy of the Lord called Parā-Śakti is not subordinate to time but transcends it. And the Lord though not

separate from the highest energy, is yet said to be the Lord of Lakṣmī, in a metaphorical sense only, as will be shown in the subsequent verses.

श्री विष्णुपुराणे च ।

विष्णुशक्तिः परा प्रोक्ता क्षेत्रज्ञाख्या तथापरा ।

अविद्याकर्मसंज्ञान्या तृतीया शक्तिरिष्यते ॥ इति ॥

In the Viṣṇu Purāṇa it is thus mentioned :

The Viṣṇu-Śakti is called Parā, the Aparā Śakti is called Kṣetrajñā, and the third Śakti is that which is called Avidyā and Karma, the energy found in matter.

*Note :* In other words, the divine energy of the Lord is called Parā-Śakti, the energy found in the Jīvas or soul energy is Aparā-Śakti, and the energy found in matter is called Avidyā-Śakti.

In the same Viṣṇu Purāṇa (1., 9. 44) is to be found the authority that Śrī is the Parā-Śakti not separate from Viṣṇu :

कलाकाष्ठानिमेषादिकालसूत्रस्य गोचरे ।

यस्य शक्तिर्न शुद्धस्य प्रसीदतु स नो हरिः ॥

Whose highest energy called the Parā-Śakti is not within the scope of minutes and hours or any other division of time, may that pure Hari be propitious to us.

प्रोच्यते परमेशो यः यः शुद्धोप्युपचारतः ।

प्रसीदतु स नो विष्णुरात्मा यः सर्वदेहिनाम् ॥ इति ॥

He who is called Paramēśa (the Lord of the highest Lakṣmī, Para, highest, Mā, meaning Lakṣmī, and Īśa, the Lord), who though pure and non-separate from this Paramā or highest energy, but is yet called figuratively the Lord of Parmā, may that Viṣṇu, who is the Self of all embodied beings, be propitious to us.

*Note :* This Paramā or Parā-Śakti is threefold, as is to be found in that very Viṣṇu Purāṇa (1., 12. 69) :

ह्लादिनी सन्धिनी सम्बित् त्वय्येका सर्वसंश्रये ।

ह्लादतापकरी मिश्रा त्वयि नो गुणवर्जिते ॥ इति ॥

In Thee, refuge of all, exists this one power which is threefold, namely, Hlādinī (bliss-giving), Sandhinī (existence-giving), or all-prevading and all-combining ; and Samvit (or

consciousness). In Thee, devoid of all Guṇas, the energies of matter do not exist such as the energy called Sattva causing pleasure, the energy of Rajas causing pain, or the combined threefold Guṇas called Mâyā.

एकोपि विष्णु रेकापि लक्ष्मीस्तदमपायिनी ।  
स्वसिद्धैर्बहुभिर्वेशैर्बहुरित्यभिधीयते ।

Viṣṇu is one indeed ; and indeed one is also Lakṣmī, his eternal consort ; they become many because they assume various forms through their essential power.

तत्रैकत्वे सत्येव विष्णोर्बहुत्वं ; यथा श्रीगोपालोपनिषदि ।

The Lord Viṣṇu though a unity in reality, also becomes manifold, as we find in the Gopāla Upaniṣad :

एको वशी सर्वगः कृष्ण ईड्य एकोऽपि सन् बहुधा यो विभाति ।  
तं पीठस्थं येऽनुभजन्ति धीरास्तेषां सुखं शाश्वतं नेतरेषाम् ॥

There is one ruler, all-pervading, Lord Kṛṣṇa, the adored of all and though one, shines forth as many, the wise who worship Him as seated in the throne of the heart, enjoy eternal happiness, but not so the others.

*Note :* The various forms of Viṣṇu are the Avatāras like the fish, the tortoise, etc. As Viṣṇu though one has many forms, similarly, Lakṣmī though one has many forms, as we find in the following verse of the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, VI, 8 :

अथ लक्ष्म्यास्तद् यथा ।

परास्य शक्तिर्विविधैव श्रूयते ॥ इत्यादि ।

His Parā-Śakti is described as manifold.

*Note :* Lakṣmī, the Parā-Śakti of Viṣṇu, appears as Jānakī, Rukmiṇī, etc.

*Note :* Though every Avatāra, whether that of Viṣṇu or Lakṣmī, is ever full and has the whole of Viṣṇu or Lakṣmī in it, yet some Avatāra is called complete and others partial, owing to the manifestation through it of *all* the attributes or only some attributes.

पूर्तिः सार्वत्रिकी यद्यप्यविशेषा तथापि हि ।  
तारतम्यं च तच्छक्तियुक्त्यव्यक्तिकृतं भवेत् ॥

Though every Avatāra is full without any distinction of difference, yet the distinction between one Avatāra and

the other, is made on account of partial or full manifestation of the powers.

तत्र विष्णोः सार्वत्रिकी पूर्ति यथा वाजसनेयके ।

As regards the fullness of all the Avatāras of Viṣṇu, we have the following text of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad :

ॐ पूर्णमदः पूर्णमिदं पूर्णात्पूर्णमुदच्यते ॥ पूर्णस्य पूर्णमादाय पूर्ण-  
मेवावशिष्यते ॥ इति ॥

That (the root of all Avatāras) is full, this (the visible Avatāra) is also full, from that full this full emanates. Taking away this full from that full, the full still remains behind.

महावराहे च ॥

In the Mahāvarāha Aurāṇa also it is said :

सर्वे नित्याः शाश्वताश्च देहास्तस्य परात्मनः ।

हानोपादानरहिता नैव प्रकृतिजाः क्वचित् ॥

परमानन्दसन्दोहा ज्ञानमात्राश्च सर्वतः ।

सर्वे सर्वगुणैः पूर्णाः सर्वदोषविवर्जिताः ॥ इति ॥

The bodies of the Supreme Self assumed as Avatāras are all everlasting and beginningless. They are free from increase and decrease, and do not consist of Prakṛtic matter. They are all forms of supreme bliss and intelligence, and full of perfect attributes and free from all defects.

Note : For a fuller description, see page 387 of the Vedānta Sūtras. As every Avatāra of Viṣṇu is Pūrṇa, so also every Avatāra of Lakṣmī.

PARA XXII

अथ श्रियः सा यथा श्रीविष्णुपुराणे ॥

Now as regards Sri. She (also takes Avatāras corresponding to those of Viṣṇu), as in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa (I., 9. 140—145).

एवं यथा जगन्स्वामी देवदेवो जनार्दनः ।

अवतारं करोत्येष तथा श्रीस् तत् सहायिनी ॥ १ ॥

पुनश्च पद्मादुद्भूता आदित्योऽभूद् यदा हरिः ।

यदा च भार्गवो रामस्, तदाभूद् धरणी त्वयिस् ॥ २ ॥

राघवत्वेऽभवत् सीता, रुक्मिणी कृष्णजन्मनि ।  
 अन्येषु चावतारेषु, विष्णोरेषा सहायिनी ॥ ३ ॥  
 देवत्वे देवदेहेयं, मानुषत्वे च मानुषी ।  
 विष्णोर्देहानुरूपां वै, करोत्येषात्मनस्तस्म ॥ ४ ॥ इति ॥  
 स्यात् स्वरूपसती पूर्तिरिहैक्यादिति विन्मतम् ॥

As this Lord of the world, the God of all gods, the punisher of all sinners, takes an Avatāra, so also does Śrī, His help-mate, take an Avatāra corresponding to His. Thus when Hari assumed the Āditya form, she came out of the lotus as Kamalā ; when He assumed the Bhārgava Avatāra (Parsūrāma), she took the form of Dharaṇī ; when he became Rāghava (Rāmachandra), she became Sītā : when He appeared as Kṛṣṇa, she appeared as Rukmiṇī. Similarly in other Avatāras also, she is always the help-mate of Viṣṇu. When he assumes a Deva form, she takes the form of a Devī ; when he appears as a man, she appears as a woman ; verily she changes her body corresponding to the change assumed by the body of Viṣṇu.

Thus, in the opinion of the wise, all Avatāras are essentially non-different and every one of them is perfect and full.

#### PARA XXIII

अथ तथापि तारतम्यम् ।

Still there is a distinction between these Avatāras when viewed from outside.

तत्र श्री विष्णोस्तद् यथा भागवते ।

As regards this apparent difference in the Avatāras of Viṣṇu, we have in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa :

एते चांशकलाः पुंसः कृष्णस्तु भगवान् स्वयम् ॥ इति ॥

These Avatāras are the partial manifestations of the Supreme person, but the Lord Śrī Kṛṣṇa is the Bhagavān Himself.

अष्टमस्तु तयोरासीत् स्वयमेव हरिः किल ॥ इति च ॥

Hari himself became the eighth child of Devakī.

अथ श्रियस्तथा पुरुषबोधिण्यामथर्वोपनिषदि ।

“गोकुलाख्ये माधुरमण्डले” इत्युपक्रम्य, “द्वे पार्श्वे

चन्द्रावली राधिका च” इत्यभिधाय परत्र

“यस्यां भ्रंशे लक्ष्मीर्दुर्गादिका शक्तिः ॥ इति ॥

As regards the Avatāra of Lakṣmī, we have it stated in the Atharva Upaniṣad that there is difference in her Avatāras also. Beginning with “in the region of Mathurā called Gokula,” etc., the text goes on to say “the two sides of Viṣṇu are Chandravalī and Rādhikā” and then it mentions the lower Avatāras, by saying “Lakṣmī, Durgā and the rest are her partial Avatāras.”

गौतमीयतन्त्रे च ।

Similarly, in the Gautamiya Tantra we have :

देवी कृष्णपत्नी प्रोक्ता राधिका परदेवता ।

सर्वलक्ष्मीमयी सर्वकान्तिः संमोहिनी परा ॥ इति ॥

Rādhika is said to be the highest deity, the Goddess full of Kṛṣṇa ; all Lakṣmīs are her Avatāras, she is their source, she is full of all prosperity and every beauty ; and is the enchanter of all.

PARA XXV

The abode of Viṣṇu is also eternal.

अथ नित्यधामत्वम् आदिशब्दात् ।

The word “Ādi” in the phrase Nitya-Lakṣmī-ādi-matvāt shows that the abode of Viṣṇu is also eternal. Thus in the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (VII., 24. 1) :

स भगवः कस्मिन् प्रतिष्ठितः । स्वे महिम्नि ॥ इति ॥

In whom does He abide ? In His own glory.

मुण्डके च

दिध्ये पुरे ह्येष संव्योम्यात्मा प्रतिष्ठितः ॥ इति ॥

So also in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (II., 2.17) it is stated :

In the divine city, in the great void, abides this Self. .

अथ च

So also in the Rg Veda (I., 154.6) we have the following :

तावांवास्तून्युश्मसिगमध्वैयत्रगावोभूरिशृङ्गा अयासः ।

अत्राहतदुरुगायस्य वृष्णाः परमं पदमवभाति भूरि ॥

Tā, them ; Vām, for the sake of you two, namely, Rādhikā and Kṛṣṇa, Vāstūni, houses ; Gamadhyaī, to reach the goal ; for the going of you two ;

Uśmasi, we desire ; Yatra, where ; Gāvaḥ, cows ; Bhūri-śringāḥ, long-horned ; Ayā-ḥ, exist or go about, or exist giving prosperity. Atra, there. Aha, verily ; Tat, that ; Urugāyasya, widely praised. Vṛṣṇaḥ, of the bull, of Viṣṇu, the showerer of every desire ; Paramam, sublimest ; Padam, abode ; Avabhāti, shines ; Bhūri, much.

Fain would we go unto Your dwelling-places where there are many-horned and nimble oxen. For mightily, there, shineth down upon us the widely-striding Viṣṇu's sublimest mansion.

We desire to go to those Abodes of you two, where there are many long-horned cows and oxen, and where brightly shines the Supreme Abode of that widely praised Showerer (of all prosperity).

PARA XXVI

श्रीगोपालोपनिषदि च ।

So also in the Gopāla Upaniṣad, it is thus written :

तासां मध्ये साक्षाद्ब्रह्म गोपालपुरीहि ॥ इति ॥

Among these seven cities, Mathurā, the City of Gopāla, is verily Brahman, as if made visible.

जितन्ते स्तोत्रे च ।

So also in the Jitanta Stotra it is written :

लोकं वैकुण्ठनामानं दिव्यषाड्गुणयसंयुतम् ।

अवैष्णवानामप्राप्यं गुणत्रयविवर्जितम् ॥

नित्यसिद्धैः समाकीर्णं तन्मयैः पाञ्चकालिकैः ।

सभाप्रासादसंयुक्तं वनैश्चोपवनैः शुभम् ॥

वापीकूपतटामैश्च वृक्षषण्डैः सुमण्डितम् ।

अप्राकृतम् सुरैर्वन्धमरुतादृष्टप्रभम् ॥ इति ॥

The region called Vaikuṇṭha, adorned with the divine six attributes, but devoid of the three attributes of matter, is not to be reached by the ungodly. It is full of those persons, who are devoted to the five duties (Abhigamana, Upādāna, Ijyā, Adhyayana and Samādhi) : who are eternally perfect and devoted to the Lord. There are many courtyards and palaces in that divine city, and many an auspicious forest, garden, well, tank, tree and the rest.

Devas constantly worship this non-Prākṛitic city (which is Brahman itself), and which is refulgent with the light of myriads of suns.

ब्रह्मसंहितायाञ्च ।

So also in the *Brahma Samhitā*.

सहस्रपत्रं कमलं गोकुलाख्यं महत् पदम् ।

तत्कर्णिकारं तद्धाम तदनन्तांशसम्भवम् ॥ इति ॥

The great abode of Lord, called Gokula, is a thousand-petalled lotus ; in the middle of these petals is the abode of the Lord, and which is manifested by His aspect called Ananta (*Saṅkarsaṇa*).

PARA XXVII.

*Note :* How is it that the abode of Hari, which is beyond the sphere of Prakṛti, is identified here with Mathurā, an earthly city ? How can this Mathurā be the undecaying city of the Lord ? This doubt is answered in the next two verses.

प्रपञ्चे स्वात्मकं लोकमवतार्य महेश्वरः ।

आविर्भवति तत्रेति मतं ब्रह्मादिशब्दतः ॥

गोविन्दे सच्चिदानन्दे नरदारकता यथा ।

अज्ञैर्निरूप्यते तद्वद्भाम्नि प्राकृतता किल ॥ २७ ॥

The Supreme Lord brings down on this earth His divine city, which is His own Self, and then He manifests Himself in that city ; and this is the meaning of the phrase "Mathurā is Brahman itself."

As the ignorant imagine the Lord Govinda, who is pure existence, intelligence and bliss, to be a man and to have assumed really the form of a human child : similarly, Mathurā, the abode of the Lord, is considered by the ignorant to be an earthly city, while it is really the abode of the Lord.

PARA XXVIII

अथ नित्यलीलत्वञ्च । तथाहि श्रुतिः ।

Now the eternal sportiveness of the Lord is being described. In the *Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad* it is said :

यद्गतं भवञ्च भविष्यञ्च ॥ इति ॥



He who is the past, the present and the future (and whose work or Līlā is eternal).

एको देवो नित्यलीलानुरक्तो भक्तं व्यापी भक्तहृद्यन्तरात्मा ॥ इति च ॥

The one God, immersed in eternal sport, pervading all His Bhaktas, remains in their hearts as their very self.

स्मृतिश्च ।

जन्म कर्म च मे दिव्यमेवं यो वेत्ति तत्त्वतः ।

त्यक्त्वा देहं पुनर्जन्म नैति मामेति सोऽर्जुन ॥ ६ ॥

So also in the Smṛtis (Gitā, IV., 9) :

He who thus knoweth My divine birth and action, in its essence, having abandoned the body, cometh not to birth again, but cometh unto Me, O Arjuna.

#### PARA XXIX

*Note* : Admitted that the sport of the Lord is eternal, as proved by the texts quoted above, but how do you support this theory by reason ? Every work or action presupposes a point of time when it springs ; the duration through which it lasts ; and the point of time when it comes to an end. How can any action then be called eternal ? Anything which has a beginning and an end is temporary. The answer to this objection is given in the next verse.

रूपानन्त्याज्जनान्त्याद्धामानन्त्याच्च कर्म तत् ।

नित्यं स्यात् तदभेदाच्चेत्युदितं तत्त्ववित्तमैः ॥

Since the forms of the Lord are infinite, since the companions of the Lord are also infinite, and since His abodes are also infinite, it follows necessarily that every act of the Lord must be eternal, because it is not different from these. This is the opinion of those who know the truth.

*Note* : Since the Lord has infinity of forms, any act done by one form, is repeated in succession by other forms, and thus the action becomes eternal. Because in the infinite succession of forms, the action is being repeated in some place or other by some of these forms. Since all the Avatāras of the Lord are identical and non-different, the drama enacted by one Avatāra is repeated by all the other, and in the infinite succession of Avatāras the act must be also infinite. Some vague conception of the eternal activity of the Lord, and the existence through eternity of every act of the Lord, done in any incarnation, such as playing with the cowherds of Mathurā, or preaching to the fishermen of Galilee, can be understood from the behaviour of light rays. Any picture in light is theoretically eternal. The rays of light carry the picture for ever and ever, to the

infinite depths of space. Thus the picture of Delhi Coronation Durbar exists even to-day in the rays of light, which are carrying that picture in space. A little mathematical calculation will tell one at what particular point of space, that picture will be found to-day.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्याम् भगवत्तारतम्यप्रकरणं प्रथमं प्रमेयम् ॥

Here ends the first proposition, namely, that the Lord is the most high and supreme.

---

## PROPOSITION SECOND

अथाखिलान्नायवेद्यत्वम् । यथा श्री गोपालोपनिषदि ।

Now as to the Lord's being the subject-matter taught in Scripture, we have the following in the Gopāla Upaniṣad :

योऽसौ सर्वैर्वेदैर्गीते ॥ इति ॥

He who is sung in all the Vedas is verily Lord Kṛṣṇa.

काठके च ॥

So also in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad (II., 15) :

सर्वे वेदा यत्पदमामनन्ति तपांस्ति सर्वाणि च यद्वदन्ति ॥ (यदि-  
च्छन्तो ब्रह्मचर्यं चरन्ति तत्ते पदञ्छं संग्रहेण ब्रवीम्योमित्येतत्) इति ॥

Whose form and essential nature all the Vedas declare, and in order to attain Whom they prescribe austerities, (desiring to know Whom the great ones perform Brahmacharya), that Symbol I will briefly tell thee, it is Om.

## PARA II

श्री हरिवंशे च ।

So also in Hari Vaiṣṇava :

वेदे रामायणे चैव पुराणे भारते तथा ।

आदावन्ते च मध्ये च हरिः सर्वत्र गीयते ॥ इति ॥

In the Vedas, in the Rāmāyaṇa and so also in the Purāṇas and Mahābhārata as well, is sung verily everywhere Lord Hari, in the beginning, in the middle and in the end.

साक्षात् परम्पराभ्याम् वेदा गायन्ति माधवं सर्वे ।

वेदान्ताः किल साक्षाद् अपरे तेभ्यः परम्परया ॥

Directly or indirectly, all the Vedas sing the praise of the Lord Mādhava ; the Upaniṣad portions of the Vedas sing His praise directly, the other portions of the Vedas sing it indirectly.

## PARA III

*Note* But, says an objector : How can God be known through words? Does not the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (II, 4. 1) say "Yato vāchoniivartante aprāpya manasā saha," from whom all speech, with the mind, turns away unable to reach Him. How can then God be known through words? This doubt is answered in the next verse.

क्वचित् क्वचिदवाच्यत्वं यद् वेदेषु विलोक्यते ।

“कात्स्न्येन वाच्यं न भवेद्” इति स्यात् तत्र संगतिः ॥

अन्यथा तु तदारम्भो व्यर्थः स्यादिति मे मतिः ॥

Those passages of the Vedas, where we find that God is sometime described as inexpressible by words, are to be explained as inexpressible in His entirety. God cannot be fully expressed by words. Such must be the meaning of those passages ; otherwise, the very teaching of the Vedas would become useless, when they try to describe Brahman. This is my opinion. Why should men try to study Vedas, if God were totally inexpressible by words?

## PARA IV

शब्द प्रवृत्तिहेतूनाम् जात्यादीनाभावतः ।

ब्रह्मनिर्धर्मकं वाच्यं नैवेत्याहुर्विपश्चितः ॥

The wise say Brahman is inexpressible, because it has not the attributes of species (quality, action, and name) and consequently it does not come within the scope of objects which words can express.

## PARA V

सर्वैः शब्दैरवाच्ये तु लक्षणा न भवेदतः ।

लक्ष्यञ्च न भवेद् धर्महीनं ब्रह्मेति मे मतम् ॥

But if Brahman is totally inexpressible by words (as you say in the above verse), since He is inexpressible by *all* words, and since there is *no* word that can express Him, it follows that Brahman cannot be *suggested* by any word by Lakṣaṇā: (for Lakṣaṇā or suggestive implication can apply to those objects which are expressible by words).

Therefore, in my opinion Brahman, as conceived by you, O Advaitin, namely, an object without any attribute, can never be the Lakṣya or the implied suggested object of the Vedas.

*Note :* The Advaitin's view is that Brahman is *totally* inexpressible by words, and that the words of the Vedas only point to Brahman by way of suggestion or Lakṣaṇā. In this view Brahman becomes the Lakṣya, the object suggested by the Vedas. But the Bhakti view is that Brahman is not the Lakṣya of the Vedas, but is directly described by the Vedas.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्याम् द्वितीयं प्रमेयम् ॥

Here ends the Second Proposition of Prameya Ratnāvalī.

---

## PROPOSITION THIRD

### PARA I

अथ विश्वसत्यत्वम् ।

Now as to the reality of the universe.

स्वशक्त्या सृष्टवान् विष्णुर्यथार्थं सर्वविज्जगत् ।

इत्युक्तेः सत्यमेवैतद्वैराग्यार्थमसद्वचः ॥

The all-knowing Viṣṇu has created with His śakti this world, as a reality (and not as an illusion). Therefore, the world is verily real. The statement, that the world is an illusion, means that one should not rely too much on the world, but should treat it with Vairāgya or dispassion.

तथाहि, श्वेताश्वतरोपनिषदि ।

Thus it is written in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad (IV., 1) :

य एको वर्णो बहुधा शक्तियोगाद्दर्शननेकान्निहितार्थो दधाति ।

विचैति चान्ते विश्वमादौ स देवः स नो बुद्ध्या शुभया संयुनक्तु ॥

He, the Sun, without any colour, who with set purpose by means of His power (Śakti) produces endless colours, in whom all this comes together in the beginning, and comes asunder in the end ; may He, the God, endow us with good thoughts.

श्रीविष्णुपुराणे च ।

So also in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa. :

एकदेशस्थितस्याग्नेज्योत्स्ना विस्तारिणी यथा ।

परस्य ब्रह्मणः शक्तिस्तथेदमखिलं जगत् ॥ इति ॥

As of fire, though placed in one locality, the rays spread out in all directions ; so of the Supreme Brahman, the energy (Śakti) spreads out throughout the whole world.

ईशावास्योपनिषदि ।

So also in the Īśāvāsya Upaniṣad Verse 8 :

स पर्यगाच्छुक्लमकायमव्रणमस्त्राविरथं शुद्धमपापविद्धम् । ८. विर्मनीषी

परिभूः स्वयंभूर्याथातथ्यतोऽर्थान्व्यदधाच्छाश्वतीभ्यः समाम्यः ॥

सः Saḥ, he, the Adhikârin who meditates on the Self thus. पर्येगत् Paryagât, attained. शुक्रम Śukram, free from sorrow. अकायम् Akāyam (लिङ्गशरीरवर्जितम्) incorporeal, without the subtle body. अस्नाविरम् Asnāvīram, eternal and full. अव्रणम् Avraṇam, sinews-less, without muscles, without the dense body. शुद्धम् Śuddham, the purifier. अपापविद्धम् Apāpavidddham, untouched by evil, untouched by Karma-effects, good or bad. कविः Kaviḥ, the seer, the knower or seer of all, the wise, the omniscient. मनीषी Maṇiṣī, the ruler of mind, or the controller of Manas and Intelligences like Brahmā, etc. परिभूः Paribhūḥ, omnipresent, all-existent, all-controller, over-essence, conqueror of all passions, the best of all. स्वयम्भूः Swayambhūḥ, self-existent, self-reliant. याथातथ्यतः Yāthātathyataḥ, in its full and proper sense, really and truly, and not as an illusion. अर्थान् Arthān, things. व्यदधात् Vyadadhāt, disposed, ordained. शाश्वतीभ्यः Śāśvati-bhyah, through eternal or recurring. समाम्यः Samābhyah, years, ages.

He attains the Lord, Who is free from grief, free from subtle body, free from smallness, free from dense body, the purifier, not tainted by sin. He creates the objects (like Mahat, etc.) really and truly, from eternity. He is wise and omniscient, the Ruler of all intelligences, the Best of all and Self-dependent.

#### PARA II

श्री विष्णुपुराणे च ।

So also in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa :

तदेतदक्षयं नित्यं जगन्मुनिवराखिलम् ।

आविर्भावतिरोभावजन्मनाशविकल्पवत् ॥ इति ॥

O best of the sages, the whole universe (consisting of Īśvara, Jīvas and Prakṛti) is imperishable and eternal. (The portions of Īśvara) incarnate on earth and then disappear, while Jīvas and Prakṛti also get modifications of birth and death.

#### PARA III

महाभारते च ।

So also in the Mahābhārata :

ब्रह्म सत्यं तपः सत्यं सत्यं चैव प्रजापतिः ।

सत्याद्भूतानि जातानि सत्यं भूतमयं जगत् ॥ इति ॥

Brahman is a reality, austerity is a reality, Prajāpati is a reality, all creatures have come out of the real, hence the world is full of reality and truth (the world is not unreal).

## PARA IV

आत्मा वा इदमित्यादौ वनलीनविहङ्गवत् ।

सत्त्वं विश्वस्य मन्तव्यमित्युक्तं वेदवेदिभिः ॥

The text of the Śruti—"Ātman alone verily was in the beginning"—Ait. I. I. (does not mean that nothing else than Ātman existed then, but the souls and Prakṛti also existed merged in Ātman in Pralaya), just as the birds exist in a forest, when the dark night is over it (and we say there is nothing in this forest but the forest alone). Therefore, this world must be understood to be a reality and not a falsehood. For this is the opinion of those who know the Vedas.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्यां तृतीयं प्रमेयम् ।

Here ends the third proposition in the Prameya Ratnâvali.





## PROPOSITION FOURTH

अथ विष्णुतो जीवानां भेदः ॥

तथाहि श्वेताश्वतराः पठन्ति ।

Now is being treated that the Jīvas are separate from Viṣṇu.

As it is read in the Svetaśwatara Upaniṣad (IV., 6) :

द्वा सुपर्णा सयुजा सखाया समानं वृक्षं परिषस्वजाते ।

तयोरन्यः पिप्पलं स्वाद्वत्त्यनश्नन्नन्यो अभिचाकशीति ॥

द्वा Dva (dvau), two. सुपर्णा Suparṇā (Suparṇau), of handsome plumage or strong-winged birds, namely, the Jīva and the Īśvara. सयुजा Sayujā (Sayujāu), (rivals), always united, inseparable (friends). सखाया Sakhāyā (Sakhāyau), of equal name, friends. By Vedic license the dual affix *au* is replaced by *a*, in all these four words. समानं Samānam, the same, the one. वृक्षं Vṛkṣam, the (Aśvattha) tree, (the body). परिषस्वजाते Pariṣasvajāte, dwell upon, embrace, cling to, nestle. तयोः Tayoḥ, of two (birds). अन्यः Anyaḥ, one (the Jīva). पिप्पलम् Pippalam, the fruit of the Aśvattha tree, *i.e.*, the effects of Karmas generated by the body. स्वादु Svādu, sweet : as if it was sweet. अस्ति Atti, eats. The fruit is really bitter, but it eats it always as if it was sweet. अनश्नन् Anaśnan, not eating the non-essential portion of the fruits of good works and no portion of the fruits of evil deeds. अन्यः Anyaḥ, the other. अभिचाकशीति Abhi-chākaśīti, looks on, illumines all around.

Two birds of handsome plumage, inseparable friends, nestle on the same tree. The one of them eats the fruit, as if it was sweet, the other, without eating, illumines all around.

समाने वृक्षे पुरुषो निमग्नोऽनीशया शोचति मुह्यमानः ।

जुष्टं यदा पश्यत्यन्यमीशमस्य महिमानमिति वीतशोकः ॥ २ ॥

Though seated on one and the same tree, the Jīva bewildered by the Divine Power sees not the Lord and so grieves. But when he sees the eternally worshipped Lord and His glory, as separate from himself, then he becomes free from grief (and fit for Mukti).

Note : In interpreting a text there are certain maxims to be observed. One of those is laid down in the following verse :

## PARA II.

उपक्रमोपसंहारावभ्यासोऽपूर्वता फलम् ।

अर्थवादोपपत्तौ च लिङ्गं तात्पर्यनिर्णये ॥

The beginning (Upakrama), the conclusion (Upasamhāra), the repetition (Abhyāsa), peculiarity (Apūrvatā), the object (Phalam), the explanation of purpose (Arthavāda) and suitableness (Upapatti) are the six indications, by means of which the purport of a doubtful text may be arrived at.

इति तात्पर्यनिङ्गानि षड्यान्याहुर्मनीषिणः ।

भेदे तानि प्रतीयन्ते तेनासौ तस्य गोचरः ॥

These are the six tests mentioned by the wise, by the application of which the true purport of a text can be known. When applied to the Vedic text, they prove difference, hence difference is the object which the Śāstras purport to establish.

*Note:* Now in these above two verses the Upakrama or the opening words are two birds (showing there is duality and not monism); the conclusion or Upasamhāra is Anyam Īśam, "the other who is the Lord" (which shows that the Lord is Anyam or different from Jīva), the repetition is "the Other looks on without eating;" and "when he sees the other lord," the Apūrvatā or peculiarity consists in this that the difference between man and God could not have been known, but through the Śāstras, and this passage teaches such difference, a fact which could not have been known but through revelation. The object (Phalam) is "his grief passes away." Arthavāda is "He who knows his glory" while Suitableness is "one remains without eating."

## PARA III

किञ्च मुण्डके ।

So also in the Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad (III., 1. 3.) we have the following :

यदा पश्यः पश्यते तदा कर्त्तारमीशं पुरुषं ब्रह्मयोनिम् ।

तदा विद्वान्पुण्यपापे विधूय निरञ्जनः परमं साम्यमुपैति ॥

यदा Yadā, when. पश्यः Paśyaḥ, seer, the Jīva. पश्यते Paśyate, sees. रुक्म Rukma, golden. Another reading is "Rugma" formed from the root "Ruj." वर्णम् Varṇam, coloured. The golden-coloured Creator is the Lord. This is the colour of His Aura. कर्त्तारम् Kartāram, the Creator (of the world). ईशम् Īśam, the Lord. पुरुषम् Puruṣam, the Puruṣa, the person. ब्रह्म Brahma, the Brahmā or Hiranyagarbha. योनिम् Yonim, the cause, the source of Brahma. तदा Tadā,

then. विद्वान् Vidvân, the wise, the Aparokṣa Jñānin. पुण्य Puṇya, virtue, good. पापे Pāpe, vice, evil. The good and evil. All Puṇya is not destroyed by Jñāna, but only that Puṇya which has not begun to manifest its fruit. The non-Prârabdha. The Puṇya is of two sorts : Kâmya and non-Kâmya. The Kâmya-puṇya (good deeds done with a particular desire) is of two sorts—that which has begun to manifest its fruit (Prârabdha) and non-Prârabdha. The latter only is destroyed. विषूय Vidhūya shaking off, destroyed. निरंजनः Nirājanah, without Avidya. परमम् Paramam, the highest. सोम्यम् Sâmyam, similarity. The similarity consisting in being free from grief, and possessing full joy. उपैति Upaiti, reaches, attains.

When the Jīva sees the golden-coloured Creator and Lord, as the Person from whom Brahmā comes out, then the wise, shaking off virtue and vice, and becoming free from Avidyā, attains the highest similarity.

काठके च ।

So also in the Kāṭha Upaniṣad (II., 4. 15.) :

यथोदकं शुद्धे शुद्धमासिक्तं तादृगेव भवति ।

एवं मुनेर्विजानत आत्म भवति गौतम ॥

यथा उदकं Yathā Udakam, as water. शुद्धे Suddhe, in the pure. शुद्धम् Śud-dham, pure. आसिक्तं Āsiktam, poured (into) तादृक् एव Tādṛk eva, like that (but not identically that ; because we see that the bulk of the water is increased). भवति Bhavati, becomes. एवं Evam, so. मुनेः Muneḥ, of the sage, the thinker. विजानतः Vijānataḥ, the knowing : the liberated. आत्मा Atmā, the Self, (the Master, Vāyu, four-faced like Viṣṇu, but does not become *id-ntical* with him.) भवति Bhavati, becomes. गौतम Gautama, O Gautama ! *i.e.*, O Nachiketas !

As pure water poured into pure water becomes *like* that, O Gautama, so the Ātma of the Muni, who knows, becomes like that (with Brahman).

श्री गीतासु च ।

So also in the Gītā (XIV., 2.) :

इदं ज्ञानमुपाश्रित्य मम साधर्म्यमागताः ।

सर्गेऽपि नोपजायन्ते प्रलये न व्यथन्ति च ॥

Having taken refuge in this Wisdom and being assimilated to My own nature, they are not re-born even in the emanation of a universe, nor are disquieted in the dissolution.

एषु मोक्षेऽपि भेदोक्तेः स्याद्भेदः पारमार्थिकः ॥

These texts declare difference between Jīva and God even when the Jīva has obtained Mukti. Hence it follows that the difference between man and God is an absolute reality, and not conventional only.

ब्रह्माहमेको जीवोऽस्मि नान्ये जीवा न चेश्वरः ।

मदविद्या कल्पितास्ते स्युरितीन्यञ्च दूषितम् ॥

अन्यथा नित्य इत्यादि श्रुत्यर्थो नोपपद्यते ।

तथाहि कथाः पठन्ति

The opinions of the Advaitins, who hold "I am Brahman," "I am the only Jīva that exists, there are no other Jīvas or Īśvara, they exist merely through my nescience or Avidyā—" all such opinions, therefore, become refuted. If it were otherwise then the words like Nitya, etc., applied to the Jīvas would become meaningless.

As we find in the following verse of the Kāṭha Upaniṣad. (II., 5. 13.) :

नित्योऽनित्यानां चेतनश्चेतनानामेको बहूनां यो विदधाति कामान् ।

तमात्मस्थं येऽनुपश्यन्ति धीरास्तेषां शान्तिः शाश्वती नेतरेषाम् ॥

नित्यः Nityaḥ, eternal. अनित्यानां Anityānām, among the eternal. [नित्यः नित्यानाम् Nityaḥ Nityānām, the Eternal among the Eternals : The highest Eternal. Or who gives to the other eternal, their eternity]. चेतनः Chetanaḥ, चेतनानां Chetanānām, the thinker among all thinkers, or the highest consciousness among all consciousnesses (like Brahmā, etc.) who gives consciousness to all consciousnesses. एकः Ekaḥ, the one. बहूनां Bahūnām, of many (consciousnesses). यः Yaḥ, who. विदधाति कामान् Vidadhāti Kāmān, fulfils the desire. तं आत्मस्थं ये अनुपश्यन्ति धीराः Tam ātmasthaṁ ye anupaśyanti dhīrah, the wise who perceive him within their self. तेषां Teṣām, of them. शान्तिः Śāntiḥ, peace, happiness. Release, Mokṣa. शाश्वती Śāśvati, eternal : that in which there is no return to re-birth. न इतरेषां Na itareṣām, not of others.

The Eternal among the eternal, the Consciousness among all consciousnesses, the One who bestows the fruits of Karmas to many Jīvas, the tranquil-minded ones who see him seated in their Ātmā, get eternal happiness, but not the others.

## PARA V

एकस्मादीश्वरान्नत्याच्चेतनात्तादृशा मिथः ।

भिद्यन्ते न बहवो जीवास्तेन भेदः सनातनः ॥ ५ ॥

From one eternal (Nitya) conscious Lord the many Jīvas who are also eternal are shown to be separate in the above verse. Therefore, difference between Jīva and Īśvara is eternal.—5.

## PARA VI

प्राणैकाधीनवृत्तित्वाद् वागादेः प्राणता यथा ।

तथा ब्रह्माधीनवृत्तेर्जगतो ब्रह्मतोच्यते ॥

As speech and other organs are also called Prāṇa, because their functions are dependent upon that of the Prāṇa alone, so the world is called Brahman sometimes, because all its functions are dependent upon Brahman.

तथाहि छान्दोग्ये पठ्यते ।

Thus it is read in the Chhandogya Upaniṣad (V., 1. 15.) :

न वै वाचो न चक्षूंषि न श्रोत्राणि न मनांस्सीत्याचक्षते प्राणा  
इत्येवावक्षते प्राणा ह्येवैतानि सर्वाणि भवन्ति ॥

The wise do not call them the Speeches, the Sights, the Hearings, the Minds ; but they call them Prāṇas. The Prāṇa verily is all these.—6.

## PARA VII

ब्रह्मव्याप्यत्वतः कैश्चिज्जगद्ब्रह्मेति मन्यते ।

Some hold the opinion that inasmuch as the world is pervaded by Brahman, therefore, the world is Brahman.

यदुक्तं श्रीविष्णुपुराणे

And in support of their opinion they quote the following verse of the Viṣṇu Purāṇa :

योऽयं वागतो देव समीपं देवतागणः ।

सत्यमेव जगत् स्रष्टा यतः सर्वगतो भवान् ॥ इति ॥ ७ ॥

O Lord ! This host of Devas that has come in Thy Presence is indeed Thou, because Thou, O Creator ! pervadest all.—7.

*Note :* The pure Advaitins hold the view that Brahman alone exists and that Jīvas are nothing but Brahman, conditioned by some Upādhi or limited by adjunct. They hold that Brahman is like the sun, and the Jīva is like its reflection in water. If the Upādhi (water) be clear, then the reflection is clear, if it is turbid, the reflection is also turbid. This is called Pratibimba theory. The other theory is that Brahman is like the all-pervading space, while the Jīva is the same space limited by the adjunct of being enclosed in a jar. Therefore, the Ghaṭākāśa (jar-space) is not separate from the space outside. It is the same. This is called Parichchheda or limitation theory. Both these theories are refuted in the next verse.

## PARA VIII

प्रतिबिम्बपरिच्छेदपक्षौ यौ स्वीकृतौ परैः ।

विभुत्वाविषयत्वाभ्यां तौ विद्वद्भिर्निराकृतौ ॥ ८ ॥

The two theories, namely, those of reflection and of limitation, which are held by our opponents, are refuted by the fact that Brahman is all-pervading and not a material object.

*Note :* Brahman being all-pervading, and consequently without any form it cannot cast any reflection. To cast a reflection it is necessary that the object reflected must be a limited one. The Pratibimba theory, therefore, is refuted by the Vibhutva or all-pervadingness of the Lord. Moreover, the limitation theory is also invalid, because limitation can apply only to a material object. But Brahman, not being a material object, cannot be limited ; therefore, the Parichchheda theory cannot also hold good. If Brahman were a material object, then, of course, it would be possible to cut him into parts like stones cut into different fragments.

## PARA IX

अद्वैतः ब्रह्मणो भिन्नमभिन्नं वा त्वयोच्यते ।

आद्ये द्वैतापत्तिरन्ते सिद्धसाधनता श्रुतेः ॥ ९ ॥

If the identity of Brahman with Jīva, which is called Advaita by you, O Advaitin ! be true, then this Advaita must either be separate or non-separate from Brahman. If this Advaita is separate from Brahman (namely, if the theory of Advaita is something different), then there is duality, and you are open to the objection of being a Dvaitin. If it is non-separate from Brahman, then you are trying to establish something which is already established by Śruti and what is the use of again establishing it ?

*Note :* But, says an objector : How do you explain the text 'Sākṣī chetāḥ kevalo nirguṇaścha,' he is witness, intelligence and attributeless. This text shows that Brahman is Nirguṇa, and your theory, that he is Saguṇa, falls to the ground. This objection is answered in the next verse.

## PARA X

अलीकं निर्गुणं ब्रह्म प्रमाणाविषयत्वतः ।

श्रद्धेयं विदुषां नैवेत्यूचिरे तत्त्ववादिनः ॥ १० ॥

The knowers of truth say that the wise should not believe that Brahman is Nirguṇa. This is a wrong statement, and has not any authority in its favour.

*Note :* If Brahman is Nirguṇa then he can have no form, etc., and cannot be the subject of direct perception. So Pratyakṣa Pramāṇa cannot apply to him. If he is Nirguṇa then he cannot be the subject inference also, for there is no middle term with which Brahman can be compared. So Anumāna also fails. Similarly, revelation also which is the third Pramāṇa cannot explain Brahman ; for revelation is couched in words, and words can describe objects that belong to any species, possess certain attributes, are acted and re-acted by certain agents and have certain names. But Brahman being Nirguṇa cannot be described by words. And hence revelation also is of no use.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्यां भेदसत्यत्वप्रकरणं चतुर्थं प्रमेयम् ॥

Here ends the Fourth Proposition of Prameya Ratnāvali on the reality of Difference.

## PROPOSITION FIFTH

अथ जीवानां भगवद्दासत्वम् ॥

Now is being described that all Jivas are servants of God.

तथाहि श्वेताश्वतराः पठन्ति ॥

The Svetāśvataras in their Upaniṣad (VI. ; 7.) read thus :

तमीश्वराणां परमं महेश्वरं तं देवतानां परमं च दैवतम् ।

पतिं पतीनां परमं परस्तात् विदाम देवं भुवनेशमीड्यम् ॥ इति ॥

Let us know that highest great Lord of Lords, the Highest Deity of deities, the Master of masters, the Highest above, as God, the Lord of the world, the adorable.—1.

PARA II

स्मृतिश्च ॥

So also in the Smṛti :

ब्रह्मा शम्भुस्तथैवार्कश्चन्द्रमाञ्च शतक्रतुः ।

एवमाद्यास्तथैवान्ये युक्ता वैष्णवतेजसा ॥ इत्याद्या ॥

Brahmā, Śambhu as well as the Sun, the Moon and Indra have their energy borrowed from that of Viṣṇu and so also all other Devas.

सब्रह्मकाः सरुद्राश्च सेन्द्रा देवम् महर्षिभिः ।

अचर्यन्ति सुरश्रेष्ठ देवं नारायणं हरिः ॥ इत्याद्या च ॥

All Devas along with Brahmā, Rudra, Indra, and great seers adore that God, Who is the best of all gods, called Nārāyaṇa Hari.

पाद्मे च जीवलक्षणे ।

So also in the Padma Purāṇa describing the Mukta Jīva, it is said :

दासभूतो हरेरेव नान्यस्यैव कदाचन ॥ इति ॥ २ ॥

They are slaves of Hari alone and verily of no one else.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्यां भगवद्दासत्वप्रकरणं पंचमं प्रमेयम् ॥

Here ends the Fifth Proposition of Prameya Ratnāvalī called the dependence of all Jīvas on the Lord.



## PROPOSITION SIXTH

अथ जीवानां तारतम्यम् ।

Now as to the difference between Jīvas *inter se*.

### PARA I

अणुचैतन्यरूपत्वज्ञानित्वाद् विशेषतः ।

साम्ये सत्यपि जीवानां तारतम्यं च साधनात् ॥ १ ॥

Though all Jīvas are similar, and have no distinction among themselves, so far as they are all atomic and intelligent in their form, and cognising agents or knowers, yet there is difference between them, owing to their Sādhana's or Karmas that they have performed.

*Note* : Some Jīvas, owing to their Karmas, get good births ; others get bad births, owing to their bad Karmas. Similarly, according to their different modes of Bhakti, there arise differences of enjoyment in the next world.

### PARA II

तत्राणुत्वमुक्तं श्वेताश्वतरेः ।

In the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad the atomic nature of the Jīva is thus mentioned (V., 9) :

बालाग्रशतभागस्य शतधा कल्पितस्य च ।

भागो जीवः स विज्ञेयः स चानन्त्याय कल्प्यते ॥ ६ ॥

That living soul is to be known as part of the hundredth part of the point of a hair, divided a hundred times, and yet it is to be infinite.

चैतन्यरूपत्वं ज्ञानित्वादिकञ्च षट् प्रश्न्याम् ।

The Praśna Upaniṣad (IV., 9.) shows that the Jīva is a conscious entity and is the cogniser, enjoyer and the agent.

एष हि द्रष्टा स्पर्शश्च श्रोता घ्राता रसयिता मन्ता बोद्धा कर्ता  
विज्ञानात्मा पुरुषः । [ स परेऽक्षरे आत्मनि संप्रतिष्ठते ] ॥ ६ ॥

Verily he is the beholder, the toucher, the hearer, the smeller, the taster, the thinker, the determiner, the doer, the Vijnānātma, the Puruṣa. . [He (who knows this Puruṣa) becomes established in the Highest Self].

## PARA III

आदिना गुणेन देहव्यापित्वञ्च श्रीगीतासु ।

The word *Ādi* (in the *Jñānitvādi* above) indicates that the soul, though atomic, pervades the whole body by the rays of its quality of intelligence. As we find mentioned in the *Gītā* (XIII., 34) :

यथा प्रकाशयत्येकः कृत्स्नं लोकमिमं रविः ।

क्षेत्रं क्षेत्री तथा कृत्स्नं प्रकाशयति भारत ॥ ३४ ॥

As the one sun illumines the whole earth, so the Lord of the Field illumineth the whole Field, O Bhârata.—(34).

आह चेवं सूत्रकारः ।

The Lord Bâdarâyana, the author of the *Vedānta Sūtra*, says the same in (II., 3. 24) :

गुणाद्वा लोकवदिति ।

Or the soul may pervade the whole body, by its quality of intelligence, as the flame pervades the whole room by its rays.

गुणनित्यत्वमुक्तं वाजसनेयिभिः ।

In the *Brhadaraṇyaka Upaniṣad* (IV., 5. 14) is mentioned that the essential attributes of the soul are eternal.

सा होवाच मैत्रेय्यत्रैव मा भगवान्मोहान्तमापीपिपन्न वा अहमिमं  
विजानामीति स होवाच न वा अरेऽहं मोहं ब्रवीमि अविनाशी वा  
अरेऽयमात्माऽनुच्छित्तिधर्मा ॥ १४ ॥

Then Maitreyî said: Here, Sir, thou hast landed me in utter bewilderment. Indeed, I do not understand him.

But he replied: O Maitreyî, I say nothing that is bewildering. Verily, beloved, that Self is imperishable, and of an indestructible nature.

## PARA IV

एवं साम्येपि वैषम्यमैहिकं कर्मभिः स्फुटम् ।

प्राहुः पारत्रिकं तत्तु भक्तिभेदैः सुकोविदः ॥

Thus though all souls are similar, yet their dissimilarity in this world is on account of the differences of their Karmas. The wise say

that their dissimilarity in the heaven is on account of their dissimilarity of Bhakti.

तथाहि कौशुमाः पठन्ति ।

As read the Kauthumas (Chhandogya Upaniṣad, III., 14. 1) :

यथा क्रतुरस्मिँल्लोके पुरुषो भवति तथेतः प्रेत्य भवति स क्रतुं कुर्वीत ॥ १ ॥

As is his faith in this life, so will be his condition in the next after death. So let him generate full faith (in the Lord).

स्मृतिश्च ।

So also is the following Smṛti :

यादृशी भावना यस्य सिद्धिर्भवति तादृशी ।

As is one's thought (devotional attitude) so is his success in the next life.

शान्त्याद्या रतिपर्यन्ता ये भावाः पञ्च कीर्त्तिताः ।

तैर्देवं स्मरतां पुंसां तारतम्यं मिथो मतम् ॥

The five sentiments beginning with Śānta and ending with Rati are the causes which produce differences in the enjoyment of the Muktas in the heaven world. With what particular emotion the Lord is worshipped with that sort of food is he meted out in the next.

*Note* : The school of Chaitanya divides Bhakti into five degrees, each a little higher than the last : (1) Śānta or tranquil meditation upon God, (2) Dāśya, a condition of active service for God, (3) Sakhya, a feeling of personal friendship for God, (4) Vātsalya, or love for God as between a child and parent ; and (5) Mādhurya, ardent devotion to God, the highest stage of emotional development.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्यां जीवतारतम्यप्रकरणं षष्ठं प्रमेयम् ।

Here ends the Sixth Proposition on the Difference among Souls.

## PROPOSITION SEVENTH

अथ श्रीकृष्णप्राप्तेर्मोक्षत्वम् । यथा ॥

Now is mentioned that the condition of liberation consists in the attainment of the Lord Kṛṣṇa.

Thus in the Śvetaśvatara Upaniṣad (I., 11) we have the following :

ज्ञात्वा देवं सर्वपाशापहानिः । इत्यादि ॥

When that God is known, all fetters fall off (sufferings are destroyed, and birth and death cease).

So also in the Gopāla Tāpani Upaniṣad we have the following :

एको वशी सर्वगः कृष्णः ईड्यः ॥ इत्यादि च ॥

The one controller, all-pervading Kṛṣṇa must alone be worshipped. And similar other texts.

बहुधा बहुभिर्वेशैर्भाति कृष्णः स्वयं प्रभुः ।

तमिष्ट्वा तत् पदे नित्यं सुखं तिष्ठन्ति मोक्षिणः ॥

The Master Kṛṣṇa himself shines, in manifold forms and figures, everywhere ; by worshipping Him, the freed souls dwell happily in His eternal abode.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्याम् श्रीकृष्णप्राप्तेर्मोक्षत्वप्रकरणं सप्तमं प्रमेयम् ॥

Here ends the seventh proposition on the subject that liberation consists in the attainment of Śrī Kṛṣṇa.

## PROPOSITION EIGHTH

अथैकान्तभक्तेर्मोक्षहेतुत्वम् ।

Now is mentioned that the one-pointed devotion is the cause of Mukti.

### PARA I

यथा श्रीगोपालतापन्याम् ।

As in the Gopāla Tāpanī Upaniṣad we have the following :

भक्तिरस्य भजनं तदिहामुत्रोपाधिनैरास्येनामुष्मिन् मनः कल्पनम् ;  
एतदेव नैष्कर्म्यम् ॥ इति ॥

Devotion to this Śrī Kṛṣṇa is Bhajana or worship ; it consists in fixing one's mind in Him, without the desire of getting any fruit, in this world or in the next. Such a devotion is called Naiṣkarmyam or unselfish devotion.

*Note* : Such devotion must be distinguished from the passive state of the Vairāgyam of the Advaitins. Their Vairāgya is also defined as non-desiring of the fruits in this world or in the next. But Bhakti differs from Vairāgya by its more active qualities. It wants nothing but Kṛṣṇa, and all objects of heaven or of earth cannot turn its heart from Him.

नारदपञ्चरात्रे च ॥

So also in the Nārada Pañcharātra we have the following :

सर्वोपाधिविनिर्मुक्तं तत्परत्वेन निर्मलम् ।  
हृषिकेन हृषिकेशसेवनं भक्तिरुच्यते ॥ इति ॥ १ ॥

Being free from all Upādhis, and worshipping the Lord of the senses, with every sense, with the utmost purity is called Bhakti.

### PARA II

नवधा चैषा भवति । यदुक्तं श्रीभागवते ॥

This Bhakti is nine-fold, as is mentioned in the Bhāgavat. Purāṇa (VII., 5. 23, 24) :

श्रवणं कीर्तनं विष्णोः स्मरणं पादसेवनम् ।  
अर्चनं वन्दनं दास्यं सख्यम् आत्मनिवेदनम् ॥  
इति पुंसार्पिता विष्णौ भक्तिश्चेन् नवलक्षणा ।  
क्रियते भगवत्यद्धा तन्मन्येऽधीतमुत्तमम् ॥ इति ॥

The following are the nine varieties in the path of devotion : (i) The hearing of the praise of the All-pervading

Being, Viṣṇu ; (ii) the chanting of His praise ; (iii) the remembering Him in meditation ; (iv) His personal service, *i. e.*, to His symbolic image ; (v) His worship performed by the offerings of water, flowers, fruits, etc. ; (vi) His salutation ; (vii) placing oneself at His disposal ; (viii) His friendship, *i. e.*, placing full trust in Him, as in a friend ; (ix) consecration of self to Him. If one applies himself with this nine-fold devotion to Viṣṇu, having learnt it from his teacher, I consider it as the best lesson he has received from his master.

सतसेवा गुरुसेवा च देवभावेन चेद् भवेत् ।

तदैषा भगवद्भक्तिर्लभ्यते नान्यथा क्वचित् ॥ २ ॥

When the service of the good and holy men, and that of one's own Guru, is done with love and reverence, thinking upon them, as if they were God personified, then, and then only, is obtained this Bhakti for the Lord, and not otherwise.

#### PARA III

देवभावेन सतसेवा यथा तैत्तिरीयके ॥

That good and holy men should be served with the same reverence as one pays to God is shown in the Taittīaiya Upaniṣad (I., 11. 2) :

अतिथिदेवो भव ॥ इति ॥

Let thy guest be to thee like unto a God.

*Note* : The word "guest" here means that holy man who is a houseless wanderer.

तथा तद्भक्तिर्यथा श्रीभागवते ॥

So also in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa (VII., 5. 32) it is shown that by such service, Bhakti is obtained.

नैषां मतिस्तावदुरुक्रमांघ्रिं स्पृशत्यनर्थोपगमो यदर्थः ।

महीयसां पादरजोऽभिषेकं निष्किंचनानां न वृणीत यावत् ॥ इति ॥

Till they do not purify themselves by ablution in the dust of the feet of great saints, who have taken the vow of

poverty, their understanding will not comprehend the greatness of the feet of the Lord of Mighty Strides. And it is by this means that the evils of life are to be removed.

*Note* : "The Lord of Mighty Strides" is Viṣṇu, who in His Vāmana Avatāra (Dwarf incarnation) encompassed the space between the Earth, Heaven, and Pātāla by "His three steps."

#### PARA IV

देवभावेन गुरुसेवा यथा तैत्तिरीयके ॥

The service of the teacher must be done with full reverence, as one would serve his God, as is shown in the Taittiriya Upaniṣad (I., 11. 2) :

आचार्यदेवो भव ॥ इति ॥

Let thy teacher be to thee like unto a God.

श्वेताश्वरोपनिषदि च ॥

To the same effect is the following verse of the Śvetaśvatara Upaniṣad (VI., 23) :

यस्य देवे परा भक्तिर्यथा देवे तथा गुरौ । तस्यैते कथिता ह्यर्थाः  
प्रकाशन्ते महात्मनः प्रकाशन्ते महात्मन इति ॥

If these truths have been told to a high-minded man, who feels the highest devotion for God, and for his Guru as for God, then they will shine forth, then they will shine forth indeed.

तथा तद्भक्तिर्यथा श्रीभागवते ॥

So also in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa it is mentioned that by such devotion to Guru one gets Bhakti for the Lord.

तस्माद् गुरुं प्रपद्येत जिज्ञासुः श्रेय उत्तमम् ।

शान्दे परे च निष्णातं ब्रह्मण्युपसमाश्रयम् ॥

तत्र भागवतान् धर्मान् शिद्धेद् गुर्वात्मदैवतः ।

अमाययानुवृत्त्यायैस् तुष्येदात्मात्मदो हरिः ॥ इति ॥ ४ ॥

Therefore, let the seeker for Brahman (the highest good) approach a Guru who is a Master of all the Vedas (Sabda-Brahman) and who constantly dwells in the Supreme Brahman, in order to get Mukti. Therefore, let him take shelter of such a Guru, who has obtained calmness. There

let him learn the Bhāgavata Dharma, *treating his Gurn as his God*, and serving Him without crookedness, for by such service, the Lord Hari is pleased, who has given His body and soul to His Bhaktas.

## PARA V

अवाप्तपञ्चसंस्कारो लब्धद्विविधभक्तिकः ।

साक्षात्कृत्य हरिं तस्य धाम्नि नित्यं प्रमोदते ॥ ५ ॥

He, who is purified with the five sacraments and has got the two sorts of Bhaktis, realises Hari and rejoices for ever in His abode.

## PARA VI

तथा पञ्च संस्कारा यथा स्मृतौ ।

The five sacraments are thus mentioned in a Smṛti (Padma Purāṇa) :

तापः पुण्ड्रं तथा नाम मन्त्रो यागश्च पञ्चमः ।

अमीहि पञ्च संस्काराः परमैकान्तिहेतवः ॥ इति ॥

The five sacraments are : (i) heating or branding the body with symbols of Hari ; (ii) putting the caste-mark or Tilak ; (iii) giving the name of Hari to one's children, and naming himself also as a servant of Hari ; (iv) prayer ; and (v) sacrifice.

These five Saṁskāras are verily conducive to one-pointed devotion.

तापोऽत्र तप्तचक्रादिमुद्राधारणमुच्यते ।

तेनैव हरिनामादिमुद्रा चाप्युपलक्ष्यते ॥

The word 'Tāpa' or 'heating,' means here putting on the body the marks of discus, etc., with heated metals. Besides branding, it includes also the writing of the name of Hari on one's body (with sandal paste and proper seals).

सा यथा स्मृतौ

As is mentioned in the following Smṛti :

हरिनामाक्षरैर्गात्रमङ्कयेच्चन्दनादिना ।

स लोकपावनो भूत्वा तस्य लोकमवाप्नुयात् ॥ इति ॥



Let him mark his body with sandalwood paste, with the syllables of the name of Hari. Such a person purifies the world (while alive, and after death) obtains the world of Hari.

पुराङ्गं स्याद् उर्ध्वपुराङ्गं तच्छास्त्रे बहुविधं स्मृतम् ।

हरिमन्दिरतत्पादाकृत्यादि शुभावहम् ।

नामात्र गदितं सन्निर्हरिभृत्यत्वबोधकम् ।

मन्त्रोऽष्टादशवर्णादिः स्वेष्टदेववपुर्मतः ॥

शालग्रामादिपूजा तु यागशब्देन कथ्यते ।

प्रमाणान्येषु दृश्यानि पुराणादिषु साधुभिः ॥ ६ ॥

The caste-mark must be a straight perpendicular line on the forehead and called Urdha-Pundram. The scriptures describe their various kinds. It may represent the temple of Hari and (is a reminder to one that his body is the temple of the God). According to others it should be like the foot of Hari (showing that one is servant of God). The Tilak is a most auspicious mark.

The "giving of the name," means that one must bear such a name, which should express "the servant of God" (such as Hari Das, etc.). The Mantra must be the Vaiṣṇava Mantra, consisting of eighteen syllables and the rest. It is considered to be the body of one's Iṣṭa-deva. The word 'worship' or "Yoga" means the Pūjā of Śaligrāmā and the rest. Holy men should find out from Purāṇas the detailed account and authorities for these five sacraments.

#### PARA VII

नवधा भक्तिर्विधिरुचिपूर्वा द्वेधा भवेत् ; यया कृष्णः ।

भूत्वा स्वयं प्रसन्नो ददाति तत् तद् ईप्सितं धामः ॥ ७ ॥

The nine-fold Bhakti is of two sorts, namely, Vidhi Bhakti and Ruchi Bhakti. Through any one of these Lord Śrī Kṛṣṇa being pleased gives to His devotees all that they desire.

PARA VIII

विधिनाभ्यर्च्यते देवश्चतुर्बाह्वादिरूपधृत् ।

रुच्यात्मकेन तेनासौ नृलिङ्गः परिपूज्यते ॥ ८ ॥

Through Vidhi Bhakti the God is worshipped as having a form with *four* (*eight* or *ten* arms). With Ruchi Bhakti, He is worshipped as a *man* (with two arms), such as the son of Yaśodā (or Kauśalyā).

*Note* : The distinction between Ruchi Bhakti and Vidhi Bhakti is clearly brought out by this verse.

In Vidhi Bhakti, God is worshipped as something supremely great and above humanity. The very form, as having four, eight or ten arms, cuts Him off from the category of man. Such a being may be an object of adoration with awe and fear. He can hardly be an object of that intense love, which man feels for man. Therefore, in Ruchi Bhakti, God is worshipped as man, and that also as an infant child suckling at the breast of Yaśodā or of Kauśalyā.

This Ruchi Bhakti is the subject of much controversy among the antiquarians. Some say that this child-worship is not the original Bhakti of India, but has been introduced here from Christianity.

PARA IX

तुलस्यश्चतुर्बाह्यादि पूजनं धामनिष्ठता ।

अरुणोदयबिद्धस्तु संत्याज्यो हरिवासरः ।

जन्माष्टम्यादिकं सूर्योदयबिद्धं परित्यजेत् ॥ ९ ॥

He should worship the Tulasī, the Aśvattha, and the Dhātṛi trees, and should try to dwell, as far as possible, in cities like Mathurā and the rest. He should fast on the Lord's day called the eleventh day of the Moon. If this eleventh day of the Moon does not commence with the break of dawn (Aruṇa-udaya) then he should reject it. Similarly, he should observe the birth-day festivity, which falls on the eighth day of the Moon. But if this Aṣṭami Tithi does not commence with the sunrise, but afterwards, then it should be rejected; and the Nativity should be observed on the next day.

*Note :* This observance of Ekādaśī and Janma Aṣṭamī is a peculiar feature of the Vaiṣṇavas. If the Tithi does not commence with the dawn, but after that moment, then it is not observed on that day. Thus if at the time of two Muhūrtas before the sunrise there is Daśamī for one hour, and then Ekādaśī, then the Vaiṣṇavas will not observe that day as Ekādaśī, but the next day. Similarly, if the Janma Aṣṭamī has Saptamī at the time of sunrise, it should be rejected. The force is on the words Aruṇa (dawn) and Sūrya (Sun) : the rising of the dawn is generally one hour and a half before that of the sun. In the case of Ekādaśī it must be seen whether at the time of the break of dawn there is that Tithi or not. If at that time the Tithi is not Ekādaśī, but Daśamī, then that day should be rejected : but in the case of other sacred days, such as Janma Aṣṭamī and the rest, dawn is not to be looked into, but the actual sunrise. If at the time of sunrise, there is not the proper Tithi, then that day should not be observed as sacred, but the next day.

#### PARA X

लोकसंग्रहमन्विच्छन् नित्यनैमित्तिकं बुधः ।

पतिष्ठितश्चरेत् कर्म भक्तिप्राधान्यमत्यजन् ॥ १० ॥

Desirous of maintaining the social order, the wise devotee should observe regularly the obligatory and the optional duties, but always giving pre-eminence to Bhakti.

*Note :* The Bhaktas are of three kinds : Svanīṣṭha, Parīṣṭhita and Nirapekṣa. Among these the first must perform all the duties (excepting those which entail loss of life, such as animal sacrifices) of his Āśramas, without desiring the fruit of those actions. He must observe all rituals. The last (Nirapekṣa) observes no ritual, his worship is mental, and he is always mentally devoted to the Lord. He being in no Āśrama is bound by no rules of convention. The third Parīṣṭhita being midway between these two, does not stand in need of performing ritualistic Karmas, but being a respectable member of society, he observes all the conventions of the society in order to maintain social order.

#### PARA XI

दश नामापराधांस्तु यत्नतः परिवर्जयेत् ॥ ११ ॥

Let him avoid with care the ten sorts of blasphemy called Nāma-aparādhā or sins against the Name.

*Note :* These ten sins are the following : (i) Satām nindā, speaking ill of holy men, (ii) Meditating on Siva and others as independent deities, while worshipping Viṣṇu. That is to say, uttering the names of Siva and other deities with the idea of their independence in the presence of Viṣṇu, (iii) Showing contempt to one's Guru or person whom one ought to revere, (iv) Speaking ill of the Śruti (Revelation) and of other scriptures which are in accordance with such Śrutis, (v) Thinking that the name of the Lord has not efficacy to remove all sins. In other words, Disbelief in the efficacy of the sacred name and thinking that statements regarding such efficacy are merely eulogistic and not to be taken in their literal sense, (vi) Trying to explain such statements regarding the efficacy of the name by

other methods, (vii) Believing in the efficacy of the name, but committing sins on the strength of such efficacy, thinking "Let me commit sins I shall utter the name of the Lord and all sins will be washed away." This wilful commission of sins is bad, (viii) Thinking that any other good works, such as charities, Pūjās, etc., can be equal to the utterance of the holy name. In other words, denying the pre-eminence of the name, (ix) Teaching the name to a person who has no faith in it or who is actively opposed to it, (x) Not loving the name even after hearing its glory.

These are the ten sins against the name which the Bhaktas must avoid.

## PARA XII

कृष्णावाप्तिफला भक्तिरेकान्तात्राभिधीयते ।

ज्ञानवैराग्यपूर्वा सा फलं सद्यः प्रकाशते ॥ १२ ॥

Bhakti whose fruit is the attainment of Kṛṣṇa is called here Ekānta Bhakti. When it is preceded by knowledge and dispassion, it at once produces its fruit.

*Note* : The Ekānta Bhakti by herself is sufficient to lead to Mukti. But when it is accompanied by Jñāna and Vairāgya its action is quickened and Mukti is more quickly attained.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्यां विशुभक्तेर्मुक्तिप्रदत्वप्रकरणं अष्टमं प्रमेयम् ।

Here ends the Eighth Proposition of the Prameya Ratnāvalī, in which it is shown that pure Bhakti is the giver of Mukti.

## PROPOSITION NINTH

अथ प्रत्यक्षानुमानशब्दानां एव प्रमाणत्वम् ॥

Now it is being shown that means of right knowledge are perception, inference, and word only.

### PARA I

यथा श्रीभागवते ।

It is thus said in the Bhāgavata :

श्रुतिः प्रत्यक्षम् ऐतिह्यम् अनुमानम् चतुष्टयम् ॥ इति ॥ १ ॥

The means of right knowledge are four-fold, namely, revelation, perception, rumour and inference.

*Note :* The Bhāgavata Purāṇa thus mentions *four* means of right knowledge. How do you then say that they are *three* only ? This question is answered in the next paragraph.

### PARA II

प्रत्यक्षेऽन्तर्भवेद् यस्माद् ऐतिह्यं तेन देशिकः ।

प्रमाणं त्रिविधं प्राख्यत् तत्र मुख्या श्रुतिर्भवेत् ॥

Since Rumour is included in perception, therefore, the teacher has said that the means of right knowledge are three, among these Śruti is the highest.

*Note :* Rumour is a form of perception and is included in perception. Thus "there dwells a ghost in this fig tree." This is a rumour. It must have originated with the person who saw the ghost, and gave currency to the statement. It may be that his perception was a hallucination ; but all the same, every such statement is included in perception. The word "teacher" in the above paragraph means Madhvāchārya. Manu also (XII., 105) has mentioned three Pramāṇas only.

"The three (kinds of evidence), Perception, Inference, and the (sacred) Institutes, which comprise the tradition (of) many (schools), must be fully understood by him who desires perfect correctness with respect to the sacred law."

### PARA III

प्रत्यक्षम् अनुमानञ्च यत् साचिव्येन शुद्धिमत् ।

मायामुण्डावलोकदौ प्रत्यक्षं व्यभिचारियत् ॥

अनुमा चाति धूमेऽदौ वृष्टिनिर्वापिताग्निके ।

अतः प्रमाणं तत् तच्च च स्वतन्त्रं नैव सम्मतम् ॥ ३ ॥

Perception and inference (are subsidiary to the Word), because they are corrected by means of the Word. Perception is liable to become deceptive, as when one sees a magic head, etc. Similarly, inference is also liable to mistake, as when a fire is extinguished on a hill, through rain, and the smoke rises from such extinguished fire ; but the inference that there is still fire on that hill will be erroneous, merely because there was smoke. Therefore, perception and inference are not independent means of right knowledge.

*Note :* The highest means of right knowledge is the Word or the Valid Testimony or the opinion of experts. It is only statements made by them, whether such statements are embodied in a Revelation called the Word of God, or in books of science and art. The word of God-like men alone is the primary means of right knowledge. Every man's own perception and inference constitute only a very small and secondary means of right knowledge ; and the knowledge so acquired forms only an infinitesimally small part of the whole store of his knowledge. One's own perception tells that the earth is flat, but the Śruti of science declares that the earth is round, and so perception gives way to the word of the expert. Similarly, it is a wrong inference, when one says that the sun moves from east to west. The right inference is, what the Śruti of science declares, that it is the motion of the earth on its axis, that causes the appearance of the motion of the sun in heaven. Hence Śabda or the Word is superior to sensuous perception and inference both.

#### PARA IV

अनुकूलो मतस्तर्कः शुष्कन्तु परिवर्जयेत् ॥ ४ ॥

The reasoning which supports the Śruti is the right argumentation, but the reasoning that tries to go against it, is a mere dry controversy and should be avoided.

*Note :* The authority for this is to be found in the next paragraph.

#### PARA V

तथाहि वाजसनेयिनः ॥

Thus the Vājasaneyins (Br. Ār. II., 4. 5) say :

आत्मा वा अरे द्रष्टव्यः श्रोतव्यो मन्तव्यो निदिध्यासितव्य ॥ इति ॥

Verily the Self (Hari) is to be seen (directly perceived, the method for which is that He is) to be heard (from the teachings given by a Vedic Guru). He is to be cogitated upon (by reasonings in accordance with the Vedas). He is to be meditated upon.

काठकः ॥

To the same effect is the text of the Kāthakas (Kātha Up., II., 9) :

नैषा तर्केण मतिरापनेया प्रोक्तान्येनैव सुज्ञानाय प्रेष्ठ ।

( यां त्वामापः सत्यधृतिर्वतासि त्वाद्वड्नो भूयान्नचिकेतः प्रष्टा ) ॥

This belief which thou hast got, cannot be brought about, nor should it be destroyed by, argument (not based upon Vedas). When taught by the True Teacher, the Self becomes easily realised. (O dearest ! strong is thy resolution. Inquirers like thee, O Nachiketas ! are not many).

PARA VI

स्मृतिश्च ॥

So also there is the following Smṛti :

पूर्वापराविरोधेन कोऽत्रार्थोभिमतो भवेत् ।

इत्याद्यमूहनं तर्कः शुष्कतर्कन्तु वर्जयेत् ॥ इति ॥ ६ ॥

Tarka or right argument is the reasoning that tries to find out the proper interpretation of a text, so that it may not conflict with what precedes it and what follows it. Any other argument is dry and vain argument, and should be avoided.

नावेदविदुषां यस्मात् ब्रह्मधीरुपजायते ।

यच्चौपनिषदं ब्रह्म तस्मान् मुख्या श्रुतिर्मता ॥

Since the non-knower of the Vedas cannot know Brahman and in them the Brahmic intuition does not originate, and since Brahman is said to be "Aupanishadam" or known through the Upaniṣads, hence the Śruti or Revelation is considered to be the principal means of right knowledge.

तथाहि श्रुतिः ॥

As an authority for the same are the following Śrutis :

नावेदविन् मनुते तं बृहन्तम् ॥ इति ॥

The non-knower of Vedas cannot conceive that Great One.

तवौपनिषदं पुरुषं पृच्छामि ॥ इति च ॥ ७ ॥

I ask thee about the Aupanishadam Puruṣam, the person revealed by the Upaniṣads. (Br. Up., III., 9. 26.)

इति प्रमेयरत्नावल्याम् प्रमाणत्रित्वं प्रकरणम् नवमं प्रमेयम् ॥

Here ends the Ninth Proposition, dealing with the three-fold means of right knowledge in Prameya Ratnāvali.

#### EPITLOGUE

*Note :* The author now shows that the nine propositions proved by him in the preceding portion, are not invented by him, but were taught by the founder of this sect, namely, by Madhvāchārya himself.

एवमुक्तं प्राचा ।

Thus it has been said by the ancients :

श्रीमन् मध्वमते हरिः परतरस् सत्यं जगत् तत्त्वतो ।

भेदः जीवगुणा हरेरनूचरा नीचोच्चभावं गताः ॥

मुक्तिर् नैजसुखानुभूतिर्, अचला भक्तिश्च तत् साधनम् ।

अज्ञादि त्रितयं प्रमाणं, अखिलान्नायैकवेद्यो हरिः ।

According to the doctrine of Madhva, Hari is the Supreme. The world is real, separateness is true, the individual souls are infinitely graded as superior and inferior, and are dependent on God, liberation is self-realisation consisting in the enjoyment of such bliss as remained latent in the soul. Pure Bhakti (devotion) is the means to this end. Perception, inference and testimony are the sources of knowledge (measures of proof) (mundane and heavenly). Hari is knowable in the entirety of the Vedas and by Vedas alone.

*Note :* This verse which has traditionally come down from the time of Śrī Madhva sums up the nine Prameyas or propositions thus :

- (i) Hariḥ parataraḥ, Hari is supreme.
- (ii) Satyam jagat, the world is real.
- (iii) Tattvataḥ bhedaḥ, separateness is true.
- (iv) Jīva-gaṇāḥ Harer anuchārāḥ, the individual souls are servants of God, and dependent on Him.



(v) Nijhochcha bhāvam gataḥ, and are graded as superior and inferior according to their Karmas

(vi) Muktiṁ naija-sukha-anubhūtiḥ, liberation is the experiencing of the bliss belonging to the essential form of the soul.

(vii) Amalā-bhaktiḥcha tat sādhanam; pure Bhakti (devotion) is the means to this end.

(viii) Akṣādi tritayam pramānam, perception, inference and testimony are the three means of right knowledge.

(ix) Akhila-āmnāya-eka Vedyoḥ Hariḥ, Hari is to be known from the entirety of the Vedas, and all the Scriptures establish His existence and qualities.

आनन्दतीर्थैरचितानि यस्यां,  
प्रमेयरत्नानि नवैव सन्ति ।  
प्रमेयरत्नावलिरादरेण,  
प्रधीभिरेषा हृदये निधेया ॥

This PRAMEYA RATNĀVALĪ should be kept in their hearts with reverence by the wise, as it contains the nine gems (Ratna) of propositions well proven (Prameya), as they were composed by Ānanda-tīrtha (Śrī Madhvāchārya).

नित्यं निवसतु हृदये चैतन्यात्मा मुरारिर्नः ।

निरवद्योर्निवृत्तिमान् गजपतिरनुकम्पया यस्य ॥

Let MURĀRY whose Self (Ātman) is intelligence (CHĀITANYA) ever dwell in our heart: through whose grace the Lord of elephants (GAJAPATI) became free from faults and full of happiness.

इति प्रमेयरत्नावली पूर्तिमगात् ।

Here ends Prameya Ratnāvalī.

Note : The last verse has double meaning: it refers to Gajapati which is the name of the poet called Gopala Dās, as well as the king of Orissa called Pratāpa Rudra. Gajapati also refers to the elephant attacked by the alligator and saved by Hari. There is play also on the word Chaitanya.

# Alphabetical Index to the Sūtras

अ

Adhya. Pāda. Sūtra.

अंशो नानाव्यपदेशादन्यथा चापि दाशकितवादित्व-					
मधीयत एके	...	ii	3	41	381
अकरणत्वाच्च न दोषस्तथाहि दर्शयति	...	ii	4	11	403
अक्षरधियां त्ववरोधः सामान्यतद्वावाभ्यामौपसद्व-					
त्तदुक्तम्	...	iii	3	34	558
अक्षरमम्बरान्तधृतेः	...	i	3	10	119
अग्निहोत्रादि तु तत्कार्यायैव तद्दर्शनात्	...	iv	1	16	698
अग्न्यादिगतिश्रुतेरिति चेन्नभाक्तत्वात्	...	iii	1	4	428
अङ्गावबद्धास्तु न शाखासु हि प्रतिवेदम्	...	iii	3	57	600
अङ्गित्वानुपपत्तेश्च	...	ii	2	8	285
अङ्गेषु यथाश्रयभावः	...	iii	3	63	609
अचलत्वं चापेक्ष्य	...	iv	1	9	687
अणश्च	...	ii	4	7	399
अणश्च	...	ii	4	13	407
अत एव च नित्यत्वम्	...	i	3	29	138
अत एव सर्वाण्यनु	...	iv	2	2	704
अत एव चाग्नीन्धनाद्यनपेक्षा	...	iii	4	25	638
अत एव चानन्याधिपतिः	...	iv	4	9	756
अत एव चापमा सूर्यकादिवत्	...	iii	2	18	476
अत एव न देवता भूतं च	...	i	2	28	98
अत एव प्राणः	...	i	1	23	51
अतः प्रबोधोऽस्मात्	...	iii	2	8	463
अतश्चायमेऽपि दक्षिणे	...	iv	2	20	723
अतस्त्वितरज्जायो लिङ्गाच्च	...	iii	4	39	656
अतिदेशाच्च	...	iii	3	47	584
अतोऽनन्तेन तथाहि लिङ्गम्	...	iii	2	27	488
अतोऽन्याऽपि ह्येकेषामुभयोः	...	iv	1	17	700
अन्ता चराचरग्रहणात्	...	i	2	9	76
अथातो ब्रह्मजिज्ञासा	...	i	1	1	6

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.
अदृश्यत्वादिगुणको धर्मोक्तेः	...	i 2	21 87
अदृष्टानियमात्	...	ii 3	49 390
अधिकं तु भेदनिर्देशात्	...	ii 1	22 251
अधिकोपदेशात् बादरायणस्यैवं तद्दर्शनात्	...	iii 4	8 620
अधिष्ठानानुपपत्तेश्च	...	ii 2	39 325
अध्ययनमात्रवतः	...	iii 4	12 623
अनभिभवं च दर्शयति	...	iii 4	35 650
अनवस्थितेरसम्भवाच्च नेतरः	...	i 2	17 83
अनारब्धकार्ये एव तु तदवधेः	...	iv 1	15 696
अनाविष्कुर्वन्नन्वयात्	...	iii 4	50 673
अनावृत्तिः शब्दादनावृत्तिः शब्दात्	...	iv 4	22 770
अनियमः सर्वेषामविरोधात् शब्दानुमानाभ्याम्	...	iii 3	32 553
अनिष्ठादिकारिणामपि च श्रुतम्	...	iii 1	13 440
अनुकृतेस्तस्य च	...	i 3	22 130
अनुज्ञापरिहारौ देहसम्बन्धाज्ज्योतिरादिवत्	...	ii 3	46 388
अनुपपत्तेस्तु न शरीरात्	...	i 2	3 72
अनुबन्धादिभ्यः	...	iii 3	51 589
अनुष्ठेयं बादरायणः साम्यश्रुतेः	...	iii 4	19 632
अनुस्मृतेर्वादरिः	...	i 2	31 100
अनुस्मृतेश्च	...	ii 2	25 304
अनेन सर्वगतत्वमायामशब्दादिभ्यः	...	iii 2	38 501
अन्तर उपपत्तेः	...	i 2	13 81
अन्तरा चापि तु तन्मृष्टैः	...	iii 4	36 653
अन्तरा भूतग्रामवत्स्वात्मनः	...	iii 3	36 563
अन्तरा विज्ञानमनसो क्रमेण तल्लिङ्गादिति चेन्नावि			
शेषात्	...	ii 3	14 345
अन्तर्याम्यधिदैवादिषु तद्धर्मव्यपदेशात्	...	i 2	18 85
अन्तवत्त्वमसर्वज्ञता वा	...	ii 2	41 326
अन्तस्तद्धर्मोपदेशात्	...	i 1	20 46
अन्त्यावस्थितेश्चोभयनित्यत्वादविशेषः	...	ii 2	36 320
अन्यत्राभावाच्च न तृणादिवत्	...	ii 2	5 282
अन्यथात्वं शब्दादिति चेन्नाविशेषात्	...	iii 3	7 517
अन्यथानुमितौ च ज्ञशक्तिवियोगात्	...	ii 2	9 286
अन्यथा भेदानुपपत्तिरिति चेन्नोपपेक्षान्तरवत्	...	iii 3	37 564
अन्यभावव्यावृत्तेश्च	...	i 3	12 120
अस्याधिष्ठितेषु पूर्ववदभिधायिनाम्	...	iii 1	25 449
अन्यार्थं तु जैमिनिः प्रभग्याख्यानाभ्यामपि चैवमेके	...	i 4	18 188

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
अन्यार्थश्च परामर्शः	...	i	3	20 129
अन्वयादिति चेत्स्यादवधारणात्	...	iii	3	18 534
अपरिमहाच्चाल्पतमनपेक्षा	...	ii	2	17 295
अपि च सप्त	...	iii	1	16 442
अपि च स्मर्यते	...	i	3	23 130
" "	...	ii	3	43 384
" "	...	iii	4	30 643
" "	...	iii	4	37 654
अपि चैवमेके	...	iii	2	13 469
अपि संराधने प्रत्यक्षानुमानाभ्याम्	...	iii	2	21 486
अपीतौ तद्वत्प्रसङ्गादसम्भ्रमम्	...	ii	1	8 232
अप्रतीकालम्बनान्नयतीति वादरायण उभयथा च दोषात्तत्क्रतुश्च	...	iv	3	15 739
अवाधाच्च	...	ii	4	29 643
अम्बुवदग्रहणात् न तथात्वम्	...	iii	2	19 477
अभावे बादरिराह ह्येवम्	...	iv	4	10 757
अभिध्योपदेशाच्च	...	i	4	24 205
अभिमानिव्यपदेशस्तु विशेषानुगतिभ्याम्	...	ii	1	5 226
अभिव्यक्तेरित्याश्मरथ्यः	...	i	2	30 99
अभिसंध्यादिष्वपि चैवम्	...	ii	3	50 391
अभ्युपगमेऽप्यर्थाभावात्	...	ii	2	6 282
अरूपवदेव हि तत्प्रधानत्वात्	...	iii	2	14 471
अचिरादिना तत्प्रथितेः	...	iv	3	1 727
अर्भकौकस्त्वात्तद्यपदेशाच्च नेति चेन्न निचाय्यत्वादेव व्योमवच्च	...	i	2	7 73
अरूपश्रुतेरिति चेत्तदुक्तम्	...	i	3	21 129
अवस्थितिवैशेष्यादिति चेन्नाभ्युपगमाद्धृदि हि	...	ii	3	23 360
अवस्थितेरिति काशकृत्स्नः	...	i	4	22 199
अविभागैर्न दृष्टत्वात्	...	iv	4	4 749
अविभागो वचनात्	...	iv	2	16 717
अविरोधश्चन्दनवत्	...	ii	3	22 359
अशुद्धमिति चेन्न शब्दात्	...	iii	1	26 449
अश्मादिवच्च तदनुपपत्तिः	...	ii	1	23 254
अश्रुतत्वादिति चेन्नेष्टादिकारिणां प्रतीतेः	...	iii	1	6 431
असति प्रतिज्ञोपरोधो यागपद्यमन्यथा	...	ii	2	21 300
असदिति चेन्न प्रतिषेधमात्रत्वात्	...	ii	1	7 231
असद्व्यपदेशान्नेति चेन्न धर्मान्तरेण वाक्यशेषात्	...	ii	1	17 245

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
असंततेश्चाव्यतिकरः	...	ii	3	47 389
असंभवस्तु सतोऽनुपपत्तेः	...	ii	3	8 337
असार्वत्रिकी	...	iii	4	10 622
अस्ति तु	...	ii	3	2 331
अस्मिन्नस्य च तद्योगं शास्ति	...	i	1	19 43

## आ

आकाशस्तल्लिङ्गात्	...	i	1	22 48
आकाशे चाविशेषात्	...	ii	2	24 302
आकाशोऽर्थान्तरत्वादिद्वयदेशात्	...	i	3	41 157
आचारदर्शनात्	...	iii	4	3 617
आतिवाहिकास्तल्लिङ्गात्	...	iv	3	4 732
आत्मकृतेः परिणामात्	...	i	4	26 207
आत्मगृहीतिरितरवदुत्तरात्	...	iii	3	17 533
आत्मनि चैवं विचित्राश्च हि	...	ii	1	28 260
आत्मशब्दाच्च	...	iii	3	16 533
आत्मा प्रकारणात्	...	iv	4	3 748
आत्मेति तूपगच्छन्ति ग्राहयन्ति च	...	iv	1	3 682
आदरादलोपः	...	iii	3	41 571
आदित्यादिमतयश्चाङ्ग उपपत्तेः	...	iv	1	6 685
आध्यानाय प्रयोजनाभावात्	...	iii	3	15 531
आनन्दमयोऽभ्यासात्	...	i	1	12 30
आनन्दादयः प्रधानस्य	...	iii	3	12 528
आनर्थक्यमिति चेन्न तदपेक्षत्वात्	...	iii	1	11 438
आनुमानिकमप्येकेषामिति चेन्न शरीररूपकविन्यस्त- गृहीते दर्शयति च	...	i	4	1 162
आपः	...	ii	3	10 340
आप्रायणात्तत्रापि हि दृष्टम्	...	iv	1	12 691
आभास एव च	...	ii	3	48 389
आमनन्ति चैनमस्मिन्	...	i	2	33 101
आर्त्विज्यमित्यौडुलोमिस्तस्मै हि परिक्रीयते	...	iii	4	45 665
आवृत्तिसकृदुपदेशात्	...	iv	1	1 680
आसीनः संभवात्	...	iv	1	7 686
आह च तन्मात्रम्	...	iii	2	16 472

इ

इतरपरामर्शात्स इति चेन्नासंभवात्	...	i	3	18	127
इतरव्यपदेशाद्विताकरणादिदोषप्रसक्तिः	...	ii	1	21	250
इतरस्याप्येवमसंश्लेषः पाते तु	...	iv	1	14	694
इतरेतरप्रत्ययत्वादिति चेन्नोत्पत्तिमात्रनिमित्तत्वात्	...	ii	2	19	298
इतरे त्वर्थसामान्यात्	...	iii	3	14	530
इतरेषां चानुपलब्धेः	...	ii	1	2	219
इयदामननात्	...	iii	3	35	561

ई

ईक्षति कर्मव्यपदेशात्सः	...	i	3	13	122
ईक्षतेर्नाशब्दम्	...	i	1	5	23

उ

उत्क्रमिष्यत एवं भावदियौडुलोमिः	...	i	4	21	196
उत्क्रान्तिगत्यागतीनाम्	...	ii	3	18	354
उत्तराच्च चेदाविभूतस्वरूपस्तु	...	i	3	19	128
उत्तरोत्पादे च पूर्वनिरोधात्	...	ii	2	20	299
उपत्त्यसंभवात्	...	ii	2	42	327
उदासोनानामपि चैवं सिद्धिः	...	ii	2	27	306
उपदेशभेदान्नेति चेन्नोभयस्मिन्नप्यविरोधात्	...	i	1	27	56
उपादानात्	...	ii	3	33	371
उपपत्तेश्च	...	iii	2	36	498
उपपद्यते चाप्युपलभ्यते च	...	ii	1	36	271
उपपन्नस्तल्लक्षणार्थोपलब्धेर्लोकावत्	...	iii	3	31	550
उपपूर्वकमपि त्वेके भावमशनवत्तदुक्तम्	...	iii	4	42	661
उपमर्हं च	...	iii	4	16	628
उपलब्धिवदनियमः	...	ii	3	35	372
उपसंहारदर्शान्नेति चेन्न क्षीरवद्वि	...	ii	1	24	254
उपसंहारोऽर्थाभेदाद्विधिशेषवत्समाने च	...	iii	3	6	516
उपस्थितेऽतस्तद्वचनात्	...	iii	3	42	572
उभयथा च दोषात्	...	ii	2	16	294
” ”	...	ii	2	23	302

उभयथाऽपि न कर्मातस्तदभावः	...	ii	2	12	291
उभयव्यपदेशात्त्वहिकुण्डलवत्	...	iii	2	28	490
उभयव्यामोहान्तसिद्धेः	...	iv	3	5	733

## ऊ

ऊर्ध्वरेतः सु च शब्दे हि	...	iii	4	17	629
--------------------------	-----	-----	---	----	-----

## ए

एक आत्मनः शरीरे भावात्	...	iii	3	55	598
एतेन मातरिश्वा व्याख्यातः	...	ii	3	7	336
एतेन योगः प्रयुक्तः	...	ii	1	3	221
एतेन शिष्टा परिग्रहा अपि व्याख्याताः	...	ii	1	12	237
एतेन सर्वे व्याख्याता व्याख्याताः	...	i	4	28	211
एवं चाऽत्माऽकात्स्न्यम्	...	ii	2	34	318
एवं मुक्तिफलानियमस्तदवस्थावधृतेस्तदवस्थावधृतेः	...	iii	4	52	678
एवमप्युपन्यासात्पूर्वभावादविरोधं बादरायणाः	...	iv	4	7	753

## ऐ

ऐहिकमप्यप्रतिबन्धे तद्दर्शनात्	...	iii	4	51	675
--------------------------------	-----	-----	---	----	-----

## क.

कम्पनात्	...	i	3	39	154
करणवच्चेन्न भोगादिभ्यः	...	ii	2	40	325
कर्ता शास्त्रार्थवत्त्वान्	...	ii	3	31	369
कर्मकर्तृव्यपदेशाच्च	...	i	2	4	72
कल्पनोपदेशाच्च मध्वादिवदविरोधः	...	i	4	10	173
कामकारेण वैके	...	iii	4	15	627
कामाच्च नानुमानापेक्षा	...	i	1	18	43
कामादीतरत्र तत्र चाऽऽयतनादिभ्यः	...	iii	3	40	569
काम्यास्तु यथाकामं समुच्चीयेरन्न वा पूर्वहेत्वभावात्	...	iii	3	62	606
कारणत्वेन चाऽऽकाशादिषु यथाव्यपदिष्टोक्तेः	...	i	4	14	180
काय बादरिरस्य गत्युपपत्तेः	...	iv	3	7	735

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
कार्याख्यानादपूर्वम्	...	iii	3	19 536
कार्याख्ये तदध्यक्षेण सहातः परमभिधानात्	...	iv	3	10 736
कृतप्रयत्नापेक्षस्तु विहितप्रतिषिद्धावैयर्थ्यादिभ्यः	...	ii	3	40 379
कृतगत्येऽनुशयवान्दृष्टस्मृतिभ्यां	...	iii	1	8 435
कृत्स्नभावात्तु गृहिणोपसंहारः	...	iii	4	48 669
कृत्स्नप्रसक्तिर्निर्वयवत्वशब्दव्यक्रोपो वा	...	ii	1	26 256
क्षणिकत्वाच्च	...	ii	2	31 312
क्षत्रियत्वावगतेश्चोत्तरत्र चैत्ररथेन लिङ्गात्	...	i	3	35 149

## ग

गतिशब्दाभ्यां तथाहि दृष्टं लिङ्गं च	...	i	3	15 125
गतिसामान्यात्	...	i	1	10 27
गतेरर्थवत्त्वमुभयथाऽन्यथा हि विरोधः	...	iii	3	30 549
गुणसाधारण्यश्रुतेश्च	...	iii	3	66 611
गुणाद्बालोकवत्	...	ii	3	24 360
गुहां प्रविष्टावात्मनो हि तद्दर्शनात्	...	i	2	11 77
गौणश्चेन्नाऽऽत्मशब्दात्	...	i	1	6 24
गौण्यसंभवात्	...	ii	3	3 332
"	...	ii	4	2 394

## च

चक्षुरादिवत् तत्सहशिष्टायादिभ्यः	...	ii	4	10 403
चमसवदविशेषात्	...	i	4	8 170
चरणादिति चेन्नोपलक्षणार्थेति क्वाण्गीजिनिः	...	iii	1	10 437
चराचरव्यपाश्रस्तु स्यात्तद्व्यपदेशो भाक्तस्तद्भावभा- वित्वात्	...	ii	3	15 348
चित्ति तन्मात्रेण तदात्मकत्वादित्यौडुलौमिः	...	iv	4	6 752

## छ

छन्दत उभयाविरोधात्	...	iii	3	29 548
छन्दोभिधानान्नेति चेन्न तथा चेतोर्पणनिगदात्तथाहि दर्शनम्	...	i	1	25 54

## ज

जगद्वाचित्वात्	...	i	4	16 185
----------------	-----	---	---	--------



	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
जगद्व्यापारवर्जं प्रकरणादसंनिहितत्वाच्च	...	iv	4	17 765
जन्माद्यस्य यतः	...	i	1	2 12
जीवमुख्यप्राणलिङ्गान्नेति चेत्तद्व्याख्यातम्	...	i	4	17 187
जीवमुख्यप्राणलिङ्गान्नेति चेन्नोपासार्त्रैविध्यादाश्रित- त्वादिह तद्योगात्	...	i	1	31 66
ज्ञ यत्वावचनाच्च	...	i	4	4 167
ज्ञोऽतएव	...	ii	3	17 352
ज्योतिराधिष्ठानं तु तदामननात्	...	ii	4	14 408
ज्योतिरुपक्रमा तु तथाह्यधीयते एके	...	i	4	9 172
ज्योतिर्दर्शनात्	...	i	3	40 155
ज्योतिश्चरणाभिधानात्	...	i	1	24 53
ज्योतिषि भावाच्च	...	i	3	32 143
ज्योतिषैकैषामसत्यन्ने	...	i	4	13 177

## त

त इन्द्रियाणि तद्व्यपदेशादन्यत्र श्रेष्ठात्	...	ii	4	17 410
तच्छ्रुतेः	...	iii	4	4 618
तडितोऽधिवरुणः संबन्धात्	...	iv	3	3 731
तत्तु समन्वयात्	...	i	1	4 20
तस्माकश्रुतेश्च	...	ii	4	4 395
तत्पूर्वकत्वाद्वाचः	...	ii	4	3 395
तत्साभाव्यापत्तिरुपपत्तेः	...	iii	1	23 447
तत्रापि च तद्व्यापारादविरोधः	...	iii	1	17 442
तथा चैकवाक्यतोपबन्धात्	...	iii	4	24 637
तथाऽन्यप्रतिषेधात्	...	iii	2	37 499
तथा प्राणाः	...	ii	4	1 394
तदधिगम उत्तरपूर्वाधयोरश्लेषविनाशौ तद्व्यपदेशात्	...	iv	1	13 392
तदधीनत्वादर्थवत्	...	i	4	3 166
तदनन्त्यत्वमारम्भणशब्दाद्विभ्यः	...	ii	1	14 240
तदनन्तरप्रतिपत्तौ रंहति संपरिष्वक्तः प्रभनिरूपणाभ्याम्	...	iii	1	1 426
तदभावो नाडीषु तच्छ्रुतेरात्मनि च	...	iii	2	7 461
तदभावनिर्धारणे च प्रवृत्तेः	...	i	3	37 151
तदभिध्यानादेव तल्लिङ्गात्सः	...	ii	3	12 343
तद्व्यक्तमाह हि	...	iii	2	23 484
तदाऽपीतेः संसारव्यपदेशात्	...	iv	2	8 710

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
तदुपर्यपि बादरायणः संभवात्	...	i	3	26 134
तद्विकोप्रज्वलनं तत्प्रकाशितद्वारो विद्यासामर्थ्यात्त- च्छेषगत्यनुस्मृतियोगाच्च हार्दानुगृहीतः योगाच्च शताधिकया	...	iv	2	17 719
तद्गुणसारत्वात् तद्व्यपदेशः प्राज्ञवत्	...	ii	3	27 364
तद्भूतस्य तु नातद्भावो जैमिनेरपि नियमातद्भावावेभ्यः	...	iii	4	40 658
तद्वतो विधानात्	...	iii	4	6 619
तद्वेतुव्यपदेशाच्च	...	i	1	14 39
तन्निर्धारणानियमस्तद्वदृष्टेः पृथग्व्यप्रतिबन्धः फलम्	...	iii	3	43 574
तन्निष्ठस्य मोक्षोपदेशात्	...	i	1	7 25
तन्मनः प्राणउत्तरात्	...	iv	2	3 705
तन्वभावे संध्यवदुपपत्तेः	...	iv	4	13 761
तर्काप्रतिष्ठानादप्यन्यथाऽनुमेयमिति चेदेवमप्यनिर्मो- क्षप्रसङ्गः	...	ii	1	11 235
तस्य च नित्यत्वात्	...	ii	4	16 409
तस्यैव चोपपत्तेरूपमा	...	iv	2	11 711
तानि परे तथाह्याह	...	iv	2	15 716
तुल्यं तु दर्शनम्	...	iii	4	9 621
तृतीयशब्दावरोधः संशोकजस्य	...	iii	1	22 446
तेजोऽतस्तथाह्याह	...	ii	3	9 339
त्रयाणामेव चैवमुपन्यासः प्रश्नश्च	...	i	4	6 169
त्र्यात्मकत्वात् भूयस्त्वात्	...	iii	1	2 427

## द

दर्शनाच्च	...	iii	1	21 445
" "	...	iii	2	21 479
" "	...	iii	3	49 587
" "	...	iii	3	68 612
" "	...	iv	3	13 738
दं यत्तच्चैवं प्रत्यक्षानुमाने	...	iv	4	20 768
दर्शयति च	...	iii	3	5 514
" "	...	iii	3	23 540
दर्शयति चाथोपि स्मर्यते	...	iii	2	17 473
द्वहर उत्तरेभ्यः	...	i	3	14 124
दृश्यते तु	...	ii	1	6 230
देवादिबदपि लोके	...	ii	1	25 225

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
देहयोगाद्वा सोऽपि	...	iii.	2	6 459
द्युभवाद्यायतनं स्वशब्दात्	...	i	3	1 103
द्वादशाहबहुभयविधं बादरायणोऽतः	...	vi	4	12 758

## ध

धर्मं जैमिनिरतएव	...	iii	2	41 504
धर्मोपपत्तेश्च	...	i	3	9 118
धृतेश्च महिम्नोऽस्यास्मिन्नुपलब्धेः	...	i	3	16 126
ध्यानाच्च	...	iv	1	8 687

## न

न कर्माविभागादिति चेन्नानादित्वात्	...	ii	1	35 268
न च कर्तुः करणम्	...	ii	2	43 328
न च कार्ये प्रतिपत्त्याभिसन्धिः	...	iv	3	14 739
न च पर्णाद्यादप्यविराधो विकारादिभ्यः	...	ii	2	35 319
न च स्मार्तव्यतद्वर्माभिलापात्	...	i	2	19 85
न चाऽऽधिकारिकमपि पतनानुमानात्तदयोगात्	...	iii	4	41 660
न तु दृष्टान्तभावात्	...	ii	1	9 233
न तृतीये तथोपलब्धेः	...	iii	1	19 444
न प्रतीके न हि	...	iv	1	4 683
न प्रयोजनवत्त्वात्	...	ii	1	32 265
न भावोऽनुपलब्धेः	...	ii	2	30 311
न मेदादिति चेन्न प्रत्येकमतद्वचनात्	...	iii	2	12 468
न वक्तुरात्मपदेशादिति चेदध्यात्मसंबन्धभूमा ह्यस्मिन्	...	i	1	29 62
न वा तत्सहभावाश्रुतेः	...	iii	3	67 611
न वा प्रकरणमेदात्परोवरीयस्त्वादिवत्	...	iii	3	8 519
न वायुक्रिये पृथगुपदेशात्	...	ii	4	9 401
न वा विशेषात्	...	iii	3	22 540
न वियदश्रुतेः	...	ii	3	1 331
न विलक्षणत्वादस्य तथात्वं च शब्दात्	...	ii	1	4 224
न संख्योपसंग्रहादपि नानाभावादतिरेकाच्च	...	i	4	11 176
न सामान्यादप्युपलब्धेर्मृत्युवन्न हि लोकापत्तिः	...	iii	3	53 593
न स्थानतोऽपि परस्योभयलिङ्गं सर्वत्र हि	...	iii	2	11 467
नाणुरतच्छ्रुतेरिति चेन्नेतराधिकारात्	...	ii	3	20 357
नातिचिरेण विशेषात्	...	iii	1	24 448

	Adhya.	Pāda	Sūtra.	
नाऽऽमाऽश्रुतेनित्यत्वाच्च ताभ्यः	...	ii	3	16 350
नाना शब्दादिभेदात्	...	iii	3	60 604
नानुमानमतच्छब्दात्	...	i	3	3 104
नाभाव उपलब्धेः	...	ii	2	28 308
नाविशेषात्	...	iii	4	13 626
नासतोऽदृष्टत्वात्	...	ii	2	26 305
नित्यमेव न भावात्	...	ii	2	14 293
नित्योपलब्ध्यनुपलब्धिप्रसङ्गोऽन्यतरनियमो वाऽ-				
न्यथा	...	ii	3	30 367
नियमाच्च	...	iii	4	7 619
निर्मातारं चैके पुत्रादयश्च	...	iii	2	2 455
निशि नेति चेन्न संबन्धस्य यावद्देहभावित्वाद्दर्शयति च	...	iv	2	19 721
नेतरोऽनुपपत्तेः	...	i	1	16 41
नैकस्मिन्दर्शयतो हि	...	iv	2	6 708
नैकस्मिन्नसंभवात्	...	ii	2	33 317
नोपमर्दनातः	...	iv	2	10 711

## प

पञ्चवृत्तिर्मनोवद्व्यपदिश्यते	...	ii	4	12 405
पटवच्च	...	ii	1	19 248
पत्यादिशब्देभ्यः	...	i	3	43 160
पत्युरसामञ्जस्यात्	...	ii	2	37 321
पयोम्बुवच्चेत्त्रापि	...	ii	2	3 280
परं जैमिनिर्मुक्तत्वात्	...	iv	3	12 737
परमतः सेतून्मानसंबन्धभेदव्यपदेशेभ्यः	...	iii	2	32 494
परात्तु तच्छ्रुतेः	...	ii	3	39 378
पराभिध्यानात्तिरोहितं ततो ह्यस्य बन्धविपर्ययो	...	iii	2	5 458
परामशं जैमिनिरचोदना चापवदति हि	...	iii	4	18 630
परेण च शब्दस्य ताद्विध्यं भूयस्त्वास्वनुबन्धः	...	iii	3	54 595
पारिप्लावार्था इति चेन्न विशेषितत्वात्	...	iii	4	23 636
पुंस्त्वादेः सतोऽभिव्यक्तियोगात्	...	ii	3	29 365
पुरुषविद्यायामिष चेतरेषामनाम्नानात्	...	iii	3	25 541
पुरुषार्थोऽतः शब्दादिति बादरायणः	...	iii	4	1 614
पुरुषाश्मवदिति चेत्तथाऽपि	...	iii	2	7 284
पूर्वं तु बादरायणो हेतुव्यपदेशात्	...	iii	2	42 504

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
पूर्ववद्वा	...	iii	2	30 491
पूर्वविकल्पः प्रकरणात्स्या त्क्रियामानसवत्	...	iii	3	46 580
पृथगुपदेशात्	...	ii	3	26 363
पृथिव्यधिकाररूपशब्दान्तरेभ्यः	...	ii	3	11 341
प्रकरणाच्च	...	i	2	10 76
प्रकरणात्	...	i	2	24 89
॥	...	i	3	6 105
प्रकाशवच्चावैयर्थ्यात्	...	iii	2	15 472
प्रकाशादिवच्चावैशेष्यं	...	iii	2	26 487
प्रकाशाश्च कर्मण्यभ्यासात्	...	iii	2	25 487
प्रकाशादिवन्नैवं परः	...	ii	3	44 386
प्रकाशाभ्रयवद्वा तेजस्वात्	...	iii	2	29 491
प्रकृतिश्च प्रतिज्ञादृष्टान्तानुपरोधात्	...	i	4	23 204
प्रकृतैतावत्त्वं हि प्रतिषेधति ततो ब्रवीति च भूयः	...	iii	2	22 482
प्रज्ञान्तर पृथक्त्ववद् दृष्टिश्च तदुक्तम्	...	iii	3	52 592
प्रतिज्ञासिद्धेर्लिङ्गमाश्रमरथ्यः	...	i	4	20 195
प्रतिज्ञाहानिरव्यतिरेकाच्छब्देभ्यः	...	ii	3	5 333
प्रतिषेधाच्च	...	iii	2	31 492
प्रतिषेधादिति चेन्न शारीरात्	...	iv	2	12 712
प्रतिसंख्याप्रतिसंख्यानिरोधाप्राप्तिरविच्छेदात्	...	ii	2	22 300
प्रत्यक्षोपदेशान्नेति चेन्नाऽऽधिकारिकमण्डलस्योक्तेः	...	iv	4	18 766
प्रथमेऽभ्रवणादिति चेन्न ता एव ह्युपपत्तेः	...	iii	1	5 430
प्रदानवदेव तदुक्तम्	...	iii	3	44 576
प्रदीपवदावेशस्तथाहि दर्शयति	...	iv	4	15 762
प्रादेशादिति चेन्नान्तर्भावात्	...	ii	3	51 391
प्रवृत्तेश्च	...	ii	2	2 279
प्रसिद्धेश्च	...	i	3	17 127
प्राणगतेश्च	...	iii	1	3 428
प्राणवता शब्दात्	...	ii	4	15 408
प्राणभृच्च	...	i	3	4 104
प्राणस्तथाऽनुगमात्	...	i	1	28 62
प्राणाद्यौ वाक्यशेषात्	...	i	4	12 177
प्रियशिरस्त्वद्यप्राप्तिरुपचयापचयौ हि भेदे	...	iii	3	13 529

फ

फलमत उपपत्तेः

... iii 2 39 503

## ब

बहिस्तूभयथाऽपि स्मृतेराचाराच्च	...	iii	4	43	662
बुद्धयर्थः पादवत्	...	iii	2	34	496
ब्रह्मदृष्टिरुत्कर्षात्	...	iv	1	5	684
ब्राह्मेण जैमिनिरुपन्यासादिभ्यः	...	iv	4	5	751

## भ

भाक्तं वाऽनात्मवित्त्वात्तथाहि दर्शयति	...	iii	1	7	432
भावं जैमिनिर्विकल्पामननात्	...	iv	4	11	758
भावं तु बादरायणोऽस्ति हि	...	i	3	33	143
भावशब्दाच्च	...	iii	4	22	635
भावे चोपलब्धेः	...	ii	1	15	244
भावे जामद्वत्	...	iv	4	14	761
भूतादिपादव्यपदेशोपपत्तेश्चैवम्	...	i	1	26	55
भूतेषु तच्छ्रुतेः	...	iv	2	5	707
भूमा संप्रसादादध्युपदेशात्	...	i	3	8	114
भूम्नः क्रतुवज्ज्यायस्त्वं तथाहि दर्शयति	...	iii	3	59	603
भेदव्यपदेशाच्च	...	i	1	17	42
भेदव्यपदेशाच्चान्यः	...	i	1	21	47
भेदव्यपदेशात्	...	i	3	5	104
भेदश्रुतेः	...	ii	4	18	411
भेदान्नेति चेन्नैकस्यामपि	...	iii	3	2	512
भोक्षत्रापत्तेरविभागश्चेत्स्याल्लोकवत्	...	ii	1	13	238
भोगमात्रसाम्यलिङ्गाच्च	...	iv	4	21	769
भोगेन त्वितरे क्षपयित्वाऽथ संपद्यते	...	iv	1	19	702

## म

मध्वादिष्वसंभवादनधिकारं जैमिनिः	...	i	3	31	142
मन्त्रवर्णात्	...	ii	3	42	383
मन्त्रादिवद्वाऽविरोधः	...	iii	3	58	601
महर्षिर्घवद्वा ह्रस्वपरिमण्डलाभ्याम्	...	ii	2	11	290
महद्बुद्धि	...	i	4	7	169
मांसादि भौमं यथाशब्दमितरयोश्च	...	ii	4	21	418
मान्त्रवर्णिकमेव च गीयते	...	i	1	15	40
मायामात्रं तु कात्स्न्येनानभिव्यक्तस्वरूपत्वात्	...	iii	2	3	456
मुक्तः प्रतिज्ञानात्	...	iv	4	2	746

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
मुक्तोपसृप्यव्यपदेशात्	...	i	3	2 103
मुग्धेऽर्द्धसंपत्तिः परिशेषात्	...	iii	2	10 465
मौनवदितरेषामप्युपदेशात्	...	iii	4	49 670

## य

यत्रैकामता तत्राविशेषात्	...	iv	1	11 689
यथा च तक्षोभयथा	...	ii	3	38 374
यथा च प्राणादिः	...	ii	1	20 248
यथेतमनेवं च	...	iii	1	9 436
यदेव विद्येति हि	...	iv	1	18 702
यावदधिकारमवस्थितिराधिकारिकाणाम्	...	iii	3	33 555
यावदात्मभावित्वाच्च न दोषस्तद्दर्शनात्	...	ii	3	28 365
यावद्विकारं तु विभागो लोकवत्	...	ii	3	6 335
युक्तेः शब्दान्तराच्च	...	ii	1	18 247
योगिनः प्रतिस्मर्यते स्मार्तं चैते	...	iv	2	21 724
योनिश्च हि गीयते	...	i	4	27 209
योनेः शरीरम्	...	iii	1	28 451

## र

रचनानुपपत्तेश्च नानुमानम्	...	ii	2	1 278
रश्म्यनुसारी	...	iv	2	18 721
रूपादिमत्त्वाच्च विपर्ययो दर्शनात्	...	ii	2	15 294
रूपोपन्यासाच्च	...	i	2	23 89
रेतः सिंग्योगोऽथ	...	iii	1	27 451

## ल

लिङ्गभूयस्त्वात्तद्वि बलीयतस्तदपि	...	iii	3	45 576
लिङ्गाच्च	...	iv	1	2 681
लोकवत्तु लीलाकैवल्यम्	...	ii	1	33 266

## व

वदतीति चेन्न प्राज्ञो हि प्रकरणात्	...	i	4	5 168
वाक्यान्वयात्	...	i	4	19 194
वाक्मनसि दर्शनाच्छब्दाच्च	...	iv	2	1 703
वायुमब्दादविशेषविशेषाभ्याम्	...	iv	3	2 729
विकरणत्वान्नेति चेत्तदुक्तम्	...	ii	1	31 263
विकल्पोऽविशिष्ट फलत्वात्	...	iii	3	61 605

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
विकारवर्ति च तथाहि स्थितिमाह	...	iv	4	19 767
विकारशब्दान्नेति चेन्न प्राचुर्यात्	...	i	1	13 38
विज्ञानादिभावे वा तदप्रतिषेधः	...	ii	2	44 328
विद्याकर्मणोस्त्विति प्रकृतत्वात्	...	iii	1	18 443
विद्यैव तु निर्धारणात्	...	iii	3	48 586
विधिर्वा धारणवत्	...	iii	4	20 633
विपर्ययेण तु क्रमोऽत उपपद्यते च	...	ii	3	13 344
विप्रतिषेधाच्च	...	ii	2	45 329
विप्रतिषेधाच्चासमञ्जसम्	...	ii	2	10 287
विभागः शतवत्	...	iii	4	11 622
विरोधः कर्मणीति चेन्नानेकप्रतिपत्तेर्दर्शनात्	...	i	3	27 135
विवक्षितगुणोपपत्तेश्च	...	i	2	2 71
विशेषं च दर्शयति	...	iv	3	16 742
विशेषणभेदव्यपदेशाभ्यां च नेतरो	...	i	2	22 88
विशेषणाच्च	...	i	2	12 78
विशुषानुग्रहश्च	...	iii	4	38 655
विशेषितत्वाच्च	...	iv	3	8 735
विहारोपदेशात्	...	ii	3	32 370
विहितत्वाच्चाऽऽश्रमकर्माणि	...	iii	4	32 645
वृद्धिहासभाषस्त्वमन्तर्भावादुभयसामञ्जस्यादेवम्	...	iii	2	20 478
वेधाद्यर्थभेदात्	...	iii	3	26 543
वैद्युतेनैव ततस्तच्छ्रुतेः	...	iv	3	6 734
वैधर्म्याच्च न स्वप्नादिवत्	...	ii	2	29 310
वैलक्षण्याच्च	...	ii	4	19 411
वैशेष्यात्तु तद्वादस्तद्वादः	...	ii	4	22 419
वैश्वानरः साधारणशब्दविशेषात्	...	i	2	25 96
वैषम्यनैर्घृण्येन न सापेक्षत्वात्तथाहि दर्शयति	...	ii	1	34 267
व्यतिरेकस्तद्भावभावित्वान्न तूपलब्धिवत्	...	iii	3	56 599
व्यतिरेकानवस्थितेश्चानपेक्षत्वात्	...	ii	2	4 281
व्यतिरेको गन्धवत् तथाहि दर्शयति	...	ii	3	25 361
व्यतिहारो विशिष्यन्ति हीतरवत्	...	iii	3	38 565
व्यपदेशाच्च क्रियायां न चेन्निर्देशविपर्ययः	...	ii	3	34 371
व्याप्तेश्च सामञ्जसम्	...	iii	3	10 523

श

शक्तिविपर्ययात्

... ii 3 36 373



	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	
शब्द इति चेन्नातः प्रभवात्प्रत्यक्षानुमानाभ्याम्	...	i	3	28 136
शब्दविशेषात्	...	i	2	5 72
शब्दश्चातोऽकामचारे	...	iii	4	31 644
शब्दादिभ्योऽन्तः प्रतिष्ठानाच्च नेति चेन्न तथादृष्ट्यु-				
पदेशादसंभवात्पुरुषविधमपि चैनमधीयते	...	i	2	27 97
शब्दादेव प्रमितः	...	i	3	24 131
शमदमाद्युपेतस्तु स्यात्तथाऽपि तु तद्विधेस्तदङ्गतया				
तेषामवश्यानुष्ठेयत्वात्	...	iii	4	27 640
शारीरश्चोभयेऽपि हि भेदेनैनमधीयते	...	i	2	20 86
शास्त्रदृष्ट्या तूपदेशो वामदेववत्	...	i	1	30 64
शास्त्रयोनित्वात्	...	i	1	3 16
शिष्टैश्च	...	iii	3	64 609
शुगस्य तदनादरश्रवणात्तदा वणात्सूच्यते हि	...	i	3	34 148
शेषत्वात्पुरुषार्थबाधो यथाऽन्येष्विति जैमिनिः	...	iii	4	2 614
श्रवणाध्ययनार्थं प्रतिषेधात्स्मृतेश्च	...	i	3	38 152
श्रुतत्वाच्च	...	i	1	11 28
"	...	iii	2	40 503
श्रुतेश्च	...	iii	4	46 665
श्रुतेस्तु शब्दमूलत्वात्	...	ii	1	27 257
श्रुतोपनिषत्कगत्यभिधानाच्च	...	i	2	16 83
श्रुत्यादिबलेयस्त्वाच्च न बाधः	...	iii	3	50 587
श्रेष्ठश्च	...	ii	4	8 400

## स

संज्ञातश्चेत्तदुक्तमस्ति तु तदपि	...	iii	3	9 520
संज्ञामूर्तिक्लमिस्तु त्रिवृत्कुर्वत उपदेशात्	...	ii	4	20 414
संयमने त्वनुभूयेत्प्राप्तोत्पद्यते तद्वतिदर्शनात्	...	iii	1	14 441
संस्कारपरामर्शात्तदभावाभिलाषाच्च	...	i	3	36 150
स एव तु कर्मानुस्मृतिशब्दविधिभ्यः	...	iii	2	9 464
संकरणादेव तु तच्छ्रुतेः	...	iv	4	8 754
सत्त्वाच्चावरस्य	...	ii	1	16 244
संध्ये सृष्टिराह हि	...	iii	2	1 454
सप्त गतेर्विशेषितत्वाच्च	...	ii	4	5 397
सप्तन्वारम्भणात्	...	iii	4	5 618

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	Page	
समवायाभ्युपगमाच्च साम्यादनवस्थितेः	...	ii	2	13	292
समाकर्षात्	...	i	4	15	181
समाध्यभावाच्च	...	ii	3	37	374
समान एवं चाभेदात्	...	iii	3	20	538
समान नामरूपत्वाच्चाऽऽवृत्तावप्यविरोधो दर्शनात् स्मृतेश्च	...	i	3	30	139
समाना चाऽऽस्त्युपक्रमादमृतत्वं चानुपोष्य	...	iv	2	7	709
समाहारात्	...	iii	3	65	610
समुदाय उभयहेतुकेऽपि तदप्राप्तिः	...	ii	2	18	296
संपत्तेरिति जैमिनिस्तथाहि दर्शयति	...	i	2	32	100
संपद्याऽऽविर्भावः स्वेन शब्दात्	...	iv	4	1	745
संबन्धादेवमन्यत्रापि	...	iii	3	21	539
संबन्धानुपपत्तेश्च	...	ii	2	38	324
संभृतिद्युन्याप्त्यपि चातः	...	iii	3	24	540
संभोगप्राप्तिरिति चेन्न वैशेष्यात्	...	i	2	8	74
सर्वत्र प्रसिद्धोपदेशात्	...	i	2	1	70
सर्वथाऽनुपपत्तेश्च	...	ii	2	32	314
सर्वथाऽपि तत्र बोभयलिङ्गात्	...	iii	4	34	649
सर्वधर्मोपपत्तेश्च	...	ii	1	37	272
सर्ववेदान्तप्रत्ययं चोदनाद्यविशेषात्	...	iii	3	1	511
सर्वाभानुमतिश्च प्राणात्यये तद्दर्शनात्	...	iii	4	28	641
सर्वापेक्षा च यज्ञादिश्रुतेरश्ववत्	...	iii	4	26	639
सर्वाभेदादन्यत्रेमे	...	iii	3	11	525
सर्वोपेता च तद्दर्शनात्	...	ii	1	30	262
सर्ववच्च तन्नियमः	...	iii	3	4	513
सहकारित्वेन च	...	iii	4	33	646
सहकार्यन्तरविधिः पक्षेण तृतीयं तद्वतो विध्यादिवत्	...	iii	4	47	667
साक्षाच्चोभयाम्नानात्	...	i	4	25	206
साक्षादप्यविरोधं जैमिनिः	...	i	2	29	99
सा च प्रशंसनात्	...	i	3	11	120
साभाव्यापत्तिरुपपत्तेः	...	iii	1	23	447
सामान्यास्तु	...	iii	2	33	495
सामीप्यास्तु तदव्यपदेशः	...	iv	3	9	736
सौपराये तर्तव्याभावात्तथा ह्यन्ये	...	iii	3	28	547
सुष्ठुतदुष्टते एवेति तु बादरिः	...	iii	1	12	439
सुखविशिष्टाभिधानादेव च	...	i	2	15	82
सुसुप्त्युत्क्रान्त्योर्भेदेन	...	i	3	42	159

	Adhya.	Pāda.	Sūtra.	Page
सूक्ष्म तु तदर्हत्वात्	...	i	4	2 165
सूक्ष्म प्रमाणतश्च तथोपलब्धेः	...	iv	2	9 711
सूचकश्च हि श्रुतेराचक्षते च तद्विदः	...	iii	2	4 457
सैव हि सत्यादयः	...	iii	3	39 566
सोऽप्यक्षे तदुपगमादिभ्यः	...	iv	2	4 706
स्तुतयेऽनुमतिर्वा	...	iii	4	14 626
स्तुतिमात्रमुपादानादिति चेन्नापूर्वत्वात्	...	iii	4	21 633
स्थानविशेषादप्युक्त्यादिवत्	...	iii	2	35 497
स्थानादिव्यपदेशाच्च	...	i	2	14 82
स्थित्यदानाभ्यां च	...	i	3	7 105
स्पष्टो ह्येकेषाम्	...	iv	2	13 713
स्मरन्ति च	...	ii	3	45 386
"	...	iii	1	15 441
"	...	iv	1	10 688
स्मर्यते च	...	iv	2	14 715
स्मर्यतेऽपि च लोके	...	iii	1	20 444
स्मर्यमाणमनुमानं स्यादिति	...	i	2	26 96
स्मृतेश्च	...	i	2	6 73
"	...	iv	3	11 737
स्मृत्यनवकाशदोषप्रसङ्ग इति चेन्नान्यस्मृत्यनवकाश-				
दोषप्रसङ्गात्	...	ii	1	1 215
स्याच्चैकस्य ब्रह्मशब्दवत्	...	ii	3	4 333
स्वपक्षे दोषाच्च	...	ii	1	10 234
"	...	ii	1	29 261
स्वशब्दोन्मानाभ्यां च	...	ii	3	21 359
स्वात्मनश्चोत्तरयोः	...	ii	3	19 355
स्वाध्यायस्य तथात्वेन हि समाचारेऽधिकाराच्च	...	iii	3	3 512
स्वाप्ययसंपत्त्योरन्यतरापेक्षमाविष्कृतं हि	...	iv	4	16 763
स्वाप्यात्	...	i	1	9 26
स्वामिनः फलश्रुतेरित्यात्रेयः	...	iii	4	44 664
ह				
हस्तादयस्तु स्थितेऽतो नैवम्	...	ii	4	6 397
हानौ तूपायनशब्दशेषत्वात्कुशाच्छन्दस्तुत्युपगानवत्त-				
दुक्तम्	...	iii	3	27 545
हृद्यपेक्षया तु मनुष्याधिकारत्वात्	...	i	3	25 132
हृद्यत्वावचनाच्च	...	i	1	8 62

# Word Index to the Vedanta Sūtras

अ

अ iv. 3. 15, p. 739  
 अकरणादि ii. 1. 21, p. 250  
 अकामचारे iii. 4. 31, p. 644  
 अकारणत्वात् ii. 4. 11, p. 404.  
 अक्षरम् i. 3. 10, p. 119.  
 अक्षर-धियां iii. 3. 34, p. 558.  
 अंग iii. 3. 57, p. 600.  
 अग्नं ज्वलनं iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 अंगतया iii. 4. 27, p. 640.  
 अग्न्यादि iii. 1. 4, p. 428.  
 अग्नि iii. 4. 25, p. 638.  
 अगित्वं ii. 2. 8, p. 285.  
 अग्निहोत्र—आदि iv. 1. 16, p. 698.  
 अगे iv. 1. 6, p. 685.  
 अगेषु iii. 3. 63, p. 609.  
 अमदयात् iii. 2. 19, p. 477.  
 अघयोः iv. 1. 13, p. 693.  
 अचलत्वं iv. 1. 9, p. 687.  
 अचोदना iii. 4. 18, p. 630.  
 अणवः ii. 4. 7, p. 399.  
 अणुः ii. 3. 20, p. 357 ; ii. 4. 13, p. 407.  
 अतः i. 1. 1, p. 6 ; i. 3. 28, p. 136 ; ii. 2. 12, p. 291 ; ii. 3. 9, p. 339 ; ii. 3. 13, p. 344 ; ii. 4. 6, p. 397 ; iii. 2. 8, p. 463 ; iii. 2. 27, p. 488 ; iii. 2. 32, p. 494 ; iii. 2. 39, p. 503 ; iii. 3. 24, p. 540 ; iii. 3. 42, p. 572 ; iii. 4. 1, p. 614 ; iii. 4. 31, p. 644 ; iii. 4. 39, p. 656 ; iv. 1. 17, p. 700 ; iv. 2. 2, p. 704 ; iv. 2. 10, p. 711 ; iv. 2. 20, p. 723 ; iv. 3. 10, p. 736 ; iv. 4. 9, p. 756 ; iv. 4. 12, p. 758.  
 अत्यन्तम् ii. 2. 17, p. 295.  
 अतर् ii. 3. 20, p. 357.  
 अतर् iii. 2. 12, p. 468.

अतर्-रूप iii. 4. 40, p. 659.  
 अतर् धर्म i. 2. 19, p. 85.  
 अतर्दशान् i. 3. 3, p. 104.  
 अतर्भावः iii. 4. 40, p. 659.  
 अतर्पव i. 1. 23, p. 51 ; i. 2. 28, p. 98 ; i. 3. 29, p. 138 ; ii. 3. 17, p. 352 ; iii. 2. 11, p. 504.  
 अतः एव iii. 2. 18, p. 476 ; iii. 4. 25, p. 638.  
 अत्यये iii. 1. 8, p. 435 ; iii. 1. 28, p. 611 ; iv. 3. 10, p. 736.  
 अत्ता i. 2. 9, p. 76.  
 अतिचिरेण iii. 1. 24, p. 448.  
 अतिदेशात् iii. 3. 47, p. 584.  
 अतिरेकात् i. 4. 11, p. 176.  
 अथ i. 1. 1, p. 6 ; iii. 1. 27, p. 451 ; iv. 1. 19, p. 702.  
 अथो iii. 2. 17, p. 473.  
 अदनाभ्यां i. 3. 7, p. 105.  
 अदृश्यत्वं i. 2. 21, p. 88.  
 अदृष्ट ii. 3. 49, p. 390.  
 अदृष्टत्वात् ii. 2. 26, p. 305.  
 अदवणात् i. 3. 34, p. 148.  
 अधि i. 3. 8, p. 115 ; iv. 3. 3, p. 731.  
 अध्यक्षे iv. 2. 4, p. 706.  
 अध्यक्षेण iv. 3. 10, p. 736.  
 अध्ययन i. 3. 38, p. 152.  
 अध्ययनमात्रवतः iii. 4. 12, p. 623.  
 अधिक iii. 4. 8, p. 620.  
 अधिकम् ii. 1. 22, p. 251.  
 अधिकार ii. 3. 11, p. 341.  
 अधिकारात् ii. 3. 20, p. 357, iii. 3. 3, p. 512.  
 अधिकारत्वात् i. 3. 25, p. 132.  
 अधिकारिक iv. 4. 18, p. 766.  
 अधिकारिकायाम् iii. 3. 33, p. 555.  
 अधिगमे iv. 1. 13, p. 692.

- अधिदेवादिषु i. 2. 18, p. 85.  
 अद्दे iii. 2. 10, p. 465.  
 अधिष्ठान् ii. 2. 39, p. 325.  
 अधिष्ठिते iii. 1. 25, p. 449.  
 अधिनत्वात् i. 4. 3, p. 166.  
 अधियते i. 2. 20, p. 86; i. 2. 27, p. 97; i. 4. 9, p. 172; ii. 3. 41, p. 381.  
 अनु iv. 2. 2, p. 704.  
 अनुकृते: i. 3. 22, p. 130.  
 अनुगमात् i. 1. 28, p. 62.  
 अनुगतिभ्याम् ii. 1. 5, p. 227.  
 अनुगृह्यते iii. 4. 38, p. 655.  
 अनुगृहीतः iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 अनुसृष्टः ii. 3. 46, p. 388.  
 अनुसृष्टः i. 1. 21, p. 47; i. 3. 12, p. 120; ii. 1. 1, p. 215; iii. 1. 25, p. 449; iii. 2. 37, p. 499; iv. 1. 17, p. 700.  
 अनुसृष्टे iii. 3. 28, p. 547.  
 अनुसृष्टे iii. 4. 2, p. 614.  
 अन्यत्र ii. 2. 5, p. 282; ii. 4. 17, p. 410; iii. 3. 11, p. 525; iii. 3. 21, p. 539.  
 अन्त iii. 3. 1, p. 511.  
 अन्यतर ii. 3. 30, p. 367; iv. 4. 16, p. 763.  
 अन्यथा ii. 1. 11, p. 235; ii. 2. 9, p. 286; ii. 2. 21, p. 300; ii. 3. 30, p. 367; ii. 3. 41, p. 381; iii. 3. 30, p. 548; iii. 3. 37, p. 564.  
 अन्यथात्वं iii. 3. 7, p. 517.  
 अनधिकारं i. 3. 31, p. 142.  
 अनन्तेन iii. 2. 27, p. 488.  
 अनन्यत्वम् ii. 1. 14, p. 240.  
 अन्न iii. 4. 28, p. 641.  
 अनपेक्षा ii. 2. 17, p. 295; iii. 4. 25, p. 638.  
 अनपेक्षतात् ii. 2. 4, p. 281.  
 अनभिप्रेतत्वरूपतात् iii. 2. 3, p. 456.  
 अनन्याअधिरतिः iv. 4. 9, p. 756.  
 अन्यथा i. 4. 19, p. 194; iii. 3. 18, p. 534; iii. 4. 50, p. 673.  
 अन्याधिः i. 3. 20, p. 129.  
 अन्याधिम् i. 4. 18, p. 188.  
 अन्तर्ग्रामी i. 2. 18, p. 86.  
 अन्तर्गतात् ii. 3. 51, p. 391; iii. 2. 20, p. 473.  
 अन्तर i. 2. 13, p. 81; i. 2. 27, p. 97; iii. 1. 1, p. 426; iii. 3. 52, p. 592; iii. 4. 47, p. 667.  
 अन्तराः ii. 3. 14, p. 345; iii. 3. 36, p. 563; iii. 4. 36, p. 653.  
 अन्तवत्त्वम् ii. 2. 41, p. 326.  
 अनवकाशे ii. 1. 1, p. 215.  
 अनवस्थिते: i. 2. 17, p. 83; ii. 2. 4, p. 281.  
 अन्तस् i. 1. 20, p. 46.  
 अनात्मवित्वात् iii. 1. 7, p. 432.  
 अनारब्ध-कार्ये iv. 1. 15, p. 696.  
 अनाम्नात् iii. 3. 25, p. 541.  
 अनादर i. 3. 34, p. 148.  
 अनादित्वात् ii. 1. 35, p. 268.  
 अनावृत्तिः iv. 4. 22, p. 770.  
 अनाविच्छिन्नम् iii. 4. 50, p. 673.  
 अन्त्यावस्थिते ii. 2. 36, p. 320.  
 अनियमः ii. 3. 35, p. 373; iii. 3. 32, p. 553; iii. 3. 43, p. 574; iii. 4. 52, p. 678.  
 अनियमात् ii. 3. 49, p. 390.  
 अनभिभवम् iii. 4. 35, p. 650.  
 अनिमोक्षे ii. 1. 11, p. 235.  
 अनिष्टादि कारिणाम् iii. 1. 13, p. 440.  
 अनुपपत्तिः i. 1. 16, p. 41; i. 2. 3, p. 72; ii. 1. 23, p. 254; ii. 2. 1, p. 278; ii. 2. 8, p. 285; ii. 2. 32, p. 314; ii. 2. 38, p. 324; ii. 2. 39, p. 325; ii. 3. 8, p. 337; iii. 3. 37, p. 564.  
 अनुपपत्तेः ii. 2. 8, p. 285.  
 अनुपपत्तेः i. 4. 23, p. 204.  
 अनुपपत्तेः ii. 1. 2, p. 219.  
 अनुपपत्तेः ii. 3. 30, p. 367.  
 अनुपपत्तेः ii. 2. 30, p. 311.  
 अनुपपत्तेः iii. 3. 54, p. 595.  
 अनुपपत्तेः आदिभ्यः iii. 3. 51, p. 589.  
 अनुपपत्तेः iv. 2. 7, p. 709.  
 अनुपपत्तेः iii. 1. 14, p. 441.  
 अनुपपत्तेः iii. 4. 14, p. 628; iii. 4. 23, p. 641.  
 अनुमानम् i. 2. 26, p. 96.  
 अनुमान i. 1. 18, p. 43.

- अनुमानात् iii. 4. 41, p. 660.  
 अनुमानाभ्यां i. 3. 28, p. 137 ; iii. 2. 24, p. 486  
 iii. 3. 32, p. 553.  
 अनुमाने iv. 4. 20, p. 768.  
 अनुमितौ ii. 2. 9, p. 286.  
 अनुमेयम् ii. 1. 11, p. 235.  
 अनुशयवान् iii. 1. 8, p. 435.  
 अनुष्ठेयम् iii. 4. 19, p. 632.  
 अनुष्ठेयत्वात् iii. 4. 27, p. 640.  
 अनुसारी iv. 2. 18, p. 721.  
 अनुसृतिः iii. 2. 9, p. 464.  
 अनुसृतेः i. 2. 31, p. 100 ; ii. 2. 25, p. 304.  
 अनुसृति-बोधात् iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 अनेकः i. 3. 27, p. 136.  
 अन्ने i. 4. 13, p. 177.  
 अनेन iii. 2. 38, p. 501.  
 अनेनम् iii. 1. 9, p. 436.  
 अन्वयौ iii. 3. 13, p. 529.  
 अपरिग्रहात् ii. 2. 17, p. 295.  
 अपरिग्रहाः ii. 1. 12, p. 237.  
 अप्रतिषेधः ii. 2. 44, p. 328.  
 अपवदति iii. 4. 18, p. 637.  
 अप्रस्तुत iii. 4. 51, p. 675.  
 अप्राप्तिः ii. 2. 22, p. 300 ; iii. 3. 13, p. 529.  
 अप्रतिष्ठानात् ii. 1. 11, p. 235.  
 अप्रतिबन्धः iii. 3. 43, p. 574.  
 अप्रति संख्या ii. 2. 2, p. 300.  
 अपि i. 1. 27, p. 56 ; i. 2. 20, p. 86 ;  
 i. 2. 27, p. 97 ; i. 2. 29, p. 99 ;  
 i. 3. 23, p. 130 ; i. 3. 26, p. 134 ;  
 i. 3. 30, p. 139 ; i. 4. 1, p. 163 ;  
 i. 4. 11, p. 176 ; i. 4. 18, p. 188 ;  
 ii. 1. 11, p. 235 ; ii. 1. 12, p. 237 ;  
 ii. 1. 25, p. 255 ; ii. 2. 3, p. 280 ;  
 ii. 2. 18, p. 296 ; ii. 2. 27, p. 306 ;  
 ii. 2. 35, p. 319 ; ii. 3. 41, p. 381 ;  
 ii. 3. 43, p. 384 ; ii. 3. 50, p. 391.  
 iii. 1. 13, p. 440 ; iii. 1. 16, p. 442 ;  
 iii. 1. 17, p. 442 ; iii. 1. 20, p. 444 ;  
 iii. 2. 6, p. 459 ; iii. 2. 11, p. 467 ;  
 iii. 2. 13, p. 469 ; iii. 2. 17, p. 473 ;  
 iii. 2. 24, p. 486 ; iii. 3. 2, p. 512 ;  
 iii. 3. 9, p. 520 ; iii. 3. 21, p. 539 ;  
 iii. 3. 24, p. 540 ; iii. 3. 25, p. 541 ;  
 iii. 3. 45, p. 576 ; iii. 3. 53, p. 593 ;  
 iii. 4. 30, p. 643 ; iii. 4. 32, p. 645 ;  
 iii. 4. 34, p. 649 ; iii. 4. 36, p. 653 ;  
 iii. 4. 37, p. 654 ; iii. 4. 40, p. 659 ;  
 iii. 4. 41, p. 660 ; iii. 4. 42, p. 661 ;  
 iii. 4. 49, p. 670 ; iv. 1. 12, p. 691 ;  
 iv. 1. 14, p. 694 ; iv. 2. 20, p. 723 ;  
 iv. 4. 7, p. 753.  
 अपितौ ii. 1. 8, p. 232.  
 अपूर्वम् iii. 3. 19, p. 536.  
 अपूर्वत्वात् iii. 4. 21, p. 633.  
 अपेक्षा i. 1. 18, p. 43 ; iii. 4. 26, p. 639.  
 अपेक्षः ii. 3. 40, p. 379.  
 अपेक्षया i. 3. 25, p. 132.  
 अपेक्ष्यम् iv. 4. 16, p. 763.  
 अपेक्ष्य iv. 1. 9, p. 687.  
 अपेक्षत्वात् iii. 1. 11, p. 438.  
 अभाव i. 3. 36, p. 151 ; i. 3. 37, p. 151.  
 अभावः ii. 2. 28, p. 308.  
 अभावात् ii. 2. 5, p. 282 ; ii. 2. 6, p. 282 ;  
 iii. 3. 15, p. 531 ; iii. 3. 28, p. 547 ;  
 iii. 3. 62, p. 606.  
 अभावे iv. 4. 10, p. 757 ; iv. 4. 13, p. 761.  
 अभावेभ्यः iii. 4. 40, p. 659.  
 अभाक्तः ii. 3. 15, p. 348.  
 अभ्युपगमात् ii. 2. 13, p. 292 ; ii. 3. 23,  
 p. 360.  
 अभ्यासात् i. 1. 12, p. 30 ; iii. 2. 26, p. 487.  
 अभ्युपगमेऽपि ii. 2. 6, p. 282.  
 अभिधानात् i. 1. 24, p. 53 ; i. 1. 25, p. 54 ;  
 i. 2. 15, p. 82 ; i. 2. 16, p. 83 ;  
 iv. 3. 10, p. 736.  
 अभिज्ञा i. 4. 24, p. 205.  
 अभिधानात् ii. 3. 12, p. 343 ; iii. 2. 5, p. 458.  
 अभिमानि ii. 1. 5, p. 226.  
 अभिलाषात् i. 2. 19, p. 85 ; i. 3. 36, p. 150 ;  
 iii. 1. 25, p. 449.

अभिव्यक्तेः i. 2. 30, p. 99.  
 अभिव्यक्तियोगात् ii. 3. 29, p. 365.  
 अभिसम्भिः iv. 3. 14, p. 739.  
 अभिसन्ध्यादिषु ii. 3. 50, p. 391.  
 अभेदात् iii. 3. 11, p. 525 ; iii. 3. 20, p. 538.  
 अभ्यगन्त i. 3. 10, p. 119.  
 अभ्यु ii. 2. 3, p. 280.  
 अभ्युत्तं iv. 2. 7, p. 709.  
 अभ्युवत् iii. 2. 19, p. 477.  
 अभ्युने iv. 2. 20, p. 723.  
 अभिञ्जादिना iv. 3. 1, p. 727.  
 अर्थ i. 3. 38, p. 152 ; ii. 2. 6, p. 282 ;  
 iii. 3. 14, p. 530 ; iii. 3. 26, p. 543 ;  
 iii. 3. 31, p. 551.  
 अर्थवत् i. 4. 3, p. 166.  
 अर्थवत्त्वम् iii. 3. 30, p. 549.  
 अर्थवादः iii. 4. 2, p. 614.  
 अर्थान्तरत्वादि i. 3. 41, p. 157.  
 अर्थाभेदात् iii. 3. 6, p. 516.  
 अर्पण i. 1. 25, p. 54.  
 अर्भक i. 2. 7, p. 73.  
 अरूपवत् iii. 2. 14, p. 471.  
 अल्प i. 3. 21, p. 129.  
 अलोपः iii. 3. 41, p. 571.  
 अवगतेः i. 3. 35, p. 149.  
 अवचनात् i. 4. 4, p. 167.  
 अवचनात् i. 1. 8, p. 26.  
 अवर्ति iv. 4. 19, p. 767.  
 अवधारणात् iii. 3. 18, p. 534.  
 अवधात् iii. 4. 29, p. 643.  
 अवधेः iv. 1. 15, p. 696.  
 अवधृतेः iii. 4. 52, p. 678.  
 अवबद्धाः iii. 3. 57, p. 600.  
 अवर्ति iv. 14. 19, p. 767.  
 अवसरस्य ii. 1. 16, p. 244.  
 अवरोधः iii. 1. 22, p. 446 ; iii. 3. 34, p. 558.  
 अवदात् iv. 3. 2, p. 729.  
 अव्यक्तम् iii. 2. 23, p. 484.  
 अव्यतिरः ii. 3. 47, p. 389.  
 अवश्य iii. 4. 27, p. 640.

अवस्थिति ii. 3. 23, p. 360.  
 अव्यतिरेकात् ii. 3. 5, p. 333.  
 अवच्छेदात् ii. 2. 22, p. 300.  
 अविभागः ii. 1. 13, p. 238 ; iv. 2. 16,  
 p. 717.  
 अविभागात् ii. 1. 35, p. 268.  
 अविभागेन iv. 4. 4, p. 749.  
 अविरोधः i. 3. 30, p. 139 ; i. 4. 10, p. 173 ;  
 ii. 2. 35, p. 319 ; ii. 3. 22, p. 359 ;  
 iii. 1. 17, p. 442 ; iii. 3. 58, p. 601.  
 अविरोधम् i. 2. 29, p. 99 ; iv. 4. 7, p. 753.  
 अविरोधात् i. 1. 27, p. 56 ; iii. 3. 29, p. 548 ;  
 iii. 3. 32, p. 553.  
 अविशेषात् i. 4. 8, p. 170 ; ii. 2. 24, p. 302 ;  
 ii. 2. 36, p. 320 ; ii. 3. 14, p. 345 ;  
 iii. 3. 1, p. 511 ; iii. 3. 7, p. 517 ;  
 iii. 3. 22, p. 540 ; iii. 4. 13, p. 626 ;  
 iv. 1. 11, p. 689.  
 अवशिष्ट iii. 3. 61, p. 605.  
 अवशिष्ट iv. 3. 2, p. 729.  
 अवस्था iii. 4. 52, p. 678.  
 अवस्थितिः iii. 3. 33, p. 555.  
 अवस्थितेः i. 4. 22, p. 199.  
 अव्यर्थार्थद्वयः ii. 3. 40, p. 379.  
 अव्यर्थार्थात् iii. 2. 15, p. 472.  
 अव्यर्थव्यम् iii. 2. 25, p. 487.  
 अशनवत् iii. 4. 42, p. 661.  
 अशब्दम् i. 1. 5, p. 23.  
 अशुद्धम् iii. 1. 26, p. 449.  
 अश्म ii. 2. 7, p. 284.  
 अश्मादिवत् ii. 1. 23, p. 254.  
 अंश ii. 3. 41, p. 381.  
 अश्ववत् iii. 4. 26, p. 639.  
 अश्ववणात् iii. 1. 5, p. 430.  
 अक्षुतेः ii. 3. 1, p. 331 ; iii. 3. 67, p. 611.  
 अक्षुतत्वात् iii. 1. 6, p. 431.  
 अश्लेषः iv. 1. 13, p. 693 ; iv. 1. 14, p. 694.  
 असक्त iv. 1. 1, p. 680.

असम्भवात् i. 2. 17, p. 83 ; i. 2. 27, p. 97 ;  
i. 3. 18, p. 127 ; i. 3. 31, p. 142 ; ii. 2.  
33, p. 317 ; ii. 2. 42, p. 327 ; ii. 3. 3,  
p. 332 ; ii. 4. 2, p. 394.  
असम्भवः ii. 3. 8, p. 337.  
असम्भजसम् ii. 1. 8, p. 232 ; ii. 2. 10, p. 287.  
असत् ii. 1. 7, p. 231 ; ii. 1. 17, p. 245 ;  
ii. 2. 26, p. 305.  
असन्तते ii. 3. 47, p. 389.  
असति i. 4. 13, p. 177 ; ii. 2. 21, p. 300.  
असन्नित्वात् iv. 4. 17, p. 765.  
असर्वज्ञता ii. 2. 41, p. 326.  
असामंजस्यात् ii. 2. 37, p. 321.  
असार्वात्रिकी iii. 4. 10, p. 622.  
अस्य i. 1. 2, p. 12 ; i. 1. 19, p. 43 ; i. 3.  
16, p. 126 ; i. 3. 34, p. 148 ; ii. 1. 4,  
p. 224 ; ii. 3. 29, p. 365 ; iii. 2. 5, p. 458 ;  
iv. 3. 7, p. 735.  
अस्मात् iii. 2. 8, p. 463.  
अस्ति i. 3. 33, p. 143 ; ii. 3. 2, p. 331 ;  
iii. 3. 9, p. 520.  
अस्मिन् i. 1. 19, p. 43 ; i. 2. 33, p. 101 ;  
i. 3. 16, p. 126.  
अर्हन्वात् i. 4. 2, p. 165.  
अर्हवत् iv. 4. 12, p. 758.  
अहानिः ii. 3. 5, p. 333.  
अहि iii. 2. 28, p. 490.

## आ

आ iii. 3. 27, p. 545.  
आकास्त्वन्यन् ii. 2. 34, p. 318.  
आकाशः i. 1. 22, p. 48 ; i. 3. 41, p. 157.  
आकाशादिषु i. 4. 14, p. 180.  
आकाशे ii. 2. 24, p. 302.  
आख्यानात् iii. 3. 19, p. 536.  
आगतोनाम् ii. 3. 18, p. 354.  
आच्छन्द iii. 3. 27, p. 545.  
आचक्षते iii. 2. 4, p. 457.  
आचारदर्शनात् iii. 4. 3, p. 617.  
आचारात् iii. 4. 43, p. 662.  
आत्रेयः iii. 4. 44, p. 664.  
आत्म i. 1. 29, p. 62 ; ii. 2. 34, p. 318 ; ii. 3.  
28, p. 365 ; iii. 3. 17, p. 533.

आत्मवत्त्वात् iv. 4. 6, p. 752.  
आत्मकृतेः i. 4. 26, p. 207.  
आत्मनः iii. 3. 55, p. 598.  
आत्मशब्दात् i. 1. 6, p. 24 ; iii. 3. 16, p. 533.  
आत्मा ii. 3. 16, p. 350 ; iv. 1. 3, p. 682 ;  
iv. 4. 3, p. 748.  
आत्मनि ii. 1. 28, p. 260 ; iii. 2. 7, p. 461.  
आत्मानौ i. 2. 11, p. 77.  
आतिवाहिकाः iv. 3. 4, p. 732.  
आदरात् iii. 3. 41, p. 571.  
आदि i. 1. 2, p. 12 ; i. 2. 21, p. 87 ; i. 3. 1,  
p. 103 ; i. 3. 43, p. 160 ; ii. 2. 44, p. 328 ;  
iii. 3. 40, p. 570 ; iii. 4. 27, p. 640.  
आदित्य आदि iv. 1. 6, p. 685.  
आदित्यं ii. 3. 41, p. 381.  
आदिषु i. 3. 31, p. 142.  
आधिष्ठानं ii. 4. 14, p. 408.  
आधिकारकं iii. 4. 41, p. 660.  
आधिकारिणाम् iii. 3. 33, p. 555.  
आध्यानाय iii. 3. 15, p. 531.  
आनन्दादयः iii. 3. 12, p. 528.  
आनन्दमयः i. 1. 12, p. 30.  
आनथक्यं iii. 1. 11, p. 438.  
आनुमानम् i. 3. 3, p. 104 ; ii. 2. 1, p. 278.  
आनुमानिकम् i. 4. 1, p. 163.  
आपः ii. 3. 10, p. 340.  
आपत्तिः iii. 1. 23, p. 447.  
आपत्तेः ii. 1. 13, p. 238.  
आप्रायणात् iv. 1. 12, p. 691.  
आरीतेः iv. 2. 8, p. 710.  
आभासः ii. 3. 48, p. 389.  
आमनन्ति i. 2. 33, p. 101.  
आमननात् ii. 4. 14, p. 408 ; iii. 3. 35, p. 561  
iv. 4. 11, p. 758.  
आम्रानात् i. 4. 25, p. 206.  
आयतनम् i. 3. 1, p. 103.  
आयतनादिभ्यः iii. 3. 40, p. 569.  
आयना iii. 2. 38, p. 501.  
आर्त्विज्यं iii. 4. 45, p. 665.  
आरम्भश्च ii. 1. 14, p. 240.



आरोहावरोहौ iii. 1. 14, p. 441.  
 आलोकवत् ii. 3. 24, p. 360.  
 आलंबनान् iv. 3. 15, p. 739.  
 आशिर्वाः i. 3. 19, p. 128 ; iv. 4. 1, p. 745.  
 आशिष्कृतम् iv. 4. 16, p. 763.  
 आवेश iv. 4. 15, p. 762.  
 आवृत्तिः iv. 1. 1, p. 680.  
 आवृत्तौ i. 3. 30, p. 139.  
 आश्मरथ्यः i. 2. 30, p. 99 ; i. 4. 20, p. 195.  
 आश्रम iii. 4. 32, p. 645.  
 आश्रयवत् iii. 2. 29, p. 491.  
 आश्रितत्वात् i. 1. 31, p. 66.  
 आसीनः iv. 1. 7, p. 686.  
 आसृति iv. 2. 7, p. 709.  
 आह ii. 3. 9, p. 339 ; iii. 2. 1, p. 454 ; iii. 2.  
 16, p. 472 ; iii. 2. 23, p. 484 ; iv. 2. 15,  
 p. 716 ; iv. 4. 10, p. 757 ; iv. 4. 11,  
 p. 758 ; iv. 4. 19, p. 767.

इ

इत् i. 1. 6, p. 24.  
 इत् iii. 1. 9, p. 436.  
 इतरः i. 1. 16, p. 41 ; 1. 2. 17, p. 83 ; i. 3.  
 18, p. 127 ; ii. 1. 21, p. 250.  
 इतरत् iii. 4. 39, p. 656.  
 इतरवत् iii. 3. 17, p. 533 ; iii. 3. 38, p. 565.  
 इतरयोः ii. 4. 21, p. 418.  
 इतरस्य iv. 1. 14, p. 694.  
 इतरा ii. 3. 20, p. 357.  
 इतरे iii. 3. 14, p. 530 ; iv. 1. 19, p. 702.  
 इतरेतर ii. 2. 19, p. 298.  
 इतरेषाम् ii. 1. 2, p. 219 ; iii. 1. 14, p. 441 ;  
 iii. 3. 25, p. 541 ; iii. 4. 49, p. 670.  
 इतरौ i. 2. 22, p. 88.  
 इति i. 1. 13, p. 38 ; i. 1. 25, p. 54 ; i. 1.  
 29, p. 62 ; i. 1. 31, p. 66 ; i. 2. 8, p. 74 ;  
 i. 2. 26, p. 96 ; i. 2. 30, p. 99 ; i. 2.  
 31, p. 100 ; i. 2. 32, p. 100 ; i. 3. 18,  
 p. 127 ; i. 3. 21, p. 129 ; i. 3. 27,

p. 136 ; i. 3. 28, p. 136 ; i. 4. 1, p. 163 ;  
 i. 4. 5, p. 168 ; i. 4. 21, p. 197 ; i. 4.  
 22, p. 199 ; ii. 1. 1, p. 215 ; ii. 1. 7,  
 p. 231 ; ii. 1. 11, p. 235 ; ii. 1. 17, p. 245 ;  
 ii. 1. 24, p. 254 ; ii. 1. 31, p. 263 ; ii. 1.  
 35, p. 268 ; ii. 2. 7, p. 284 ; ii. 2. 19,  
 p. 298 ; ii. 3. 14, p. 345 ; ii. 3. 20,  
 p. 357 ; ii. 3. 23, p. 360 ; ii. 3. 51, p. 391 ;  
 iii. 1. 4, p. 428 ; iii. 1. 5, p. 430 ;  
 iii. 1. 6, p. 431 ; iii. 1. 10, p. 437 ; iii. 1.  
 11, p. 438 ; iii. 1. 12, p. 439 ; iii. 1.  
 18, p. 443 ; iii. 1. 26, p. 449 ; iii. 2.  
 12, p. 468 ; iii. 3. 2, p. 512 ; iii. 3. 7,  
 p. 517 ; iii. 3. 18, p. 534 ; iii. 3. 37,  
 p. 564 ; iii. 4. 1, p. 614 ; iii. 4. 2,  
 p. 614 ; iii. 4. 21, p. 633 ; iii. 4. 23,  
 p. 636 ; iii. 4. 44, p. 664 ; iii. 4. 45,  
 p. 665 ; iv. 1. 3, p. 682 ; iv. 1. 18, p. 702 ;  
 iv. 2. 12, p. 712 ; iv. 2. 19, p. 721 ;  
 iv. 3. 15, p. 739 ; iv. 4. 6, p. 752 ;  
 iv. 4. 18, p. 766.

इन्द्रियाणि ii. 4. 17, p. 410.

इन्धनादि iii. 4. 25, p. 638.

इमे iii. 3. 11, p. 525.

इयद् iii. 3. 35, p. 561.

इव iii. 3. 25, p. 541.

इष्टादि कारिणाम् iii. 1. 6, p. 431.

इह i. 1. 31, p. 66.

ई

ईक्षति i. 3. 13, p. 122.

ईक्षते i. 1. 5, p. 23.

उ

उक्तम् i. 3. 21, p. 129 ; ii. 1. 31, p. 263 ;  
 iii. 3. 9, p. 520 ; iii. 3. 27, p. 545 ;  
 iii. 3. 44, p. 576 ; iii. 3. 34, p. 558 ; iii. 3.  
 52, p. 592 ; iii. 4. 42, p. 661.  
 उक्तेः i. 4. 14, p. 180 ; iv. 4. 18, p. 766.

उत्कर्षात् iv. 1. 5, p. 684.

उत्क्रमिष्यतः i. 4. 21, p. 197.

उत्क्रान्ति i. 3. 42, p. 159 ; ii. 3. 18, p. 354.

उत्तर ii. 2. 20, p. 299 ; iv. 1. 13, p. 692.

उत्तरल i. 3. 35, p. 149.

उत्तरयोः ii. 3. 19, p. 355.

उत्तरात् i. 3. 19, p. 128 ; iii. 3. 17, p. 533 ;

iv. 2. 3, p. 705.

उत्तरेभ्यः i. 3. 14, p. 124.

उत्पत्ति ii. 2. 42, p. 327.

उत्पत्तिमात्र ii. 2. 19, p. 298.

उत्पादे ii. 2. 20, p. 299.

उत्पत्तीनामात्र ii. 2. 27, p. 306.

उन्मान iii. 2. 32, p. 494.

उन्मानाभ्यः ii. 3. 21, p. 359.

उपक्रमा i. 4. 9, p. 172.

उपक्रमात् iv. 2. 7, p. 709.

उपगानवत् iii. 3. 27, p. 545.

उपचय iii. 3. 13, p. 529.

उपगच्छन्ति iv. 1. 3, p. 682.

उपदेशः i. 1. 27, p. 56 ; i. 1. 30, p. 64.

उपदेश-अन्तरवत् iii. 3. 37, p. 564.

उपदेशात् i. 1. 7, p. 25 ; i. 1. 20, p. 46 ;  
i. 2. 1, p. 70 ; i. 2. 27, p. 97 ; i. 3.  
8, p. 115 ; i. 4. 10, p. 173 ; i. 4. 24,  
p. 205 ; ii. 3. 26, p. 363 ; ii. 3. 32, p. 370 ;  
ii. 4. 9, p. 401 ; ii. 4. 20, p. 414 ; iii. 4. 8,  
p. 620 ; iii. 4. 49, p. 670 ; iv. 1. 1, p. 680 ;  
iv. 4. 18, p. 766.

उपन्यासः i. 4. 6, p. 169.

उपन्यास आदिभ्यः iv. 4. 5, p. 751.

उपनिषत् i. 2. 16, p. 83.

उपन्यासात् i. 2. 23, p. 89 ; iv. 4. 7, p. 753.

उपपत्तेः i. 1. 26, p. 55 ; i. 2. 2, p. 71 ; i. 2. 13,  
p. 81 ; i. 3. 9, p. 118 ; ii. 1. 37, p. 272 ;  
iii. 1. 5, p. 430 ; iii. 1. 22, p. 447 ; iii. 2. 36,  
p. 498 ; iii. 2. 39, p. 503 ; iv. 1. 6, p. 685 ;  
iv. 2. 11, p. 711 ; iv. 3. 7, p. 735 ; iv. 4.  
13, p. 761.

उपपद्यते ii. 1. 36, p. 271 ; ii. 3. 13, p. 344.

उपपन्नः iii. 3. 31, p. 550.

उपपूर्वकम् iii. 4. 42, p. 661.

उपमदम् iii. 4. 16, p. 628.

उपमर्देन iv. 2. 10, p. 711.

उपमा iii. 2. 18, p. 476.

उपरि i. 3. 26, p. 134.

उपरोधः ii. 2. 21, p. 300.

उपलक्षणायां iii. 1. 10, p. 437.

उपलभ्यते ii. 1. 36, p. 271.

उपलब्धि ii. 3. 30, p. 367.

उप-लब्धिवत् ii. 3. 35, p. 373 ; iii. 3. 56, p. 599.

उपलभ्ये i. 3. 16, p. 126 ; ii. 1. 15, p. 244 ;

ii. 2. 28, p. 308 ; iii. 1. 19, p. 444 ;

iii. 3. 31, p. 551 ; iii. 3. 53, p. 593 ;

iv. 2. 9, p. 711.

उपबन्धनात् iii. 4. 24, p. 637.

उपसंग्रहात् i. 4. 11, p. 176.

उपसंहारः ii. 1. 24, p. 254 ; iii. 3. 6, p. 516 ;

iii. 4. 48, p. 669.

उपस्थिते iii. 3. 42, p. 572.

उपसृष्ट्य i. 3. 2, p. 103.

उपादानात् ii. 3. 33, p. 371 ; iii. 4. 21, p. 633.

उपायन iii. 3. 27, p. 545.

उपसा i. 1. 31, p. 66.

उपेतः ii. 1. 30, p. 262 ; iii. 4. 27, p. 640.

उभय i. 4. 25, p. 206 ; ii. 2. 36, p. 320, iii. 2.  
20, p. 478 ; iii. 2. 28, p. 490 ; iii. 3. 29,  
p. 548 ; iv. 3. 5, p. 733.

उभयया ii. 2. 16, p. 294 ; ii. 2. 23, p. 302 ;

ii. 3. 38, p. 374 ; iii. 3. 30, p. 549 ; iii. 4. 43,

p. 662 ; iv. 3. 15, p. 739.

उभययाऽपि ii. 2. 12, p. 291.

उभयस्मिन् i. 1. 27, p. 56.

उभये i. 2. 20, p. 86.

उभयोः iv. 1. 17, p. 700.

उभयलिङ्गां iii. 2. 11, p. 467.

उभयलिङ्गात् iii. 4. 34, p. 649.

उभयविषम् iv. 4. 12, p. 758.  
उभयहेतुके ii. 2. 18, p. 296.

## ऊ

ऊर्ध्वरेतः सु iii. 4. 17, p. 629.  
ऊष्मा iv. 2. 11, p. 711.

## ए

एकस्यां iii. 3. 2, p. 512.  
एकाम्रता iv. 1. 11, p. 689.  
एकस्य ii. 3. 4, p. 333.  
एके 1. 4. 9, p. 172 ; i. 4. 18, p. 188 ; ii. 3. 41, p. 381 ; iii. 2. 2, p. 455 ; iii. 2. 13, p. 469 ; iii. 3. 55, p. 598 ; iii. 4. 15, p. 627 ; iii. 4. 42, p. 661.  
एकेषाम् i. 4. 1, p. 163 ; i. 4. 13, p. 177 ; iv. 1. 17, p. 700 ; iv. 2. 13, p. 713.  
एकवाक्यता iii. 4. 24, p. 637.  
एकस्मिन् ii. 2. 33, p. 317 ; iv. 2. 6, p. 708.  
एतावत्त्वम् iii. 2. 22, p. 482.  
एते iv. 2. 21, p. 724.  
एतेन i. 4. 28, p. 211 ; ii. 1. 3, p. 221 ; ii. 1. 12, p. 237 ; ii. 3. 7, p. 336.  
एनम् i. 2. 33, p. 101.  
एव i. 1. 15, p. 40 ; i. 2. 7, p. 73 ; i. 2. 15, p. 82 ; i. 3. 24, p. 131 ; i. 4. 6, p. 169 ; ii. 2. 14, p. 294 ; ii. 3. 12, p. 343 ; ii. 3. 48, p. 389 ; iii. 1. 12, p. 439 ; iii. 2. 14, p. 471 ; iii. 3. 44, p. 576 ; iii. 3. 48, p. 586 ; iv. 1. 15, p. 696 ; iv. 1. 16, p. 698 ; iv. 1. 18, p. 704 ; iv. 2. 11, p. 711 ; iv. 3. 6, p. 734 ; iv. 4. 8, p. 754 ; iv. 4. 9, p. 756.  
एवम् i. 1. 26, p. 55 ; i. 4. 6, p. 169 ; i. 4. 21, p. 197 ; ii. 1. 11, p. 235 ; ii. 1. 28, p. 260 ; ii. 2. 27, p. 306 ; ii. 2. 34, p. 318 ; ii. 3. 44, p. 386 ; ii. 3. 50, p. 391 ; ii. 4. 6, p. 397 ; iii. 2. 13, p. 469 ; iii. 2. 20, p. 478 ; iii. 3. 20, p. 538 ; iii. 3. 21, p. 539 ; iii. 4. 8, p. 620 ; iii. 4. 52, p. 678 ; iv. 1. 14, p. 694 ; iv. 4.

7, p. 753 ; iv. 4. 10, p. 757 ; iv. 4. 11, p. 758 ; iv. 4. 20, p. 768.

## ऐ

ऐहिवम् iii. 4. 51, p. 675.

## ओ

ओकः iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
ओकस्त्वात् i. 2. 7, p. 73.

## औ

औडुलोमिः i. 4. 21, p. 196 ; iii. 4. 45, p. 665 ; iv. 4. 6, p. 752.  
औषसदवत् iii. 3. 34, p. 558.

## क

कम्पनात् i. 3. 39, p. 154.  
करणम् ii. 2. 43, p. 328.  
करणवत् ii. 2. 40, p. 325.  
कर्त्ता ii. 3. 31, p. 369.  
कर्तुः ii. 2. 43, p. 328.  
कर्तृ i. 2. 4, p. 72.  
कर्म i. 2. 4, p. 72 ; i. 3. 13, p. 122 ; ii. 1. 35, p. 268 ; ii. 2. 12, p. 291 ; iii. 2. 9, p. 464 ; iii. 4. 32, p. 645.  
कर्मणि i. 3. 27, p. 136 ; iii. 2. 26, p. 487.  
कर्मणोः iii. 1. 18, p. 443.  
कल्पना i. 4. 10, p. 173.  
कामकारिण iii. 4. 15, p. 627.  
कामात् i. 1. 18, p. 43.  
कामदि इतरत्न iii. 3. 40, p. 569.  
काम्याः iii. 3. 62, p. 606.  
कार्ये iii. 3. 19, p. 536 ; iv. 3. 7, p. 735 ; iv. 3. 10, p. 736.  
कार्याय iv. 1. 16, p. 698.  
कार्ये iv. 3. 14, p. 739.  
कारणत्वेन i. 4. 14, p. 180.  
काशकृत्स्नः i. 4. 22, p. 199.

काष्मिनः iii. 2. 3, p. 456.  
 काष्मिणि न. iii. 1. 10, p. 437.  
 कितवः ii. 3. 41, p. 381.  
 कुडनवनः iii. 2. 28, p. 490.  
 कुवतः ii. 4. 20, p. 414.  
 कुगः iii. 3. 27, p. 545.  
 कैवल्यम् ii. 1. 33, p. 266.  
 कृतः ii. 3. 40, p. 379; iii. 1. 8, p. 435.  
 कृत नः ii. 1. 26, p. 256; iii. 4. 48, p. 669.  
 कः iv. 3. 15, p. 739.  
 कावत् iii. 3. 59, p. 603.  
 कमः ii. 3. 13, p. 344.  
 क्रमेण ii. 3. 14, p. 345.  
 क्रिया iii. 3. 46, p. 580.  
 क्रियायाम् ii. 3. 34, p. 371.  
 क्लृप्तिः ii. 4. 20, p. 414.

## क्ष

क्षितिः त्वात् ii. 2. 31, p. 312.  
 क्षत्रियत्वं i. 3. 35, p. 119.  
 क्ष दित्वा iv. 1. 19, p. 702.  
 क्षीरवत् ii. 1. 24, p. 254.

## ग

गतिः i. 1. 10, p. 27; i. 2. 16, p. 83; iii. 1. 4, p. 428; iii. 1. 14, p. 441; iv. 2. 17, p. 719; iv. 3. 7, p. 735.  
 गतेः ii. 4. 5, p. 397; iii. 1. 3, p. 428; iii. 3. 30, p. 549.  
 गन्धवत् ii. 3. 25, p. 361.  
 गीयते i. 1. 15, p. 40; i. 4. 27, p. 209.  
 गुणः i. 2. 2, p. 71; ii. 3. 27, p. 364; iii. 3. 66, p. 611.  
 गुणः i. 2. 21, p. 88.  
 गुणात् ii. 3. 24, p. 360.  
 गुहाम् i. 2. 11, p. 77.  
 गौणः i. 1. 6, p. 24.  
 गौणी ii. 3. 3, p. 332; ii. 4. 2, p. 394.  
 गृह्यः iii. 4. 48, p. 669.

गृहातिः iii. 3. 17, p. 533.  
 गृहातेः i. 4. 1, p. 162.  
 ग्रहणात् i. 2. 9, p. 76.  
 ग्र म त् iii. 3. 36, p. 563.  
 ग्राह्यन्ति iv. 1. 3, p. 682.

## घ

घ i. 1. 6, p. 21; i. 1. 8, p. 26; i. 1. 11, p. 28; i. 1. 15, p. 40; i. 1. 18, p. 43; i. 1. 19, p. 43; i. 1. 21, p. 47; i. 1. 26, p. 55; i. 2. 2, p. 71; i. 2. 6, p. 73; i. 2. 7, p. 73; i. 2. 10, p. 76; i. 2. 12, p. 78; i. 2. 14, p. 82; i. 2. 15, p. 82; i. 2. 16, p. 83; i. 2. 17, p. 83; i. 2. 19, p. 85; i. 2. 20, p. 86; i. 2. 22, p. 88; i. 2. 23, p. 89; i. 2. 27, p. 97; i. 2. 28, p. 98; i. 2. 33, p. 101; i. 3. 4, p. 104; i. 3. 7, p. 105; i. 3. 9, p. 118; i. 3. 11, p. 120; i. 3. 12, p. 120; i. 3. 15, p. 125; i. 3. 16, p. 126; i. 3. 17, p. 127; i. 3. 20, p. 129; i. 3. 22, p. 130; i. 3. 29, p. 138; i. 3. 30, p. 139; i. 3. 32, p. 143; i. 3. 35, p. 149; i. 3. 36, p. 151; i. 3. 37, p. 151; i. 3. 38, p. 152; i. 4. 1, p. 163; i. 4. 4, p. 167; i. 4. 6, p. 169; i. 4. 7, p. 169; i. 4. 10, p. 173; i. 4. 11, p. 176; i. 4. 14, p. 180; i. 4. 23, p. 204; i. 4. 24, p. 205; i. 4. 25, p. 206; i. 4. 27, p. 209; ii. 1. 2, p. 219; ii. 1. 4, p. 224; ii. 1. 10, p. 234; ii. 1. 15, p. 244; ii. 1. 16, p. 244; ii. 1. 18, p. 247; ii. 1. 19, p. 248; ii. 1. 20, p. 248; ii. 1. 23, p. 254; ii. 1. 28, p. 260; ii. 1. 29, p. 261; ii. 1. 30, p. 262; ii. 1. 36, p. 271; ii. 1. 37, p. 272; ii. 2. 1, p. 278; ii. 2. 2, p. 279; ii. 2. 4, p. 281; ii. 2. 5, p. 282; ii. 2. 8, p. 285; ii. 2. 9, p. 286; ii. 2. 10, p. 287; ii. 2. 13, p. 292; ii. 2. 14, p. 294; ii. 2. 15, p. 294; ii. 2. 16, p. 294; ii. 2. 17, p. 295; ii. 2. 20, p. 299; ii. 2. 23, p. 302; ii. 2. 24, p. 302; ii. 2. 25, p. 304; ii. 2. 27, p. 306; ii. 2. 29, p. 310; ii. 2. 31, p. 312; ii. 2. 32, p. 314; ii. 3. 34, p. 318; ii. 2. 35, p. 319; ii. 2. 36, p. 320; ii. 2. 38,

p. 324; ii. 2. 39, p. 325; ii. 2. 43, p. 328; ii. 2. 45, p. 329; ii. 3. 4, p. 333; ii. 3. 13, p. 344; ii. 3. 16, p. 350; ii. 3. 19, p. 355; ii. 3. 21, p. 359; ii. 3. 28, p. 365; ii. 3. 34, p. 371; ii. 3. 37, p. 374; ii. 3. 38, p. 374; ii. 3. 41, p. 381; ii. 3. 43, p. 384; ii. 3. 45, p. 386; ii. 3. 47, p. 389; ii. 3. 48, p. 389; ii. 4. 3, p. 395; ii. 4. 5, p. 397; ii. 4. 7, p. 399; ii. 4. 8, p. 400; ii. 4. 11, p. 404; ii. 4. 13, p. 407; ii. 4. 16, p. 409; ii. 4. 19, p. 411; ii. 4. 21, p. 418; iii. 1. 3, p. 428; iii. 1. 9, p. 436; iii. 1. 13, p. 440; iii. 1. 15, p. 441; iii. 1. 20, p. 444; iii. 1. 21, p. 445; iii. 2. 2, p. 455; iii. 2. 4, p. 457; iii. 2. 13, p. 469; iii. 2. 16, p. 472; iii. 2. 17, p. 473; iii. 2. 18, p. 476; iii. 2. 21, p. 479; iii. 2. 25, p. 487; iii. 2. 26, p. 487; iii. 2. 31, p. 492; iii. 2. 36, p. 498; iii. 2. 40, p. 503; iii. 3. 3, p. 512; iii. 3. 4, p. 513; iii. 3. 5, p. 514; iii. 3. 6, p. 516; iii. 3. 10, p. 523; iii. 3. 16, p. 533; iii. 3. 20, p. 538; iii. 3. 23, p. 540; iii. 3. 24, p. 540; iii. 3. 40, p. 569; iii. 3. 47, p. 584; iii. 3. 49, p. 587; iii. 3. 50, p. 588; iii. 3. 52, p. 592; iii. 3. 54, p. 595; iii. 3. 64, p. 609; iii. 3. 66, p. 611; iii. 3. 68, p. 612; iii. 4. 7, p. 619; iii. 4. 16, p. 628; iii. 4. 17, p. 629; iii. 4. 22, p. 635; iii. 4. 24, p. 637; iii. 4. 25, p. 638; iii. 4. 26, p. 639; iii. 4. 28, p. 641; iii. 4. 29, p. 643; iii. 4. 31, p. 644; iii. 4. 33, p. 646; iii. 4. 35, p. 650; iii. 4. 38, p. 655; iii. 4. 39, p. 656; iii. 4. 41, p. 660; iii. 4. 43, p. 662; iii. 4. 46, p. 665; iv. 1. 3, p. 682; iv. 1. 6, p. 685; iv. 1. 8, p. 687; iv. 1. 9, p. 687; iv. 1. 10, p. 688; iv. 2. 1, p. 703; iv. 2. 7, p. 709; iv. 2. 9, p. 711; iv. 2. 11, p. 711; iv. 2. 14, p. 715; iv. 2. 17, p. 719; iv. 2. 19, p. 721; iv. 2. 20, p. 723; iv. 2. 21, p. 724; iv. 3. 8, p. 735; iv. 3. 11, p. 737; iv. 3. 13, p. 738; iv. 3. 14, p. 739; iv. 3. 15, p. 739; iv. 3. 16, p. 742; iv. 4. 9, p. 756; iv. 4. 19, p. 767; iv. 4. 20, p. 768; iv. 4. 21, p. 769.

वध्न i. 2. 27, p. 97.

वध्नम् i. 4. 18, p. 188.

वचुगदिवत् ii. 4. 10, p. 403.

वन्दनवत् ii. 3. 22, p. 359.

वमसवत् i. 4. 8, p. 170.

वरण i. 1. 24, p. 53.

वरणात् iii. 1. 10, p. 437.

वराचर i. 2. 9, p. 76; ii. 3. 15, p. 348.

वित्ति iv. 4. 6, p. 752.

वेत्त i. 1. 13, p. 38; i. 2. 7, p. 73; i. 2. 8, p. 75; i. 2. 27, p. 97; i. 3. 18, p. 127; i. 3. 19, p. 128; i. 3. 21, p. 129; i. 3. 27, p. 136; i. 3. 28, p. 136; i. 4. 1, p. 163; i. 4. 5, p. 168; i. 4. 17, p. 187; ii. 1. 1, p. 215; ii. 1. 7, p. 231; i. 1. 11, p. 235; ii. 1. 13, p. 238; ii. 1. 17, p. 245; ii. 1. 24, p. 254; ii. 1. 31, p. 263; ii. 1. 35, p. 268; ii. 2. 3, p. 280; ii. 2. 7, p. 284; ii. 2. 19, p. 298; ii. 2. 40, p. 325; ii. 3. 14, p. 345; ii. 3. 20, p. 357; ii. 3. 23, p. 360; ii. 3. 51, p. 391; iii. 1. 4, p. 428; iii. 1. 5, p. 430; iii. 1. 6, p. 431; iii. 1. 10, p. 437; iii. 1. 11, p. 438; iii. 1. 26, p. 449; iii. 2. 12, p. 468; iii. 3. 2, p. 512; iii. 3. 7, p. 517; i. 3. 9, p. 520; iii. 3. 18, p. 534; iii. 3. 37, p. 564; iii. 4. 21, p. 633; iii. 4. 23, p. 636; iv. 2. 12, p. 712; iv. 2. 19, p. 721; iv. 4. 18, p. 766.

वेत्तः i. 1. 25, p. 54.

वेत्तयेन i. 3. 35, p. 149.

वोदनादि iii. 3. 1, p. 511.

छ

छन्दतः iii. 3. 29, p. 548.

छन्दः i. 1. 25, p. 54.

ज

जगत् i. 4. 16, p. 185.

जगत् iv. 4. 17, p. 765.

नन्म i. 1. 2, p. 12.

जाग्रद्वत् iv. 4. 14, p. 761.

जीव i. 1. 31, p. 66; i. 4. 17, p. 187.

जैमिनिः i. 2. 29, p. 99; i. 2. 32, p. 100;  
i. 3. 31, p. 142; i. 4. 18, p. 188;  
iii. 2. 41, p. 504; iii. 4. 2, p. 614;  
iii. 4. 18, p. 630; iv. 3. 12, p. 737;  
iv. 4. 5, p. 751, iv. 4. 11, p. 758.

जैमिनेः iii. 4. 40, p. 659.

ज्यायः iii. 4. 39, p. 656.

ज्यायस्त्वम् iii. 3. 59, p. 603.

ज्योतिः i. 1. 24, p. 53; i. 3. 40, p. 155;  
i. 4. 9, p. 172; ii. 4. 14, p. 408.

ज्योतिषा i. 4. 13, p. 177.

ज्योतिषि i. 3. 32, p. 143.

ज्योतिरादिबत् ii. 3. 46, p. 388.

ज्ञ

ज्ञेयत्व i. 4. 4, p. 167.

त

तक्ष ii. 3. 38, p. 374.

तद्धितः iv. 3. 3, p. 731.

तत् i. 1. 4, p. 20; i. 1. 7, p. 25; i. 1.  
19, p. 43; i. 1. 22, p. 48; i. 2. 11,  
p. 77; i. 2. 18, p. 85; i. 3. 26,  
p. 134; i. 3. 34, p. 148; i. 4. 2,  
p. 165; i. 4. 17, p. 187; ii. 1. 14,  
p. 240; ii. 1. 23, p. 254; ii. 1. 30,  
p. 262; ii. 1. 31, p. 263; ii. 2. 18,  
p. 297; ii. 2. 44, p. 328; ii. 3. 12,  
p. 343; ii. 3. 15, p. 348; ii. 3. 27,  
p. 364; ii. 3. 28, p. 365; ii. 3. 39, p. 378;  
ii. 4. 3, p. 395; ii. 4. 14, p. 408;  
ii. 4. 17, p. 410; iii. 1. 1, p. 426; iii. 1.  
20, p. 437; iii. 1. 11, p. 438; iii. 1. 14,  
p. 441; iii. 1. 23, p. 447; iii. 2. 7,  
p. 461; iii. 2. 14, p. 471; iii. 2. 23,

p. 484; iii. 3. 4, p. 513; iii. 3. 27, p. 545;  
iii. 3. 31, p. 550; iii. 3. 44, p. 576  
iii. 3. 48, p. 586; iii. 3. 67, p. 611;  
iii. 4. 4, p. 618; iv. 1. 16, p. 698; iv. 2.  
5, p. 707; iv. 2. 17, p. 719; iv. 3. 1,  
p. 727; iv. 3. 4, p. 732; iv. 3. 5,  
p. 733; iv. 3. 6, p. 734; iv. 3. 15, p. 739;  
iv. 4. 8, p. 754.

तत्पूर्वकत्वं ii. 4. 4, p. 395.

तत्प्रतिपात्तं ii. 3. 14, p. 345.

तत् ii. 2. 3, p. 280; iii. 1. 17, p. 442;  
iii. 3. 40, p. 569; iii. 4. 34, p. 649; iv. 1.  
11, p. 689; iv. 1. 12, p. 691.

तद्-वादः ii. 4. 22, p. 419.

तत्त्वम् ii. 4. 10, p. 403.

तत्तः iii. 2. 5, p. 458; iii. 2. 22, p. 482;  
iv. 3. 6, p. 734.

तथा i. 1. 25, p. 54; i. 1. 28, p. 62; i. 2. 27,  
p. 97; i. 3. 15, p. 125; ii. 1. 34,  
p. 267; ii. 3. 9, p. 339; ii. 3. 25, p. 361;  
ii. 4. 1, p. 394; ii. 4. 11, p. 404; iii.  
1. 7, p. 432; iii. 1. 19, p. 444; iii. 2.  
27, p. 488; iii. 2. 37, p. 499; iii. 3. 28,  
p. 547; iii. 3. 59, p. 603; iii. 4. 24,  
p. 637; iv. 2. 9, p. 711; iv. 2. 15, p. 716.  
iv. 4. 15, p. 762; iv. 4. 19, p. 767.

तथाऽपि ii. 2. 7, p. 284; iii. 4. 27, p. 640.

तथास्त्वम् ii. 1. 4, p. 224; iii. 2. 19, p. 477.

तथात्वेन iii. 3. 3, p. 512.

तद् i. 2. 7, p. 73; i. 3. 21, p. 129; i. 3. 36,  
p. 151; i. 3. 37, p. 151; i. 4. 3, p. 166;  
iii. 1. 14, p. 441; iii. 3. 9, p. 520;  
iii. 3. 34, p. 558; iii. 3. 43, p. 574; iii. 3.  
44, p. 576; iii. 3. 45, p. 576; iii. 3. 52,  
p. 592; iii. 3. 56, p. 599; iii. 4. 8,  
p. 620; iii. 4. 27, p. 640; iii. 4. 28,  
p. 642; iii. 4. 36, p. 653; iii. 4. 42,  
p. 661; iii. 4. 51, p. 675; iii. 4. 52,  
p. 678; iv. 1. 13, p. 692; iv. 1. 15,  
p. 696; iv. 2. 3, p. 705; iv. 2. 8, p. 710;  
iv. 3. 9, p. 736; iv. 4. 6, p. 752.

तद्-प्रयोगात् iii. 4. 41, p. 660.

तद्-प्रभावः iii. 2. 7, p. 461.

तद् उपपन्नं आदिः. : iv. 2. 4, p. 706.

तद् र्मः i. 1. 20, p. 46.

तद् र्वाः ii. 2. 12, p. 291 ; ii. 3. 15, p. 348.

तद्भावाभ्याम् iii. 3. 34, p. 558.

तद्भूतस्य iii. 4. 40, p. 658.

तद्वत् ii. 1. 8, p. 232.

तद्वत्तः iii. 4. 6, p. 619 ; iii. 4. 47, p. 667.

तत्संयोगात् i. 1. 31, p. 66.

तद्वचनात् iii. 3. 42, p. 572.

तद्विद्वत् iii. 2. 4, p. 457.

तद्विध्यम् iii. 3. 54, p. 595.

तद्वैः i. 1. 14, p. 39.

तदा i. 3. 34, p. 148.

तन iii. 3. 40, p. 569.

तन्मात्रम् iii. 2. 16, p. 472.

तन्मात्रेण iv. 4. 6, p. 752.

तनु iv. 4. 13, p. 761.

तर्क ii. 1. 11, p. 235.

तथा ii. 4. 9, p. 172.

तर्कस्य iii. 3. 28, p. 547.

तस्मै iii. 4. 45, p. 665.

तस्य i. 3. 22, p. 130 ; ii. 4. 16, p. 409 ; iv. 2. 11, p. 711.

ताः एव iii. 1. 5, p. 430.

तारुण्यः ii. 3. 16, p. 350.

तानि iv. 2. 15, p. 716.

तिरोहितम् iii. 2. 5, p. 458.

तु i. 1. 4, p. 20 ; i. 1. 30, p. 64 ; i. 2. 3, p. 72 ; i. 3. 19, p. 128 ; i. 3. 25, p. 132 ; i. 3. 33, p. 143 ; i. 4. 2, p. 165 ; i. 4. 9, p. 172 ; i. 4. 18, p. 188 ; ii. 1. 5, p. 226 ; ii. 1. 6, p. 230 ; ii. 1. 9, p. 233 ; ii. 1. 22, p. 251 ; ii. 1. 27, p. 257 ; ii. 1. 33, p. 266 ; ii. 3. 2, p. 331 ; ii. 3. 6, p. 335 ; ii. 3. 8, p. 337 ; ii. 3. 12, p. 343 ; ii. 3. 13, p. 344 ; ii. 3. 15, p. 348 ; ii. 3. 29, p. 365 ; ii. 3. 30, p. 378 ; ii. 3. 40, p. 379 ; ii. 4. 6, p. 397 ;

ii. 4. 10, p. 403 ; ii. 4. 14, p. 408 ; ii. 4. 20, p. 414 ; ii. 4. 22, p. 419 ; iii. 1. 2, p. 427 ; iii. 1. 12, p. 439 ; iii. 1. 14, p. 441 ; iii. 1. 18, p. 443 ; iii. 2. 3, p. 456 ; iii. 2. 5, p. 458 ; iii. 2. 9, p. 464 ; iii. 2. 19, p. 477 ; iii. 2. 33, p. 495 ; iii. 2. 42, p. 504 ; iii. 3. 9, p. 520 ; iii. 3. 14, p. 530 ; iii. 3. 27, p. 545 ; iii. 3. 34, p. 558 ; iii. 3. 48, p. 586 ; iii. 3. 54, p. 595 ; iii. 3. 56, p. 599 ; iii. 3. 57, p. 600 ; iii. 3. 62, p. 606 ; iii. 4. 8, p. 620 ; iii. 4. 9, p. 621 ; iii. 4. 27, p. 640 ; iii. 4. 36, p. 653 ; iii. 4. 39, p. 656 ; iii. 4. 40, p. 658 ; iii. 4. 42, p. 661 ; iii. 4. 43, p. 662 ; iii. 4. 48, p. 669 ; iv. 1. 3, p. 682 ; iv. 1. 14, p. 694 ; iv. 1. 15, p. 696 ; iv. 1. 16, p. 698 ; iv. 1. 19, 702 ; iv. 3. 9, p. 736 ;

ते ii. 4. 17, p. 410.

तेजस् ii. 3. 9, p. 339.

तुल्यत्वं iii. 4. 9, p. 621.

तेजस्त्वात् iii. 2. 29, p. 491.

तेषाम् iii. 4. 27, p. 640.

तृतीयं iii. 1. 22, p. 446.

तृतीये iii. 1. 19, p. 444.

तत्तं यं iii. 4. 47, p. 667

नृणादिव i. 2. 5, p. 282.

त्रयाणाम् i. 4. 6, p. 169.

त्रि-आत्मकत्वात् iii. 1. 2, p. 427.

त्रिवृत् ii. 4. 20, p. 414.

त्रिविध्यात् i. 1. 31, p. 66.

द

दक्षिणे iv. 2. 20, p. 723.

दम् iii. 4. 27, p. 640.

दण्डम् i. 1. 25, p. 54.

दण्डात् i. 2. 11, p. 77 ; i. 3. 27, p. 131 ; i. 3. 30, p. 189 ; i. 3. 40, p. 155 ;

ii. 1. 24, p. 254 ; ii. 1. 30, p. 262 ;  
 ii. 2. 15, p. 294 ; ii. 3. 28, p. 365 ;  
 iii. 1. 14, p. 441 ; iii. 1. 21, p. 445 ;  
 iii. 2. 21, p. 479 ;  
 iii. 3. 49, p. 587 ; iii. 3. 68, p. 612 ;  
 iii. 4. 8, p. 620 ;  
 iii. 4. 28, p. 641 ; iii. 4. 51, p. 675 ;  
 iv. 1. 16, p. 698 ; iv. 2. 1, p. 703 ;  
 iv. 3. 13, p. 738 ; iv. 3. 16, p. 742 ;  
 iv. 4. 15, p. 762.

दर्शयति i. 2. 32, p. 100 ; i. 4. 1, p. 162 ;  
 ii. 1. 34, p. 267 ;  
 ii. 3. 25, p. 361 ;  
 ii. 4. 11, p. 404 ; iii. 1. 7, p. 432 ;  
 iii. 2. 17, p. 473 ;  
 iii. 3. 5, p. 514 ; iii. 3. 23, p. 540  
 iii. 3. 59, p. 603.  
 iii. 4. 9, p. 621 ; iv. 2. 19, p. 721.

दर्शयतः iv. 2. 6, p. 708 ; iv. 4. 20, p. 768.

दहर i. 3. 14, p. 124.

दास ii. 3. 41, p. 381.

दीर्घे ii. 2. 11, p. 290.

दुष्कृते iii. 1. 12, p. 439.

देवना i. 2. 28, p. 98.

दोवादिवत् ii. 1. 25, p. 255.

देवस्त्वन्धात् ii. 3. 46, p. 388.

देह iv. 2. 19, p. 721.

देहयोगतः iii. 2. 6, p. 459.

दोष ii. 1. 1, p. 215.

दोषः ii. 3. 28, p. 365 ;

ii. 4. 11 p. 404.

दोषात् ii. 1. 10, p. 234 ; ii. 1. 29 p. 261 ;

ii. 2. 16, p. 294 ; ii. 2. 23, p. 302 ;

iv. 3. 15, p. 739.

दृश्यते ii. 1. 6, p. 230.

दृष्ट् i. 3. 15, p. 125 ; iv. 1. 12, p. 691.

दृष्टावृत्तिर्वा iii. 1. 8, p. 435.

दृष्टान्त i. 4. 23, p. 204 ; ii. 1. 9, p. 233.

दृष्टत्वात् iv. 4. 4, p. 749.

दृष्टः i. 2. 27, p. 97 ; iii. 3. 52, p. 592.

दृष्टः iii. 3. 43, p. 574 ; iii. 4. 36, p. 653.

द्वारः iv. 2. 17, p. 719.

द्वदश iv. 4. 12, p. 758.

द्यु i. 3. 1, p. 103 ; iii. 3. 24, p. 540.

## ध

धर्म i. 2. 18, p. 85 ; i. 3. 9, p. 118 ;

ii. 1. 37, p. 272 ; iii. 2. 41, p. 504.

धर्मान्तरेण ii. 1. 17, p. 215.

धर्मोक्तेः i. 2. 21, p. 88.

धृतेः i. 3. 10, p. 119 ; i. 3. 16, p. 126.

धारणवत् iii. 4. 20, p. 633.

ध्यानात् iv. 1. 8, p. 687.

## न

न i. 1. 5, p. 23 ; i. 1. 6, p. 24 ; i. 1. 13,  
 p. 38 ; i. 1. 16, p. 41 ; i. 1. 18, p. 43 ;  
 i. 1. 25, p. 54 ; i. 1. 7, p. 56 ; i. 1. 29,  
 p. 62 ; i. 1. 31, p. 66 ; i. 2. 8, p. 75 ; i. 2.  
 17, p. 83 ; i. 2. 19, p. 85 ; i. 2. 22,  
 p. 88 ; i. 2. 27, p. 97 ; i. 2. 28,  
 p. 98 ; i. 3. 3, p. 104 ; i. 3. 18, p. 127 ;  
 i. 3. 27, p. 136 ; i. 3. 28, p. 136 ;  
 i. 4. 1, p. 163 ; i. 4. 5, p. 168 ;  
 i. 4. 11, 176

ii. 1. 1, p. 215 ; ii. 1. 4, p. 224 ;

ii. 1. 7, p. 231 ; ii. 1. 9, p. 233 ;

ii. 1. 17, p. 245 ; ii. 1. 24, p. 254 ;

ii. 1. 31, p. 263 ; ii. 1. 32, p. 265 ;

ii. 1. 34, p. 267 ; ii. 1. 35, p. 268 ;

ii. 2. 1, p. 278 ; ii. 2. 5, p. 282 ;

ii. 2. 12, p. 291 ; ii. 2. 26, p. 305 ;

ii. 2. 28, p. 308 ; ii. 2. 29, p. 310 ;

ii. 2. 30, p. 311 ; ii. 2. 33, p. 317 ;

ii. 2. 35, p. 319 ; ii. 2. 40, p. 325 ;

ii. 2. 43, p. 328 ; ii. 3. 1, p. 331 ;

ii. 3. 14, p. 345 ; ii. 3. 16, p. 350 ;

ii. 3. 20, p. 357 ; ii. 3. 23, p. 360 ;

ii. 3. 28, p. 365 ; ii. 3. 44, p. 386 ;

ii. 3. 51, p. 391 ; ii. 4. 6, p. 397 ;



ii. 4. 9, p. 401 ; ii. 4. 11, p. 404 ;  
 iii. 1. 4, p. 429 ; iii. 1. 5, p. 430 ;  
 iii. 1. 6, p. 431 ; iii. 1. 10, p. 437 ;  
 iii. 1. 11, p. 438 ; iii. 1. 19, p. 444 ;  
 iii. 1. 24, p. 448 ; iii. 1. 26, p. 449 ;  
 iii. 2. 11, p. 467 ; iii. 2. 12, p. 468 ;  
 iii. 2. 19, p. 477 ; iii. 3. 7, 517 ;  
 iii. 3. 8, p. 519 ; iii. 3. 22, p. 540 ;  
 iii. 3. 37, p. 564 ; iii. 3. 50, p. 587 ;  
 iii. 3. 53, p. 593 ; iii. 3. 56, p. 599 ;  
 iii. 4. 13, p. 626 ; iii. 4. 23, p. 636 ;  
 iii. 4. 40, p. 658 ; iii. 4. 41, p. 660 ;  
 iv. 1. 4, p. 683 ;  
 iv. 2. 6, p. 708 ; iv. 2. 10, p. 711 ;  
 iv. 2. 12, p. 712 ; iv. 2. 19, p. 721 ;  
 iv. 3. 14, p. 739 ; iv. 4. 18, p. 766.  
 नञ्ति i. 2. 7, p. 73 ; i. 4. 17, p. 187.  
 नचेत् ii. 3. 34, p. 371.  
 नयति iv. 3. 15, p. 739.  
 नाना i. 4. 11, p. 176 ; ii. 3. 41, p. 381 ;  
 iii. 3. 60, p. 604.  
 नाडिषु iii. 2. 7, p. 461.  
 नाम i. 3. 30, p. 139.  
 निगदात् i. 1. 25, p. 54.  
 निच व्यत्वत् i. 2. 7, p. 73.  
 नित्य ii. 3. 30, p. 367.  
 निश्चम् i. 3. 29, p. 138 ; ii. 2. 14, p. 294.  
 नित्त्वात् ii. 2. 36, p. 320 ; ii. 3. 16, p. 350 ;  
 ii. 4. 16, p. 409.  
 निमित्तत्वात् ii. 2. 19, p. 298.  
 नियमः ii. 3. 30, p. 367 ; iii. 3. 4, p. 513.  
 नियम iii. 4. 40, p. 659.  
 निश्चमान iii. 4. 7, p. 619.  
 निरवयवत् ii. 1. 26, p. 256.  
 निर्देश ii. 3. 34, p. 371.  
 निर्देशात् ii. 1. 22, p. 251.  
 निर्धारण iii. 3. 43, p. 574.  
 निर्धारणात् iii. 3. 43, p. 586.  
 निर्धारणे i. 3. 37, p. 151.

तन्मातारं iii. 2. 2, p. 455.  
 निरूपणाच्च i. 1. 1, p. 426.  
 निराधः ii. 2. 22, p. 300.  
 निशि iv. 2. 19, p. 721.  
 निष्ठस्य i. 1. 7, p. 25.  
 नेति i. 2. 27, p. 97.  
 नैवृत्तायेन ii. 1. 34, p. 267.

## प

पक्षेण iii. 4. 47, p. 667.  
 पटवत् ii. 1. 19, p. 248.  
 पतन iii. 4. 41, p. 660.  
 पति i. 3. 43, p. 160 ; iv. 1. 14, p. 694.  
 पत्युः ii. 2. 37, p. 321.  
 प सु ii. 2. 3, p. 280.  
 पश्चात् ii. 2. 35, p. 319.  
 पर iii. 2. 5, p. 458 ; ii. 3. 44, p. 386.  
 परं iii. 2. 32, p. 494 ; iv. 3. 10, p. 736 ;  
 iv. 3. 12, p. 737.  
 परस्य iii. 2. 11, p. 467.  
 परात् ii. 3. 39, p. 378.  
 परामर्शः i. 3. 20, p. 129.  
 परामर्श iii. 4. 18, p. 630.  
 परामर्शात् i. 3. 18, p. 127 ; i. 3. 36, p. 151.  
 परिक्रीयते iii. 4. 45, p. 665.  
 परिणामात् i. 4. 26, p. 207.  
 परिमण्डलाभ्याम् ii. 2. 11, p. 290.  
 परिशेषात् iii. 2. 10, p. 465.  
 परिष्कृतः iii. 1. 1, p. 426.  
 परिहारौ ii. 3. 46, p. 388.  
 परं iv. 2. 15, p. 716.  
 परेण iii. 3. 54, p. 595.  
 परोवरीम्स्वादिवत् iii. 3. 8, p. 519.  
 पाद i. 1. 26, p. 55.  
 पादवत् iii. 2. 34, p. 496.  
 पारिप्लवार्वाः iii. 4. 23, p. 636.

- पुत्रादयः iii. 2. 2, p. 455.  
 पुरुष ii. 2. 7, p. 284 ; iii. 4. 2, p. 614.  
 पुरुष-अर्थः iii. 4. 1, p. 614.  
 पुरुषविधे i. 2. 27, p. 97.  
 पुरुष विद्यां iii. 3. 25, p. 541.  
 पुंस्त्वादिवन ii. 3. 29, p. 365.  
 पूर्व iii. 2. 42, p. 504 ; iii. 3. 46, p. 580 ;  
 iii. 3. 62, p. 606 ; iv. 1. 13, p. 692 ;  
 iv. 1. 15, p. 696 ; iv. 4. 7, p. 753.  
 पूर्ववत् iii. 1. 25, p. 449 ; iii. 2. 30, p. 491.  
 पूर्वनिरोधात् ii. 2. 20, p. 299.  
 पंचवृत्तिः ii. 4. 12, p. 405.  
 पृ कृ ii. 3. 26, p. 363 ; ii. 4. 9, p. 401.  
 पृथग् iii. 3. 43, p. 574.  
 पृथक्त्ववत् iii. 3. 52, p. 592.  
 पृथिवी ii. 3. 11, p. 341.  
 प्रकाश iii. 3. 8, p. 519.  
 प्रकाश त् i. 2. 10, p. 76 ; i. 2. 24, p. 89 ; i. 3. 6,  
 p. 105 ; i. 4. 5, p. 168, iii. 3. 46, p. 580 ;  
 iv. 4. 3, p. 748 ; iv. 4. 17, p. 765.  
 प्रकाशः iii. 2. 26, p. 487 ; iii. 2. 29, p. 491.  
 प्रकाशवन iii. 2. 15, p. 472.  
 प्रकाशादिवत् ii. 3. 44, p. 386 ; iii. 2. 25, p. 487 ;  
 iii. 2. 35, p. 497.  
 प्रकाशिन iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 प्रकृतत्वात् iii. 1. 18, p. 443.  
 प्रकृत iii. 2. 22, p. 482.  
 प्रकृतिः i. 4. 23, p. 204.  
 प्रज्ञा iii. 3. 52, p. 592.  
 प्रत्यक्षः i. 3. 28, p. 137 ; iii. 2. 24, p. 486 ;  
 iv. 4. 18, p. 766, iv. 4. 20, p. 768.  
 प्रत्ययं iii. 3. 1, p. 511.  
 प्रत्ययत्वात् ii. 2. 19, p. 298.  
 प्रत्युक्तः ii. 1. 3, p. 221.  
 प्रत्येकम् iii. 2. 12, p. 468.  
 प्रति iv. 2. 21, p. 724.  
 प्रतिष्ठा i. 4. 20, p. 195 ; i. 4. 23, p. 204 ;  
 ii. 2. 21, p. 300 ; ii. 3. 5, p. 333.  
 तिष्ठानत् iv. 4. 2, p. 746.  
 प्रतिपत्ति iv. 3. 14, p. 739.  
 गतिः i. 3. 27, p. 136.  
 प्रतिपत्तौ iii. 1. 1, p. 426.  
 प्रतिपत्ति iii. 15, p. 675.  
 प्रतिपत्तिम् iii. 3. 57, p. 600.  
 तिष्ठानात् i. 2. 27, p. 97.  
 प्रतिपिद्ध ii. 3. 40, p. 379.  
 प्रतिपत्ति ii. 1. 7, p. 231.  
 प्रतिपत्ति i. 3. 38, p. 152 ; iii. 2. 31, p. 492 ;  
 iii. 2. 37, p. 499 ; iv. 2. 12, p. 712.  
 प्रतिपत्ति iii. 2. 22, p. 182.  
 प्रतिपत्ति ii. 2. 22, p. 300.  
 प्रतीक iv. 3. 15, p. 739.  
 प्रतीक iv. 1. 4, p. 683.  
 प्रतीकः iii. 1. 6, p. 431.  
 प्रथमे iii. 1. 5, p. 430.  
 प्रथिने iv. 3. 1, p. 727.  
 प्रदानवद् iii. 3. 44, p. 576.  
 प्रदीपवद् iv. 4. 15, p. 762.  
 प्रधानत्वत् iii. 2. 14, p. 471.  
 प्रधानस्य iii. 3. 12, p. 528.  
 प्रदीपः iii. 2. 8, p. 463.  
 प्रथमात् i. 3. 28, p. 137.  
 प्रमाणनः iv. 2. 9, p. 711.  
 प्रयत्न ii. 3. 40, p. 379.  
 प्रयोजन iii. 3. 15, p. 531.  
 प्रयोजनत्वात् ii. 1. 32, p. 265.  
 प्रविष्टौ i. 2. 11, p. 77.  
 प्रवृत्तेः i. 3. 37, p. 151 ; ii. 2. 2, p. 279.  
 प्रश्नः i. 4. 6, p. 169 ; i. 4. 18, p. 188 ;  
 iii. 1. 1, p. 426.  
 प्रशासनात् i. 3. 11, p. 120.

प्रमक्तिः ii. 1. 21 p. 250 ; ii. 1. 26, p. 256.  
 प्रसू ii. 1. 1, p. 215 ; ii. 1. 11, p. 235 ;  
 ii. 3. 30, p. 367.  
 प्रसंग तु ii. 1. 1, p. 215 ; ii. 1. 8, p. 232.  
 प्रसिद्धिः i. 2. 1, p. 70.  
 प्रसिद्धः i. 3. 17, p. 127.  
 प्रकृ ii. 4. 3, p. 395.  
 प्राक् i. 4. 5, p. 168.  
 प्रकृत तु ii. 3. 27, p. 364.  
 प्राच्युक्तिः i. 1. 13, p. 38.  
 प्रायः i. 1. 23 p. 51 ; i. 1. 28, p. 62 ; iii. 1. 3,  
 p. 428 ; iii. 4. 28, p. 641.  
 प्रथम-भूत i. 3. 4, p. 104.  
 प्राणवत्ता ii. 4. 1b, p. 408.  
 प्राणा ii. 4. 1, p. 394.  
 प्राणदयः i. 4. 12, p. 177.  
 प्राणादिः ii. 1. 20, p. 248.  
 प्राणैः iv. 2. 3, p. 705.  
 प्राणैः तु ii. 3. 51, p. 391.  
 प्रसिः i. 2. 8, p. 74.  
 प्रियशिरस्त्वादि iii. 3. 13, 529.

## फ

फल iii. 4. 44, p. 664 ; iii. 4. 52, p. 678.  
 फल iii. 2. 39, p. 503 ; iii. 3. 43, p. 574.  
 फलत्वात् iii. 3. 61, p. 605.

## ब

बन्धविः यौ iii. 2. 5, p. 458.  
 बलीयः iii. 3. 45, p. 576.  
 बलीयस्तान् iii. 3. 50, p. 587.  
 ब्रह्म-जिज्ञासा i. 1. 1, p. 6.  
 ब्रह्मजडवत् ii. 3. 4, p. 333.  
 बुद्धिः iii. 2. 20, p. 478.  
 ब्रवीति iii. 2. 22, p. 482.  
 ब्रह्मवृष्टिः iv. 1. 5, p. 684.  
 बा iii. 3. 22, p. 540.  
 बाह्यरायः i. 3. 26, p. 134 ; i. 3. 33, p. 143 ;  
 iii. 4. 19, p. 632 ; iv. 3. 15, p. 739,  
 iv. 4. 7, p. 753 ; iv. 4. 12, p. 758.  
 बाह्यरायस्य iii. 4. 8, p. 620.

बद्विः i. 2. 31, p. 100 ; iii. 1. 12, p. 439  
 iv. 3. 7, p. 735, iv. 4. 10, p. 757.  
 बध iii. 3. 50, p. 558.  
 ब्रह्मणः iv. 4. 5, p. 751.  
 ब्रह्मणः तु iii. 4. 6, p. 619.  
 ब्रह्मिः iii. 4. 20, p. 633.  
 ब्रह्मेः iii. 4. 27, p. 640.  
 ब्रह्मविषयः तु ii. 2. 10, p. 287 ; ii. 2. 45, p. 329.  
 ब्रह्मणः ii. 3. 6, p. 335.  
 ब्रह्मज्ञानत्वात् ii. 1. 4, p. 224.  
 ब्रह्मविषयत्वात् iii. 4. 23, p. 636.  
 ब्रह्मवृष्ट्यात् iii. 4. 32, p. 645.

## भ

भेदव्यपदेशाभ्याम् i. 2. 22, p. 88.  
 भाक्तम् iii. 1. 7, p. 432.  
 भाक्तत्वात् iii. 1. 4, p. 428.  
 भावः i. 3. 12, p. 120 ; ii. 2. 30, p. 311 ;  
 iii. 3. 56, p. 599 ; iii. 3. 63, p. 609 ;  
 iii. 4. 22, p. 635.  
 भावम् i. 3. 33, p. 143 ; iii. 4. 42, p. 661.  
 भाव तु i. 3. 32, p. 143 ; i. 4. 11, p. 176 ; i. 4.  
 21, p. 196 ; ii. 1. 9, p. 233 ; ii. 2. 14,  
 p. 294 ; iii. 3. 55, p. 598 ; iii. 4. 48, p. 669 ;  
 iv. 4. 7, p. 753.  
 भावित्वं तु ii. 3. 15, p. 318 ; ii. 3. 28, p. 365 ;  
 iii. 3. 56, p. 599 ; iv. 2. 19, p. 721.  
 भावे ii. 1. 15, p. 244 ; ii. 2. 44, p. 328 ;  
 iv. 4. 14, p. 761.  
 भू i. 3. 1, p. 103.  
 भूत iii. 3. 36, p. 563.  
 भूतम् i. 2. 28, p. 98.  
 भूनादि i. 1. 26, p. 55.  
 भूतेषु iv. 2. 5, p. 707.  
 भूम्नः iii. 3. 59, p. 603.  
 भूमा i. 3. 8, p. 114.  
 भूयः iii. 2. 22, p. 482.  
 भूयस्त्वात् iii. 1. 2, p. 427 ; iii. 3. 45, p. 576 ;  
 iii. 3. 54, p. 595.  
 भेद i. 1. 17, p. 42 ; i. 1. 21, p. 47 ; i. 3. 5,  
 p. 104 ; ii. 1. 22, p. 251 ; iii. 3. 37,  
 p. 564.  
 भेदः तु i. 1. 27, p. 56 ; iii. 2. 12, p. 468, iii. 3.  
 2, p. 512 ; iii. 3. 8, p. 519 ; iii. 3. 26,  
 p. 543 ; iii. 3. 60, p. 604.

भेदे iii. 3. 13, p. 529.  
 भेदेन i. 2. 20, p. 86 ; i. 3. 42, p. 159.  
 भेदश्रुतेः ii. 4. 18, p. 411.  
 भोक्ता ii. 1. 13, p. 238.  
 भोग iv. 4. 21, p. 769.  
 भोगादिभ्यः ii. 2. 40, p. 325.  
 भोगेन iv. 1. 19, p. 702.  
 भौमम् ii. 4. 21, p. 418.

## म

मगडलस्य iv. 4. 18, p. 766.  
 मतयः iv. 1. 6, p. 685.  
 मधु i. 3. 31, p. 142.  
 मध्वादिवत् i. 4. 10, p. 173.  
 मन iv. 2. 3, p. 705.  
 मनसि iv. 2. 1, p. 703.  
 मनसी ii. 3. 14, p. 315.  
 मन्त्रवर्णात् ii. 3. 42, p. 383.  
 मन्त्र-आदिवत् iii. 3. 58, p. 601.  
 मनुष्य i. 3. 25, p. 132.  
 मनोवत् ii. 4. 12, p. 405.  
 महत् ii. 2. 11, p. 290.  
 महद्वत i. 4. 7, p. 169.  
 महिम्नः i. 3. 16, p. 126.  
 मातरिश्वा ii. 3. 7, p. 336.  
 मांल i. 1. 15, p. 40.  
 माल iv. 4. 21, p. 769.  
 मात्रत्वात् ii. 1. 7, p. 231.  
 मानसवत् iii. 3. 46, p. 580.  
 मायामालम् iii. 2. 3, p. 456.  
 मांसादि ii. 4. 21, 418.  
 युक्त i. 3. 2, p. 103 ; iv. 4. 2, p. 746.  
 युक्तिं iii. 4. 52, p. 678.  
 मुख्यत्वत् iv. 3. 12, p. 737.  
 मुख्यप्राण i. 1. 31, p. 66 ; i. 4. 17, p. 187.  
 मुग्धे iii. 2. 10, p. 465.  
 मूर्ति ii. 4. 20, p. 414.  
 मूलत्वात् ii. 1. 27, p. 257.  
 मृत्युवत् iii. 3. 53, p. 593.  
 मोक्ष i. 1. 7, p. 25.  
 मौनवत् iii. 4. 49, p. 670.

## य

यथादि iii. 4. 26, p. 639.  
 यतः i. 1. 2, p. 12.  
 यत्न iv. 1. 11, p. 689.  
 यथा i. 4. 14, p. 180 ; ii. 1. 20, p. 248 ;  
 ii. 3. 38, p. 374 ; iii. 1. 9, p. 436 ;  
 iii. 4. 2, p. 614.  
 यथाकामम् iii. 3. 62, p. 606.  
 यथाशब्दं ii. 4. 21, p. 418.  
 याथाश्रय iii. 3. 63, p. 609.  
 यदेव iv. 1. 18, p. 702.  
 यावत् ii. 3. 28, p. 365 ; iv. 2. 19, p. 721.  
 यावद् अधिकारम् iii. 3. 33, p. 555.  
 यावत्त्विकारम् ii. 3. 6, p. 335.  
 युक्तेः ii. 1. 18, p. 247.  
 योगं i. 1. 19, p. 43.  
 योगः ii. 1. 3, p. 221 ; iii. 1. 27, p. 451.  
 योगिनः iv. 2. 21, p. 724.  
 योनिः i. 4. 27, p. 209.  
 योनिस्त्वात् i. 1. 3, p. 16.  
 योनेः iii. 1. 28, p. 451.  
 यौगपद्यम् ii. 2. 21, p. 300.

## र

रचना ii. 2. 1, p. 278.  
 रश्मि iv. 2. 18, p. 721.  
 रंहति iii. 1. 1, p. 426.  
 रूप i. 2. 23, p. 89 ; ii. 3. 11, p. 341.  
 रूपक i. 4. 1, p. 163.  
 रूपत्वात् i. 3. 30, p. 139.  
 रूपादिभत्वात् ii. 2. 15, p. 294  
 रेतः सिक् iii. 1. 27, p. 451

## ल

लक्षण iii. 3. 31, p. 550.  
 लोकवत् ii. 1. 33, p. 266 ; ii. 1. 13, p. 238 ;  
 ii. 3. 6, p. 335 ; iii. 3. 31, p. 551.  
 लोक-आपत्तिः iii. 3. 53, p. 593.

लोके ii. 1. 25, p. 255 ; iii. 1. 20, p. 444.  
 लीला ii. 1. 33, p. 266.  
 लिङात् i. 1. 22, p. 48 ; i. 1. 31, p. 66.  
 i. 3. 35, p. 149 ; i. 4. 17, p. 187.  
 ii. 3. 12, p. 343 ; iii. 4. 39, p. 656 ;  
 iv. 1. 2, p. 681 ; iv. 3. 4, p. 732 ;  
 iv. 4. 21, p. 769.  
 लिंग iii. 3. 45, p. 576.  
 लिंगम् i. 3. 15, p. 125 ; i. 4. 20, p. 195 ;  
 iii. 2. 27, p. 488.

## व

वक्तु i. 1. 29, p. 62.  
 वचनात् iii. 2. 12, p. 468 ; iv. 2. 16, p. 717.  
 वत् ii. 1. 24, p. 254 ; ii. 2. 3, p. 280 ;  
 ii. 2. 7, p. 284 ; ii. 2. 11, p. 290.  
 वदति i. 4. 5, p. 168.  
 वर्णिकं i. 1. 15, p. 40.  
 वर्ज्यम् iv. 4. 17, p. 765.  
 वरुणाः iv. 3. 3, p. 731.  
 वा ii. 1. 26, p. 256 ; ii. 2. 11, p. 290 ;  
 ii. 2. 41, p. 326 ; ii. 2. 44, p. 328 ;  
 ii. 3. 24, p. 360 ; ii. 3. 30, p. 367 ;  
 iii. 1. 7, p. 432 ; iii. 2. 6, p. 459 ;  
 iii. 2. 29, p. 491 ; iii. 2. 30, p. 491 ;  
 iii. 3. 8, p. 519 ; iii. 3. 58, p. 601 ;  
 iii. 3. 62, p. 606 ; iii. 3. 67, p. 611 ;  
 iii. 4. 14, p. 626 ; iii. 4. 15, p. 627 ;  
 iii. 4. 20, p. 633 ; iii. 4. 34, p. 649.  
 वाक् iv. 2. 1, p. 703.  
 वाक्य i. 4. 12, p. 177 ; i. 4. 19, p. 194.  
 वाक्य शेषात् ii. 1. 17, p. 245.  
 वाचः ii. 4. 4, p. 395.  
 वाचित्वात् i. 4. 16, p. 185.  
 वादरायणः iii. 2. 42, p. 504.  
 वामदेववत् i. 1. 30, p. 64.  
 वायुक्रिये ii. 4. 9, p. 401.  
 वायुं iv. 3. 2, p. 729.  
 विकल्पः iii. 3. 46, p. 580 ; iii. 3. 61,  
 p. 605 ; iv. 4. 11, p. 758.

विकरणात्वात् ii. 1. 31, p. 263.  
 विकार i. 1. 13, p. 38 ; iv. 4. 19, p. 767  
 विकारादिभ्यः ii. 2. 35, p. 319.  
 विचित्राः ii. 1. 28, p. 260.  
 विज्ञान ii. 2. 44, p. 328 ; ii. 3. 14, p. 345.  
 विषया iv. 1. 18, p. 702.  
 विद्या iii. 1. 18, p. 443 ; iii. 3. 48, p. 586.  
 विद्या सामर्थ्यं iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 विधि iii. 3. 6, p. 516 ; iii. 4. 47, p. 667.  
 विधि आदिवात् iii. 4. 47, p. 667.  
 विधिभ्यः iii. 2. 9, p. 464.  
 विन्यस्तः i. 4. 1, p. 163.  
 विनाशौ iv. 1. 13, p. 693.  
 विपर्ययः ii. 2. 15, p. 294 ; ii. 3. 34, p. 371.  
 विपर्ययात् ii. 3. 36, p. 373.  
 विपर्ययेण ii. 3. 13, p. 344.  
 विभागः iii. 4. 11, p. 622.  
 विद्यत् ii. 3. 1, p. 331.  
 वियोगात् ii. 2. 9, p. 286.  
 विरोधः i. 3. 27, p. 136 ; iii. 3. 30, p. 549.  
 विवक्षिता i. 2. 2, p. 71.  
 विशिष्ट i. 2. 15, p. 82.  
 विशिषन्ति iii. 3. 38, p. 565.  
 विशेष ii. 1. 5, p. 226 ; iii. 4. 38, p. 655.  
 विशेषम् iv. 3. 16, p. 742.  
 विशेषण i. 2. 22, p. 88.  
 विशेषणात् i. 2. 12, p. 78.  
 विशेषात् i. 2. 5, p. 72 ; i. 2. 25, p. 96 ;  
 ii. 1. 24, p. 448.  
 विशेषाभ्यां iv. 3. 2, p. 730.  
 विशेषित्वात् ii. 4. 5, p. 397 ; iv. 3. 8, p. 735.  
 विहार ii. 3. 32, p. 370.  
 विहितः ii. 3. 40, p. 379.  
 वहिः iii. 4. 43, p. 662.  
 वृष्यर्थः iii. 2. 34, p. 496.  
 वेद iii. 3. 1, p. 511.  
 वेधादि iii. 3. 26, p. 543.  
 वैष्णवेन iv. 3. 6, p. 734.

वैधर्म्यात् ii. 2. 29, p. 310.  
 वेलक्षय्यात् ii. 4. 19, p. 411.  
 वैशेष्यात् i. 2. 8, p. 75 ; ii. 3. 23, p. 360 ;  
 ii. 4. 22, p. 419.  
 वैश्वानरः i. 2. 25, p. 96.  
 वैषम्य ii. 1. 34, p. 267.  
 व्यतिरेकः ii. 2. 4, p. 281 ; ii. 3. 25,  
 p. 361 ; iii. 3. 56, p. 599.  
 व्यतिहारः iii. 3. 38, p. 565.  
 व्यपदिश्यते ii. 4. 12, p. 405.  
 व्यपदिष्ट i. 4. 14, p. 180.  
 व्यपदेशः i. 1. 26, p. 55 ; ii. 1. 5, p. 226 ;  
 ii. 3. 15, p. 348 ; ii. 3. 27, p. 364 ;  
 iv. 3. 9, p. 736.  
 व्यपदेशात् i. 1. 14, p. 39 ; i. 1. 17, p. 42 ;  
 i. 1. 21, p. 47 ; i. 2. 4, p. 72 ; i. 2.  
 7, p. 73 ; i. 2. 14, p. 82 ; i. 2. 18,  
 p. 85 ; i. 3. 2, p. 103 ; i. 3.  
 15, p. 104 ; i. 3. 41, p. 157 ;  
 i. 3. 13, p. 122 ; ii. 1. 17, p. 245 ;  
 ii. 1. 21, p. 250 ; ii. 3. 34, p. 371 ;  
 ii. 3. 41, p. 381 ; ii. 4. 17, p. 410 ;  
 iii. 2. 28, p. 490 ; iii. 2. 42, p. 504 ;  
 iv. 1. 13, p. 693 ; iv. 2. 8, p. 710.  
 व्यपदेशेभ्यः iii. 2. 32, p. 494.  
 व्यपाश्रयः ii. 3. 15, p. 348.  
 व्यापारः iv. 4. 17, p. 765.  
 व्याकोपः ii. 1. 26, p. 256.  
 व्याख्यातः ii. 1. 12, p. 237 ; ii. 3. 7, p. 336.  
 व्याख्याताः i. 4. 28, p. 211.  
 व्याख्यातम् i. 4. 17, p. 187.  
 व्याख्यानाभ्यां i. 4. 18, p. 188.  
 व्याप्तिः iii. 3. 24, p. 540.  
 व्याप्तिः iii. 3. 10, p. 523.  
 व्यापारात् iii. 1. 17, p. 442.  
 व्यामोहात् iv. 3. 5, p. 733.  
 व्यावृत्तेः i. 3. 12, p. 120.  
 व्योमवत् i. 2. 7, p. 73.

श

शक्तिः ii. 2. 9, p. 286 ; ii. 3. 36, p. 373.  
 शतवत् iii. 4. 11, p. 622.

शताधि कथा iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 शब्दः ii. 1. 26, p. 256 ; ii. 1. 27, p. 257 ;  
 iii. 1. 22, p. 446 ;  
 शब्दः i. 2. 5, p. 72 ; i. 2. 25, p. 96 ;  
 i. 3. 28, p. 136 ; iii. 2. 9, p. 464 ;  
 iii. 3. 27, p. 545 ; iii. 3. 32, p. 553 ;  
 iii. 3. 60, p. 604 ; iii. 4. 31, p. 644.  
 शब्दस्य iii. 3. 54, p. 595.  
 शब्दात् i. 1. 13, p. 38 ; i. 3. 24, p. 131 ;  
 ii. 1. 4, p. 224 ; ii. 3. 3, p. 332 ;  
 ii. 4. 15, p. 408 ; iii. 1. 26, p. 449 ;  
 iii. 3. 7, p. 517 ; iii. 4. 1, p. 614 ;  
 iii. 4. 22, p. 635 ; iv. 2. 1, p. 703 ;  
 iv. 4. 1, p. 745 ; iv. 4. 22, p. 770.  
 शब्दादिभ्यः i. 2. 27, p. 97 ; ii. 1. 14,  
 p. 240 ; iii. 2. 38, p. 501.  
 शब्दात् i. 3. 1, p. 163.  
 शब्दान्तरात् ii. 1. 18, p. 247.  
 शब्दान्तरेभ्यः ii. 3. 11, p. 341.  
 शब्दाभ्यां i. 3. 15, p. 125.  
 शब्दे iii. 4. 17, p. 629.  
 शब्देभ्यः i. 3. 43, p. 160 ; ii. 3. 5, p. 333.  
 शम् iii. 4. 27, p. 640.  
 शरीर i. 4. 1, p. 163.  
 शरीरे iii. 1. 28, p. 451.  
 शरीरे iii. 3. 55, p. 598.  
 शाखासु iii. 3. 57, p. 600.  
 शारीरः i. 2. 3, p. 72 ; i. 2. 20, p. 86.  
 शारीरात् iv. 2. 12, p. 712.  
 शास्त्र i. 1. 3, p. 16.  
 शास्ति i. 1. 19, p. 43.  
 शास्त्रार्थवत्त्वम् ii. 3. 31, p. 369.  
 शास्त्रदृष्ट्या i. 1. 30, p. 64.  
 शिष्टाः ii. 1. 12, p. 237.  
 शिष्टादिभ्यः ii. 4. 10, p. 403.  
 शिष्टेः iii. 3. 64, p. 609.  
 शुक्र i. 3. 34, p. 148.  
 शेवे iv. 2. 17, p. 719.  
 शेष्वात् iii. 3. 27, p. 545 ; iii. 4. 2,  
 p. 614.  
 शेष्वात् iii. 3. 6, p. 516.  
 शेष्वात् i. 4. 12, p. 177.

श्रुत i. 2. 16, p. 83.  
 श्रुतम् iii. 1. 13, p. 440.  
 श्रुतत्वात् i. 1. 11, p. 28 ; iii. 2. 40, p. 503.  
 श्रुतिः iii. 4. 26, p. 639.  
 श्रुति आदि iii. 3. 50, p. 587.  
 श्रुतेः i. 3. 21, p. 129 ; ii. 1. 27, p. 257 ;  
 ii. 3. 20, p. 357 ; ii. 4. 3, p. 395 ;  
 iii. 1. 4, p. 428 ; iii. 2. 4, p. 457 ;  
 iii. 2. 7, p. 461 ; ii. 3. 16, p. 350 ;  
 iii. 3. 66, p. 611 ; iii. 4. 4, p. 618 ;  
 iii. 4. 19, p. 632 ; iii. 4. 44, p. 664 ;  
 iv. 2. 5, p. 707 ; iv. 3. 6, p. 734 ;  
 iv. 4. 8, p. 754.  
 श्रवण i. 3. 38, p. 152.  
 श्रवणत्वात् i. 3. 34, p. 148.  
 श्रेष्ठः ii. 4. 8, p. 400.  
 श्रेष्ठात् ii. 4. 17, p. 410.

## स

सः i. 3. 13, p. 122 ; i. 3. 18, p. 127 ;  
 ii. 3. 12, p. 343 ; iii. 2. 6, p. 459 ;  
 iv. 2. 4, p. 706.  
 सः एव iii. 2. 9, p. 464.  
 संकल्पाद् iv. 4. 8, p. 754.  
 संख्या i. 4. 11, p. 176.  
 संज्ञा ii. 4. 20, p. 414.  
 संज्ञातः iii. 3. 9, p. 520.  
 सतः ii. 3. 8, p. 337 ; ii. 3. 29, p. 365.  
 सत्य-आदयः iii. 3. 39, p. 566.  
 सत्त्वात् ii. 1. 16, p. 244.  
 सन्ध्ये iii. 2. 1, p. 454.  
 सन्ध्यवद् iv. 4. 13, p. 761.  
 सप्त ii. 4. 5, p. 397 ; iii. 1. 16, p. 442.  
 सम्-अनु आरम्भयात् iii. 4. 5, p. 618.  
 सम्पत्तिः iii. 2. 10, p. 465.  
 सम्पत्ताः i. 2. 32, p. 100.  
 सम्पत्त्योः iv. 4. 16, p. 763.  
 सम्पद्य iv. 4. 1, p. 745.  
 सम्पद्यते iv. 1. 19, p. 702.  
 संपदानात् i. 3. 8, p. 114.  
 सम्बन्ध ii. 2. 38, p. 324 ; iii. 2. 32,  
 p. 494.

सम्बन्धात् iii. 3. 21, p. 539 ; iv. 3. 3,  
 p. 731.  
 सम्बन्धस्य iv. 2. 19, p. 721.  
 सम्भवात् i. 3. 26, p. 134 ; iv. 1. 7, p. 686.  
 संभोगः i. 2. 8, p. 74.  
 संश्रुति iii. 3. 24, p. 540.  
 संशोकस्य iii. 1. 22, p. 446.  
 संसार iv. 2. 8, p. 710.  
 समञ्जसम् iii. 3. 10, p. 523.  
 समन्वयात् i. 1. 4, p. 20.  
 समवाय ii. 2. 13, p. 292.  
 समाकर्षात् i. 4. 15, p. 181.  
 समाचारे iii. 3. 3, p. 512.  
 समाधि—अभावात् ii. 3. 37, p. 374.  
 समान i. 3. 30, p. 139 ; iii. 3. 20, p. 538.  
 समाना iv. 2. 7, p. 709.  
 समाने iii. 3. 6, p. 516.  
 समाहारात् iii. 3. 65, p. 610.  
 समुच्चीयेरन iii. 3. 62, p. 606.  
 समुदाय ii. 2. 18, p. 296.  
 संयमने iii. 1. 14, p. 441.  
 सर्वे ii. 1. 30, p. 262 ; ii. 1. 37, p. 272 ;  
 iii. 3. 1, p. 511 ; iii. 4. 26, p. 639 ;  
 iii. 4. 28, p. 641.  
 सर्वगत्वम् iii. 2. 38, p. 501.  
 सर्वत्र i. 2. 1, p. 70 ; iii. 2. 11, p. 467.  
 सर्वथा ii. 2. 32, p. 314 ; iii. 4. 34, p. 649.  
 सर्वा iii. 3. 11, p. 525.  
 सर्वाणि iv. 2. 2, p. 704.  
 सर्वे i. 4. 28, p. 211.  
 सर्वेषाम् iii. 3. 32, p. 553.  
 संराधने iii. 2. 24, p. 486.  
 सखत् iii. 3. 4, p. 513.  
 संस्कार i. 3. 36, p. 151.  
 सह iv. 3. 10, p. 736.  
 सहकारित्वेन iii. 4. 33, p. 646.  
 सहकारी iii. 4. 47, p. 667.  
 सहभाव iii. 3. 67, p. 611.  
 सा i. 3. 11, p. 120.  
 सायव iii. 3. 39, p. 566.

साक्षात् i. 2. 29, p. 99; i. 4. 25, p. 206.

साधारण i. 2. 25, p. 96.

साधारण्य iii. 3. 66, p. 611.

सापेक्षत्वात् ii. 1. 34, p. 267.

सामा य iii. 1. 23, p. 447.

साम्य iv. 4. 21, p. 769.

साम्य iii. 4. 19, p. 632.

साम्यराये iii. 3. 28, p. 547.

सामञ्जस्यात् iii. 2. 20, p. 478.

सामान्य iii. 3. 34, p. 558.

साम्यात् ii. 2. 13, p. 292.

सामान्यात् i. 1. 10, p. 27; iii. 2. 33, p. 495;

iii. 3. 14, p. 530; iii. 3. 53, p. 593.

सामोव्यात् iv. 3. 9, p. 736.

सारत्वात् ii. 3. 27, p. 364.

सिद्धिः ii. 2. 27, p. 306.

सिद्धेः i. 4. 20, p. 195; iv. 3. 5, p. 733.

सुकृत iii. 1. 12, p. 439.

सुख i. 2. 15, p. 82.

सुबुद्धि i. 3. 42, p. 159.

सुक्ष्म i. 4. 2, p. 165.

सुक्ष्म iv. 2. 9, p. 711.

सूचकः iii. 2. 4, p. 457.

सूच्यते i. 3. 34, p. 148.

सूर्यकादिवत् iii. 2. 18, p. 476.

सेतु iii. 2. 32, p. 494.

सृष्टिः iii. 2. 1, p. 454.

स्तुतये iii. 4. 14, p. 626.

स्तुति iii. 3. 27, p. 545.

स्तुतिमात्रम् iii. 4. 21, p. 633.

स्थानतः iii. 2. 11, p. 467.

स्थानविशेषात् iii. 2. 35, p. 497.

स्थानादि i. 2. 14, p. 82.

स्थिति i. 3. 7, p. 105.

स्थितिम् iv. 4. 19, p. 767.

स्थितेः ii. 4. 6, p. 397.

स्थितेः iv. 2. 13, p. 713.

स्पर्धते i. 3. 23, p. 130; ii. 3. 43, p. 384;

iii. 1. 20, p. 444; iii. 2. 17, p. 473;

iii. 4. 30, p. 643; iii. 4. 37, p. 654;

iv. 2. 14, p. 715; iv. 2. 21, p. 724.

स्मरन्ति ii. 3. 45, p. 386; iii. 1. 15, p. 441; iv. 1. 10, p. 688.

स्मर्यमाणम् i. 2. 26, p. 96.

स्मार्ते i. 2. 19, p. 85.

स्मार्ते iv. 2. 21, p. 724.

स्मृति ii. 1. 1, p. 215.

स्मृतेः i. 2. 6, p. 73; i. 3. 30, p. 139;

i. 3. 38, p. 152; iii. 4. 43, p. 662,

iv. 3. 11, p. 737.

स्यात् i. 2. 26, p. 96; ii. 1. 13, p. 238;

ii. 3. 4, p. 333; ii. 3. 15, p. 348;

iii. 3. 18, p. 534; iii. 3. 46, p. 580;

iii. 4. 27, p. 610.

स्व i. 3. 1, p. 103.

स्वपक्षे ii. 1. 10, p. 234; ii. 1. 29, p. 261.

स्वप्नादिवत् ii. 2. 29, p. 310.

स्वरूपः i. 3. 19, p. 128.

स्वशब्दः ii. 3. 21, p. 359.

स्वात्मनः ii. 3. 19, p. 355; iii. 3. 36, p. 563.

स्वाध्यायस्य iii. 3. 3, p. 512.

स्वाप्यय iv. 4. 16, p. 763.

स्वाप्यात् i. 1. 9, p. 26.

स्वामिनः iii. 4. 44, p. 664.

स्वेन iv. 4. 1, p. 745.

ह

हस्तादयः ii. 4. 6, p. 397.

हानौ iii. 3. 27, p. 545.

हार्द iv. 2. 17, p. 719.

हि i. 1. 25, p. 54; i. 2. 11, p. 77;

i. 2. 20, p. 86; i. 2. 32, p. 100;

i. 3. 33, p. 143; i. 3. 34, p. 148;

i. 4. 5, p. 168; i. 4. 9, p. 172;

i. 4. 27, p. 209; ii. 1. 28, p. 260;

ii. 1. 34, p. 267; ii. 3. 9, p. 339;

ii. 3. 23, p. 360; ii. 3. 25, p. 361;

ii. 4. 11, p. 404; iii. 1. 5, p. 430;

iii. 1. 7, p. 432; iii. 2. 1, p. 454;

iii. 2. 4, p. 457; iii. 2. 5, p. 458;

iii. 2. 11, p. 467; iii. 2. 14, p. 471;



iii. 2. 22, p. 482; iii. 2. 23, p. 484;  
 iii. 2. 27, p. 488; iii. 3. 3, p. 512;  
 iii. 3. 13, p. 529; iii. 3. 28, p. 547;  
 iii. 3. 30, p. 549; iii. 3. 38, p. 565;  
 iii. 3. 39, p. 566; iii. 3. 43, p. 574;  
 iii. 3. 53, p. 593; iii. 3. 57, p. 600;  
 iii. 4. 17, p. 629; iii. 4. 18, p. 630;  
 iv. 1. 4, p. 683; iv. 1. 12, p. 691;  
 iv. 1. 17, p. 700; iv. 1. 18, p. 702;  
 iv. 2. 6, p. 708; iv. 2. 13, p. 713;

iv. 2. 15, p. 716; iv. 4. 10, p. 757;  
 iv. 4. 11, p. 758; iv. 4. 15, p. 762;  
 iv. 4. 16, p. 763; iv. 4. 19, p. 767.  
 हित iii. 1. 21, p. 250.  
 हेतु iii. 3. 62, p. 606.  
 हृदि i. 3, 25, p. 132; ii. 3. 23, p. 360.  
 ह्रस्व ii. 2. 11, p. 290.  
 हास iii. 2. 20, p. 478.  
 हेयत्वं i. 1. 8, p. 26.

# Additions & Corrections

Lines have been counted taking the page heading as the first line.

Page	Line	For	Read	Page	Line	For	Read
5	2	subject	subject	122	23	Pārvopaksin	Pārvapakṣin
	21-22	भूमानं भगवो		124	13	ब्रजन्त्ये	ब्रजन्त्येता
"		विजिज्ञास इति	Nil	128	30	qualities	qualities
"	23	definite	finite	130	7	but	hat
7	1	Sū. I	Sū. 1	"	13	Tasya	तस्य Tasya
"	3	means	the means	142	32	Jyiminih	Jaiminih
"	10	लेषा	लेष	143	35	Tu tu	तु Tu
8	19	ग्राह	ग्राह्य	148	35	He	he
10	7-1	स***महिम्नीति	Nil	152	14	s	is
18	21	section	action	154	21	wo d	word
19	43	they	it	155	15	described	describes
21	18	indeed, the	indeed, am the		3	illumino	illuminates
"	34	That	Also	158	7	away	sway
27	7	above	the above	"	23-24	the (last results)	(the last results)
"	19	Objection	Objection	160	31	Prāṇs	Prāṇas
30	18	Promoda	Pramoda	165	37	shows	it shows
32	18	the former,	his	169	13	Praśanaḥ	Praśnaḥ
33	28	नन्दयाति	नन्दयति	173	38	is	in
37	26	the Self	thy Self	174	26	its	their
42	9	7. 1	II. 7. 1.	175	5	Brahma	Brahman
45	26	She	the	"	24	यस्माद्***रह	nil
47	30	some	same	176	8	Samuhaka	Samūhakaḥ
49	10	come	comes	180	5	less	nil
52	6	पासीति	पासीत	"	10	चाकादिपु	चकाशादिपु
53	18	energu	energy	183	"	can have	have
60	13	absorded	absorbed	187	29	pasage	passage
"	27	there action	their action	189	14	Ajātaśātra	Ajātasatru
61	11	the	the	191	29	nto	into
64	36	Br.	Pra.	192	42	ove	love
74	21	on	to	193	7	देवास्तं परादुर्योऽस्मात्प्रमो देवान् वेद	nil
76	12	because	because	194	7	arms	anus
"	27	objection	objection	198	31	devinuc	divine
80	33	buaaty	beauty	201	11	daulity	duality
84	6	diety	deity	205	16-17	न वै***य॥	nil
94	10	the gets	he gets	206	19	चोभयाम्नात्	चोभयाम्नात्
95	19	the Lord	when the	209	2	silver	peral
			Akāśa is	213	26	opposed	not opposed
			satisfied,	214	16	teach men	teach
			the Lord	216	21	Brahman	Brahmā
				222	17	men	man
98	3	alter	altar	226	28	Br. Up.	Br. Up., VI. 1, 7.
107	31	Have	have	229	16	Revelation	Revelation
110	37	meditates	mediates	230	4	emergies	energies
120	24	of to	or to	234	20	of	or

Page	Line	For	Read	Page	Line	For	Read
235	24	unassillable	unassailable	364	4	गुणः	गुणाः
238	22	emergies	energies	365	24	illuminations,	illumination
239	20	difference shape	different shape	"	34	वत्त	वत्त्व
"	29	maiefestation	manifestation	366	18	विजानाति विजाना	विजानाति विजान
240	33	cannot	cannot	369	9	1	31
243	26	orgination	origination	"	23	agent	the agent
246	32	tslf	itself	371	7	agent	the agent
"	39	meant	means	"	28	hold	hold of
247	10	other	the other	382	3	its	His
"	24	reduce	reduce it	385	14	himself	itself
258	14-15	सर्वतः...तिष्ठति	( सर्वतः...तिष्ठति )	"	32	सार्वत्	शास्वत्
"	16	विश्वश्चक्षुस्त	विश्वतश्चक्षुस्त	393	13	on	of
262	21	eoncaled	concealed	"	14	conflicts	conflict
264	21	Mastere	Masters	394	17	3. 1,	1. 3,
267	2	effect	effect	394	23	explained	explained in
277	31	परिणामात्	परिमाणात्	400	34	declare	declare that
290	7	Vā	va Vā	402	11	समान्य	सामान्य
302	21	Moksha	Moksa	405	14	like the	like
"	23	Direct	direct	406	3	वांगमयो	वाङ्मयो
307	20	external	external	401	11	धिष्ठानां	धिष्ठानं
312	21	Kṣaṇikattvāt	Kṣaṇikatvāt	414	21	four-faco	four-faced
316	41	abandoned	abandoned	415	2	ahown	shown
318	32	thory	theory	"	13	mothod	method
320	30	stac	state	"	34	Brahmā	Brahma
322	26	fifteenth the	fifteenth, the	416	22	bath	both
323	17	चीकितुषो	चीकितुषी	"	44	middio	middle
"	34	हुन्तवे	हुन्तवे	418	5	कदा	तदा
"	35	विवंश	विवेश	418	12	पथ्यते	पथते
324	15	Seen to be	Seen, to be	419	5	ख	स
330	26	showed	shown	"	8	censes	scences
333	25	जिज्ञान्व	जिज्ञास्व	424	9	oblation	hat oblation
"	29	Brahmaa	Brahman	425	10	माका	माकाश
343	15	Rājas	Rājasa	430	1	4	430
"	33	स	सः	425	35	श्तेरिति	स्तेरिति
344	3	romove	remove	432	6	माकाश	माकाश
346	6	is	are	433	14	यथा	यथा
"	33	is	are	433	15	वादीमाने	वादीयमाने
347	5,7	Sāttvik	Sāttika	433	16	विद्यः	विद्युः
349	7	ममेद	मेदम	434	32	तस्माल्लोम	तस्माल्लोक
351	31	natnre	nature	437	8	Somraja	Somarāja
352	22	Uppnisad	Upanisad	"	36	word	words
"	28	mposition	imposition	440	25	world	word
"	36	iatelligence	intelligence	"	26	qualifications	qualification
361	41	declares	declares.—243.	441	1	: 16	15
362	20	possession	possession	442	33	cantradiction	contradiction
363	40	मयोः	मयोः				

Page	Line	For	Read	Page	Line	For	Read
443	13	karma of	karma, of	565	31	known	know
447	34	abstinance	substance	"	34	Lokaṃ	Loka
451	21	enters	enters	570	3	applies	and applies
453	12	object	object	572	32	कायमते	कामयते
454	4	ञ्च	श्च	573	5	similarly	similarity
"	5	मपादाय	मुपादाय	"	21	virute	virtue
"	8	तदेतेः	तदेते	575	33	I.	I.
456	6	words	worlds	579	7	being	beings
458	7	borebodes	forebodes	"	41	Uttar	Uttara
461	25	नडीपु	नाडीपु	"		मिति	मेति
463	29	is	as	580	4	Brahma	Brahman
464	18	some	same	"	37	Naiṣkarmaya	Naiṣkarmya
467	"	Gofālo	Gopāla	582	21	योऽहं	यमहं
469	9	hrough	through	586	11	about	about that
470	26	so that	so	588	15	text	texts
474	40	Revolution	Revelation	"	37	Jamini	Jaimini
482	12	than, that	than that	589	25	in	is
483	30	Prākātic	Prākritic	"	53	One	Ones
		मनराव	मनयव	590	8	य	न
489	18	manifest	unmanifest	594	37	नयमात्मा	नायमात्मा
490	14	as	is	600	17	text	next
491	36	Through	Though	603	25	thus	just
492	12	मृत्यो	मृत्योः	615	10	His	his
498	14	in	is	621	32	Scripteral	Scriptural
"	25	worshippers	worshippers	631	8	"A says,	says, "A
512	21	समाचारेधिका***	समाचारेऽधिका***	634	29	तत्र	तत्र
		समवत्	सववत्	635	21	द्वय	द्वय
503	33	principle	principal	639	31	एवत्	एववत्
515	38	words	worlds	645	5	for	far
521	28	in the	in	651	6	porform	perform
"	31	Sajñā	Samjñā	661	8	comes	come
532	17	in	is	"	9	His	his
534	7	donbt	doubt	664	38	praying	praying to
"	38	passage.	passages,	666	21	नेन	नेन
540	13,26	in spite	inspite	"	22	पाप्मा तपति नेन	नेन पाप्मा तपति
"	28	atlibutes	attributes	668	19	means	mean
542	29	enanlted	enalted	669	26	कृत्स्ना	कृत्स्न
545	36	employed	employed	"	36	Gṛhastha	Gṛhasthas
546	3	act meditating	act of meditating	671	40	विरजेत्तदहरेव	विरजेत्तदहरेव प्रव्रजेत्
552	38	ब्राह्मण	ब्रह्माण	672	26	His	his
552	12	संसरतीत	संसरतीति	674	9	nor	nor to one who is
"	19	गा	गो	677	6	this	his
554	33	कीर्ति	कीर्त	682	31	Gṛābhyanti	Gṛāhayanti
558	3	maditation	meditation	"	"	make,	make
561	29	All-agents	All-agent	685	14	outside	outside,
				687	2	tI	It
				688	16	Smaronti	Smaranti

<i>Page</i>	<i>Line</i>	<i>For</i>	<i>Read</i>	<i>Page</i>	<i>Line</i>	<i>For</i>	<i>Read</i>
689	20	Whenever	Wherever	737	1	11-12	12
694	22	being done	or being done	778	25	समुत्थाय	समुत्थाय परं
697	34	Karmas	Karma				ज्योतिरुपसंपद्य स्वेन
701	29	bring	brings				रूपेणाभिनिष्पद्यते
702	23	all	of all	739	1	14	15
704	25	opinion	union	740	27	and of	and
"	29	Atah,	Atah, hence	746	4	Vevānta	Vedānta
711	33	connections	connection	"	34	is	it
715	36	he	the	748	26	is this	is
719	17	हादीनुगृहीतः	योमाच्च हादानुगृहीतः	750	39	without	with
		योगाच्च		755	23	explains	explains
724	10	worlds	world's	761	1	13-14	14
727	38	दिन	दिना	765	28	Varun	Varuṇa
733	10	Deva	Devas	"	33	Jagadvypāra	Jagadvyāpāra
734	16	नै	नैव	768	14	covering	covering
735	1	7-8	8	771	8	World	Word
736	4	messengers	messenger				

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

Texts	Pages	Texts	Pages
1. Agni Purāṇa	514, 652	106-114, 115, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 135,	
2. Atharva Śruti	489	142, 146-147, 151, 156, 157, 178, 179,	
3. Atharva Veda	541, 543	180, 182, 202, 204, 205, 226, 227, 240-	
4. Ādi Purāṇa	652	241, 247, 269, 330, 334, 339, 340, 341,	
5. Ātharvaṇa Upaniṣat	527	349, 350, 351, 370, 404, 412, 416, 422-	
6. Aitareya Āraṇyaka	24, 228, 598	425, 431, 432, 434, 436, 437, 443, 444,	
7. Aitareya Upaniṣat	202, 408, 597	445, 446, 449, 451, 452, 457, 460, 463,	
8. Brahma Purāṇa	491	465, 491, 496, 498, 509, 520, 526, 539,	
9. Brahma Saṃhitā	471	561, 562, 575, 577-579, 591, 592, 603,	
10. Brahma Tarka	547, 728	609, 613, 616, 617, 618, 621, 622, 636,	
11. Brahma Upaniṣat (?)	532	639, 642, 644, 666, 668, 670, 671, 674,	
12. Brahma Vidyābharṇa	299	678, 681, 683, 687, 692, 695, 696, 702,	
13. Brahma Vindu Upaniṣat	380, 476	703, 704, 705, 709, 716, 720, 722, 726,	
14. Brahma Vaiivarta Purāṇa	155, 488	728, 733, 735, 738, 739, 740, 744, 746,	
15. Brahmāṇḍa Purāṇa	360	747, 748, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 757,	
16. Brihadāraṇyaka Upaniṣat	5, 7, 11, 16, 22, 23, 24, 26, 37-38, 42, 47, 62, 65, 71, 75, 81, 82, 84, 86, 118, 120, 121, 127, 133, 135, 142, 158, 159, 160, 166, 171, 172, 175, 177, 178, 183, 191-194, 198, 200, 216, 222, 223, 226, 279, 324, 332, 351, 352, 353, 354, 357, 358, 363, 364, 366, 371, 389, 396, 398, 401, 402, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 117, 418, 428, 429, 433, 434, 454, 460, 461, 468, 469, 480, 481, 483, 485, 495, 503, 509, 511, 517, 523, 527, 537, 546, 547, 548, 555, 557, 565, 566, 586, 592, 617, 618, 622, 627, 629, 631, 636, 637, 638, 639, 641, 646-647, 651, 653, 656, 666, 671, 677, 680, 682, 683, 685, 689, 693, 695, 698, 706, 707, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 715, 727, 730, 736, 752, 753, 759, 762, 763.		
17. Bṛihat Saṃhitā	532	25. Dhyāna Vindu Upaniṣat	488
18. Bhakti Sūtras	590, 591	26. Garbha Upaniṣat	418-419
19. Bhaviṣya Purāṇa	228, 269	27. Garuḍa Purāṇa	4
20. Bhāgavata	3, 4, 21, 24, 25, 41, 141, 167, 197, 198, 242, 253, 265, 355, 377, 387, 416, 441, 442, 470, 502, 517, 537, 540, 544, 546, 547, 549, 551, 555, 567, 572, 589, 590, 598, 625, 633, 654, 655, 659, 660, 662, 663, 684, 696, 757, 768, 771, 772.		
21. Bhāllaveya Śruti	212	28. Gitā	7, 21, 28, 42, 65, 73, 75, 77, 97, 131, 167, 173, 252, 254, 271, 272, 347, 356, 361, 368, 370, 371, 375, 376, 377, 381, 384, 411, 485, 486, 489, 500, 502, 505, 511, 527, 544, 576, 586, 596, 611, 628, 630, 650, 655, 660, 664, 674, 676, 688, 695, 723-724, 742, 769, 771.
22. Chaturveda Sikkhā	532	29. Gopāla Pūrva Tāpanī Upaniṣat	8, 16, 467, 471, 473, 474, 500, 515, 517, 522, 532, 537, 538, 548, 552, 553, 554, 565, 607-608, 609, 741.
23. Chulika Upaniṣat	3, 202-203	30. Gopāla Uttara Tāpanī Upaniṣat	572, 574, 579, 580-585.
24. Chhāndogya Upaniṣat	3, 5, 7, 10, 44-45, 47-54, 56, 64, 69, 72, 73, 80, 90-95,	31. Gopāla Tāpanī	20, 21, 343, 349, 385, 569, 674, 625.
		32. Gaupavana Śruti	456
		33. Isāvāsyā Upaniṣat	440, 619, 631
		34. Jābāla Upaniṣat	657, 671, 672
		35. Jitanta Stotra	535, 536
		36. Kaṭha Upaniṣat	20, 23, 71, 75, 77-79, 131, 154, 162, 163, 164, 168, 217, 220, 236, 258, 350, 368, 390, 397, 441, 455, 456, 459, 478, 485, 486, 492, 514, 594, 596, 614, 675, 738, 750, 768.

<i>Texts</i>	<i>Pages</i>
37. Kena Upaniṣat	22, 24
38. Kūrma Purāṇa	17, 272, 459
39. Kaivalya Upaniṣat	101, 485, 597
40. Kauṇḍinya Śruti	418
41. Kauśārava Śruti	645
42. Kauṣika Upaniṣat	636
43. Kauṣitaki Brāhmaṇa	184, 458
44. Kauṣitaki Upaniṣat	57-61, 66, 189, 190, 228, 268, 356, 362, 378, 388, 440, 443, 462, 504, 699, 727, 729.
45. Madhva	402, 514, 547
46. Manu	7, 216, 414, 415, 450, 512, 635, 643, 670
47. Matsya Purāṇa	469
48. Mahābhārata	17, 174, 475, 508
49. Mahānārāyaṇa Upaniṣat	349, 624, 626, 749
50. Mahā Upaniṣat	322
51. Mahā Varāha Purāṇa	386
52. Māṇḍūkya Upaniṣat	42, 266, 469
53. Muṇḍaka Upaniṣat	7, 8, 70, 71, 75, 87, 88, 89, 101, 102, 103, 105, 130, 210, 230, 252, 257, 271, 340, 344, 346, 353, 380, 393, 396, 399, 401, 410, 411, 486, 511, 562, 563, 575, 587, 592, 594, 595, 624, 628, 635, 649, 650, 716, 727, 747, 749, 769
54. Nārada Pañcharātra	492
55. Nārāyaṇa Adhyātma	489, 678
56. Nārāyaṇa Saṁhita	267
57. Nārāyaṇa Tantra	594
58. Nārāyaṇa Upaniṣat	322
59. Nṛsiṁha Tāpanī	690
60. Nṛsiṁha Upaniṣat	515
61. Padma Purāṇa	196, 219, 329, 384, 473, 590, 652, 664
62. Panchaviṃśati Brāhmaṇa	138
63. Pañcī Śruti	479
64. Purāṇa	29, 662
65. Puruṣa Bodhinī Śruti	387
66. Pūruṣa Mīmāṃsā	18, 19, 20, 136, 560
67. Praśna Upaniṣat	64, 121, 122, 352, 360, 362, 377, 477, 502, 505, 690, 705, 717
68. Rāma Pūruṣa Tāpanī	515, 522, 569
69. Rāma Uttara Tāpanī	517
70. Rāmānuja	137, 237, 241, 369, 560, 561
71. Rīg Veda	5, 47, 98, 138, 141, 174, 206, 225, 258, 323-324, 383, 496,

<i>Texts</i>	<i>Pages</i>
	515, 521, 523, 685, 690
72. Sāṁkhya Kārikā	276
73. Sāṁkhya Sūtra	43, 214, 229, 275, 276, 277, 283, 285, 287, 288, 338, 402
74. Subāla Upaniṣat	39, 87, 342-343, 344
75. Sauparṇa Śruti	691
76. Skanda Purāṇa	1, 101, 212
77. Smṛti	153, 225, 236, 245, 255, 362, 400, 414, 436, 438, 442, 513, 521, 554, 579, 586, 604, 607, 611, 737, 752
78. Saṅkara	38, 310, 516, 714
79. Satapatha Brāhmaṇa	98, 637
80. Śātyāyanins	699
81. Śukla Yajurveda	568
82. Śaunaka	363
83. Śruti	71, 74, 139, 144, 145, 260, 363, 410, 476, 535, 641, 722, 760
84. Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣat	3, 8, 14, 15, 28, 103, 131, 133, 141, 166, 170, 172, 173, 208, 210, 211, 214, 218, 222, 258, 262, 263, 264, 265, 337, 338, 349, 350, 359, 374, 389, 459, 499, 500, 536, 544, 558, 567, 570, 575 585, 586, 673, 674, 677, 682, 686, 687, 690, 763.
85. Taittirīya Āraṇyaka	160, 417, 501, 512, 663
86. Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa	206, 218, 541, 620
87. Taittirīya Saṁhitā	431, 615, 616, 619.
88. Taittirīya Upaniṣat	8, 12, 19, 22, 25, 30-37, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 116, 127, 155, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 201, 202, 206, 207, 246, 332, 339, 340, 368, 495, 509, 512, 523, 529, 530, 534, 564, 589, 613, 631, 636, 681, 690, 702, 737, 746, 760, 765, 766, 770.
89. Varāha Purāṇa	141, 466, 689, 743.
90. Vāmana Purāṇa	347
91. Vāyu Purāṇa	402
92. Veda	450
93. Viṣṇu Dharma	665,
94. Viṣṇu Purāṇa	25, 39, 65, 89, 135, 138 141, 167, 175, 203-204, 208, 216, 247, 249, 252, 349, 382, 385, 492, 568, 570, 571, 616, 651-652.
95. Viṣṇu Tantra	470
96. Yājñavalkya	715 Smṛti
97. Yoga Sūtra	220, 223
98. Untraced	5, 14, 42, 55, 100, 211, 228, 250, 253, 254, 256, 301, 382, 393, 414, 415, 418, 458, 483, 495, 496, 527, 559, 586, 588, 692, 725.







